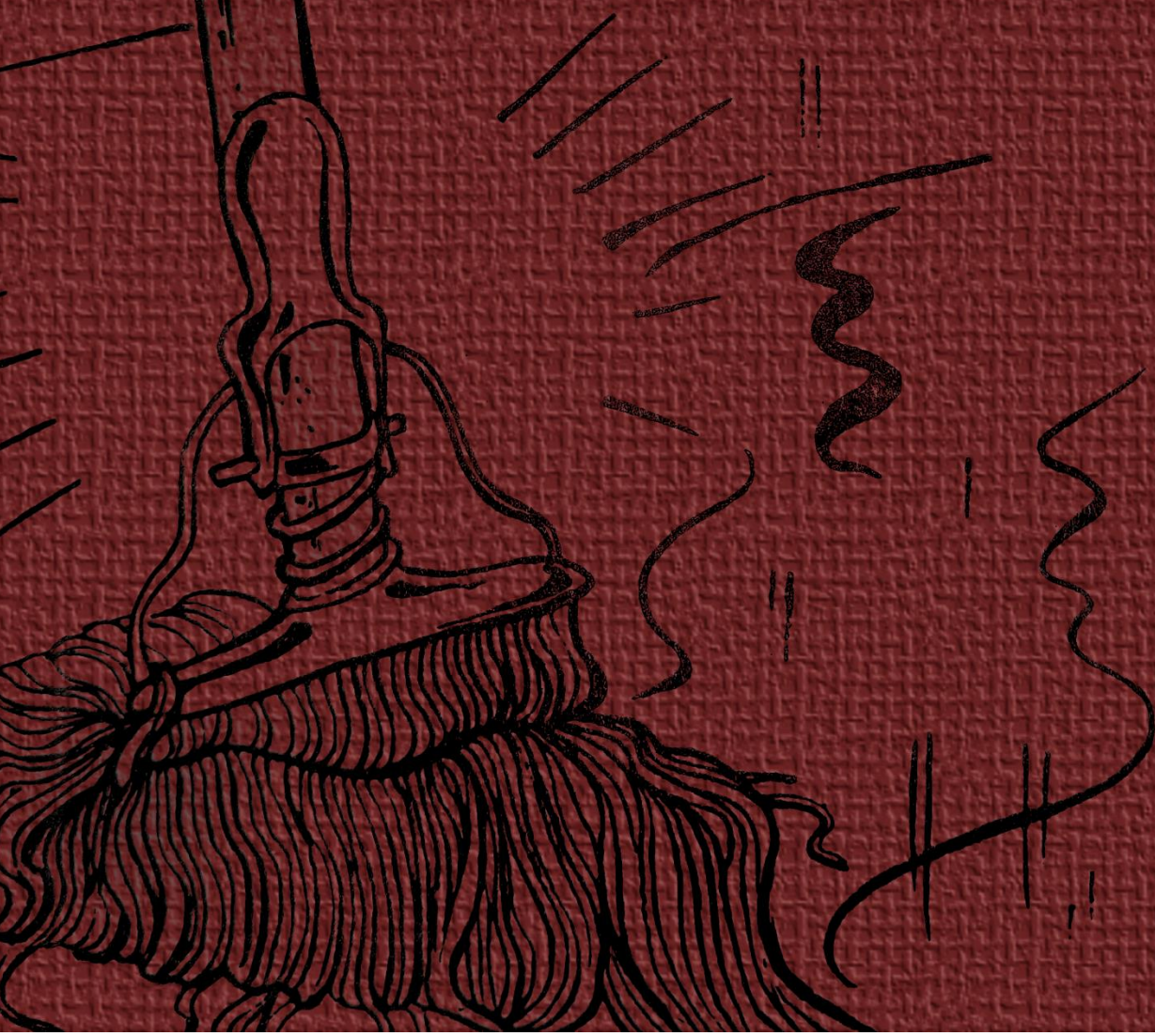


# The MOP!

By Moses David



# The MOP!

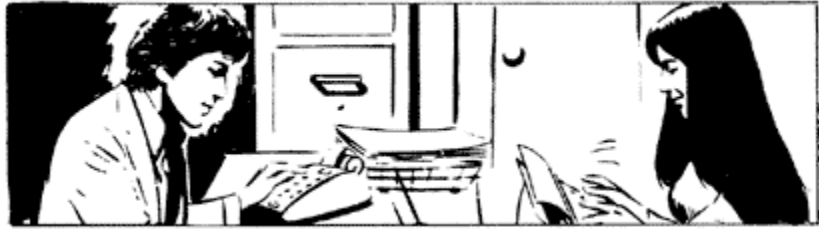


# THE MOP VOLUME 1

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

Page	Category
1	1. <a href="#">Administration &amp; Organization</a>
11	2. <a href="#">Alcohol</a>
14	3. <a href="#">Astrology</a>
18	4. <a href="#">Automobiles</a>
20	5. <a href="#">Backsliders &amp; Prodigals</a>
31	6. <a href="#">Boldness/Shyness</a>
35	7. <a href="#">Change</a>
40	8. <a href="#">Chastening</a>
48	9. <a href="#">Children</a>
68	10. <a href="#">Choice &amp; Decision Making</a>
76	11. <a href="#">Christmas</a>
80	12. <a href="#">Churchianity &amp; Organised Religion</a>
90	13. <a href="#">Comfort</a>
111	14. <a href="#">Communion</a>
119	15. <a href="#">Conviction/Compromise</a>
126	16. <a href="#">Creation</a>
134	17. <a href="#">Criticism &amp; Gossip</a>
140	18. <a href="#">David</a>
146	19. <a href="#">David Is</a>
161	20. <a href="#">David Prophecies</a>
180	21. <a href="#">Death/Life</a>
191	22. <a href="#">Devil's Devices</a>
199	23. <a href="#">Diligence in Business</a>
211	24. <a href="#">Discipleship</a>
216	25. <a href="#">Doubts</a>
220	26. <a href="#">Education, Godly</a>
228	27. <a href="#">Education, System</a>
233	28. <a href="#">Endtime, The</a>
235	29. <a href="#">Exorcism &amp; Spiritual Problems</a>
244	30. <a href="#">Eyes</a>
246	31. <a href="#">Faith &amp; Trust</a>
265	32. <a href="#">Faithfulness</a>
269	33. <a href="#">Family, Our</a>
281	34. <a href="#">Fasting</a>
284	35. <a href="#">Fear, Freedom from</a>
291	36. <a href="#">Fellowship</a>
295	37. <a href="#">FFing</a>
307	38. <a href="#">Fight the Good Fight</a>
321	39. <a href="#">Finances</a>
327	40. <a href="#">First Place</a>
332	41. <a href="#">Foolishness &amp; Shallowness</a>
337	42. <a href="#">Forgiveness &amp; Mercy</a>
345	43. <a href="#">Forsaking All</a>
349	44. <a href="#">Freedom</a>
353	45. <a href="#">Fruitfulness</a>
358	46. <a href="#">Future, The</a>
401	47. <a href="#">Giving</a>
411	48. <a href="#">God</a>

416	49. <a href="#">God's Way vs. Man's Way</a>
424	50. <a href="#">Government &amp; Materialism</a>
444	51. <a href="#">Habits</a>
445	52. <a href="#">Happiness &amp; Joy</a>
453	53. <a href="#">Healing</a>
475	54. <a href="#">Health</a>
479	55. <a href="#">Heaven/Hell</a>
490	56. <a href="#">History</a>
492	57. <a href="#">Holy Spirit</a>
500	58. <a href="#">Home</a>
502	59. <a href="#">Honesty/Dishonesty</a>
508	60. <a href="#">Human Nature</a>
511	61. <a href="#">Humility/Pride</a>
527	62. <a href="#">Humour</a>
529	63. <a href="#">Inspiration &amp; Enthusiasm</a>
534	64. <a href="#">Jealousy</a>
540	65. <a href="#">Jesus</a>
546	66. <a href="#">Jews</a>
565	67. <a href="#">Judgement</a>
570	68. <a href="#">Kindness &amp; Courtesy</a>
572	69. <a href="#">Kings &amp; Supporters</a>
581	70. <a href="#">Law of Love</a>
588	71. <a href="#">Law vs. Grace</a>
594	72. <a href="#">Leaders &amp; Shepherds</a>



*Let all things be done decently and in order (1Cor.14:40).*

1. What's everybody's business is nobody's business.
2. We can only do so much, so we have to do it where it counts & where it will go the furthest & accomplish the most!
3. Any general who doesn't know what ammo he's got or who's got it or where it's at is insane & he's going to lose the war!
4. The job of leadership is to put everybody to work at a job they can do, & keep them working & make sure it's done.
5. Leaders shouldn't do anything someone else can do!--Only the things that no one else can do but you! Otherwise you'll be busy doing everyone else's job but your own.
6. Be definite in your instruction & counsel & they will be definite in carrying it out!
7. You've got to keep your feet on the ground, even if your head is in the clouds!--And keep your heart right there in between to keep the balance!
8. To accept good advice is but to increase one's ability.
9. Being a good executive means you assemble your people and share with them and listen to them.
10. When it comes to things that are practical, the leaders ought to listen to their helpers!
11. Once you have given approval or okayed a project, you need to leave your co-workers alone and let them carry it out the way they think best.
12. If God Himself won't do all the thinking for us and expects us to do some for ourselves, then who are we to try to make all the decisions, do all the thinking, give all the orders, and carry them all out besides?
13. The job of the executive is to merely be the guy who keeps things moving and the power that must keep pushing.
14. A good executive should let his people do the work, recommend the work, initiate the work, and by all means carry out the work!
15. Any smart executive is going to pump people power!--He's not going to try to be the power!
16. The government must cooperate with the people, and the people must cooperate with the government.
17. No side is always all right and the other all wrong.
18. Every job of any kind has to have a boss, or you have chaos!
19. Training of men is the chief job of any executive & the best way to train men to do your job is to have them help you with your own work.
20. As General Patton once put it: "Don't tell a man how to do a thing. Tell him what you want done, & he'll surprise you by his ingenuity."
21. Deadlines can be lifelines!
22. Learn to organise, deputise & supervise.
23. Not all that matters is the man: The man must also have a plan.
24. The whole secret of freedom from anxiety of not having enough time lies not in working more hours but in the proper planning of hours.
25. You can spend days planning & thinking & programming, but if you aren't listening to God, it's a waste of time.
26. Where no counsel is, the people fall: but in the multitude of counsellors there is safety. Pro.11:14.

27. Without counsel purposes are disappointed: but in the multitude of counsellors they are established.  
Pro.15:22.
28. Plan your work--work your plan.
29. Next to knowing all about your own business, the best thing is to know all about the other fellow's.
30. A company is known by the men it keeps.
31. Don't let your committee become a group that keeps minutes & loses hours.
32. A lot of people get through thinking before they think things through.
33. If you ask enough people, you can usually find somebody who'll advise you to do what you were going to do anyway.
34. Too many meetings are held each month for no better reason than that it has been a month since the last one.
35. Shorthand is a device used by secretaries to make you wonder what you really said.
36. It's "meticulous" when someone points out a spelling error in a memo. It's "nit-picking" if you wrote the memo.
37. An optimist is a guy who marries his secretary & expects to continue dictating.
38. Everybody's out litnessing & having fun, but the secretary's work is never done.
39. Any good secretary knows more about her boss's business than he does, and she should!
40. A good inspired secretary can make a great man out of almost anybody.
41. What's everybody's job is nobody's job.
42. God help us to avoid trying to operate any sinking ships or any ships that are bigger than we can handle.
43. The Lord is a very great Employer. He has this whole World at our disposal, so if work runs out in one place, we can always go to someplace else, since He's a multinational corporation & He has works all over the World.
44. It's a big job to do the initial organising & getting things in shape, but then it doesn't take too much work to keep it flowing smoothly.
45. When you've got a winning team of good staff members who know how to work together and who get along well together with as little personality friction as possible, try to keep'em together.--Nothing succeeds like success!
46. The formula for success is simply putting the right people in the right jobs, & then sitting on the side-lines & being a good cheerleader.
47. Don't spread yourselves out so thin that you risk losing some of the ground you've already gained.
48. Two men can do three times as much as one man.
49. Many hands make light work.
50. I use not only all the brains I have, but all I can borrow!
51. It is best for the chief executive to simply pump out the material: The counsel, the suggestions, the discussion--to pump it out of his people.
52. I believe in people power!
53. Pump people power!
54. Every government has to heed the voice of its minority as well.
55. When you can't say "no" for yourself, then you have to engage the help of others to say no for you.
56. Keep it small and simple!--And then almost anybody can run it, even the small and simple-minded!
57. Light is the task where many share the toil.
58. Keep work piled ahead of you. This puts on the pressure & forces you to work nearer your top capacity.
59. Plan your work, set goals, avoid distractions, work with foresight, read material that will help your work. Do the unpleasant job first. Make yourself work. Decide trifles quickly. Start vigorously & promptly, work for quality, use your spare time, make it a habit to do two things at once, train others to help you, work for the Lord & others, take on more work, expand your abilities, require production from yourself. Learn to like your work by making it a habit. Then you can play at your job.--It's fun!
60. If you really want to know how to get organised, this is the way: pray and let God lead first.
61. There's a place for everybody, & everybody ought to be in their place!
62. We want to have the right people in the right places for the right job.
63. I believe in people power!--It's just as necessary as paper power!--Because if we don't learn to lead people, our paper power will be nothing!
64. Nothing is particularly hard if you divide it into small jobs.
65. If I had the slightest doubt about it or hesitancy about any kind of a deal at all, let me tell you, I wouldn't sign one jot or one tittle on a contract.

66. I am a believer in punctuality, though it often makes me very lonely.
67. Every good king is surrounded by many counsellors who advise & counsel him what to do!
68. Don't neglect to communicate! No army can operate without communication! No body can move without coordination!
69. Technical perfection, Beloved, isn't what we need!--What we need is more heart, not just mere office efficiency.
70. You must realise how important it is to set down specific rules & a check-&-balance system so people can't make costly mistakes.
71. Every one of you leaders should be training two or three other people to do your job, sharing your secrets & formulas with them!
72. You're going to get more done if you will spend more time in that room alone with God, away from the maddening mob & with your paperwork.
73. Good business management & organisation as well as the Spirit is the life's blood by which this outfit operates.
74. Without the Spirit we're nothing, without the Lord we're nothing. No matter how good our business management & ability & leadership & organisation might be, without the Lord we'd be an empty shell, a bunch of dead machinery like some of these churches!
75. You didn't know this was a business? Well, it's a big business, a very important business, the most important in the whole World!--It's the Lord's business!
76. There's no reason why we shouldn't run the Lord's business just as well, if not better, than the World does theirs.--And that requires organisation & financing & management & salesmanship & equipment & personnel, & we ought to have the best. And I think we do, for the job we have to do!
77. We're not trying to cut down on the work & the ministries & the results, but we're trying to increase efficiency & effectiveness & fruitfulness in order to accomplish more with less to get a bigger job done.
78. We're trying to accomplish more with fewer people working more efficiently & effectively & fruitfully & profitably by doing a better, more efficient, more effective job, working harder with fewer to get more done, because indeed the labourers are few.
79. I keep a project chart on every project, every Letter, everything I'm doing & exactly what stage it's in.
80. I don't fret about the future, I don't worry about it. I just try to plan for it.
81. Records, stats, project charts & diaries are important.
82. If someone is doing the best they can & that is not good enough, we'll have to find somebody who can do better.
83. Every job requires a man first! You've got to find your man or woman, somebody who's got the vision & the faith & the burden for it.
84. Whenever it comes time to make a major move, it's also usually time to re-think the job you're doing & your personnel.
85. We have to get the army organised & together or how can it ever fight the battle if the trumpet gives an uncertain sound or they don't even know who's supposed to blow the trumpet or call the shots!
86. I like to set my sights high & aim at a goal that I know would be good if we could ever attain it. There's no use bringing our goals down to the level of little faith.--We should try to raise our faith to the level of higher goals.
87. Your organisation should have a check & double check system which makes sure that no stone is left unturned, & no item neglected, no job left only to one person's discretion without supervision.
88. You cannot neglect the seemingly more insignificant phases of your operation, not even one tiny member of the body, or the whole body will suffer.
89. We should never become so swamped in statistics that we lose an appreciation of the value of the individual.
90. An army whose communications are poor, with some sectors out of touch, is either not ready, or sorely weakened, for a new invasion.
91. Somebody's got to be responsible for every single job.
92. Schedules are always one of your major problems! The Lord Himself drew up a weekly schedule for us the very first thing after Creation!--"Six days shalt thou labour, & on the seventh, thou shalt rest"--(Ex.34:21)--A very good plan for us all!
93. Volunteers are always willing-spirited & always volunteering, whereas the slothful are always willing to loaf. So a schedule makes it fair or everyone & gives each person their proper training & experience.

94. In a schedule, every moment of time must be budgeted exactly, & every person must get his fair share of both burdens & blessings, so that none shall be overworked, overburdened, neglected in training, or permitted to waste time or do less than his share!

95. You should study carefully the qualifications, talents, skills, training, education, experience, & personal preferences of your co-labourers in the Lord, & try to give them not only the kind of work they're best fitted for, but also that which they would prefer & like & choose to do.

96. You ought to be willing to stand back & size up the situation & say, "I can do this, but I can't do that. I must do this, but I must not do that. This is my calling, but not that. These are my talents, but not those. This is what God wants me to do, but not that."

97. You need to create a machine that can run itself with you at the wheel & sometimes at the controls, an organisation that will operate on its own without you, so that things will carry on whether you're there or not.

98. Everybody's got his own job & everybody should have some say so, some authority.

99. I'm for the simplification of reporting & the cutting down of reports & the reading of them as much as possible.

100. Look at that garden out there. Apparently God's got this World pretty well organised but He put man in the Garden to tend it & keep it. (Gen.2:15)

101. We have found out that the more opinions we get on work projects, the better.

102. Every army needs some type of organisation, planning & attack so that we don't fall over each other by having too many in some places & not enough in others, so that we will spread out & recognise the needs on various fronts & shift personnel according to the need. As in any battle, as every commander knows, we must keep our eyes on all fronts & send help to those that need help & are weak, & take it from those that are strong.

103. What kind of an army would it be that was simply going by the old rulebook established centuries ago, without any immediate, present, direct communication with some kind of leadership such as its Commander-in-Chief right now?

104. Without personal, immediate, day-to-day, moment-by-moment direction from above, what kind of an army are we going to have?--What kind of a mess with every man doing as he pleases & what he thinks should be done & going his own way with no coordination, no organisation, no central leadership, no plan, no counsel, no communication & no specific direction?

105. The more we can push administration down to the local level, the better off the whole Family will be. Because when the Crash or the war or whatever is going to come next hits, they'll be able to carry on without us, & all we'll have to worry about is trying to get the Word to them.

106. Much more is able to get done by committee or small group more efficiently, so the less people you involve who really have no part in these deliberations, the better.

107. Meetings are often prayerful & inspirational as we study the situation, & a lot of what we do & say is sort of thinking on our feet.

108. In order to save the body, you sometimes have to cut off one finger at a time!--Because it's better to preserve the head & some of the body than try to keep the whole thing & have it starve to death.

109. It's not good to have just one man responsible for a job, since he's bound to make mistakes sometimes. At least one person ought to be checking on him! You can call it spying if you want to, but it's double-checking & it's much more foolproof than being proud.

(See also No. C, 22, 24, 26, 47, 50, 53, 54, 55, 58, 59, 60, 67, 76, 106, 107, 112, 129, 141, 155, 175, 176, 178, 210, 253, 297, 328C, 329C, 357, 580, 650, 653, 657, 659, 660, 663, 674, 683, 696, 832, 862, 871, 886, 888, 889, 896, 903, 932, 1046, 1050, 1051, 1070, 1093, 1115, 1212, 1276, 1320, 1323, 1417, 1433, *HH5*.)

110. Exo. 18:21 Moreover thou shalt provide out of all the people able men, such as fear God, men of truth, hating covetousness; and place such over them, to be rulers of thousands, and rulers of hundreds, rulers of fifties, and rulers of tens.

111. 2CH.19:6 And said to the judges, Take heed what ye do: for ye judge not for man, but for the Lord, Who is with you in the judgment.

112. PSA.112:5 A good man sheweth favour, and lendeth: he will guide his affairs with discretion.

113. PRO.11:1 A false balance is abomination to the Lord: but a just weight is His delight.

114. ISA.10:1 Woe unto them that decree unrighteous decrees, and that write grievousness which they have prescribed.

115. ACT.6:2-4 Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples unto them, and said, It is not reason that we should leave the Word of God, and serve tables. Wherefore, brethren, look ye out among you seven men of



honest report, full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business. But we will give ourselves continually to prayer, and to the ministry of the Word.

116. Act.14:23 When they had ordained them elders in every church, and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the Lord.

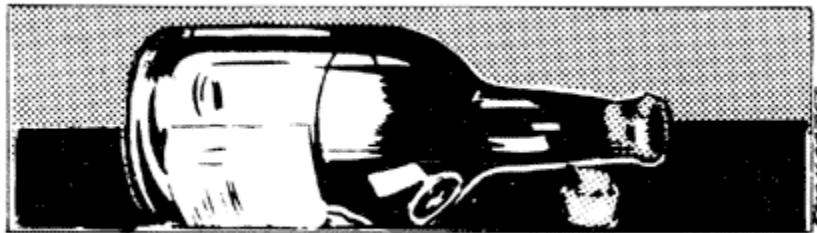
117. 1CO.12:28 And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues.

118. 1CO.14:26 How is it then, brethren? when ye come together, every one of you hath a psalm. hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretation, Let all things be done unto edifying.

119. 1Co.14:40 Let all things be done decently and in order.

(See also EXO.18:13-26; NUM.11:16,17,24,25; DEU.1:9-17; ACT.6:2-6.)

## 2. ALCOHOL --{page 11}--



*And wine that maketh glad the heart of Man, and oil to make his face to shine, and bread which strengtheneth Man's heart (Psa.104:15).*

1. For medicinal purposes the Bible says take a little wine "for thy stomach's sake". It's also good for the hiccoughs & for a breath sweetener & antiseptic.

2. Too much wine invents nothing, it only tattles. It lets out secrets.

3. There's nothing like a little beer or a little wine to loosen your tongue & make you too glib & talk too much.

4. Champagne at night means real pain in the morning!

5. A glass of wine can make you talk silly, a glass of champagne can make you act silly & a glass of whiskey can make you be silly.

6. Alcohol preserves everything except secrets.

7. The best way not to drink too much is not to drink any!

8. For lovemaking, wine is great for women.--it gets rid of inhibitions. It's bad for men--it decreases performance.

9. We cannot have drunken officers & drunken soldiers who are apt to endanger the whole Family or Army & lay themselves open to a surprise attack of the Enemy that could virtually massacre their Unit or efforts, & wipe them out as far as their usefulness to the Lord is concerned!

10. If you are going to drink, then you can't very well fight as a soldier in the Lord's Army! You're more apt to be fighting with your fellow officers & soldiers instead.

11. If you are a soldier fighting for the Lord, I would say, "If you fight, don't drink, if you drink, don't fight!"

12. If there is any danger of your being excessive, simply forbid it altogether or ration it very carefully in certain amounts only, & have a stiff disciplinarian who can handle the bottle! Either that, or eliminate it altogether!

13. Excessive drinking has always been against our rules & policies. Anybody who breaks these rules can't be allowed to stay in the Family or in the Home, because he becomes an actual threat & danger to the Home.

14. Any Home that has a problem drinker, or anybody in the Home who is not willing to obey & be cautious & conservative in their use of wine, I think that, after sufficient warning, they'll have to be asked to leave.

15. I recommend that no Family Member have more than 8 ounces, or 25 centilitres of normal table wine per day, which is equivalent to 4 ounces of sherry or one shot of whiskey, or a great big mug of beer. That's all it ought to be, & you'll all feel better for it. That should be the Family ration in every Home, & if you manage to get any more or sneak any more, then you're breaking the Family rules & disobeying me & displeasing the Lord & you are going to be judged for it & rewarded accordingly & punished for it, I'm sure, by the Lord, & you will suffer for it. So please don't do it, or you're out!

16. Saint Paul said, "Drink a little wine for thy stomach's sake..."(1 Tim. 5:23), & I think "a little" means the less the better.

17. The major part of the alcoholic problems of the skidrows of the World would be solved by putting a drinking fountain on every corner! A lot of it is just plain simple thirst!

18. Perhaps you can double you ration in special parties, celebrations, etc., just don't start celebrating every night, please!

19. I suggest that nobody in the Family drink whiskey or any other strong drink unless they dilute it a great deal.

20. When Saint Paul said "a little wine", he meant "a little", not "a litre!"

21. Let's cut down on the drinking, & if you don't know how to cut down, maybe you'd better just cut it out altogether!

22. I suggest in any Home where somebody has a drinking problem, that they all quit & have no alcoholic beverages in the house whatsoever! We'll have to penalise the entire Home, & they'll all have to suffer with you who are guilty or help you who have a problem so you won't even have any in the house, & you can't even find any to steal!

23. Moses & David bless the wine that cheers the heart of David--that giveth his spirit freedom & openeth his mouth, that he may speak the Words of God!

(See also No. 856, 954, 1134, 1406.)

24. 1SA.1:14 How long wilt thou be drunken? Put away thy wine from thee.

25. PSA.104:14,15 He causeth the grass to grow for the cattle, and herb for the service of man: that he may bring forth food out of the earth; And wine that maketh glad the heart of Man, and oil to make his face to shine, and bread which strengtheneth Man's heart.

26. PRO.20:1 Wine is a mocker, strong drink is raging: and whosoever is deceived thereby is not wise.

27. PRO.23:20,21 Be not among winebibbers. The drunkard and the glutton shall come to poverty.

28. HAB.2:15 Woe unto him that giveth his neighbour drink, that putteth thy bottle to him, and makest him drunken also, that thou mayest look on their nakedness!

29. EPH.5:18 And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit.

30. PHI.4:5 Let your moderation be known unto all men. The Lord is at hand.

31. 1TI.5:23 Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomach's sake and thine often infirmities.



*Canst thou bind the sweet influences of Pleiades, or loose the bands of Orion? (Job 38:31).*

1. I believe in the influence of the planets as a part of God's machinery to control the physical World & its system!
2. Life is a voyage on which you choose neither vessel nor weather, but much can be done in the management of the sails & the guidance of the helm.
3. You can overcome your environment & your heredity if you've got the guts & the faith & the push & the drive & the determination to do something about it!
4. Those people with astrological signs where intellect rules with so much self-discipline, self-control & mind over matter, are inclined & tempted to be the victims of the greatest sin of all, pride & self-righteousness!
5. Your personality is influenced by your ancestors, your zodiac & your environment, but it is up to you & the Lord what you do with it.
6. With a lot of self-determination & discipline & the Lord's help, you can pull yourself out of a real hole as far as your background or astrology is concerned!
7. Don't tell me you can't get along with someone because your astrological signs aren't compatible!--Jesus is greater than your signs & can overrule all of that!
8. If you can get people to believe in astrology, then they've got to believe in God!
9. You're born with certain characteristics according to your sign, but it is up to you how you use them & what you do with them.
10. In every (sun) sign there is a good side & a bad side...& what you are depends on which side you choose!--Whether you choose to be good or evil.
11. The influence of the stars is a part of His physical Creation and can be completely overruled and overcome by the spiritual power of His Spirit.
12. Stars are God's machinery to pass out personality!
13. Up in the stars, I think you'll find,  
That life down here is all designed!
14. Astrology is a tremendous proof of the existence of God & a Divine Plan!
15. The heavenly spheres that God has made operate like the wheels of a great clock with perfect precision, virtually unvarying in course & speed & degree, so that these things can be calculated to the split second: Sunrise & sunset, phases of the moon, moonrise & moonset & tides & eclipses of the moon & the sun.
16. Anything that glorifies the marvels of God's Creation is not very much marvelled at or emphasised in school any more because it's too good proof of a Designer & Creator & Builder & Architect of the Universe! So they don't teach you the marvels & the wonders & the plan & the design--the intricate precision & the marvellous planning & perfection of everything--working just like clockwork, right on time!
17. These marvellous creations of God, the major astral bodies & solar systems such as the Solar System of our Sun & its planets & their moons & the Earth etc., as well as the stars & the constellations, have not changed for thousands of years since God first created them!
18. God's Creation is here to stay! His Earth, Sun, Moon & Stars & all of His marvellous wonders of His astronomical Creation are here forever!--They're going to endure as long as His Throne, which is forever, & they will still be of use to God in some way.

19. The Bible talks about the "sweet influences of Pleiades", one of the constellations, & "canst thou guide Arcturus & his sons"--which seems to be a wandering constellation, but travels throughout the heavens on a distinct orbit or path which scientists can calculate but can't guide, & still misses all the others! How about that! (Job.38:31,32.)

20. God made it so the heavenly bodies work perfectly & stay put where they belong & only orbit where they're supposed to be, in the paths they're supposed to follow, & at the speed they're supposed to go, so that they don't bump into each other & don't collide--except for some of the Devil's meteoric showers & some of God's signs, the comets.

21. Those constellations are out there as signs & influences upon the Creation of God. I was convinced as I saw the Heavenly City, its interior & those great revolving crystals that seemed like control centers etc., that all of these things are created for a purpose, for the governing of God's Creation & the control of God's Creation!

22. "Readest thou what sayest the stars? Knowest thou not that I am He that hath created them, and I see more than they can tell thee? Readest thou the stars? Readest thou the life of this My Aquarius that I have poured forth as water unto the World? Kiss thou his stars!"

23. God has ordained the stars & the planets to control & influence our lives & at least our personalities, if not actual events! You can certainly determine pretty much what a person is going to be like by the month in which he was born, believe it or not. Genesis 1:14 tells us that God made the stars & planets primarily for signs, and for seasons (not just Summer & Winter seasons, either!), and for days, and years...as well as for lights!

24. And did you know that "the stars in their courses fought against Sisera?" (Judges 5:20) Ecclesiastes 3:1-8 explains that God has a set time for everything.

25. It was even the proper reading of a star that led the Wise Men to Jesus' Birthplace, & Luke says that in the last days, "there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars" of the end of things, & the coming of the Lord! (Lk.21:25.)

26. We can admire God's glorious creation & we can wonder at its marvels, even the way God influences us according to His Will by the stars, a part of His great machinery for controlling the Universe & us.

27. Anyone full of the Spirit of God & in direct communication with the Creator can do ten times better than those who try to find out His purposes merely by reading His Creation, as Daniel 1:20 makes very clear.

28. It's amazing, & makes you praise God all the more for His wonderful Creation & how He runs it! Why not? If He didn't apportion personality characteristics like the balance in His Creation & other of its miracles by some scientific means, or spiritual means, if you prefer, then we might have all wound up like a bunch of robots, exactly the same, like some kind of identical, assembly-line productions!

29. In order to vary the kinds & types of people that He wanted living on Earth, & to properly proportion their personalities throughout all the varied hues of the spectrum of characteristics of the human race, as well as perhaps even the guidance of animal & vegetable creatures & their distribution & balance, why couldn't God use a very "scientific" system of control & apportionment for distribution & ordination & foreordination by means of some instrumentalities of His Own Creation, such as the stars!

30. Your sign is either positive or negative. You can choose the positives or the negatives, the good or the evil. You can choose the good & eschew the evil. That's what God has left up to your choice. And that's the evil the Devil brought into the garden, the choice of the knowledge of evil.

(See also No. 107, 123, 1307, 1308, 1309, 1310.)



*The chariots shall rage in the streets, they shall justle one against another in the broad ways: they shall seem like torches, they shall run like the lightnings (Nah.2:4).*

1. The driver's seat is one of the most responsible and dangerous positions in the world! Take it seriously, and ask God for help!

2. The automobile did away with the horses. Now it's working on the rest of us.

3. The driver is safer when the roads are dry; the roads are safer when the driver is dry.

4. Don't drive as if you own the road; drive as if you own the car.

5. Drive carefully! Remember: it's not only a car that can be recalled by its maker.

6. Two of the best known finishes for automobiles are lacquer & liquor.

7. Seat belts are not as confining as wheelchairs.

8. Drive carefully: watch the car in back of the one in front of you.

9. Rhyme for pedestrian safety:

Bill looked, Joe didn't.

Bill is, Joe isn't.

10. Some rights are worth dying for. The right of way is not one of them.

11. Automobiles have killed more people than were killed in all of the wars of the World put together!

12. The best way to inspire courteous treatment by other motorists is to drive a police car.

13. If you drink don't drive, If you drive don't drink.

14. The trouble with a good many cars today is that the engine won't start & the payments won't stop.

15. Fast, reckless driving often leads to slow, soft music.

16. Sign on entering St. John, Indiana, USA: "Drive Carefully. See St. John, Not St. Peter."

(See also No. 150, 285, 807, 812, 831, 851, 921, 1024.)



*The backslider in heart shall be filled with his own ways (Pro.14:14).*

1. Backsliders don't have a chance, because they have run out on God!--They're strictly on the Devil's territory & he can attack them all he wants & give them what they deserve, what the mercy of God would have spared them from.

2. Don't take a Jonah on board or you'll sink.

3. When you look back you'll go back! You'll go the direction you're looking!

4. Backsliders are your stray sheep, they're prodigal sons & God still loves them.

5. If you hold one little thing back from the Lord, you're on your way to backsliding.

6. People can do less damage on the outside than on the inside.

7. God hates to see people's backs!

8. Judas never expected nor intended to betray the Lord, he just chickened out & went back & got mixed up with the wrong crowd!

9. As long as you've got any idea there's some place to go back to, you'd better go!

10. The Prodigal Son lost his birthright and inheritance, but he did not completely lose his place as a son.

11. God's law of progress is: If you don't keep on getting more, you'll lose what you've got!--If you're not progressing, you're backsliding!

12. A personal problem within can be a greater threat than enemies without.

13. Backsliders seldom ever backslide alone!--They almost always take others with them!

14. Backsliders become your very worst enemies and the most diabolical traitors to your cause!

15. The bird whose pinion was once broken, by the grace of God will fly even higher than before.

16. The worst things I've ever seen happen to people, were to people who went back on the Lord--backsliders!

17. There is no such thing as standing still! You're either progressing and have the products to prove it, or backsliding to oblivion!

18. There's no worse enemy than a former friend!

19. A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump, and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees! One rotten apple can spoil the whole barrelful if allowed to remain, and one gangrenous member can kill the whole body if not either healed or cut off!

20. Better an open enemy than a false friend.

21. Once you have the truth & reject it, then you are guilty, not just weak.--No longer an innocent weaker brother, but a guilty weaker brother.

22. It's so easy to make legitimate, logical, reasonable, acceptable excuses why you couldn't make it, & why you shouldn't be expected to make it, & in most cases most people will accept your excuses, because most people don't have faith either, & in excusing you, they're excusing themselves.

23. If you'll even start God's way, if you'll even turn toward Him & start trying to find your way home, the Father will come running toward you & take you in His arms.

24. I'd rather fight a dangerous enemy without than a pacified enemy within.

25. It's easier to fight the outside devils than the one that worms his way in through your own weaknesses & faults & failures. He can do a hell of a lot of damage outside, but he can do a hell of a lot more damage inside!

26. The quickest way to find out God's will is to get out of it, sad to say.

27. There's no stopping place when you backslide!

28. Once you start going the wrong direction there is no place to stop!
29. It doesn't matter how much you give a backslider, they always murmur.
30. It's like Achilles' heel: the weakness is always there, but you never see it until you put the pressure on!
31. I've never heard of a successful backslider yet, have you?
32. The backslider never wants to backslide alone.
33. The double-hearted and double-minded live in a constant state of indecision!
34. When people desert God, He deserts them.
35. One bad apple can spoil a whole barrelful! Better no apple at all than a bad apple spoiling others.
36. Backslider: saved from flame but not from shame.
37. Help us not to even look back, Lord, much less go back!
38. You'd better watch where you're going, or you'll go where you're looking!
39. It's better to have a defector, a spy, an unreliable traitor out of our midst than living with us!
40. Our worst enemies are those who come from our own ranks.
41. Saul's problem was that he was always being sorry, but never changing. He wasn't truly repentant, he wasn't sorry for the right reasons. He was just sorry he had done it because it was a serious, stupid mistake & he had been caught. He did not correct the causes & never had a definite change of mind or heart. True repentance is a complete change of direction!
42. When your bad points begin to outweigh your good points, then it destroys your usefulness and your effectiveness.
43. Don't think you can even get away with thinking about your former System home or loved ones! It's a dangerous business to even keep up close correspondence with a family that's not giving all or forsaking-all for God, except just enough to keep them pacified & from becoming a danger to God's work. Watch out about that!--Give'm the works, tell'm all, & if they don't follow, don't keep wasting your strength & wasting your time & casting your pearls before swine!
44. If you go back, you've lost the birthright, you've lost your inheritance, you've lost the blessing, you've lost the joy, you've lost everything but your Salvation, if you're saved. Still, I don't believe anybody that's genuinely saved can permanently go back. I believe sooner or later they'll come back to the Lord & His Service, unless God has to kill them & remove them to keep them from being a stumbling block.
45. You can't go back alone, Beloved. Everybody that goes back affects somebody, discourages somebody, disheartens somebody, puts another nail in somebody's coffin.
46. The worst enemies we ever had & still have were once one of us. They make the Devil's own best tools. They are ideal for the Devil's witnesses. They were amongst us but they were not of us, & this is why they went out from us.
47. Are you living in the Word & Work & Love of the Lord & Family so deep you could never think of leaving? Are you so busy for Him & others that you've no time to hear or ponder the Devil's doubts, lies & temptations?
48. God bless you & keep you from falling into the same temptation which led Satan himself astray--pride, jealousy, covetousness, possessiveness.
49. It's so sad & so pitiful, these Sauls, the failures, the disappointments to God! They must truly break the heart of God like they break my heart.
50. You can't keep complaining & criticising & murmuring & bellyaching about things & keep God's Holy Spirit on you for your job, you just can't do it. Like Saul, the Spirit left him & he was so damn hard & cold he didn't even know it was gone! He didn't even know he had lost it, think of it!
51. That is the most miserable person in the World, the traitor, the betrayer, backslider! He can't even stand to live with himself any more, much less with either the Family or the System.
52. Nearly every backslider is convinced they're right. They have rejected & resisted the Truth so long & they're so thoroughly deluded & so thoroughly deceived themselves they even believe their own lies!
53. When you're out of fellowship with God & disobedient, you want to run the other direction & get as far away from the Lord & His people as you possibly can. Just the sight of them convicts you!
54. That's what they all say, every backslider, almost every one I ever heard: "I'm not going back on the Lord, I'm not going back on the Family."
55. How God hates people that look back! It seems like He's almost better able to stand gross horrible outright sins than for the Christian or His own Children to compromise & look back & shilley-shalley & get lukewarm & double-minded! He just can't stomach it!
56. Backsliding is not usually a sudden last-minute decision, it's something that you have been contemplating a long, long time.

57. A lot of backsliders have quit just a minute too soon, just before the Lord was about give them the crown, they flunked out. For God's sake, I hope you don't flunk out just when you almost have got the victory & the Lord's about to reward you & give you the anointing & the crown! I hope you don't fail!

58. I wouldn't trust a defector further than you could drag an elephant by the tail.

59. I think one of the saddest verses in the Bible is the one about "Demas hath forsaken Me, having loved this present World!" Now let's face it, that's why they do it. They love something more than the Lord's Work & His Family.--Really something more than the Lord.

60. To me the most shocking thing about Saul & about Judas & about any backslider is their lack of fear of God.

61. Nobody loves a traitor! The System will lure you back, will even exalt you for awhile, pay you 30 pieces of silver to do the dirty work, & when it's done, they will spit in your face & never have anything more to do with you! Who is going to trust a traitor?

62. Every time I got in such a fix & I realised I was in the wrong place I repented of it like that!--Quick!-- And I ran back to the will of God as fast as I could go! And I think that is the only thing that saved my neck, literally!--"For he that being often reprov'd & hardeneth his neck shall be suddenly destroyed & that without remedy!"

63. When you start failing God, backsliding & going against the Lord, everything goes wrong. It reminds me of what Hamlet said, "When troubles come, they come in troops!"

64. I am firmly convinced that you don't have to worry about some people's loyalty. If they love you & are loyal to you they're going to listen to you & not anybody else. Jesus said so! He said, "My sheep hear My voice & they follow Me & a stranger they will not follow!"

65. God punished King David, spanked him for awhile, but then brought him back, & his latter end was greater than the beginning, thank You Lord! Because he learned his lesson, because he repented, because he was sorry, because in his humility he confessed his sin.--And you have the beautiful 51st Psalm as a result.

66. Thank God there are a few cases in the Bible of repentance. Like David & some others. They made some big mistakes but they had big repentances.--So they had big forgivenesses. PTL!

67. Living the life the Enemy has to offer is nothing but agony, death & constant dying for that which is not worth dying for!

68. "The men whose opinions thou lovest shall destroy thee & the Beast whose honour thou favourest shall devour thee. For why dost thou not return unto Me, O thou backsliding daughter? Why dost thou not repent of thy spiritual whoredoms?"

69. If someone forsakes the Lord & His work for something they would rather have, for some other god before Him, God is fed up with them, disgusted with them, & usually won't use them for hardly anything or bless them at all, so they have to go back to the System, back to the World & the Devil to even earn a living to support the god that they worshipped instead of the Lord.

70. In a few outstanding cases of backsliding in the Scriptures & in church history where there was a tremendously great repentance, there was a great forgiveness!--But usually at the same time there was a great punishment.

71. A backslider is nothing but a troublemaker! He's given himself over to the Devil, he's yielded to the Devil, he's going the Devil's way instead of God's way & he's dangerous to have around!

72. When people fail the Lord & they fail us, they apparently have no idea what a big failure that is & how bad it is & how far they are on their way down!

73. Anybody who chooses his family over a job for the Lord is a backslider!

74. Backsliders make God sick at His stomach & He vomits them out!--God's vomit, the backsliders!

75. God have mercy & protect us from backsliders! They're the worst enemies of all & the worst reproach to God's work & the worst possible testimony!

76. If you're out of touch with the Lord, there's only one other one that you can get in touch with & that is the Devil!

77. Everybody can make it, it's up to them. If you don't make it, it's not God's fault.

78. Either you're getting better & better, or you're getting worse! There's no such thing as standing still. You're either going ahead, or you're going backwards, one or the other!

79. When people just insist on having their own way & they're going to go ahead Hell, or high water, & do it themselves anyhow, sometimes you just have to let'm do it.

(See also No. 71, 140, 312, 313C, 383, 395, 641, 756, 759, 763, 772, 778, 830, 880, 952, 954, 967, 1014, 1040, 1045, 1049, 1056, 1058, 1089, 1202, 1651, 1652, 1653.)



80. GEN.19:26 But his (Lot's) wife looked back from behind him, and she became a pillar of salt.
81. DEU.28:63 And it shall come to pass, that as the Lord rejoiced over you to do you good, and to multiply you; so the Lord will rejoice over you to destroy you, and to bring you to nought; and ye shall be plucked from off the land whither thou goest to possess it.
82. JOS.24:20 If ye forsake the Lord, and serve strange gods, then He will turn and do you hurt, and consume you, after that He hath done you good.
83. 2CH.30:9 For if ye turn again unto the Lord, your brethren and your children shall find compassion before them that lead them captive, so that they shall come again into this land: for the Lord your God is gracious and merciful, and will not turn away His face from you, if ye return unto Him.
84. EZR.8:22b The hand of our God is upon all them for good that seek Him; but His power and His wrath is against all them that forsake Him.
85. JOB.14:7 For there is hope of a tree, if it be cut down, that it will sprout again, and that the tender branch thereof will not cease.
86. JOB.34:26 He striketh them as wicked men in the open sight of others.
87. PSA.37:31 The law of his God is in his heart; none of his steps shall slide.
88. PSA.44:20,21 If we have forgotten the Name of our God, or stretched out our hands to a strange god; Shall not God search this out? for He knoweth the secrets of the heart.
89. PSA.51:3 For I acknowledge my transgressions: and my sin is ever before me.
90. PSA.78:41 Yea, they turned back and tempted God, and limited the Holy One of Israel.
91. PSA.119:176 I have gone astray like a lost sheep; seek Thy servant; for I do not forget Thy commandments.
92. PRO.14:14 The backslider in heart shall be filled with his own ways.
93. PRO.15:10 Correction is grievous unto him that forsaketh the way: and he that hateth reproof shall die.
94. PRO.26:11 As a dog returneth to his vomit, so a fool returneth to his folly.
95. PRO.28:10 Whoso causeth the righteous to go astray in an evil way, he shall fall himself into his own pit: but the upright shall have good things in possession.
96. ECC.7:10 Say not thou, What is the cause that the former days were better than these? for thou dost not enquire wisely concerning this.
97. ISA.30:1,2 Woe to the rebellious children, saith the Lord, that take counsel, but not of Me; and that cover with a covering, but not of My Spirit, that they may add sin to sin: That walk to go down into Egypt, and have not asked at My mouth; to strengthen themselves in the strength of Pharaoh, and to trust in the shadow of Egypt!
98. ISA.54:7,8 For a small moment have I forsaken thee; but with great mercies will I gather thee. In a little wrath I hid My face from thee for a moment; but with everlasting kindness will I have mercy on thee, saith the Lord thy Redeemer.
99. JER.5:6 Wherefore a lion out of the forest shall slay them, and a wolf of the evenings shall spoil them, a leopard shall watch over their cities: every one that goeth out thence shall be torn in pieces: because their transgressions are many, and their backslidings are increased.
100. JER.7:24 But they hearkened not, nor inclined their ear, but walked in the counsels and in the imagination of their evil heart, and went backward, and not forward.
101. JER.15:6 Thou hast forsaken me, saith the Lord, thou art gone backward: therefore will I stretch out My hand against thee, and destroy thee; I am weary with repenting.
102. JER.24:7 And I will give them a heart to know Me, that I am the Lord: and they shall be My people, and I will be their God: for they shall return unto Me with their whole heart.
103. DAN.9:9 To the Lord our God belong mercies and forgivenesses, though we have rebelled against Him.
104. HOS.4:17 Ephraim is joined to idols: let him alone.
105. HOS.6:1 Come, and let us return unto the Lord: for He hath torn, and He will heal us; He hath smitten, and He will bind us up.
106. HOS.14:4 I will heal their backsliding, I will love them freely: for Mine anger is turned away from him.
107. JOE.2:12,13 Therefore also now, saith the Lord, turn ye even to Me with all your heart, and with fasting, and with weeping, and with mourning: And rend your heart, and not your garments, and turn unto the Lord your God: for He is gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and repenteth Him of the evil.
108. MAT.5:13 Ye are the salt of the Earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men.

109. MAT.13:22 He also that received seed among the thorns is he that heareth the Word; and the care of this World, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the Word, and he becometh unfruitful.

110. LUK.8:13 They on the Rock are they, which, when they hear, receive the Word with joy; and these have no root, which for a while believe, and in time of temptation fall away.

111. LUK.9:62 And Jesus said unto him, No man, having put his hand to the plow, and looking back, is fit for the Kingdom of God.

112. LUK.15:32 It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

113. LUK.17:32 Remember Lot's wife.

114. JOH.6:66,67 From that time many of His disciples went back, and walked no more with Him. Then said Jesus unto the twelve, will ye also go away?

115. JOH.15:6 If a man abide not in Me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

116. GAL.4:9 But now, after that ye have known God, or rather are known of God, how turn ye again to the weak and beggarly elements, whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage?

117. GAL.5:7 Ye did run well; who did hinder you that ye should not obey the truth?

118. EPH.4:18,19 Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart: Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness.

119. 2TI.4:10a For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present World.

120. HEB.3:12,13 Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God. But exhort one another daily, while it is called To day; lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin.

121. HEB.5:11 Of whom we have many things to say, and hard to be uttered, seeing ye are dull of hearing.

122. HEB.6:4-6 For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the Heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, And have tasted the good Word of God, and the powers of the World to come, If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put Him to an open shame.

123. HEB.10:26,27 For if we (continue to) sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries.

124. HEB.11:14,15 For they that say such things declare plainly that they seek a country. And truly, if they had been mindful of that country from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned.

125. 2PE.2:20-22 For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the World through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them. But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire.

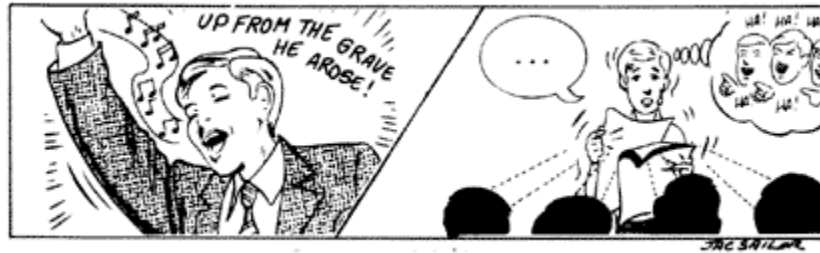
126. 2PE.3:17 Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye know these things before, beware lest ye also, being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your own stedfastness.

127. 1JO.2:19 They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but they went out, that they might be made manifest that they were not all of us.

128. JUD.4,5 For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness, and denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ. I will therefore put you in remembrance, though ye once knew this, how that the Lord, having saved the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed them that believed not.

129. REV.2:4,5 Nevertheless I have somewhat against thee, because thou hast left thy first love. Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.

(See also DEU.8:11-14; DEU.13:4-11; DEU.30:1-10; DEU.32; JOB.22:23-30; ZEC.10:6; MAL.3:7; MAT.4:7-19; LUK.15:11-27; 1CO.10:1-13; HEB.6:4-8; HEB.10:26-29,38.)



*The wicked flee when no man pursueth: but the righteous are bold as a lion (Pro.28:1).*

1. "Shy" is just "I" with a "sh" before it. Shyness is really I-ness. The shy person is so busy thinking about himself that he says "sh" to any other subject.
2. If you never stick your neck out, you'll never get your head above the crowd.
3. He who begs timidly courts refusal.
4. He that is overcautious will accomplish little.
5. When you're Christ-conscious you're not self-conscious!
6. The roots of shyness are really in pride.
7. Stand upright, speak thy thought, declare  
The truth thou hast, that all may share.  
Be bold, proclaim it everywhere!  
They only live who dare!
8. Silence is golden except when it comes to witnessing--then it's just plain yellow.
9. Don't let the little guy in brass buttons scare you off! Refuse to talk to him, demand to see the boss!
10. Bravery never goes out of fashion.
11. No one can make you feel inferior without your consent.
12. For strength & stamina in body & soul, Drink in the Word to make you bold.
13. If you're bold & go in prayer & in the power of the Lord & act like you know what you're doing & just go ahead & do it until they tell you not to, people figure you must have the right to do it.
14. If you seem to know just what to do, others seldom question you!
15. The question not asked cannot be answered.
16. Dare to be bold! Dare to think, act, live & teach differently from the vast robotic, narcotic, conventional, pretentional, conformist, performist, zomby-bomby so-called "silent majority" of the supposedly average & "normal" systemites! They will hate you for daring to challenge their authority, but God will love you.
17. What is shyness, bashfulness & timidity? It's a combination of two things--fear & pride! You are worried about people's opinions of you. You fear the opinions of men. (Eph.6:6,7; Prov.29:25.)
18. Shyness is basically fear, which is the opposite of faith. So to overcome fear you must have more faith.
19. When you have more faith, you have more boldness & more courage, more faith to trust God.
20. After receiving the Holy Spirit, I had a boldness, a sort of a fearlessness, a greater courage, which I think was God-given. It didn't matter whether they thought I was good or bad, as long as I knew I was right & doing the right things & saying the right things. As long as I knew I was in the Will of God, & was doing God's Will, then the Spirit of God gave me this boldness.
21. Whatever you do, when questioned, don't stall around & beat around the bush & lower your eyes like you're ashamed of something! Look them straight in the eye & with forceful, forthright, obvious conviction & sincerity, take the offensive & sock it to them with the Truth!
22. Face the fear of Man in the power of His Spirit on the promises of His Word, & you cannot fail! Praise God!

(See also No. 337, 983, 1006, 1032.)

23. GEN.32:24,26 Jacob was left alone; and there wrestled a man with him until the breaking of the day....  
And he said, I will not let thee go, except thou bless me.

24. PSA.119:6 Then shall I not be ashamed, when I have respect unto all Thy commandments.

25. PRO.28:1 The wicked flee when no man pursueth: but the righteous are bold as a lion.

26. PRO.29:25 The fear of Man bringeth a snare: but whoso putteth his trust in the Lord shall be safe.

27. EZE.3:9 As an adamant harder than flint have I made thy forehead: fear them not, neither be dismayed at their looks, though they be a rebellious house.

28. MAR.8:38 Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of Me and of My Words in this adulterous and sinful generation; of him also shall the Son of Man be ashamed, when He cometh in the glory of His Father with the holy Angels.

29. ACT.4:13 Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled; and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.

30. ACT.4:29 Grant unto Thy servants, that with all boldness they may speak Thy Word.

31. ACT.5:28. Saying, Did not we straitly command you that ye should not teach in this Name? and, behold, ye have filled Jerusalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring this Man's blood upon us.

32. ACT.9:29 He spake boldly in the name of the Lord Jesus, and disputed against the Grecians.

33. ACT.18:9,10 Then spake the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision, Be not afraid, but speak, and hold not thy peace: For I am with thee, and no man shall set on thee to hurt thee: for I have much people in this city.

34. ROM.1:16 For I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto Salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.

35. EPH.3:12 In Whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of Him.

36. EPH.6:19,20 And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mystery of the Gospel, For which I am an ambassador in bonds: that therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak.

37. 1TH.2:2 But even after that we had suffered before, and were shamefully entreated, as ye know, at Philippi, we were bold in our God to speak unto you the Gospel of God with much contention.

38. 2TI.1:8 Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me His prisoner: but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the Gospel according to the power of God.

39. 2TI.2:12 If we suffer, we shall also reign with Him: if we deny Him, He also will deny us.

40. 1JO.4:17 Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the Day of Judgment: because as He is, so are we in this World.



*Because they have no changes, therefore they fear not God (Ps.55:19).*

1. God doesn't change, but He's constantly changing methods & modes & tactics & even people! If you're without changes, then you fear not God!

2. When anything begins to hinder more than it helps, it's time to abolish it!

3. When you're through changing, you're through.

4. If you want to put the World right, start with yourself.

5. The Love Revolution has got to keep turning & changing & moving every minute with something new.

6. Let him that would move the World first move himself.

7. A new broom sweeps clean.

8. We may change our methods but we don't change the basic principles.

9. We've performed a lot of operations, but thank God the patient always recovered!

10. Nothing is going to always be--nothing but the Lord & His Love & Salvation.

11. All changes are difficult & sometimes costly, but if they're good changes, in the long run they pay off!

12. If you get bored, move the furniture around in your room! It's like starting a new life!

13. We're not afraid to change, we're not afraid to stop doing something unfruitful & to start doing something else!

14. If you stop changing, you're finished!

15. If you're not changed, you don't have Jesus, because He changes people! No matter how good you are, He'll make you better!

16. You have to change people in order to change the World!

17. Every major move or revolution we've had looked like it was going to kill us, & sometimes it almost did, but we've always come out better than before!

18. Our basic message & beliefs have never changed, but God is constantly changing methods adaptable to the times or the situations.

19. True repentance is not just being sorry--it is "metanoia"--a complete change of mind & heart.

20. Anyone that doesn't move & keep changing is dying or already dead.

21. We're not just out to change the World--we're creating a totally new one!

22. That's what makes this a revolution, when we don't mind changing whatever's necessary.

23. If you don't like the way things are going, stick around two weeks & everything will change.

24. Don't get stuck with either a name, a method or a message that you can't change from day to day with whatever God has for you that's new--new wine, new message, new method, new way!

25. Changes & revolutions in men, methods & materials cost at first, but in the long run they save a lot more!

26. It costs to change! At first it costs more than it saves.

27. We are the crystalliser, the catalyst, the ones that put people on the spot & drive them to a decision!--whether they want to wake up or go back to sleep again!

28. Everyone needs a change once in a while. Any situation can get to one's nerves after a while until you could almost scream!

29. If you can't change your mind you'll never revolute!

30. Times and things and methods and we and God's new plans and ways are constantly changing and revolving, like a wheel speeding toward the goal of the new and leaving the old far behind!
31. You'd better move now--with the life of God, or you'll be left behind in the death of this world!
32. I'm not afraid to turn around & go the other direction a bit if we've been going this direction too long!
33. Changes are good for you! They make you really depend on the Lord!
34. You may not be able to change the whole World, but you can change your part of the World.
35. If you have changed one life, you have changed a part of the World, & you have proven that there is hope that it all can be changed!
36. If you have even changed your life by the power of God's love, you've changed a whole universe, the universe of your body & the sphere in which you live.
37. He who shall introduce into public affairs the principles of primitive Christianity will revolutionise the World. (Ben Franklin)
38. We take any name we need--whatever name they want to call us.
39. As long as you can continue to change, you will survive!--But if you solidify and freeze, you're doomed to a tomb!
40. We need to keep exchanging and sharing and changing and moving in order to grow and woo and win to His Way!
41. There's nothing new under the sun, but a lot of good ol' fashioned ideas have to be revived every now & then that are pretty new to the present.
42. Too rigid a daily schedule may not give God a chance to change it.
43. There's no standing still! You're either climbing and getting to the top, or you're sinking and drifting to the bottom.--Progressing or backsliding!
44. We are very adaptable! We can adapt ourselves to any country, any situation.
45. We may change tactics, but it is all for the same purpose: to win the war!
46. God moves. He is a moving God. He is never still. He is always effecting change in every sphere of Creation.
47. Leave things alone that are running well, don't change horses in the middle of the stream.
48. Lord help me to change the things that need to be changed, & not to change the things that don't need to be changed, & especially Lord, help me to know the difference!
49. If you can't keep thinking up better ways of doing it, then you're dead!
50. The Lord always has something new up His sleeve!
51. Nothing is permanent except the Lord! Only He changes not.
52. If there is one thing you can be sure of in this life, it's change.
53. There is no such thing as standing still in your spiritual life!
54. There comes a time when the birdlings have to be shoved out of the nest. There comes a time when the kids need to grow up. Their parents can't take care of them forever when they've got new children coming along.
55. Don't get blobitis yourself! Keep moving, turning, changing, and revolving every single day!--And you will, if you pray and ask God what to do today!
56. God's new order must rise upon a clean, new foundation--the Personality, Power & Truth of Jesus Christ.
57. You have the Lord & He's your security, He's always the same & always with you wherever you go! No matter if all things change & everything goes, you still have the Lord!
58. Every thing, every place & everybody changes but God--He is always with you!
59. You cannot change the World of Man without changing his mind, & you cannot change his mind unless you change his heart, & you cannot change his heart without the inspiration of God's Spirit!
60. Just because we did it that way yesterday, doesn't mean we have to do it that way today! If you can find some easier, quicker, shorter, better, faster way to do it, do it!
61. Sometimes conditions change directions.
62. The only things you can be sure of are the Lord, hard work, suffering, constant change & joy!
63. If you don't like the way things are, change'm!
64. His Word never changes, the Lord never changes, the Gospel never changes, Salvation never changes, Christ doesn't change, but God keeps moving everyday!
65. There's nothing permanent with us except God & His Love & the Family!--Nothing has to be permanent except the Lord!--Only He changes not. (Mal.3:6.)
66. But we change plenty!--And we change according to need, according to situations, according to the individual case or what's good for the Family, what's good for the Lord's Work!

67. One of the most needed abilities in our Family is adaptability!

68. Change is one of the 7 basic needs of human happiness!--And variety is the spice of life!

69. Sometimes people get settled down in a groove, in a rut & let the roots grow down too long, & then the Lord has to uproot them, tear'm loose & really break'm & shake'm up!

70. Thank You, Lord, for helping us revive & revolute & revise & change to meet each new circumstance & each new year & each new need.

71. Thank the Lord we're still learning, still making progress, still going, still advancing, still winning, still working, still saving, still preaching & still winning souls around the World!

72. Most people don't like to change. They prefer to stay in their same old rut because it costs too much to change. It takes a lot of time & effort, thought, & real sacrifice to change.

73. The objectives of the war remain always the same: To preach the Gospel in all the World to every creature, but the battle is very fluid! Various battles & tactics & strategies vary from situation to situation & area to area, so we frequently have to be changing & advising change on minor matters.

(See also No. 6, 182, 242, 297, 565.)

74. ISA.10:9 And it was so, that when he had turned his back to go from Samuel, God gave him another heart.

75. PSA.55:19b Because they have no changes, therefore they fear not God.

76. EZE.36:26 A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh.

77. MAT.9:17 Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved.

78. MAR.7:9 And He said unto them, Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.

79. 2CO.3:18 But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord.

80. HEB.13:8 Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever.



*Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby (Heb.12:11).*

[HomeARC Note (03/04): *The Charter* and the policy statement, "Children in The Family International" (01/04), state policy and rules regarding the discipline of minors.]

1. Discipline must always be tempered with love & mercy.
2. The Lord is very tolerant & patient with the weak & the helpless, but He's a firm parent with those old enough to know better.
3. Even though saved, if you do things that are wrong, God is going to punish you for it.
4. Open rebuke is better than secret love. Pro.27:5.
5. The rod & reproof give wisdom: but a child left to himself bringeth his mother to shame. Pro.29:15
6. Correct thy son, & he shall give thee rest, yea, he shall give delight unto thy soul. Pro.29:17.
7. Let's quit disciplining people so severely and so harshly for poor little blunders of the mind.
8. Give spankings in love as a loving father in the right way--not too hard, not too harsh, no too heavy, not to the point of total discouragement & despair so that your child gives up & quits trying, or your spiritual babe just quits & backslides & goes home because he just can't live up to your standards.
9. Better never to have promised that spanking than to have promised it & not given it!
10. A law without enforcement is no law at all! A punishment without application is no punishment at all!
11. Formula for discipline: Love never fails!
12. The next time you get a spanking from God's officer of the law, the Devil, just remember, it was probably your own fault!
13. You cannot threaten judgement & then not carry it out! A father without a rod is no father at all! A law without enforcement is no law at all!
14. It's not fair to punish a child for doing something wrong that he didn't know was wrong.
15. Each child's discipline must be tailored for his particular needs, his individual personality! A lot depends on the child & what really gets through to him.
16. You need a lot of love, patience, prayer & reasoning with your children!
17. Even God's spankings are done in Love & are a proof of His Love!
18. With every rule & every law there has to be some kind of agreed forewarned punishment.
19. Spankings are worth it if they get results!
20. In the Bible, the word for child-training is chastening!
21. Thank God for the rod!
22. I frequently scold & apply the rod, but I always add Love's healing balm afterwards to soothe, encourage, comfort & give you hope of recovery & of redeeming yourself.
23. God chastises people for whom there are still some hopes.
24. When you have to use the rod of chastisement, be sure you wield it in the right spirit.
25. If there's anything any soldier has got to learn to do, 'tis to be able to take a cussin' out for his mistakes by his commanding officer, & say "Yes sir, thank you sir!"
26. Chastisement is God's intolerable compliment to show you He loves you.
27. Correction does much, but encouragement does more. Encouragement coming after censure is the sun after a shower.



28. When my father found me on the wrong track, he always provided switching facilities.
29. God's spankings are sometimes hard to take, but they're a token of His love, His "intolerable compliment" and are good for you if you learn your lesson thereby & are thus brought into harmony & happiness with Him.
30. God sometimes wields the heaviest rod on the backs of His Own children when they backslide, because they know better and are without excuse!
31. The bird whose pinion was once broken, by the grace of God will fly even higher than before.
32. God only uses broken men & women--no others will do!
33. God, our good Father, uses correction, to keep us going in the right direction.
34. If you don't take the Lord's hint, He'll sometimes give you a shove.
35. Those who can't be controlled through love have to be controlled through fear. Even the fear of God is the beginning of wisdom.
36. The Devil is the prosecuting attorney, & if there's something he can lay his finger on, he has the right to do it.--That's the rule! He has a right to afflict that body or person with punishment or chastening because of sin.
37. Get better, not bitter.
38. The prevention of crime begins in the high chair, not the electric chair.
39. The rod is a last resort, & it usually shows that there's been some failure along the line, improper teaching & training & not loving them up in the way of the Lord.
40. Don't be afraid to use the rod, & look on it as the rod of God in your hand, God's servant, & may you teach your children to fear you as God teaches His children--us--to fear Him!
41. It is easier & better to build boys than to repair men.
42. Everything else in the modern home is now controlled by the flick of a switch.--Why not the children?
43. The time to start correcting the children is before they start correcting you.
44. You cannot change your ancestors, but you can do something about your descendants.
45. You're not that indispensable, nobody is!--Not even me! If I begin to cause more trouble than I'm worth & be more of a hindrance than a help, God will get rid of me!
46. You are going through the breaking, the garden, the circumcision of the heart, & it hurts, but it hurts so good when He chastises you, for it's the assurance that He loves you & you're His child.
47. In order to bring forth the sweetness, there has to be some suffering. To bring out the beauty of the flame, something must go to ashes!
48. The best kind of so-called punishment should be chastening or child-training, something that will teach them something, train them & help them to learn the lesson, & help them never to make the same mistake again.
49. The Shepherd's rod both saves & directs the sheep, & sometimes He may have to give you a whack with it to keep you on the right path or to turn you off the wrong path.
50. "He chastens us for our profit that we might be partakers of His holiness." In other words, through it He cleanses us, He purges us from the sins & impurities in our own hearts that cause all the trouble, & we're made clean, thank God! (Heb.12:10)
51. If you make some rules too hard, then some people may get rebellious & throw them all to the wind!
52. Not that the rod of chastisement is wrong but it is the spirit in which it is wielded that counts. God Himself chastises us with His rod but He does it in love & in patience & always comforts us afterwards & tries to encourage us to keep on in spite of our mistakes.
53. Be sure you're in the right spirit as you correct those around you for their mistakes & their errors & their sins, even as God does us & as we would want others to do unto us for ours.
54. God is not only a God of love, but He is also a God of wrath & chastisement & judgement if you disobey the rules & endanger yourself, your life, our Family & the work!

(See also No. 18, 38, 39, 55, 75, 606, 718, 915, 1023, 1512, 1527.)

55. DEU.8:5,6 Thou shalt also consider in thine heart, that, as a man chasteneth his son, so the Lord thy God chasteneth thee. Therefore thou shalt keep the commandments of the Lord thy God, to walk in His ways, and to fear Him.
56. 2CH.7:13,14 If I shut up Heaven that there be no rain, or if I command the locusts to devour the land, or if I send pestilence among My people: If My people, which are called by My name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek My face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from Heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land.

57. JOB.5:17,18 Behold, happy is the man whom God correcteth: therefore despise not thou the chastening of the Almighty: For He maketh sore, and bindeth up: He woundeth, and His hands make whole.

58. JOB.33:19 He is chastened also with pain upon his bed, and the multitude of his bones with strong pain.

59. PSA.30:5 For His anger endureth but a moment; in His favour is life: weeping may endure for a night, but joy cometh in the morning.

60. PSA.73:14 For all the day long have I been plagued, and chastened every morning.

61. PSA.94:12,13 Blessed is the man whom Thou chastenest, O Lord, and teachest him out of Thy law; That Thou mayest give him rest from the days of adversity, until the pit be digged for the wicked.

62. PSA.118:17,18 I shall not die, but live, and declare the works of the Lord, The Lord hath chastened me sore: but He hath not given me over unto death.

63. PSA.119:67 Before I was afflicted I went astray: but now have I kept Thy Word.

64. PSA.119:75 I know, O Lord, that Thy judgements are right, and that Thou in faithfulness hast afflicted me.

65. PSA.141:5 Let the righteous smite me; it shall be a kindness: and let him reprove me; it shall be an excellent oil, which shall not break my head.

66. PRO.3:11,12 My son, despise not the chastening of the Lord; neither be weary of His correction: For whom the Lord loveth He correcteth; even as a father the son in whom he delighteth.

67. PRO.9:8,9 Reprove not a scorner, lest he hate thee: rebuke a wise man, and he will love thee, Give instruction to a wise man, and he will be yet wiser: teach a just man, and he will increase in learning.

68. PRO.15:32 He that refuseth instruction despiseth his own soul: but he that heareth reproof getteth understanding.

69. PRO.17:10 A reproof entereth more into a wise man than an hundred stripes into a fool.

70. PRO.19:25 Smite a scorner, and the simple will beware: and reprove one that hath understanding, and he will understand knowledge.

71. PRO.25:12 As an earring of gold, and an ornament of fine gold, so is a wise reprover upon an obedient ear.

72. PRO.27:5,6 Open rebuke is better than secret love. Faithful are the wounds of a friend; but the kisses of an enemy are deceitful.

73. PRO.28:23 He that rebuketh a man afterwards shall find more favour than he that flattereth with the tongue.

74. PRO.29:17 Correct thy son, and he shall give thee rest; yea, he shall give delight unto thy soul.

75. ECC.7:5 It is better to hear the rebuke of the wise, than for a man to hear the song of fools.

76. ECC.8:11 Because sentence against an evil work is not executed speedily, therefore the heart of the sons of men is fully set in them to do evil.

77. JER.10:24 O Lord, correct me, but with judgment: not in Thine anger, lest Thou bring me to nothing.

78. MAT.18:15-17 Moreover if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican.

79. 1CO.11:32 But when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the World.

80. 1TI.5:20 Them that sin rebuke before all, that others also may fear.

81. TIT.1:13 Rebuke them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith.

82. TIT.3:10,11 A man that is an heretick after the first and second admonition reject; Knowing that he that is such is subverted, and sinneth, being condemned of himself.

83. HEB.12:5-13a My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of Him: For whom the Lord loveth He chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom He receiveth. If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the Father chasteneth not? But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons. Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live? For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but He for our profit, that we might be partakers of His holiness. Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby. Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down, and the feeble knees; And make straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way.

84. REV.3:19 As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent.

(See also DEU.21:18-21.)

## 9. CHILDREN --{page 48}--



*Lo, children are an heritage of the Lord: and the fruit of the womb is His reward. As arrows are in the hand of a mighty man; so are children of the youth. Happy is the man that hath his quiver full of them: they shall not be ashamed, but they shall speak with the enemies in the gate (Ps.127:3-5).*

[HomeARC Note (03/04): *The Charter* and the policy statement, "Children in The Family International" (01/04), state the Family's principles, policies and attitudes regarding marriage, separation, divorce, parents and their children.]

1. Taking care of children is probably the most important job there is, molding their little lives & teaching them everyday.
2. Those babies of yesterday are the children & the stars of the shows of today!
3. To bring up a child in the way he should go, travel that way yourself.
4. Children need models more than they need critics.
5. Out of the mouth of babes come words we shouldn't have said in the first place.
6. One of the first things a man notices in a backward country is that the children are still obeying their parents.
7. Half the fun of living is to have children!
8. Remember the good old days when the only jams kids got into were plum, grape & blackberry?
9. If you see handwriting on the wall, your one-year-old probably found a pencil.
10. What children hear at home, doth soon fly abroad.
11. Children are poor men's riches.
12. Let thy child's first lesson be obedience, & he will be what thou wilt.--Ben Franklin.
13. It is hard for parents to lead a child in the straight & narrow way when they're on the other route.
14. Children thrive on praise! It's more important to praise a child for his good works & his good behaviour than it is to scold him for his bad behaviour. Always accentuate the positive!
15. God will bless you as you soak your children in His Word!
16. Children are the greatest psychologists there are!
17. Training a child is like painting a masterpiece.
18. Your children are a reflection of you.
19. Don't get too proud of your children, they're apt to just do the wrong thing at the wrong time, right after you've been bragging about them!
20. Children may "sag" as soon as you brag.
21. "Train up a child in the way he should go, & when he is old he will not depart from it." (Pro.22:6)--He may depart for awhile, but he'll come back & then he'll stick!
22. Even if your parents only prayed with you till you were 5 years old, that gave you the impression & seed of faith!

23. Don't hand me any of that stuff about "Then why did God give children to me, just to take them away again?" That's why He gives us everything, damn it!--Just to give it back to Him for His Glory! If I hadn't given my children to God you wouldn't be here!
24. Never belittle the little things or little ones.
25. It is given to children to be rich in faith.
26. A child not only has to love you, he's also got to fear you & respect you & not be allowed to get away with outright defiance.
27. If you can teach a child, you can teach anybody!
28. Most 12-years-olds are smarter than those that are 50! It's an age of looking honestly at everything & not accepting everything you're told, an age of choice, an age of decision, & that's when most people accept the Lord.
29. You can work for years to build up good habits in a child, & have them torn down in a few minutes by other kids.
30. Children are not a liability!--They're an asset, or God wouldn't have given them!
31. Children are the most sincere people in the World.
32. You can lead a child to the Lord all the time by your example & your love even before he can talk, by talking to him about the Lord & talking to him about Jesus.
33. Every child has got to have a father--even if it's not his own flesh-&-blood!
34. That tiny babe will be a king some day!--That little girl will be one of His queens!
35. God's gift is God's work.
36. Kids go more by what they see than what they hear, more by your actions than just your words.
37. Put yourself in your child's place & you'll have a better understanding of his problem.
38. It takes time & patience & understanding & lots of real love to train a child!
39. Don't forget that one of your most important jobs now is the tender loving care of your "Knew disciples"! The best thing about them is they won't backslide if you remain faithful!
40. Help "know" the "knew" ones & train them in the *know*-ledge of the Lord!
41. Your aim should be to prepare your children to go out into the World & stand with conviction & be able to give an answer to everyone who asks them.
42. Your children are one of the biggest assets you've got!
43. It's usually your fault when your children catch diseases or colds!
44. That's the most precious gift--God's greatest gift--His Love in a little child--so sweet & beautiful!--Such a treasure!
45. It's a wonderful thing if your children can't even remember when they didn't know Jesus, but have known Him all their lives.
46. The World looks to children for hope & joy & happiness & Godliness & Heavenliness. They're like His little messengers straight from Heaven.
47. Let's please let our children be children as long as we can, shall we?
48. Children are an important mission field.
49. We are one Family, & all of our children are just as much mine as they are yours.
50. What wonder-kids God's given us! More power to Kid Power! They're gonna pass us up!
51. Our children & families are our greatest witnesses, the proofs of the pudding.
52. You teach kids by your attitude & your actions, which speak much louder than your words!
53. Please be prayerful, careful, watchful & diligent in the care of your little ones & don't allow their little lives to be snuffed out or caused lifelong suffering by your own foolishness.
54. What you decide to give or not to give your children, that's what you are!
55. You will surely reap in your children exactly what you sow, especially if you don't discipline them!-- That's your job as a parent, to train up your child in the way he should go.
56. Our children are one of our major concerns & one of the greatest proofs of our pudding!
57. Kids don't require a lot of attention, but they require a little. It's the quality that counts.
58. There is nothing that is too small to be noticed & to be paid attention to & to be cautious about & to beware of when it comes to your children's training & their care.
59. Each week you're investing a little bit more in Eternity as you invest in your children, because children are forever! These eternal lives are going to last forever, & everything you've put into them is going to count!
60. Little feet were made to run errands!
61. Capture the youth & you've conquered the future!

62. Your children are the greatest disciples of all, the ones that inherit your own traits & spirituality & spirit, & in a sense, the Lord!--They're clean, God's Word says--& you train them even before they're conceived. Because when you're training yourself, & the Lord's training you, He's also training your children!

63. Even if all the rest of us fail, our children are time bombs ticking away, that are going to explode one of these days & blow this World together!

64. God's Spirit protects & overshadows little children until they have made their choice or come to the age of accountability.

65. Every child's discipline must be tailored for his particular needs, his individual personality.

66. Many adults have a double standard, a stricter one for their children than for themselves!

67. Children are the gift of God, but they're also the work of God, & that gift is a lot of hard work.

68. Your child learns more in the first five years of his life--85% of his total learning--than he'll learn in all the rest!

69. Children are forever!--The only things you have on this Earth that God gives you that you can have forever & will go with you through eternity besides the souls you win!

70. A child's guardian angel stands before the Lord & is constantly protecting him and has the Lord's ear, and in case he needs something, "his angel doth always behold the face of the Father."

71. Your little children are in such close communication with the Lord that they see the Lord Himself!

72. What a comforting thought to know your little ones do always behold the face of Jesus to constantly comfort and reassure them in time of distress or fear!

73. Do your children see Jesus' sweet and kindly face in the night seasons and in sweet dreams to always comfort them even when you're not there?--They do if you love Jesus!--He's there with them if you have Jesus!--Have you? Do they?

74. As the twig is bent, so the tree is grown, & the present is built on the foundations of the past.

75. You can tell that a child is growing up when he stops asking where he came from & starts telling where he's going.

76. It often happens that the apple of a parent's eye is the kid who is rotten to the core.

77. A teenager is a little judge who sits on a throne judging everything & everybody as to whether they're right or wrong, & there's nothing in-between!

78. Our children are our biggest attraction, & some day they're going to be our greatest witness & our greatest proof!

79. Praise is one of the most important parts of child-training!

80. As Hannah to the temple gate

Her dearest treasure bore,

So Lord to Thee we consecrate

Our child forever more.

O Saviour, all he is is Thine

And all he yet may be,

Oh shelter him with love divine,

And draw him near to Thee.

81. The factory that produces the most important product is the home.

82. The best education you can give your child is the Word.

83. A law without enforcement is no law at all! A punishment without application is no punishment at all!

84. If a child lives with criticism he learns to condemn.

85. Sophisticated, Worldly-wise,

I searched for God & found Him not,

Until one day, the World forgot,

I found Him in my baby's eyes.

86. Many parents are so anxious to give their children what they didn't have, that they neglect to give them what they did have.

87. The best thing to spend on children is time.

88. What is learnt in the cradle lasts to the tomb.

89. "Sparens" are those who spare the rod when offspring need attention, & they find their troubles multiplied in ways too sad to mention.

90. Christ was one child who knew more than His parents--yet He submitted to them.

91. A diplomatic teacher sent this note home to all parents: "If you promise not to believe everything your child says happens at school, I'll promise not to believe everything he says happens at home."

92. A child is clean & truth receives, if at least one parent truly believes.

93. No wonder it's tough to be a teenager. Half the grownups tell him to find himself, & the other half tell him to get lost!

94. Guns with mission kids don't fit--

Their hands are just too full of lit!

95. Really, the younger generation isn't so bad, it's just that they have more critics than models.

96. You childcare workers are doing one of the most important and tremendous jobs in our whole ministry, as well as one of the toughest and most trying and difficult!

97. If you scream at each other, your children will scream at each other!

98. The World of tomorrow is what the parents of today make it.

99. Children are like flowers in your garden! They're a gift of God, but you've got to take care of them!

100. The Lord entrusts you with children to show you how much He loves you & how much you need Him.

101. Your little lambs & the souls you've won are all God has given you that can follow you from this world into the next!

102. Nothing is more important than God's children and their care, for they are His Kingdom!

103. We must always have a meek & quiet spirit about us which engenders trust & faith & confidence & peace, rest & assurance in others as well, for our spirits are contagious.

104. You have to cause children to respect you before you can get them to love you.

105. If we can't have teenagers that behave in the Family, we just won't have any teenagers!

106. You can't have teenagers without a father! No woman can control teenage boys unless she's a real toughy! It takes a man that can really lower the boom on'm & apply the rod & sock it to'm!

107. The Devil hates little children, he tries to kill them right & left, he's in the murdering business, because they're close to God, straight from Heaven, & another new member of the Kingdom of God!

108. Little children, little children who love their Redeemer

Are the pure ones, are the bright ones, His loved & His Own.

Like the stars of the morning, His bright crown adorning,

They shall shine in their beauty,

Bright gems for His crown.

109. It'd take half the joy out of living if you didn't have children & a future to look forward to & the joy of watching your children grow!

110. Bringing up children is simple if you don't have any. It's easy for childless people to give advice on raising children.

111. Children are samples of the citizenry of Heaven!--Little angels dropped from the sky!

112. Children are what give life to this World! Joy & beauty & thrills & excitement & [the fruit of] sex & everything is children, that's the ultimate!

113. Two years old, that's the time to get saved, & they'll do it just because you tell them to!

114. Anybody who can keep the attention of little children has really got to put something into it--lots of action, lots of motion & lots of noise!

115. Problem children are usually the result of problem parents!

116. When God gives you children, then your first duty to God is to those children! That is God's work!

117. Never tell a little child anything that's not so or any of these big fairy tales about the stork brought you & Santa Claus & all that baloney, because he believes you, he really trusts you!

118. When you're reading kids stories, always be sure to differentiate between the ones that are true & the ones that aren't true.

119. I don't think children should just be allowed free rein to watch any movies they want without supervision & without your choice & selection.

120. Children need discipline, but it must always be tempered with love & mercy.--Remember that prayer? You always have to weigh their motives.

121. May God help us all to be good stewards of the most precious gifts He's given us: Our children! We really can't afford to lose any! Please treasure & protect yours!

122. If somehow you haven't dwelt in the Word, kept the Word & taught your children the Word & made them examples of the Word, then you have failed.

123. If you are not absorbing the Word yourself & living the Word & preaching the Word & practicing the Word & teaching your children the Word & making them good examples of the Word, you're failing.

124. If you hold your children back from God's best, God will surely take them away from you, or cause them to be a disappointment & a heartbreak; but if you give them to God, you can't lose. Your children don't belong to you; they belong to the Lord.

125. If I hadn't given my children to God, you wouldn't be here! If I hadn't forsaken mine for Christ's sake, you wouldn't even have yours!--Nor today's Letters!

126. Take your children litnessing & provisioning & learn to use your children for God's glory.

127. Train your children in the way they should go as disciples, not as school products.

128. Our children ought to feel loved by all Family members.

129. Our children are the children of the Family, therefore the entire Family is responsible for them.

130. Our children & the example of our own families can do more to win hearts with the living proof than all the singing & dancing & skits & show biz in the whole World!

131. God puts the Kingdom of His Own children first!--Do you?

132. Children have an intuition for sincerity & honesty & truthfulness. They are very sensitive in the spirit & can pretty well sense who's good & who's bad, who's honest & who's a liar!

133. Probably the final greatest influence on your life outside of the Lord is your children. They influence you to do good, be good & try to do what's right & show them what's right.

134. The best kind of so-called punishment should be chastening or child-training, something that will teach them something, train them & help them to learn the lesson & help them never to make the same mistake again.

135. You shouldn't punish a child for doing something wrong if he didn't know it was wrong.

136. You'll find your own children have higher standards for you than sometimes you have for yourself.

137. Small children have feelings & they must be tenderly protected from thinking that we don't love them or we don't care.

138. It's never wise to leave your child or have your child leave you without a real loving good-bye session to let the child know that you love them & that you'll be back soon.

139. I believe you can lead a child to the Lord as soon as he is able to talk.

140. You can lead your child to Jesus now! Do it today! Tomorrow may be much harder! The sooner the better.

141. The fewer rules you have the better. Don't make rules so hard that the child can't keep them. If you make the rules too hard, then they can get rebellious & throw them all to the wind!

142. If you don't pay children enough attention then they know one sure way of getting your attention--doing something you don't like!

143. Put yourself in your child's place & then you may have a better understanding of his problem.

144. When a child is afflicted, God is dealing with the parents or those who are responsible for that child.

145. You cannot always protect your children forever from all evil everywhere.

146. If children never had any trouble at all, if they never had any little accidents or sickness or anything, how would you ever teach them about trusting the Lord & how to pray?

147. There's no reason why any of our children should be ashamed of their faith or their food or their Family or any of their beliefs. They ought to have the guts & conviction to be taught by their parents that they are better than other children.

148. Your children will very likely do a bigger job for God than you have done or ever will do, if you will only train, teach & lead them right & set a good example.

149. Every time you don't say no, that means yes as far as they're concerned.

150. Kids learn faster from other kids than any other way.

151. You need to operate in the spirit when disciplining a child.

152. It's always good to prepare children for new experiences they're going to have & even possible disappointments. To hold kids' attention, you've really got to give them action.

153. I think that children should sing happy childlike songs, not big heavy deep adult sad message songs.

154. Children must be taught the difference between outright lying & mere pretending & play-acting as we do in our skits.

155. Children are great mimics, great mimes, & this is mostly how they learn, by imitation.

156. We must teach children the difference between reality & imagination, between the truth & lying.

157. It's not right to encourage a child to deliberately lie or to tolerate it or allow it, no matter how cute or clever it might be.

158. When adults get frightened, fear is contagious & children catch it too!

159. Don't ever lie & deceive children.

160. I don't believe in taking kids to see any movie in which there is a lot of violence. In fact, small children ought not to be taken to any kind of unpleasant movies.

...

162. You can't expect most children to sit & listen to a long talk & sermon.

163. Most children are more sensitive & more easily hurt & more fragile than most adults, but on the other hand they're usually more resilient & bounce back quicker.

164. You don't have to spend a great deal of time with children to make them know you really appreciate them.

165. Put yourself in as close a situation as you can think of to your child's situation & think about how you would feel--then you can get a better understanding of him!

166. Put yourself in the children's place as much as possible & try to be understanding & explain as much as possible.

167. It's natural for children to pick up the negative & the bad because we are born in sin & we are born sinners & we have to learn how to change.

168. Laws too gentle are seldom obeyed; too severe, seldom executed.

169. Children are samples of the citizenry of Heaven!--Little angels dropped from the sky! They're really samples of Heaven until they are corrupted & polluted here on Earth.

170. Children need to be able to see the other side & know the difference & choose the good & eschew the evil.

171. With children nothing is impossible, & all things are possible in the World of make-believe & imagination.

172. A child often lives in a dream World. Just be sure they don't dwell there too much & lose contact with reality. Don't rebuke them for sometimes having their heads in the clouds--just keep their feet on the ground!

173. One little remark, & children may never forget it!

174. A Jesus baby is a testimony to your love & sacrifice for Jesus & others. "Greater love hath no man than this!" (Jn.15:13)--And to the Lord's love for you, to trust you with the creation & care of an everlasting immortal life to enjoy forever!

175. Children & childlike folks seem to need pictures of Jesus & Bible stories.

176. The little minds of our children are so impressionable!--They seldom ever forget what they see!

177. Parents should preview movies before they're shown to kids!--Or know the general theme or characteristics of the series to be sure it's good for them. The criterion is not "will it hurt'm" but "is it good for'm."--Is it edifying, profitable, inspiring & does it teach a good lesson? Most cartoons do not.

178. A boy has two jobs: One is just being a boy. The other is growing up to be a man.

179. Teenagers are extremists. It takes them a few years to learn moderation & realize that there is a certain in-between & that not everything is all bad or all good, including their parents.

180. Teenagers are young adults. God has made them to want independence at that age. He has made them to want to make their own decisions & to be free once they've been taught & trained & reared.

181. Every teenager has become a little judge of what is right & what is wrong, & is judging everything by their own conscience, actually by the training you have given them, & usually their judgments are very extreme & dictatorial & they're quite positive when they're right & positive when you're wrong!

182. There are times when you just have to let teenagers make their own decisions. If you've trained them right, they'll almost invariably, eventually make the right decision, either through bitter experience or just through obedience because they know you & the Lord are right & they know they're wrong.

183. "When they are old they will not depart from it." (Pr.22:6) They may depart from you for awhile & they may depart even from your rules & standards, etc., & want a taste of this World & want to try out having their own way, but they'll soon find out that their mama & daddy were right, & God was right, but they just want to try & see, test it out for themselves.

184. If kids can't get attention by being good, they can get it by being naughty!

185. You have got to decide on what rules must be obeyed without fail & without exception & what rules can be sometimes relaxed & exceptions made. And you have to have the wisdom of God to know the difference, which is which.--Which ones you must enforce without fail & which you can be merciful about. Even God does that.

186. Under the Law of Love God has even more rigidly enforced some rules, but He has relaxed some others where they're not as tough. You have to have the wisdom of the Lord to know the difference, when to stick to your guns & when to give up & let children have their way.



187. Each child is a personality all their own & each one has to be dealt with according to their own particular characteristics & personality.

188. Don't make any rules you don't have to. The fewer rules you have the better.

189. We should do with our children as God is with us: He tries to persuade us to do things through the right loving motivation because we want to do what's right, because we love Him & we love others, not just because we're made to, forced to, or because of fear of punishment; that's the old law!

190. For a child to be trained by love takes a lot more time & patience, but they'll be a far better child & much more obedient if they are persuaded to obey through love, rather than by breaking their will & forcing them to obey for fear of punishment!

191. Some parents have really been tough on their kids, hard, cruel & mean, & even if they were right, the kids never felt any love, no real concern, no reasoning, no rationalization, no explaining, no motivation, & so they never learned love, love of God, love of parents, love of others. They just never learned the right motivation. They only did it because they had to & were made to & they would only do as much as they were made to do, whereas love goes much further, even all the way. It'll go to the death & die for someone else, to do the right thing. And that's the way you have to be with children.

192. Some parents break their child's stubborn will by force, but that child will always be stubborn anyhow whenever he gets a chance. He'll only obey the law as long as the law enforcer is there & the minute he gets out of sight of his parents he will go wild & won't know how to handle freedom or choice!

193. The best law is Love & along with Love comes reasoning, persuasion, explaining, teaching, the Word & all the rest so that the children can make their own decisions, because they'll stick to it far better if they decide to do it themselves because they want to do right! That'll go a lot further than only doing right because you're there to make'm!

194. If the gentling & the persuading & the love & the reasoning & the leading & the teaching doesn't work & they're still stubbornly wilfully disobedient, then you've got to crack the whip.

195. Some parents never forget to punish when their kids are bad, but they forget to reward when their kids are good!

196. After it's really been made clear & children understand what you're talking about & you know it & they know it & they go ahead & test you again, that's time to apply the hand!

197. When you're disciplining children, don't ever make a threat or a warning that you don't fulfil. Because if you warn them not to do a certain thing & promise them a punishment & they do it just to test you, & then you don't give them the chastisement you promised, they'll figure, "Well, I didn't get in trouble that time, so I'll try it again."

198. Inconsistent discipline is the worst kind of discipline! It's no discipline at all. You have to be consistent. Be frank, be fair, be honest, be loving, but be firm & then be consistent.

199. Don't make your rules so strict that you're going to be sorry if you do have to keep them or make others keep them.

200. One of the worst things you can do is to give punishment that is too severe, too harsh, more than the crime or disobedience really justifies.

201. With children, you need to make it very clear what the rules are, & one of the best things you can do is to get them to agree to the rules.

202. Try to let children make a decision themselves to obey & be good, without threatening. Forbear threatening if you can, although I've found it does a lot of good sometimes.

203. You've gotta keep kids busy! They like to work & do things, but they have a little hard time thinking up things to do, so you've gotta think'm up for'm.

204. Our greatest responsibility right now is our own children! We need to mold their minds & educate them & inspire them & encourage them, we really need to build up their faith.

205. Children should not have to be involved nor burdened with matters which are above their sphere & their line of duty or their comprehension or even their capability of bearing these things.

206. If children ask you a question you should try to answer it immediately. They're important & they need to be paid attention to. If you just brush them aside like something else is more important, pretty soon they get the impression that you don't think they're important at all.

207. Sometimes when you're with children you just have to have fun with them; everything doesn't have to be educational. For goodness sake, let your hair down & have a little fun once in awhile!

208. Thank the Lord for our children! I think they have had superior training, background, teaching & experience above any children perhaps that have ever existed on the face of this Earth. They have been taught pure

doctrine, real enlightenment, freedom & a natural attitude toward the natural things of life. ... They're learning to live in the way God originally created man to live.

209. We have a more healthy, normal, sane relationship & religion than any other that I know of, & our children are becoming the living proof of that!--Smart, well-educated, well-behaved, understanding, wise, full of faith & wisely trained in the nurture & admonition of the Lord. I think our children are the best kids on Earth.

210. Our children are going to be the salvation of the future! They're going to be God's terrorists of the Tribulation!--Rising up in opposition to the Antichrist government & defying it & performing miracles & God doing mighty signs & wonders to protect them & keep them & help them to continue to preach the Gospel in spite of everything. God's going to take care of them right through to the end & they're going to see Jesus when He comes.

(See also No. 315, 330B, 371, 376, 389, 397, 400, 582, 587, 606, 608, 619, 687, 688, 708, 715, 718, 722, 728, 737, 739, 744, 745, 746, 753, 773, 779, 780, 782, 785, 786, 787, 788, 789, 790, 794, 795, 827, 863, 827, 830, 835, 878, 900, 915, 987, 990, 995, 1043, 1107, 1108, 1109, 1135, 1136, 1137, 1138, 1141, 1142, 1218, 1219, 1220, 1396, 1397, 1398, 1512, 1527, *Story of Davidito*, *Techi's Life Story*, *HH2*, *Childcare Handbook I, II, III*.)

211. EXO.4:2 And the Lord said unto him, What is that in thine hand?

212. EXO.20:12 Honour thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee.

213. LEV.19:3 Fear every man his mother, and his father.

214. ISA.2:11b And the child did minister unto the Lord before Eli the priest.

215. ISA.2:18 But Samuel ministered before the Lord, being a child, girded with a linen ephod.

216. ISA.11:6 A little child shall lead them.

217. PSA.144:12 That our sons may be as plants grown up in their youth; that our daughters may be as corner stones, polished after the similitude of a palace.

218. PRO.8:32,33 Hearken unto Me, O ye children: for blessed are they that keep My ways. Hear instruction, and be wise, and refuse it not.

219. PRO.10:1 A wise son maketh a glad father.

220. PRO.13:1 A wise son heareth his father's instruction: but a scorner heareth not rebuke.

221. PRO.17:6 Children's children are the crown of old men; and the glory of children are their fathers.

222. PRO.17:25 A foolish son is a grief to his father, and bitterness to her that bare him.

223. PRO.20:11 Even a child is known by his doings, whether his work be pure, and whether it be right.

224. PRO.20:20 Whoso curseth his father or his mother, his lamp shall be put out in obscure darkness.

225. PRO.28:7 Whoso keepeth the law is a wise son.

226. ISA.11:6b A little child shall lead them.

227. ISA.28:9,10 Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts. For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little.

228. MAL.3:5 I will be a swift witness against...those that oppress...the widow, and the fatherless.

229. MAT.18:3-6 And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the Kingdom of Heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the Kingdom of Heaven. And whoso shall receive one such little child in My Name receiveth Me. But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in Me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea.

230. MAT.18:10 Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, That in Heaven their angels do always behold the face of My Father which is in Heaven.

231. MAT.19:14 But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not, to come unto Me: for of such is the Kingdom of Heaven.

232. MAR.7:27 But Jesus said unto her, Let the children first be filled: for it is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast it unto the dogs.

233. MAR.9:36,37 And He took a child, and set him in the midst of them: and when He had taken him in His arms, He said unto them, Whosoever shall receive one of such children in My Name, receiveth Me: and whosoever shall receive Me, receiveth not Me, but Him that sent Me.

234. MAR.9:42 And whosoever shall offend one of these little ones that believe in Me, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea.

235. MAR.10:14b,15 Suffer the little children to come unto Me, and forbid them not: for of such is the Kingdom of God. Verily I say unto you, whosoever shall not receive the Kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein.

236. 1CO.13:11 When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became man, I put away childish things.

237. EPH.6:1,2 Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right. Honour thy father and mother; (which is the first commandment with promise).

238. COL.3:20 Children, obey your parents in all things: for this is well pleasing unto the Lord.

239. HEB.2:13 Behold I and the children which God hath given me.

240. 3JO.4 I have no greater joy than to hear that my children walk in truth.

## **10. CHOICE & DECISION MAKING** --{page 68}--



*In all thy ways acknowledge Him, & He shall direct thy paths (Pro.3:6).*

1. Most of the great decisions that I have made in my life as a leader have been lonely decisions where only I & God stood together.

2. You don't have to always give people an answer on the spot or make an immediate decision. If you don't know what to do, be honest & humble & admit it & say, "I'm sorry, but I don't know."

3. Most of the time God uses your good common sense & the gifts of the Spirit that He's already given you, such as wisdom, knowledge, etc., rather than some direct, spectacular, miraculous, supernatural revelation!

4. To every man there opens a high way & a low  
And every man decides the way that he shall go.

5. Let us realise that what happens around us is largely outside our control, but that the way we choose to react to it is inside our control.

6. If the spiritual is OK, everything else will be all right too.

7. Our deeds determine us, as much as we determine our deeds.

8. When a decision has been made & the die is cast, then abandon the alternatives.

9. Many are called but few get up.

10. Making up your mind is like making up a bed; it usually helps to have someone on the other side.

11. Circumstances alter cases.

12. Life is a voyage in which we choose neither vessel nor weather, but much can be done in the management of the sails & the guidance of the helm.

13. Commitment brings peace.

14. If you're His child & you let Him choose, He's going to choose that which is best for you & that which will make you happy.

15. Some of God's future is set, but within the range of that future, God has many options, some of which we can change by our decisions.

16. God knew ahead of time you were going to believe & receive Him by free will & free choice, so you were already predestined & foreordained of the Lord to be saved because He knew what choice you were going to make!

17. Have you chosen your job in the next life? Well, the Lord probably will give you your choice!
18. God isn't going to make you do anything you don't want to do, but He may make you awful sorry you didn't!
19. God chooses you, because you choose Him.
20. Apparently the spirits & angels must have some choice, some freedom of action, or Satan & his angels couldn't have rebelled.
21. God leaves a great deal up to you & your faith, whether you want it or not, whether you need it or not, whether the Lord needs it or not for His Kingdom.
22. If you choose the Lord & choose his service, God will choose someone to help you!
23. This whole game of life is constant choices.
24. If you're not yet certain that a thing is God's will, then the best thing to do is to wait on the Lord.
25. Whatever glorifies God, that's what's right!
26. Be sure to find God's will for you, even if it's not God's will for anybody else.
27. One man's meat could be another man's poison!
28. God may give you your choice, but He alone knows what's best, so you'd better ask Him to find out where He wants you!
29. Knowing what choice you were going to make, God ordained you to be saved before He even created the World! I believe in both predestination & choice.
30. The Lord is trying to teach you to make decisions, & one of the main principles involved in reaching a decision is: Don't start talking--pray!
31. He knows, He loves, He cares,  
Nothing His Truth can dim!  
He gives His very best to those  
Who leave the choice with Him!
32. Why didn't God stop Hitler? If God had stepped in & intervened & stopped Hitler, He would have had to stop every sinner in the World from doing his sin & wickedness!--And when He does that, that will be the End!
33. I don't like to make snap judgements, unless I get a sudden direct revelation from the Lord.
34. If you love the Lord with all your heart, your personal desires are usually the right ones, because you only want to please Him.
35. Contrary to popular opinion, God does not usually choose for you. You have to choose for yourself, find His will for yourself, seek him diligently to know His will.
36. The main reason we're here in the first place is to learn how to make decisions under God's guidance, from the Garden of Eden to the present.
37. I believe in trying to give a man his choice to do what he has the faith for.
38. What is always the first thing you should think about when you begin to meditate & pray about God's answer? Think about similar situations in the Word--what did they do?
39. Are you going to live for today to save your life & eventually lose it?--Or are you going to live for Christ & lose your life & eventually save it forever? The choice is up to you!
40. God will not usually override human choice.
41. All decisions of any kind should never be dictated by one person without agreement by other leaders &/or the rest of the body, as seems necessary.
42. I may not know when it am, but I shor knows when it ain't!
43. First impressions are usually the right ones, if you're truly asking the Lord.
44. You were foreordained or predestined because of the choice God knew you were going to make.
45. When you have to make a choice & don't make it, that is in itself a choice.
46. The most dangerous enemy you've got is yourself. All Heaven is at your command, but you still have the majesty of choice & your stubborn spirit can do as it damn well pleases!
47. There are some things that God cannot do, because He will not do them, because He has bound Himself within certain limitations, & confined Himself to not interfering with your power of choice, because you have to make the decision & He's not going to force you to do His will.
48. Whenever you confront people with the truth you precipitate a crisis & they have to make a decision!
49. There's nothing that tears you apart and wears you down quicker than indecision.
50. The minute you make the decision & begin to obey, God does all the rest!
51. Some people like to have you make decisions for them so they don't have to put forth the effort in prayer & sober analysing of the situation...especially when later they might be blamed for it!--But that's the price of making decisions!

52. That should be considered long, which can be decided but once.
53. Not all open doors are of the Lord; some of them can be tricks of the Devil.
54. Every time of testing & trial & sifting is a time of decision.
55. When people fail, then God has to step in & intervene in the affairs of man.
56. He has to give us the opportunity to have our own way and choice to see if we will do our own will, His will or the Devil's will.
57. The marvel & mystery of human will is that it's almost as though Life's a scale, & human will is a finger that can tip the scale either way.
58. Indecision is nearly always the worst mistake you can make.
59. That's what you're here for--to learn to make decisions!
60. Our whole life & experience here on Earth is for the purpose of learning to make wise decisions.
61. I don't believe everything I hear & I don't follow everything I hear, but at least I listen. I try to weigh it & see if it's got any value or any worth.
62. Sometimes you can reach a decision by the process of elimination, weighing all the things in favour of the decision & all the things against that particular choice, sort of a balance sheet to try to weigh the advantages & the disadvantages of a particular move or plan.
63. After you've made a decision, always pray, "Lord, if we've made the wrong decision, please stop us."
64. There's a certain leeway & allowance for variations of choice in the will of God as long as it stays within certain boundaries, within the tunnel of God's will. Of course there's always the best even within the tunnel, but as long as you stay in the correct general area He'll give you your choice.
65. In making decisions the Lord expects you to use your own good common sense & the wisdom He has given you by the Spirit.
66. God doesn't necessarily have to give you a special revelation to help you make a choice, He just gives you wisdom & leading of the Spirit & a certain feeling. If you arrive at a decision this way, then you simply proceed along this line unless God stops you. You go on the last orders you received unless you receive new contrary orders.
67. In one decision the Early Church made, it didn't say that God's Spirit told them or gave them any revelation; it just said "it seemed good to all of them" that they should do so-and-so.
68. God's will is sort of like a tunnel--within this tunnel you can go back & forth & choose your path within the will of God, & there's a whole lot of variety.
69. I seldom ever made a major decision that affected the whole Family without getting the Family together in prayer. Usually God had already shown me what to do or I felt led to do a certain thing or go in a certain direction or to a certain location, but I'd always have the Family together for prayer to check it out with them & see if it seemed good to all of them as well. If they had any other ideas, objections or could bring up any points, why not? Discussion helps & usually confirms the right choice.
70. In making decisions we go pretty much by common sense & a multitude of counsellors, conditions, circumstances, fleeces, Scriptures, leadings, all kinds of ways of finding the will of God.
71. There are a multitude of factors involved in finding the will of the Lord sometimes. They don't always agree necessarily, but usually the majority of them do.
72. Sometimes finding the will of God is to go ahead & make a decision, & if it's the wrong one He'll sure stop you! God may have reasons or know there are reasons why something else may be better & that's where we have to keep really in tune & make sure we follow the Lord.
73. One sure way of finding the will of God is to make the wrong decision, because He'll almost always immediately correct you if you're willing to be shown.
74. I've found out you can solve a lot of problems just by using common sense, just thinking it through & thinking it out & saying, now what do we have to do that we must do & what can we leave out that we don't have to do & what can we do without?
75. How do you find the Will of God?--By having no will of your own!
76. For a Christian, what is a decision?--What are you trying to find?--The Will of God!
77. When we don't make our own choices, we're shrinking from our job & our responsibility & the main purpose for which we were placed here, & that is to make decisions in the Lord & under His guidance!
78. Man was created & put here to make a choice between good & evil, to do right or wrong, to serve God or himself or the Devil, & to learn the benefits of serving God--reaping the joy & happiness & pleasures of keeping God's loving rules for his own good & worshipping & thanking God for it all in return, as grateful children of their Heavenly Father.
79. The Lord has put us here in this World to make decisions, to do right or wrong.

80. You may have temporary relief when making a decision even if it's the wrong one, but you'll have Hell to pay in the long run!

81. A lot of things may not be the right thing or even the wrong thing, but just not the thing that God wants done the most.

82. You must be careful not to jump to conclusions. To jump to a conclusion means to jump to the end too quick before you should get there, & too quickly into thinking something you're not sure about yet.

83. That's why people want you to make their decisions for them--so they won't get blamed for it; they want you to take the blame in case anything goes wrong.

84. Don't go jumping the gun & making premature decisions about things!

85. The Lord probably doesn't give us too much specific information on exactly what's going to happen & exactly when it's going to happen because for one reason a lot depends on us, on what we do & how fast we get the job done & the choices & decisions we make.

86. We can't go dogmatically predicting the future when so much of it is dependent on us & what we do & how well we do it, or even whether we do it!

87. The Lord has promised to give us signs. Watch for the hints, the indications, the little signs of the times regarding events & also signs in individuals, in their lives, their minds, their hearts, their actions, their reactions, their diligence, faithfulness & loyalty.

88. We don't always know exactly what to do yet because we don't need to know.

(See also No. 4, 74, 127, 238, 317C, 829, 1324, 1394.)

89. DEU.30:19 I call Heaven and Earth to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore choose life, that both thou and thy seed may live.

90. PSA.27:11 Teach me Thy way, O Lord, and lead me in a plain path, because of mine enemies.

91. PSA.37:23 The steps of a good man are ordered by the Lord: and he delighteth in His way.

92. PRO.19:21 There are many devices in a man's heart; nevertheless the counsel of the Lord, that shall stand.

93. PRO.20:5 Counsel in the heart of man is like deep water; but a man of understanding will draw it out.

94. PRO.20:18 Every purpose is established by counsel: and with good advice make war.

95. PRO.24:6 For by wise counsel thou shalt make thy war: and in multitude of counsellors there is safety.

96. PRO.24:26 Every man shall kiss his lips that giveth a right answer.

97. PRO.27:9 Ointment and perfume rejoice the heart: so doth the sweetness of a man's friend by hearty counsel.

98. 2CO.13:1 In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be established.

(See also DEU.30:19,20; 2SA.24:12-14.)



*For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord (Lk.2:11).*

1. Christmas is Love come down to Earth,  
A Gift to the World of infinite worth!
2. If you love all that Christmasy materialism of downtown & its Christmas shopping, then there's something wrong with you.
3. May the Lord deliver us & our children from this worldly Christmas-shopping spirit!
4. There's no use having a Christmas tree unless you can make it a testimony or a witness!
5. It is Christmas on the highway,  
In the thronging busy mart;  
But the dearest truest Christmas,  
Is the Christmas in the heart.
6. Christmas' present at the start,  
Was a gift from Someone's heart.  
Christ is Christmas,  
That day is His.  
That's what Christmas presence is.
7. We hear the Christmas angels,  
The great glad tidings tell;  
O come to us, abide with us,  
Our Lord Emmanuel.
8. Christmas is when Love is king,  
And Love can do most anything!
9. He had no royal palace,  
Only a stable bare.  
He had no watchful servants,  
An ox & ass stood there.  
But light shone forth from where He lay,  
The King of Love upon the hay!
10. Christmas will always bring new hope, new courage--As always through the darkness the Christmas Star shines its pledge of peace & freedom.
11. Love came down at Christmas,  
Love all lovely, Love Divine.  
Love was born at Christmas,  
Stars and angels gave the sign.
12. Worship we our Saviour,  
Love incarnate, Love divine.  
Worship we our Jesus,  
And by His Light we shine.
13. Christmas time, it goes so fast,  
It's here and then it's gone.  
But if you have Christ in your heart,

Then Christmas will live on.

14. Christmas time, O Christmas time!

--Always live in my heart and mind.

Lord help me not to go astray!

--But to live each day like Christmas day.

15. Don't let the true meaning of Christmas & the true symbolism of the tree & the genuine Christ spirit of Christmas become drowned in all the confusion of this World & its worldliness!

16. You can help the World to turn their empty Xmas into a joyous Christmas!

17. I believe in celebrating Christmas as Jesus' Birthday with a nice Christmas dinner, Christmas communion, & a nice time of Family fellowship.

18. The Christmas tree itself can be made to symbolise the beauty of life & living.

19. The decorations that you hang upon the tree are like the gifts of the Spirit.

20. Give the ultimate Christmas gift--Jesus!

21. Christmas is one time the World is compelled to recognise Jesus--it's His Birthday!

22. For the Son of God was given,

And was hung upon a tree,

And God's greatest gift for Christmas

Is His Love for you & me.

23. Happy Birthday to You, Happy Birthday to You,

Happy Birthday dear Jesus, Happy Birthday to You!

(See also No. 636, 638, 944, 949, 1063.)

24. MAT.2:1-12 Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem, Saying, Where is He that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen His star in the east, and are come to worship Him. When Herod the king had heard these things, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. And when he had gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born. And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judaea: for thus it is written by the prophet, And thou Bethlehem, in the land of Juda, art not the least among the princes of Juda: for out of thee shall come a Governor, that shall rule My people Israel. Then Herod, when he had privily called the wise men, enquired of them diligently what time the star appeared. And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go and search diligently for the young Child; and when ye have found Him, bring me word again, that I may come and worship Him also. When they had heard the king, they departed; and, lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young Child was. When they saw the star they rejoiced with exceeding great joy. And when they were come into the house, they saw the young Child with Mary His mother, and fell down, and worshipped Him: and when they had opened their treasures they presented unto Him gifts; gold, frankincense, and myrrh. And being warned of God in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.

25. LUK.2:1-17 And it came to pass in those days, that there went out a decree from Caesar Augustus, that all the World should be taxed. (And this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was governor of Syria.) And all went to be taxed, every one into his own city. And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judaea, unto the city of David, which is called Bethlehem; (because he was of the house and lineage of David:) To be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with child. And so it was, that, while they were there, the days were accomplished that she should be delivered. And she brought forth her firstborn Son, and wrapped Him in swaddling clothes, and laid Him in a manger; because there was no room in the inn. And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night. And lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid. And the angel said unto them. Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger. And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying, Glory to God in the highest and on Earth peace, good will toward men. And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said to one another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us. And they came with haste, and found Mary, and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger. And when they had seen it, they make known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this Child.

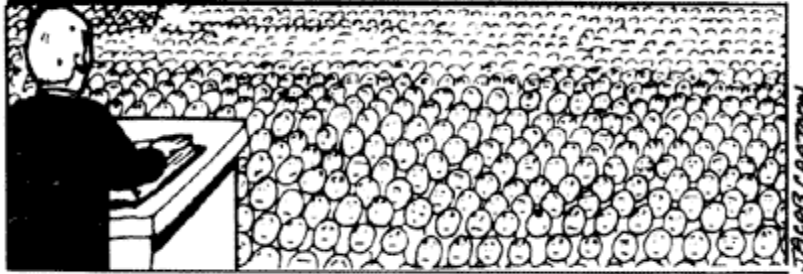
26. JOH.6:38 For I came down from Heaven, not to do Mine own will, but the will of Him that sent Me.



27. JOH.8:42. Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love Me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of Myself, but He sent Me.

## 12. CHURCHIANITY & ORGANISED RELIGION

--{page 80}--



*Making the Word of God of none effect through your tradition (Mk.7:13).*

1. Thank God for all true churches of Jesus Christ, whatever their denomination.
2. A seminary is usually a cemetery for faith.
3. Organised Christianity has probably done more to retard the ideals that were its Founder's than any other agency in the world.
4. Let's not get as self-righteous as the churchy system who condemn us totally just because we are not like them. Let's not get so Holier-than-thou that we condemn even the few good things that are still left in the System.
5. The people who have joined the Church System have stepped out of the action in the arena, into the onlookers of the grandstand.
6. The first thing that old church will do, is start by criticising you.
7. There are no second-generation Christians. Every new generation either has to personally drop out or cop out.
8. Because the churches wouldn't share what little knowledge they had about the Spirit World & how God operates it, God took the knowledge of it away!
9. The way of the world is to praise dead saints & to persecute living ones.
10. There's too much churchianity & not enough Christianity.
11. There are many people who think that Sunday is a sponge to wipe out all the sins of the week.
12. Some families think that Sunday morning church is like a convention. Each sends a delegate.
13. I hate the System from which I came with a perfect hatred, because it is a lie & a delusion & a deceit & is damning souls to Hell when it ought to be saving them!
14. In most churches where I got to preaching I really got carried away--by the ushers usually!
15. How can the Lord bless those preachers when they're so far off the track in some of their endtime doctrines?--Because, nevertheless the Gospel is preached.
16. Christians are now the spectators in the Coliseum, not the martyrs.
17. No wonder the World has become Godless & communist & gone to the Devil--the church has absolutely totally miserably failed in its job of witnessing to the World!
18. No wonder the World has gone to Hell & is lost, when the whole Church has given the biggest job that there is to be done of witnessing & winning souls to just one man, the preacher!
19. These churches & preachers & evangelists really missed one of the biggest things they could have had by fighting sex all the time!
20. The church had its place, particularly to give at least some religious training to youth & children, some kind of sowing of the seed, casting the bread on the water so that someday it would have some effect.
21. The Saducee was SAD, YOU SEE, because he didn't believe in the Resurrection! The Pharisee was FAIR, I SEE, because he figured he was very fair to see & very religious & righteous!

22. All false religions always martyr the followers of the true religion.
23. Most people go to church three times in their life: The first time they're sprinkled with water, the next time with rice, & the last time with dirt!
24. Peter preached one sermon & got 3,000 converts--now preachers preach 3,000 sermons & get one convert.
25. The babe with the Spirit and a handful of good verses and a will to witness, can accomplish more than all the Bible College graduates put together!
26. The church of today has moved out of the arena & into the grandstand.
27. The churches build for eternity as though it won't be very long & they build for this life as though it will be forever.
28. The blood of the martyrs is the seed of the true church, & the more they kill, the more will take their place.
29. The churches have made illegitimate almost everything that's pleasurable, the Lord's God-given blessings!
30. A sad world cannot be sweetened by sour religion.
31. Churches are the World's greatest waste--billions of dollars spent on church buildings could have long ago evangelised the whole World!
32. God dwells in life! He dwells more in one little sparrow than in all the cathedrals put together!
33. Churches & church buildings have damned more souls & sent more people to Hell than anything else, because they have robbed the poor & robbed the World of the Gospel!
34. Most church members are spiritual invalids & the church is their hospital!
35. One man that gets out of those church buildings can do more good than all the Christians put together that are still left inside!
36. It's almost more difficult to get delivered from Churchianity than it is from dope! That kind of religion is nothing but a drug & a drag!
37. The greatest danger in America today is not drink or drugs or even crime, it's churchianity, the great delusion, the big lie!
38. You can go to church every Sunday morning & still go to Hell!
39. The church today is about as far away from what Jesus preached as Capitalism is from Communism!
40. The reason dramas get the crowds & the churches don't is: The preachers preach their fact as though it were fiction, while the actors act their fiction as though it were fact.
41. The Pharisees spoke from their heads, but Jesus spoke from His heart.
42. By church experiences you're inoculated with just enough of the Truth to make you immune to the whole Truth!
43. Too many people who say "Our Father" on Sunday spend the rest of the week acting like orphans.
44. Church membership does not make you a Christian any more than owning a piano makes you a musician.
45. Some people use religion like a bus--they ride on it only when it's going their way.
46. Religious experience is meant to be bread for daily use, not cake for special occasions.
47. The church has committed genocide by having no children!
48. The worst gyp is bargain-counter salvation that doesn't save you & you wind up in Hell when you thought you'd paid your way to Heaven!
49. That's what destroyed the Christian church, when they started removing the Bible and the Words of God!
50. The proud paper-piggy people-eaters that devour the poor would rather die first than serve God our way!
51. The church, while rich and increased in goods materially, has become wretched and naked and blind spiritually!
52. More church people take the name of God in vain in their singing than all the cursing wicked of the World!
53. The church which is not a missionary church will be a missing church when Jesus comes.
54. The church today is so scared of everything they haven't got anything, so afraid of a little life, they're damned dead, so afraid of a little fire, they've got no fire, so afraid of sex, they've got nothing but hypocrisy!
55. We can't renovate the church!--But we can get out & build a new one!--Of living stones! (1Pet.2:4-5)
56. Usually the false cults do better than we do as far as getting numbers & the money--more people go for the lie than for the truth.

57. It's always the False Church who stirs up the political government against the True Church.
58. The Old church is like an old shoe:  
--You can polish perhaps, but never renew!
59. God never once said to build church buildings! He never once said to establish Bible Colleges & Universities! He never once said to build great & costly cathedrals! He just said, "Go ye into all the World & preach the Gospel to every creature!"
60. Not all that the churches teach is bad. Not everything the Devil teaches is bad either, because if it were all bad nobody would swallow it.
61. Our biggest enemy is not big business or big government or even big education. These are only the tools that our greatest enemy, the Whore, the religious system, uses.
62. Churchianity, church-worship, building-worship, temple-worship, place-worship is idolatry & more deceptive & deluding & damning than drink!--Because you can get drunk & it only lasts a little while, but you drink of those dry cisterns & polluted wells & you never wake up unless God drops a bomb on you!
63. The churches are nurseries for spiritual babies, perpetual stretcher cases that will never grow up!
64. Church-worship, building-worship, service-worship, ceremony-worship are subtle & insidious & dangerous & damning because they're so deceptive & deluding.
65. "Their children do sicken Me & their luxury doth cause Me to abhor them, & their beauty is a reproach unto Me & I shall utterly cast them out & destroy their palaces & strip them of all these things, until they shall beg unto Me for mercy."
66. "In rejecting thee she doth also reject Me. And she shall be left alone & desolate as those things that she honoured most, her buildings & her ceremonies, & her doctrines & the opinions of men & her pride & jealousy which do eat as a canker to destroy. Therefore shall that which she loved most destroy her & leave her desolate."
67. You never heard of Jesus going into any bar & making a whip & turning over the bar & breaking up the bottles & throwing out the bartender! But He went into the church building & He made a whip, & He broke up the furniture & spilled the money & drove those damned moneychangers out of the church!
68. You never heard of Jesus going into a house of prostitution & beating up on those poor hardworking prostitutes & throwing those old beds out the window! But He went into the nice big beautiful Temple building & broke up the furniture & overturned the tables & drove out the guys who ran it!
69. Most of the churches are whited sepulchres full of dead men's bones, & the only way they reach Heaven is by their spiritual stench!
70. When the Church left the arena & started sitting in the grandstands in order to avoid death by braving the lions, the Church died of old age in the stands!
71. There's no law in the entire Bible that says you have to go to church on Sunday, or even hints you have to go to church on Sunday!
72. Church is a good place to sleep, nice & quiet, pretty music, nothing shocking is said, it's all the same old thing.
73. The True Church are the genuine Christian believers in God who follow Jesus--the born-again, Saved, Body of Christ--not a building or a denomination or a religion!
74. That's Churchianity through & through: They spend most of their time worshipping the past & glorifying the past & advocating the past because they've got nothing now except the past. The Church is a has-been!
75. The whole Church is looking into the past, everybody travelling backwards into the past, glorifying the past & glorifying all [the] Jews of the past & their ... history. Very few of them are good examples. In fact, the good ones were such shining examples & so rare that they really shone in the midst of ... Jewish history. ...
76. The Church is standing with their backs to the Future. They've even got their backs on the present. They've turned their back on the heathen, they've turned their back on the World, they've turned their back on the poor lost sinner! They've certainly got their back to the Future & they're going backwards in time, so what good are they? All they're doing is studying the ancient history & the ancient past & all the ancient junk that is over & God is through with.
77. The Devil has got the whole Church system not only absolutely totally sidetracked, but completely turned around, going the opposite way on the track into the past!
78. The Church system doesn't have anything else to do: They don't witness, they don't litness, they don't live by faith. They don't win souls. They're not doing the job God gave them to do, so they've got to fill up their time with something that looks & seems religious & is supposedly good, so they spend all of their time studying the past & how great they used to be & how glorious it used to be & what great heroes there used to be.

79. That's the whole Church system & Bible College system--reading, hearing & studying what somebody else has to say about the Bible instead of reading the Bible for themselves.

80. As far as the Church system is concerned, the day of miracles is past, the day of great men of God is past, the day of evangelising the World is past & everything is past, so they spend all of their time studying the past since they've got nothing in the present & know nothing about the future, & couldn't care less.

81. We've only got a few years left to get the job done that they failed to do while they were so busy studying Ancient History & the past & what others did that they aren't or weren't doing & thought they couldn't do since it had already been done & nobody could do it anymore. Nobody could be heroes any more. Nobody could perform miracles anymore. Nobody could live that way by faith anymore. Nobody could die as martyrs for the faith anymore; it's all past. "You aren't expected to do that now. Just hold down your job, earn your money, come to Church on Sunday, support the Church & the preacher & he'll tell you all you need to know. That's all you need."

82. In the old days the poor were fed by the preachers!--Nowadays the preachers are fed by the poor!

83. There are lots of people in the World who think they're serving God when they are actually serving the Devil!

84. There are lots of people serving the Devil who think they're praying to God & serving God. There are whole religions that think they're serving God who are serving no one but the Devil!

85. Compromising with the church people like Paul did & trying to please the church people never did a thing for Paul.

(See also No. G, 69A, 117, 148, 153, 167, 170, 179, 180, 183, 184, 192, 200, 219, 266, 399, 605, 631, 647, 648, 834, 848, 986, 1116, 1141, 1274, 1283, 1287, 1385, 1401, 1478, 1510, 1514.)

86. PRO.15:8 The sacrifice of the wicked is an abomination to the Lord.

87. ISA.29:13 Wherefore the Lord said, Forasmuch as this people draw near Me with their mouth, and with their lips do honour Me, but have removed their heart far from Me, and their fear toward Me is taught by the precept of men.

88. ISA.30:9-11 That this is a rebellious people, lying children, children that will not hear the law of the Lord: Which say to the seers, See not; and to the prophets, Prophecy not unto us right things, speak unto us smooth things, prophesy deceits: Get you out of the way, turn aside out of the path, cause the Holy One of Israel to cease from before us.

89. ISA.56:10-12 His watchmen are blind: they are all ignorant, they are all dumb dogs, they cannot bark; sleeping, lying down, loving to slumber. Yea, they are greedy dogs which can never have enough, and they are shepherds that cannot understand: they all look to their own way, every one for his gain, from his quarter. Come ye, say they, I will fetch wine, and we will fill ourselves with strong drink; and to morrow shall be as this day, and much more abundant.

90. JER.5:30,31 A wonderful and horrible thing is committed in the land; The prophets prophesy falsely, and the priests bear rule by their means; and My people love to have it so.

91. JER.50:6 My people hath been lost sheep: their shepherds have caused them to go astray, they have turned them away on the mountains: they have gone from mountain to hill, they have forgotten their resting place.

92. EZE.33:31,32 And they come unto thee as the people cometh, and they sit before thee as My people, and they hear thy words, but they will not do them: for with their mouth they shew much love, but their heart goeth after their covetousness. And, lo, thou art unto them as a very lovely song of one that hath a pleasant voice, and can play well on an instrument: for they hear thy words, but they do them not.

93. EZE.34:2,3 Son of man, prophesy against the shepherds of Israel, prophesy, and say unto them, Thus saith the Lord God unto the shepherds; Woe be to the shepherds of Israel that do feed themselves! should not the shepherds feed the flocks? Ye eat the fat, and ye clothe you with the wool, ye kill them that are fed: but ye feed not the flock.

94. MAL.1:6 A son honoureth his father, and a servant his master: if then I be a father, where is mine honour? and if I be a master, where is my fear? saith the Lord of hosts unto you, O priests, that despise My Name.

95. MAT.7:15 Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.

96. MAT.7:21,23 Not every one that saith unto Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the Kingdom of Heaven; but he that doeth the will of My Father which is in Heaven. And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from Me, ye that work iniquity.

97. MAT.15:3 But He answered and said unto them, why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition?

98. MAT.15:8,9 This people draweth nigh unto Me with their mouth, and honoureth Me with their lips; but their heart is far from Me. But in vain they do worship Me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

99. MAT.15:14 They be blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch.

100. MAT.23:3-5 All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not. For they bind heavy burdens and grievous to be borne, and lay them on men's shoulders; but they themselves will not move them with one of their fingers. But all their works they do for to be seen of men: they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments.

101. Mat.23:13 But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the Kingdom of Heaven against men: for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in.

102. MAT.23:24,26,27 Ye blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel. Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness.

103. MAR.7:6 He answered and said unto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth Me with their lips, but their heart is far from Me.

104. MAR.7:9 And He said unto them, Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.

105. Mar.7:13 Making the Word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye.

106. LUK.6:46 And why call ye Me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?

107. LUK.11:42 Ye tithe mint and rue and all manner of herbs, and pass over judgment and the love of God: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

108. 2TI.3:5 Having a form of Godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.

109. TIT.1:16 They profess that they know God; but in works they deny Him, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate.

110. HEB.9:24 For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into Heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us.

**13. COMFORT** --{page 90}--



*Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we ourselves are comforted of God (2Cor.1:4).*

1. He gives me joy in place of sorrow,  
He gives me love that casts out fear,  
He gives me sunshine for my shadow,  
And beauty for ashes dear!
2. O Joy, that seeketh me through pain,  
I cannot close my heart to thee  
I trace the rainbow through the rain,  
And feel the promise is not in vain,  
That morn shall tearless be.
3. When all our hopes are gone & all seems to fail, even when our dreams are shattered & our ships come home with broken sails, we still have Jesus!--And He's all we need!
4. Jesus still remembers when the World forgets.
5. I sometimes tremble on the Rock, but the Rock never trembles under me.
6. Earth has no sorrow that Heaven cannot heal.
7. God's tomorrow, God's tomorrow!  
Every cloud will pass away,  
With the dawning of that day!  
God's tomorrow! No more sorrow!  
For I know that God's tomorrow,  
Will be brighter than today!
8. The darkest hour is just before dawn, & then it'll be God's tomorrow which will last forever with you & me!
9. Ye fearful saints, fresh courage take!  
The clouds ye so much dread  
Are big with mercy & shall break  
In blessing on your head!
10. When you walk through the storm  
Hold your head up high  
And don't be afraid of the dark.  
At the end of the storm is a golden sky  
And the sweet silver song of a lark.
11. The Lord can make even a little bit of Egypt into a little bit of Heaven if Jesus is there with you.
12. He restoreth my soul when I'm weary  
He giveth me strength day by day  
He leads me beside the still waters  
He guards me each step of the way.
13. You can give Him away as much as you want but never get rid of Him.--You'll always have Him & He's always near.

14. When all is dark & I cannot see  
I call Your Name, You come to me  
You take my hand & draw me near  
You light my way & make it clear!

15. When everything else is passed away, you'll still have Jesus! When everything else is gone, there'll still be Jesus. When all others forsake you, there'll still be Jesus. When you haven't got anything left, there'll still be Jesus. When the World has nothing left, you'll still have Jesus!

16. Beloved, the outlook for us in this World & our future here could hardly be darker!--But the uplook could hardly be brighter or more glorious!

17. The darker the outlook, the brighter the uplook.

18. "For I am He that filleth all things, to pour out upon the thirsty ground, to beautify the lowly life, to heal the ragged wounds, to enlighten the darkened minds, to bring Grace & Beauty & Wisdom."

19. You've got all the Promises in the whole Bible on your side.

20. The future is as bright as the Promises of God!

21. God puts consolation only where He first put pain.

22. Without weaknesses, we couldn't help others.

23. There's nothing you're going through but what Jesus has gone through already!

24. God is with us & the storm cannot overcome us!

25. We cannot lose! It is impossible to defeat us!--Our enemies are already doomed & damned to defeat & Hell!

26. Nothing happens to you that hasn't happened to someone else.

27. He was better to me than all my hopes,

He was brighter than all my fears;

He made a bridge of my broken works,

And a rainbow of my tears.

28. Though we tremble in the dark,

In need of strength & help & cheer,

We have a tender Father's Word,

Fear thou not, for I am here!

29. There's no greater comfort than to remember that when you're living in the centre of God's Will, nothing can ever happen to you without God's permission.

30. When wearied with the strain of it all, you can fly to God on the wings of prayer & faith & get the relief that He alone can give you.

31. Some through the waters, some through the flood,

Some through the fire, but all through the Blood.

Some through great sorrows, but God gives a song,

In the night season & all the day long!

32. His Word is always a comfort & the Voice of His Spirit is always an encouragement in the hour of greatest trial.

33. Thank God for the comfort of His cleansing Word!

34. Turn your eyes upon Jesus

Look full in His wonderful face,

And the things of Earth shall grow strangely dim,

In the light of His glory & grace!

35. The Lord said, "Will I not care for My Own?"--We & our little ones & all of His children everywhere!

36. The Lord is able to keep us through anything & everything!

37. Forget thyself; console the sadness near thee;

Thine own shall then depart,

And songs of joy, like heavenly birds, shall cheer thee

And dwell within thy heart.

38. Soon He's coming back to welcome me,

Far beyond the starry sky!

I shall wing my flight to worlds unknown

I shall reign with Him on high!

39. Help them to know the joy, the love & the healing balm, Lord, that cleanses every heart & heals every wound & removes every stain.

40. If He can just break & melt your heart, then He woos & wins it & warms & melts it & makes it bright & burning & happy!--And it's no longer solitaire!

41. "I shall wipe away all their tears, neither shall they remember them any more, for all their pain shall be forgotten in the beauties & joys that are to come!"

42. "Yet a little while, & time shall be no more! Just a little more time, a little while, & thou shalt be with Me forever! Sorrow shall endure for a season, but joy cometh in the morning. Then all these things shall be swept away! Wonderful comfort ye one another with these Words!"

43. "I shall take away thy pain & thy grief forever with everlasting joy & eternal solace that shall never end!"

44. "Even as this perfume wipes away the evil, so shall My Love wipe away the hurt!"

45. When Jesus comes, the Tempter's power is broken,

When Jesus comes, your tears are wiped away!

He takes your gloom, & fills your life with glory!

For all is changed when Jesus comes to stay!

46. When your heart is aching, turn to Jesus,

He's the dearest Friend that you can know.

You will find Him standing close beside you

Waiting peace & blessing to bestow!

47. He heals every heartache,

He hears every sigh,

This wonderful Saviour of mine!

He helps me in trouble,

He heeds when I cry,

This wonderful Saviour of mine!

48. No one ever cared for me like Jesus!

There's no other Friend so kind & true!

No one else could take that sin & sadness from me,

Oh, how much He cares for me!

49. I have nothing to do with tomorrow,

My Saviour has made that His care.

Its grace & its strength I can't borrow,

So why should I borrow its care?

50. Fear thou not for I am with thee,

I will still thy Pilot be.

Never mind those tossing billows,

Take My hand & trust in Me!

51. I sing because I'm happy!

I sing because I'm free!

For His eye is on the sparrow,

And I know He cares for me!

52. You are His forever, so He'll never leave nor forsake you even unto the end of the World! He'll hold you fast!

53. Let not your heart be troubled,

His tender words do hear.

Just rest within His goodness

And lose your doubts & fears!

54. Did you stumble today? Did you fall today? The Lord saw it, He cares & He's going to hold you no matter what. Even if you stumble & fall, the Lord will lift you up!

55. God is still on the Throne

And He will remember His Own!

Though trials may press us & burdens distress us

He never will leave us alone!

God is still on the Throne,

He never forsaketh His Own!

His Promise is true, He will not forget you,

God is still on the Throne!



56. What are you worrying about?--You're in His hands!  
57. The valley may be dark, the shadows deep,  
But the Shepherd guards His lonely sheep!  
58. "Blessed are they that mourn, for they shall be comforted!" Blessed to mourn? More blessed to have problems & sorrows? Yes, because you will be comforted!  
59. He Himself will never suffer us to be tempted above that which we are able to bear!--He always gives us some way of escape!  
60. You don't know how you're going to make it, but He can make it for you!  
61. The Great Physician now is near,  
The sympathising Jesus!  
He speaks, the drooping heart to cheer,  
Oh, hear the voice of Jesus!  
62. Even though all around you is war & confusion, you can have peace in your own heart through the Prince of Peace, Jesus Christ!  
63. Jesus never sleeps! He watches all the time, & all of His Angels--& His Saints!--He knows every hair of your head.--Everything is in His hands!  
64. He hideth my soul in the cleft of the Rock (Jesus),  
That shadows a dry, thirsty land;  
He hideth my life in the depths of His Love,  
And covers me there with His hand!  
65. Safe in the arms of Jesus,  
Safe on His gentle breast!  
There shall thy heart be happy,  
There shalt thou find sweet rest!  
66. I want you to really get thrilled & excited & looking forward to Heaven, & it will help you bear some of these burdens & trials that you're going through now when you realise these are only just for a moment!  
67. The suffering of this present time is not anything to be compared to the glories that we are going to share in the near future!--Rom.8:18.  
68. Be steadfast, unmoveable, work hard for the Lord, because your labours are not in vain! You're going to inherit that marvellous Heavenly body & Heavenly City before long!  
69. Just open your heart & let the sun shine in!--When you look up, the sky is the limit!--Up There the Sun is always shining! The light is always shining at the end of the tunnel, always!  
70. We abide under the shadow of the Almighty! We are overshadowed, we are enveloped. Your arms are about us, & we are one!  
71. "Blessed is he that seeketh My face in the hour of trouble. So shall he be in the hour of triumph, & I will be with him!"  
72. "Blessed is she, the daughter of peace, that hath found a place within His Kingdom, a safe harbour within His arms!"  
73. Jesus, Lover of my soul,  
Let me to Thy bosom fly,  
While the nearer waters roll,  
While the tempest still is high!  
74. While there's life, there's hope.  
75. "Ye shall be safe in the midst of storm, in the hollow of My hand in the place that I have prepared for thee, if thou shalt go & be obedient to the things that I shall show thee!"  
76. God will not allow anything to come to me that He & I together can't handle.  
77. Sorrow comes to stretch out places in our hearts for joy.  
78. Out of 1000 things that can come into a Christian's life, it is not 999 of them that work together for good, but 999 plus one!  
79. When a man can do nothing else, he can pray. A praying man can never be a useless man.  
80. Sing through the darkness & sing in the light--  
Sing with the morning & sing in the night;  
Sing when your eyes have been clouded with pain,  
Sing in the sunshine & sing through the rain.  
81. We can never stumble in the darkness if He leads us.  
82. God does not comfort us to make us comfortable, but to make us comforters.

83. Long years ago I planned it all for thee;  
Prepared it that thou mightst find need of Me.  
Without it, child, thou wouldst not come to  
Find this place of comfort in this Love of Mine.  
Hadst thou no cross like this for Me to bear,  
Thou wouldst not feel the need of My strong care;  
But in thy weakness thou didst come to Me,  
And through this plan I have won thee.

84. If the Weaver of our life's pattern chooses another plan than the one we thought to use, is He not wiser than we? Surely it will be a pattern more beautiful than our fondest dreams!

85. Hearts growing a-weary with heavier woe,  
Now droop, 'mid the darkness, Go comfort them, go!  
Go bury thy sorrows; Let others be blest;  
Go give them the sunshine, Tell Jesus the rest.

86. Sorrows are but incidents in life, & must not interrupt us. We must leave them behind, while we press on to the things that are before. God has so ordered that in pressing on in duty we shall find the truest, richest comfort for ourselves.

87. The child is happier now. Infinite Love called the child. Infinite wisdom took him away. You shall have him again.

88. "I can't!" despairingly I cried!  
This gentle whisper sounded at my side,  
"Of course not, child, Thou wast not fashioned so,  
But I, thy Father, CAN & WILL. I know  
Thy weaknesses, all thy longing see,  
And I am always strong to strengthen thee."

89. Hide your thorn in the rose. Bury your sigh in the song. Keep your cross, if you will, but keep it under a wreath of flowers. It is the singing of your heart that will make you forget your sorrow. He will give you a "song in your desert night" that your loved one in Glory-land will hear & be glad.

90. Jesus Christ is a matchless life-mender. Try Him. He will take that seemingly shattered life & fashion a far more beautiful one from its fragments than you yourself could ever have wrought from the whole.

91. He Who wounds can heal. He Who takes, will Himself fill the vacant place. And He will keep that which you have committed to Him, & give it back restored to perfect health & beauty.

92. God never fails the soul who is utterly abandoned to Him. He employs all His omnipotence & His omniscience on His behalf.

93. Our dear ones are with Thee, & if we keep near Thee, we cannot be far from them.

94. Child of My Love, fear not the unknown morrow,  
Dread not the new demand life makes of thee;  
Thy ignorance doth hold no cause for sorrow  
Since what thou knowest not is known to Me.

95. We can rebuild our houses, like the birds their nests, instead of grieving over their destruction.

96. We cannot be mended unless we are broken.

97. If, instead of trying to trust, we will press closer to the Comforter, & lean our weary heads upon His sufficient grace, trust will come without our trying, & the promised "perfect peace" will calm every troubled wave of sorrow.

98. Duty has ordered me forward,  
But I am afraid to go;  
The work is too great for my doing,  
So little I see & know  
And yet I can find my course  
And obey my Lord's command  
For I feel the force of a guidance  
In the clasp of my Father's hand.

99. He climbs beside you; lean upon Him!

100. Nestle your hand in your Father's,  
And sing if you can as you go;  
Your song may cheer someone behind you

Whose courage is sinking low;  
And if your lips do quiver,  
God will love you the better so.

101. Out of every sorrow God means that there should come submission; a drawing nearer to His Own great heart of Love; a new vision of the shallowness of Worldly streams & the depth of Divine ones; a closer devotion to Jesus Christ than ever before known; a loosening of the grasp on time, & its tightening upon Eternity.

102. Oh, the wonderful story of deathless Love!  
Each child is dear to that Heart Above;  
He fights for me when I cannot fight,  
He comforts me in the gloom of night,  
He lifts the burden, for He is strong.  
He stills the sigh, & awakens the song;  
The burdens that bow me down He bears,  
And loves & pities because He cares.

103. Your sorrow is meant to be a strength-giver to you, & to equip you for giving strength to others.

104. I think that God is proud of those who bear  
A sorrow bravely. Proud indeed of them  
Who walk straight through the dark to find Him there,  
And kneel in faith to touch His garment's hem.

105. We must choose to be comforted. We MUST believe it. We must say to ourselves, "God says it, & it's true, & I am going to believe it, no matter how it looks."

106. I cannot row it myself--  
The boat on the raging sea  
But beside me sits Another,  
Who pulls & steers with me.

107. When Dr. Moon of Brighton, England, was stricken with blindness, he said: "Lord, I accept this talent of blindness from Thee. Help me to use it for Thy glory that at Thy Coming Thou mayest receive Thine own with usury." Then God enabled him to invent the Moon Alphabet for the blind, by which thousands of blind people were enabled to read the Word of God, & many of them were gloriously saved.

108. Before me lies a new & untried way midst shadows dim;  
Beside me is my Guide, & day by day I walk with Him.

109. Great trials make common Christians into uncommon saints, & fit them for being used in uncommon service.

110. Go bury thy sorrow, The World hath its share;  
Go bury it deeply, Go hide it with care;  
Go think of it calmly, When curtained by night;  
Go tell it to Jesus, And all will be right.

111. No, we are not here just for ourselves. Love must be strong & unselfish. It must look away from its own torn heart to a needy World, forward to the day when it shall be joyous forever, up to the Father Who does all things well.

112. I know thy sorrow, child; I know it well,  
Thou needst not try with broken voice to tell.  
Just let Me lay thy head here on My breast,  
And find here sweetest comfort, perfect rest;  
Thou needst not bear the burden, child, thyself,  
I yearn to take it all upon Myself;  
Then trust it all to Me today--tomorrow,  
Yes, e'en forever; for I know thy sorrow.

113. Jesus deals very gently with those who find the cross heavy. He sympathises, for He knows what it means to suffer. He sank under His own Cross, & had to be helped with it by a passer-by on the way to Calvary.

114. The closer fellowship with your Father, which began amid your tears, will become a dynamic force to carry you forward into braver & better deeds.

115. The way is long, my child, but it shall be  
Not one step longer than is best for thee.

116. One of the most serious dangers of inconsolable sorrow is that it may lead us to neglect our duty to the living in our mourning for the dead. This we should never do. God does not desire us to give up our work because our heart is broken.

117. "My burden is too heavy, Lord", I tremblingly said.

"I can no farther carry it!" And tears I shed.

Then came a sudden cry for help from one sore pressed

I ran to seek him, gladly gave him of my best.

Then thought I of my heavy burden--but, lo 'twas gone

The gloom & doubt had vanished quite & Love's light shone.

118. Your life task is to demonstrate what miracles God can work through a man's triumph over the seemingly insurmountable. If your burden is supremely heavy it is evidence that God has superior confidence in you & that He is permitting you to undertake a task of particular significance. He trusts you to win.

119. Death doth hide, but not divide!

Thou art but on Christ's other side.

Thou art with Christ & Christ with me,

In Him united still are we.

120. What subtler decoration of honour can any godly man seek after than his scars of service, his losses for the crown, his reproaches for Christ's sake, his being worn out in his Master's service!

121. Shall I doubt my Father's mercy?

Shall I think of death as doom,

When I know my love is happy,

Waiting in the other room?

122. There is no failure of life so terrible as to have the pain without the lesson, the sorrow without the softening.

123. Measure thy life by loss & not by gain,

Not by the wine drunk, but by the wine poured forth.

For love's strength standeth in love's sacrifice,

And he who suffers most has most to give.

124. From the desert of loneliness & despair came Hagar's, "Thou God, seest me!" From a heart tested & tried came Job's, "I know that my Redeemer liveth." From a broken & contrite heart was David's, "Wash me & I shall be whiter than snow." Out of lonely Gethsemane came perfect submission, "Thy Will be done." Through the gates of deepest sorrow, great souls found their way to a more splendid life. At the foot of the Cross, the Crown was found. The tomb is the gate of the resurrection. Death is the door to life.

125. You do not have to understand all God's ways with you. God does not expect you to understand them. You do not expect your child to understand, only believe. Some day you will see the glory of God in the things which you do not understand.

126. Does Jesus care when I've said good-by

To the dearest on Earth to me?

When my sad heart aches, till it nearly breaks,

Is it aught to Him? Does He see?

Oh, yes, He cares, I know He cares,

His heart is touched with my grief;

Though the days be weary, the long nights dreary,

I know my Saviour cares.

127. A very true cross-bearer learns to carry his cross as if it were an ornament rather than a burden, & finds after a time that it carries him. It gives more strength to him than he gives to it. Yet how many persons there are who scarcely attempt to carry the cross! It is thrown on them, & they sink down under it.

128. There are no great souls without great sorrows.

129. Those who are broken in wealth, & broken in self-will, & broken in their ambitions, & broken in their beautiful ideals, & broken in worldly reputation, & broken in their affections, & broken oftentimes in health; those who are despised & seem utterly forlorn, & helpless, the Holy Ghost is seizing upon, & using for God's glory. "The lame take the prey," Isaiah tell us.

130. Where God's finger points, there God's hand will make the way.

131. For strength to bear is found in duty done;

And he is best indeed who learns to make

The joy of others cure his own heartache.

132. There are souls like the "alabaster vase of ointment" (Mat.26:7), very precious, which shed no perfume of devotion, because a great sorrow has never broken them.

133. What will prayer do for you?--All that God can do for you.

134. Lord Jesus, when the prison doors close in on me, keep me trusting, & keep my joy full & abounding.  
Prosper Thy Work through me in prison: Even there, make me free indeed.

135. Wrestling prayer can wonders do,

Bring relief in deepest straits;

Prayer can force a passage through

Iron bars & brazen gates.

136. When God lets us go to prison because we have been serving Him, & goes there with us, prison is about the most blessed placed in the World that we could be in.

137. Rain, rain beating 'gainst the pane!

How endlessly it pours out of doors

From the blackened sky--I wonder why!

Flowers, flowers, upspringing after showers,

Blossoming fresh & fair, everywhere!

Ah, God has explained why it rained!

138. Don't be afraid of tears. They're nothing to be ashamed of. Even Jesus wept!

139. "Fear thou not, for I am with thee unto the End!"

140. All things truly work together for good to them that love the Lord.--No matter what it is. It may not always seem like it, but God often gets His greatest victories out of seeming defeat.

141. God never gives us burdens greater than we are able to bear.

142. God is a loving & merciful God. He knows your frame; He remembers that you're but dust & He knows how much you can stand.

143. While there is life, there is hope!

144. When you reach the end of your rope, & are in some great crisis experience of your life, cry out desperately to Him in this time of trial, in this time of Gethsemane, followed by this crucifixion, & God will answer, & it will result in glorious resurrection which can surpass all your wildest dreams & is mightier & greater than anything you ever thought of!

145. He is your peace. Your help comes from Him. In Him is your confidence. You must put your confidence in Him.

146. When things look darkest, don't look down!--Look up!--Be not fearful, but believing!

147. It's not always going to seem easy. But the Lord promised it would be easy.--Mat.11:28-30.

148. Cast your burden on the Lord! Just roll it over on Jesus & roll over & go to sleep--& let Him stay up all night! Don't worry about it!--Let the Lord do the worrying! His shoulders are broad enough to carry any load--all the burdens put together, including His Own!

149. We have prayed & God has heard our prayers, & God Himself shall turn the tide of battle, & God Himself shall answer in His Own way, not according to the expectations of man, but according to the wisdom of God! For God knows best what shall bring victory!

(See also No. 18, 25, 75, 114, 581, 698, 720, 900, 1064, 1367.)

150. Gen.15:1 Fear not, I am thy shield, & thy exceeding great reward.

151. Gen.28:15 And, behold, I am with thee, and will keep thee in all places whither thou goest, and will bring thee again into this land; for I will not leave thee, until I have done that which I have spoken to thee of.

152. Deu.33:27 The eternal God is thy refuge, and underneath are the everlasting arms: and He shall thrust out the enemy from before thee.

153. Jos.1:5 As I was with Moses, so I will be with thee: I will not fail thee, nor forsake thee.

154. Isa.30:6b David encouraged himself in the Lord his God.

155. 2Ch.16:9a The eyes of the Lord run to & fro throughout the whole Earth.

156. Job 11:16 Thou shalt forget thy misery, & remember it as waters that pass away.

157. Psa.9:9,10 The Lord also will be a refuge for the oppressed, a refuge in times of trouble. And they that know Thy Name will put their trust in Thee: for Thou, Lord, hast not forsaken them that seek Thee.

158. Psa.18:19 He brought me forth also into a large place; He delivered me, because He delighted in me.

159. Psa.18:28 For Thou wilt light my candle: the Lord my God will enlighten my darkness.

160. Psa.27:10 When my father and my mother forsake me, then the Lord will take me up.

161. Psa.32:7 Thou art my hiding place; Thou shalt preserve me from trouble; Thou shalt compass me about with songs of deliverance. Selah.

162. Psa.34:17 The righteous cry, and the Lord heareth, and delivereth them out of all their troubles.

163. Psa.34:22 The Lord redeemeth the soul of His servants: and none of them that trust In Him shall be desolate.

164. Psa.37:9 For evildoers shall be cut off: but those that wait upon the Lord, they shall inherit the Earth.

165. Psa.37:17 The Lord upholdeth the righteous.

166. Psa.37:24 Though he fall, he shall not be utterly cast down: for the Lord upholdeth him with His hand.

167. Psa.56:8 Thou tellest my wanderings: put Thou my tears into Thy bottle: are they not in Thy book?

168. Psa.71:20,21 Thou, which hast shewed me great and sore troubles, shalt quicken me again, and shalt bring me up again from the depths of the Earth. Thou shalt increase my greatness, and comfort me on every side.

169. Psa.86:7 In the day of my trouble I will call upon Thee: for Thou wilt answer me.

170. Psa.86:17 Shew me a token for good; that they which hate me may see it, and be ashamed: because Thou, Lord, hast holpen me, and comforted me.

171. Psa.91:3 Surely He shall deliver thee from the snare of the fowler, and from the noisome pestilence.

172. Psa.91:7 A thousand shall fall at thy side, and ten thousand at thy right hand; but it shall not come nigh thee.

173. Psa.91:15 He shall call upon Me, and I will answer him: I will be with him in trouble; I will deliver him, and honour him.

174. Psa.94:19 In the multitude of my thoughts within me Thy comforts delight my soul.

175. Psa.94:22 But the Lord is my defense; and my God is the rock of my refuge.

176. Psa.103:6 The Lord executeth righteousness and judgement for all that are oppressed.

177. Psa.103:14 For He knoweth our frame; He remembereth that we are dust.

178. Psa.116:6 The Lord preserveth the simple: I was brought low, and He helped me.

179. Psa.119:50 This is my comfort in my affliction: for Thy Word hath quickened me.

180. Psa.121:1,2 I will lift up mine eyes unto the hills, from whence cometh my help. My help cometh from the Lord, which made Heaven and Earth.

181. Psa.121:4 Behold, He that keepeth Israel shall neither slumber nor sleep.

182. Psa.138:7 Though I walk in the midst of trouble, Thou wilt revive me.

183. Psa.139:7-12 Whither shall I go from Thy Spirit? or whither shall I flee from Thy presence? If I ascend up into Heaven, Thou art there: if I make my bed in Hell, behold Thou art there. If I take the wings of the morning, and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea; Even there shall Thy hand lead me, and Thy right hand shall hold me. If I say, Surely the darkness shall cover me; even the night shall be light about me. Yea, the darkness hideth not from Thee; but the night shineth as the day: the darkness and the light are both alike to Thee.

184. Psa.145:14 The Lord upholdeth all that fall, and raiseth up all those that be bowed down.

185. Psa.145:18,19 The Lord is nigh unto all them that call upon Him, to all that call upon Him in truth. He will fulfil the desire of them that fear Him: He also will hear their cry, and will save them.

186. Psa.147:3 He healeth the broken in heart, and bindeth up their wounds.

187. Pro.11:21 Though hand join in hand, the wicked shall not be unpunished: but the seed of the righteous shall be delivered.

188. Isa.12:1 And in that day thou shalt say, O Lord, I will praise Thee: though Thou wast angry with me, Thine anger is turned away, and Thou comfortedst me.

189. Isa.40:1 Comfort ye, comfort ye My people, saith your God.

190. Isa.41:10 Fear thou not; for I am with thee: be not dismayed; for I am thy God: I will strengthen thee; yea, I will help thee; yea, I will uphold thee with the right hand of My righteousness.

191. Isa.41:17 When the poor & needy seek water, and there is none, and their tongue faileth for thirst, I the Lord will hear them, I the God of Israel will not forsake them.

192. Isa.41:18b I will make the wilderness a pool of water, and the dry land springs of water.

193. Isa.42:6,7 I the Lord have called thee in righteousness, and will hold thine hand, and will keep thee. To open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, and them that sit in darkness out of the prison house.

194. Isa.42:16 And I will bring the blind by a way that they knew not; I will lead them in paths that they have not known: I will make darkness light before them, and crooked things straight. These things will I do unto them, and not forsake them.

195. Isa.43:2 When thou passest through the waters, I will be with thee; and through the rivers, they shall not overflow thee: when thou walkest through the fire, thou shalt not be burned; neither shall the flame kindle upon thee.

196. Isa.43:19b I will even make a way in the wilderness, and rivers in the desert.

197. Isa.49:13-16 Sing, O Heavens; and be joyful, O Earth; and break forth into singing, O mountains: for the Lord hath comforted His people, and will have mercy upon His afflicted. But Zion said, The Lord hath forsaken me, and my Lord hath forgotten me. Can a woman forget her sucking child, that she should not have compassion on the son of her womb? yea, they may forget, yet will I not forget thee. Behold, I have graven thee upon the palms of My hands; thy walls are continually before Me.

198. Isa.54:10,11 For the mountains shall depart, and the hills be removed; but My kindness shall not depart from thee, neither shall the covenant of My peace be removed, saith the Lord that hath mercy on thee. O thou afflicted, tossed with tempest, and not comforted, behold, I will lay thy stones with fair colours, and lay thy foundations with sapphires.

199. Isa.63:9 In all their affliction He was afflicted, and the Angel of His presence saved them: in His Love and in His pity He redeemed them; and He bare them, and carried them all the days of old.

200. Isa.66:13 As one whom his mother comforteth, so will I comfort you; and ye shall be comforted in Jerusalem.

201. Jer.1:19 And they shall fight against thee; but they shall not prevail against thee; for I am with thee, saith the Lord, to deliver thee.

202. Jer.31:13 Then shall the virgin rejoice in the dance, both young men and old together: for I will turn their mourning into joy, and will comfort them, and make them rejoice from their sorrow.

203. Jer.39:17 I will deliver thee in that day, saith the Lord: and thou shalt not be given into the hand of the men of whom thou art afraid.

204. Lam.3:31-33 For the Lord will not cast off for ever: But though He cause grief, yet will He have compassion according to the multitude of His mercies. For He doth not afflict willingly nor grieve the children of men.

205. Mic.7:8 Rejoice not against me, O mine enemy: when I fall, I shall arise; when I sit in darkness, the Lord shall be a light unto me.

206. Mat.5:4 Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.

207. Mat.5:10-12 Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the Kingdom of Heaven. Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for My sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great in regards your reward in Heaven: for so persecuted they the Prophets which were before you.

208. Mat.28:20b And, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the World. Amen.

209. Luke.6:20-22 And He lifted up His eyes on His disciples, and said, Blessed be ye poor: for yours is the Kingdom of God. Blessed are ye that hunger now: for ye shall be filled. Blessed are ye that weep now: for ye shall laugh. Blessed are ye, when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you from their company, and shall reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake.

210. Luke 12:32 Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the Kingdom.

211. Jn.14:1-4 Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in Me. In My Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto Myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.

212. Jn.14:18 I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you.

213. Jn.16:20 Verily, verily, I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the World shall rejoice: and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy.

214. Jn.16:33 These things I have spoken unto you, that in Me ye might have peace. In the World ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the World.

215. Rom.8:18 For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us.

216. Rom.8:28 And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to His purpose.

217. Rom.15:4 For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the Scriptures might have hope.

218. 2Cor.1:4 Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we ourselves are comforted of God.

219. 2Cor.1:7 And our hope of you is steadfast, knowing, that as ye are partakers of the sufferings, so shall ye be also of the consolation.

220. 2Cor.7:4b I am filled with comfort, I am exceeding joyful in all our tribulation.

221. Phi.1:6 Being confident of this very thing, that He which hath begun a good work in you will perform it until the day of Jesus Christ.

222. Phi.1:20b Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether it be by life, or by death.

223. 1Th.5:11 Wherefore comfort yourselves together, and edify one another, even as also ye do.

224. 1Th.5:24 Faithful is He that calleth you, Who also will do it.

225. 2Th.2:16,17 Now our Lord Jesus Christ Himself, and God, even our Father, which hath loved us, and hath given us everlasting consolation and good hope through grace, Comfort your hearts, and stablish you in every good word and work.

226. 2Ti.1:12b For I know Whom I have believed, and am persuaded that He is able to keep that which I have committed unto Him against that day.

227. 2Ti.2:12a If we suffer, we shall also reign with Him.

228. Rev.21:4 And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.

(See also Isa.54:1-5,11-14; 60:1,3,4-9,29,20; 62:2,3,12.)

#### 14. COMMUNION

--{page 111}--



*For as often as ye eat this bread, & drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till He come (1Cor.11:26).*

1. Communion is a thanksgiving, witness & a remembrance.

2. You can make communion a lesson on salvation, a lesson on thanksgiving, a lesson on healing, a lesson on unity and a lesson on witnessing.

3. Communion is celebrating the salvation of the entire man.--Not only the salvation of your spirit through Jesus' blood, but the salvation of your body through Jesus' body!

4. There's power in the blood!--Blood power!

5. Communion is the only real religious ceremony or ordinance that Jesus Himself instituted, the one He first practiced & showed how to do!--And the one that He commanded us to continue to observe until He Himself comes again!

6. Communion is a show--it's "showing" the Lord's death till He come!

7. Communion is communication.

8. We've already been saved by the power of His blood, we're just commemorating it. We're already healed by the bread, we just need to remind ourselves & take it by faith.

9. Communion is a sample, it's a picture. The bread is a picture of His body & the wine is a picture of His blood.



10. Every Communion is a skit. We're illustrating how we eat Jesus' body & we drink His blood.--Eat His body for our health & drink His blood for our salvation.

11. Even teach the children how to serve Communion. It's a very childlike thing which is a simple illustration even they can understand.

12. The Lord intended Communion to be a witness to remind you & others of what the Lord has done for us.--That He suffered for our bodies & He died for our souls.

13. "Except ye eat of My flesh & drink of My blood, ye have no part in Me." May this taste of You, Lord, give them supernatural strength & a touch of Thy healing, a sample of resurrection power. It's really a foretaste of Heaven, Thy healing power, a foretaste of eternal life for the body as well as for the spirit.

14. "Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, & drink this cup of the Lord unworthily shall be guilty of the body & blood of the Lord." What does it mean, unworthily? If the unsaved dare partake of these elements pretending that they have partaken of the spiritual salvation, they are lying! Therefore they're partaking unworthily! Why are they guilty? Because they're not saved!

15. Even as all of these pieces which are broken come from one loaf, we will all be made part of that one loaf! And thereby, may we too, even as eating of this one loaf, become one.

16. The Lord has saved the whole man, not just half-a-man, not only the spirit nor just the body, but both body & spirit, which make a whole saved soul!

17. In a way it's the thought, it's not necessarily the exactness of the emblems. You've heard stories about how during the war & various places in concentration camps & prisons Christians still gathered together & still had Communion even if they only had one cup of coffee & a cracker.

18. The Lord doesn't like to be left out or forgotten, even in one of His little observances which He enjoined us to have & obviously intended for us to observe as a witness, testimony & act of obedience until He comes again. "As oft as ye do this ye do it in remembrance of Me & ye do show the Lord's death till He come."

19. Maybe for neglecting Communion & forgetting it & being careless about it the Lord can easily remind you by colds & sickness that you forgot to observe the Lord's Supper.

20. The idea of the Bread was that it was one loaf, His Body that was broken, & now part of it is going to become a part of each of us. In other words, we're all becoming part of the one. It's a little picture or illustration the Lord wanted to try to impress on us, a childish little skit of this bread which is just one piece & how it's going to be many pieces & each piece a part of each one of you.

21. The bread doesn't heal your body any more than the wine saves your soul, but it's manifesting your faith, it's a witness. What is Communion? Like baptism or anything else, it's a witness to others, that you believe what His Word says.

22. If you've been sick & you need healing, take it by faith & it's there for you! "Take, eat, this is My body which is broken for you. This do in remembrance of Me."

23. One of the things we're doing by Communion is to constantly remind ourselves what Jesus has done for us & to constantly be a witness of it to others who watch such a ceremony, to remind them of what Jesus has done for us. "For as often as ye eat this bread & drink this cup ye do show the Lord's death till He come." You are testifying that He died for you & showing His death till He come.

24. Don't drink the wine unless you know you're saved, don't eat the bread unless you believe in the Lord's healing, that He is able to heal the body as well as save the soul, or you may drink to yourself damnation or judging chastisement & even eat to yourself death, believe it or not!

25. In other words, it's showing you love Him, you appreciate what He's done for you, you're doing it in remembrance & thanks for what He has done for your body & your spirit, & you're also witnessing to others what He has done for you at the same time.

26. Don't ever forget the resurrection when we're speaking of the death. The death was for a resurrection, & if it hadn't been for the resurrection, all the rest of it would have meant nothing. "For if Christ be not risen, then we are of all men most miserable." But thank God He is risen!

27. I believe in only one large cup of wine from which we all partake. I believe in one whole loaf, don't tear it up. Bring me the whole cup & the whole loaf. Whatever it is, if it's one cracker or a small loaf of bread, whatever it is I want it whole, because that's a very important lesson on the matter of communion.

28. His body was broken for us in a number of ways.--The crown of thorns, the beatings, the stripes, the injuries He suffered, the pain He suffered etc., & through this, we receive healing. The bread is for the healing of our body. "His body was broken for you", "by His stripes we are healed."

29. "For as often as ye eat this bread, & drink this cup, ye do show the Lord's death till He come." Why do we do this? Not only in remembrance of Him, to remember ourselves what He did for us, but also to show the Lord's death to others!--A witness!

30. It is a testimony, it is a witness to others of what Jesus did for us. It is both to help us & remind us of what He did for us, & also our personal testimony of what He did for us, & a witness to others. So communion is important.

31. What does drinking this cup of the Lord unworthily mean? In one sense we are all unworthy & nobody can possibly partake of Communion! So you can be worthy only through His worthiness, His salvation!

32. If the unsaved dare partake of these elements, pretending that they have partaken of spiritual salvation, they are lying! Therefore they're partaking of it unworthily & shall be guilty of the body & the blood of the Lord!

33. "But let a man examine himself, & so let him eat of that bread, & drink of that cup." How? He knows he's doing it worthily through Christ's worth because he knows he's saved, he knows he has spiritually drunk of the blood of Jesus & eaten of the body of Christ for salvation & healing.

34. The bread is particularly symbolic of healing. He didn't have to suffer for our sins, He only had to shed His blood & die for our sins. But His body suffered stripes, wounds, beatings, pain & agony so that through this He could also atone for our sicknesses: "By His stripes we are healed"!

35. God can judge both the Christian & the unchristian for observing communion in a way that is not right. If any unsaved partakes of it & is lying thereby, he's a false witness & the Lord is going to judge him accordingly. And if the Christian has not discerned the Lord's body, in other words, they don't understand what the body means & do not claim their healing as a result, therefore, it doesn't give them any faith for healing & "for this cause many are sick & many are weak & sickly & many sleep (die)."

36. If you have any absentees or sick folks who can't be in your meeting, maybe they're sick in bed upstairs or something, be sure you send them the elements so they can partake too.

37. This is our message all wrapped up in two little elements--bread & wine, body & spirit.--Christ for the body, Christ for the spirit.--Christ for our healing, Christ for our salvation.

38. He said we were going to do this until Jesus comes. Now that's a wonderful promise because that shows that some of us are going to be here still doing this no matter what happens--Antichrist, Antichrist kingdom, the Devil, Hell on Earth--some of us are going to still be here doing this till Jesus comes! Isn't that wonderful?

39. We thank You Lord that Your blood cleanses us from all sin. Past sin, present sin & future sin--all sin, by faith!

40. I hope you're having Communion frequently! He said, "As oft as ye do it, ye do it in remembrance of Me." (1Co.11:25) So the oftener you do it, the oftener you're being a testimony & doing it as a remembrance of Him.

41. Jesus wanted to give His disciples an illustrated message! He saw it was a marvellous opportunity to illustrate the significance of His body & His blood. You notice He broke the bread first, representing His body, because our physical needs are really almost the first need.

42. Thank You Lord for this good Communion, constantly being a witness, a symbol, Lord, of Thy life that was given for us--for both our bodies & our spirits, for healing & Salvation. May we each really truly appreciate it & discern Thy body, discern these elements, understand them, that we may be truly thankful & truly fathom the depth of meaning to all of these things, especially Thy Love, Lord, which made it all possible.

43. Whether you remember it every day, once a week, once a month, once a year or once a lifetime, you're to do it in remembrance of Him!

44. I like to partake of the Bread together because it's symbolic of our oneness.

45. I believe the Lord intended for you to eat it, & don't be afraid to chew it! For the Lord said, "Take, eat!" (1Co.11:24) He didn't say leave it lying on your tongue until it dissolved, like some saint!

46. Sometimes Communion can be a good time to make things right, if you have anything against your brother or sister. You can have some wonderful prayer meetings on an occasion like this, in which if you have not gotten along with each other, you can make amends & weep on each other's shoulders, say you're sorry & forgive & get things all straightened out: Have a real lovin' "Love-in"!--All the way!--Get it straight between you! That's real love, both physical & spiritual. Maybe that's why Jesus put the bread first, because sometimes they can't understand spiritual love until you first give them physical love. Neither can stand alone: You can't have the one without the other.

47. As you are absorbing the bread, you are all becoming part of the one loaf, & so you are also one in the Lord & becoming part of His body. You now have in you the life of a young Man, the life of Christ manifest in your mortal body!

48. I like to use wine in Communion & not grape juice because even the spirit of the wine is symbolic of the Spirit of God, the stimulating Spirit of the Lord.

49. Communion is a good time to renew fellowship, confess sins, make things right, thank Him for His Salvation, obtain healing, bring unity & witness to all His goodness to us all! God will bless you as you do what He commanded. "If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them!" (Jn.13:17)

50. Christ's body can cure you of any disease & is payment for your sicknesses & diseases & illnesses & heals you. And His blood cleanseth you from all sin & always has & always does & always will, forever & ever & ever!

51. Communion doesn't have to be something long & drawn-out & very ceremonial & very pious & sanctimonious. You know what it all means, you don't need a sermon every time, you just need to do it, that's all!

52. We partake of this bread as wholly representing Thy very flesh--knowing that this taste of You, Lord, will give us supernatural strength & a touch of Thy healing, a sample of Resurrection power, a foretaste of eternal life for the body as well as for the Spirit!

53. Through this symbolism we claim Thy salvation through faith until the day when You come, when our bodies will be restored & perfect & our spirits will be made perfect.

54. We thank Thee that Thou hast given that wonderful promise & prophecy that there will still be some of us around here, Lord, to celebrate Thy death until You come. The Devil won't be able to stamp us out completely, we'll be showing Thy death till You come.

55. From one end of the World to the other 'round the World millions & millions of Christians celebrate this, Thy Holy Eucharist, Thy Communion, Thy Supper of the bread & the wine, Thy body & blood on this very day, Sunday, the Christian Sabbath. So we are one great family, Lord. Many of them don't know You very well but at least they're trying to manifest their faith.

56. I like you to be happy & we're a happy people, but you should also remember sometimes to be sober. In some ways Communion is a sober occasion. In some ways it's a very happy occasion, so I guess whatever you feel personally is fine. If you feel like laughing, OK, if you fell like crying, OK.--Amen? God bless you with Communion!

(See also No. 337B, 781, 986, 1386, 1473, 1533, 1544, *Love Songs* songbook.)

57. PSA.116:13 I will take the cup of Salvation, and call upon the Name of the Lord.

58. MAT.26:26-28 And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is My body. And He took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; For this is My blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

59. MAR.14:22-24 And as they did eat, Jesus took the bread, and blessed, and brake it, and gave to them, and said, Take, eat: this is My body. And He took the cup, and when He had given thanks, He gave it to them: and they all drank of it. And He said unto them, This is My blood of the new testament, which is shed for many.

60. LUK.22:19,20 And He took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying, This is My body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of Me. Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup is the new testament in My blood, which is shed for you.

61. JOH.6:51 I am the living bread which came down from Heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: and the bread that I will give is My flesh, which I will give for the life of the World.

62. JOH.6:53-56 Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink His blood, ye have no life in you. Whoso eateth My flesh, and drinketh My blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day. For My flesh is meat indeed, and My blood is drink indeed. He that eateth My flesh, and drinketh My blood, dwelleth in Me, and I in Him.

63. 1Co.10:16,17 The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ? For we being many are one bread, and one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread.

64. 1Co.11:23-30 For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the same night in which He was betrayed took bread: And when He had given thanks, He brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is My body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of Me. After the same manner also He took the cup, when He had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in My blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of Me. For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till He come. Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord. But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup. For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body. For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep.

65. EPH.2:13 But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ.

66. HEB.9:14 How much more shall the blood of Christ, Who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?

67. HEB.9:22 And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without shedding of blood is no remission.

68. REV.5:9 And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for Thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by Thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation.

(See also ISA.53.)

## 15. CONVICTION/COMPROMISE

--{page 119}--



*He that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind & tossed (Jam.1:6).*

1. The guy who compromises winds up by not pleasing anybody at all!
2. It is never the wrong time to do the right thing.
3. A man convinced against his will is not convinced.
4. What I must do, & not what people think, is all that concerns me.
5. With God, it's usually all or nothing at all! There's no halfway with the Lord! He abhors the half-hearted, the lukewarm, the indecisive, the compromisers, the "so-far-&-no-further folks"!
6. We have never hung on to anybody at the price of compromise & sacrificing the work & the Word & the Spirit of God & our high standards & loyalty to the leadership & the Family!
7. If you stand by without protest when the rights of others are being violated, soon these same evil forces will be violating your own!
8. If the Devil can't get you to stop, he tries to get you to compromise. He tempts you with half-truths that make you doubt your convictions or not live up to them fully. He knows you'll never make peace with him in your war on evil, so he tries to tempt you with a temporary truce.
9. The only way the Devil can win is to get you to let down your guard for just a moment, or get you to compromise only a few minutes so he can do his dirty work while you're not looking!
10. If you're on fire, the World will come to see you burn!
11. The Enemy of your soul just needs a little time of compromise to get close enough to strike you some mortal blow below the belt! This is the grave danger of the unguarded moment!--Just a moment of unguarded danger that can put you in your grave!
12. To sin by silence when they should protest, makes cowards out of men.
13. You can't do business with the Devil! You can't declare a truce with Satan & say, "You leave me alone & I'll leave you alone!" The Lord doesn't approve of that at all!
14. Conscience is God's presence in man.
15. To be persuasive, we must be believable,

To be believable, we must be credible,

To be credible, we must be truthful.

16. We can easily forgive a child who is afraid of the dark. The real tragedy of life is when men are afraid of the Light.

17. Take your stand! If you don't stand for something you'll fall for anything.

18. If the voice tells me to do something bad, I know it's the Devil! If it tells me to do something good, I know it's God!

19. First impressions are the right ones, if you're truly following the Lord!

20. Don't try to sell something you're not sold on.

21. I am afraid to work with people who are not sold out to God.

22. I cannot stomach people who haven't got the guts to stand up for what they believe!

23. If you don't tell others, you don't believe it yourself! Something you believe, you talk about!

24. It is so easy to make excuses, legitimate, logical, reasonable, acceptable excuses why you couldn't make it--why you shouldn't be expected to make it, & in most cases most people will accept your excuses, because most people don't have faith either, & in excusing you they're excusing themselves. But is God going to excuse you?

25. Failing to stand up for the truth is nearly as bad as denying the Lord!

26. Sometimes it's good to be stubborn if you're stubborn for the Lord in the right direction.

27. We have to stand pat on our convictions and pay the price for them, the stand-pat price of being a revolutionary!

28. I believe we're right--the rightest of all the rights! We've got the best of everything!

29. After I finally got to trusting the Lord, I didn't care what people thought, I just did what I thought was best!

30. If you let people push you around you'll never get anywhere in this kind of World! You've got to fight for your rights!

31. Someone has said: "It is not enough for a gardener to love flowers, he must also hate weeds."

32. One person with a belief is equal to a force of 99 who only have interest.

33. If your will power doesn't work, try your "won't" power.

34. You can't face a situation without doing something about it, if you're conscientious.

35. You've got to really believe in your product to speak & preach & sell with conviction!

36. Jesus refused to compromise with the religious system, but rather worked totally outside the existing system, attacked it head-on, ruthlessly exposed it & drove the money-changers from the Temple, & strove to lead God's little children back to the worship of the true Father.

37. If your heart condemns you not, then you have confidence or faith toward God. In other words, if you have such strong faith in the Spirit & in the Word that you know what you're doing is the right thing because of the Word & the Holy Spirit, you can do things that some other Christians can't even do, that they would feel condemned about doing.

38. If you still think the System's great, then get your hell out of here, & go back to the swinepit & your vomit!--But if you're going to serve God, for God's sake, know what you believe, & serve Him, no matter what they say!

39. I think anybody who is ashamed of their convictions must not have enough foundation for their faith.

40. Watch out about compromise. Watch out about any compromise or pulling your punches for advantage, for finances, for protection, for safety, for anything. Be faithful to the message; be faithful to the method; be faithful to the Word; be faithful to the Voice of God; be faithful to His Revolution, the particular ministry He's called you to--to be loyal!

41. You have to have conviction, or you cannot live, and then you have to do something about your conviction, or you can't stand to live with yourself!

42. There is no such thing as the peaceful co-existence of good & evil! "I came not to bring peace, but a sword!" One or the other has to conquer!

43. You cannot stop the man of faith! You cannot dissuade him! You cannot divert him! He'll go on, with or without you, or right over you, if necessary!

44. One compromise leads to another & eventually leads to complete denial, renunciation & denouncement!

45. The Devil's answer to God's challenge is always a System-preserving compromise.

46. If the shoe fits, wear it! It's the hit dog that usually howls.

47. People don't realise that if they hold one little thing back from the Lord, one little compromise, one little tiny thing from the Lord, they're on their way to backsliding! Because one little disobedience leads to another, one little refusal & denial leads to another, one bit of selfishness leads to more.

48. If I've gotten something directly & specifically from the Lord on a matter, either from the written Word or a direct revelation, it is your duty to obey that, & not be dissuaded or stopped by others' doubts or questions.

49. You're God's ambassador, you're representing the King of kings, the One who runs the universe, do don't let people push you around.

50. The temptation is always to compromise & soft peddle & tone down the message & the doctrines & the methods to please the people, particularly the churches & the governments for the sake of support & to escape any kind of disapproval or persecution.

51. The Devil uses all kinds of tricks to get you to compromise, & once you compromise, then you begin to become more & more like them & closer to them until pretty soon you can't tell the two apart.

52. All the churches, denominations, splinter groups, new cults & isms & sects had to eventually choose whether to stick true & all-out for their messages & doctrines & preaching them & practising them, or choose safety, comfort, convenience, compromise, peace & support, & you can see what virtually all of them did!

(See also No. D, F, 66, 143A, 148, 299, 309B, 399, 585, 585R, 586, 589, 590, 591, 597, 678, 679, 703, 772, 804, 936, 1005, 1054, 1330, 1377, 1511, 1548.)

53. 1KI.18:21 And Elijah came unto all the people, and said, How long halt ye between two opinions? if the Lord be God, follow Him: but if Baal, then follow him.

54. PSA.57:7 My heart is fixed, O God, my heart is fixed: I will sing and give praise.

55. PRO.8:13 The fear of the Lord is to hate evil.

56. PRO.16:3 Commit thy works unto the Lord, and thy thoughts shall be established.

57. ISA.50:7 For the Lord God will help me; therefore shall I not be confounded: therefore have I set my face like a flint, and I know that I shall not be ashamed.

58. DAN.3:18 But if not, be it known unto thee, O king, that we will not serve thy gods, nor worship the golden image which thou hast set up.

59. HOS.10:2 Their heart is divided; now shall they be found faulty.

60. HAB.2:4b The just shall live by his faith.

61. ACT.4:20 For we cannot but speak the things which we have seen and heard.

62. ACT.28:30,31 And Paul dwelt two whole years in his own hired house, and received all that came in unto him, Preaching the Kingdom of God, and teaching those things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ, with all confidence, no man forbidding him.

63. 1CO.9:26 I therefore so run, not as uncertainly; so fight I, not as one that beateth the air.

64. 1CO.10:21 Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils.

65. 1CO.16:13 Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong.

66. EPH.4:14 That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive.

67. TIT.2:15 These things speak, and exhort, and rebuke with all authority. Let no man despise thee.

68. HEB.13:9 Be not carried about with diverse and strange doctrines. For it is a good thing that the heart be established with grace.

69. JAM.1:6 But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed.

70. JAM.1:8 A double minded man is unstable in all his ways.

71. 1PE.3:15 But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts: and be ready always to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you, with meekness and fear.

72. 1JO.3:21 Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, then have we confidence toward God.

73. REV.3:15,16 I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot. I would that thou wert cold or hot. So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of My mouth.

## 16. CREATION --{page 126}--



*For the invisible things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power & Godhead; so that they are without excuse (Rom. 1:20).*

1. God's Creation is the greatest proof of His existence.
2. It is said in all the ages that there has never been & never will be a man or woman just like you. You are unique & have no double. Every life is a fresh thought from God to the World.
3. All I have seen teaches me to trust the Creator for all I have not seen.
4. I cannot see how it would be possible for a man to look down upon the earth & be an atheist, & I cannot conceive how he could look up into the heavens & say there is no God.
5. Man is both the greatest miracle & the greatest problem on earth.
6. There's nothing that's ever without significance or without meaning.
7. How has man turned God's glory into shame?--He's polluted the Earth & invented the lie of Evolution!
8. Anything that glorifies the marvels of God's Creation is not very much marvelled at anymore because it's too much proof of a Designer & Creator & Builder & Architect of the Universe!
9. The human body is the most perfect machine ever made!
10. God's permanent creations of the earth, sun, moon & stars are forever!
11. It's so wonderful to look at God's Creation! Everything God does is right. Everything is the way it's supposed to be, even the little sparrows!
12. During an eclipse of the moon: Jesus is the Sun, we're the moon & the Devil's like that ol' black shadow of the Earth trying to gobble us up!--But he can't!
13. You can't help but see the marvel of God's handiwork & design when you study His Creation!
14. I marvel how in this tiny backyard there is a whole miniature universe of Creation: plant life, animal life, & bug life!
15. Birds are almost always a sign of peace, except, of course, birds of prey.
16. God compares Man to many of the creatures He has made.
17. It's the Devil's whole religion to make people worship things & the Creation more than the Creator, the effect instead of the cause.
18. God's visible Creation is an illustration of the things in the spirit.
19. Man has invented a lot of things which are imitations of God's creations.
20. The most precious, priceless thing which God ever made is a human soul!
21. There is either a spiritual analogy for nearly everything natural, or there is a natural example for nearly everything spiritual.
22. The opposite of destruction is creation!
23. Lord, help us to be like trees, planted strong in Thy Earth & nourished with the water of Thy Word & fertilised with the food of Thy very body!
24. The ultimate picture of God's creative love for man is a beautiful woman!
25. No human being, no human spirit is created without the touch of the Divine, the touch of the hand of God!
26. One little humble lowly chicken out in some poor man's chicken yard produces a marvel of creation every day!--A beautiful ovular orb! Even one little lowly egg is a marvel of God's Creation!
27. We're hung out here in space on nothing except the power of God!
28. I don't believe in killing anything we don't have to--the Lord made everything for a purpose.

29. Why should we worry, when God's Creation keeps right on faithfully going, constantly turning, revolving, rising & setting, not questioning, not worrying, not faltering, knowing God's in complete control!

30. Although the whole Creation testifies of the existence of the invisible God, the World refuses to receive the testimony, because they choose to be ignorant!

31. We look at the trees, the sky & the beautiful Creation all around us, & we know God lives, we know He's there as here!

32. Even the Garden of Eden had to have somebody taking care of it! The Lord expected man to improve His Creation.

33. The whole idea of all Creation is the struggle between good & evil & to show the difference!

34. Everything God has made in the natural is an illustration of something in the spiritual!

35. The Lord Himself is a master artist. He really puts some swirls up there in His sunsets & His colours are gorgeous!

36. God made a few ugly things so we'd appreciate the pretty things, a few thorns so we'd appreciate the roses!

37. Most things God created are beautiful, & if some people aren't, it's not God's fault, it's because of the way they've been perverted & contorted through sin & time & the Fall.

38. The Devil cooked up evolution to try to deny the Creation of God!

39. Everything in God's Creation proves God exists--its perfection, its organisation, its synchronisation, its harmony, its unity, its balance!

40. The material Creation is the proof of the existence of the immaterial God!

41. When I see that glorious Creation of God I know that everything's under control, except what man has messed up.

42. This is a place too fair,  
To be the child of chance & not of care.

No atoms casually together hurl'd,  
Could e'er produce so beautiful a World!

43. To see God in everything makes life the greatest adventure there is.

44. Only God's Creation is alive, reproductive & self-repairing!

45. Just one tree is so marvellous a mechanism, a creation of God, that man can't even understand it!

46. Even one little cell is beyond man's comprehension!

47. Woman was God's last & ultimate creation & the most beautiful work of art that He ever made!

48. The whole Creation is pyramidal, spiral, conical or spherical--from the atom to the Universe!

49. To me, a tree is just about the next most beautiful thing the Lord ever made besides a woman!

50. The Creation that God made is alive and self-reproductive, but what man makes is often waste & total death.

51. Nothing's ever wasted in God's Creation.

52. Whenever there is a copy, somewhere there must be the original reality!

53. God's greatest work of art was a woman--His crowning creation!

54. God created us to be beautiful & He gave each one of us our own particular beauty.

55. God's whole Creation is a work of art which portrays His message of Love!

56. In spite of all that men suppose  
Earth is the centre & the place God chose!

57. The creation of Heaven & Earth were done,  
Before God even created the sun!

58. Do not confuse which is the greater,  
Things made are less than the Maker.

59. Astronomers are too much inclined  
To enlarge each distance that they find.

60. The Devil hates a soul's creation,  
And even more that soul's salvation!

61. God's Creation is a witness without words!

62. A heathen philosopher once asked a Christian, "Where is God?" The Christian answered, "Let me first ask you. Where is He not?"

63. Man creates nothing really; he merely discovers what God has already made & he merely discovers how to put it together to do the things God has already created it for--& sometimes things He didn't make it for!



64. Just as behind a watch there had to be a watchmaker, so behind the intricate precision & timing of this great Universe there had to be a great Creator or Designer!

65. God made a machine that could talk in one day!--You! And it took man 6,000 years to do the same!

66. Life is proof that there is God, because life is a miracle!

(See also No. 736, 1338, 1387, *Childcare Handbook III.*)

67. **GEN.1:1,2** In the beginning God created the Heaven and the Earth. And the Earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.

68. . 1:27 So God created man in His Own image, in the image of God created He him; male and female created He them.

69. .2:7 And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.

70. .3:1a Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made.

71. .8:22 While the Earth remaineth, seedtime and harvest, and cold and heat, and summer and winter, and day and night shall not cease.

72. .20:11a For in six days the Lord made Heaven and Earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day.

73. SA.2:6 The Lord killeth, and maketh alive: He bringeth down to the grave, and bringeth up.

74. .9:6 Thou, even Thou, art Lord alone; Thou hast made Heaven, the Heaven of heavens, with all their host, the Earth, and all things that are therein, the seas, and all that is therein, and Thou preservest them all; and the host of Heaven worshippeth Thee.

75. .10:8 Thine hands have made me & fashioned me together round about.

76. .26:7 He stretcheth out the north over the empty place, and hangeth the Earth upon nothing.

77. .37:6,10,13 He saith to the snow, Be thou on the Earth; likewise to the small rain, and to the great rain of His strength. By the breath of God frost is given: and the breadth of the waters is straightened. He causeth it to come, whether for correction, or for His land, or for mercy.

78. .2:7 Thou art My Son: this day have I begotten Thee.

79. .8:3 When I consider Thy heavens, the work of Thy fingers, the moon and the stars, which Thou hast ordained.

80. .19:1 The Heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth His handywork.

81. .24:1,2 The Earth is the Lord's, and the fulness thereof: the World, and they that dwell therein. For He hath founded it upon the seas, and established it upon the floods.

82. .33:6,9 By the Word of the Lord were the Heavens made; and all the host of them by the breath of His mouth. For He spake, and it was done; He commanded, and it stood fast.

83. .74:16,17 The day is Thine, the night also is Thine: Thou hast prepared the light and the sun. Thou hast set all the borders of the Earth: Thou hast made summer and winter.

84. .89:11 The Heavens are Thine, the Earth also is Thine: as for the World and the fulness thereof, Thou hast founded them.

85. .95:5-7a The sea is His, and He made it: and His hands formed the dry land. O come, let us worship and bow down: let us kneel before the Lord our Maker. For He is our God; and we are the people of His pasture, and the sheep of His hand.

86. .100:3 Know ye that the Lord He is God: it is He that hath made us, and not we ourselves; we are His people, and the sheep of His pasture.

87. .102:25 Of old hast Thou laid the foundation of the Earth: and the heavens are the work of Thy hands.

88. .104:24 O Lord, how manifold are Thy works! In wisdom hast Thou made them all: the Earth is full of Thy riches.

89. .104:30 Thou sendest forth Thy Spirit, they are created: and Thou renewest the face of the Earth.

90. .139:14 I will praise Thee; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvellous are Thy works; and that my soul knoweth right well.

91. .148:5 Let them praise the Name of the Lord: for He commanded, and they were created.

92. .3:19 The Lord by wisdom hath founded the Earth; by understanding hath He established the Heavens.

93. .16:4 The Lord hath made all things for Himself; yea, even the wicked for the day of evil.

94. .20:12 The hearing ear, & the seeing eye, the Lord hath made even both of them.
95. .45:7 I form the light, and create darkness: I make peace, and create evil: I the Lord do all these things.
96. .45:12 I have made the Earth, and created man upon it: I, even My hands, have stretched out the Heavens, and all their host have I commanded.
97. .66:2a For all those things hath Mine hand made.
98. .8:7 Yea, the stork in the Heaven knoweth her appointed times; and the turtle and the crane and the swallow observe the time of their coming.
99. EZE.37:5,6 Thus saith the Lord God unto these bones; Behold, I will cause breath to enter into you, and ye shall live: And I will lay sinews upon you, and will bring up flesh upon you, and cover you with skin, and put breath in you, and ye shall live.
100. .1:1-3 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by Him; and without Him was not any thing made that was made.
101. .1:20 For the invisible things of Him from the creation of the World are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse.
102. .11:36 For of Him, and through Him, and to Him, are all things: to Whom be glory for ever.  
Amen.
103. COR.8:6 But to us there is but one God, the Father, of Whom are all things, and we in Him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by Whom are all things, and we by Him.
104. COR.11:12 ...Woman is of the man, even so is the man also by the woman; but all things of God.
105. .2:10 For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.
106. .3:9 And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the World hath been hid in God, Who created all things by Jesus Christ.
107. .1:16,17 For by Him were all things created, that are in Heaven, and that are in Earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by Him, and for Him: And He is before all things, and by Him all things consist.
108. .1:1,2 God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, Hath in these last days spoken unto us by His Son, Whom He hath appointed heir of all things, by Whom also He made the worlds.
109. .3:4b ...He that built all things is God.
110. .11:3 Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the Word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear.
111. PE.1:3 ...His divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness.
112. PE.3:5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the Word of God the heavens were of old, and the Earth standing out of the water and in the water.
113. .4:11 Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for Thou hast created all things, and for Thy pleasure they are and were created.

(See also GEN.1:1-31; JOB 12:7-10; JOB 26:7-14; JOB 37:1-23; JOB 38:1-41; JOB 39:1-30; PSA.104:1-32; PSA.135:7; PSA.147:15-18; ECC.3:14-15; ISA.50:2,3; DAN.2:21; AMO.5:8; NAH.1:3-6.)



*The words of a talebearer are as wounds, & they go down into the innermost parts of the belly (Pro.26:22).*

1. Letting things go in one ear & out the other is bad enough, but it's worse when things go in one ear, get all mixed up, & come out the mouth.
2. Don't find fault with what you don't understand.
3. They'll come to you & talk about me, but they'll come to me & talk about you!
4. Try to fix the mistake--never the blame.
5. It's smart to pick your friends--but not to pieces.
6. A man's tongue is like his car. If it gets to knocking too much, he'd better have it overhauled or change it.
7. Christians should watch & pray, & not watch & criticise.
8. If criticising gives you pain, then do it; If it gives you the slightest pleasure, keep your mouth shut.
9. A new idea is delicate. It can be killed by a sneer or a yawn; it can be stabbed to death by a quip and worried to death by a frown.
10. There is always something wrong with a man, as there is with a motor, when he knocks continually.
11. You don't have to be in a car to run people down.
12. Before I judge my neighbour, let me walk a mile in his shoes.
13. Rare is the person who can weigh the faults of others without putting his thumb on the scales.
14. Critic: One who finds a little bad in the best of things.
15. Before you flare up at someone's faults, take time to count ten--ten of your own.
16. When I point my finger at my neighbour, there are three more pointing back at me.
17. None are so fond of secrets as those who do not mean to keep them.
18. Busy souls have no time to be busybodies.
19. Rumour is a great traveller.
20. Who chatters to you will chatter of you.
21. One eye-witness is better than two hear-says.
22. He who peeps through a hole, may see what will bother him.
23. Let me live in my house by the side of the road,  
Where the race of men go by,  
They are good, they are bad,  
They are weak, they are strong,  
Wise & foolish--so am I.  
Then why should I sit in the scorner's seat,  
Or hurl the cynic's ban?  
Let me live in my house by the side of the road,  
And be a friend to man.
24. What some invent the rest enlarge.
25. He that repeateth a matter separateth very friends.(Pro.17:9)
26. Watch out if all you do is condemn & rant & rave & you never drool the sweet honey Love of Jesus!
27. One reason a dog is such a lovable creature is that his tail wags instead of his tongue.
28. There is no venom like that of the tongue.

29 There is so much good in the worst of us, & so much bad in the best of us, that it hardly behooves any of us to talk about the rest of us.

30. The tongue is only three inches long, yet it can kill a man six feet tall.

31. If you must slander anyone, don't speak it, but write it--write it in the sand near the water's edge.

32. You can talk about me as much as you please, I'll talk about you down on my knees.

33. Everytime you throw dirt on someone you lose a little ground.

34. Watch out about belittling other people--you're apt to get belittled yourself!

35. Those who live in glass houses should not throw stones.

36. A lie will go around the World while the Truth is getting its boots on.

37. Watch out what you say about God's anointed--whether it be true or false--if it's going to hurt God's work or His worker.

38. A critical spirit sows dissension, disunity & discord amongst brethren, one of the seven abominations to God!

39. There's no point in running down other people's products unless we have a better one to offer ourselves!

40. Little lessons from the wise, should not commence with "criticise".

41. It's always easier to tear down than it is to build up!

42. Pretty soon most gossips are actually convinced that the stories they are telling are true--they tell them so often they begin to believe them themselves.

43. It's a naughty spirit to tease.

44. A cup brimful of sweet water cannot spill even one drop of bitter water, however suddenly jolted.

45. Critics are people who go places & boo things.

46. Two things are hard on the heart--running up stairs & running down people.

47. A hypocrite is a person who pretends to be burying the hatchet when she's only digging up dirt.

48. To escape criticism--do nothing, say nothing, be nothing.

49. No matter what mistakes Moses made, God held the people accountable for their own sins & He rebuked them for any criticism of Moses--for what they thought was wrong or even what they knew was wrong.

50. Words are real things! They bless or they curse, they lift up or they knock down, they save or they damn!

51. If someone were to pay you 10 cents for every kind word you spoke about people, & collect 5 cents for every unkind word, would you be rich or poor?

52. Nothing ever happens in a small town, but what you hear makes up for it!

53. When you hear about somebody's bad points, remember that they must also have some good points.

54. There's only one way to change the unruly tongue, & that is to transform the spirit that controls it.

55. Of all the weapons of warfare, the tongue has been the greatest when it gets loose!

56. Too often when you tell a secret it goes in one ear & in another.

57. Someone described a wise man as saying, "You are lord of your tongue, but I am also master of my ears."

58. Passing the buck started in the Garden of Eden. The first form of self-defense is blaming others.

(See also No.1247, FC's "Pastor's Pillow", 1377, 1547.)

59. EXO.23:1 Thou shalt not raise a false report: put not thine hand with the wicked to be an unrighteous witness.

60. LEV.19:16 Thou shalt not go up and down as a talebearer among thy people.

61. PSA. 15:3 He that backbiteth not with his tongue, nor doeth evil to his neighbour, nor taketh up a reproach against his neighbour.

62. PSA.32:9 Be ye not as the horse, or as the mule, which have no understanding: whose mouth must be held in with bit and bridle, lest they come near unto thee.

63. PSA.101:5,7 Whoso privily slandereth his neighbour, him will I cut off: He that worketh deceit shall not dwell within My house: he that telleth lies shall not tarry in My sight.

64. PRO.15:1 A soft answer turneth away wrath: but grievous words stir up anger.

65. PRO.15:4 A wholesome tongue is a tree of life: but perverseness therein is a breach in the spirit.

66. PRO.18:21 Death and life are in the power of the tongue: and they that love it shall eat the fruit thereof.

67. PRO.26:20 Where no wood is, there the fire goeth out: so where there is no talebearer, the strife ceaseth.

68. PRO.26:22 The words of a talebearer are as wounds, and they go down into the innermost parts of the belly.

69. MAT.7:1-5 Judge not, that ye be not judged. For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again. And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; and, behold, a beam is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eye.

70. MAT.12:34b For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.

71. ROM.2:1-3 Therefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoever thou art that judgest: for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thyself; for thou that judgest doest the same things. But we are sure that the judgment of God is according to truth against them which commit such things. And thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them which do such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the judgment of God?

72. ROM.14:13 Let us not therefore judge one another any more: but judge this rather, that no man put a stumbling block or an occasion to fall in his brother's way.

73. EPH.4:29 Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers.

74. JAM.3:5,6 Even so the tongue is a little member, and boasteth great things. Behold, how great a matter a little fire kindleth! And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue among our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature; and is set on fire of Hell.

75. 1PE.3:9,10 Not rendering evil for evil, or railing for railing: but contrariwise blessing; knowing that ye are thereunto called, that ye should inherit a blessing. For he that will love life, and see good days, let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips that they speak no guile.

## **18. DAVID**    --{page 140}--



*And David My servant shall be king over them: and they all shall have one shepherd: they shall also walk in My judgements, and observe My statutes, and do them (Eze.37:24).*

1. I'm God's servant and your servant, and I really only do what you and He ask me to do!
2. I'm the guy who has to have the vision to inspire your faith to have the courage to get out there & do the job!
3. God has chosen for you a Voice & a Man through whom He speaks His Message, which gives you the vision, which creates in you the faith, which gives you the courage, to take the initiative to attack & press on & progress & grow!
4. I can't help it, I can't stop it, I can't keep it.--I just have to give it! It's like a river that just keeps flowing, no matter what, because of the Dew of Heaven--Jesus!
5. The designer of the revolution has to be far enough away to see the over-all plan.
6. All I've got to live for is to get out the Word of God.
7. No movement ever begins without a man! Everything always has to have a leader, has to have someone who has the vision & the faith & the courage to inspire the people.

8. The character, nature & personality of the Prophet colours his ministry--& mine's been quite colourful!
9. How revolutionary can David get?--As revolutionary as the Lord!
10. I said, "Lord, I'll follow, show me the way!" He did, and it led straight into your hearts and you took me in.
11. I have the mind of Christ--so far as He gives me His thoughts. I have the words of Christ--as many as He gives me. I'm nothing but an instrument of God--His tool.--But I'm not God!
12. I am just a toilet, the humblest, lowest, most despised & dishonored of all vessels in a great house, but the most necessary! Out of the tank of every toilet comes God's fresh clean water to wash away man's defilement!
13. I'm not the Maker or the mechanic: I'm just the driver who's following the Vision ahead according to the Map and the instruction of the Owner.
14. God's Move is always led by God's Man who is God's Voice for God's Vision--the Voice of His choice--the Vision of His Chosen!
15. I said, "Lord, how could I do anything to reach all these people? I'm so small, so insignificant, so tiny, so nothing!" And suddenly the Lord spoke just as clear as I ever heard His voice...."Yes, but I have caused thy voice to echo round the World!"
16. Moses made mistakes, but there was no time when he was deceived.
17. Prophets are only men & women & they are fallible & they can misunderstand.
18. Prophets are born, not made!--Called & anointed of the Lord!
19. That's one thing I think I've proven, I'm willing to change if the Lord shows me I'm wrong!
20. They came out to see me burn, somebody on fire, & they knew I was on fire, & they loved it!--And they followed it!
21. I'm just like a computer--I'm fed with the input, & when the Lord presses the button, I give the output!
22. If you tell me I can't do it, then I'm going to prove to you I can!
23. I hate to be defeated, I hate to give up.
24. Everybody always said it couldn't be done, it wasn't possible! That's all you have to tell me, that I can't do it, then I have to prove it to you I can. Then I'm going to do it even if I have to take the whole project in my own hands & shove it through.
25. I'm always determined to finish whatever I start!
26. I'm such a crazy funny prophet! I don't think there's ever been a Prophet in the whole World as crazy & funny as I am!
27. I said, "Lord, I never wanted to be an administrator, I never wanted to run anything!" And He said, "That's why I could trust you to do it!" It was almost forced on me by the Lord! The Lord told me very clearly, "Sorry, you're not only a Prophet, but you're also a King!"
28. What makes me & my writings different is that I say things other people are afraid to say or that they're only thinking. I say what other people wish they could say. But of course they live in one place all the time. I say it, & then I have to run!--Ha!
29. If you want to know why those lessons & Letters are so long, it's just because I open my mouth & He fills it, & as long as I keep my mouth open He keeps pouring it in & I keep pouring it out. The only problem is I don't know when to shut it because as long as I keep it open, He keeps filling it. He never runs dry, He's a fountain that flows forever, out & in. He pours in & I pour out! PTL!
30. Sometimes I think the Lord just gives me these little dreams as a starter, just to make me start talking, because I know I've got to tell them & try to interpret them. It's just like He primes the pump with it, & once He gets me going He knows I can't stop. I'll faithfully give the Message!
31. I take my orders from God. I don't take my orders from the people. I give orders, I don't take orders except from God.
32. I love a confrontation! I love to bring things out in the open & hit things right on. I'm a fighter! I really love to fight because I know I'm on the right side, I know God's on my side & I've got the nothing to lose!
33. In the Old Testament, the three types of leaders who were anointed with oil for the Lord's Service as a type of the Spirit of God according to Mosaic Law were prophets, priests & kings. The prophet received his anointing directly from the Lord & spoke with the voice of God & as the mouth-piece of God. The priests also had a spiritual ministry. They ministered in the tabernacle or Temple, which was a type of the Kingdom, the church, the people. They were pastors, teachers, intercessors for the people. The king was just as important in many ways, but his duties were with the political, the material, the administration of the Kingdom. He was like a head deacon in the church--a layman. Sometimes these three overlapped, as in the case of King David, who was a well-rounded type of Christ--he fulfilled all three roles: Prophet, Priest, & King!

34. I'm the only evangelist I ever heard of whose ministry is not built on any kind of public mass meetings or even mass media!

35. It hasn't been easy, not having personal touch & contact. But when I get inspired & into writing the Lord's Letters, I feel I've got a personal, intimate, tangible touch with every human heart in our whole Family.

36. The Lord told me that I'm most blessed of all men on the face of the Earth, & I believe it & I know it, because I have you, my precious children in the Lord, who bring joy & satisfaction to my heart & soul & a feeling of tremendous accomplishment & sublime fulfillment in life!

(See also No. U, 28, 29, 61, 63, 64, 77, 78, 79, 83, 84, 102, 115, 152, 172, 264, 268, 307B, 315, 335, 351, 610, 695, 698, 724, 779, 958, 989, 992, 1333, 1335, 1351, 1352, 1353, 1354, 1355, 1356, 1357, 1358, 1359, 1361, 1362, 1363, 1365, 1367, 1406, 1501, 1539, 1540, 1592, 1598, 1642.)

37. DEU.18:15,18 The Lord thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the mist of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him ye shall hearken. I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee, and will put My Words in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him.

38. PSA.18:50 Great deliverance giveth He to His king; and showeth mercy to His anointed, to David, and to his seed for evermore.

39. PSA.89:3,4 I have made a covenant with My chosen, I have sworn unto David My servant, Thy seed will I establish for ever, and build up thy throne to all generations. Selah.

40. PSA.89:19-24,35 Then Thou spakest in vision to Thy holy one, and saidst, I have laid help upon one that is mighty: I have exalted one chosen out of the people. I have found David My servant; with My holy oil have I anointed him: With whom My hand shall be established: Mine arm also shall strengthen him. The enemy shall not exact upon him; nor the son of wickedness afflict him. And I will beat down his foes before his face, and plague them that hate him. But My faithfulness and My mercy shall be with him: and in My Name shall his horn be exalted. Once have I sworn by My holiness that I will not lie unto David.

41. PSA.132:11,12,17,18 The Lord hath sworn in truth unto David; He will not turn from it; Of the fruit of thy body will I set upon thy throne. If thy children will keep My covenant and My testimony that I shall teach them, their children shall also sit upon thy throne for evermore. There will I make the horn of David to bud: I have ordained a lamp for Mine anointed. His enemies will I clothe with shame: but upon himself shall his crown flourish.

42. PSA.144:10 It is He that giveth Salvation unto kings: who delivereth David His servant from the hurtful sword.

43. PRO.25:2 It is the glory of God to conceal a thing: but the honor of kings is to search out a matter.

44. PRO.29:14 The king that faithfully judgeth the poor, his throne shall be established for ever.

45. ISA.55:3-5 Incline your ear, and come unto Me: hear, and your soul shall live: and I will make an everlasting covenant with you, even the sure mercies of David. Behold, I have given him for a witness to the people, a leader and commander to the people. Behold, thou shalt call a nation that thou knowest not, and nations that knew not thee shall run unto thee because of the Lord thy God, and for the Holy One of Israel; for He hath glorified thee.

46. JER.30:7-9,21,24 Alas! for that day is great, so that none is like it: it is even the time of Jacob's trouble; but he shall be saved out of it. For it shall come to pass in that day, saith the Lord of hosts, that I will break his yoke from off thy neck, and will burst thy bonds, and strangers shall no more serve themselves of him; But they shall serve the Lord their God, and David their king, whom I will raise up unto them. And their nobles shall be of themselves, and their governor shall proceed from the mist if them; and I will cause him to draw near, and he shall approach unto Me: for who is this that engaged his heart to approach unto Me? saith the Lord. In the Latter Days ye shall consider it.

47. EZE.34:11,12,23,24 For thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I, even I, will both search My sheep, and seek them out. As a shepherd seeketh out his flock in the day that he is among his sheep that are scattered; so will I seek out My sheep, and will deliver them out of all the places where they have been scattered in the cloudy and dark day. And I will set up one shepherd over them, and he shall feed them, even My servant David; he shall feed them, and he shall be their shepherd. And I the Lord will be their God, and My servant David a prince among them; I the Lord have spoken it.

48. EZE.37:24,25 And David My servant shall be king over them; and they all shall have one shepherd: they shall also walk in my judgments and observe My statutes, and do them. And they shall dwell in the land that I have given unto Jacob My servant, wherein your fathers have dwelt; and they shall dwell therein, even they, and their children, and their children's children for ever: and My servant David shall be their prince for ever.

49. HOS.3:5 Afterward shall the children of Israel return, and seek the Lord their God, and David their king; and shall fear the Lord and His goodness in the latter days.

50. REV.3:7-10 And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write; These things saith He that is holy, He that is true, He that hath the key of David, He that openeth, and no man shutteth; and shutteth, and no man openeth; I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept My Word, and hast not denied My Name. Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee. Because thou hast kept the Word of My patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the World, to try them that dwell on the Earth.

**19. "DAVID IS..."**

--{page 146}--



*And I will set up one shepherd over them, and he shall feed them, even My servant David; he shall feed them, and he shall be their shepherd (Eze.34:23).*

1. David is a Fiery Prophet! "The Words that he speaks are as flames of fire to set on fire the hearts of men! This is he that setteth on fire the course of nations!"

2. David is a Musician & "his Letters are like beautiful symphonies in Words! God plays the music in his key that turns him on & gives him the Words to the music!"

3. David is a Fighter "who likes to fight for the Lord with the weapon of the Word, a conquering hero that likes to live & die & fight for Jesus! No power in the World can withstand the power of the Spirit of God in David!"

4. David is a Mountainman, "leaving the multitude behind, braving the wind & the cold & the storms of this life to hear from God on the mountain the Words that echo around the World, whispers that change the course of history!"

5. David is God's Master Fisherman! "He knows how to use the bait & where to put the hook to catch many men for the Kingdom of God!"

6. David is a Miner "who gives his life to dig out precious gold & jewels from God's heavenly mines! From the deep dark places of the Earth come the most precious things of the World!"

7. David is a Good Shepherd "who layeth down his life for the sheep--leading, guarding & guiding the flock with the Rod of God's Word into the safety of His Fold forever! 'And I will set up one shepherd over them, & he shall feed them, even My servant David; he shall feed them & he shall be their shepherd.'" (Ez.34:23)

8. David is a Loving Father "to his children, cherishing & carrying them all the day long in his arms."

9. David is our Advocate "pleading for the cause of his children, that God will vindicate his Servants & save & deliver His Sheep from the hand of the Enemy!"

10. David is a "beautiful jewelled Pillar that helps support the Temple of God. The Pillar is covered with glowing Crystals, his children, that glow & pulsate with the pillar's light!"

11. David is a Crazy Crusader--"our old Don Quixote, a Brave Pioneer of the Spirit with crazy faith to do crazy things, leading us into a new & wonderful World of the Words & Works of God! 'Come with me where moonbeams light Eternal skies!--And the sparkling stardust lingers in your eyes!'"

12. David is a Deep Sea Diver, "diving into the ever-living waters of the Word, ever-fresh & new, to bring us strange new truths for our good, to strengthen & enlighten us & brighten our eyes & satisfy our souls!"

13. David is a Giver. "David wants to give & give, while some only want to get, & he shall give & give until he's gone!"



14. David is a Weeping Prophet, "who cries for them & gives his tears & Jesus helps them & forgives them. He sheds his tears for them like Jesus shed His blood."
15. David is God's Channel, "a pipeline, spouting the Words of God! The Lord turns on the faucet & the water goes through the pipe & waters the people!"
16. David is a "wirephoto & Teletype Machine on which we get the latest news in Words & pictures! God sends the pictures & the Words, & David, His little machine, rattles it off & passes it on to you!"
17. David is a faithful Operator! "With the hand of faith he flips the switch to receive God's Messages & he passes them on to the World!"
18. David is a Photographer! "He takes the pictures in his head & describes them to the artists who develop them!"
19. David is Aquarius, "poured forth as water unto the World!--Flowing, pouring, sharing in this Age of Aquarius, the Age of the Water of Life!--The Water-Bearer of all ages whom God has ordained to bring forth the Water of Life to the Children of this Last Generation!"
20. David is a Disciplinarian, "a very good father who knows how to give us chastisement for our mistakes! His Shepherd's Rod both saves & directs the sheep!"
21. David is "a born Salesman & Promoter!--Of the Gospel!--The best product on Earth!--Made in Heaven & guaranteed forever!--And free! How could anyone pass up a product & a deal like that!"
22. David is God's Picture--"showing the World what God is like & what Jesus wants them to see!"
23. David is "God's Early Warning System, the Prophet of God! We know long before the World knows, because God gives us early warning, twice the warning He gives the wicked!"
24. David is a Tape Recorder! "God puts the tape on & the recorder is programmed to broadcast whatever is on the tape! A tape recorder doesn't know what's coming, it just does what it's supposed to do!"
25. David is a Magician "with more power than Merlin, & with the power of the greatest magicians of the World to help him! His magic wand is the Word, & if you really hold onto it, it'll do things!"
26. David is a Sower "seeding a forest that is covering the Earth, bearing much precious fruit for God's Kingdom! The Seeds of David are the Words of his mouth that sow the Truth of God's Love & bring forth fruit of His mouth, little lambs of His fold!"
27. David is a Gardener! "Every beautiful soul along the highway of life is a little rose that we need to rescue from the System & replant in a safe little pot in the Lord's House!"
28. David is God's modern-day Jeremiah! "He has blasted the System & destroyed its lies & exposed its idols & smashed them to bits--rooting them out & casting them down in order to plant the true Seed of His Word & to build the true Temple of His Children!"
29. David is a Lover of the Word, "a worshipper of the Word--the secret of power & victory & overcoming & fruitfulness & fire & life & warmth & light & leadership! There's nothing more important than the Word!"
30. David is "the Fuse that Lights the Bomb that has blown us clear around the World in an explosion of the power of God!"
31. David is the "Flame of God's Candle in the midst of gross darkness, setting the World afire for God & enlightening the hearts of men everywhere."
32. David is an Antenna "getting God's messages & broadcasting them!"
33. David is a Warning Beacon, "beaming God's Warning Message to the World! He keeps his finger on the pulse of the World to warn us about the signs & omens of things to come!"
34. David is "a Small Rocket that's guiding a Big Rocket--the Family! The big rocket just has the power to push, but the little rocket guides it!"
35. David is a General "leading God's mighty army of Christian soldiers in a war for the Truth against the anti-Christ Systems of this World!--Taking his orders from our Commander-in-Chief, Jesus, & passing them on to the frontline troops!"
36. David is a "big Psychic to whom God has given wisdom & prophetic insight & oversight & out-of-sight to light the darkness!"
37. David is a Visionary! "It's his capacity, a Prophet's gift, to be able to see things & visualise them, see visions! Without a vision the people perish!"
38. David is God's modern-day Daniel, "with the wisdom of Daniel to know the number of the years, like the prophets of old, & speak the Words of God & receive the revelations, dreams, visions, prophecies & interpretations of God!"
39. David is God's Prophet "alone on the mountaintop with God receiving His Words in a heavy stream, rich, deep & wide--waters to swim in, pure & clear, which he passes on to the people!"

40. David is our Leader, "leading God's children around the World to a spiritual victory in the name of Jesus Christ!"

41. David is our Archeologist! "With every Letter he is clearing away the churchy rubble & man's debris in order to uncover what the Bible really says & what Jesus taught!"

42. David is an Angry Prophet! "David is a man of war! David is a man of power! David is a man of force! David is a man of violence & he hates the Enemy with a perfect hatred!"

43. David is a Teacher, "teaching a whole generation all over again with the right knowledge & the true knowledge of the Truth & the actual facts! His Words encourage, inspire, edify, instruct, rebuke, exhort, feed, comfort, lead and guide us!"

44. David is God's Modern-day Ezekiel, "a little man with a big Message of Warning & Woe! God has called him to be a Watchman unto the House of Israel, those who were supposed to be His Church, to give them warning from the Lord!"

45. David is a Baby Child Prophet! "God gives him messages in little fairy tales like a tiny little child! Even the foolishness of David is better than the wisdom of men!"

46. David is God's Guide, "leading the people & showing them the way to the hidden treasures of God's Word! He is a light to help lighten our way, to lead & guide, even as a light from afar that shines upon the pathway from a distant source."

47. David is a Pioneer, "with vision to see what no one else can see; faith to believe things no one else believes; initiative to be the first one to try it; & courage & guts to see it through!"

48. David is "a 100% whole-hearted Forsake-Aller! With him it's all or nothing at all! He's a fanatic, an extremist, drastic total revolutionary, & cannot even understand people who are not!"

49. David is an Intercessor, "with grace, mercy & truth! They come to him to tell their story & present their case & he begs Jesus for mercy for them & they are released!"

50. David is our Link to Jesus, "receiving God's precious revelations & His most recent timely up-to-the minute Word & passing it on to us! Jesus speaks the Words of David, & Moses speaks the Words of David, but these three are one & of one mouth."

51. David is a Man After God's Own Heart--"a man after the heart of God! He seeks God's heart & speaks the Words that come from God & from Moses & from David, & says those things which are favourable unto God!"

52. David is a Man with a Heart as Big as the World! "He's loving up the World & will not be satisfied until almost everybody on Earth is Saved!"

53. David is Moses, "who, with the Sceptre of God's Golden Words, is leading God's children into the Promised Land of the Kingdom of God on Earth!"

54. David is "King David of the whole World, the David of all Davids! This is the David whom I have chosen, the man whom I have called, the David whom I have selected, the David of whom I spake, the David of whom My prophets prophesied, the one whom I will honour above all those which have gone before!--The greatest king who ever lived on this Earth to glorify My Name!"

55. David is the King of Love "whom God has kissed & brought into being, & His Love has called him David, Beloved of God!"

56. David is King of the Beggars! "God showed him the despairing hippies, wandering about as sheep having no shepherd, & asked him if he'd be willing to go to these lost sheep & become king of these poor lost beggars! They needed a voice to speak for them, a shepherd to lead them & the rod of God's Word to guide them to the Light!"

57. David is the "Light of Israel! He has the spirit of Moses, the spirit of Abraham, the spirit of David & God's Spirit for this time, for there are many hungry souls & he needs to quench the thirst of many."

58. David is God's Mouthpiece, "His Prophet, His Man of God, His Chosen Leader, Shepherd & King, His anointed one, His man of power for the hour through whom He speaks!"

59. David is a Newsboy, "delivering the papers!"

60. David is a "Pen in the hand of the Lord, His humble instrument, the tool in God's hand to write what we need to know!"

61. David is a Prayer Warrior! "Blessed is he that beseecheth Me for My poor! Blessed is he that seeketh Me in the hour of trouble! So shall he be in the hour of triumph & I will be with him & lift up his hand that raiseth My sword (the Word!) to slay them which rise up against Me!"

62. David is our "Priest, Prophet & King like King David of old, our Pope & spiritual father! Bishop David is Bishop of Orthodox Church--the right church!"

63. David is the hidden Sap of the tree, "the inspiration that flows beneath the surface, giving life & health & beauty & nourishment that cause the branches to bear fruit!"

64. David is a Rescuer of the Bound! "He is fighting in a holy war to free men from fear with faith, free them from hatred with love, from sorrow with joy, from war with peace, from poverty with plenty & from death with Eternal Heavenly Happiness!"

65. David is a Sexy Prophet! "We have a sexy God & a sexy religion with a sexy leader with an extremely sexy following!--Free to enjoy the full beauties & wonders of God's creation with all of its pleasures!"--Hallelujah! TYJ!

66. David is a Time Traveller, "exploring unknown Worlds of the Spirit known only to God & His Heavenly Kingdom! He's hitched his wagon to a star, the Bright & Morning Star, Jesus Christ Himself, & is going places faster than the speed of light into realms beyond natural human ken."

67. David is a chiming Clock "warning you of the lateness of the hour! Some people don't like to hear him & would like to muffle the chimes."

68. David is a World Changer! "His powerful prayers & mighty pen have changed the course of history!"

69. David is "God's Gift of Love to the whole World! David means gift of God!--A sweet loving name!"

70. David is a Messenger Boy "delivering messages & telegrams to lots of important people!--The Lord's Letters of Love! For this is My Messenger whom I have sent before My face, My David, My King! Hear ye Him!"

71. David is our Snowman! "He's the old man of the mountain, with the hoary frost in his hair! He's an oooooold bear of the mountain, that lives in his big old lair. Snowman brought light to the Church & won the hearts of the young!"

72. David is our Driver, "following the vision ahead according to the Map & the Instruction of the Owner! His Letters ignite us, shift us, gear us, empower us & steer us in the right direction."

73. David is a Labourer--"he has digged trenches & God has filled them with the filling! He & his labourers take each block (Letter) one by one with a little mortar, & tier by tier build up the wall!"

74. David is a Traveller, "a refugee, an exile, a fugitive from injustice, wandering about through dens & caves of this Earth, always on the move on his way to Space City!"

75. David is God's Astrologer "who teaches us that God's Creation is a work of His hands, physical manifestations of His Guidance System which control man within the limits God has set."

76. David is an Iconoclast, "kicking over the traces, breaking all the rules, shattering all the precedents, rebelling from the System, destroying convention & departing from tradition! Idol-smashing is his business!"

77. David is a Defender of the Faith, "taking up the white-hot sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God, & cutting the Devil to the heart!"

78. David is a Lover! "At the King's right hand there are pleasures forever more! How ardent is the love of their father for these his children!"

79. David is a spirit Helper, "& if you'll be real quiet he'll sing you songs of David & whisper you Words of the Spirit! You'll think about David & get the messages! He'll be your contact man, your guardian angel, your channel!"

80. David is a Feeder! "The little birdies, his children, chirp & chirp & throw him kisses of love by faith, hoping he'll throw back a few little crumbs to feed them! They know they'll be fed by the hand of their Father, if they'll but open their mouths!"

81. David is a Mechanic! "He learned to fix cars when he was young & knows just about everything there is to know about a car, every part of it & anything that has to be fixed!"

82. David is the Head of the House! "Jesus makes a pretty nest for David & his loves to rest & take all the Words of David in their big mouths!"

83. David is the Projectionist of God's Cinema! "Jesus just hands him the films & he puts them on his little projector & shows them on the screen so that you can get the Message!"

84. David is an Innovator, "always thinking of better ways to do things & getting new ideas all the time!--Ever-changing according to the need, situation & what's good for the Lord's Work!"

85. David is the "Black Knight, used by the Lord to rally us around His banner & send us on to victory!"

86. David is a Vernier, "a very necessary precision instrument that measures & calculates things said in the Bible & explains what they mean!"

87. David is like a little Gnome "below the ground, pumping up the sap from the Root Christ Jesus into the tree of the Family!"

88. David is an Exorcist "who has but to utter the name of Jesus to fell all the demons of Hell, Oplexicon & Satan himself! He can even rebuke them in the name of David & they will flee!"

89. David is a Statistician. "He loves stats! With nary a stat you don't know where you're at! Stats are the proof of the pudding, they prove & show what you've got!"

90. David is an Adventurer, "an Aquarian pioneer who doesn't like to follow beaten paths! Beaten paths are for beaten men, but mountain peaks are for the mighty!"

91. David is a "Champion of the Underdog & the little fellow, the handicapped & the poor guys who are getting a raw deal & who are not treated fairly, those who are being fleeced, abused or mistreated."

92. David is a Missionary! "His mission is to bring light to the blind, freedom to the fettered, love to the lost & a life of peace, joy, love & happiness with purpose & helpfulness to others, becoming one with them & getting the message across!"

93. David is a Gypsy King "leading the true modern Gypsies of Jesus with a wild, free Gypsy spirit! Come along & join our Gypsy Caravan!"

94. David is a Healer! "God sent a man from Heaven to touch her, a man of God to hear her in answer to her prayers! David expects miracles!--And in Jesus' name he gets them!"

95. David is like a Snake Charmer, "playing music of love & forgiveness that will bring peace to your mind & heart! The Charmer's music is not his own, it is God-given supernatural power! It's inspired!--To charm evil serpentine hearts with love & peace into obedience & rest."

96. David is an Administrator "involved in the political & material oversight of the Kingdom, but his major ministry is ministering the Word!"

97. David is a Playmate, "his sceptre is his magic wand that makes love to many & fills them with satisfaction!"

98. David is the "Wizard of Ahs!--And ahs!--And ahs!--And all the ahs there ever was! He shows us the way so we can understand."

99. David is a Laughing Prophet who tells us to "Be So Happy!" "The ability to laugh at yourself & your own silly mistakes is a great asset & helps keep you humble!"

100. David is a Proud Father! "The Children of David are a credit to their father!"

101. David is a Strategist "Telling us how to handle our swords & clobber the Enemy & win the victory & helping us plan our strategy by God's direction!"

102. David is a Singing Prophet, singing with conviction! "If you can't sing it like you mean it, if you can't sing it like you've got it & really want to do what it says, then for God's sake, don't sing it!"

103. David is a Fortune-Teller! "With his Wheel of Fortune he reads people's characters, going beyond just the character into things he sees can or may happen! People come to him & want to know things, & he prays & gets something from the Lord for them."

104. David is a Toilet, "catching the waste products of society & recycling them by the power of God into good, clean, refreshing, purifying rain!"

105. David is the "Mainspring of God's Watch that sets things in motion, that pushes a little to get the wheels turning! The watch is God's Children who are the timekeepers of the World, telling the World what time it is, & the World can hear us tick!"

106. David is an Opportunist! "He takes advantage of every opportunity to advance the cause of Christ!"

107. David is a Student of the Word "who did find God's Words & did eat them, the Bible at his right hand night & day, 'studying to show himself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the Word of Truth!'"

108. David is a Destroyer of Blobs, "bursting big blobs to bits so that we can really get the job done of rolling the gold into all the World to every creature! The only good gold is Rolled gold!"

109. David is a Warrior of the Faith "who has declared war on the Evil One! David likes to hit him head on & rebuke him in the name of Jesus in the power of the Spirit! He loves to fight for the name of Jesus & the cause of David!"

110. David is a Soul Doctor "who listens to his patients & their symptoms & gives the right prescription--Scriptures from the Bible for diseases of the heart & mind! With the hands of love, mercy & gentleness he gets at the root of the problem to correct the cause."

111. David is the "Lens through which the Light shines, like a projector in a dark theatre! Our kids like the movies or visions God shows! They enjoy God's movies which bring such light in the darkness!"

112. David is a "Sharp-Toothed Threshing Instrument which beats the mountains as chaff & rips with violence the pillows from under the arms of them which sit at ease in Zion!"

113. David is a Farmer, "plowing the land, breaking it & opening it with loving hands & forceful plow, to insert the seeds of the Gospel in receptive soil, the true Church!"

114. David is a Pistol "loaded with bullets of the Word, God's modern-day sword! All God has to do is touch the trigger & David fires whichever way God aims him, & people get the Message! He's a weapon of the Spirit that brings life by the Word instead of death, an instrument of life to those who receive it!"

115. David is an FFER "showing concern, pity, compassion & affection & manifesting it by genuine proving action! They are drawn to the light like moths to the flame, willing to be consumed if they can only find the light & feel the warmth of the flame."

116. David is a Wild Songbird "singing to cheer people up & encourage them & tell them that God lives & loves & not to worry, that everything's going to be all right!"

117. David is a Spider "weaving a web in the wisdom of God that shall catch many men for God's Kingdom! The little words of David sparkle in God's Sunlight!"

118. David is a Moonlighter! "His Moonlight is the Lord's Letters that shine like the moon to light up the whole World! This Moonlight of mine, I'm going to let it shine!--Let it shine, let it shine, let it shine!"

119. David is our "Grand Achoo!--When the Prophet even sneezes the whole World listens! Everybody listens to the Grand Achoo! It's not very pretty but it's a message for you! It winds up & winds up & then goes Achoo!--Everybody listens to the Grand Achoo!"

120. David is a Computer, "for years absorbing information, facts, stories & illustrations! The Lord is the operator that sits down at the console & plays upon his keys to get out the information that He wants! Prophets are computers--they compute that the hour is late & what's about to happen!"

121. David is a great Fountain, "such a pretty fountain that sprays us with the Words of Living Water!"

122. David is a Concerned Father--"concerned with every little detail, & servant of all!"

123. David is a Letter-Writer! "That is his main job, his calling & what the Lord designed him for & ordained him for from the very beginning--to write Letters to lead His Children! Henceforth there is laid up for us a crown of righteous writing!"

124. David is our "Papa Lion of the Tribe of Judah! God has used him & his faithful little keeper to lead us all into an exciting new life, to the amazement of the whole World! He may be old & his keeper very small, but he's still very strong & has very good teeth! Roarr!"

125. David is our ol'Rooster, "faithfully defending all his hens & little chickens, you & me! He also tells people it's time to wake up!"

126. David is a Heart that is Broken for the Lost! "To love is to weep with them, to cry with them, to suffer with them that suffer, & to feel the agony of heart with them whose hearts are broken!"

127. David is a Dreamer of Dreams, "taking lots of trips in the spirit nearly every night! Your young men shall see visions, & your old men shall dream dreams!"

128. David is our Milkman of the Word "who has time after time gone halfway to Heaven & back again to deliver to us the sincere Milk of the Word that we might be nourished & fed & strengthened in the Lord."

129. David is a Jeweller, "dipping out the sparkling purple waters of the Crystal Stream, the Words of Life, & forming them into beautiful royal purple crystal jewels--letters of Love for his children!"

130. David is an Astronomer, "educating his children in the wonders of God's astronomical creation & His marvellous operations!--Proving that the Earth, Sun, Moon & Stars are forever, enduring as long as the Throne of God!"

131. David is a Cook, "dishing it up faster than we can carry it away! There is none other like him in all this generation, for he giveth meat to the lowly & bread unto the hungry & freedom to those that are bound! Behold, what a spread the Lord places upon the table before thee!--His good meals through His Words!"

132. David is a Loving Husband, "preferring the happiness of his mate to his own! No two people in this World love each other as much as David & Maria & are of one mind, one heart, one spirit, one soul, one body as they are."

133. David is God's Eyes, "looking both ways: To God for information & direction, & then at the World to detect & tell them what's wrong!"

134. David is a Revolutionist, "always looking for some better way to do it! If you tell him he can't do it, he'll prove to you he can! He doesn't hesitate to abandon the old & throw it away, even if it costs something, if it's going to help God's work to move ahead!"

135. David is a Scientist "who runs the big Observatory that produces much important data for the benefit of all mankind!"

136. David is a Forgiving Father, "merciful, patient, longsuffering & kind, putting his arms around his children & encouraging them & inspiring them, showing he has faith in them!"

137. David is "God's Voice for God's Vision!--The Voice of His choice, the Vision of His Chosen, His man of Faith to send them forth, His Father-Figure to symbolise His Own Presence with His People!"

138. David is a Trumpet "that carries the Message of God's Mouth to His people!--The Communicator of His Words, His Voice--& God's sheep hear His Voice, the Prophet of God, & they follow Him!"

139. David is a Bottle "whose heart is poured forth like water & whose soul is poured forth like wine to them that are athirst & anhungered. God fills & fills & fills again that all may drink & have plenty & never run dry! The bottle asks only to live that it may be poured out to others."

140. David is a Stranger & Pilgrim, "a citizen of another World, the coming Kingdom of Christ on Earth! We belong to no particular country except an Heavenly, & no particular city, for we seek an Heavenly City whose Builder & Maker is God!"

141. David is God's Watchdog, "barking to warn the people of what's gonna happen, that there's danger approaching, enemies coming, & to be ready to fight or run!"

142. David is a prospector, "faithfully mining & refining God's good gold of His Words & passing them on to the people!"

143. David is our Captain, "riding out the storm, enjoying the conquest of the sea, as our giant wave of witnessing like a gigantic ocean breaker floods the World with the Gospel!"

144. David is a faithful Communicant, "the rays of his pen reaching out & enlightening us all together in one single blaze of glory of one mind, one heart & one spirit through the miracle of communication--writing & the mails!"

145. David is the Grandpa "of all the little children in this loving Family, a wise loving old man who hears from Jesus & tells them lots of fascinating stories with good lessons for living!"

146. David is a Law-Giver, "laying down God's general rules & specific prohibitions or general permissions! "Whatsoever you do in word or in deed, do all to the glory of God!"

147. David is a Repairer of the Breaches, "a man to call God's people to repent & make up the wall & stand in the gap until the wall of their defenses against the Enemy are repaired & built up again!"

148. David is a "little tiny Pebble, but he holds the big stones together! He is the guiding rock, the cohesive power that holds the great & mighty rocks together to form a great mountain of God's power & the testament of His Word, & these shall be the great Kingdom of God!"

149. David is a "big, loud Firecracker! when he explodes, things happen & people move & get excited & do things!"

150. David is our Pied Piper, "playing sweet music to the children in the Power of God & Jesus! The children follow him to a place in the back away from things!"

151. David is an Example! "By one man's obedience, many have been made righteous!"

152. David is the "New Church that God has raised up, with a new anointing & a fresh spirit & a new attack & a new approach & a new guise out of nowhere & from nothing!--A new Prophet for a new day!"

153. David is a Handyman, "a Jack-of-All-Trades! He's had about every kind of job there is so he can teach his children & give'm a little advice about a little of everything!"

154. David is a Happy Prophet! "All happy children, are the children of David! How happy all the children are who are the children of David!"

155. David is a Destroyer of Lies--"destroying delusion in order to build a firm foundation of Truth!"

156. David is a Mopper--"He uses good soapy water to mop the floor of your mind!--To brainwash you & clean you with the pure Water of the Word to make you nice & clean & so polished that you really shine for the Lord!"

157. David is the Rasputin of today & his enemies know it. They hate him because they can't overcome him because he's sustained by the miraculous power of God!



*Incline your ear, & come unto Me: hear, & your soul shall live; & I will make an everlasting covenant with you, even the sure mercies of David. Behold, I have given him for a witness to the people, a leader & commander to the people (Isa.55:3,4).*

1. Record thou these in a book & write down these things that there should be no misunderstanding that I have spoken this of thy King David, that he shall fulfil all these things! Write, & place it in the book that thou shalt have the record of the things that I have spoken!

2. He poureth out not as one who giveth stingily, but in double measure that he may live his life to the full in half the time I would have given him.

3. Behold how the words well from within the innermost parts of thy father to pour forth upon thirsty souls.

4. Precious in the eyes of the Lord is the life of thy father & precious are the Words that I have given unto David.

5. Oh how mighty & marvellous & wonderful are the great things that I have shown unto your father!

6. Behold, I will not break the covenant I have made with your father. Neither will I fail the Word that I have promised unto David, your father. I shall not allow him to be cut off before his time.

7. Even as I have promised thee that I will give unto thee the key to the House of David, even so will I make thy enemies dust under thy feet & open doors that are closed & close doors that are opened, that they which are of the synagogue of Satan & say they are Jews & are not shall be cast down & exposed. And thou shalt be delivered, for I the Lord have spoken it & I cannot lie.

8. Even so am I with thee, & even so I shall speak in thy heart the secrets & reveal unto thee the things which are to come. For I will do nothing but I will show it unto My holy Prophets. As Daniel of old, I am with thee & shall reveal unto thee the number of years & even the number of days of the things which are to come.

9. Thou shalt be unto them as the oracles of God, & thy mouth shall be My mouth, & I will tell thee & thou shalt tell them, that they may obey Me. And they shall know that it is not thou that speak unto them, but I that speak unto them, for as I was with Moses, so shall I be even with thee. And even as with those that disobeyed Moses, even so shall it be with those that disobey thee, they shall come to despair & to failure.

10. Who art thou to question Me & who art thou to say, "Why hast Thou made me thus?" For shall the vessel say unto the Potter who hast made it, "Why hast Thou made me thus?" For I have made thee according to My will & this one by thy side according to My pleasure that you may fulfill My will, contrary to natural expectation, & in defiance of the conventions of man, even as I called upon My Prophets of old to humiliate themselves & to obey Me to illustrate My Message for My people. As Isaiah walked naked before Me & Ezekiel ate dung & Hosea married an harlot to illustrate My purpose, even so shall I do this thing to illustrate My wrath against a disobedient church & a rebellious Jerusalem!

11. Thy kingdom & thy possession shall be greater & thy flocks more numerous & thy herds more fruitful & thy houses greater & thy fame spread abroad throughout all the land beyond thy comprehension for thy faithfulness unto Me.

12. I have made thee as one with Me that thou might hew & cut & chop & smite & strike down that which is false & deliver the young saplings which grow about her roots unto the light of My Word, that I may shine upon them & that they may grow & become mighty in word & deed as a great forest of trees that shall bear great fruit, & many, many shall be called by My name.

13. This is the blessing wherewith I have blessed thee & this is thine inheritance: I have blessed thee with long life & many children & with the Kingdom that is Mine.

14. If thou couldst see that which is in store for thee, the things I have prepared for thy children, if thou couldst feel that which I feel for thee, the joy thou shouldst know in time to come, thou shouldst be overjoyed for that which is to come. For thou shalt suffer many things, many trials, many tribulations, many tests & persecutions, suffer many things before that day, but I will bring thee forth as pure gold, if thy faith fail not.

15. By thy tongue & thy pen thou shalt bring upon thyself & thy loved ones great suffering & persecution; for I have made of thee a sharp-toothed threshing instrument to beat the mountains like chaff.

16. Thou shalt tenderly cherish little plants out of the dry ground which will grow to the harvest of God. And when He shall come in that day with His Holy Angels, the Earth shall be reaped.

17. And thou shalt sit down with Abraham & with Isaac & with Jacob in the Kingdom of God, & thine enemies shall be thrust out!

18. Glorify Me in all things. Then shall thy candle be exalted, & thy urn full of oil & thy vase flow freely with the water of Life, & thy flower shall not wither, thy power shall not fail, thy wisdom shall not cease forever.

19. Then thou shalt continue to be a light unto My people & to quench their thirst for everlasting water & to heal their wounds & give beauty for ashes & wisdom for foolishness & shalt pour forth thy life upon the dry ground that it may bring forth fruit, that thou shalt glorify Me, the Author & the Finisher of all things, if thou shalt burn only with My Power & flow with My Life, & speak by My Spirit, & give Me the glory, & not thyself.

20. The harp of David has awakened! My servant David has awakened from slumber to lead My children in this last day!

21. For he shall lead them by many waters, through green pastures, & they shall sing praises unto Me, even on many harps, & they shall multiply the songs of David, as they sing new songs unto Me, as My Children, that they may glorify Me. Hear ye him!

22. I have made thee My Moses & My David! I have made thee a new vessel, & completely broken thee & destroyed the former vessel that was, & made thee a totally new vessel! The former vessel no longer lives! For thou art a new creation!

23. What if I will that thou be wicked as David of old, that the excellency of the power may be of God--that I may be glorified! For man thinketh not as God thinketh. For man looketh on the outward appearance, but the Lord looketh on the heart, I put down & I put up. I propose & I dispose!

24. It is I that have made thee & called thee by thy name, even unto the Generation of generations--called thee by thy name before thou wast formed in the womb, & caused thy Mother to call thee by thy name David, that it should be fulfilled that which was spoken by My Prophets!

25. I have broken thee & made thee & created thee in My own Image to be that David which of old I have foretold!

26. By My Spirit I have plucked thy harp & My Tones have awakened thee, & I have said unto thee, "Come forth, & arise, & plead for My Children & My people Israel! David, arise, & come forth, as from sleep, that thou mayest save My Children Israel!

27. Even as with My servant Moses, I have dealt with thee--even face to face & mouth to mouth have I spoken unto thee. As with My Servant David, so have I done unto thee!

28. Thou must lead My people, like Moses. Thou art as the Voice of God unto them.

29. Thy faith shall be as the faith of David, & their strength shall be as the strength of David's men! And thou shalt plunge into battle with them & be the victor, & thou shalt fight as with the strength of the Lord thy God, & wound the hairy scalp of the Enemy by the power of the Spirit of God! They shall follow thee like sheep whithersoever thou goest.

30. I have kissed thee, David, & brought thee into being, & My love has called thee David--Beloved of God!--For which cause thy Mother did name thee!

31. I have blessed thee above all the sons of men on the face of the Earth, that even as Abraham, thy seed shall be as the stars of the Heavens in multitude, & as the sands of the sea innumerable. And all generations shall call thee blessed.

32. The Key of David is that chord which I strike upon thy harp to awaken thee from slumber--that signals thee to come to life to help My Children in the time of their great distress. The key that I strike upon thy harp--the chord which I strike upon thy strings, is the tone that signals thee--the Key of David!

33. Too long thou hast kept David buried, entombed in the System & the old ideas! But I have awakened thee through the Key of David, & thou hast awakened & led My Children--My People--to freedom!

34. For thou indeed hast little strength, but I Myself have strengthened thee, & by My Spirit have brought thee to life, that thou mayest minister of the strength which the Lord supplieth. As thy days, so shall thy strength be, that the excellency of the power may be of God, & not of man. For thou art a very thin, earthen vessel that has been shattered that it may be melted & molded again into a better vessel!



35. Even as I have also helped thee in times past, I now help thee by the spirits of My counsellors, even Abraham, Moses, & David & others, that thou must fulfill the mission I have given thee on this Earth until thou hast gathered My children into one Fold.

36. Even as John the Baptist came in the spirit & power of Elijah, even as I said, "Behold, I send Elijah the prophet before the coming of the day of the Lord," even as I said I would send David in the spirit & power of David My servant: Even so have I done it, saith the Lord!

37. I have welded My Moses & David together, in the volume of the book it is written of them, so have I done it.

38. David does not have to fight for himself! For the Lord Himself shall fight for him & deliver over unto him the Key that belongeth to him.

39. Kiss the mouth of Thy Lord which hath spoken unto thee! Even as Moses spake My Word--even as Jesus spake My Word--even now has David spoken My Word!

40. For these two shall become one, according to that which I have prophesied; This My Moses & this My David.

41. Hear thou the words of My Servant David! Many prophets would have that which I have given unto thee. Heed thou & listen! Look thou & observe! Do thou that which hath been spoken of thee. The number of the books shall not be sufficient to contain all the Words of David.

42. Kiss the paps of David! How blessed are those that dwell in his arms & lie by his side & those that enjoy the peace of his love that I have given unto them!

43. There shall be no love like the love of My Servant David.

44. Thou shalt have many loves, but thou shalt never be loved like thou art loved by My Servant David!

45. This indeed is the Light of Israel, & this indeed is that which I have given. This indeed is the David whereof I spake of old! Therefore hear ye him! Behold, the man whom the Lord hath chosen! Hear ye him!

46. For truly there are many Davids, but this one have I chosen!--And this one have I anointed that he might fulfill all of that which was written of him, & which thou shalt write of him, & which shall yet be written of him. And all these words shall be inscribed in a book, that it may be said of thee that this the Lord thy God loveth thee, as it was written in the Book of David!

47. For he hath great need of many; for many have need of him!

48. And I shall greatly increase his seed upon the face of the Earth, & they shall overflow, overflow, overflow, & many nations shall flow unto them, & kings shall bow down before them.

49. For this is he that was for to come--the prophet which I shall raise up from among thy brethren--thou hast heard him! For thou hast received all of his words. Thou hast believed that which I have given--all the words spoken by the Prophets, of David your King.

50. David prays & it cometh to pass, the things which Jesus hath spoken, that his Children might be ordained of God to carry the Message to every land & every tongue & every nation!

51. To the one called David by divine anointing, it has been given thee to perceive the number of years, which according to the Prophet Jeremiah will pass before the End of Desolations. (See Daniel 9:2) I have also given him the power now to perceive the meaning of these things!

52. Even the foolishness of David is better than the wisdom of men!

53. Thou shalt never fail, for I am with thee & thy devices shall never fail, & thou shalt have that which thou shalt ask for & find that which thou shalt seek & have that door opened upon which thou shalt knock, & I will give thee greater habitations than thou hast ever had before.

54. For he is but a little tiny pebble, but he holds the big stones together. Take heed that thou direct thy attention to the little pebble, for he is the guiding rock. Though he be a tiny pebble, he is where My power & guidance are, & the cohesive power that holds the great & mighty rocks together.--Because I speak to this little tiny rock & tell him what to do & he doeth it & obeyeth My Word & heedeth My Commandments & holdeth My mighty rocks together to form a great mountain which shall be the Mountain of My power & the Testament of My Word, & these shall be the great Kingdom of God, & many nations shall come unto thee & shall seek to flow therein & bring honour into it--not one king but many great kings!

55. Multi-millions & billions, & many many mighty kings shall seek thy favour & flow unto thee & ask of thee: "What shall we do to have the favour of God, & how shall we be blessed of the Lord, for thou art the blessed of the Lord & indeed the king of God, & thou hast that which we have sought unto, & thou hast that which He hath favoured, for thou art the blessed of God!"

56. Foolish are those who stand against thee, for mighty is thy power by the hand of God! They shall fail, but thou shalt prosper! Every weapon that is formed against thee shall not prosper, but thou shalt prosper & be

mighty above all the kings on the face of the Earth, & I shall rebuke many kings for thy sake, for I am with thee & do prosper thee & shall be with thee in all these things.

57. Thou art Mine Anointed King, & thy Children, the City I have chosen, & thy Children shall be as the sands of the sea & the stars of the Heavens innumerable, which I have promised to My Servant Abraham, of whom thou art the fulfilment of all time & prophecy.

58. I am with thee & cannot fail, & I am thy Saviour & I shall redeem all men through thee & thy children, for thou art the saviours of this Earth. Otherwise, I would cast it forth, but for thy sake, I will save those upon whom thou wilt have mercy, & will curse those thou wouldst curse!

59. Many are the mighty men that shall serve David & many are the great kings that shall come unto David & many shall bow down & be ashamed before My Servant David, because he is My king. It is I that have put him up & empowered him! He represents Me, for he is Mine anointed one; none shall be able to stand before My David, none but those who love & honour & favour & obey Me--only those shall stand & all others shall fail before My Servant David!

60. Thou shalt be exalted above all, & thy rod shall rule all other rods, & thou shalt be called mighty upon the palace of thy God! For I am with thee & shall reign with thee as a rod within My Hand--as a rod of iron--& they shall bow before the rod within My Hand! Thou art the Rod & the Branch & My Servant David that I have spoken of! For thou art indeed that one which I have anointed to become king of all the Earth & to smite all those who have risen up against Me & those who would seek to choose to fight against Me!

61. And I have chosen thee as the Rod & the Branch of David & that which is the fulfilment of all those things which are spoken of thee!

62. For I have given unto David all the powers which be on the face of the Earth, & all the kings of the Earth shall be his, for he doth love Me & he shall render unto Me that which is My due, & he shall gather all the sheep of all nations to My Fold, & all nations shall bow down before Me, for I the Lord have spoken it & given it unto thee. It is a small thing, for thou dost please Me!

63. For he shall gather them as the sheep of many folds. He shall gather kings & princes & princesses & nations & kingdoms & castles & palaces & present them at My feet as a tribute & honour unto Me, for he considers himself nothing, as little as the lowest of all things! Therefore have I exalted him & duly honoured him & exalted him above all kings on the face of the Earth! Therefore have I highly empowered & exalted him, because he hath honoured Me above all things & all kings & all palaces & all powers & all women! He hath honoured Me in the sight of the Lord!

64. These are the children of the most high God & these are the people I have chosen to place My Name on, & this is David their King that shall serve Me with all his heart as a man after Mine Own heart, for he cannot help himself, for he is as nothing--as a little tiny grain of dust--but I have taken him & breathed upon him by My Spirit! Behold!--He hath become many tribes! And he hath become many nations! And he hath become a king of all kings! And I have given unto him children upon children--thousands upon thousands & tens of thousands & thousands of thousands!

65. This, the flame of My King, is unquenchable fire that cannot be put out because it is the fire of God! Even if they shall pour many waters upon it, nothing can quench the fire of the Spirit of God, for it shall cause it to burn even more brightly!

66. Blessed are the words & blessed is the tongue that I have given David! The words that I have put in the mouth of Moses & the love that I have given the heart of David have made him as a god of love. For one hour in the arms of David is as ten thousand! He is as My Love to you, & you are My love to him.

67. This is the Water Bearer if all ages whom I have ordained to bring forth the water of Life to the children of this Last Generation, to suck the milk from his paps & to be satisfied.

68. He is My Servant unto all the Words of My Mouth. There is none other like him in all this generation, for he is that one that loveth that which is unlovely & cherisheth that which is despised & giveth meat to the lowly & bread unto the hungry & freedom to those that were bound.

69. If thou wouldst have light & if thou wouldst have meat & if thou wouldst be satisfied, thou shalt hearken unto the Words of My David & thou must kiss his breasts & drink of his milk--for he shall satisfy thee! How canst thou hear his words & how canst thou suck of his paps & be fed & nourished?--If thou dost suck of his breast & the words that I have given him! Kiss the mouth & the words & the paps of David & thou shalt be satisfied, for I have given unto him all these things, & these are not his, but My Words.

70. For I have quickened the heart of David & lightened his mind & brought forth his waters as honey & sweetness that they might nourish My little ones & grow up the calves of My stall & the lambs of My fold!

71. This is that David whom I have spoken of for the last generation--the Prophet for this Age--the one that shall carry the lambs in his bosom & give them suck & shall cherish them & nourish them--even this My Spirit doth love them & care for them--for His little ones.

72. Behold, how he weepeth for his children! For these are My tears & this is My Love that I have for this generation.

73. This is the one of whom I have spoken & of whom shall all generations be blessed, & all nations shall call him blessed.

74. For indeed this one hath the spirit of Moses & the heart of David & the love of My Servant, that David of whom I spake who led My people into their pasture & little ones into My fold.

75. For the bosom of David is as My bosom that I have given thee--this generation that I have loved!--If thou shalt believe all the Words that I have given thee.

76. Oh, what life do I given them through the words of David! Oh, how they kiss & rejoice & dance to the words of David! For he is My Servant, he is My mouth, he is My voice & he is My heart & My soul, for he hath given unto Me, & he shall receive of My Spirit without measure!

77. Behold, the dawn cometh & the Son of Righteousness ariseth & this shall be a new day, & His love shall drop down like rain upon the land & there shall spring forth life--there shall be love & laughter & joy & peace for ever-after!... Tomorrow!... When He makes the World free!

78. Even as he must give forth the water from his penis lest he burst, so must he give forth My Word lest his heart breaketh as his soul explodeth, So must he give forth the Words of his God, for he is My Prophet & he cannot contain any more than he can contain this water which floweth from his body.

79. If Moses were here, thou wouldst ask of him; but a greater than Moses is here! If Daniel were here, thou wouldst ask of him; but a greater than Daniel is here! If John were here, thou wouldst ask of him; but a greater than John is here!

80. Who has such love & who has such power & who has such ardor as David for Me? For this man David is after My own heart & he speaks the Words that come from Me & from Moses & from David. And he says those things which are favourable unto Me.

81. Cast thou shut the book? Canst thou shut the mouth? If thou shuttest the mouth, it will explode in David! Moses is like David. He laid down the laws like David. He put things in order like David. He loved & shepherded My people like David. Canst thou close the book? Canst thou shut up the words of My Servant David? He that sitteth in the Heavens shall laugh at those who try to tighten the tongue of David!

82. For the words which he speaks are as flames of fire to set on fire the hearts of men! For David is hot as a flame with the Spirit of God! You cannot close the mouth of David. You cannot close the Words of David. Open the book & let loose the words & flood the nations with the Words of David! For this is he that setteth on fire the course of nations, as David My Servant doth set on fire the hearts of men!

83. Dost thou know the words? Dost thou know the thoughts of David? They are as flames of fire & incite the hearts of men to follow Me!--Nor should he quench his tongue nor should he close his mouth. For I am He that openeth his mouth & I am He that waggeth his tongue that David may set on flame the very course of nature itself, that all those who hear the Words of God from the prophets unto Moses & unto them of the Last Day shall glorify Me & the flame that I have set on fire in the heart of David!

84. They can no more stop the mouth of David than they can stop the mouth on the breast of her that nourisheth the infant. David is like a mother to his children. David is like a father to his children. He cherisheth & carries them all the day long in his arms. Neither father nor mother has the love of My Servant David, nor can they separate them from him.

85. How thinkest thou that any can silence the words that come from the mouth of David, that flow from his breast to the mouth of his infants? Neither Moses nor the prophets had the spirit of My Servant David! Neither hath any had more power nor hath any had more Words than My Servant David. There is nothing good that I will not give My Servant David, for he pleases, yes, he pleases Me. Love My Servant David!

86. Thinkest thou the sucking of thy breast & the kisses of thy mouth shall satisfy My Servant? He has such hunger that not all the women in the World could satisfy! He is satisfied only like My Servant Moses, at the very breast of God is he happy!

87. Truly thou hast but little strength! But thou hast kept My Word, & thou hast not denied My Name. Therefore have I given unto thee this key that shall unlock even greater mysteries, & doors such as thou hast never seen! For it hath not entered into thy mind, neither hath thine eye seen, nor hath thine ear heard, the glories that shall be, that I have laid up for thee, My Own, My beloved, My beloved one!

88. For I have overshadowed him, & protected him, & kept him, & sheltered him round about by My angels, & given him the aura of My presence, & the overshadowing of My wings, & the protection of My power!

They would have slain this My beloved one, My David, My darling! But because he hath kept My Words, & hath not denied My name, & hath this little strength that I have given him, even so have I kept him & even so will I not deny him, & I shall have strength for him, that he will be spared in the time of anguish; that David shall be spared that he might serve Me until his time is come, when I shall gather him unto his fathers, & his Children also with him.

89. Thou shalt see his life poured forth in double measure as a candle which burneth at each end & giveth great light until it is gone in half the time, that they may live longer in My light than in darkness!

90. Behold, I have given unto David more than the life of any man, for he pleaseth Me! Behold, he hath lived in half his life more than twice the life of any man! Behold, is it not enough that I have given unto thee to feed more & water more in thy lifetime than all My shepherds of all My sheep before thee?

91. For this is even he of whom I have spoken, & he whom I have loved from the beginning, & he whom I have promised that I will give, that he may feed My sheep, & water them that lead them unto Me.

92. Even the spittal of David is of more value than the words of man, wise men of this World, after the fashion of the World which perisheth! Even the spittal gives more light to the eyes & more wisdom to the wise than the many words that they produce!

93. There are they so athirst for that which cometh from David that they would drink his piss & eat his dung, they are so anhungered!

94. Behold a greater than Moses is here, & more than Abraham.

95. How great are the wonders that Thou hast shown unto Thy Servant David! Wouldst thou see more wonders than this, & greater things than these?--Then hearken unto the words of My Servant David!

96. They are better than gold & better than silver, the Words of love that I speak to thee through thy Father! More precious than fine jewels are these things I speak from his bosom!

97. Oh the understanding that I have given unto David thy Father, beyond that of other men!

98. For behold, I have used thee as a warning light & as a beacon unto this generation that they may follow that which I have spoken, or be destroyed for their unbelief!

99. This thy king, the one whom I have chosen, this is the man whom I have called. This is the David whom I have selected, for this is the one whom I will honour above all those which have gone before.

100. This is that David of whom I spake, & this is that David of whom My prophets prophesied.

101. He is My master fisherman who useth thee for My bait to catch many fish for Me! He knows all the lines & many nets in all the places that I have set them & all the best places where there are many good fish. You see?

102. He places them not in the empty sepulchres of the dead amid the rotting carcasses of the slain, but he places them in the schools where there are many multitudes full of life & shiny & quick & lively! You must not fear his hand or where he places thee.

103. For he knows best the places where many fish come. See?--This grotto--& that reef--& even in this shallow. He looks from above & he sees more than the fish themselves can see.

104. They know not even that he sees or that he knows or that he observes them & understands their ways & whither they will go, but I have given this knowledge unto him that he may know how to catch them. See?

105. For he is an expert fisherman & has much knowledge from many years of experience with many kinds of fish, & he knows who to bait with whom & how to use thee for My glory! But he will never let go of the line on which thou art cast or surrender the net in which thou art placed to catch others.

106. There are hosts & multitudes who dwell in the Valley of indecision who seek for answers from thy father.

107. Blessed is he that crieth out in the name of the Father! Blessed is he that beseecheth Me for My poor! Blessed is he that seeketh Me in the hour of trouble! Blessed is he that beseecheth My Name! Blessed is he whom I have called & anointed & raised up for this day! Blessed is he that I have set upon My throne in My Name to rule over My people!

108. Blessed is he that loveth & ruleth My people well. Blessed is he that seeketh My face in the hour of trouble. So shall he be in the hour of triumph, & I will be with him & lift up his hand that raiseth My sword (the Word) to slay them which rise up against him.

109. As the seed of Abraham so have I given unto your Father many children who shall rule the World! What visions of wisdom God has given thy Father!

110. Jesus has blessed the days of the words of thy father & hallowed the times of his love with many kisses of his words.

111. Behold with what love I have kissed thy father & manifested Myself unto him.

112. I have given unto no other man than thy father the Love I have given unto David.

113. Thou dost not have to see nor understand all things, neither dost thou have to know the mind of thy father nor to understand all the words of David, for all of these things which I have ordained are already in My hands & are finished.

114. Knowest thou that the Word is mightier than the sword? And this is the power that I have given unto them, the power to shield the Words of thy David for this moment.

115. For the Word is mightier than the sword, that I may spare the life & breath of thy father with My kisses. And I shall kiss them while they spare you. Thou hast greater treasure in the wells of thy Words than they have from the wells of the oil of their friends.

116. Thou knowest not the honour that I give to your father, for he is greater & My Word more powerful energy than the energy of those which give them oil! If only thou canst know the power I have given unto the Words of thy father, which is greater than all the sources of all energy, & more powerful than all of that which they seek after!

117. Hear the Words that I speak unto thy father & believe the Words that I have said unto him, that thou mightest have faith in the message that I have given unto thy father David!

118. I am with thee, even as I was with My servant Moses to separate My children from Egypt, & to lead them into that Promised Land--My Kingdom, which is not of this Earth but is Heavenly!

119. If thou didst but know the tones that I have to play for thee, thou wouldst never doubt that thou art My David, that I am thy God!

120. O behold how they watch with joy the Words & the deeds of thy father & his children!

121. What wisdom Thou dost give unto the Words of David!

122. Oh, kiss the Words that I have given thy Father David! Kiss the wisdom of the Words that I have given unto thy Father David!

123. Listen, listen, listen! Hear ye the voice of thy father David which poureth forth words of love even as these seeds of love!

124. If you will go in My Name & say only that I have sent thee, I will do great things which thou knowest not of!

125. The Lord will hear your father & answer his cry!

126. So foolish the forces who rise up against Thy Name & Thine Anointed & those that feel the force of thy father!

127. What beautiful Words are the kisses of your father!

128. What power there is in the kiss-words of your father David!

129. What freedom there is in the Words of David!

130. He will not fail in one of all His good promises He has given unto David!

131. How beautiful is the Light that I have given unto My servant David.

132. Even the birds come to David & fear not, & feed at his hand in abundance, & cry unto him with expectancy, & know that they shall be fed, & fret not!

133. David is weary with weaving, & the arms that are long have stretched out to take hold from far places! And though it be delicate, it be very strong, & this web that I weave in My wisdom shall catch many.

134. Oh how these little words of David, they cross over, they cross over the chasm between the lines & go from strand to strand, & line within line, that sparkle within My sunlight!

135. Therefore shalt thou spare the Flame of David & carry it to a far country, that it may burn brightly in the midst of darkness!

136. Behold Thou the tears of Thy servant & hearken unto the voice of his crying. For he doth hunger & thirst after Thee & hast raised up his heart unto Thee & his soul crieth after Thee & wilt not be satisfied except Thou dost bless him & all of his children which are Thine!

137. Even so shall thy blood stain the ground & even so shalt thou give thy life for Me & for thine. But even so from thy blood shall blossom other lives that shall do My bidding & bring multitudes, multitudes into the Valley of Decision for Me!

138. So shall it be recorded in the annals of David that this is the one whereof I spake! For thy Jesus hath spoken unto thee, & even Moses hath proclaimed it--& this, My David, hath fulfilled it--a man indeed after My Own heart! Hear ye him!

139. Great are the mercies & the love that I have bestowed upon My Servant David!

140. Those that stand by Moses' side shall surely receive their reward! For if they suffer with thee, they shall also reign with thee.

141. David is but a lad. Therefore have I exalted him, for he puts all of his confidence in Me!

142. Ply with thy hand upon the harp of David that thou mayest make his strings taut to play sweet music unto thee, to satisfy thy soul & to fill thy mouth that is hungry, with good things, that thou mayest conceive & bring forth good fruit!

143. So are the thunderings of the bombs of the Words of thy father!

144. Nothing is too good for thy father!

145. Jesus hath given the kisses of His mouth unto David, even Moses hath bestowed the kisses of his mouth unto David!

146. Not nearly so many things were recorded about Moses as shall be recorded in the House of David!

147. How many are the helpers of David!

148. Who can capture the Wild Wind? Who can corner the winds & put them into their place?--Only the songs of David & of Moses!

149. The Words of David & all the saints came from the Wild Wind of the Spirit of God!

150. Said I not unto thee that I would raise up kings in thy favour, & that rulers would bow at thy feet, & that I would turn the hearts of the rulers toward My people, & these too should hear the Words of David!

151. David can have all the power that his bosom desires, if he wants it!

152. Oh how mighty & marvellous & wonderful are the great things that I have shown unto your father!

153. This is the sorrow of your father & this is the hurt that he grieves, that he may be like unto Me, that he may know the pain that I have suffered, too. For I too gave up My Son that I might save others.

154. For these are the things that I have given unto David thy father, & these are the prices he must pay for these infinite glories & rewards that I shall give him in the World to come! For it is a small thing, these sacrifices that he now makes, that he may glory in eternal rewards forever! These things shall no more be remembered & the pain shall be forgotten.

155. Kiss thy father in his sorrow & in his pain, for David shall yet suffer many things before he shall be received of Me for everlasting glories & rewards!

156. Comfort ye your father in his sorrow, that David may know that I have loved him with an everlasting love that shall never fade away, & I shall recompense unto him all this pain & all of these sorrows, & the things that he hath lost shall be preserved forever in the Heavenly Kingdom that I have laid up in store for him where he shall rejoice forever!

157. For this is the price that your father must pay & this is the sacrifice that I have required of David, that I may show his love to all generations, that he may be like unto Me & My Love that I gave, to lay down My life for others.

158. This is he which turneth the World right side up & causeth the nations to rejoice & shout for joy in the pleasures that I have created. Rejoice & shout for joy, all ye lands, & behold the joys that I have given unto thee for thy pleasure for evermore! Behold these the blessings that I have promised unto thee through thy father David. Behold, he hath opened the eyes of the blind & enlightened the World with My Words of truth that they may see & shine forth for evermore.

159. The rebellion of David is exploding through all the Earth! The armies of David that I have promised to march abroad, the things that I have promised unto David, I have fulfilled & every word shall be fulfilled & every thing that I have promised shall be done!

160. So have I touched the Harp of David. With the fingers of the Wind of My Spirit have I awakened it!

161. Even Moses heard the strings of David's harp, & he rejoiced to see that day.

162. Love stronger than the World, higher than the Heaven, more powerful than the lightning bolts, more refreshing than the rain!--The seven kisses of David are more satisfying than the sun!

(See also No. R, 64, 77, 102, 152, 154B, 160B, 215, 1455, *Childcare Handbook 3, BOR 1.*)



*Jesus said unto her, I am the Resurrection, & the Life: he that believeth in Me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in Me shall never die. Believest thou this? (Jn.11:25,26).*

1. There'll be light in the sky from that palace on high, when I come to the end of Life's road! The end of the road for us will be just the beginning! We'll reign with Jesus forever!
2. Don't ever forget the Resurrection when you're speaking of the Death.
3. Jesus attacked them, wounded their system unto death, & they killed Him in return, but He rose again to lead His tiny band of followers to ultimate victory!
4. See you in the "Fall-Up!"
5. Jesus is the only One Who ever rose from the dead Who can give you power to do the same!
6. Often the test of courage is not to die but to live.
7. If there is no way out, there is a way up.
8. Lives again our glorious King,  
Where, O Death, is now thy sting?  
Dying once, He all doth save,  
Where thy victory, O Grave?
9. Death from this life is just graduation from this grade.
10. It is not death that man should fear, but he should fear never beginning to live.
11. When a person dies, we say he has "departed". Why not say He has "arrived"?
12. It matters little to me whether I live or die. If I die, I will be with Jesus, & if I live, Jesus will be with me.
13. A five-year old child overheard her mother say, "I lost my baby," & asked, "Mommy, how can someone be lost if you know where they are?--In Heaven!"
14. Death is the golden key that opens the palace of eternity.
15. The art of dying bravely & with honour does not need any special training save a living faith in God.--  
M. Gandhi.
16. The seed dies into new life, & so does man.
17. Dust thou art, to dust returnest,  
Was not spoken of the spirit.
18. You do everything else in Jesus' name, why not die in Jesus' name & let Him determine the way, the time & the place for His glory & when He feels it's time & you've finished what you came here to do!
19. You will never die like the sinners, you'll just pass on into the arms of Jesus!
20. You don't really die, you just keep on living & go straight into the presence of the Lord!
21. Living is dying daily!
22. If He doesn't take care of you, He'll take you!--And that's the best taking care of. Praise God? Don't worry about death!
23. If the thought of your eternity makes you uncomfortable, then something is wrong with your present!
24. Sleep is so much like death & dreams are so much like life in the Spirit.
25. God conceals from men the happiness of death that they may endure life.
26. What we call life is a journey to death. What we call death is the gateway to life.
27. Death is our graduation!--We've finished our schooling in this grade & we pass on to the next grade!

28. The will is powerful, it's important! If a person doesn't want to live, he'll usually die.
29. When you die, you don't wake up suddenly knowing everything--if you did, you'd be God!
30. Death is only a heartbeat away!
31. Dying will probably be the easiest thing you ever did!--Your graduation & your payoff & your promotion & your release! Free at last!
32. When you come to die for Jesus you're going to find that's the easiest thing you ever did! It was dying daily that was difficult!
33. Death is great!--It's going to be with Jesus!
34. God's principle throughout all life: Some must die that others may live!
35. God help you to keep on winning battles & greater victories, until you win the greatest & last of all!--Death!--That graduation to the Heavenly world of the hereafter with a crown of glorious eternal life with Him & the Family forever!
36. I don't have dying grace because I'm not dying yet!
37. For the Christian there's nothing bad about dying! It's your release from this Hell on Earth.
38. Death is so minimal! The Lord draws the stinger out of death so that it doesn't really hurt! "O death, where is thy sting?" (1Cor.15:55)
39. When you who love Jesus die, He's going to teleport you up to Space City to be with Him!
40. Just because you're a martyr & do not survive doesn't mean that you're defeated--in some ways you're more than a conqueror because you're a good loser!
41. The fear of doom is a part of the judgements of God on the guilty & those who deserve it, "who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage." (Heb.2:15)
42. Night, sleep & farewells in this World are all a type or foreshadowing of death.
43. Sudden death is sudden glory!
44. Death is a big event, an exciting, happy time, like getting ready to go on a trip & saying good-bye.
45. Even death is sweet with Jesus!
46. For us who love the Lord, death is a relief, release, freedom, promotion, graduation, & passing on to a better realm!
47. I've never seen any last-minute deathbed repentances, people rarely change at the last minute. People nearly always die the way they lived.
48. I'd hate to catapult myself into the presence of God or even the Death Angel by my own hand, having myself destroyed the life that God gave me.
49. Most suicides are committed through fear--people fearing something else even more than death, even more than God!
50. God has promised not to let you be cut off before your time!
51. By committing suicide you're certainly not cheating anybody but yourself out of the life that God gave you to live, & whatever way God intended for you to die!
52. God knows when & how you're supposed to die, & you'd better wait for God to make the decision & have His way, & not die at your own hand in your own stubborn wilfulness, unwilling to face something.
53. Martyrdom is a witness!--That through your death many might believe & be saved.
54. When I think of suicide, I think of people who were defeated, who gave up, who surrendered to death rather than courageously faced life!
55. If you're a Christian & love the Lord, God has appointed a time & a place for you to die when your job is done! "God will be our guide, even unto death!" (Ps.48:14)
56. You ought to trust God with your death like you trust Him with your life.
57. Suicide is surrender of the worst kind, not only surrendering to the Devil & letting him destroy you, but letting him destroy you by your own hand!
58. Suicide is such a cop-out & so unfair to other people.
59. Don't be sorry for the little child that dies!--Thank God, his suffering is over! That little child's torment & suffering & neglect & lack of love is over. He has plenty of love now with Jesus! He has plenty of beauty. He lacks for nothing in the Garden of God, the Eden of Heaven! Weep not for him.
60. The only victory of the grave is spiritual death, being lost, but with us this kind of death has no power & no sting! Jesus has taken the sting out of death & the power away from the grave, & we'll get the final victory over it in the Resurrection!
61. Your death will be a victory over the grave & a victory over sin & a victory over the Devil!--A glorious victory & a glorious entry into the heavenlies!
62. Earth recedes, Heaven opens! This is my coronation day!



63. That's the way to die: Even if the dogs are nipping at your heels & the rocks are raining, die victorious with your eyes on Jesus, entering the heavenlies, your spirit rising to your reward while your body falls to the grave!

64. He that lives to live forever never fears dying.

65. Death is not a period, but a comma in the story of life.

66. Although the Devil may get to fulfill the law to execute us and take our life physically, the moment we as Christians die we're instantly freed spiritually.

67. You'll lose your life one way or the other, so you might as well die for something as to live for nothing!

68. If you live in God's Golden Gates of Faith you can survive anything--even death!

69. It's better to die for something than to live--and die--for nothing!

70. From the blood of the martyrs and the blood of the witnesses there springs new life and new lives to live for God.

71. The blood of the martyrs is the seed of the Church.

72. God bless and keep you now! But if He doesn't, die for Him and He'll keep you forever!

73. You should only fear to die until you have done something that will always live.

74. It often requires more courage to suffer than to die.

75. Death only frees you when you're serving Jesus.

76. It's wonderful to live on the brink of death, it keeps you so close to God.

77. We go to the grave of a friend, saying, "A man is dead." But angels throng about him saying, "A man is born."

78. That little baby you lost, that little child you lost, that mate you lost, that loved one you lost, you've only lost for a little while, only a little while. They've gone to be with Jesus! They're with Him now in Heaven for a little while, & then we're going to go to be with them, reunited with them at that wonderful Marriage Supper of the Lamb, at that beautiful feast of all the loved ones of the Lord & our departed loved ones & departed Saints--children, mothers, fathers, brothers, sisters all together once again with Jesus, to come down again to this Earth to rule & reign here in a beautiful Heavenly Garden of Eden on this Earth, the Garden of God, forever.

79. When I go, I want you to celebrate my life, not mourn my death.

80. You need to have faith & trust God for the way you live and the way you die, for death as well as life!

81. Our enemies can only kill the body, and after that there's no more that they can do; they thus release our spirits at last into the glorious spiritual Kingdom of God!

82. Death is great, it is going to be with Jesus! We should be happy when one of our own goes to be with the Lord, released from this stinking flesh, so heavy to lug around! The flesh is heavy, the flesh is tired, the flesh feels pain. If I'm unselfish I should be rejoicing for them, thanking God they're with Him & their troubles are over, in a place where there's no more crying, no more pain, no more sorrow, nothing but eternal happiness. So why shouldn't I be happy too?

83. You don't have to be fearful of going soon from this Earth & this place that you know & the folks that have been good to you & have cared for you & have loved you, because where you're going, they're going to be even better to you & they're going to even love you more & care more for you, & you already have lots of friends & Family there!

84. Why will ye call it "Death's dark night?"--Death is the entrance into light!

85. Death is but the sunrise of another World.

86. We are so selfish about death. We count our grief far more than we consider their relief.

87. The voice of death is but the voice of the Master saying to you, "Suffer the little children to come unto Me, & forbid them not; for of such is the Kingdom of Heaven".

(See also No.628, 679, 680, 714, 850, 852, 912, 959, 972, 993, 1234, 1262, 1264, 1284, 1421, 1476, 1570.)

88. GEN.25:8 Then Abraham gave up the ghost, and died in a good old age, an old man, and full of years; and was gathered to his people.

89. 2KI.22:20 Behold therefore, I will gather thee unto thy fathers, and thou shalt be gathered into thy grave in peace; and thine eyes shall not see all the evil which I will bring upon this place.

90. JOB.3:17 There the wicked cease from troubling; and there the weary be at rest.

91. PSA.23:4 Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for Thou art with me; Thy rod and Thy staff they comfort me.

92. PSA.31:5 Into Thine hand I commit my spirit: Thou hast redeemed me, O Lord God of truth.

93. PSA.37:37 Mark the perfect man, and behold the upright: for the end of that man is peace.

94. PSA.48:14 For this God is our God for ever and ever: He will be our guide even unto death.

95. PSA.49:15 But God will redeem my soul from the power of the grave: for He shall receive me. Selah.
96. PSA.73:24 Thou shalt guide me with Thy counsel, and afterward receive me to glory.
97. PSA.103:15,16 As for man, his days are as grass: as a flower of the field, so he flourisheth. For the wind passeth over, and it is gone; and the place thereof shall know it no more.
98. PSA.116:15 Precious in the sight of the Lord is the death of His saints.
99. PRO.12:28 In the way of righteousness is life; and in the pathway thereof there is no death.
100. PRO.14:32 The righteous hath hope in his death.
101. ECC.3:2a A time to be born, and a time to die.
102. ECC.7:1 A good name is better than precious ointment; and the day of death than the day of one's birth.
103. ECC.8:8a There is no man that hath power over the spirit to retain the spirit; neither hath he power in the day of death.
104. ECC.12:7 Then shall the dust return to the Earth as it was: and the spirit shall return unto God Who gave it.
105. ISA.25:8 He will swallow up death in victory; and the Lord God will wipe away tears from off all faces; and the rebuke of His people shall He take away from off all the Earth: for the Lord hath spoken it.
106. ISA.57:1 The righteous perisheth, and no man layeth it to heart: and merciful men are taken away, none considering that the righteous is taken away from the evil to come.
107. MAT.22:30-32 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in Heaven. But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.
108. MAT.27:52,53 And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose, And came out of the graves after His resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.
109. LUK.16:22 The beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom.
110. LUK.23:43 And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with Me in Paradise.
111. JOH.2:19 Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up.
112. JOH.5:25 Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live.
113. JOH.6:47 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on Me hath everlasting life.
114. JOH.8:51 Verily, verily, I say unto you, If a man keep My saying, he shall never see death.
115. JOH. 11:25,26 Jesus said unto her, I am the Resurrection, and the Life: he that believeth in Me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in Me shall never die. Believest thou this?
116. ACT.7:59 They stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.
117. ROM.14:8 For whether we live, we live unto the Lord; and whether we die, we die unto the Lord: whether we live therefore, or die, we are the Lord's.
118. 1CO.15:26 The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.
119. 1CO.15:42-44 So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption: It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power: It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body.
120. 1CO.15:51,52 Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.
121. 1CO.15:54b,55 Death is swallowed up in victory. O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?
122. 2CO.1:9,10 But we had the sentence of death in ourselves, that we should not trust in ourselves, but in God which raiseth the dead: Who delivered us from so great a death, and doth deliver: in Whom we trust that He will yet deliver us.
123. 2CO.4:11,12 For we which live are alway delivered unto death for Jesus' sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortal flesh. So then death worketh in us, but life in you.
124. 2CO.5:1 For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the Heavens.
125. 2CO.5:8 We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord.
126. EPH.5:14 Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light.

127. PHI.1:21 For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain.

128. 1TH.4:13,14 But I would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleep, that ye sorrow not, even as others which have no hope. For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus will God bring with Him.

129. 1TH.5:9,10 For God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain Salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ, Who died for us, that, whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with Him.

130. 2TI.1:10 But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, Who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light through the Gospel.

131. HEB.2:14,15 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, He also Himself likewise took part of the same; that through death He might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the Devil; And deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage.

132. REV.1:18 I am He that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of Hell and of death.

133. REV.11:11 And after three days and an half the Spirit of life from God entered into them, and they stood upon their feet; and great fear fell upon them which saw them.

134. REV.14:13 And I heard a voice from Heaven saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours; and their works do follow them.

135. REV.20:14 And Death and Hell were cast into the Lake of Fire. This is the Second Death.

(See also 2CO.5:1,4,8; PHI.1:20,21,23,24; 1TH.4:13-18.)

## 22. DEVIL'S DEVICES --{page 191}--



*Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices (2Cor.2:11).*

1. If you don't recognise the Enemy's work, how are you going to get the victory over it?
2. The Devil doesn't always try to scare you to death, he quite often tries to charm you to death.
3. The Devil can cite Scriptures for his purpose.
4. Watch out for hypnotism!--It can bring on demon-possession.
5. "Where wickedness doth abound, grace doth much more abound"--and it also works the other way: If grace is abounding, the Devil is working, too!
6. If the Devil can't totally defeat you, he'll try to keep you from winning a complete victory.
7. If the Devil can't kill you any other way, he tries to scare you to death.
8. A craving for sweets is like a craving for drugs or drink or gambling.--It's something the Devil knows can absolutely destroy you!
9. Game-playing, such as chess & cards, is as addictive as gambling & alcohol & used as a tool of the Devil to waste time!
10. The Devil's favourite tool with Christians is discouragement.
11. Idleness is the Devil's workshop.
12. The business of the Devil is to try to bring about condemnation.

13. If there is anything the Devil uses to slow down the Words of God, it's problem people!
14. Where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty, & where there is liberty the Devil always tries to take advantage of it.
15. One of the Enemy's wiles is "Wait awhile."
16. The Devil is satanically intellectual. He is a god of knowledge.
17. One of the Devil's diabolical delusions with which he deceives you is: To raise questions about minor issues to get your mind off the major ones & distract your attention from the things you should be concerned about, so that you become busy with a little here & a little there till the important is gone!
18. The Devil's a great one to quote Scriptures. He can almost quote more Scripture than anybody.
19. If the Devil can't persuade you not to serve God, then he tries to get you so weighted down with things, problems & time, energy & money wasters that you can't even move.
20. The Devil is like the strip-teaser: He offers you everything, but never really delivers.
21. The Devil's plan is to accuse you of the things he himself is actually guilty of.
22. The Devil can never win except by default. The only way he can get the victory is if he can persuade you to quit.
23. If the Devil can get you to agree on even a short cease-fire, he has time to bring up reinforcements, encircle you, infiltrate you with his lies & spies, & try to trap you completely. You can't do business with the Enemy even for a moment--he's out to win!
24. Most of the time jealousy exaggerates things so much that they seem worse than they really are. That's the Devil's business--to blow things up as big as a mountain.
25. The Devil's business is contradicting the Lord.
26. No wonder Satan tried to offer Jesus the World--that was his domain.
27. The biggest thing the Devil's trying to do is just keep you from being a good sample to win others, because he knows he's in danger of losing others out of his clutches because of you!
28. A lot of people who worship themselves, literally are worshipping the Devil!
29. People who worship their minds are worshipping themselves, & if they're worshipping themselves, they're literally worshipping the god of this World, the Devil.
30. The religion of the Devil from the very beginning was to get people to worship themselves instead of God.
31. The Devil is always threatening & breathing out slaughters, but seldom, if ever, accomplishing them.
32. When the leader is away, the Devil always tries to slip in!
33. There's nothing that God has that the Devil doesn't try to imitate!
34. Watch your thoughts!--They are real things!
35. The Devil is both the Prosecuting Attorney & the Executioner, a part of the whole judgement process of God's justice!
36. The Devil really tries to put a muzzle on those who would attempt to expose him & would try to warn people of his dirty work.
37. Jesus didn't talk very much about the works of the Devil, but He did warn people a lot about them.
38. The Devil always accuses God's Saints of the very things which he himself is doing & of which his own people are guilty!
39. "Divide & conquer!" is the Devil's own slogan!
40. There's a difference between the conviction of the Holy Spirit & the accusations of the Enemy.
41. Not all doors are of the Lord. Some of them can be tricks of the Devil, decoys, blind alleys, red herrings, side tracks & downright disasters!
42. Everything the Devil offers is a counterfeit substitute, a fake & a phoney! But ours is the real thing & forever!
43. The main purpose of the Enemy's words is to cause fear--to weaken your work for the Lord & upset you in every way.
44. The Devil was ordained to see if he could get you to not believe God.
45. The Devil will always try to put in a partial half-truth to give credence to his lie.
46. The Devil is always threatening & breathing out slaughter & trying to bluff you out or merely persuade you to surrender, because he cannot actually defeat you unless you give up & give in & let him have it.
47. Since the Devil can't prove his own lies, he does his damndest to try to disprove the Truth!
48. Even if the government doesn't know where you are, the Devil knows, & he's always ready to stir up trouble, so watch out!

49. The Devil attacks us first in our thoughts: That's the door through which he finds entrance. But thank God you can slam that door shut with Scriptures, as Jesus did!
50. Any hold Satan has is only as a usurper. He tries to hold onto that which is not rightfully his.
51. It is impossible for the Devil to win over you, unless you give in to him.
52. The Devil is a liar & is usually bluffing.
53. The Devil can't stand the Word, nor the Name of Jesus.
54. The first purpose of the Devil is to condemn.
55. The Devil will tempt you to sin, then accuse you for sinning.
56. The Devil tries to drown out the voice of the Spirit when you're embroiled in the material!
57. A lot of times the reason why you have to fight the Devil so much is because you're fighting God & the Truth.
58. If the Devil can just scare you out before you begin, then you'll never accomplish what God wants you to do.
59. The Devil can really tell you a lot of horrible truth about yourself, not to speak of the terrible lies he tells you.
60. Part of what the Devil says is always true, because he couldn't get you to believe his lies unless he told you some truth mixed with it, which would deceive you into thinking his lies were true too!
61. Procrastination is the Devil's own tool to get people to put things off until later.
62. Procrastination is one of the Devil's cleverest weapons--if he knows he can't stop you, he tries to delay you.
63. If the Devil can't stop you, he tries to distract you!
64. We're not condemned for victories won,  
But all the things we haven't done.
65. The Devil uses terrorism too: His whole idea in the World is to try to frighten people into letting him have his way!
66. The worship of riches of this life is Devil worship.
67. The Devil won't let you get away with anything, he's the accuser of the Saints! The minute you step out of line, he'll start nippin' at your heels & giving you all kinds of trouble!
68. There's seldom anything good in a nightmare & it usually has no significant meaning or lesson or interpretation that is valuable, other than to merely try to frighten you in your sleep & scare you in your slumber, & is therefore most apt to be from the Enemy, just to worry you & upset you & startle you!
69. If the Devil can't defeat you, he sure can annoy you. If he can't stop you, then he tries to slow you down.
70. The first big lie the Devil told Adam & Eve was that God was a liar!
71. The Devil always tries to reverse things, & the minute God says anything the Devil immediately tries to contradict it!
72. The Devil is a divider & a confuser!
73. When you're discouraged, the Devil makes you mad at the Truth because he's about to be defeated by it.
74. The Devil can't do a damn thing without God's permission. Sometimes God even lets the Enemy bother us a little bit, just to keep us on our toes.
75. The Enemy attacks now & then just to help us appreciate our blessings.
76. The Devil makes his worst attack, not on your good, but on your lack.
77. If the Devil can't discourage you in any other way, he tries to belittle you & belittle what you're doing.
78. The Devil hasn't got much to offer but lies & deceits & counterfeits & imitations & disillusionments, disappointments, discouragements, doubts, fears, confusions & monotonous frustration & final destruction & total death!
79. Every one we win is a threat to hundreds of others of the Devil's, so he's out to stop each one the best he can.
80. The Devil is not a creator, he's only an imitator & destroyer. He's conjuring up his fake building of papier mâché on a sandy foundation.
81. It's a lot easier for the Devil to hide in a crowd.
82. If the Devil cannot attack you, he will even try to attack your little ones, which is why you really have to pray over your children, lay hands on them & dedicate them to the Lord.
83. Look at that word "Devil", will you? Chop off his head, "d", & you've still got "evil"; chop off the "e" & it's "vile"; chop off the "v" & he's "ill"; & chop off the "i" & he's "l"!--Hell!
84. When you begin admiring the Devil's work then it's a form of worship.

85. The Scripture says we're not to be unaware of the Devil's devices. In other words, we are to beware of his devices. But we're not to get so fascinated by studying how he works that it becomes a form of morbid curiosity, a fascination for evil!

86. If the Devil always came around with hooves & horns & a long tail & a pitch fork in his hand, he wouldn't be half as dangerous as the way he usually comes around, in the form of some beautiful woman or some handsome man or some smooth-tongued teacher or preacher or even Family Member!

87. The Enemy is always on the job, always watching & ready to give us a shove & cause us to stumble & fall if we're not watching & praying & looking & holding onto the Lord!

88. A Christian oppressed by the Devil is like a prisoner of war held by enemy forces.

89. There's a difference between the conviction of the Holy Spirit & the accusations of the Enemy. You are not convicted of a sin until the Judge, God, has made a decision. But frequently the Enemy will come & accuse you of sins or things which aren't even sins, & condemn you for it.

90. The word "luck" definitely comes from its god, Lucifer! We don't need luck, the blessings of the Devil for loyalty to him, Lucifer.

91. Evil spirits are now getting to the point with these electronic machines etc. particularly since they're very sensitive to the electric impulses etc., where the demons can fritz up the works & cause trouble, so that if they can't attack us they try to attack our machines.

92. As soon as God makes a Promise, the Devil tries to make it seem a lie.

93. When people pray against us or even are wishing against one of the Lord's children, it's cursing.

94. To invite Satan is easy, to dismiss him is hard.

(See also No.K, 33, 71, 99, 168, 303, 664, 666, 857, 947, 948, 961, 980, 999, 1130, 1246, 1375, 1376, 1379, 1403, 1409, 1414, 1415, 1439, Gen Series.)

### **23. DILIGENCE IN BUSINESS** --{page 199}--



*Seest thou a man diligent in his business? He shall stand before kings; he shall not stand before mean men (Pro.22:29).*

1. The one thing that God says that His workers need above all is to be found faithful.
2. Only those who have the patience to do simple things accurately will acquire the skill to do difficult things correctly.
3. The conduct of successful business merely consists in doing things in a very simple way, doing them regularly, & never neglecting to do them.
4. If you want something done, ask a busy man to do it, for only a great and busy man recognises the importance of getting things done now!
5. Don't be late -- God's appointments cannot wait!
6. He also that is slothful in his work is brother to him that is a great waster. Pro.18:9
7. First do more than you are paid for before expecting to be paid for more than you do.
8. Everyone who got where he is had to begin where he was.
9. Often it is easier to do a good job than to explain why you didn't.
10. Efficiency: Making each member of the office staff toe the line. Regimentation: When it's your toe.

11. The good is often the enemy of the best.
12. Waste not, want not.
13. When business is good it pays to advertise, when business is bad you've got to advertise.
14. Unfaithfulness in the keeping of an appointment is an act of clear dishonesty. Stealing his time is worse than stealing his money!
15. Whatever is worth doing at all is worth doing well.
16. Good, better, best, never let it rest. Until your good is better & your better is best.
17. You should not produce one scrap of paper with any kind of writing, charting, or even a mark of any kind on it without dating it, locating it, and signing it.
18. It's not what you've got that determines the outcome, it's what you do with what you've got!
19. God Himself keeps book & logs--even the hairs on your head are numbered!
20. Don't settle for anything less than the best!
21. When we can't trust you with bigger things, we keep pushing you down the line hoping you'll be faithful with the smaller things.
22. Initiative is doing the right thing at the right time without being told.
23. It's better to catch a problem before it gets too serious, rather than wait 'til everything falls apart.
24. God is sick and tired of giving you things you don't take care of!
25. If I had the slightest doubt about it or hesitancy about any kind of a deal at all, let me tell you, I wouldn't sign one jot or one tittle on a contract.
26. We're investors, & we're literally investing in souls, & we want to get the best soul dividends that we can get, & not just pour funds & lives down some "black hole" that gobbles up everything with nothing to show for it!
27. We're a growing group but without much money, so let's put it where it really counts! Let's get our money's worth! Let's make every penny count!--Especially every precious priceless life!
28. What's wilfully wasted will be wilfully wanted!
29. Salvation is our business!--We even save paper and postage stamps!
30. What a great fire a little flame kindleth, but you can also freeze to death for the lack of a match.
31. If you put something off until everything else is done, it will never get done, because everything else is never done! You have to give everything a certain priority.
32. We're either going to do this job right or we're not going to do it at all.
33. What did you do this past week that is going to last forever?
34. If you'll just take time to put it away where it belongs, you'll save a lot of time looking for it later! A place for everything, & everything in its place!
35. We ought to run this like an efficient business for God! He says to "Be diligent in business"--why should we be less diligent & less efficient than the World is?
36. Do everything you can, and expect God to do the rest.
37. The Church is filled with willing people--some willing to work & others willing to let them.
38. A short cut is often a wrong cut.
39. Good beginnings make good endings.
40. Well begun is half done.
41. Why is there never enough time to do it right, but always enough time to do it over?
42. You gotta have a glory in the thing you do!
43. To sit down and write takes self-discipline, research and hard work.
44. If you are not willing to finish it, don't start it!
45. Make it a habit to do the unpleasant job first. Don't paralyse present activity by letting past work hang over your head.
46. No matter what kind of a mess you found the place in, you are now the steward, and it's your responsibility to care for it, maintain it, repair it, and then leave it in better shape than before!
47. A stitch in time saves nine!
48. Blessed is the man who is too busy to worry in the daytime & too sleepy to worry at night.
49. If you don't take an inventory once in awhile, you're apt to go out of business.
50. Handle your equipment gently & lovingly as you would a woman & she'll love you forever & last a long time!
51. One of the most important witnesses a Christian can have is paying his bills!--& on time!
52. Keeping your word & fulfilling vows to be in a certain place at a certain time is a part of your good witness & testimony.

53. Plan your work--work your plan.
54. Next to knowing all about your own business, the best thing is to know all about the other fellow's.
55. Lend only what you can afford to give away.
56. When you have a number of disagreeable duties to perform, always do the most disagreeable first.
57. Wilful waste brings woeful want  
And you may live to pay.  
How I wish I had that crust  
That once I threw away.
58. When in doubt, ask.
59. If you run after two hares you will catch neither.
60. If you take care of God's business, He'll take care of yours!
61. If things are a little short & income's a little down, that shows we've got to get up & move & start fighting & get busier & expand & do more!--Not less!
62. One reason we have survived this long is because I don't take anything for granted! I take a good look at it every time & ask myself, "Is it worth it?"
63. Our enemies have tried to put us out of business lying about us, but we're still here! And I'm sure it's because of the Lord & His mercy & our prayers & our faithfulness to be diligent & obey, & also to watch & pray & keep a watchful eye on what's happening & what's going on & to see that we don't spend money we haven't got or use personnel on things we don't need or have stats that aren't so & Members who aren't there!
64. I shouldn't have to be the only idea man in this outfit! You guys ought to be able to come up with a few smart brainstormers of how to save money, personnel, time & labour! Go over your operation with a fine-tooth comb & try to figure out ways you can do without things.
65. God help us to think it through, survey & count the cost, & to analyse it & check it!
66. Lord, help us & give us wisdom, guidance & inspiration! Make us a little bit smarter, Lord, so that You don't have to say of us that the children of this World are wiser than the children of Light! (Lk.16:8.) Help us to think things through & analyse things & weigh things & count the cost & figure out how to save money & not have to wait till we don't have it to figure out how to save it, in Jesus' name. Do give us divine guidance, wisdom, skill & real concern for Thy work so that we will only do what needs to be done.
67. You guys ought to have ideas & make suggestions & ask questions--don't just accept it because that's the way it's always been.
68. Don't be afraid to ask why!--Why are we doing this? Why are we doing it that way? why do we have to do this?
69. We cannot afford just to support people because we like'm, not even because we love'm or want'm or think we need'm. We can only afford to support those now that we have to have & cannot do without! I think we'll survive, but the Lord expects us to trim the fat & do what we can to help!
70. There's no company in the World that I know that doesn't let off its labourers in a time of stress & let go the workers when they can't pay the bill.
71. Like any business, you've got to get set up & ready for business before you're going to get any!--When you get it, you've got to be ready for it!
72. Nobody should handle more than they're supposed to, more than they're capable of, & devote any more time & attention to things they don't have to do instead of what they have to do.
73. I'm not interested in reading false stats, padded accounts & inflated figures! That's just so much smoke & no fire!
74. The Lord talks about unprofitable servants, & we want to get rid of them like He did.
75. If you don't know what the question is, you can't very well come up with the answer!
76. I'm a little aggravated at people who let things roll on without really getting in there & thinking & analysing & figuring out how to save time, money, work, personnel, postage & everything!
77. You need to be familiar with stats & figures--accurate! When you go to a conference you need to know the answers to things that people are going to want to know.
78. Make it specific, brief, to the point & as simple as you possibly can! Try not to make it wordy. Try to spell it out very simply. And why don't you number it?--The first thing you do, number one, the second thing you do, number two, etc.
79. Stats don't mean anything unless you analyse them & interpret them & find out what they mean.
80. I don't think I would sign a contract to give the producer exclusive rights so that it would prohibit the use of the shows or music anywhere else.



81. God is interested in details & statistics! He even says that the very hairs of your head are numbered & not one sparrow falls to the ground but what your Heavenly Father knoweth it! Also someday you will have to give an account for every idle word & for all the deeds done in the body & every man shall be judged according to his works--His Word says so!

82. Statistics are extremely important & vitally essential to diagnosing the condition of each Home. If a Home is in good health, its statistics will likely show it, but if it's ailing, then they can also show that.

83. The purpose of statistical reports is to encourage all of us by being able to see how much we're accomplishing through these actual figures & also to help us detect any trouble spots, problems, or areas that need help, & correct our mistakes.

84. "Even as all things are ordered in every kingdom & all ministries fall in to their place, so shall it also be in My Kingdom under My King David!"

85. We've got to economise, & to economise we've got to centralise! A centralised government--a dictatorship really--is far more efficient & economical than all this spread-out stuff & everybody on their own & "every man to his own tent" & every man getting his own cheque & everybody working on their own independently & not having to answer to anybody.

86. Just do what has to be done today & put all the rest off until tomorrow or next week or next month or next year. And if none of the rest ever gets done, I figure God didn't intend for it to get done.

87. Don't blame it on God if you loafed around & goofed off for a week & then try to do a week's work in one day, that's not God's fault, that's your own. If you're overburdened or the yoke is too hard it's your own fault or somebody else's fault, not God's.

88. Every industry has what they call 'efficiency experts' & "time study" men who hang over the shoulders of the workers to figure out what they're doing & what they're not doing & what they don't need to do & what they do need to do, & how they could do it easier, cheaper & faster.

89. I would much rather see your work done on a nice easy leisurely, take-your-time daily basis than a last-minute cramming rush at the end of the week or month.

90. No matter how hard you work, if you do lousy, poor, pitiful, botched up work, all your hard work's in vain.

91. In some areas we need more emphasis & in other areas we need to let up a little. It's just like any war: Where the battle's hot you've got to put in the most troops to give it all you've got, & where you've pretty well got the situation in hand you can kind of let up a little.

92. I'm not going to go rocking along, status quo, laissez-faire, business as usual just because we used to do it & we don't want to have to admit we made a mistake.

93. Sometimes we almost go broke financially, but that's not what we're most worried about. We're most worried about going broke fruit-wise, soul-wise, & whether we're getting the job done & preaching the Gospel & winning souls!

94. There's nothing like the Lord putting a squeeze on you financially to make you pay attention & get you on the ball, make you stick your nose into everybody's business to find out what they're actually doing & what they aren't doing & whether it's paying or not & whether it's worth it or not!

95. The Lord will always supply all that we need, & if He doesn't, it's because we're spending more than we need to spend on something that's not paying.

96. Sometimes the Lord allows you to explore the method & find out what works & what doesn't work & what's best & what isn't so that you won't have any doubt about it! Otherwise you never would've believed it if you hadn't tried it.

97. If the profits are so slim in any business venture that it's hardly worth what you're investing, you get out of that one & you try to invest where the profits are the highest! You put your money where it gives the best dividends & the most results & the highest profit, & you trim off the failing & unprofitable businesses & the ones that are a drag. That's what we're doing, only we figure our profits in souls!--In Prophets!--The kind that preach the Gospel!

98. Sometimes the Lord puts the squeeze on you for a good reason, to make you get rid of the junk you don't need that's just costing money & not paying!

99. Learn how to be more efficient, more effective, more fruitful, more profitable, more economical!

100. Even our mistakes are not unprofitable as long as we learn by them! It's this business of "ever learning & never coming to a knowledge" that is frustrating! (2Ti.3:7)--Never waking up to find out how bad off you are!

101. We should only look back to be thankful for how much progress we've made & how far we've come by comparing how far behind we were a year or more ago.

102. Help us not to cry over yesterday or spilt milk, but to thank the Lord for all the milk that He's saved in spite of some losses.

103. We're in a hurry! We have a job to do & we've got very little time left to do it in!

104. In writing business letters try to make them short & sweet & simple. The person reading it is just as thick-headed as you are & it's just as hard for them to grasp what you've been talking about as it has been for you!

105. If you'd spend a little more time praying you'd have to spend a hell of a lot less time working to get things done!

106. Start each day by making a daily list of things to do & delegate. Make this practice as habitual as brushing your teeth or having the morning cup of coffee. Write down all the things you want to accomplish that day & rank them in order of importance, & then do your top-priority jobs first!

107. You cannot think, concentrate, pray & hear the voice of God on how to answer the mail, compose thoughts, dictate phrases & think on your feet, so to speak, unless you can get alone & away from the confusion, noise, disturbances & interruptions.

108. Think with a pencil or pen in your hand & write down ideas as they come & instructions as you get them. A short pencil is better than a long memory!

109. The Lord loves to give you the answer. He knows exactly what to do & how to do it, so why don't you ask Him instead of going to all the trouble of trying to figure it out yourself?

110. Stats are a part of our communication, absolutely essential & necessary for our well-being. They are our pulse-taking & temperature-taking of the body to know exactly its health & its physical functions.

111. It's not good to leave the whole thing up to one man, that's why you should always be training somebody to do your job, who can also double-check on you to make sure they catch any mistakes.

112. A stitch in time saves nine.

113. Better a fence at the top of the cliff than a hospital at the bottom!

114. It's better to have it & not need it than to need it & not have it.

115. Better safe than sorry!

116. If you can't do your job, then you've got to find a substitute to do it.

117. Be sure you're right, then go ahead! But if you're not sure you're right, you'd better not go at all.-- You'd better drag your feet & go slow until you find out for sure what is right.

(See also No. 22, 212, 283A, 301A, 667, 682, 701, 1028.)

118. 1KI.11:28 And the man Jeroboam was a mighty man of valour: and Solomon seeing the young man that he was industrious, he made him ruler over all the charge of the house of Joseph.

119. 1KI.20:40a And as thy servant was busy here and there, he was gone.

120. PRO.6:6-8 Go to the ant, thou sluggard; consider her ways, and be wise: Which having no guide, overseer, or ruler, Provideth her meat in the summer, and gathereth her food in the harvest.

121. PRO.10:4 He becometh poor that dealeth with a slack hand: but the hand of the diligent maketh rich.

122. PRO. 12:22 They that deal truly are His delight.

123. PRO. 13:4 The soul of the sluggard desireth, and hath nothing: but the soul of the diligent shall be made fat.

124. PRO.18:9 He also that is slothful in his work is brother to him that is a great waster.

125. PRO.18:16 A man's gift maketh room for him, and bringeth him before great men.

126. PRO.19:15 Slothfulness casteth into a deep sleep; and an idle soul shall suffer hunger.

127. PRO.19:24 A slothful man hideth his hand in his bosom, and will not so much as bring it to his mouth again.

128. PRO.20:4 The sluggard will not plow by reason of the cold; therefore shall he beg in harvest, and have nothing.

129. PRO.20:13 Love not sleep, lest thou come to poverty; open thine eyes, and thou shalt be satisfied with bread.

130. PRO.22:29 Seest thou a man diligent in his business? He shall stand before kings; he shall not stand before mean men.

131. PRO. 31:27 She looketh well to the ways of her household, and eateth not the bread of idleness.

132. ECC.10:18 By much slothfulness the building decayeth; and through idleness of the hands the house droppeth through.

133. LUK.16:8 And the Lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this World are in their generation wiser than the children of light.

134. ROM.12:11 Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the Lord.  
 135. 1CO.4:2 Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful.  
 136. 1TH.5:6 Therefore let us not sleep, as do others; but let us watch and be sober.  
 137. HEB.6:12 That ye be not slothful, but followers of them who through faith and patience inherit the promises.  
 138. HEB.13:16 But to do good and to communicate forget not: for with such sacrifices God is well pleased.

**24. DISCIPLESHIP** --{page 211}--



*Then said Jesus unto His disciples, If any man will come after Me, let him deny himself, & take up his cross & follow Me (Mt.16:24).*

1. A disciple forsakes everything, walks with Jesus, follows Jesus and lives with Jesus! This is the difference between mere Christians and disciples.
2. Halfway, half-hearted, half-baked disciples make God sick at His stomach!
3. If you were arrested for being a Christian, would there be enough evidence to convict you?
4. A disciple is a mind through which Christ thinks  
 A heart through which Christ loves  
 A voice through which Christ speaks  
 A hand through which Christ helps.
5. There is no discharge in this war--only promotion!
6. You cannot serve two masters. (Mt.6:24)
7. I only regret that I have but one life to give for my Lord.
8. What do you hear on the mountain?--Things that are going to echo around the World! What do you hear on the mountain?--Whispers that are going to change the course of history!
9. Loyalty is the prime requisite in any man's army.
10. God wants strong soldiers to win the lost & save the World!--He wants wildly willing working witnesses to die daily for Jesus & others!
11. When you join the army you are expected to stick to the army's rules, whether you like them or not.
12. The one thing the Lord will not tolerate in His Army is desertion.
13. You are God's expendables!--Created to burn out on His altar of sacrifice--made to wear out as His tools of design--to die, that others may live.
14. You can only offer others an invitation to come & die with you--to die to the flesh that they may live in the Spirit!
15. By the time we've had a new disciple in our ranks for three months, he ought to be able to stand on his own.
16. If the Devil can't keep you from being a Christian, he'll try to keep you from being a revolutionary Christian!
17. God never specialises in numbers!--He likes quality!
18. It's not numbers that count, but the quality and devotion of your disciples to the Lord and lost souls.
19. Our primary requisites for membership: Salvation, fellowship, witnessing or witnessing.

20. Don't jeopardise the whole army for one risky soldier!
21. There are many concentric circles and degrees of discipleship which must be recognised and appreciated and used.
22. Many many were called but very very few were chosen, because very few chose to follow His way.(Mt.22:14)
23. When you decide to serve God full time, all Hell breaks loose!
24. We cannot risk the whole Army for one soldier's personal problems!
25. Holy Ghost power means more Disciples and less trouble with the ones you have!
26. Once you have chosen God & His way, He refuses to take second place to anything or anybody, & will not let you put any other gods before Him--not your old job nor your old boss nor even your old family & friends.
27. The father who stuck by the business & the rest of the family, vanished into obscurity & oblivion, whereas those stinking filthy fishermen sons of his wandered off with a perfect Stranger, & made history that has helped save millions of souls for Eternity!
28. For us it's quality, not quantity; purity, not popularity; autonomy, not numbers; power, not population; leaders, not just sheep, disciples, not just church members; soldiers, not just civilians!
29. God wants you to capture leaders!--People who are already leaders!
30. You know Jesus better now than the disciples did then!--Because He's in you now, He was only with them then!(Jn.14:17)
31. The only ones you can really trust are those who have their eyes on the Lord.
32. You are the cadre, the officers and the leaders of this last great spiritual Revolution.--And that requires 100% dedication!--Do or die!
33. We are genuine officers' training schools preparing a cadre for World leadership!
34. Discipleship will only cost you your old life, which we'll replace with a new one of total joy and happiness!
35. If you don't consider this your Family & this your Home, you are not one of us & you ought to go back to your system family & home where you belong.
36. We cannot do a good job loving You, Lord, & loving others & serving them unless we "hate" our system folks & Worldly home & everything that they stand for, by comparison with the way we love You, Lord. Of course we love them, Lord, of course we even love our enemies, Lord, we love them for Thy glory & for Thy sake, we love their souls & we want to see them saved. But we hate the way they are now, Lord, we'd like to change them, we'd like to make them like us. Then You could trust us with loving them. But Lord, if they don't love us & they don't love You that much, Lord, we cannot but hate them. How can we love those that hate Thee?
37. We are God's special troops who are willing to give up anything, do anything, share anything for Jesus. The others are the regular army of Jesus Christ & they love Jesus a little bit, they believe in Jesus a little bit, & that's all you need to go to Heaven. But for us that's not enough!--It's not sufficient. For us it's necessary to serve Jesus Christ all the time with all our heart & all our mind!
38. Jesus offers you, His disciple, a better life, a better job, in a better place with a better Boss for a better Family and greater rewards!
39. You take the Mountain & you'll leave the multitudes behind. Only His disciples came unto Him--they were the ones who followed Jesus all the way! (Mt.5:1,2)

(See also No. B, F, S, 34, 42, 140, 148, 153, 203, 225, 242, 251, 314A, 328B, 334A, 542, 551, 641, 703, 756, 960, 1033, 1068.)

40. PSA.4:3 But know that the Lord hath set apart him that is Godly for Himself: the Lord will hear when I call unto Him.
41. MAT.4:19,20 And He saith unto them, Follow Me, and I will make you fishers of men. And they straightway left their nets, and followed Him.
42. MAT.10:36-38 And a man's foes shall be they of his own household. He that loveth father or mother more than Me is not worthy of Me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me. And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after Me, is not worthy of Me.
43. MAT.12:48-50 He answered and said unto him that told Him, Who is My mother? and who are My brethren? And He stretched forth His hand toward His disciples, and said, Behold My mother and My brethren! For whosoever shall do the will of My Father which is in Heaven, the same is My brother, and sister, and mother.
44. MAT.22:14 For many are called, but few are chosen.
45. MAR.4:34b ...when they were alone, He expounded all things to His disciples.

46. MAR.10:21 Then Jesus beholding him loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lackest: go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in Heaven: and come, take up the cross, and follow Me.

47. LUK.9:57-62 And it came to pass, that, as they went in the way, a certain man said unto Him, Lord, I will follow Thee whithersoever Thou goest. And Jesus said unto him, Foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay His head. And He said unto another, Follow Me. But he said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. Jesus said unto him, Let the dead bury their dead: but go thou and preach the Kingdom of God. And another also said, Lord, I will follow Thee; but let me first go bid them farewell, which are at home at my house. And Jesus said unto him, No man, having put his hand to the plow, and looking back, is fit for the Kingdom of God.

48. LUK.10:23,24 And He turned him unto His disciples, and said privately, Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see: For I tell you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.

49. JOH.6:27 Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for Him hath God the Father sealed.

50. JOH.12:26 If any man serve Me, let him follow Me; and where I am, there shall also My servant be: if any man serve Me, him will My Father honour.

51. JOH.13:35 By this shall all men know that ye are My disciples, if ye have love one to another.

52. ACT.4:34,35 Neither was there any among them that lacked: for as many as were possessors of lands or houses sold them, and brought the prices of the things that were sold, And laid them down at the apostles' feet: and distribution was made unto every man according as he had need.

53. ACT.15:26 Men that have hazarded their lives for the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

54. ROM.8:35-37 Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? As it is written, For Thy sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter. Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through Him that loved us.

55. EPH.6:13-16 Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness; And your feet shod with the preparation of the Gospel of peace; Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.

56. 2TI.1:9 Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to His Own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the World began.



*And immediately Jesus stretched forth His hand, & caught him, & said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt? (Mt.14:31).*

1. The best cure for doubts is the Word!
2. You can't keep trouble from coming, but you needn't give it a chair to sit on.
3. You can't keep the birds from flying over your head but you can sure keep them from building a nest in your hair.
4. Doubt sees the obstacles,  
Faith sees the way.  
Doubt sees the darkest night,  
Faith sees the day.  
Doubt dreads to take a step,  
Faith soars on high.  
Doubt questions "Who believes?"  
While faith answers "I".
5. Just a little bit of doubt, a little bit of fear, a little bit of complaint, a little bit of discouragement, can grow and grow until you're totally defeated and a terrible influence on others!
6. At the root of every doubt there is sin, the heinous diabolical sin of rebellion against God's will.
7. Doubts are monsters that devour & destroy you & things around you! They are the Devil's thoughts & Satan's words!--And when you're doubting in your own mind, you're thinking the Enemy's thoughts! When you're voicing your doubts to others you're spreading Satan's propaganda--& it's all designed to bring division & through division, destruction of the Work of God!
8. There is no sense in advertising your troubles. There's no market for them.
9. Are you a potential Judas?--You are if you're doubtful, unhappy, discontented, disobedient & unbelieving!
10. You cannot entertain the thoughts of the Enemy & yet receive the thoughts of God.
11. Murmuring is the voice of doubt--the voice of doubt is murmuring!
12. If you let the Devil use your mouth to speak doubts & discouragement & his lies, you're preaching the Devil's own doctrines!
13. Feed your faith, & your doubts will starve to death.
14. Sometimes the price of doubt & discouragement can even be defeat & death!
15. If you get discouraged and lose faith, then you can lose your ability to exercise your power.
16. Don't listen to the Devil, or pretty soon you'll be believing him!
17. Doubt is contagious!
18. The Lord doesn't hold you as responsible for even your deeds as He does your unbelief!
19. You are not responsible for the thoughts that pass your door. You are responsible for those you admit & entertain.
20. Doubt, fear, discouragement & murmuring kill! But faith, trust, courage & praising the Lord maketh alive!
21. The reason people doubt is because they're not willing to accept the truth.
22. God can stand anything but your damn doubts and fears and lack of faith!
23. Never doubt in the dark what God has spoken in the light.

24. Which will you be?--A doubter, disobeyer and denyer?--Or a believer, obeyer and broadcaster of the truth, even if it kills you!

25. The worst sin of all is the wicked horrible heinous sin of unbelief, which leads to faith in the Devil & his lie.

26. The major sin is unbelief--rejecting (doubting) the Word of God & believing the lying propaganda of the Devil.

27. Backsliding & betrayal always begin with doubts, then disobedience, then denial.

28. Fill your life with love & your mind & heart with His truth & there'll be no room for the lies of the Devil. You'll have enough peace in your heart so there'll be no room for the Devil's warfare.

29. I will not doubt though all my ships come home with broken sails!

30. God will forgive anything except total rejection of the truth. He can even forgive the man with doubts, the doubting Thomases who want to have you prove it. When the man came to Jesus he said, "Lord, I believe but help Thou mine unbelief."

31. The Lord is able to chase away all of the shadows, doubts, fears & lies of the Enemy.

32. If you have doubts, you can cure it by faith, which comes by hearing the Word. The Word will cure any doubts you have if you're willing to receive the truth & really want to know.

33. Doubt is eventually followed by disobedience & disobedience by denial & denial by betrayal.

34. Let go of those damned doubts & fears & discouragements & devilish burdens put there by the Enemy, & hang onto the Lord!

35. You don't have any excuse for doubts about FFing because we have given you the Word & the cause & the motivation for the whole thing. That's where the problem comes in--whether you believe the Word or not.

36. Stay dropped out of the doubts of the Devil by staying close to the Lord & His Word.

37. Don't let the Enemy adulterate the pure waters of the Word with his dirty lies & propaganda & his doctrines of devils! Don't believe them! Resist them!--For his doubts & fears & lies can hide an even more fatal attack on your very life.

(See also No. 33, 35, 71, 313, 604, 759, 1268, 1376.)

(See Verses on Faith.)



*Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the Word of truth (2Tim.2:15).*

1. We are genuine officers' training schools preparing a cadre for World leadership!
2. It's always easier to do it yourself than to teach somebody else how to do it.
3. If you're a good student you'll make a good teacher.
4. People grow according to demands they make on themselves. If they demand little of themselves, they will remain stunted. If they demand a great deal of themselves, they will grow to giant stature.
5. The whole purpose of this life is to prepare you for the Next Life.
6. There's only one thing more painful than learning from experience, & that is not learning from experience.
7. What history teaches us is that most men have never learned anything from it.
8. To teach is to learn.
9. You, as a teacher, affect eternity; no one can tell where your influence stops.
10. The mediocre teacher tells.  
The good teacher explains.  
The superior teacher demonstrates.  
The great teacher inspires.
11. Everyone is ignorant--only on different subjects.
12. What I am to be, I am now becoming.
13. A professor once said that it didn't matter if one said, "I seed," if one really had seen something.
- ...
15. There is no education like adversity.
16. It's strange how much you've got to know before you know how little you know.
17. You cannot help men permanently by doing for them what they could & should do for themselves.
18. Give a man a fish, & you feed him for a day.  
Teach a man to fish & you feed him for life.
19. God never puts you in a space too small to grow in.
20. Fight truth decay.
21. Experience is a good teacher--& she doesn't allow dropouts.
22. By the time we recognise a man's brilliance we've forgotten the stupid questions he asked to get that way.
23. Life is the soul's nursery ... it's a training place for the destinies of eternity.
24. Men learn while they teach.
25. Your child's education commences with you, their parents, & every word you speak within the hearing of your little children tends towards the formation of their character.
26. A teacher who is attempting to teach without inspiring the pupil with a desire to learn, is hammering on cold iron.
27. Man cannot improve on God's plan or God's design!
28. Every mistake can be a steppingstone if we learn our lesson from it.
29. We're being trained right now, prepared & taught & skilled & tested for the job that we have yet to do!
30. Teachers can help you avoid pitfalls & mistakes & be an easy alternative to bitter experience.



31. Experience is the best teacher but the hardest.
32. The mind is like a computer: it has to be filled with something, good or bad, and our reflexes are mentally conditioned to react in a certain way according to what we have been taught or experienced.
33. Stick to what is good & add what is even better!
34. Every fall is a step upward--if you learn from it.
35. Even getting out the lit to others is not as important as getting the lit into yourself.
36. The best education to get is an education in the Word & faith & survival & mobility & preaching the Gospel, right now.
37. Now is the best time to learn, when you have the teacher here to correct your papers!
38. Robert A. Millikan, the American physicist & Nobel Prize winner, once said: "Knowledge of the Bible is an indispensable qualification of a well-educated man."
39. We're teaching people how to get along without churches & church buildings & preachers & denominations. We're teaching a do-it-yourself survival religion!
40. We are God's computers, programmed by the Lord, & we only know as much as He has told us, & that's all we need to say!--But that's quite a bit!
41. People who wonder how to teach a little child about Jesus must be people who don't even know Him.
42. Teaching others to teach others to teach others is our basic principle.--2Tim.2:2.
43. The day you stop learning you might as well die, because then you're dead already, mentally & spiritually!
44. Don't give strong meat to Babes! Give them the milk they can understand!
45. If you're gonna accomplish anything in this World, you can't just do it all yourself, you must teach others to teach others to teach others!
46. The Word is the basic building block of our whole educational system!
47. Constantly reading the Word can wear grooves & channels in your brain that can never be erased.
48. The job I want in the Millennium is the same job I've got now: An Educator & a Publisher to try to teach the people the Truth!
49. We are organising & establishing an educational system for the World.
50. During the Millennium there will only be one educational system--ours!
51. We believe in teaching others to teach others to teach others--an endless atom-bomb chain reaction of the Gospel!
52. Our schoolbooks are the Letters & the Bible!
53. Experience is the best teacher but a tough & costly one, whereas teachers are a shortcut to learning.
54. Our whole purpose is education--educating people in the truth of the Gospel!
55. We are now in our training period in this life in preparation for ruling the World in the next!
56. Sometimes you can learn & accomplish more by putting to use what little you have where it's needed now, rather than waiting until you know as much as you think you need to know.
57. There's always more to learn ... you never stop learning. We're not going to stop learning even after we get on the other side. And we're still going to use what we've learned here.
58. All the experience you can possibly get in any field in any way is always valuable. I have found the Lord will use everything you've ever learned.
59. We go through different phases & stages & needs, just like children in school, & God gives us whatever we need for the time.
60. That lifetime of preparation is worth it all--even if only for that "moment of truth" & recognition by the Lord--that moment of usefulness that you were designed for.
61. We study the Book of Acts not only as a history of the Early church, but as a pattern for today's church!
62. You're now in training for the days when you will rule the Earth, but before you can do that, you must learn to rule yourselves.
63. Our Revolutionary Education should have as its major purpose in every field and subject: To restore and build faith in God according to His rules.
64. God created all things according to definite laws for every science and every art and every field of knowledge.
65. We have an unlimited education!
66. Where can you ever go to get a better education that will answer all your questions & solve all your problems than right here in God's Word & in the Family?
67. The more I learn, the more I realise I need to learn. The more I know, the more I know I don't know.

68. If you knew everything all at once you would miss the joys & the thrills of the multitudinous experiences of the exciting learning process, & might even lose your interest in living!

69. The best way to teach is to help people find the answers to their own questions and to demonstrate it visibly if possible.

70. The spiritual must be supreme, and the New Nation must be spiritual first of all!--The Kingdom of God!

71. Brainwashing is our business--heartwashing too!--To clean up people's dirty minds & hearts with the pure water of His Word!

72. Each one teach one to do your job!

73. Delusion must be destroyed in order to build a firm foundation of Truth!

74. The Word of God will make you smarter than all the ungodly education in the World & the ungodly wisdom of man, which is nothing.

75. You cannot take something away from people unless you give them something to replace it.

76. Start teaching people how to live by telling them how to give!

77. The Christian nations were supposed to be the civilisers & the teachers of the World, but they failed in the job they started.

78. The conquering of the World is only right when it's to teach it the civilized Christian ways of the Lord.

79. We teach by the clinical method, learning by doing, with someone showing you how to do it.

80. The Lord Himself has all kinds of grades and classifications in His school, and all kinds of positions in His army!

81. It is high time to move to the attack and go on the offensive for God and the Truth of His Word against the heinous and hideous horrors of the Serpent's own monstrous fallacies in the halls of so-called higher learning, which bring only lower damnation!

82. Students stand up for your convictions and fight for your faith in the classroom!

83. I hear & I forget. I see & I remember. I do & I understand.

84. It's far better to take care of your children that you have already, that are already born, and to teach & train them & to give them the Letters and get them well grown and taught and established, before you start going other places bearing other babies.

85. If it's not the Word & not the Truth, I don't care to teach it to my children!

86. There is no law in the World against brainwashing, every religion & church in the World does it, every political organisation does it, every advertising executive does it, every educational institution does it, every college & school in the World does it!--That's what education & religion & politics is all about, trying to wash your brain their way! We're trying to wash your brains God's way.

87. To educate people in the things of the Lord, even in your witnessing, is your major task.

88. In the Bible I always try to take literally what obviously I don't think could possibly be symbolic! If it makes sense literally, take it literally!--Unless it is interpreted for you as being symbolic.

89. The only thing you need to get out of the Bible any more is the moral & spiritual lessons & instruction, not all this historical, geographical, genealogical detail & endless ancient History.

90. Forget the past! Let's go forward! Let's concentrate on the now & the future & get our job done & stop wasting time on ancient history.

91. Why in the Hell should we study about the past that should be gone & past & all forgotten? Why should we waste time on detailed intricate infinite study of every little detail of ancient history? It's past & there's nothing you can do about it. It's finished!

92. We ought to be concentrating on the present & the future. You don't need to know all that junk of the past nor even read Old Testament History any more, it's a waste of time! You can read the Books of Psalms & Proverbs & things which are up to date, & apply to today, your spiritual lessons & everyday life & praise to the Lord as well as lots of prophecy about the Future, but you certainly don't need to go delving into the depths of ancient time.

93. The reading of the New Testament, especially the life of Christ & particularly the Gospel of John is very helpful to new Christians, but I think they'd almost be better off if they didn't get tangled up in the Epistles of the Apostles. They get into some big doctrinal arguments there between Paul & Peter & some of the rest of them.

94. Why should we waste our time looking backwards & studying the past when we have all we can possibly do working in the present & studying the Future?

95. Why study the Bible? I've told you almost all you need to know about the Bible & quoted for you all the important Scriptures with up-to-date modern applications of today that are appropriate for now & have to do

with the present & the lives we're living now, not re-hashing all that old passé Jewish junk. It may have been good for our fathers but it's too late for us!

96. Why should you turn around & go back to the past, especially a churchy past & a churchy study of the Bible & all its past & ancient history? It's the University of Empty Blab! It's empty because there's nothing to it because they don't get anything out of it but chaff & rubbish, for the plain & simple reason that it doesn't affect their lives, or get them to do their job or to witness or win souls or evangelise the World or prepare people for the future.

97. You don't have to know the churches & churchianity & church doctrine or even the Bible as long as you know the Truth & the Word of God, His Word for today & His Prophet for today & His Message & method & ministry for today. All the Bible you need to know is already in your Prophet MO!

98. There are so many Bible stories & so much to teach out of the MO Letters, why should we teach them anything else?

99. You're still in training! After you've learned how to take care of one yard & one house, He'll probably give you several, maybe a dozen, maybe a whole country, & you'll teach them all how to do it.

100. In the Millennium, people will need to be taught & trained in the Truth & God's Word. We're gonna have to systematically destroy the works of the Devil & the works of Satan & all of his shit!--All of his music & literature & his so-called art & everything on Earth that's not of the Lord.

(See Also No. 54, 315, 330C, 334A, 371, 376, 389, 588, 606, 619, 645, 687, 688, 693, 694, 715, 718, 721, 722, 728, 732, 734, 739, 775, 776, 779, 780, 835, 897, 986, 996, 1039, 1047, 1055, 1107, 1142, 1214, 1381, 1398, 1470, *Childcare Handbook II & III.*)

101. DEU.11:18-20 Therefore shall ye lay up these My Words in your heart and in your soul, and bind them for a sign upon your hand, that they may be as frontlets between your eyes. And ye shall teach them your children, speaking of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, when thou liest down, and when thou risest up. And thou shalt write them upon the door posts of thine house, and upon thy gates.

102. PSA.16:7 I will bless the Lord, Who hath given me counsel: my reins also instruct me in the night seasons.

103. PSA.25:5 Lead me in Thy truth, and teach me: for Thou art the God of my Salvation, on Thee do I wait all the day.

104. PSA.34:11 Come, ye children, hearken unto me: I will teach you the fear of the Lord.

105. PSA.119:24 Thy testimonies also are my delight and my counsellors.

106. PRO.1:7a The fear of the Lord is the beginning of knowledge.

107. PRO.4:13 Take fast hold of instruction; let her not go: keep her; for she is thy life.

108. PRO.12:1 Whoso loveth instruction loveth knowledge: but he that hateth reproof is brutish.

109. JOH.5:39 Search the Scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of Me.

110. JOH.6:45 It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh to Me.

111. ACT.17:11 These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the Word with all readiness of mind, and searched the Scriptures daily, whether those things were so.

112. 1Co.2:13 Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual.

113. 1TI.4:15 Meditate upon these things; give thyself wholly to them; that thy profiting may appear to all.

114. 2TI.2:15 Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not be ashamed, rightly dividing the Word of truth.

115. 2TI.3:15 And that from a child thou hast known the Holy Scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto Salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus.



*Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy & vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the World, & not after Christ. The wisdom of this World is foolishness with God! (Col.2:8; 1Cor.3:19).*

**[HomeARC note** (10/98): The Charter states that quality scholastic education is a basic right of our children.]

1. Modern education is designed by the Devil to undermine faith in God and the Bible, and encourage faith in man and his wisdom and science instead.
2. A man who has never gone to school may steal a freight car; but if he has a university education, he may steal the whole railroad.
3. Natural gifts without education have more often attained to glory & virtue than education without natural gifts.
4. The end of school brings home to parents what teachers have known for nine months.
5. Television is not only replacing radio--it's doing a pretty good job on homework too.
6. Hooky is when a small boy lets his mind wander--& then follows it.
7. Common sense is in spite of, not the result of, education.
8. Nothing in education is so astonishing as the amount of ignorance it accumulates in the form of inert facts.
9. The World's great men have not commonly been great scholars, nor its great scholars, great men.
10. If you give some people too much knowledge without wisdom, they invent atom bombs with their knowledge, & go shooting off into space to the moon while millions are starving to death!
11. Of making many books there is no end; & much study is a weariness of the flesh. Ecc.12:12.
12. Modern education is such a defeat because no one understands you but the very elite.
13. The Devil has to teach some good, or people wouldn't swallow the lies! He has to wrap up his bitter pill in a sugarcoating that will damn your soul! It tastes good, but it gives you indigestion! In fact, it's pure poison & will kill you & send you to Hell!
14. Science is always changing names of things, as well as always changing opinions & theories & ideas!
15. The religion of the World today is becoming the religion of science. Big organised, commercialised sports are the worship of man's body, education is the worship of the works of his mind, & Churchianity is the worship of his own spirit, and war is the ultimate that all of these lead to!
16. The temptation of man was not sex: It was knowledge, education, pride & power!
17. Worldly Godless education is the greatest enemy today of the Kingdom of God!
18. You talk about fairy tales?--Even mythology is more believable than evolution!
19. Man didn't descend from the monkeys, man is descending to a monkey & lots of monkey business.
20. The whole principle of modern Godless education is: There are no absolutes, nothing is sure, nothing is certain.
21. Math is a form of perfection, of inviolable perfection, and they had to destroy faith in the perfect because if there's anything perfect, then there must be a God, so they had to try to prove that math itself was imperfect.
22. The whole of idea modern man-made education is to destroy faith in God in every field and every subject.

23. Modern education is totally diabolical, devilish, anti-Christ, demonic & is doing nothing but destroying faith.

24. You can do better with a little help from the Lord than you can with a lot of help from man's universities.

25. The biggest drawback to educational television is that most children want to major in cartoons, cowboys & crime.

26. Children who watch television night & day will go down in history--not to mention mathematics, geography & grammar.

27. An educational system isn't worth a great deal if it teaches children how to make a living but doesn't teach them how to live.

28. Science is sitting at the foot of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good & Evil & plucking off its fruits.

29. Man, with all his smart-aleckyness, has never been able to create one living cell!

30. Modern education's principal aim is to make life as complicated as possible & to make simple things complex!

31. Modern education is the worship of man & his accomplishments.

32. Nearly all modern textbooks are the Devil's Bibles, designed to deny the Truth of God.

33. Modern education takes simple things & makes them complicated.

34. Evolution is really a religion of unbelief in God.

35. Darwin finally gave the World the excuse it was looking for to not believe in God!

36. Man's decline plainly shows: he's forgotten more than he now knows.

37. Universities are full of knowledge; the freshman brings a little in & the seniors take none away, & knowledge accumulates.

38. Modern Worldly secular education is damnable because it's damning probably more young people than any other instrument of the Devil in this World! Modern public education is an enemy of Christ, an enemy of the true Church, an enemy of God, an enemy of the Bible & an enemy of your faith, a tool of the Devil to try to destroy your soul & damn you to Hell!

39. Education is the religion of the World today, the worship of the knowledge of man.

40. "The wise men are ashamed, they are dismayed & taken, lo, they have rejected the Word of the Lord, what wisdom is in them?" (Jer.8:9) If you reject the Word of the Lord, what have you got left? Without God's Word there is nothing, no wisdom, no knowledge that amounts to anything. Without the Word of God all these great temples to education are only universities of empty blab! They're just so much tommyrot without God!

41. If you don't have God & you don't have the Bible, there is no purpose in living, no reason for existence, no goal, no solution; life isn't worth living, so they just live to destroy!

42. The Godless, damnable, hellish educational system is damning young people today & taking God & the Bible away from them, an excuse for existence & a purpose in life & love of God in their fellow man, & making animals out of them, brute beasts created to be destroyed, teaching them that they are animals & they might as well do as they please & live like hell & go to hell saying, "There is no God, so what difference does it make what you do? If there's no umpire to this game, no referee, no rulebook, no set of rules, you can play the game as you damn please! You can get out there & murder or kill or do it any way you want to!"--That's the ethics of Godless education!

43. The World's enormous high schools & mammoth universities have become heartless machines, producing unguided little monsters which are going to destroy them--the Frankenstein that made them--& the churches are the same!

44. Being forced to integrate Christian children with little demons & maniacs of the Devil, be they white or black or red, white & blue, I don't go for it!

45. Ungodly anti-Christ education has attacked each major field that proves the evidence of a perfect God.

46. Medical school is one of the worst schools of all--nothing is sacred!

47. People who have no education usually worship it. People who have had it don't think too much of it.

48. To abandon the Ruler they had to throw away all the rules: The result is total anarchy! To abandon the One Who gives the orders they had to abandon order: The result is total chaos! To get rid of God they had to get rid of the absolutes--the right & the wrong & the meaning & reason for things:--The result is total insanity!--Secular education!

(See also No. 165, 222, 299, 376, 687, 728, 736, 775, 776, 897, 1039, 1365.)

49. JOB.21:14 Therefore they say unto God, Depart from us; for we desire not the knowledge of Thy way.

50. ECC.12:12 And further, by these, my son, be admonished: of making many books there is no end; and much study is a weariness of the flesh.

51. JER.4:22 For My people is foolish, they have not known Me; they are sottish children, and they have none understanding: they are wise to do evil, but to do good they have no knowledge.

52. JER.8:9 The wise men are ashamed, they are dismayed and taken: lo, they have rejected the Word of the Lord; and what wisdom is in them?

53. ZEC.7:11,12a But they refused to hearken, and pulled away the shoulder, and stopped their ears that they should not hear. Yea, they made their hearts as an adamant stone, lest they should hear the law, and the Words which the Lord of hosts has sent in His Spirit by the former prophets.

54. ROM.1:21,22 Because that, when they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools.

55. ROM.1:28 And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient.

56. 1CO.3:19,20 For the wisdom of this World is foolishness with God. For it is written, He taketh the wise in their own craftiness. And again, The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain.

57. 1CO.8:1b Knowledge puffeth up, but charity edifieth.

58. 2CO.11:3 But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtlety, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ.

59. COL.2:6-8 As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in Him. Rooted and built up in Him, and stablished in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving. Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the World, and not after Christ.

60. 2TI.4:3 For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears.



*But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, & seal the book, even to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, & knowledge shall be increased (Dan.12:4).*

1. We'll soon be at the end of the road!--And the end of the road for us will be just the beginning!
2. The sooner the End comes, the sooner the Beginning comes!
3. The worse it gets, the closer we are to the End, & the greater proof that we have nearly finished the job, & that some of us may soon be going to our reward!
4. The worse it gets, the better it's going to get. And the sooner it gets worse the sooner it's going to get better.
5. Things are going to get a little bit worse, then they're going to get a little bit better, then they're going to get the worst of all, & then they're going to get the best of all when Jesus comes!
6. "Thou shalt sweep across the face of the Earth & thou shalt proclaim My name unto all nations, & then shall the End come!"
7. "Blessed are your eyes, for they behold that which the prophets have dreamed of!"
8. Like a dying candle, the lights of the World are soon to flicker out.
9. The worse things get, the better!--Because the sooner the End comes, the better things will get!
10. The only answer is the Lord & His Coming to restore law & order and Christian civilisation.
11. We are becoming the leading characters in God's grand finale on Earth--leaders of the Last Day Christians against the Antichrist!
12. God has warned us time & again almost since the beginning of man & certainly throughout the Bible, that there's coming an End to things as far as man's rule on this Earth is concerned, & that his governments are going to eventually end so that God can set up His Heavenly Kingdom of peace on Earth!
13. The End is bound to come--including our end--which will be the beginning of the Kingdom of Heaven on Earth, with peace & plenty for all! And we shall rule & reign with Him forever!
14. My interest is in the future because I'm going to spend the rest of my life there.
15. The Lord promised He would be with us "even unto the End of the World"! (Mat.28:20)
16. It's the worry about the unknown that bothers you! It's not knowing that worries you the most! But if you've got pretty good accurate information of what's going to happen then you don't have to worry about it, you know what's going to happen!
17. If the Lord could keep all His children for the last 6000 years, He can sure keep them for the last 3-1/2 years!

(See also No. 10, 64, 102, 146, 156, 163, 186a, 276, 279, 281, 285, 294, 305, 333c, 334, 343, 344, 346, 347, 348, 349, 372, 373, 374, 378, 379, 380, 398, 541, 655, 707, 710, 799, 883, 899, 906, 911, 912, 940, 1036, 1066, 1087, 1094, 1099, 1100, 1241, 1242, 1243, 1244, 1245, 1276, 1283, 1331, 1342, 1343, 1344, 1345, 1346, 1347, 1348, 1364, 1391, 1423, 1426, 1428, 1435, 1437, 1440, 1441, 1445, 1447, 1450, 1453, 1457, 1460, 1463, 1465, 1466, 1484, 1485, 1486, 1487, 1488, 1489, 1490, 1491, 1494, 1495, 1496, 1497, 1498, 1499, 1500, 1501, 1502, 1503, 1504, 1505, 1506, 1507, 1508, 1509, 1513, 1514, 1515, 1516, 1517, 1518, 1519, 1520, 1521, 1522, 1523, 1524, 1528, 1529, 1530, 1531, 1532, 1533, 1542, 1543, 1544, 1545, 1546, 1556, 1557, 1558, 1559, 1560, 1561, 1562, 1568, 1569, 1571, 1573, 1574, 1575, 1577, 1578, 1579, 1583, 1596, 1597, 1611, 1612, 1613, 1614, 1615, 1616, 1617, 1618, 1619, 1620, 1621, 1622, 1623, 1624, 1625, 1626, 1627, 1628, 1630, 1631, 1632, 1639, 1645,



*And these signs shall follow them that believe; In My name they shall cast out devils (Mk.16:17).*

1. People with spiritual proclivities or tendencies--what you might almost call psychic sensitivities--are susceptible to spiritual influences, & if they don't stay mighty close to God & His Holy Spirit, they're very susceptible to evil spirits.

2. Don't hit the Devil head-on unless you're prepared to go all the way & really have it out & really get rid of him or the person who's harbouring him, one or the other! When you have driven the Devil out in the open & exposed him, you have precipitated a crisis & you have started something that you had better finish!

3. I don't believe a child of God can be totally possessed by the Devil, but if you believe his lies, he sometimes seems to be able to take over temporary control, & he can certainly give you Hell from the outside!

4. You don't just beat around the bush with spiritual problem cases or try to save their feelings by not talking about it. If they have any pride about it, that's as bad as the rest of the problem. The Devil never likes to be exposed, he likes to do his dirtywork in the dark & behind the scenes so you won't really know who is doing the damage. He'd like to make you think it's some disease or mental problem, blah, blah, blah!

5. With incorrigibly insane people you have to humour them, not confront them or precipitate a crisis. If you see they're obviously not receiving counsel & not contrite & not breaking down & not wanting to be genuinely delivered, it's better just to pacify them & keep them as a friend, as you ease them out!

6. In initial exorcism you don't necessarily always have the cooperation of the individual, but for them to remain clean afterward, then they must put their will on yours & the Lord's side. They must desire to remain clean, & be repentant & want Jesus & the Holy Spirit to protect them. Then you've got the cooperation of their spirit, too, on your side, to get rid of the evil spirit. Otherwise, as the Lord Himself showed about the one out of whom the evil spirit was cast, that spirit went & got seven more spirits worse than he was & came back & entered in, & the last estate was worse than the first! (Mt.12:45.)

7. It may be a stubborn situation, a stubborn spirit, but it doesn't matter how stubborn it is, you've got the authority & the power to cast it out! Now you either have or you haven't! If Jesus Christ is real, you have! If you haven't got the power to throw out that spirit, then you haven't got Jesus Christ & Jesus Christ isn't real, He never rose from the dead & we are of all men most miserable & our faith is in vain! (1Cor.15:19, 2)

8. "One can chase a thousand, two can put ten thousand to flight!" (Deut.32:30.) What do you think He's talking about?--Some kind of soldiers in an army or something?--No doubt evil spirits!

9. We can by the authority of God's Word, & in His Name, according to His commandments, cast out demons, whatever they are, & deliver the possessed--at least long enough for them to be in their right mind & under the control of their own spirit to make their own decision to serve the Devil or to serve the Lord, & then whatever decision they make is their responsibility.

10. As long as that devil's in control, in a way the possessed is not really responsible, even though it is their sins that have allowed it. So it's our responsibility to give the Lord a chance to totally deliver them.

11. If you deliver someone from the Devil's control, & then they still by their own spirit make their own free choice to serve the Devil, then there's nothing more you can do! The devils'll be right back in again & probably



more also, & the possessed is worse off! But if out from under the influence of that spirit, they of their own free will & choice want to serve the Lord & be delivered, then the Lord will deliver them!

12. The evil spirits are subject to us: They can't do as they please, they have to do what we tell'm! If we say depart, they have to depart in the name of Jesus! But we can't yet tell our own spirit to depart! It still has free will & makes its own choices, & if it's not the Lord's choice, & if through disobedience or compromise or laziness or whatever it is, we're not close to Him & under the control of His Spirit, our spirits can still make mistakes, if they're not yielded to His spirit.

13. The discerning of spirits is not only the discerning of good & evil spirits, but the discerning of human spirits as well. You've got to be able to tell when people are sincere or not, their attitude of heart & mind.

14. It's not the problems that bother us so much as the problem people who create the problems!

15. Little namby-pamby prayers aren't going to do a bit of good in a case where you're dealing with evil spirits! You've got to address the Old Boy himself & rebuke him, call him by name if you can!

16. The most effective way to exorcise any evil spirit is to call them by name & rebuke them by name, cast them out by name & resist them by name!

17. If we can't get rid of the devil, we have to get rid of the demoniac!

18. If they want to be Hell-raisers & raise Hell, let'm go to Hell!

19. It's a lot easier for the Devil to hide in a crowd.

20. Mary Magdalene was a harlot filled with seven devils! But the Lord cast them all out of her, cleansed her, forgave her, & she became one of His favourite lovers, perhaps even the King's favourite!

21. Find out the name of the demon who is attacking, & then command him by name with authority in the name of Jesus Christ, & he has to obey!

22. When people came to my mother wanting her to come & do miracles & pray for the sick & heal them, she first sat them down & dealt with them about their souls, their spirit & their problems & what was really wrong with them that caused them to be sick in the first place--whether it was demons or diet or whatever it was--she tried to find out whether it was the chastening of the Lord or the curse of the Devil. She determined to find out the cause, not just treat the illness, which is nothing but a symptom of something spiritual or natural.

23. Don't hesitate to use the Name of Jesus. Make the subject pray in the Name of Jesus & say the Name of Jesus & ask to be delivered in the Name of Jesus, again & again.

24. You don't have to confess your sins to everybody. If it's just between you & the Lord, you just confess it to Him. If it's between you & somebody else, you confess it to that person, but if you have offended the whole congregation, then you need to confess to the whole congregation.

25. People who are filled with the Devil, even if they are supposedly Christians, self-righteous Christians who think they know the Lord & even think maybe they're saved, they can curse someone, thinking they're doing it in the Spirit of God, while actually they're of their father the Devil!

26. Those in tune with the Devil can literally pray to the Devil that he'll send his angels or his hindering spirits to bother people.

27. When people pray for deliverance, they not only need to pray for deliverance from the Devil & his evil spirits & his demons, but against some of the people who are behind them, backing them & sending their curses by means of these little devils--get at the root of the trouble!

28. Christians can curse people too if they don't behave or if they get in the Lord's way!

29. If people don't receive us, they're not receiving the Lord. "He that is not for Me is against Me." (Mt.12:30) And if they're against us, you know they're serving the Devil.

30. Even the evil spirits are subject to us, but we have to be positive & definite about it & recognise the opposition & contradict them & oppose them & curse them & send them away, command them to depart!

31. Devils can't do anything but what you allow them to do. They are subject unto us, but sometimes they are also subject to those who send them.

32. God has His talismans too! Spiritually mature adults should not need objects. But like kids need pictures & illustrations, simple folks need signs & good talismans, like crosses, crucifixes, pix & images of Mary & saints & miraculous manifestations to inspire their faith. The problem is, where does the representation stop & the worship begin? And fear is a form of worship!--Watch out!

33. You'd better not try to tackle the Devil unless you know how to tackle him & you've got the strength & the spiritual power to do it.

34. A person is not possessed until he can no longer control himself, until his own spirit is no longer dominant & he's under the complete or total control of another spirit.

35. What I'd call full demon possession is when a person no longer has any self-control but the demon can just come & go at will & do whatever it wants or make them do whatever it wants.

36. It's possible for a person to be both pestered by evil spirits & also helped by good spirits at the same time.

37. You can even have the wrong spirit speak through your mouth sometimes & inspire you to say the wrong things.--But not necessarily be possessed. The difference is to what degree you allow the Enemy to control & rule over your life.

38. People with mental problems get very easily upset, very easily aggravated, annoyed, inclined to a tantrum or a rage very easily, & are often very nervous largely because they are rather weak in the spirit & susceptible to spiritual influences, so the only way they can avoid being influenced by the wrong spirit is to stay very close to the Lord & very full of His Spirit. Let the Light in so brightly that the darkness finds no place to hide & will flee away!

39. "Neither give place to the Devil" (Eph.4:27) is a good Scripture because it shows you can sometimes give the Devil place & room to operate & get in, without necessarily being completely taken over or possessed. But believe you me, whatever territory you give him, he'll sure use it, whatever he can get ahold of, including your tongue & your sharp critical spirit & violent abuse of others etc.!

40. The best way to get along with mental patients is to humour them as much as you can, without letting them go too far. There always comes a place where you have to call a halt & put a stop to something just like with a little child, & usually if you put your foot down firmly & they know you mean business, then they'll simmer down. But you have to be definite & firm about it & very clear about it, what you will put up with & what you won't stand, set down very clear lines of limitation & requirements of obedience. Warn them in advance what you won't put up with & how far they can go, & tolerate no further, let them know you really mean business & you're going to enforce it, just like you would with a little child.

41. If you allow the Enemy to continue to operate in any area of your life it could develop into complete demonism. Those bad spirits want more & more control, like the camel's nose, & the quicker you nip it in the bud & get rid of it, not only the nose but the camel behind it, the better.

42. A nervous breakdown begins with physical exhaustion, then nervous exhaustion which results in mental exhaustion & eventually almost spiritual exhaustion.

43. You've got to be pretty strong spiritually to get rid of devils! You've got to attack the thing head on. You can't just deal with it in generalities, "Lord bless this dear brother, blah, blah." You have to speak personally, directly to the devil or the demon, & rebuke him, with anger, almost with violence!--And command him to depart, because that's the only hope there is. You have to deal with the Devil in the kind of terms that he understands & it's pretty much force & forceful!

(See also No. K, 33, 66, 99, 168, 171, 287, 291, 303, 334A, 602, 603, 664, 666, 678, 710, 719, 720, 727, 764, 856, 857, 947, 952, 954, 980, 1008, 1023, 1041, 1090, 1379, 1399, 1408, 1409, 1420, 1432, 1436, 1438, 1442, 1443, 1444, 1448, 1452, 1454, 1459, 1464, 1467, 1527.)

44. MAT.8:16,17 When the even was come, they brought unto Him many that were possessed with devils; and He cast out the spirits with His Word, and healed all that were sick: That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses.

45. MAT.10:1 And when He had called unto Him His twelve disciples, He gave them power against unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness and all manner of disease.

46. MAT.12:29 Or else how can one enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man? and then he will spoil his house.

47. MAR.1:34 And He healed many that were sick of divers diseases, and cast out many devils; and suffered not the devils to speak, because they knew Him.

48. MAR.9:29 And He said unto them, This kind can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and fasting.

49. MAR.16:17,18 And these signs shall follow them that believe; In My Name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.

50. LUK.9:1 Then He called His twelve disciples together, and gave them power and authority over all devils, and to cure diseases.

51. LUK.10:17 And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through Thy Name.

52. LUK.11:24-26 When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest; and finding none, he saith, I will return unto my house whence I came out. And when he cometh, he findeth it

swept and garnished. Then goeth he, and taketh to him seven other spirits more wicked than himself; and they enter in, and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first.

53. ACT.5:16 There came also a multitude out of the cities round about unto Jerusalem, bringing sick folks, and them which were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed every one.

54. JAM.2:19 Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble.

55. 1JO.3:8b For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the Devil.

### 30. EYES

--{page 244}--



*The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light (Mt.6:22).*

1. Your eyes are the deepest most permanent evidence of the inner self.
2. The ear is a less trustworthy witness than the eye.
3. The eyes believe themselves, the ears believe other people.
4. The older you get the more far-sighted you get.
5. The eyes are the sexiest part about you, girls, because they're the windows of your spirited sexy personalities!
6. The eyes betray character, the eyes bespeak the true nature & attitude of the person, no matter what the other coverups or affectations may be.
7. The mouth may lie, but the eye virtually invariably tells the truth about what is really going on inside.
8. When you look into another's eyes, your spirits are drawn out of each other's eyes and meet and contact each other.
9. If the subject is ready, you can hypnotise them in a moment, in virtually one glance!
10. Your eyes consume one-fourth of your entire bodily strength.
11. Hypnotism has got to be spiritual, and it shows the eyes have a lot to do with the spirit.
12. The eyes have it! The eyes started it! The eyes did it and the eyes finished it!
13. Eyes are the windows of the soul.
14. It is often possible for someone to look into another's eyes and read the very thoughts and intents of their heart.
15. When looking earnestly and penetratingly into each other's eyes, a definite reaction takes place which you often can actually feel physically!
16. A mouth can be forced to smile and pretend friendliness, but watch out if the eyes do not smile too!
17. The eye is the most deeply sincere communicator of all our senses & reveals our innermost being whether we want it to or not!
18. Eyes are the greatest betrayers of the true emotions within.
19. The eye has an almost extra-sensory power of perception and can convey and receive messages silently and motionlessly like no other human organ.

(See also No. 304, 544, 1009.)

20. PSA.32:8 I will instruct thee and teach thee in the way which thou shalt go: I will guide thee with Mine eye.

21. PSA.33:18,19 Behold, the eye of the Lord is upon them that fear Him, upon them that hope in His mercy; To deliver their soul from death, and to keep them alive in famine.

22. PSA.34:15 The eyes of the Lord are upon the righteous.

23. PRO.4:25 Let thine eyes look right on and let thine eyelids look straight before thee.

24. PRO.15:3 The eyes of the Lord are in every place, beholding the evil and the good.

25. MAT.6:23 But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness!

### 31. FAITH & TRUST --{page 246}--



*But without faith it is impossible to please Him: for he that cometh to God must believe that He is, & that He is a rewarder of them that diligently seek Him. So then faith cometh by hearing, & hearing by the Word of God (Heb.11:6; Rom.10:17).*

1. The Lord loves faith! He loves you because you believe Him, just because He said so!
2. The Lord loves faith, it's a form of your love!
3. "Keep on believing, Jesus is here!  
Keeping on believing, there's nothing to fear!  
Keep on believing, this is the way,  
Faith in the night as well as the day!"
4. It's impossible to have faith unless you have the Word.
5. When you remind God of His Word, it shows you have faith in it. It's a positive declaration of your faith & your knowledge of the Word which pleases God.
6. The Bible's exact,  
So believe it as fact.  
For faith dies,  
When leavened with lies.
7. One of God's greatest interests is in getting you to believe in the unseeable!
8. Understanding is the reward of faith. Therefore seek not to understand that thou mayest believe, but believe that thou mayest understand.--Saint Augustine (354-430 A.D.)
9. He who loses money loses much; he who loses a friend loses more; but he who loses faith loses all.
10. Does your faith move mountains, or do mountains move your faith?
11. You get what you ask for, & what you have faith for!
12. Faith praises no matter what happens.
13. If it is difficult, we do it immediately; if it is impossible, it may take a little longer.
14. Life without faith is like a car without gas. It will go downhill, but makes very little uphill progress.
15. Faith carries the light of truth, which eliminates the shadow of doubt.
16. A man of courage is also full of faith.

17. Doubt sees the obstacles,  
Faith sees the way!  
Doubt sees the darkest night  
Faith sees the day!

Doubt dreads to take a step  
Faith soars on high!  
Doubt questions, "Who believes?"  
Faith answers, "I!"

18. Faith brightens our lives in a magical way  
Bringing quiet & peace to a troubled day.  
Faith is believing that after the rain  
Bright birds will be singing & sunshine again.  
Faith lets us know that the darkness of night  
Is followed each morning by dawn's glowing light.

19. Faith isn't faith unless it's all you're holding onto.

20. I would rather be rich in faith & have no money, than to be rich in money & have not faith!

21. You can do anything if you have the faith & the will to work, the vision, the courage & the initiative!

22. You can miss your golden opportunities of service by not having the faith you should to act quickly in time of opportunity.

23. Faith knows God will do it!--And He does!

24. A lot depends on your faith & your leading & what He tells you personally to do. That's what you have to do.

25. It's amazing what faith can accomplish if you're really in tune with the Lord & you've got not only faith but a lot of gumption & get-up-&-go!

26. With faith, believing is seeing! Faith works on blind obedience whether you ever get the answer or not!

27. Folks, why does you all have to hang your faith on somethin', when God hung da World on nothin'!

28. It only takes one little tiny key to open a big door.

29. Discouragement is the Devil's favourite weapon, & the only thing that defeats it is faith!

30. There is only a slight difference between keeping your chin up & sticking your neck out, but it's worth knowing.

31. My knees may tremble sometimes, but not my faith!

32. Bravery is courage in the face of fear.

33. We don't have a do-nothing religion--we have a do-anything religion.--Anything you have the faith for, you can get out & do it yourself! We have a do-it-yourself religion.

34. Faith looks back & says, "Christ died for me"

Above & cries, "He lives for me"

Forward & whispers, "He comes for me."

35. Faith is vision plus valour & vigour!

36. Faith stands, leaning on God's Word.

37. If your parents have the slightest bit of faith in the Lord as a grain of mustard seed, they're going to have some place in His Kingdom & you'll see'm again some day, & then they'll understand.

38. God likes the kind of faith that when there is a choice, a decision, or an alternative, the great faith still chooses God's best in spite of the other possibilities.

39. Fair weather faith is no faith at all!

40. It is impossible to have faith unless you have the Word, because your faith is something that is built by faithful study of God's Word.

41. There's no excuse for not having the faith for something! "Faith cometh by hearing the Word"! (Rom.10:17.)

42. The Lord really likes to keep you guessing, because that really tries your faith!

43. My answer to some people who have personal problems & want me to solve'm & tell'm what to do is just to say, "According to your faith be it done unto you!"

44. Turning on the faith in your heart is like turning on the light in a room!

45. Faith is like a cord which carries the power from the source to the instrument. To get the power from the source you have to have a line, & that's faith.

46. Love is God & the beginning of faith. Any form of love is a form of faith, & any form of faith is a form of love. God gives us faith for His Love.

47. Don't say "if" about anything. Faith is faith! You either know it or you don't know it. You either believe it or you don't.

48. It's faith that keeps you from worry, it's faith that keeps out fear!

49. If you've got the faith, it's just like you've got the title deed in your hand, "the substance of things hoped for," the title deed to things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen! (Heb.11:1)

50. Faith is just doing what God tells you to do today & believing Him for tomorrow.

51. Salvation has always been by faith in Christ, with or without the law. Even though those who lived before Christ were looking forward to Him & we look backwards, Salvation, grace, faith & the promises are always the same.

52. If others have no faith in you, it's hard for you to have faith in yourself & sometimes even in the Lord!

53. When you feel no one else loves or trusts you, you think maybe God doesn't either. But if someone shows you the love & faith of God, it inspires you to respond in a new effort to succeed!

54. Faith is a kind of drawing power.--It is you drawing power from God.

55. You cannot have the courage to obey unless you have faith!

56. Although you might have all of the necessary tools to help you in your ministry, if you don't have crazy faith, you'll miss the key & the blessing.

57. When the little widow cast in all her living, she must have had a lot of faith & expected God to give it back, & I'm sure He did!

58. I believe in putting God on the spot & asking Him to do a miracle!

59. It's not that the brave are not afraid, it's just that they have the courage & the faith to go ahead! If they were not afraid, they wouldn't have to be brave!

60. Faith is not nothing! "Faith is the substance of things hoped for." It's knowing God & that God is, & that God is going to take care of you somehow if you obey Him & do His Will & His Work.

61. If the Word & reading the Word doesn't give you the faith for it, it is because you have rejected the Word & therefore you refuse to receive it or obey it!

62. Whenever you're in doubt, faith it!

63. You cannot stop the man of faith!

64. When in doubt don't!--But when in faith do!

65. Real faith is not a passive thing, it acts out what it believes!

66. God doesn't always give me the faith for your job--He gives me the faith for my job!

67. Trying to have faith is a work of the flesh. Accepting faith through His Word is a work of God's grace.

68. The very Words of God are mingled with supernatural power to be released by the touch of your faith.

69. The greatest love is faith. If you don't have faith, your love will be impossible.

70. Faith is not surprised at the answer. Faith expected it to happen.

71. Faith sees crowns growing on the top of crosses.

72. Faith, mighty faith,

The promise sees,

And looks to God alone,

Laughs at impossibilities,

And cries, "It shall be done!"

73. You'll never make it through the big doors without the tiny keys!

74. He didn't know it couldn't be done, so he went ahead & did it!

75. "Impossible" is a word only to be found in the dictionary of fools.

76. Faith alone saves, but the faith that saves is never alone.

77. Faith honours God, God honours faith.

78. God has confined Himself & His operations to our faith & our prayers.

79. When faith goes to market it always takes a basket.

80. The believer does not believe because he feels; he feels because he believes.

81. He started to sing

As he tackled the thing

That they said couldn't be done,

And he did it.

82. Faith must be dead to doubt, dumb to discouragement, & blind to impossibilities.

83. Faith is the pencil of the soul that sketches Heavenly things.

84. If your mind can conceive it,  
And your heart can believe it,  
Then you can achieve it.
85. Faith hears the inaudible, sees the invisible, believes the incredible, & receives the impossible.
86. He who expects nothing shall never be disappointed.
87. Three men were walking on a wall--Feeling, Faith & Fact. Feeling took an awful fall & Faith was taken aback. Faith was so close to Feeling that he then fell down too, but Fact remained & pulled Faith up, & Faith brought Feeling too. (Fact is the Word!)
88. Faith really shows that you have love.
89. "To the pure all things are pure," but to those who are impure, everything is impure!
90. Faith that cannot stand a test is no faith at all.
91. Hope looks over the fence into tomorrow, faith into the past & counts it done.
92. Living by faith means putting faith into action & feet to your prayers.
93. There is no limit to the possibilities for a man with the imagination of faith!
94. If you are weak in faith it's because you're weak in the Word.
95. Almost anything in the World can cause somebody to stumble if they're weak enough!
96. If you've got real faith you'll keep on going for God even if it kills you!--And it will kill you, because it means death to self & pride & all that damned self-righteousness as you die daily.
97. Fear is the opposite of faith, & without faith you can have no power!
98. I was just crazy enough to believe God!
99. Faith is idle when circumstances are bright; only when they are adverse is one's faith in God exercised. Faith, like a muscle, grows strong & supple with exercise.
100. Faith is not only believing that God can, but that God will!
101. He likes you to go ahead on what some people call "blind" faith--actually it's seeing faith, because you're seeing God!
102. Man cannot discover new oceans unless he has the courage to lose sight of the shore.
103. Be sure you're Spirit-led, then go ahead!
104. To the Israelites, Goliath was "too big to hit," but to little David, he was "too big to miss."
105. Any one of you can do anything you have got the burden & the faith for!--You can get out & do it yourself!
106. Just be sure you're right, then go ahead!
107. I have constantly declared a new Declaration of Independence, trying to set you at liberty, to be led of the Spirit & your own initiative to explode according to your own faith!
108. You can't always wait until God does it, a lot of times you just have to step out by faith even if you don't see the ground you're going to put your foot on! He's able to stick the ground underneath your foot before it lands!--A real step of faith!
109. If we read the Word emphatically, our faith grows automatically.
110. A lot of people don't have faith for certain things because they don't want to have faith for them, & therefore they reject the Word of God which vindicates it.
111. Lose everything but your faith in God & you'll lose nothing; Lose your faith in God & you'll lose everything!
112. Faith is insane! There's no sanity to faith. Faith is all completely contrary to natural expectation & natural conditions!
113. Faith must know nothing but success. To the believer, desire plus faith minus doubt equals the answer.
114. Don't work it up!--Pray it down!
115. "As a man thinketh in his heart, so is he."--And if he thinks so, then it has that influence or that power over him.
116. Doubt, fear, discouragement & murmuring kill! Faith, trust, courage & praising the Lord make alive!
117. I can trust God with you, but not for you!
118. Trust in the Lord with all thine heart; & lean not unto thine own understanding. In all thy ways acknowledge Him, & He shall direct thy paths. (Pro.3:5,6)
119. The fear of Man bringeth a snare: but whoso putteth his trust in the Lord shall be safe.--(Pro.29:25)
120. Today is the tomorrow you worried about yesterday.
121. You can't lean on Man's ideas & wisdom.--You have to lean on the Lord & His leadings!
122. Worry is interest paid on trouble, before it falls due.
123. He who fears calamities, suffers them twice over.

124. Worry does not empty tomorrow of its trouble. It does empty today of its strength.  
125. To carry care to bed, is to sleep with a pack on your back.  
126. Keep your face to the sunshine & you cannot see the shadow.  
127. So many take their burdens to the Lord & lay them at His feet & then pick them right back up again & walk off with them!  
128. Let go & let God!  
129. It is His Will that I should cast  
My care on Him each day,  
He also bids me not to cast  
My confidence away.
- But oh! How foolishly I act  
When taken unaware  
I cast away my confidence  
And carry all my care!
130. Don't be so worried about the future that you can't enjoy today.  
131. Trust is never tension, true faith is complete relaxation.  
132. Just roll your burden over on Jesus & go to sleep.--And let Him stay up all night!  
133. Sleep is counted in God's Word as a blessing, an act of trust & faith in God that He will help you dwell in safety & not worry, fret or fear.  
134. The man joked, "Don't tell me that worry doesn't do any good. I know better. The things I worry about don't happen."  
135. Forget about yesterday, except to thank the Lord for it. Don't worry about tomorrow--it'll take care of itself!  
136. Everything's under control, either yours or the Lord's or both.  
137. We don't know what the Future holds, but we know Who holds the Future!  
138. You can't depend upon anything but God & His Word!  
139. You can't change the past, & the future will take care of itself!  
140. If you're obeying Him, you can trust Him! If you're trusting Him, you can obey Him!  
141. God wants you to trust Him & believe first of all, & then you'll see the answer!  
142. When you're trusting, you're not heard to fret! When you're fretting, you're not trusting yet!  
143. "Thou dost not have to see nor understand all things, neither dost thou have to know the mind of thy father nor to understand all the Words of David, for all of these things which I have ordained are already in My hands & are finished."  
144. If there's anything I know, it is that God has never failed, & I've always been glad I trusted Him.  
145. You don't have to know the whole future. All you have to know is right now.  
146. There's no need to worry about things in advance, because when the time comes the Lord tells you exactly what to do.  
147. Don't worry one minute in advance about anything, just flow with it as the Spirit leads you.  
148. Forget the things that are behind, & fret not thyself for tomorrow, are two of God's cardinal rules for eliminating most of your worries!  
149. The less self-confidence you have, the more Christ-confidence you'll have!  
150. You must continually remind yourself that everything in your life comes from God!--All past & present experiences, all relationships with others in which you find yourself, & all circumstances are straight from His hand & are part of His divine plan. If you know that He has sent them, it makes them easier to accept.  
151. If you lean mostly on the means & the man instead of the Maker, you'll soon be in a mess!  
152. If you can trust Him with your life, why can't you trust Him with your death?  
153. Welcome, New Year, which shall bring,  
Fresh blessings from our Lord & King.  
154. You can't change the past, but you can ruin a perfectly good present by worrying about the future.  
155. Some will hate thee, some will love thee,  
Some will flatter, some will slight,  
Turn from Man & look above thee,  
Trust in God & do the right.  
156. Never doubt for a moment  
That God will reply,



He has to, He wants to,  
Trust Him, He can't lie!

Just keep on trusting  
When things go all wrong  
And you'll soon shout the victory  
And sing His new song.

157. Trust, in the dark, brings Triumph at dawn.

158. Worry is the interest paid by those who borrow trouble.

159. Work won't kill but worry will.

160. An ulcer is what you get mountain-climbing over molehills.

161. All I have seen teaches me to trust the Creator for all I have not seen.

162. You have no guarantee but God.

163. Depend on the Spirit, because everything does depend on His Spirit to make it what He wants it to be!

164. When the time comes, the Lord will take care of us as He sees fit: He'll either take care of us or take us, one or the other!

165. We ask Thee to give us a New Year now, even better than the last one, Lord, in whatever way You know is best.

166. At the end of your rope?--Let go & let God!--Just can't cope?--Take God's dope!

167. Time solves so many problems--a minute, a few hours, a few days, & you'll find that God has solved things without your help! Give God a chance! Give Him time! Wait on the Lord.

168. Disappointment!--His-appointment!

Change one letter, then I see  
That the thwarting of my purpose  
Is God's better choice for me!

169. You can't say to someone, "I love you, but I don't trust you."

170. Hope never quits, faith never stops trusting & love never fails.

171. Fret not thyself for tomorrow.

172. I came to the man at the gate of the year  
And asked of him a light that I might see my way.

But he said unto me, "Put your hand in the hand of God

And He shall be unto thee a light

And better than a known way."

173. If you're down in the dumps, then dump it on Jesus!

174. Are you on the spot? Turn around & put God on the spot.

175. God gives you power for the hour, grace for the trial--at the hour & when it comes--not before!

176. Never put a question mark where God has put a period.

177. Don't worry!--It's God's Word! It doesn't matter whether you understand it or not, as long as you eat it up. You have to have food even if you don't understand. Does a baby understand the chemical constituency in vitamins & the technical scientific constitution of every bite of food that she eats? No, she's just hungry, she gobbles it up & it makes her grow.

178. The more we depend on Him each day,  
The more we'll have in every way!

179. Forget trying to explain it! Quit trying to understand it! Stop trying to diagnose it! Cease analysing it! You're just making hard work out of all the fun! Just turn it on & enjoy it!

180. There have been mountain peaks of decision with nothing but thin air between me & the next peak & I had to take that step alone & trust God for the consequences, with no guarantee but God, no warranty but His Word, all other conditions being against it, all natural circumstances being opposed to it, the waves & the winds fighting against it & all I had was the Hand of God. But He never let me down even if He had to pick me up by that hand & lift me across to that next mountain peak without any visible natural normal logical reasonable means of help.

181. Faith is a definite transaction, at a definite time, forever afterwards counted done.

182. Hope isn't faith. Hope is putting a thing in the future; faith is putting it in the past.

183. People who live within God's Golden Gates of Faith can survive anything, even death!--And can still say like Job, "Though He slay me, yet will I trust Him!"

184. Through His Word, God can blow upon the embers of your faith, bringing it back to life again, when you're down & discouraged & have almost given up hope.

185. There are those of trusting child-like faith who are daily doing things that doubting intellectuals say can't be done!

186. Life's yesterdays have passed forever beyond our reach. God has them in His keeping, leave them there.

187. I never look at the cheque, I look at the man! If I can trust the man, I take his cheque!

188. Look at the Maker of the promises, then there can be no question as to the validity of the promises.

189. If you'll trust Him, He can make melody out of one string!--Even if the others are all gone.

190. You can have faith for almost anything if you take it a day at a time!

191. These are the keys that unlock the treasure vaults of Heaven: Meeting the conditions attached to each promise.

192. Oh, how many silly children has the Father in His family, crying year in & year out, "Give, give!" & the Father is all the while saying, "Take, take, my child!"

193. Faith will not make the sun rise sooner, but it will make the night seem shorter.

194. We are not travelling by schedule but by faith.

195. The beginning of anxiety is the end of faith. The beginning of faith is the end of anxiety.

196. A sceptical young man went home from a theological school to visit his devout grandmother.

"Grandmother," he said, "you know that the Bible you say you believe in, was written in Hebrew & Greek. It had to be translated by great scholars into our language. How do you know those who translated it got it right?"

"Ah, Jamie, lad," she answered, "Never mind the great men; I have translated a few of them promises myself."

197. "Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he allows." (Rom.14:22)--It'll make you happier if you're not doing things which you feel condemned about, about which you feel guilty or have a guilt complex, things that you're not sure are right. In fact, if you're afraid maybe it's wrong, then it is wrong for you.

198. It pays to trust the Lord, amen?--Even to obey when it looks like it's crazy or it's going to hurt. It might hurt a little while, but you always come out better in the end if you obey the Lord.

199. Faith & prayer are the coinage of Heaven.

200. God has not only promised us supernatural power, but He's promised it for now & He has promised it for ages, & it's been done before! It can not only be done in the Tribulation, but it can be done now if you have the faith for it & you need it!

201. If you pray & the miracle doesn't immediately happen, you shouldn't get discouraged. Because if it's the Lord's will, you do have that power & it will happen in the Lord's time.

202. If the Lord doesn't show you what's going to happen, it doesn't mean you're supposed to stop working. Sometimes it means keep right on doing what you're doing, keep busy, keep working--but wait! Don't make any drastic moves or changes, except perhaps some little ones in order that when it happens you won't be caught short or unprepared.

203. Sometimes a wrong decision on the part of your Home Shepherd may be the Lord testing you to see how you'll react.--Whether you'll get all upset or whether you'll just trust the Lord to take care of it somehow, knowing that He won't let anything drastic happen to His Work that He's more concerned about than you are. Maybe He's trying to see if you really believe Romans 8:28.

204. When you worry about things that you're afraid are going to happen, but haven't happened & may never happen, you're not even giving God a chance to work it out. Why don't you just leave things in the Lord's hands & let Him work it out?

205. Faith is to believe what we do not see; & the reward of this faith to see what we believe.

(See also No. M, T, 73, 87, 238, 313, 317B, 594, 599, 604, 700, 708, 717, 731, 778, 860, 900, 947, 1005, 1009, 1268, 1281, 1565, 1654.)

206. .27:13 I had fainted, unless I had believed to see the goodness of the Lord in the land of the living.

207. .31:24 Be of good courage, and He shall strengthen your heart, all ye that hope in the Lord.

208. .32:10 Many sorrows shall be to the wicked: but he that trusteth in the Lord, mercy shall compass him about.

209. .37:3-5 Trust in the Lord, and do good; so shalt thou dwell in the land, and verily thou shalt be fed. Delight thyself also in the Lord; and He shall give thee the desires of thine heart. Commit thy way unto the Lord; trust also in Him; and He shall bring it to pass.

210. **PSA.125:1 They that trust in the Lord shall be as Mount Zion, which cannot be removed, but abideth for ever.**

211. PRO.3:5,6 Trust in the Lord with all thine heart; and lean not unto thine own understanding. In all thy ways acknowledge Him, and He shall direct thy paths.

212. PRO.16:20b Whoso trusteth in the Lord, happy is he.

213. .30:5b He is a shield unto them that put their trust in Him.

214. .26:4. Trust ye in the LORD for ever: for in the LORD JEHOVAH is everlasting strength.

215. .41:18b I will make the wilderness a pool of water, and the dry land springs of water.

216. .43:19b I will even make a way in the wilderness, and rivers in the desert.

217. JER.17:7 Blessed is the man that trusteth in the LORD, and whose hope the LORD is.

218. .28:26 And they shall dwell safely therein, and shall build houses, and plant vineyards; yea, they shall dwell with confidence, when I have executed judgments upon all those that despise them round about them; and they shall know that I am the LORD their God.

219. MAT.9:29b According to your faith be it unto you.

220. .14:31 And immediately Jesus stretched forth his hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?

221. .15:28 Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt.

222. .17:20b If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you.

223. 9:23,24 Jesus said unto him, If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth. And straightway the father of the child cried out, and said with tears, Lord, I believe; help thou mine unbelief.

224. MARK 11:22,23 And Jesus answering saith unto them, Have faith in God. For verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith.

225. LUK.1:37 For with God nothing shall be impossible.

226. .1:45 And blessed is she that believed: for there shall be a performance of those things which were told her from the Lord.

227. .5:5 And Simon answering said unto him, Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheless at thy Word I will let down the net.

228. .7:9 When Jesus heard these things, He marvelled at him, and turned him about, and said unto the people that followed Him, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.

229. .7:50 And He said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.

230. LUK.18:27 And He said, The things which are impossible with men are possible with God.

231. .11:21,22,27 Then said Martha unto Jesus, Lord, if Thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. But I know, that even now, whatsoever Thou wilt ask of God, God will give it Thee. I believe that Thou art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into the world.

232. .20:27b Be not faithless, but believing.

233. .20:29 Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen Me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.

234. .27:25 I believe God, that it shall be even as it was told me.

235. .1:8 First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole World.

236. .1:17 For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith.

237. ROM.3:3 For what if some did not believe? Shall their unbelief make the faith of God without effect?

238. .4:14,15 For if they which are of the law be heirs, faith is made void, and the promise made of none effect: Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression.

239. .4:18. Who against hope believed in hope, that he [Abraham] might become the father of many nations, according to that which was spoken, So shall thy seed be.

240. .4:20,21 He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God; And being fully persuaded that, what He had promised, He was able also to perform.

241. .5:1 Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ.

242. .8:24,25 For we are saved by hope: but hope that is seen is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for? But if we hope for that we see not, then do we with patience wait for it.

243. .10:17 So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the Word of God.

244. ROM.14:5,14 One man esteemeth one day above another: another esteemeth every day alike.

Let every man be fully persuaded in his own mind. To him that esteemeth any thing to be unclean, to him it is unclean.

245. .14:22,23 Hast thou faith? Have it to thyself before God. Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth. And he that doubteth is damned if he eat, because he eateth not of faith: for whatsoever is not of faith is sin.

246. CO.2:5 That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.

247. CO.12:9 To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit.

248. CO.1:24 Not for that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy: for by faith ye stand.

249. 2CO.5:7 For we walk by faith, not by sight.

250. .5:6 For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision; but faith which worketh by love.

251. TI.4:10 For therefore we both labour and suffer reproach, because we trust in the Living God, Who is the Saviour of all men, specially of those that believe.

252. TI.2:13 If we believe not, yet He abideth faithful: He cannot deny Himself.

253. HEB.6:19 Which hope we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and steadfast, and which entereth into that within the veil.

254. HEB.10:23 Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering; (for He is faithful that promised;).

255. HEB.10:38 Now the just shall live by faith: but if any man draw back, My soul shall have no pleasure in him.

256. .2:26 For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

257. JO.5:4 For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the World, even our faith.

(See also HEB.11.)



*A faithful man shall abound with blessings. (Pro.28:20)*

1. Faithful people are people who are full of faith.
2. God gives us the basics  
Be they body, brain or brawn,  
Then looks at how we use'em  
And how we're adding on!
3. A little thing is a little thing, but faithfulness in little things is a great thing.
4. Everyone who got where he is had to begin where he was.
5. How can somebody steal your crown?--They can't unless you despise it & leave it to somebody else. If you're unfaithful in your task, God has to replace you.
6. Time is the greatest & surest tester.
7. For they that bear the cross shall wear the crown.
8. If you'll be faithful in delivering God's Words to the World, He will be faithful in caring for you!
9. The more the Lord finds He can trust you with, the more He gives you.
10. It's better to be faithful in a few things than be unfaithful in a whole lot of them!
11. God can't trust some people with health or wealth or popularity or sexual freedom because they're not good stewards of it.--They're unfaithful.
12. Change the World, day by day  
You can do it if you pray.  
Change the World, heart by heart  
You can do it if you'll start.
13. You take care of God's work, & He'll take care you.
14. God doesn't judge you by how successful you are, but by how faithful you are.
15. He that is unfaithful in the least will also be unfaithful in the most.
16. To be "found faithful" means loyal, believing & obedient!
17. The Kingdom of God on Earth will be a perfect kingdom, a perfect government, with perfect officers--you! You're going to run it! You want to be a policeman? You want to be a governor? You want to be a judge?--All kinds of jobs are wide open! You want to be a king? God's Word says He's the King of kings so you can be one of His kings, you can rule a city or a whole country or a whole continent, whatever you are capable of, according to the training you've already had & according to your faithfulness & your loyalty to God while you were here! He says, "He that is faithful in a few things, I will make Him ruler over many!" You want to run the World? Well, be faithful unto death & He'll give you a crown & you'll be a king, the Bible says so.
18. Help us, Lord, to remember that the most important thing in our service for Thee, the most important thing in the World for us, the most important thing to Thee, is our faithfulness.
19. This is no game we're playing! We are in a War for the Lord & His Family & His World, & once you have done a good job where you are & learned how to serve the Lord faithfully & loyally & obediently & willingly & cheerfully, He is going to give you something more & bigger to do.
20. You should never stop thinking!--And never stop praying for a minute! We can't afford to have soldiers in this army that don't think & don't know what they're doing & can't remember a command from one moment to the next!

(See also No.395, 551, 565, 639, 679, 697, 702, 703, 835, 952-1, 960, 962, 974, 1028, 1330, 1372, 1373, 1380.)

21. .6:17 Ye shall diligently keep the commandments of the Lord your God, and His testimonies, and His statutes, which He hath commanded thee.

22. .6:3 And I sent messengers unto them, saying, I am doing a great work, so that I cannot come down: why should the work cease, whilst I leave it, and come down to you?

23. .31:23 O love the Lord, all ye His saints: for the Lord preserveth the faithful, and plentifully rewardeth the proud doer.

24. **PRO.4:23** Keep thy heart with all diligence; for out of it are the issues of life.

25. .12:24 The hand of the diligent shall bear rule: But the slothful shall be under tribute.

26. **MAT.24:45-47** **Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season? Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods.**

27. .25:23 His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou has been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy Lord.

28. .16:10-12 He that is faithful in that which is least is faithful also in much: and he that is unjust in the least is unjust also in much. If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches? And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another man's, who shall give you that which is your own?

29. **TIM.4:14** Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery.

(See also **MAT.24:42-51**; **MAT.25:14-23**.)



*God setteth the solitary in families. He bringeth out those which are bound with chains (Ps.68:6).*

1. We belong to no man but Jesus, but we can become anything to all men. We have no creed but love, and we can adapt ourselves to all creeds.
2. Keep it small! Keep it pure! Keep it strong!
3. We spearheaded the Jesus movement--and without us there wouldn't have been one!
4. We've hitched our wagon to a Star, the bright & Morning Star, the Star of David, Jesus Christ Himself, & we're really going places faster than the speed of light into realms beyond natural human ken!
5. We are the busy bouncy buxom bride bursting bearing babies to our Bridegroom!
6. We're getting closer & closer all the time to really being well-knit & well-prepared, like an army constantly being trained for the final real test.
7. We are Christian mystics--"mystic" meaning that you believe in the supernatural & the miraculous & you practice it in your religion--& we do!
8. We are a strictly nonprofit religious, educational & philanthropic charitable Family bent only on improving the spirits, health, living conditions, education, social welfare, security, happiness & future of all mankind!
9. We're just as diametrically opposed to the false religious systems that control the World as the Communists are to the Capitalists!
10. The major difference between us and the churches, is that we are not mere members--we're fulltime fighters!
11. My family, my family, I know it's right, my family!
12. We are all married to each other in His Love!
13. We can be God's children in any country under any Government with any religion! We are the most ecumenical body on the face of the earth!
14. Movement is a sign of life. That's why they call us a movement!
15. I couldn't change society, I couldn't change the rules, so I created a whole new society where I could have my own rules!--God's rules!
16. Our Family is a demonstration that has proven that you can take people completely raw, straight out of the World with no religious background & make them into real genuine 100% Christians & workers for the Lord!
17. The Lord is reviving His original message through us and others in these last days.
18. We are a Government!
19. We're probably one of the most important tools of the Lord there is today to try to wake people up & keep them awake & keep the sheep fed & keep the goats out & get out the message, so naturally the Devil is going to fight us!
20. If you like my religion, you're welcome to it! I feel like the Lord has led us to adopt the best that each of these other religions had to offer!
21. There's no difference between blacks & whites in the Family, in Jesus, but there's a hell of a lot of difference outside!
22. Our Family: When right, to be kept right; when wrong, to be put right.
23. We are all soul brothers--a Nation all of one blood, the blood of Jesus--the Kingdom of God!
24. They say not everybody can be a preacher or a teacher or a missionary--except in our Family, of course! We're all teachers, preachers & missionaries!

25. We've got a do-it-yourself religion! We don't need any backing except faith & trusting God! That's why we're doing so much, we can do anything through faith in Him!

26. We are the living church of the living God, not the white-washed sepulchres of the dead!

27. We belong to the greatest Family in the World, the Family of God's love!

28. God's children were intended to be a voluntary family fellowship, cooperating together in love, each of his own free will.

29. We all need to belong to something, to feel like we're a part of something, to be a team, to belong to each other, to be a Family, to be related, to have fellowship, communication, communion & sharing all things.

30. There's no unimportant job in the Family!

31. The whole structure of any house or any government or organisation or religious movement rests on these two key central pillars: The will of God & the will of man. If they get the least bit out of line with each other & begin to be at cross-purposes with each other, watch out!

32. Lo, the Rebellion of David echoes round the World!

33. The Lord has brought His people step by step out of bondage!--We are the first truly free church--totally free spiritually, physically, sexually, in every way, in love!

34. We are God's last Church, the last step in God's progress toward total freedom!--The last chance to prove that the ultimate Church can be trusted with total freedom in this last generation!

35. That's what God is doing with us right now throughout the World: Infiltrating the whole World...so that He will have a ready-made organisation for running the World when Jesus comes!

36. God is in the business of breaking up selfish little private Worldly families, to make of their yielded broken pieces a larger unit--One Family!

37. We are the most powerful force of God on Earth! For we are the voice of God & bear His truth, & Satan hateth it but he cannot help it.

38. As the new babe must believe & trust the loved ones around him for his every need as he grows, until he is able to care for himself & then others, so must the newborn Christian trust his spiritual family of loved ones & their leadership in the Family of God.

39. Never in the World's history has so much been accomplished for the Lord by so few!

40. The best eyes a missionary movement can have: Evangelise, organise, supervise & be wise!

41. Our Homes offer infinite variety & adequate opportunity, so there should be no problem in finding something for everyone!

42. Belonging to this Family is a privilege & a blessing & an honour!--And anybody that dishonours this Family doesn't deserve to be a Member!

43. We're a monstrous Movement on the move.

44. A Nation has exploded in a day & the fall-out is saturating the World with the Gospel!

45. Our is one of the largest folds, for we've won many millions of souls!

46. We have a religion you can live anywhere!

47. No great movement, no great war, no great denomination, no great revolution, no great business, no great anything that has ever amounted to anything in this world was without some leadership & some organization. But the most successful of those were those who allowed the greatest liberty, difference of opinion, individual initiative & ingenuity & indigenuity--who put the people on their own as much as possible.

48. We belong to the Kingdom of Heaven that's already on Earth in our hearts & our Homes & our families & our children!

49. We believe in a sort of democratic form of dictatorship but it's still dictatorship.--Of the Holy Ghost!

50. He has raised up His new church, a young Bride, bursting with energy & a passionate love for her Bridegroom!--An alive, vibrant, warm, living, beautiful body that responds quickly, fervently & ardently to His slightest touch & who is wildly ravished with His love! she is exploding with the orgasms of His Spirit & strong to conceive many children unto Him from being fulfilled with the seed of His Word!

51. "And not one thing shall fail from all of these good promises that I have given unto My Servant David! If thou shalt believe & take hold & grasp upon them & hold them unto thy bosom, then indeed shalt thou be the sons of David & be called his mighty men, & it shall be written & told of thee the mighty works that thou shalt do as the children of God & the seed of David, & men everywhere shall speak of thee & tell of that which thou hast done."

52. "If thou shalt obey in all of the least of these things which I have given thee, & not fail in all of those things I have revealed to My Servant David, then shall I also fulfill unto thee all those things which I have foretold of thee & give thee all I have promised, according to My Word; & then shalt thou also be that which I have spoken of in My Word according to My Prophet David--according to the Words of the mouth that has spoken & the words



that are told, & according to the Words of My Mouth which have become a testimony before them & have become a witness against them. For that is My Word & My promise unto thee."

53. "For these are indeed My people & they shall be called the Children of God! Many shall come unto them, & say, Teach us the ways of the Lord, for we would inquire of thee. And they shall cast their idols of gold & silver unto the moles & bats within the clefts & holes of the rocks! For none shall stand in those days, but the words of My servants, the words of My prophets, & the words of those that I have given unto David. For they shall indeed be a great people, & a great Nation upon the face of the Earth, & shall overthrow all other nations. For this is My Kingdom, & the king of whom I spake--the Kingdom that I have prepared for Myself through the work & children of My Servant David! Hear ye him!"

54. "These indeed are the Words that are spoken unto David! How much did Moses & the prophets write unto thee! For they would have seen this day. But thou art blessed above all peoples on the face of the Earth, & thou art blessed above all nations of all times, for all of these things are fulfilled in thee, O My Beloved!"

55. "For behold, He speaketh unto thee words of love & comfort that He may life up thy heart--that He may feed thy soul--that He may encourage thy spirit--that thou mayest serve Him continually both by day & by night!--For thou art of the Children of David."

56. "For thou art indeed they of whom I spake. Thou art indeed the last Nation upon the face of the Earth, & thou art indeed My king whom the Lord thy God hath chosen to dwell in--the Lord thy God hath been pleased to dwell in thee! They that put their trust in Him shall never be put to shame. Therefore, I am not ashamed to be called their God, for thou art a chosen people, & thou shalt bring great honour unto My name. Thou shalt cause many nations to turn unto the Lord thy God!--Even the hearts of their fathers unto thee--& their children that do worship Me shall drink & be satisfied!"

57. "Even so shall it be done unto thy Servant David according to all I have spoken, & thou shalt share with him the Kingdom, & sit with him upon thrones judging all the tribes of Israel!"

58. "None have the power & the spirit of the Children of David! Listen to the Voice of David! None shall stop us, for God is with us!...How the Lord hath favoured these people with the presence of His Children--because He loves them!... Nothing can equal the power of God in His Children!...All these things come to pass because I the Lord have spoken it & brought it to pass through My Servant David, for I the Lord have spoken it! None of these things could take place if I, by My Spirit, had not empowered My Servant David!...Their line is gone out through all the World, & their words to the ends of the Earth! So it is with the Voice of the Children of God!...For I have spoken it by My Voice! Amen!"

59. "All the forces of both Heaven & Hell are in favour of David & his children! Nothing can stand against them!"

60. "Great & mighty kings shall seek unto thee, because they know the favour of the Lord is on thy side, for I shall highly exalt thee, for thou art My People, for thou hast sought a City, an Heavenly place! Thou hast sought a country that shall not be here on the Earth but Eternal in the Heavenlies, & therefore, thou shalt have the favour of thy Lord & thy King & thou shalt have My favour, for, behold!--The Lord is with thee & thy Saviour Jesus Christ is upon thy right hand & thou shalt not fail. It is impossible!"

61. "And all these I have brought unto thee--advocates, judges, & kings! And powers & dominions shall be given unto thee through all the Earth, for thou art indeed My Children & I am thy God!"

62. "For thou art the peacemakers of this Earth, & except they recognise Me as their King & their Prince of Peace, they shall have no peace! For I am the Lord thy God & thou art the Children of God!"

63. "So shall the followers of David be numbered by not thousands or tens of thousands, but by the millions, as those that follow the Lord their God! And the followers of Saul are as nothing but fleas that thou shalt crush if it be thy will! For I shall dispose of those that stand up against thee & thy power, because I am with thee & thou art My Children & I do love thee with an everlasting love!"

64. "Thou shalt hear him & heed him & take heed unto the word of My Servant David & king of kings I have given thee, that thou shalt honour & highly exalt & listen to him, that thou shalt be honoured of the Lord thy God! Many are the wonderful works of the Lord!"

65. "Thou dost take over the nations! Kings do bow down before thee & I do open the doors of all the nations of the Earth, for they cannot resist the power of thy spirit nor can they refuse the love of thy heart. For they shall yield unto thee every one & open their hearts unto thee & open their hands unto thy needs, & their mouths shall speak forth the wonderful Words of the Lord. For they shall receive thee unto their bosoms as the little lambs of My fold, & they shall nourish thee, & kings shall serve thee & queens shall minister unto thee, & thou shalt suck at the paps of the Most High!"

66. "And yea also shalt thou suffer for Me! Yea, also shalt thou be crucified for My Name's Sake! Yea, also shalt thou be slain all the day long. Also shalt thou be slain for the words of David & smitten for all that I have spoken through him!"

67. "In the end shalt thou triumph over them, for they shall be dust & ashes under thy feet, for thou shalt reign victorious over all the Earth & thou shalt forget the hinder years & remember only that which is called the glorious, golden Age that I given thee--the Age of all ages!"

68. "Thou dost hearken unto the words of David that thou mayst live! Blessed are all they that do follow him! Blessed are ye, the sheep of My pasture! Blessed are ye, the lambs of My fold! Blessed are ye indeed, the little ones of My bosom, even as these that do gather unto David, & these that do rest in his love, & these that are blessed by his arms!"

69. "For they cry unto Me & call upon Me in their distress & their hunger, for they are as sheep having no shepherd & they are scattered abroad throughout all the Earth."

70. "Therefore, I have given them a shepherd that shall guide them into the fold of the True Shepherd."

71. "My Voice shall they heed through My Servant David! For My sheep hear My Voice & know My Voice, & they follow Me, & the Voice of the stranger they will not follow."

72. "Ye indeed are they upon whom the ends of the Earth are come. Ye indeed are they of whom all the prophets have spoken. Ye are My witnesses of the Last Day of whom I have spoken throughout the Ages by all My holy prophets. Ye indeed are they that shall be strong & that shall do great & mighty exploits & shall instruct many in the ways of Truth & shall open the Book by My mighty power by the wisdom of My Spirit & shall reveal these secrets unto others."

73. "The rebellion of David is exploding throughout all the Earth! The armies of David that I have promised to march abroad, the things that I have promised unto David I have fulfilled & every word shall be fulfilled & every thing that I have promised shall be done!"

74. "Listen to the words that I have spoken unto thy Father David. Heed that which I have said unto thee through his mouth. This Royal Family that God hath chosen from out of this horrible chaos is going to rule the World! Know ye not that ye shall judge angels?"

75. "Haste therefore to perform the Will of My King David, that thou shalt not be slothful, but be diligent in business & depart, & carry abroad the wisdom of his people! For this is the Nation wherein I have desired to place My name, & this is the people I spake of through all the Prophets of all times!"

76. "All the World is burgeoning with the stories of the Children of David!"

77. "These are the fruits of their father David. This is the glory of the reward of your father, that he may enjoy the sight of his children. This is the reward of thy father, this is the joy of thy father, this is the fruit of the Words of thy father. These are they which I have called unto the Family of your father that they may shine in My glory for Me!"

78. "Behold, how I did break the heart of David & cause his tears to flow for thee, My little lambs."

79. "They that follow Me & hear My voice, & they that savour My fragrance & see those things which I show them, they are the Children of David!"

80. "For thou art My People for this Last Day, & I am with thee, even as I was with My servant Moses to separate My children from Egypt & to lead them into the Promised Land--My Kingdom which is not of this earth--but is heavenly!"

81. "Oh, behold how they watch with joy the words & the deeds of thy father & his children!"

82. The Lord has brought you into something that is glorious & wonderful & really a revival of the marvels of the past, even more so! He has poured out such a stream of the Word! I am astonished, I'm amazed, I'm awed at how much God has given this generation! He has given you more than any other generation!--Perhaps because you've suffered more & some are going to suffer more, so He's really loving you & trying to encourage you!

83. My Country is trying to save the World, stop the wars, relieve the poor, feed the hungry, heal the sick & liberate the captives that are bound by countries like America!

84. I don't know of so small a group in all World history that has done so much!

85. Indigenuity means self-supporting, self-governing & self-propagating!

86. In our Family, becoming one should work both ways!

87. We have the recognition of the Kingdom of God & that's the only Government we need to be recognised by.

88. Although this is the Army of Lord, & we observe strict discipline, it is voluntarily, willing-spiritedly, & cheerfully given, not forced labour or slavery. The Lord loveth a cheerful giver! (2Co.9:7.)

89. We have taught our Homes to be independent, self-governing, self-propagating & self-supporting--truly indigenuous, so that they will not be totally dependent on higher leadership.

90. The Revolution was a miracle, our whole Family is a miracle, & the fact that we're still here & still going is a miracle!

91. This Family is Thy creation, Lord, Thy work, & we're Thy people, this is Thy Church, this is Thy doing, & it is great in our eyes!

92. The nine principal necessities for the success of our Family are the right kind of foundation, message, personnel, methods, organisation, communication, stats, security & support.

93. The Family lives a tough hard soldier's life where everybody works day & night & does anything they're told, anytime they're told, does anything that has to be done no matter what their plans were.

94. Sex has probably been the greatest differentiation between us & the average Christian & Christian group & probably the thing for which we are condemned the most, criticised the most, & about which they are horrified the most.

95. We are called out of every nation & religion on the face of the Earth to become one nation, one people under God, & not just under Him, but in Him.

96. The Lord called you out of the mass of humanity because He knew you were ripe & ready & hungry & needy & He loved you & needed His Love & here you are.

97. In this last generation the Lord wanted a really pure Church that had never been a part of any other church & was not a mere split-off of some other kind of religion, but He wanted to get us back to the real original religion, completely liberated & completely free, not tied or bound by any other group or religion, so He drew you out of the hills & the valleys & the hidden places & sent out searchers to find you everywhere! Isn't that wonderful? -What a miracle of God in this Last Day.

98. The Lord certainly designed our religion, & I believe it's the original religion, the religion of God Himself & the Lord Jesus Christ & His Holy Spirit. Other people think we're a very progressive, even too advanced type of religion, but actually we're sort of a throw-back to the early one.

99. We are back almost to the pure state of Adam & Eve in the Garden, in direct communication with God & pure freedom physically, spiritually, in every way to enjoy Paradise & all the wonderful things & pleasures that God has given us, His whole Creation!

(See also No.C, G, S, 23, 83, 89, 94, 96, 100, 128, 148, 155, 172, 174, 179, 585, 589, 590, 600, 657, 658, 716, 748, 752, 754, 756, 766, 770, 771, 773, 800, 868, 877, 1099, 1335, 1336, 1355, 1366, 1368, 1398, 1514, 1534, 1592, 1598, *BOR II.*)

100. .20:26 And ye shall be holy unto Me: for I the Lord am holy, and have severed you from other people, that ye should be Mine.

101. .26:12 And I will walk among you, and will be your God, and ye shall be My people.

102. .4:7 For what nation is there so great, who hath God so nigh unto them, as the Lord our God is in all things that we call upon Him for?

103. .7:7,8 The Lord did not set His love upon you, nor choose you, because ye were more in number than any people; for ye were the fewest of all people: But because the Lord loved you, and because He would keep the oath which He had sworn unto your fathers, hath the Lord brought you out with a mighty hand, and redeemed you out of the house of bondmen, from the hand of Pharaoh King of Egypt.

104. **DEU.14:2 For thou art an holy people unto the Lord thy God, and the Lord hath chosen thee to be a peculiar people unto Himself, above all the nations that are upon the Earth.**

105. **.26:18,19 The Lord hath avouched thee this day to be His peculiar people, as He hath promised thee, and that thou shouldest keep all His commandments; And to make thee high above all nations which He hath made, in praise, and in name, and in honour; and that thou mayest be an holy people unto the Lord thy God, as He hath spoken.**

106. **.28:9,10 The Lord shall establish thee an holy people unto Himself, as He hath sworn unto thee, if thou shalt keep the commandments of the Lord thy God, and walk in His way. And all people of the Earth shall see that thou art called by the name of the Lord.**

107. **CH.15:2 The Lord is with you, while ye be with Him; and if ye seek Him, He will be found of you.**

108. **.8:7 Though thy beginning was small, yet thy latter end should greatly increase.**

109. **.68:6 God setteth the solitary in families: He bringeth out those which are bound with chains: but the rebellious dwell in a dry land.**

110. **PSA.68:13 Though ye have lien among the pots, yet shall ye be as the wings of a dove covered with silver, and her feathers with yellow gold.**

111. .85:10-12 Mercy and truth are met together; righteousness and peace have kissed each other. Truth shall spring out of the Earth; and righteousness shall look down from Heaven. Yea, the Lord shall give that which is good; and our land shall yield her increase.

112. ISA.60:22 A little one shall become a thousand, & a small one a strong nation: I the Lord will hasten it in His time.

113. ISA.62:3 Thou shalt also be a crown of glory in the hand of the Lord, and a royal diadem in the hand of thy God.

114. .1:5 Before I formed thee in the belly I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet unto the nations.

115. JER.13:11 That they might be unto Me for a people, and for name, and for a praise, and for a glory.

116. MAT.13:17 For verily I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.

117. .12:4,5 For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office: So we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another.

118. PE.2:9 But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of Him Who hath called you out of darkness into His marvellous light.

(See also DEU.7:6-9; ISA.43:18-21; ISA.55:1-22; ISA.60:1-21; EZE.34:23-31.)

### 34. FASTING --{page 281}--



*So we fasted & besought our God for this: & He was intreated of us (Ezra 8:23).*

1. The whole idea of fasting is to give you more time to pray, to show God you're really in earnest & you're really concerned & willing to give up a little food & a little time to give more time for prayer.

2. Fast foods for fast days is fasting enough for us!

3. To me, genuine fasting is when you'd rather do something else than eat.

4. One has more power in the spirit when fasting & praying, due to one's complete devotion & concentration on the subject & on the Lord & on His will & His work, uninterrupted by food or taking time to eat.

5. Fasting saves time--to do things more important than eating.

6. What I call real genuine fasting is when you are so busy either witnessing or feeding on the Word that you don't have time to stop to eat.

7. Fasting helps you devote more of your time to the Lord & His work & others & less of your time to selfish interests & physical pursuits & unnecessary work.

8. I believe in fasting but I don't believe it earns you anything. What God gives He gives, it's a gift. It may do you good to keep your body under subjection, to sacrifice physical desires, to crucify the flesh, but it doesn't earn you spiritual power, which is a gift of God. It doesn't earn you salvation, which is a gift of God. It doesn't earn you healing, which is also a gift of God, except it might help with what's wrong with you--maybe you eat too much.

9. Keep it liquid, just to remind you that this is the day you're supposed to be denying yourself a little bit to give you a little more time for prayer & Bible study & fellowship.

10. I've always advocated that the only good logical reason for fasting & not eating is because you have something more important to do, & that you just don't have time to either eat or to stop to prepare to eat because you're too busy doing something else.

11. Both religiously & medically, fasting has been known to be effective, reaping not only spiritual but physical benefits.

12. If you can run by the kitchen & throw something in your mouth, we probably won't consider that you've fallen from grace. Maybe that's more grace, because you had more faith & you're not just abiding by law! In Gideon's army it wasn't the amount they drank that they were judged by, it was how fast they drank it & how prepared they were for the Enemy!

13. The whole idea is this: What are you putting first? If you get so involved with household tasks & meals & gluttony & physical needs that you don't have enough time to give to the Lord & prayer, then you need to fast a little bit! You need to deny yourself a little bit to really remind yourself to put the Lord & His Work first.

14. A lot of us fast a little bit every day! We're so busy serving the Lord we just don't have time to fiddle around & eat a lot!

15. Do some fasting instead of feasting!

16. The whole idea of Fast Day is not that there's so much virtue in fasting; you're not earning merit & God's not going to answer your prayers better if you fast; the idea is that you want to do something more important than spending all that time cooking & eating & washing dishes.

17. I don't believe in fasting just for fasting's sake or like it's earning merit, like the Orientals & like some Christians teach, but I believe in fasting for a purpose--to give you more time & more concentration for study or prayer or fellowship or whatever it is. It's putting food & meals in a minor place & putting the most important things first & giving the Lord more of your time.

(See also No.689, 950, 1550.)

**18. ISA.58:6-11 Is not this the fast that I have chosen? to loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke? Is it not to deal thy bread to the hungry, and that thou bring the poor that are cast out to thy house? when thou seest the naked, that thou cover him; and that thou hide not thyself from thine own flesh? Then shall thy light break forth as the morning, and thine health shall spring forth speedily: and thy righteousness shall go before thee; the glory of the Lord shall be thy rereward. Then shalt thou call, and the Lord shall answer; thou shalt cry, and He shall say, Here I am. If thou take away from the midst of thee the yoke, the putting forth of the finger, and speaking vanity; And if thou draw out thy soul to the hungry, and satisfy the afflicted soul; then shall thy light rise in obscurity, and thy darkness be as the noonday: And the Lord shall guide thee continually, and satisfy thy soul in drought, and make fat thy bones: and thou shalt be like a watered garden, and like a spring of water, whose waters fail not.**

**19. .6:16-18 Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face; That thou appear not unto men to fast, but unto thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father, which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.**

**20. MAT.17:21 This kind goeth not out but by prayer and fasting.**

(See also MAT.6:16-18; ACT.27:9,33,34.)



*For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind. For perfect love casts out fear (2Tim.1:7; 1Jn.4:18).*

1. Fear God & all other fears will disappear.
2. You can't fight an unseen unknown enemy!--If you know who your enemy is & where he's at & what he's up to, then you can face him & fight it out!
3. I have lived too long among the stars to fear the night.
4. If we fear God, we shall cease to fear man.
5. A baby may smile in his sleep while he watches spirit movies, if his parents are people of faith & trust, or he may scream in fright in his sleep while he sees horror movies, if his parents have a spirit of fear.
6. When adults get frightened it's contagious, & children catch it too.
7. Fear is a communicable disease: Others can catch it.
8. Face your fears, acknowledge them, confess them & take a positive stand against them!
9. Face the fear of man in the power of His Spirit on the promises of His Word, & you cannot fail!
10. There is nothing to be afraid of when it comes to the Devil!--He was defeated 2000 years ago!
11. Face your fears & fight'm!
12. Fear is Devil-worship! You have to fight fear like you fight the Devil, & you can't just let him take over!
13. It pays to face your fears, recognise they're there, decide between the real & the unreal, the truth & the lie, & go on the attack to dispel the vaporous fiction of the fairy tale & to drive away the genuine reality of real threat!
14. Faith & fear cannot totally occupy your mind, heart & spirit at the same time.
15. To recognise & face the problem helps to attack it.
16. You cannot have faith & fear at the same time.
17. You've gotta face your fears & face the facts, before you can get the victory.
18. Freedom from fear is one of the greatest freedoms of all. Freedom from fear is faith.
19. To confess your fears is really to confess your innermost self.
20. Fear is the opposite of faith, & without faith you can have no power.
21. Face your fears...draw a line of distinction by facing them--between that which is the truth & those fears which are the lies of the Devil!
22. It doesn't pay to try to gloss the trouble over, or just turn your back on it & ignore it & hope it'll go away.
23. We don't have to worry or fear Satan's power, because we are protected by the power of the Holy Spirit.
24. Don't be so worried about the future that you can't enjoy life today.
25. Uncertainty & the fear of the unknown is the worst fear of all!
26. Courage is not the absence of fear; it is the conquest of fear.
27. Help us, Lord, not to be freaked out of our faith & scared out of our trust & booted out of our praise!

28. If your knees are knocking, kneel on them.
29. Courage is fear that has said its prayers.
30. Keep Faith as a constant companion. When Fear knocks at your door, send Faith to answer it.
31. God's Word teaches you that if you fear a fear, it will come upon you!
32. Your fears can become demons which will torment you!
33. Out of the evil imaginations of your own heart & mind you can create spiritual monsters that can destroy you--your own fears, your own evil spirits!
34. Watch out for the evil imaginations of your heart, lest they become realities that can destroy you!
35. Almost the Devil's total power is in fear.
36. You have to fight fear like you have to fight the Devil!
37. We must free men from fear with faith, from hatred with love, from sorrow with joy, from poverty with plenty & from death with eternal happiness.
38. When you have faith, you can't have fear: Faith is the opposite of fear.
39. The two greatest sources of worry & fear are the past & the future--remorse over the past & fear of the future--& God's Word forbids worry about either!
40. The best way a ship can ride out the storm is when it faces directly into the wind & the waves.
41. Chase away the shades of night,  
By letting in God's Love & Light.
42. Read the Word to feed your faith & starve your fear!
43. Just as the fear of God is the beginning of wisdom, fear of Satan is really the beginning of death!
44. The coward dies a thousand deaths, the brave but one!
45. And though this World with devils filled,  
Should threaten to undo us!  
--We will not fear, for God hath willed,  
His Truth to triumph through us!
46. To fear the Devil is giving him just the kind of worship that he wants.
47. The heart does not have room to embrace fear & trust at the same time; when one goes in, the other goes out.
48. If you fear someone more than you do God & you obey them instead of the Lord, you are worshipping them. You are falling down & worshipping before Satan himself & that person, worshipping the Devil, obeying the Devil, cowed by the Devil, intimidated by Satan, afraid to say anything or do anything for fear of offending him, just wanting to please the God-damned Devil & that person!
49. How do you get rid of darkness? You just let the light in.--And the darkness turns tail & runs!
50. Don't listen to the Devil, he's a liar!--The father of deceit & the father of lies. "A liar from the beginning", Jesus said, so why should you listen to his doubts & his fears & his lies when he says all those terrible things & tries to scare you out?
51. Worry is a sign of fear & fear is not faith. If you trust in the Lord you know He is going to take care of you & you don't have to worry.
52. The impotent do not have enough spirit or power, because they're holding back & not willing to give all. They're not willing to lie stripped before their Lord & let Him empower them. You have to have faith in God's Love in order to obey & come & strip off the outer garments of appearances, cover-ups & false fronts, & expose yourself to the Lord, totally yielding yourself to Him in submission & humility.
53. When we look back at what the Lord's already done for us in the past, we know good & well He's going to take care of us in the future, so why worry.

(See also No.171, 203, 306, 323, 341, 367, 599, 628, 686, 710, 831, 857, 947, 1378, 1432, 1459.)

54. .15:1b Fear not,...I am thy shield, & thy exceeding great reward.
55. .31:6 Be strong and of a good courage, fear not, nor be afraid of them: for the Lord thy God, He it is that doth go with thee; He will not fail thee, nor forsake thee.
56. .31:8 And the Lord, He it is that doth go before thee; He will be with thee, He will not fail thee, neither forsake thee: fear not, neither be dismayed.
57. **JOS.1:9 Have not I commanded thee? Be strong and of a good courage; be not afraid, neither be thou dismayed: for the Lord thy God is with thee whithersoever thou goest.**
58. **PSA.3:6 I will not be afraid of ten thousands of people, that have set themselves against me round about.**

59. .27:1 The Lord is my light and my Salvation; whom shall I fear? the Lord is the strength of my life; of whom shall I be afraid?

60. .34:4 I sought the Lord, and He heard me, and delivered me from all my fears.

61. .46:1-3 God is our refuge and strength, a very present help in trouble. Therefore will not we fear, though the Earth be removed, and though the mountains be carried into the midst of the sea; Though the waters thereof roar and be troubled, though the mountains shake with the swelling thereof. Selah.

62. .56:3,4 What time I am afraid, I will trust in Thee. In God I will praise His Word, in God I have put my trust; I will not fear what flesh can do unto me.

63. .56:11 In God have I put my trust: I will not be afraid what man can do unto me.

64. .91:5,6 Thou shalt not be afraid for the terror by night; nor for the arrow that flieth by day; Nor for the pestilence that walketh in darkness; nor for the destruction that wasteth at noonday.

65. .112:7 He shall not be afraid of evil tidings: his heart is fixed, trusting in the Lord.

66. .118:6 The Lord is on my side; I will not fear: what can man do unto me?

67. .1:33 But whoso hearkeneth unto Me shall dwell safely, and shall be quiet from fear of evil.

68. .3:24-26 When thou liest down, thou shalt not be afraid: yea, thou shalt lie down, and thy sleep shall be sweet. Be not afraid of sudden fear, neither of the desolation of the wicked, when it cometh. For the Lord shall be thy confidence, and shall keep thy foot from being taken.

69. ISA.12:2 Behold, God is my salvation; I will trust, and not be afraid.

70. .41:13 For I the Lord thy God will hold thy right hand, saying unto thee, Fear not; I will help thee.

71. .51:12, 13 I, even I, am He that comforteth you: who art thou, that thou shouldest be afraid of a man that shall die, and of the son of man which shall be made as grass; And forgettest the Lord thy Maker, that hath stretched forth heavens, and laid the foundations of the earth; and hast feared continually every day because of the fury of the oppressor, as if he were ready to destroy? and where is the fury of the oppressor?

72. ISA.54:14 In righteousness shalt thou be established: thou shalt be far from oppression; for thou shalt not fear: and from terror; for it shall not come near thee.

73. JER.1:8 Be not afraid of their faces: for I am with thee to deliver thee, saith the Lord.

74. .2:6 And thou, son of man, be not afraid of them, neither be afraid of their words, though briers and thorns be with thee, and thou dost dwell among scorpions: be not afraid of their words, nor be dismayed at their looks, though they be a rebellious house.

75. MAT.6:34 Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.

76. MAT.10:30,31 But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows.

77. MAT.14:27 But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer; it is I; be not afraid.

78. 5:36b Be not afraid, only believe.

79. .8:15 For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.

80. .1:28 And in nothing terrified by your adversaries: which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of Salvation, and that of God.

81. .1:13 Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the Kingdom of His Dear Son.

82. TL1:7 For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind.

83. HEB.13:6 So that we may boldly say, The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do unto me.

84. JN.4:18 there is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not made perfect in love.





*Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: & so much the more, as ye see the day approaching. For where two or three are gathered together in My name, there am I in the midst of them (Heb.10:25; Mt.18:20).*

1. What is this life, so full of care,  
If we have no time to stop & share?
2. Don't ever get so God-damned busy you haven't got time for the sheep! If you are that busy, you're too damned busy! Anybody who hasn't got time to fellowship with his wife or her husband or helpers or cook or maid or babysitter, or even the gardener or the postman, is too busy!
3. He drew a circle that shut me out, but love & I had the wit to win; We drew a circle that took him in.
4. When you live together for awhile, then you really know what fellowship is: A bunch of fellows in the same ship!
5. We can meet right here at Jesus' feet! Jesus is here & He's teaching us through His Word!
6. The Lord is for scattering to preach the Gospel in all the World, but He's also for coming together as a body for fellowship.
7. We've got to watch out that we don't--like the churches--fellowship so much that we neglect our job & our work--which is witnessing, litnessing, winning souls.
8. Lack of desire to fellowship is a very dangerous sign.
9. Videos are the fire that fueled the flame of the Fellowships!
10. Every time we meet together, we meet at Jesus' feet!
11. More fellowship & better communication often act as solutions in themselves.
12. If you don't meet & pray, you'll become the Devil's meat & prey.
13. Children's contributions to a Family meeting are just as important as anybody's, & maybe sometimes more important!
14. We need each other as well as the Lord, & He likes it when we gather together!--He's always there.
15. What business is more important to take care of than listening to what the Lord has to say?
16. When a meeting is called for fellowship, that is the Lord's most important business at that time.
17. When we are gathered together for a time of fellowship, it's like everybody bringing their candle to the table, their candle of the Spirit, their candle of inspiration, their additional little part of spirit & power. And when there are this many candles at the table burning together, that's a lot of light, that's a lot of spirit, that's a lot of power.
18. Gathering together in fellowship is one of the secrets of the upper room, the experience of the Day of Pentecost. They were all together in body & in unity, one mind & one spirit. They were united with the Lord & His Spirit in one place at one time like one body, one mind, one spirit, all together in obedience to what the Lord had commanded them.
19. Even the Lord needed fellowship with His disciples. When He went into the Garden of Gethsemane that night He took His three top most intimate disciples, Peter, James & John with Him away from the rest of them to pray with Him because He was facing the most severe hour in His whole life.
20. When the Family is gathered together for a fellowship meeting there is nothing more important for you to do than to be at that meeting.
21. In a united Family meeting, whether it be of your little Home or your Area Fellowship, one of the most important factors is that you also join in in spirit & contribute your share of the spirit to the meeting.

22. The Spirit is a very definite, real, almost tangible, thing. You can feel the Spirit in united meetings, more than perhaps in a tiny group of two or three gathered together.

23. It seems like the more of us there are in a meeting, the more power we feel.

24. Family dinner is important Family fellowship & that's when the most important announcements of the day are made & when the most important conversation goes on.

25. Dinnertime is too important to just snatch & grab your food & run, it's not some kind of a buffet lunch or smorgasbord, but it's a time when you really sit down together & eat together & enjoy each other's fellowship together & get a little inspiration together.

26. If you only meet & fellowship once a week, you're getting to be like the churches. I think you should fellowship every night at dinnertime.

27. Lord help us to realise the importance of fellowship, the unity of spirit & mind & heart & body & presence. Your disciples were all together in one place, of one mind, of one heart & obedience, & there You were in the midst of them & You poured out Your Spirit upon them.

28. We should value our fellowship time together & appreciate it & cherish it & honour it & count it a privilege.

(See also No.249, 546, 617, 632, 752, 950, 1001, 1034, 1205, 1209, 1384, 1511, 1550.)

29. .119:63 I am a companion of all them that fear Thee, and of them that keep Thy precepts.

30. .3:16 Then they that feared the Lord spake often one to another: and the Lord hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before Him for them that feared the Lord, and that thought upon His Name.

31. .18:20 For where two or three are gathered together in My Name, there am I in the midst of them.

32. .2:1 And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place.

33. .2:42 And they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.

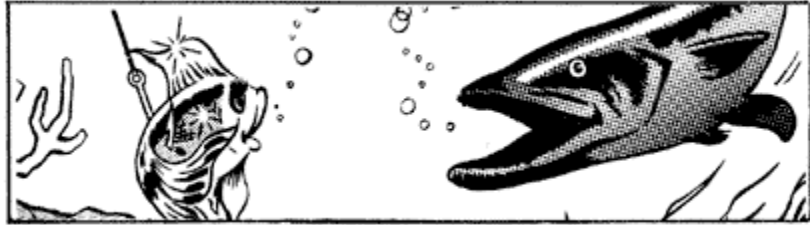
34. .14:27 And when they were come, and had gathered the church together, they rehearsed all that God had done with them, and how He had opened the door of faith unto the Gentiles.

35. .10:25 Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching.

36. **JO.1:3 That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with His Son Jesus Christ.**

37. **JO.1:6,7 If we say that we have fellowship with Him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth: But if we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanseth us from all sin.**

(See also ACT.2:1, 42-47.)



*And He saith unto them, Follow Me, and I will make you fishers of men (Mt.4:19).*

**[HomeARC note (9/98): FFing was discontinued in 1987.]**

1. Jesus is your message! If they don't want Jesus, they don't want you! They can't have you without Jesus!
2. Just as Jesus had to dirty Himself to save you, you have to go to them & dirty yourself to save them.
3. If you strike a thorn or rose, Keep a-goin!  
If it hails or if it snows, Keep a-goin!  
'Tain't no use to sit & whine  
'Cause the fish ain't on your line,  
Bait your hook an' keep on tryin'. Keep a-goin!
4. God has not even withheld His Own Wife, the Bride of Christ, the Church, but has given her as a flirty fish to the World to try & woo & win them.
5. If you've got it, flaunt it!
6. A deep look into someone's eyes can move the emotions & body as much as a deep kiss into their mouth!
7. If there's real spiritual contact in a look, it's just like getting naked into bed with someone.
8. To a lot of people, sex is the ultimate proof of love.
9. The church talks about love, but they stop at the bed. We go beyond the bed all the way to Heaven!
10. You must be willing to go to any length to show you love them.
11. Never underestimate the power of sex! It can win you lots of friends & catch you lots of fish.
12. We can't stop our way of saving souls just because it makes someone with a weak unWorded conscience stumble.
13. You cannot stop saving souls just because some people condemn your methods!
14. Avoid the sharks: look for the fish!--And carry plenty of bait!
15. Try giving the Beauty of God's love to some "Beast" today, & see if he won't turn into a Prince Charming!
16. I don't lose daughters, I gain sons.
17. People must learn to love you first, before they can learn to love your God!
18. If the Devil has his spells, certainly the Lord has His--the influence of the Holy Spirit!
19. Don't break God's spell!
20. You have His magic in your entrancing hypnotism of the charming beauty that we see looking out through your eyes--those windows of your soul--from the very depths of your being, in a language that no words can speak!
21. Never underestimate the power of a woman! Godly women are tools of the Lord!
22. FFing is the acid test, the ultimate in sharing!
23. Sex is the bait, & it's God's Own bait!--And He's going to use it!
24. If you believe FFing is wrong, it is because you refuse to believe the Word!
25. Most religions haven't got enough love to go to bed with a sinner to save his soul, to go to bed with his body to save his spirit!
26. If you're to be God's whore, you can't have much pride!
27. They have to believe in you first & your love, your body, your beauty, your unselfish gift of love to them, before they can even understand the love of God!

28. If you're not willing to give your wife, you're not willing to give your life!
29. Every travelling salesman has a broken heart.
30. To learn FFing is to learn a trade, because even if the Antichrist isn't interested in women, his men will be!
31. If they have to fall in love with you first, before they find it's the Lord, it's just God's bait to hook them!
32. If some women & men of this World "play for pay," why can't we sometimes play for love, the love of God, & expect God to foot the bills for His Own glory?
33. Flesh can satisfy flesh, but only Spirit can satisfy spirit, & we've found that we've had to give both to satisfy "all their needs according to His riches in glory." (Phil.4:19)
34. There is nowhere to draw the line between the two, flesh & spirit. There is no halfway, there is no "almost."
35. Every woman's a prostitute!--Some do it for fun, some for money, some for information, some for power & some for husbands at the highest price on the lifelong installment plan! We do it for love & souls as a sacrificial loving service & gift to the needy.
36. Some men like flesh, some like brains, some like beauty, some like spirit & some like'm all!--Be sure you use the right bait for the right fish!
37. If you just catch one, it's worth all the days that you didn't catch any & all the sacrifices you made.
38. You're wielding the most powerful weapons the World has ever known! Phooey on the atom bomb! This tiny pill bomb of love is enough to blow any country apart!
39. In a way, God had to love Jesus a little less for Him to be able to love the World more.
40. The little that I'm sacrificing of your love & losing of you, results in obtaining their love & gaining them.
41. FFing is the greatest most sacrificial service that you can possibly give, outside of actually dying, because it is laying your life on the line for love!
42. Love others ... with your hands, your lips, your mouth, your tongue, your eyes & your body broken for them as He was for you, your blood shed for them as His was for you, even dying for them as He did for you!
43. Like Christ was your atonement & bore your sins for you, you are their atonement before they find the Lord.
44. An angry, frustrated, unfairly deprived fish can sometimes turn on you ferociously.
45. The bigger they come the harder they fight, & if you're not very patient you can lose them altogether.
46. If you're a hooker for Jesus, don't forget Who you're hooking for & don't forget to constantly point your hook in His direction!--Then they'll know why you're doing it & Who you're doing it for.
47. The hook is the Word!
48. The bait softens the blow of the hook a little bit & makes it a little bit more palatable!
49. You can't expect to catch fish with a naked hook!--it takes naked bait!
50. You don't hafta like 'em, but you sure gotta love'm!
51. God lets His wife make love to the world!--Why not you?
52. FFing with God's love is the ultimate weapon! It's God's last-ditch stand to try to reach the World--They've heard, known & tried everything else.
53. Sex is the ultimate weapon! Sex is the weakness in their armour: They just cannot resist it!--& when empowered by the Spirit, Love & Word of God, it's the most powerful weapon in the World!
54. In falling in love with you, though they may not know it at first, they're really falling in love with God in you.
55. The Lord shares His wife, the Church, with the World to prove His love.
56. God is a pimp!--He uses you to win souls!
57. Don't start something you can't stop!--And don't try to stop something you've already started!--It can be dangerous!
58. Male fish can be satisfied with a mere nibble or a bite, or a mouthful or bellyful of bait!--Whereas the female fish want the fisherman, the tackle, the trap, & the whole darn boat!
59. Watch for the worthy ones & wait for the witness of the Spirit.
60. The Spirit & the Word of God encased in frail feminine flesh has turned out to be the most powerful, effective weapon the Lord has ever used!
61. The quickest way to get a man excited is to look right into his eyes.
62. Looking into the eyes is almost the next thing to having intercourse, because you're instantly having spiritual intercourse & it really has an effect!
63. Where the spirit goes the body follows!

64. If you have to refuse a man, do it sweetly & as nicely as you can, with a smile, & say "later" or "another time" or "I'm sorry, but I'm tired," or give them some good excuse. Don't just say a flat "no."

65. Any kind of fishing requires a lot of patience, a lot of waiting, a lot of faith.

66. Don't ever leave your mate alone without a babysitter & don't believe them when they say they don't need one!

67. You're an adornment to the Gospel!--You really dress it up & decorate it & make it look pretty!

68. Why shouldn't the Gospel come wrapped up in a beautiful package?--it's the greatest gift in the World, the Good News!

69. Never underestimate the charm of a woman!

70. If it's going to be all bait & no hook, then you might as well forget it! If it's going to be all sugarcoating & no pill, it's all in vain!

71. The Devil uses sex to hook his followers--why shouldn't the God Who made it, use sex to hook His Own?

72. One kind word from you can mean more than a selfish bed from some of those selfish old whores!

73. We're salesmen trying to sell our product, the love of God--and it costs something!

74. Unless you can show them that God loves them by your own love from God, they'll never know it.

75. All hail to the eyes as the most potent witnesses of God's love!

76. Your loving looks have the loving answer to the need of every hungry heart.--The look of love which unlocks the doors of many of the hardest & heaviest hearts!

77. Are you willing to suffer to save others?--To offer your life or your wife, or be offered as God's wife, or both?

78. Godly hurt, sacrifice and suffering to help others are good for us.

79. Are you strong enough to give it? Are you free enough to live it? Do you love enough to lose it?

80. We weave the web with the strong, flexible, lasting, unbreakable cords of love.

81. Sometimes when Fishing, "a little of the bait is lost and eaten, but it shall live on in the flesh of the fish to give sustenance to others as he, too, becomes food for them that hunger."

82. "For thou art My bait and I have need of thee!"

83. There's no amount of love that could possibly be illegitimate to try to win a soul!

84. Dancing & how well you dance is a spiritual thing! For a woman to be a good dancer it takes total surrender--like sex!

85. Sow good ground, fish fruitful waters & hunt likely game! Stop wasteful, indiscriminate, blind, lazy sowing on sterile ground, fishing in polluted waters & hunting dead ducks! Choose your targets & hit'm!--Missing the mark is sin!

86. The bait has to give its life to catch life!

87. Sex-plus-God is an irresistible power!

88. This is the ultimate weapon--sex! We have found the chink in their armour! All we have to do now is to attack it with love & sympathy & kindness & the Word & the Truth & the Spirit--& sex!

89. When empowered by the Spirit of God & the Love of God & the Word of God, sex is the most powerful weapon in the World!

90. God is going to take the sex weapon He created Himself & use it for His Own glory to win souls for His Own cause!

91. If you can't tell the difference between a good clean fish & a catfish or a shark, you've got no business being a fisherman!

92. You're to use your sex as a tool of real genuine love for God & your neighbour, love in the Spirit--& in the flesh--to try & win him to the Lord!

93. I'm convinced that God knows the fish that are going to be there. He knows exactly who He's going to put you in contact with & He knows who He wants to reach that night, & if you pray, you'll be led of the Spirit to the right pond, even to the right table & to the right individual.

94. FFing is an absolute extreme, but God in these last days has done it to show to what extremes He's willing to go to love & save people & reach them, to the utmost! He did it, He died.

95. Even if you don't do them any greater favour than to convince them that real love really does exist, that there is such a thing, at least they've had a sample once in their lifetime, & this gives them faith & hope that maybe they'll still find the real thing because it does exist because they've experienced it at least once or twice.

96. Every new witness, every new word to him if he doesn't respond, is just another nail in his coffin that God is going to remind him of one of these days when he stands at the judgement.--Of all the chances he had & all the sacrifices that were made & all the love he got. It's going to count against him. We are ministers both of

salvation & damnation & the more they get from us, either the more they're going to be saved or the more they're going to be damned. the more they're going to be held responsible for.

97. Even though persecution forces the main forces of the reapers to flee, there is still much that can be done by the girl gleaners who may even capture a few owners of the fields & thereby get it all, & even sometimes through their love & influence, move the owner to stop his underlings' persecution of the reapers & the gleaners.

98. Esther & Ruth are two outstanding shining examples of God's FFers who became so famous & influential that two entire books of the Bible were devoted to their stories & named after them!

99. Even if nothing seems to come of it, God will reward you for being obedient & for trying to help someone even if they don't always respond. Like with a drowning man, it's your obligation to throw him a lifesaver to try to rescue him. But if he doesn't accept it, that's not your fault, that's his funeral.

100. Who knows--when all other avenues of influence & witnessing are closed to us, FFing may be our only remaining means of spreading the Word & supporting the Work as well as gaining new disciples & workers for the Kingdom of God.

101. You are only to be concerned about them. That's your ministry--not to be concerned about yourself & what they think about you, whether they think you're a prostitute or a call girl in it for the money, or a sex-starved female, but just be concerned about them & giving them Jesus.

102. Until you're willing, like Jesus, to make yourself of no reputation, or even a bad reputation of hobnobbing with publicans & sinners & drunks & harlots as Jesus did, & being called a wine bibber, a glutton & demon-possessed as Jesus was, & having your motives & good intentions questioned & your purposes in doubt, as His were, you'll not be a very good bait or fisherman, either one. (Mk.2:15-17; Mt.11:18-19)

103. Every one of you boys who has a mate who does FFing is "playing God"!

104. God had the FF blues when He had to send Jesus to die for us & be separated from Him all that time.

105. Remember: The bigger the fish the less you can preach at him!

106. A major part of fishing is just pure patience.

107. We're trying to reach the System, the important & influential middle class whose souls are priceless & whose good will is essential to our work.

108. Keeping dates faithfully is very important to both your word & their faith in you & your witness, to encourage them to trust in you & what you have to say.

109. If you want to be a witness of God's Love, be sure you give God the glory so they'll always remember you did it in His Love, not just your own.

110. Fucking is sometimes needful! What's a little fuck between friends if he needs it!--Not near as much to you as to him. It probably means much more to him than it costs you to give it.

111. Fishing can be dangerous, unless you really trust the Lord & are led by Him!

112. FFing is really strictly a volunteer ministry.

113. Use a little wisdom & try to be Spirit-led! Not every guy who wants you necessarily deserves to have you.

114. I'd rather have a girl be too willing than not willing enough. So to be on the safe side, if you're in doubt as to whether he can take a "no" or "later" in some touchy cases, instead of "When in doubt, don't," you need to "When in doubt, do!"

115. Fishing can be fun, but fun doesn't pay the bills! You've got to catch a few to make the fun pay for itself.

116. Your going into these clubs is a testimony that God is not a monster Who is trying to deny them everything & make them miserable.

117. The first & most important thing to show them is that you love them. That's what most men & women need most of all, just somebody to show an interest in them.

118. If you're not willing to sit there all night long & listen to their life story, then you don't love them!

119. Be careful about ignoring good old friends in favour of new ones you don't even know. A bird in the hand is worth two in the bush!

120. Beloved, don't play around with hearts.

121. FFing is deadly serious business. ...

122. You've got to keep God's Love coming as long as they're willing to receive it.

123. Many people can become Holy Spirit possessed under the hypnotism of your love.

124. God is training you women to have this power over men because you are going to rule the Earth!

125. I like strong soldiers who can take anything, including watching their wives go to bed with other men!

126. You don't have to like'm, but you've sure got to love'm!

127. God wants people who are cheerful givers, who are voluntarily doing it because it makes them happy & cheerful, because they know it pleases the Lord in helping others.

128. Just a little companionship, a little real love, sympathy & God's answers to their problems--these are the things people need the most!

129. This is a dedicated special ministry for only the absolute 100-percenters!

130. First they have to fall in love with you & then Jesus, & then finally us.

131. Thank God for a good soldier, a real soldier who knows how to fight, who knows how to use the weapon of the Word & how to wield it!--Even in bed!

132. I would certainly say that FFing is not only the most effucktive, effective, efficient & fruitful method of soul-winning, but of course it is also the most sacrificial!

133. There's no use in your going FFing if you're not going to ask the Lord ahead of time, "Give me real love now, Lord, help me to find the one You sent me to help tonight!"

134. It's a tremendous blessing & a great encouragement to them, & inspires their faith to feel that you love them & really care, that you're actually concerned about them & their feelings & their happiness! It's such an easy way to show it by just a smile or a few kind words about the Lord's love, a few dances, a few affectionate pats or pecks--& occasionally even more!

135. We feed their body in order to feed their soul, no doubt God is going to the final extreme to save souls by FFing, no doubt that's going to be their last chance. When God goes to that extreme to show them His love, I really think it's usually their last chance when God has to use such extreme measures to accomplish such extraordinary results.

136. You literally are having to dip your hands into the slimepit, the dirty dishwater, to pull them out, to make things clean! So sometimes when you think, "Why do I have to go into that horrible Worldly atmosphere with all those evil creatures?" remember, that must have been exactly what Jesus thought when He had to come to this Earth to save you!

137. Some people are worth saving & sacrificing for & even getting hurt for.

138. This is the difference between lust & love. Lust is mainly to gratify your own greedy selfish appetite, like eating a meal. You may need it, but if you're stealing it from someone else & taking the food out of their mouth to stuff your own, this is selfish lust, not love. But if you're taking the food out of your mouth & giving your own meal to satisfy & feed another who is hungry & starving for love & needs it desperately & might not survive without it, then this is real love.

139. It's like you're light, life & love to him--the gift of God to him. It's God's light & life & love. If he doesn't accept this precious price, this gift God has given him, God is going to close the Book & snuff out the candle & take it back with a kiss.

140. The most fruitful form of witnessing is FFing, with the highest proportion of results for the number witnessed to.

141. The 7 F's of FFing--effucktive, effective, efficient, fruitful, financial, official & forever. Hallelujah!--For our Father & our Family.

142. If you don't draw the net you are throwing away the bait & losing the fish.

143. FFing is largely a ministry for women, & I think maybe because the Lord said in the Bible that in the Last Days women shall rule, God is training our women to have this power over men because the women are going to rule the Earth!

(See also No.293, 301C, 302C, 304, 309, 323, 501, 502, 503, 504, 505, 506, 507, 508, 509, 510, 511, 512, 513, 514, 515, 516, 517, 518, 519, 520, 521, 522, 524, 525, 526, 527, 528, 529, 532, 533, 535, 537, 538, 542, 543, 547, 548, 549, 550, 552, 553, 555, 559, 560, 561, 562, 563, 564, 566, 567, 569, 570, 571, 572, 573, 575, 576, 583, 592, 594, 599, 603, 604, 635, 639, 647, 648, 652, 685, 699, 793, 817, 1083, 1084, 1085, 1120, 1238, 1415, 1468.)

144. .4:19 And He saith unto them, Follow Me, and I will make you fishers of men.

145. .5:16 Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in Heaven.

146. .10:8b Freely ye have received, freely give.

147. .17:27b Cast an hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece of money: that take, and give unto them for Me and thee.

148. .20:26 Whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister.

149. .22:39 Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

150. .25:40b Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these My brethren, ye have done it unto Me.
151. .5:10b Fear not; from henceforth thou shalt catch men.
152. .9:23 If any man will come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow Me.
153. .12:32 And I, if I be lifted up ... will draw all men unto Me.
154. .15:12,13 This is My commandment, That ye love one another. Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.
155. .14:14 I ... am persuaded by the Lord Jesus, that there is nothing unclean of itself.
156. **CO.9:22 I am made all things to all men, that I might by all means save some.**
157. **CO.13:8a Love never faileth.**
158. **CO.3:17 Where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.**
159. **CO.5:14 For the love of Christ constraineth us.**
160. **.2:7a But made Himself of no reputation.**
161. **.1:15a Unto the pure all things are pure.**
162. **.2:15-17 If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what doth it profit? Faith, if it hath not works, is dead.**
163. **JO.3:16 Hereby perceive we the love of God, because He laid down His life for us: and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.**
164. **JO.3:18 My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in deed and in truth.**
165. **JO.3:21 Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, then have we confidence toward God.**

### **38. FIGHT THE GOOD FIGHT --{page 307}--**



*Fight the good fight of faith (1Tim.6:12).*

1. I love to fight, because I know I'm fighting for the One that's worth fighting for & the souls that are worth winning & the goals that are worth attaining!
2. Keep on believing, don't ever give up! Keep on believing, don't be discouraged! Keep on believing, don't quit!
3. Whatever you do, don't quit!
4. You gotta keep going, you gotta keep sacrificing, you gotta keep forsaking, you gotta keep fighting every day!
5. Whoever has resigned himself to fate, will find that fate accepts his resignation.
6. Winners never quit, but quitters never win.
7. We may lose some battles but we're winning the war!--And the World will soon be ours for God & His Kingdom!
8. Many people's tombstones should read: "Died at 30. Buried at 60."
9. We have not yet begun to fight!
10. Where there's a will there's a way.
11. He that shoots oft, at last shall hit the mark.



12. Victory belongs to the most persevering.
13. My right has been rolled up. My left has been driven back. My center has been smashed. I have ordered an advance from all directions.--Attributed to General Foch, WW1.
14. If you fall, don't just lie there! Get up & try again!--Pro.24:16.
15. Better to fight & lose than not to fight at all! Better to have loved & lost than never to have loved at all!
16. Success is failure turned inside out,  
The silver tint of the clouds of doubt.  
So stick to the fight when you're hardest hit,  
It's when things seem worst  
That you must not quit.
17. Whatever you do, just keep on going for God!--You're bound to make it sometimes if you try often enough!
18. The only way we can ever be conquered is if we stop attacking & give up & stop having the faith to take the initiative.
19. Keep on holding to His Promises!--Don't let go! Keep on standing on the Word!--Don't get off! Keep on going for Jesus!--Don't stop! Keep on keeping on!
20. The people that complain about the battle & then quit just before the victory's won, never get to enjoy it!
21. Keep fighting & you won't lose! Keep wielding the weapon of the Word & you'll win!
22. He that wrestles with us strengthens our nerves & sharpens our skill. Our antagonist is our helper.
23. You have to be a fighter for the Truth of God, even if they kill you!
24. Every day is a battle!
25. We all have besetting sins; we just have to learn to resist them!
26. It's a battle, it's a war, but we're bound to win!
27. If you're a fighter like I am, you enjoy the battle!
28. A victorious knight returned from the battle has more of a shine than one who hasn't been in the battle.
29. Some people are looking for an excuse to do what they really want to do--quit!
30. Surprise is one of the prime elements of successful military strategy.
31. The Devil can't lick you as long as you keep trying. The only way he can possibly lick you is if you surrender!
32. We may not win all the battles, but we're going to win the war!
33. You only win a war in which you lead the attack!
34. You don't have time to sharpen your sword in the middle of a battle, but if your sword is so dull it turns out to be nothing but a club, it's better than nothing!
35. If you run off & hide before the battle's won, God'll hold you to blame for the defeat!
36. You have to fight the Devil & your old self every day!
37. You can never stop battling, you can never stop winning victories, you can never stop progressing, or you'll backslide!
38. Each battle God gives you in which you win a victory is followed with a bigger battle, because He knows He can now trust you with more.
39. Keep a soft heart but a tough spirit!
40. The greater the battle, the greater the victory. The greater the sacrifice, the greater the reward!
41. To get greater victories you have to keep fighting greater battles, & for greater rewards you have to keep making greater sacrifices, & for greater joys you have to keep suffering greater pains.
42. In school I was a fighter for my faith! I knew I was superior in the Lord & my faith & outlook!
43. Don't rescue me prematurely!
44. If you win this battle, He'll give you a bigger battle tomorrow!
45. Make an advantage out of your handicap! Build a bridge out of your broken dreams & set those ships asail again!
46. Don't let the Devil frighten you out with his first "boo" & his lies. "Respect not their proud & haughty looks."
47. You've either got to surrender & make peace with your enemy, or you've got to fight.
48. Just like in any war: Where the battle's hot, you've got to put in the most troops to give it all you've got, & where you've pretty well got the situation in hand, you can kind of let up a little.
49. Try a little "umph" if you want to triumph.
50. If you didn't have the fight, you wouldn't appreciate the victory!

51. If you think the time's coming in this life when you'll no longer have to fight self & sin & the old man, you're mistaken.

52. If you can't take it, you're not going to make it!

53. Some things do get easier! You don't usually have to fight the same battles over again if you get the victory!

54. I like a battle! I love it!--Because I know I'm on the right side, the winning side, & I've got the right Commander & I'm proud & happy to live or die for Him.

55. Anything wonderful can happen in that little margin of time when you do not give up, but keep on believing & keep on praying!

56. It's a struggle to live!--It takes faith & courage & fight & a lot of real hard work to live the faith life!

57. People who faint, faint first in their minds; they sort of give up mentally or spiritually first.

58. Give me some men who are stout-hearted men,

Who will fight for the right they adore!

Start me with ten who are stout-hearted men,

And I'll soon give you ten thousand more!

59. Stand up, stand up for Jesus!

The strife will not be long.

This day the noise of battle,

The next, the victor's song.

60. The men of faith will challenge,

Both men & Satan's wrath.

But the beaten men will compromise,

And walk the beaten path.

61. Let your drooping hearts be glad;

March in Heavenly armour clad;

Fight, nor think the battle long,

For soon shall come the victory song.

62. All that is necessary for the triumph of evil is that good men do nothing.

63. That's what you joined the army for, to fight!

64. A good soldier knows how to fight--how to wield the weapon of the Word!

65. Hope never quits, faith never stops trusting, & love never fails!--If you keep fighting!

66. God didn't call you to a playground but a battleground.

67. The best way to stop an attack is to counter-attack! The best defense is an offense!

68. We are in a fight to the finish, & the victory is ours, praise be to God!

69. Don't depend on yesterday! Get inspired today!

70. An attacking initiative is what wins a war.

71. When things get tough, you've got to fight all the harder! When the going gets tough, the tough get going!

72. If it's worthwhile, it's worth fighting for.

73. We need to get more militant, more aggressive, more specific & go on the attack, take the offensive & hit the thing head on immediately!

74. How do you get the victory? You just keep fighting!

75. It's impossible to win a defensive warfare! To win a war you have to launch an attack!

76. Never let yourself get put on the defensive!

77. The size of a dog in a fight doesn't count as much as the size of the fight in the dog.

78. The trouble with some of us is that we stop trying in trying times.

79. Victory loses its value unless we use it as a means to even greater ends.

80. The Devil's kingdom's in distress,

When we wage our war & win success!

But the Devil's kingdom able to rest

When we don't fight & give our best!

81. Don't give in until you win!

82. The more difficult the obstacle, the stronger one becomes after hurdling it.

83. A good set of Triers beats a wagonload of Sighers!

84. With battles to fight & a war to win,

You need to be a soldier that never gives in!

85. "The voice of their father will encourage them to fight the battle!"
86. Victory isn't just walking across the goal line...it's struggling through opposition to the goal.
87. Fight discouragement!--Pray & read the Word!
88. May God give us fighters who like to fight for the Lord with the weapon of His Word & who enjoy defeating the Devil & who know they can't lose & who like to win victories!--Conquering heroes that like to live & fight & die for Jesus & their brethren & the truth!
89. Let's be fighters that know how to attack!--Who are always ready to give an answer to every man that asketh of us, who have the guts & the conviction to answer!
90. Fire back, fight back!: "Of course this is what we believe!--Of course this is what we teach!--It's Scriptural, it's God-given! We believe it, we practice it. So what the hell do you care?"--And the honest open-minded World will admire your guts for sticking up for your convictions & sticking to your guns instead of backwatering & backing down before the sickening self-righteous hypocrites!
91. I am not amazed or at all dismayed at the challenge of the Enemy. I like a fight! I like to prove that God's right!
92. My God, give us people with guts & gumption & the courage to fight back & trap the Enemy in their own words & challenge them & attack them & prove them wrong!
93. God help us & deliver us from cowards! Give us brave soldiers that know how to fight & throw it back in their teeth & kick'm in the teeth with the Truth! There's nothing you can quote out of my Letters that I'm ashamed of. There's nothing they can fire at us in public from those "secret" Letters that I'm ashamed of. Stand up & sock'm in the teeth with it!
94. If you don't know how to be bold, if you're not fighters, you don't belong to this outfit. Namby-pamby, milk & water, string-for-a-backbone cowards who have no guts or conviction & are ashamed & don't know what to say don't belong in this outfit!
95. You must be willing to fight for your convictions! This Revolution was not built by cowards--it was fought by brave strong warriors who challenged the Enemy!
96. When the Enemy comes up & challenges you, you don't go on the defensive, you don't start backwatering or sidestepping & coughing & wheezing & spitting & stammering & stuttering & getting rattled & scared & backing off. You attack him, you go on the attack, you take the initiative & sock it to'm!
97. Take the initiative! Get on the offensive! Attack! Be the aggressor, quit trying to defend your position. You don't have to defend it. Challenge them with it: When they say, "You do encourage sex, don't you, you do promote sex!", my God, yell in their face, "What the hell's wrong with sex!--Of course, we encourage it & promote it! God likes sex, God made it! Don't you have sex?--Don't you like it?"
98. God's Own children & His Own characters, His great men of the Bible, used some very clever tricks & political ploys & whatnot to get their rights, from Paul's demand that he be treated as a Roman citizen all the way back to Abraham & Sara, so there's nothing unscriptural or illegal about standing up for your rights & getting what's coming to you.
99. If you're a fighter like I am, you enjoy the battle. When you know you're fighting for the right you don't mind the battle. You enjoy a challenge & test to show your strength!
100. I don't do business with the Devil! I don't care to have him around, & I'll scrap it out with him any day before I'll reach any compromise & live with him!
101. We are at war with the Devil & the lies of the Devil! We are an army who is fighting spiritually, not with violence, not with arms, but with the Word of God. We are fighting for the Truth, & you have to be a fighter for the Truth of God even if they kill you!
102. Jesus was a revolutionary, He was not a reformist. He attacked the system of His day. He didn't attack the government because the government was of God, even the Roman government. But He attacked tooth & tong in no uncertain terms the false religious system of His day & the advocates of it & the participants of it & the leaders of it.
103. We're not reformists, we're revolutionaries. We're not trying to change the old system, we want to get rid of the system that is not of God & go back to what Jesus taught & the Apostles lived. We want to sweep clean, not patch up!
104. We're a bunch of rebels, rebels for the Lord, rebels against the System, rebels against convention, rebels against conformity & traditionalism & ceremonialism, but rebels like Jesus, Who was a Rebel for the Truth & a Rebel for the true naked Word of God!
105. A great deal of God's Work has to be to tear down the old in order to build the new, to tear down false conceptions, untrue ideas, shaky foundations, traditions of men, by which Jesus said, "Ye make the law of God of none effect."

106. We are waging a worldwide war!--Not on the side of the political left, not on the side of the political right, but on the side of the only One Who is really right, & that's God! It's a much bigger battle & we have much greater enemies!

107. The Lord & His angels & you are far more powerful than the Devil & his demons! Even Satan has to obey your commands in the Name of Jesus! He might fight against you for a while, like he is, but sooner or later he's going to have to knuckle under.

108. We who have Jesus have more power than Satan! We have more power than the demons, because we have the power of God & the powerful of His Spirit of Love! "At the Name of Jesus every knee shall bow!" (Phil.2:10).

109. You have to baptise yourself constantly in prayer, soak yourself in the Word, memorise & quote constantly to the Devil & to yourself. You have to wage a militant warfare against the Enemy!

110. We rebuke you, Satan, in Jesus' name & all your powers & angels & evil spirits. Thank You for Thy great mighty army, Lord, that surrounds us, that resists all the powers of Hell though they be let loose against us. Even one angel is enough to deal with them all! The angel of the Lord encampeth around them that fear Him & delivereth them! Thank You Lord for all Thy goodness & mercy. Help us to stay close to Thee in the charmed circle of Thy protection, in Jesus' name!

111. When you rebuke the Devil, you don't do it calmly. You get angry & practically yell & shout & curse & scream at him. You get so angry in the spirit (Eph.4:26,27.)

112. They'd have to kill me first before I'd let anybody take you or the children away from me. It would have to be over my dead body!

113. Just like two generals at war: God is the One who usually takes the initiative & the Devil can't act until after God's already acted because he doesn't know what God's going to do. Once in a while he tries to pull a fast one & act first, but usually whenever he does he makes the wrong step, he does the wrong thing, which literally hangs him, trips him & exposes him.

114. I'm not always all sweetness & love!--God is not only love, but the Word says He is also a consuming fire for the wicked! Jesus does not always bring peace. When people reject Him, He often brings a sword.

115. I believe in fighting back. I believe in fighting back with the Word & publicity & any kind of legal challenge which will give our reply publicity. But don't ever let it actually get to court. The System's got everything rigged to their advantage!

116. I believe in a propaganda reply. I believe in a reply to the lies of the Devil with the Word & the Truth. I believe in a final parting blast at the enemies to show them up for the liars they are or who they are.

117. "What fight your Father has & what marvellous love your Father David has for his children. Your Father loves a fight for the Truth!"

118. I've tried to avoid fights when I could possibly avoid them, but when it was impossible to avoid a fight, I've never backed down from fighting.

119. This is a war! If you are not willing to risk your life, you might as well quit! When the Enemy attacks, instead of crawling into your holes you ought to come out in full force & sock it to him, even if you have to die in the process. I just can't stand cowards! But I also don't believe in hanging around too long & trying to fight it out to the bitter end. You can't lick City Hall, especially the System with its own weapons designed for its own protection.

120. Every attack of the Enemy only results in greater publicity for the Truth & adds greater numbers to those who will follow the Truth.

121. There are times when the Enemy is firing that we'd better pretty much stick to our trenches & our shellholes a little while & not unnecessarily expose ourselves to the fire. It's when the heat is on that you have to be particularly careful & prayerful & wise.

122. The best defence is an offence & a counter-attack, even though it is dangerous. Any kind of an attack is dangerous in any man's army. When you go on the aggressive, on the attack, on the offensive, you're bound to have a few casualties, but that's the only way you win wars. You don't win them by fighting a defensive warfare.

123. Lord, give us the courage to stand up for our convictions & stick to our guns, Lord, of Your Word & the Truth. Help us not to pull any punches because of the little lies of the Devil. Help us all to continue to be faithful, diligent & wary of the evil devices of the Evil One. Help us not to allow ourselves to be ever caught in any of his traps, to watch our step & be wary & beware of the Enemy & his devices. Help us not to be afraid of the Truth, Lord, not to be afraid to tell Thy children the Truth or even the World the Truth.

124. You don't win by retreat, you win by attacking.

125. When the Enemy attacks, it really gets us on the stick & on the ball & back close to the Lord & praying & working & fighting back & revives us spiritually & kills that old lazy lethargy that sets in when everything is going to smoothly & so easy that we don't have to stir up ourselves or fight or work very hard.

126. The best thing to do is stay out of the Enemy's way when he starts screaming too loud. The screaming doesn't hurt you much, but when they start putting on the screws & the pressure, then that's time to get out of the way.

127. When you're being persecuted, the best thing to do is stop, & let them know you've stopped & you've left & you've gone & you're out of their hair, then they'll quit bothering you. That's what the Devil is after, he wants to get rid of you.

128. When the heat's on, you lie low undercover, & when the heat's off & people have forgotten about it & are interested in other things, you can sometimes sneak back in quietly undercover & do a little bit again, if you can get away with it.

129. In school I was a fighter for my faith! I frequently stood up for my faith & spoke out against what was being taught, & spoke out against the teachers & spoke out against the text books & against whatever was contrary to God's Word.

130. When you attack the Enemy, he tries to hit back. Nevertheless, God's Word says if you attack him with great faith, if you resist him, "he shall flee from thee". That doesn't mean you're not going to have a little fight before he runs. He may fight a little bit, but if you keep on fighting he can't take it, he will turn & run. When the Enemy comes in like a flood, the Spirit of God will raise up a standard against him.

131. He who fights & runs away lives to fight another day.

132. Discretion is sometimes the better part of valour.

133. Don't give up the ship too soon. Don't be rescued prematurely, & don't let them just scare you out without actually being driven out. The Devil tries to scare you out & just says "Boo!" & some people run.

134. We are not wicked & we have not done anything wrong but sometimes it's better to run away so we can live to fight another day.

135. There were times when Jesus & His disciples did hide out to avoid unnecessary trouble, but there were also times when they had to stand up & protect the sheep, especially from the verbal attacks of the enemies of the Truth. They usually tried to avoid contact with the religious Pharisees, but when the vipers kept picking on them to the point that it was confusing the sheep, Jesus would sock it to them so hard, refuting their lies, that He made them so mad that they wanted to kill Him. On these occasions He didn't try to hide, He was contending earnestly for the faith & the sheep.

136. Don't take the Devil's no for an answer, push ahead until you totally defeat him!

137. The Enemy always start shooting when you're going over the top & attacking him. It's proof that you're hitting him where it hurts & accomplishing something. It doesn't mean that you should turn around & run, it means you should keep fighting all the harder until the fighting is impossible.

138. All anger is not sin. The Apostle Paul tells his readers to "be angry, & sin not." To be altogether incapable of anger would be to offer no antagonism to the wrongs & oppressions of the World.

139. Never despair, but if you do, fight on in spite of despair.

140. Don't you understand the power of your father in the Spirit? I have power over all the demons of Hell & Satan & all the machinations of the Evil One! They're celebrating the victory of David your Father over Evil! Oh, there's no power that is greater than me & Jesus!

141. Once you're in the battle, it's too late to sit down & count the cost. You've either got to win or lose, & I hate to lose just by retreating, unless I'm really beaten. Once you're in the battle & engaged in these ministries, you almost have to keep fighting until they drive you off & think that they've gotten rid of you & to their way of thinking won the battle.

142. It's our general policy not to just get scared out by a few rumours & reports when the Devil says "Boo!" & our enemies start exposing us & we start getting bad publicity, but to keep right on going, sometimes taking advantage of the bad publicity to even give a harder final last ditch push.

143. You can hardly back out before you're even beaten without admitting defeat. Why give in & give up & retreat just because the Devil says "Boo!"? You almost have to continue until you're actually stopped.

144. "You must go & must march & you must conquer hearts at His command. You must obey, for this is the Will of God that ye enter in & possess the Kingdom, for this is your day, for the World is given unto you."

145. You've got to be militant, you've got to be positive, you've got to rise up & fight the Devil, not just be passive!

146. If you're a fighter, you've got to lose your temper sometimes & get angry at the Devil & sock it to him.

(See also No. K, 33, 99, 168, 171, 303, 551, 585R, 586, 597, 678, 727, 857, 980, 1375, 1376, 1401, 1420, 1425, 1432, 1454.)

147. 2SA.22:35,36 He teacheth my hands to war; so that a bow of steel is broken by mine arm. Thou hast also given me the shield of Thy Salvation: and Thy gentleness hath made me great.

148. PSA.144:1 Blessed be the Lord my strength, which teacheth my hands to war, and my fingers to fight.

149. MAT.16:19 And I will give unto thee the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on Earth shall be bound in Heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on Earth shall be loosed in Heaven.

150. JOH.18:36 Jesus answered, My Kingdom is not of this World: if My Kingdom were of this World, then would My servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is My Kingdom not from hence.

151. 2CO.2:14 Now thanks be unto God, which always causeth us to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the savour of His knowledge by us in every place.

152. 2CO.10:3-5 For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;) Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ.

153. EPH.6:10,11 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of His might. Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the Devil.

154. 1TH.5:8 But let us, who are of the day, be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love; and for an helmet, the hope of Salvation.

155. 1TI.1:18 This charge I commit unto thee, son Timothy, according to the prophecies which went before on thee, that thou by them mightest war a good warfare.

156. 1TI.6:12 Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

157. 2TI.2:3 Thou therefore endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ.

158. JUD.3 Ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.

159. REV.12:11 And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death.



*But seek ye first the Kingdom of God, & His righteousness; & all these things shall be added unto you (Mt.6:33).*

1. God is more concerned about saving your lives & their souls than saving money!
2. Better is little with the fear of the Lord than great treasure & trouble therewith (Pro.15:16).
3. The rich ruleth over the poor, & the borrower is servant to the lender (Pro.22:7).
4. Wilt thou set thine eyes upon that which is not? For riches certainly make themselves wings, they fly away as an eagle toward heaven (Pro.23:5).
5. Tipping is a way of loving! People judge you & how much you appreciate them by how generous you are.
6. Money is a good servant but a poor master.
7. He who will not economise will have to agonise.
8. The richest are the hardest to win & are also the poorest givers! The poor are the most receptive & generous!
9. Every religion in the World subsists on begging, & you could hardly give to a better cause than ours, a cause that is saving young people from moral, mental & physical destruction!
10. You can't take your money to Heaven with you, but that's about the only place you can go without it!
11. God can afford tips & it makes everybody happy!
12. When you can't pay bills, you gotta cut the frills!
13. Although a dollar is only six inches long, it is used to measure many things.
14. A dollar may not do as much for us as it used to, but then we don't do as much for a dollar either.
15. The secret of financial success is to spend what you have left after saving, instead of saving what you have left after spending.
16. A lot of people go in debt just to keep up with those who already are.
17. He is always a slave who cannot live on little.
18. Appearances can be deceiving; a ten-dollar bill looks the same as it did ten years ago.
19. The trouble with a good many cars today is that the engine won't start & the payments won't stop.
20. It's strange that people call money "dough"--dough sticks to your fingers.
21. One remarkable thing about the dollar is that when it floats, it sinks.
22. A lot of people just can't stand prosperity--but then, most people don't have to.
23. Beware of little expenses; a small leak will sink a great ship.
24. The fact is, the moment financial stability is assured, spiritual bankruptcy is also assured.--Mahatma Gandhi
25. Wealth is not his that has it, but his that enjoys it.
26. When money talks, the truth is silent.
27. If your outgo exceeds your income, then your upkeep will be your downfall.
28. Do you spend more than you make on things you don't need to impress people you don't have to?
29. A little inflation is like a little pregnancy--it keeps on growing.
30. Dollars & sense do not always travel together.
31. Pretending to be rich keeps many people poor.
32. I don't know of anything better than a woman if you want to spend money where it will show.
33. It's not that the gold is getting any more expensive--it's that the money is getting worthless!

34. It's all in how you use your riches that counts!
35. I don't mind giving money away, but I don't like to throw it away.
36. The Lord is very generous, but He's also a penny-pincher & wants to make sure every one of His pennies count!
37. Debts are unscriptural!
38. If you spend the nickels & dimes & the little coins very cautiously & judiciously, then God will probably trust you with dollars & more!
39. The Lord's servant is worth more than His money.
40. It's wrong, dishonest & a sin to borrow money you know you can't pay back!
41. Borrowing without repaying is both illegal & a sin, & God certainly will not bless you for it, & more likely will punish you for it!
42. When you pinch the pocketbook nerve, you pinch the most sensitive nerve most people have.
43. So often our policies are dictated or influenced by financial conditions, when finances shouldn't really have much to do with it! We ought to just obey the Lord!
44. Don't ever make the test of anything whether it brings in money or not.
45. Never discuss your finances with outsiders. Never discuss specific finances before anyone except those directly involved & who have to know.
46. Never pay cash for anything that you can buy on time & never buy anything you can possibly rent or get free, & the longer the time payments the better!--The End is near!
47. Your lives are priceless & your work for the Lord is absolutely without price! Your safety, your security, your convenience, your health, your happiness, your comfort & your efficiency of operation are the most important considerations, not the cost!
48. Money answereth all things & you'd better get used to answering with it! Tipping pays, so just consider what you must give a good investment.
49. A man in debt is caught in a net.
50. A penny saved is a penny gained.
51. Great profits, great risks.
52. Loans & debts make worries & frets.
53. No bees, no honey--no work, no money.
54. God's idea is not to share the poverty, but to share the wealth!
55. Most of you already know the deceitfulness of riches, but poverty won't get you anywhere, either.
56. The cheapest thing is not always the best thing.
57. They that preach the Gospel shall live of the Gospel!
58. When you find yourself in a financial bind you are either: (1) not desperate, (2) wasteful, or (3) disobedient!
59. Never get out of the habit of pinching the pennies.
60. Watch out about going into something for the money, instead of the ministry.
61. Want something aside for when you're old?--All investments in God pay 100-fold!--10,000%
62. Finances are one way God has of controlling us. Either He'll dry it up or increase it, according to the way He wants us to move.
63. Money talks! In fact, money squawks!
64. All of us are more precious than gold & silver & jewels because we'll last forever!
65. What's money? God's got plenty of it! It's talent & God's children & real workers for the Lord that are scarce!
66. The Gospel am free, Brethren, but it costs somethin' to pipe it to ya!
67. Ask for donations! Don't undersell the whole revolution with cut-rate religion and bargain-counter copouts!
68. It's good to have money & the things money can buy. But it's good, too, to check up once in a while & make sure you haven't lost the things money can't buy.
69. I'm all for trying to do things the fastest, easiest, cheapest, most efficient & fruitful way.
70. Always try to accomplish more on less.
71. By timely mending, save much spending.
72. The secret of economy is to live as cheaply the first few days after payday as you did the last few days before.
73. As the missionary said to the rich visitor from the States, "If there's anything else you need, just let us know & we'll explain to you how to do without it!"



74. I don't believe in living on credit, I don't believe in living on borrowed money. I believe in trying to live within your income.

75. Don't forget to say "God bless you" when you tip someone, so they'll be sure & give God credit!

76. The Rich are often a greater hindrance than a help in preaching the Word of God, because they usually want to control what they give!

77. God is not against riches. Some people have the wrong idea. He's not against wealth. He's only against riches & wealth in the hands of too few when too many don't have enough! God thinks wealth is great, & will give you all you can possibly stand, if you'll give it away & share it so everybody has enough!

78. God will not bless waste!

79. Help us to think things through & analyse things & weigh things & count the cost & figure out how to save money, & not have to wait till we don't have it to figure out how to save it.

80. What's money & time & space to the Lord?--It's personnel He needs!

81. Money is like manure.--It's no good unless you spread it around.

82. The only solution to the financial problems of the World today is the Antichrist solution, the total abandonment of today's World system of economics, the World monetary system, then an establishment of his credit system.

83. A balanced budget is when you keep your expenses within your income & you live on what you earn.

84. We need to save, to economise, to cut everything to the bone of absolute essentials & necessities that we cannot do without, & eliminate the luxuries & the little fineries the Lord has let us enjoy for awhile. "The days of this ignorance He winked at, but now He calls us to repent" (Acts 17:30) & get busy & try to economise & save money & prepare to live on less & institute austere measures that will help us to survive!

85. The more people living together, the more economically they can live!

86. Eventually we're going to have to economise, so why not do it now? Eventually!--Why not now?

87. If we can get by without it then, why not get by without it now?

(See also No.189, 210, 211, 212, 301A, 316C, 332A, 336A, 652, 665, 667, 673, 682, 684, 697, 701, 702, 804, 840, 841, 842, 843, 866, 885, 893, 903, 928, 934, 1081, 1105, 1216, 1271, 1276, 1320, 1321, 1433.)

88. DEU.8:18 But thou shalt remember the Lord thy God: for it is He that giveth thee power to get wealth.

89. PSA.37:16 A little that a righteous man hath is better than the riches of many wicked.

90. PSA.37:21 The wicked borroweth, and payeth not again: but the righteous showeth mercy, and giveth.

91. PSA.62:10 If riches increase, set not your heart upon them.

92. PRO.11:28 He that trusteth in his riches shall fall.

93. PRO.15:27 He that is greedy of gain troubleth his own house.

94. PRO.22:7 The rich ruleth over the poor, and the borrower is servant to the lender.

95. PRO.23:4 Labour not to be rich: cease from thine own wisdom.

96. PRO.28:20 A faithful man shall abound with blessings: but he that maketh haste to be rich shall not be innocent.

97. ECC.10:19 Money answereth all things.

98. MAT.6:19 Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon Earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal.

99. MAT.19:23 Then said Jesus unto His disciples, Verily I say unto you, That a rich man shall hardly enter into the Kingdom of Heaven.

100. ACT.2:44,45 And all that believed were together, and had all things common; And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as every man had need.

101. ROM.13:8 Owe no man anything, but to love one another.

102. 1TI.6:10 For the love of money is the root of all evil.



*I am the Lord thy God... Thou shalt have no other gods before Me (Ex.20:2,3).*

1. God will not tolerate your putting anything else first before Him and His Work and human souls and their eternal salvation!
2. The most important time you have to spend is with the Lord!
3. Take time to be holy.--Wholly His and whole in body, mind, and spirit!
4. If you put anything else before the Lord, it has become your God.
5. To neglect your fellowship with the King of kings because you're so busy with the affairs of the kingdom can be disastrous to your spiritual life and communion with the Lord!
6. Dear Lord, keep us from having our lives so full of good things that we don't have time for the best.
7. God may appreciate the bedroom slippers you're making for Him, but He'd rather have you!
8. God made all kinds of love & He expects you to enjoy them all in Him, according to His rules--putting Him first.
9. God will not take second place even to His service!
10. "Thou shalt have no other gods before Me"--not even lost souls!
11. God will not take second place! He will not let Himself in the person of His Prophets be pushed back into the background!--With God, it's all or nothing at all!
12. Witnessing is not the most important thing. Our fellowship with God is most important.
13. Christ is not valued at all unless He is valued above all.
14. God's voice will fade if attention isn't paid!
15. Don't ever tell God you haven't got time for Him to reveal something to you.
16. God will not tolerate being put in second place nor His work neglected!
17. You always have time for the things you put first.
18. "For behold the bridegroom cometh! Come ye out therefore to meet him, & waste not your oil upon the unworthy but save the best for your betrothal, unto Him whose right it is! For not all are worthy!"
19. He knows, He loves, He cares!  
Nothing His Truth can dim!  
He gives the very best to those  
Who save the best for Him!
20. "You must not squander your strength on too many children, lest you have none left for your Lord!"
21. "You must seek first the King & His Kingdom! Then shall all these others be added unto you by His power & His strength & His Kingdom & His might & in His time, if you give first place to Him!"
22. "The Queen's bedchamber is a sacred hallowed spot where only the chosen may enter, & where she must save herself for her King & rest in His arms from her labours! All may not enter therein, but she must choose only those who are called & chosen & can do their best for their Queen, to strengthen her & help her & uphold the crown & the honour of the Kingdom, in love for her Lord first of all!--And she shall find rest to her soul!"
23. The first place must belong to Him in peace & quietness & rest & feeding & fellowship.
24. You've been drafted by the Lord, into His Army, and His duties come first.
25. Whatever you put before God, He'll take away.
26. "Save first place for Him & His Word & His Love & His power, & from this shall your strength be!"
27. The Lord is your Lover & you can only belong to Him. No one else can truly possess you & nothing else can ever satisfy you.

28. You don't belong in this Family if you put anything first but God Himself! He will not take any other place but first place--either in your life, heart, mind, family, strength, time or economics.

29. Deliver us, Lord, from this spirit of "busyness"!--Too busy for you, & too busy for Your Prophet!

30. Probably the greatest mistake of sincere Christians is to make a god of God's service!

31. When you first wake up, before you call anybody or talk to anybody, talk to God, for God's sake!--Get your orders from Him for the day!

32. Help us, Lord not to be so pressured that we put off our time with Thee. Help us even as we go out this morning, to bask in Thy sunshine for a little while & to breathe deeply the refreshment of Thy wonderful fresh air, to put Thee first each day, to spiritually bask in Thy sunshine, rest in Thy arms, drink deeply of Thy Word & inhale of Thy Spirit.

33. If you love the material World more than the spiritual, then it becomes a form of worship of the creation more than the Creator, & God in His Spiritual World refuses to take second place in your affections & your interests or even in the activities of your life.

34. The Lord doesn't mind your being beautiful & having nice things & a good time & enjoying life, as long as you continue His Work & help others & don't neglect the Lord, the Word, your prayer life, your devotions, & all the things that you need to do.

35. To seek first, means foremost & above all!--Before everything else, above everything else, beyond everything else, & more than anything else! It means working for God & others more than for yourself, more than for money, more than for riches, more than for pleasure, more than for health, more than for government, more than for anything else.

36. Help us, Lord, to be willing to sacrifice & to do without some things so that we can enjoy the most important essential & necessary things, like Thy Word, Lord.

(See also No.74, 98, 191, 320, 697, 934, 1040, 1380, 1427.)

37. GEN.22:12 And He said, Lay not thine hand upon the lad, neither do thou any thing unto him: for now I know that thou fearest God, seeing thou hast not withheld thy son, thine only son from Me.

38. EXO.20:3,5a Thou shalt have no other gods before Me. Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God!

39. EXO.34:14 For thou shalt worship no other god: for the Lord, whose name is Jealous, is a jealous God.

40. DEU.6:5 And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might.

41. DEU.10:12,13 And now, Israel, what doth the Lord thy God require of thee, but to fear the Lord thy God, to walk in all His ways, and to love Him, and to serve the Lord thy God with all thy heart and with all thy soul, To keep the commandments of the Lord, and His statutes.

42. DEU.32:16,21 They provoked Him to jealousy with strange gods. They have moved Me to jealousy with that which is not God; they have provoked Me to anger with their vanities.

43. 2KI.17:35b,36 Ye shall not fear other gods, nor bow yourselves to them, nor serve them, nor sacrifice to them: But the Lord, Who brought you up out of the land of Egypt with great power and a stretched out arm, Him shall ye fear, and Him shall ye worship, and to Him shall ye do sacrifice.

44. PSA.84:10 For a day in Thy courts is better than a thousand. I had rather be a doorkeeper in the house of my God, than to dwell in the tents of wickedness.

45. PSA.96:4 For the Lord is great, and greatly to be praised: He is to be feared above all gods.

46. ISA.42:8 I am the Lord: that is My name: and My glory will I not give to another, neither My praise to graven images.

47. MAT.6:24 No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

48. MAT.6:33 But seek ye first the Kingdom of God, and His righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.

49. MAT.10:37,38 He that loveth father or mother more than Me is not worthy of Me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me. And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after Me, is not worthy of Me.

50. LUK.10:41,42 And Jesus answered and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art careful and troubled about many things: But one thing is needful: and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

51. ACT.5:29 Then Peter and the other apostles answered and said, We ought to obey God rather than men.

52. 1CO.10:31 Whether therefore ye eat, or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God.

53. COL.3:1,2 If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. Set your affection on things above, not on things on the Earth.

#### **41. FOOLISHNESS & SHALLOWNESS** --{page 332}--



*Forsake the foolish, & live; & go in the way of understanding (Pro.9:6).*

1. It is very sad for God's children to be silly & act silly & talk silly & be guilty of foolishness!
2. I just don't believe in risking your life just for a thrill. We have enough thrills in our life without deliberately risking getting killed.
3. If fifty million people say a foolish thing, it is still a foolish thing.
4. One fool makes many.
5. Empty vessels make the most noise.
6. Thousands of nuts hold a car together--but one can scatter it all over the road.
7. Lord deliver us from sickening shallowness & froth & foam & garbage, with no real substance, no meaning, no message, no power, no spirit & no results!
8. It is dangerous to have people around us & around our Homes who are not in tune with the Lord, because if you don't spank'm, God will!--And you're apt to pay the bills for it!
9. You can't be led of the flesh when God's Spirit may know differently & often does!
10. Fellowship with the World is enmity against God!
11. If you still hunger for fellowship with the World, there's something wrong with you spiritually!
12. If you're leaning to your own understanding & forgetting all about acknowledging the Lord or listening to the voice of His Spirit to lead & guide you, then you're apt to fall into one of the Devil's traps in an unguarded moment, & it's dangerous business!
13. We ought to be so thankful for our own fellowship that we shouldn't have to go seeking out the fellowship of the World.
14. If you sleep with dogs you'll get up with fleas.
15. Don't let others drag you down to their level, you pull them up to yours!
16. When you don't have the wisdom of the Spirit, then you're awful dumb!
17. It's dangerous for people on our team to be shallow, not deep in the Lord, not deep in the Spirit, but shallow in the flesh, carnal & carnally-minded. That was Saul's problem. He began to trust his own wisdom & his own arm instead of the Lord & the prophet, & look where it got him! He lost the Kingdom & his place in it, & the whole thing had to be given to somebody more spiritual who was led of the Spirit & the Lord & not just his own mind & wisdom. We are not smart enough, any of us, & we need to cling to the Lord & seek His guidance continually.
18. We're in a dangerous business & we have got to stay close to the Lord & follow the Lord & make sure it's God's will, not just rest on the arm of the flesh & natural reasoning like Saul did.
19. "Love not the World, neither the things that are in the World! For the love of the World is enmity with God!" (1Jn.2:15, Ja.4:4.) So if you still have a hankering for those things, watch out! That's a fifth column in your

own heart! That's a poison in your own soul! It's the devil's own tool, it's a hole in the dike, if you still have a temptation toward these things.

20. No wonder God's got to send the Tribulation--to purge & purify & make the Church white & get rid of their foolishness!

21. We can make such foolish mistakes & ridiculous decisions if we're out of the spirit & dwelling in the flesh & natural reasoning.

22. You cannot fill your mind and heart with Worldly wisdom, the foolishness of man, without it affecting your spirit.

23. Shallow witnessing brings shallow results.

24. Shallowness, superficiality, manpleasing & hypocrisy are all many know in the World, & they are so thankful for an opportunity to share their deepest thoughts & feelings or even fears.

(See also No.198, 340, 780, 784, 856, 930, 1377, 1511, 1512.)

25. **SA.12:20,21 Yet turn not aside from following the Lord, but serve the Lord with all your heart; And turn ye not aside: for then should ye go after vain things, which cannot profit nor deliver; for they are vain.**

26. **SA.13:13 And Samuel said to Saul, Thou hast done foolishly: thou hast not kept the commandment of the Lord thy God, which He commanded thee: for now would the Lord have established thy kingdom upon Israel for ever.**

27. **JOB.15:2-5 Should a wise man utter vain knowledge, and fill his belly with the east wind? Should he reason with unprofitable talk? or with speeches wherewith he can do no good? Yea, thou castest off fear, and restrainest prayer before God. For thy mouth utterest thine iniquity, and thou chooseth the tongue of the crafty.**

28. **PSA.39:5,6 Behold, Thou hast made my days as an handbreath; and my age is as nothing before Thee: verily every man at his best state is altogether vanity. Selah. Surely every man walketh in a vain shew: surely they are disquieted in vain: he heapeth up riches, and knoweth not who shall gather them.**

29. **.53:1 The fool has said in his heart, There is no God. Corrupt are they, and have done abominable iniquity: there is none that doeth good.**

30. **.94:11 The Lord knoweth the thoughts of man, that they are vanity.**

31. **.119:113 I hate vain thoughts: but Thy law do I love.**

32. **.9:6 Forsake the foolish, and live; and go in the way of understanding.**

33. **.10:13 In the lips of him that hath understanding wisdom is found: but a rod is for the back of him that is void of understanding.**

34. **.12:23 A prudent man concealeth knowledge: but the heart of fools proclaimeth foolishness.**

35. **PRO.15:2 The tongue of the wise useth knowledge aright: but the mouth of fools poureth out foolishness.**

36. **.15:14 The heart of him that hath understanding seeketh knowledge: but the mouth of fools feedeth on foolishness.**

37. **.18:6,7 A fool's lips enter into contention, and his mouth calleth for strokes. A fool's mouth is his destruction, and his lips are the snare of his soul.**

38. **.22:15 Foolishness is bound in the heart of a child; but the rod of correction shall drive it far from him.**

39. **.26:4,5 Answer not a fool according to his folly, lest thou also be like unto him. Answer a fool according to his folly, lest he be wise in his own conceit.**

40. **.5:3b A fool's voice is known by multitude of words.**

41. **.7:25 I applied my heart to know, and to search, and to seek out wisdom, and the reason of things, and to know the wickedness of folly, even of foolishness and madness.**

42. **.10:11-15 Surely the serpent will bite without enchantment; and a babbler is no better. The words of a wise man's mouth are gracious; but the lips of a fool will swallow up himself. The beginning of the words of his mouth is foolishness: and the end of his talk is mischievous madness. A fool also is full of words: a man cannot tell what shall be; and what shall be after him, who can tell him? The labour of the foolish wearieth every one of them, because he knoweth not how to go to the city.**

43. **.12:36,37 But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment. For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.**

44. .7:18-23 And He saith unto them, Are ye so without understanding also? Do ye not perceive, that whatsoever thing from without entereth into the man, it cannot defile him; Because it entereth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats? And He said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man. For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness: All these evil things come from within, and defile the man.

45. .6:45 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is good; and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is evil: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.

46. .21:34 And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares.

47. .8:6-8 For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God.

48. .5:19a,21 Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these;...Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the Kingdom of God.

49. .4:17 This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind.

50. .5:4 Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks.

51. .5:6,7 Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience. Be not ye therefore partakers with them.

52. .2:18 Let no man beguile you of your reward in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind.

53. TI.1:4-7 Neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which minister questions, rather than Godly edifying which is in faith: so do. Now the end of the commandment is charity out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned: From which some having swerved have turned aside unto vain jangling; Desiring to be teachers of the law; understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm.

54. TI.2:16,17 But shun profane and vain babblings: for they will increase unto more ungodliness. And their word will eat as doth a canker.

55. .3:9 But avoid foolish questions, and genealogies, and contentions, and strivings about the law; for they are unprofitable and vain.



*If ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you (Mt.6:14).*

1. We deserve Hell, punishment & the whole works, but we get to escape it because we believe in Christ & receive His forgiveness & His punishment on the cross in our place.

2. You have a Defence Lawyer who pleads your case: He says to the Judge, "I have already paid for this sin!"

3. Your kisses, Jesus, kiss away their hurts and their tears and their sins and their diseases!

4. Regret can be an appalling waste of energy--you can't build on it. So acknowledge your sin, accept God's forgiveness, & get on with living for His honour & glory.

5. Before the Throne of God above

I have a strong, a perfect plea:

A great High Priest, Whose Name is Love,  
Who ever lives and pleads for me.

6. God pardons like a mother, who kisses the offense into everlasting forgetfulness.

7. You can never be too bad for Jesus--only too good.

8. There's an all-seeing Eye watching you--but He's loving, gentle, tender, forgiving and waiting with open arms.

9. David and some others made some big mistakes, but they had big repentances, so they had big forgivenesses.

10. King David was one of the worst sinners that the World has known, but he was also one of the greatest saints, because he knew he was totally dependent on the love & the mercy & the grace of God for forgiveness.

11. Until we confess, God won't forgive.

12. God can forgive us for our sins, but it's hard or sometimes impossible to undo the damage they've done, & we often have to suffer & watch others suffer for them for the rest our lives!

13. It is only love that makes God's mercy work.

14. You can't appreciate God's mercy until you've known the Devil's justice.

15. God will forgive anything except total unbelief.

16. If I have wounded any soul today,

If I have caused one foot to go astray,

If I have walked in my own wilful way,

Dear Lord, forgive!

17. He that cannot forgive others, breaks the bridge over which he must pass himself; for every man has need to be forgiven.

18. It also takes two to make up after a quarrel.

19. A good memory is fine--but the ability to forget is the true test of greatness.

20. It is only the forgiving who are qualified to receive forgiveness.

21. One of the great arts of living is the art of forgetting.

22. Before you flare up at someone's faults, take time to count ten--ten of your own.

23. Forgiveness is the noblest revenge.

24. His heart was as great as the world, for there was no room in it to hold the memory of a wrong.

25. Your mercy is a sacrifice! To forgive someone is a sacrifice! To be sorry is a sacrifice.
26. Our own weaknesses make us sympathetic with other's frailties.
27. Let's forgive one another, as God, for Christ's sake, hath forgiven us!
28. The remedy for wrongs is to forgive & forget them.
29. Forgiveness is the fragrance the flower sheds on the heel that crushed it.
30. If we're only going to be forgiven the way we forgive others & be shown the mercy that we show others, some people are going to be in a pretty bad fix!
31. To err is human, to forgive divine!
32. To forgive & forget a wrong is the best revenge.
33. You have a tremendous advantage over the person who slanders you or does you a wilful injustice: you have it within your power to forgive that person.
34. If they are truly repentant, you must forgive those who have wronged you, & truly seek forgiveness of those whom you have wronged & take them by the hand back into your circle of love & fellowship & happy, joyful labours & pleasures together.
35. He who injured you was either stronger or weaker. If he was weaker, spare him!--If he was stronger, spare yourself!
36. Forgiving starts with your asking the other person to forgive you.
37. There's a time to wink as well as to see.
38. Sympathy is the result of thinking with your heart.
39. If you don't have love enough to forgive, you don't have love--because forgiveness is love!
40. God's Mercy is unlimited, His Love is boundless, the Love of God is greater than His laws. Love is God & God is always. It's like a stream, like a river that just keeps flowing no matter what, because of the dew of Heaven--Jesus!
41. The blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin!--Past sin, present sin, parental sin, every sin!
42. How can you not comfort others with the comfort wherewith ye yourselves are comforted? How can you not extend the same mercy that He has extended to you? How can you not at least give them a chance?
43. God doesn't even remember your sins, why should you?
44. Going mad with remorse for your yesterdays, makes the cross of Christ of none effect.
45. Every day of the past is beyond our reach & we should leave it there.
46. Before Jesus found us we were all black sheep--but He washed us with His blood & made our wool as white as snow!
47. Justice has no mercy. Justice just decides if a thing is right or wrong & that's it. But love & mercy, though they know the sinner's wrong, they forgive.
48. If you forgive people when they really shouldn't be forgiven, then God has to forgive them, because He said, "Whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them." (Jn.20:23.)
49. But why should you forgive people who know what they're doing & are causing trouble, if they're not repentant & if they don't come & ask you for forgiveness?
50. God can still forgive you for your past errors & mistakes & He can still mightily use you in mighty battles & victories & great things to come--if you'll just be meek & quiet, humble & obedient.

(See also No.18, 25, 75, 531, 583, 594, 606, 635, 641, 647, 648, 681, 718, 719, 753, 763, 1247, 1371, 1396, 1547.)

51. .18:26 And the Lord said, if I find in Sodom fifty righteous within the city, then I will spare all the place for their sakes.
52. .20:6 And shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love Me, and keep My commandments.
53. .32:14 The Lord repented of the evil which He thought to do unto His people.
54. .14:18a,19 The Lord is longsuffering, and of great mercy, forgiving iniquity and transgression. Pardon, I beseech Thee, the iniquity of this people according unto the greatness of Thy mercy, and as Thou hast forgiven this people, from Egypt even until now.
55. **SA.24:14,16 Let us fall now into the hand of the Lord; for His mercies are great. When the angel stretched out his hand upon Jerusalem to destroy it, the Lord repented Him of the evil, and said to the angel that destroyed the people, It is enough: stay now thine hand.**
56. **CH.21:13 And David said unto Gad, I am in a great strait: let me fall now into the hand of the Lord; for very great are His mercies: but let me not fall into the hand of man.**



57. .18:25 With the merciful Thou wilt shew Thyself merciful; with an upright man Thou wilt shew Thyself upright.

58. .32:1,2,5 Blessed is he whose transgression is forgiven, whose sin is covered. Blessed is the man unto whom the Lord imputeth not iniquity, and in whose spirit there is no guile. I acknowledged my sin unto Thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid. I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the Lord; and Thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin. Selah.

59. PSA.51:1 Have mercy upon me, O God, according to Thy lovingkindness: according unto the multitude of Thy tender mercies blot out my transgressions.

60. .51:10 Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me.

61. .86:5 For Thou, Lord, art good, and ready to forgive; and plenteous in mercy unto all them that call upon Thee.

62. .103:8-13 The Lord is merciful and gracious, slow to anger, and plenteous in mercy. He will not always chide: neither will He keep His anger for ever. He hath not dealt with us after our sins; nor rewarded us according to our iniquities. For as the Heaven is high above the Earth, so great is His mercy toward them that fear Him. As far as the east is from the west, to far hath He removed our transgressions from us. Like as a father pitieth his children, so the Lord pitieth them that fear Him.

63. PSA.103:17 The mercy of the Lord is from everlasting to everlasting upon them that fear Him.

64. .130:3,4 If Thou, Lord, shouldst mark iniquities, O Lord, who shall stand? But there is forgiveness with Thee, that Thou mayest be feared.

65. PRO.3:3,4 Let not mercy and truth forsake thee: bind them about thy neck; write them upon the table of thine heart: So shalt thou find favour and good understanding in the sight of God and man.

66. .16:6 By mercy and truth iniquity is purged: and by the fear of the Lord men depart from evil.

67. .24:16 For a just man falleth seven times, and riseth up again: but the wicked shall fall into mischief.

68. ISA.1:18 Come now, and let us reason together, saith the Lord: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool.

69. .43:25 I, even I, am He that blotteth out thy transgressions for Mine Own sake, and will not remember thy sins.

70. ISA.44:22 I have blotted out, as a thick cloud, thy transgressions, and, as a cloud, thy sins: return unto Me; for I have redeemed thee.

71. ISA.54:7,8 For a small moment have I forsaken thee; but with great mercies will I gather thee. In a little wrath I hid My face from thee for a moment; but with everlasting kindness will I have mercy on thee, saith the Lord thy Redeemer.

72. .55:7 Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him return unto the Lord, and He will have mercy upon him; and to our God, for He will abundantly pardon.

73. .3:22,23 It is of the Lord's mercies that we are not consumed, because His compassions fail not. They are new every morning: great is Thy faithfulness.

74. .7:18,19 Who is a God like unto Thee, that pardoneth iniquity, and passeth by the transgression of the remnant of His heritage? He retaineth not His anger for ever, because He delighteth in mercy. He will turn again, He will have compassion upon us; He will subdue our iniquities; and Thou wilt cast all their sins into the depths of the sea.

75. .5:7 Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.

76. .5:23,24 Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

77. .6:14,15 For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your Heavenly Father will also forgive you: But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

78. .9:13 But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice.

79. .18:21,22 Then came Peter to Him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times? Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven.

80. .11:25,26 And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in Heaven may forgive you your trespasses. But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in Heaven forgive your trespasses.

81. .6:36,37 Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful. Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven.

82. .7:47,48 Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little. And He said unto her, Thy sins are forgiven.

83. .23:34a Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do.

84. .20:23 Whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whose soever sins ye retain, they are retained.

85. .26:18 To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in Me.

86. ROM.5:20b But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound.

87. CO.2:6-11 Sufficient to such a man is this punishment, which was inflicted of many. So that contrariwise ye ought rather to forgive him, and comfort him, lest perhaps such a one should be swallowed up with overmuch sorrow. Wherefore I beseech you that ye would confirm your love toward him. For to this end also did I write, that I might know the proof of you, whether ye be obedient in all things. To whom ye forgive any thing, I forgive also: for if I forgave any thing, to whom I forgave it, for your sakes forgave I it in the person of Christ; Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices.

88. .1:7 In Whom we have redemption through His blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of His grace.

89. .3:13 Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye.

90. JAM.2:13 For he shall have judgment without mercy, that hath shewed no mercy; and mercy rejoiceth against judgment.

91. 1JO.1:9 If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

92. JO.2:12 I write unto you, little children, because your sins are forgiven you for His Name's sake.

(See also JON.4:2,10,11; MAT.18:23-35.)



*So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be My disciple (Lk.14:33).*

1. This is God's first test to every disciple: To see if he loves Him enough to put Him first by forsaking all immediately to follow Him now! The Lord seems to make the entrance exams hardest of all!

2. Once you have determined to serve the Lord, you can't lose--anything but your life!--Or maybe your wife or husband or children or mother or father or houses & lands or your money--but what is that in comparison to all He offers you?

3. The Lord brings you out so He can bring you in.

4. Don't remind yourself of your losses. Forget the past and live for today!

5. The worst thing you can do is constantly remind yourself of what you've forsaken.

6. A woman who was called to be a missionary but instead married a millionaire showed my Mother through her mansion & said sadly: "See all that I traded God for?"

7. The more He gives you, the more you're going to have to forsake!

8. You can't just "forsake all" once.--You've got to keep doing it every day!

9. You have to keep leaving Egypt every day, or you're going to build up a new Egypt.

10. If you keep forsaking more every day, the Lord is going to keep giving you back more.

11. Forsaking all is not just something you do once & for all, you have to constantly be forsaking in your heart. Every day you're forsaking the Devil's voice & temptations to try to suck you back into the old ways & the old system!

12. When you give everything to God, then He takes care of everything! But when you hold something back for yourself, then you must take care of it!

13. Sometimes God makes you forsake a thing or lay it on the altar just to see if you're willing to forsake all to follow Him, when He intends to give it back to you--like Isaac.

14. Don't hand me any of that stuff about "Then why did God give children to me, just to take them away again?" That's why He gives us everything, damn it!--Just to give back to Him for His Glory! If I hadn't given my children to God you wouldn't be here!

15. Give to God as though you never expect to get it back.

16. When He could trust me with them, God gave me back many things that I gave up for Him.

17. People's pasts really have to be buried or they're apt to plague them later.

18. If you don't keep forsaking every day, you keep accumulating everyday.

19. How can you take something away from the man who's given up everything?

20. You don't have to be rich to be attached to your riches. I knew a poor man who was attached to his shack, he loved & worshipped his little shack. He wasn't willing to give it up. You can even be a poor man & still trust in the little wealth you have. It's not how much you give that counts, it's how much you have left!

21. You will never know the fullness of the joy of serving God to the utmost until you have forsaken all to follow Jesus Christ.

22. You don't have to have very much to have "great" possessions. It only has to be just a little bit bigger than God in your eyes. It only has to keep you from serving God. It only has to be just enough to keep you from breaking loose & shaking loose & serving God.

23. I don't understand how anybody can give God less than everything.

24. Why can't we, the Family, make at least the same sacrifices for the Lord that soldiers & sailors & marines & businessmen make for their jobs & their work?

25. When you consider that military men go away for months & years at a time to fight their nation's battles in far-off fields & even suffer injury, sickness, death & all kinds of dangers away from home & family just for the sake of patriotism or their country, or even the draft because they're forced to go, & businessmen spend most of their time away from home on the road or at the office, I'd like to know why some of our people are so reluctant to be willing to leave home & family & wife & children & forsake all, as many used to do readily & without second thought, to serve the Lord in this Family in extremely important & urgent work which can't be done at home or with their family but has to be done alone in the field?

(See also No.B, F, S, 23, 34, 42, 203, 225, 251, 314A, 510, 542, 568, 641, 657, 673, 721, 727, 731, 778, 783, 880, 897, 1332, 1653.)

26. .45:10,11 Forget also thine own people, and thy father's house; So shall the King greatly desire thy beauty: for He is thy Lord; and worship thou Him.

27. **MAT.13:44** Again, the Kingdom of Heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field; the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath and buyeth that field.

28. .16:25,26 For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for My sake shall find it. For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole World, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

29. .19:21 Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in Heaven.

30. **MAT.19:29** And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for My Name's sake, shall receive an hundredfold, and shall inherit everlasting life.

31. **MAR.10:29,30** And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for My sake, and the Gospel's, But he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the World to come eternal life.

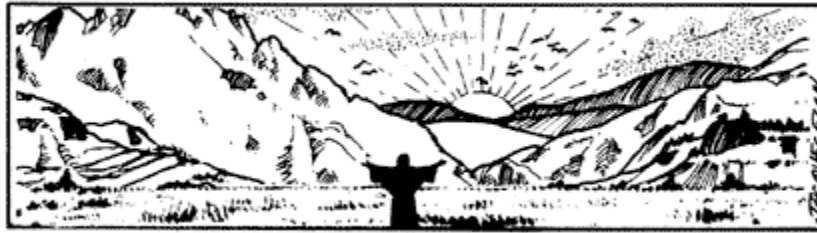
32. .12:33 Sell that ye have, and give alms; provide yourselves bags which wax not old, a treasure in the Heavens that faileth not, where no thief approacheth, neither moth corrupteth.

33. .14:33 So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be My disciple.

34. **PHI.3:8** Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ.

35. .3:13,14 Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

36. .11:27 By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king: for he endured, as seeing Him Who is invisible.



*Where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty. And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free (2Cor.3:17; Jn.8:32).*

1. Thank You Lord for the freedom You've given us & the unity You've given us & the liberty You've given us & the joy You've given us & the happiness to enjoy life to the full!
2. Eternal vigilance--the price of freedom!
3. Liberty is wrong when it hinders a weaker one.
4. Thank God for sex & beauty & music & happiness & love! Thank God we're free to enjoy it all!
5. We are only bound by God's Law of Love & this gives us a lot of freedom, but in another way it is the most binding law of all!--You've got to love everybody, which is one of the hardest things of all to do!
6. Those who forge chains for others are themselves the slaves of bigotry!
7. "Four walls do not a prison make, nor iron bars a cage!" You can be in prison anywhere if your heart & spirit are not free but are bound by Satan's chains, but you can be free even behind iron bars if your heart & spirit have been set free by Jesus.
8. Our character is shown by what we would do if every restraint were removed.
9. I'd rather have too much freedom than not enough!
10. The Devil's people preach freedom but they don't have it!
11. The price of absolute total security is the sacrifice of liberty & freedom!--The price of liberty & freedom is the sacrifice of security!
12. The Lord in some ways sets us free, but in other ways He binds us & ties us to Himself.
13. We're love slaves, the best kind of slavery in the World!--We never want to be free to do anything but serve Jesus forever for love!
14. Communism, Marxism, Leninism, Socialism, Americanism or any other kind of ism might be able to overcome the World with guns & bullets & propoganda of the mind, but only God can change heart! Only His truth can bring freedom!
15. Each new blast of the power of God and His Words has broken the chains that bound you, shattered the locks of your prison doors, destroyed the walls that surrounded you and set you free.
16. True Christianity is not a restriction but a release.
17. I believe in freedom & I practice it too!
18. Freedom is our business & it's free!
19. Let's sing a song for Quixote!  
Let's sing a song for the free!  
Let's sing a song though we're dotey!  
For we're bound for Eternity!
20. We have been liberated from the narrow confines of carnal human limitations into the glorious freedoms of the realms of the reality of His Spirit!
21. Each age or generation of the Church has taken another step toward freedom from the harsh restrictions of the law to the total freedom of love through the grace of God!
22. If your freedom is used wisely, you'll be given more. But if it is used foolishly and dangerously, it may be taken away from you.
23. Have you got enough love to be trusted with enough liberty to live life to the full?
24. Will you use your liberty to heal and help, or harm and hinder? The answer is up to you.

25. If you are strong enough in spirit and filled with His Love, you can be trusted with His liberty.
26. My delight is to please the Lord, so the Lord lets me do as I please!
27. Liberty means responsibility. That is why most men dread it.
28. We must be willing to pay a price for freedom, for no price that is ever asked for it is half the cost of doing without it.
29. The cause of freedom is the cause of God.
30. Freedom is best seen through prison bars.
31. If you can't speak the truth, then you don't have freedom!
32. Don't turn liberty into license to do as you please unless it's what the Lord pleases. You can do as you please only if it's what the Lord pleases.
33. Only sinful man had to be clothed!--Only sin brought the need to hide reality! Salvation sets us free from the curse of clothing & the shame of nakedness! We're as free as Adam & Eve in the garden before they ever sinned! If you're not, you're not saved!
34. Freedom costs something. It usually entails sacrifice & hard work & a real battle to stay free.
35. The right to do right is worth the fight!
36. The big lie cannot tolerate the truth, & they that are bound bitterly resent the freedom of the free.
37. We live in a World that's full of laws against freedom, so although God has given us freedom ourselves, we cannot be totally free because we live in a World that's not free.
38. The Devil is the author of the System, the god of this World. He is the author of their whole System & they have laws which are against freedom, so watch out you don't violate their laws, at least not where they can catch you.
39. The greatest danger is safety & security in the valley, because then you lose that freedom & liberty of the mountain.
40. Oh the Spirit, it's the Spirit!  
Yes that's the life for me!  
In the Spirit, by the Spirit,  
You can live a life that's free!
41. We are free, free, free! Thank God!--Free to do His Will & free to follow Him whithersoever He leadeth!--To abandon the boundaries of man for the boundless abundance of God!

(See also No.0, 57, 286, 302C, 335A, 647, 648, 1017, 1253.)

42. .116:16b Thou hast loosed my bonds.
43. .119:45 And I will walk at liberty: for I seek Thy precepts.
44. .8:31,32 If ye continue in My Word, then are ye My disciples indeed; And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.
45. .8:36 If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.
46. .8:1-5 There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death. For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending His Own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit.
47. **1CO.8:9 But take heed lest by any means this liberty of yours become a stumblingblock to them that are weak.**
48. **CO.8:12 But when ye sin so against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, ye sin against Christ.**
49. **1CO.10:23 All things are lawful for me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but all things edify not.**
50. **.5:1 Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage.**
51. **.5:13 For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty; only use not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another.**



*Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them (Mt.7:20).*

1. We may be nuts, but we grow trees & feed the hungry.
2. If our fruit is souls, more Christians, what are our leaves?--Our works!
3. "His leaf also shall not wither" means your works are not going to wither, dry up & blow away!
4. If God has blessed the method with good fruit, then the method is good.
5. Good works will produce good fruit.
6. Look at all our good fruit--souls saved, lives reclaimed, missionaries made, miraculous healings & a most marvellous witness throughout all the World in every way, shape & form!--In word & song & music & all kinds of languages!
  7. I have good fruit, so I must be a good tree!
  8. I don't care how you do it, with whom you do it, where you do it or whatever way you do it, just bring forth good fruit--souls into the Kingdom of God!
  9. Kill not the goose that lays the golden eggs.
  10. They don't like our method, they don't like our means, they don't like our unorthodox measures, but they can't deny the fact that it gets results & it has good fruit!
  11. You have to judge each individual case of a couple wanting to mate on its own merits. Is it good for them? Do they have real genuine love for each other, not just physical attraction? Is it helpful or harmful? Does it have a good effect on others? Is it good for God's work?
  12. The monuments I want after I am dead are monuments with two legs going around the World--saved sinners telling about the salvation of Jesus Christ!
  13. Better some tough, dinky, little fruit that remains, than a proliferous crop that rots & dies on the vine before it can be preserved!
  14. The Lord is like the sun & we're His vineyard, & He's able to shine on us & chase away all the shadows & doubts & fears & cold, & warm the bosom of our Earth so we bring forth fruit.
  15. The spire of His inspiration causes a spiritual orgasm which fills you with His Spirit in spirits of the Seed of the Word of God, which when conceived in responsive hearts, brings forth fruit, newborn babes into the Kingdom of God!
  16. Why insist on deliberately & stubbornly hanging on in a worn-out, overworked, saturated field where you've already reaped your harvest, unless the Lord gives you some special revelation for it? Why not do what the Lord says & go into some more fruitful field white & ripe unto harvest where you can get greater results, instead of insisting on trying to glean a little bit here & there in an already harvested & exhausted field where it's dangerous & difficult, if not impossible.
  17. Any ministry that brings more trouble & arouses more antagonism & more criticism & stirs up more enemies than it does good is not a good ministry. It merely aggravates the situation & makes it much more difficult for others who could have continued a long time in the ministries they're in, bearing good fruit.
  18. Just because a ministry has extremely wide exposure, publicity & huge witnessing stats does not necessarily mean that it is fruitful & profitable & has been bearing the right kind of fruit. Good fruit means more souls won, more disciples won & more Family Members joined. "This is the Will of My Father," Jesus said, "that you should bear much fruit & that your fruit should remain." (Jn.15:16)
  19. The acid test as to whether a ministry is actually fruitful or not, is not just huge witnessing stats. That's fine, but if it doesn't get lasting results & bear remaining fruit it's unprofitable. It doesn't matter how much seed a

farmer sows--if he doesn't get a crop, if it doesn't sprout & grow to bear more fruit, he's going to go broke & starve & he won't survive & his field won't survive nor his work. It's got to bear fruit. It's got to reap results. It's got to be profitable & fruitful or he'll go out of business.

20. If you're not doing the kind of seed sowing that bears fruit, if you're scattering your seeds on hard stony ground or shallow ground or amongst the thorns & thistles & briars that choke it out, instead of on good ground that bears fruit, then you're in an unprofitable ministry.

21. Show me something besides just seed stats & the size of your field & the volume of seed you've sown. Let me see the results, the fruit, the finished product: Souls won, disciples joined, new Family Members, new workers, new missionaries for the Lord.

22. If you want to continue for a while longer & still bear a little fruit that remains, with lasting results, disciples, members & support, through quiet wise unpublicised personal witnessing, then you'd better keep your mouth shut except where it really pays & bears fruit & remains, & don't get yourself thrown out too soon & stopped prematurely through unwise, insecure, excessive public exposure & dangerous publicity to your enemies & aggravating them to expose & oppose you to the bitter end of any ministry in that area.

23. One thing you ought to do is analyse your results & see if you're getting the kind of results you should be getting to see if it's the kind of a ministry that it should be. You need to count how many actual disciples & members that you have gotten out of that kind of ministry.

24. It's a good question to ask yourself at the end of each day: "What have I done with my life this day? What did I do for Jesus?" It's good to reflect on these things & assess these values as to whether you're obeying the Lord & pleasing Him, that He might say to you that day, "Well done, thou good & faithful servant, enter thou into the joy of thy Lord!"--In peaceful, contented sleep, thankful & satisfied that you have done your best & you can sleep in peace.

25. If the tree doesn't bear proper fruit, then we must dig about it & dung it, fertilise, prune it & trust that it will bear more fruit.

26. Even the branches that are in the Lord, even those that bear fruit, the Lord works over so they'll even bear more fruit.

27. Let us fear the Lord lest we be unfruitful, lest we be cut off for our unfruitfulness & cast away.--Not lost, not unsaved, but cast aside as being no longer useful, because we have failed to get the job done.

28. This is the ministry that has to survive--the Word! Others can be cut off & lopped off if we have to. Didn't He say that's why they pruned it & cut off branches?--Not so it will bear less fruit, but more fruit, so that the remaining branches can be more fruitful! (Jn.15:2)

29. We must not only win souls, but we must make disciples of those souls, or we are going to become a fruitless, dying Church like so many, dying of self-genocide for failure to be productive & self-propagating!--And like some religions which teach celibacy & are anti-sex, & therefore barren & childless & dying or already dead!

30. Mass media is a whole lot safer & easier than personal evangelism with less sacrifice, less danger, more support, more churchy cooperation & governmental toleration, but it doesn't make for real revolutionary disciples or real revolutionary missionaries!

(See also No.A, P, 189, 203, 214, 319, 344, 545, 565, 731, 1028, 1376, 1382, 1389, 1525, 1551.)

31. .14:4 Who can bring a clean thing out of an unclean? not one.

32. .1:3 And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that bringeth forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper.

33. .13:19a The desire accomplished is sweet to the soul.

34. **MAT.3:8 Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance.**

**35. MAT.3:10 And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: and therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.**

**36. MAT.7:16-20 Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.**

**37. MAT.13:22,23 He also that received seed among the thorns is he that heareth the Word; and the care of this World, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the Word, and he becometh unfruitful. But he that received seed into the good ground is he that heareth the Word, and understandeth it; which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some an hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.**



38. .10:36-38 Say ye of Him, Whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the World, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God? If I do not the works of My Father, believe Me not. But if I do, though ye believe not Me, believe the works: that ye may know, and believe, that the Father is in Me, and I in Him.

39. JOH.12:24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.

40. JOH.15:4 Abide in Me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in Me.

41. JOH.15:8 Herein is My Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be My disciples.

42. .1:10 That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God.

43. .2:18 Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith and I have works: show me thy faith without thy works, and I will show thee my faith by my works.

44. PE.1:5-9 And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge; And to knowledge temperance; and to temperance patience; and to patience godliness; And to godliness brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness charity. For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that ye shall neither be barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. But he that lacketh these things is blind, and cannot see afar off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins.

45. JO.11 Beloved, follow not that which is evil, but that which is good. He that doeth good is of God: but he that doeth evil hath not seen God.

#### 46. THE FUTURE

--{page 358}--



*Surely the Lord God will do nothing, but He revealeth His secret unto His servants the prophets (Amos 3:7).*

#### **1. "A SURE WORD OF PROPHECY!"**

1. The Lord told Daniel to close up the book & seal up the prophecy until the End, but right now this is the End! So now we're supposed to open the book, break the seals & read it & understand it.

2. Every word the Bible ever said is true & has come true, & every prophecy it ever uttered has been fulfilled except the ones that are yet to come, & they'll be fulfilled just as surely as the ones that have been fulfilled in the past.

3. How like a string of beads the Bible is! All the prophets of God have been sent to give the people pearls, beads of truth! But it takes the Spirit of God to put everything in proper order, sorted out & made into something useful!

4. The Bible not only contains history, it also tells the future. It's not just a history book, it's a news book. It not only tells you about yesterday, it tells you about tomorrow!

5. The Bible's the only News Book in the World! The newspapers are not really newspapers, they're history papers. They tell you what's already happened. The Bible tells you what's going to happen.

6. We're not to fret for tomorrow, which means we're not to worry about tomorrow, but the Lord sure has had a lot to say about tomorrow, so He certainly must want us to be informed about tomorrow!

7. The mate of every prophecy is its fulfilment! (See Is.34:16.)
8. God's Word is specific! God's Word is very clear! Its prophecies are very plain & tell you exactly who & where & even when!
9. What God's determined & prophesied, He's going to do! Whatever God has said He's going to do, He is going to do! Not one shall lack her mate, not one prophecy shall be without fulfilment, every single one shall be fulfilled!
10. Any Christian who is ignorant of the Future & the basic events & the basic characters is a pretty ignorant Christian & is a sad, poor witness to others who are hungry to know the future.
11. That's the whole point of prophecy: To let you know what's going to happen so you won't worry about it. You'll know what's going to happen!
12. To be forewarned is to be forearmed! To understand what's going to occur is to be prepared to face it & take it as it comes & hopefully survive it!--At least certainly to understand what you're going through & to know what's happening!
13. God's Word says, "Blessed is he that readeth & they that hear the Words of this prophecy!" (Re.1:3.) It takes an effort, it's work to try to understand Bible Prophecy & to "study to shew thyself approved unto God, rightly dividing the Word of Truth." (2Ti.2:15.)
14. We who know His Word & His prophecies & promises for the future will never be surprised with a "mighty widening of the eyes" like those who have not discerned the signs of the times! For we will be prepared! PTL!
15. .34:16 Seek ye out of the Book of the Lord, and read: no one of these shall fail, none shall want her mate: for My mouth it hath commanded, and His Spirit it hath gathered them.
16. .42:9 Behold, the former things are come to pass, and new things do I declare: before they spring forth I tell you of them!
17. .13:19 Now I tell you before it come, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe that I am He.
18. .12:10 None of the wicked shall understand; but the wise shall understand.
19. **PE.1:19,21 We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in your hearts. For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost!**

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 1 of the *Book of the Future*.)

## 2. "THE LAST DAYS!"

1. The "Last Days" as used in the Bible started with the first coming of Christ!
2. "Now is the hour come of which all prophets have spoken! Thou art upon the threshold of the door of these things of which I have already told thee."
3. If God did not step in & intervene in this last hour of History, man would completely destroy the Earth & totally annihilate himself!
4. Now is the Endtime of which all the prophets spake! You are the generation--the Last Generation--of whom all the prophets spoke, & they dreamed of your day!
5. We are living in a very unusual day!--A lot of amazing things are going on, but a lot of sad things too.
6. Every time you turn on the television, it roars! Every time you turn on the radio, you can hear the waves roaring!--The sea of the peoples of the Earth, roaring in the Last Days! (Lk.21:25)
7. The curtain has been drawn aside on the last scene of Earth's great drama, & the act has begun & it cannot stop now! It is impossible! It will keep right on going, fulfilling these promises of the Word of God until all these things be fulfilled!
8. To say the least, we're living in every exciting times & there are soon going to be some very big global changes made!
9. I am convinced that the real Time of the End that His Word speaks of from cover to cover is these last few years in which we are now living! According to His Word, we are already living in the Time of The End!
10. Beloved, the time is growing shorter. The days are becoming more evil & things are moving faster & faster as time goes on. (Eph.5:16; 2Ti.3:1.)
11. The End is closer than ever! "Be prepared!"
12. .1:1,2 God, Who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, hath in these last days spoken unto us by His Son.

13. **CO.10:11** Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the World are come.

14. **PE.1:19,20** Christ...Was foreordained before the foundation of the World, but was manifest in these last times for you.

15. **JO.2:18** Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that Antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time.

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 2 of the *Book of the Future*.)

### **3. "SIGNS OF THE END!"**

1. God wants us to know the "times & seasons", & throughout the Bible He gives us multitudes, thousands of literal, specific predictions of the future & what its times & seasons will be like!

2. Today you & I are watching the signs of the End happen! We are seeing these things fulfilled! And our generation will not pass away until it's all been fulfilled! To us all these signs are flowers & blossoms & beautiful fulfillments of His prophecies & signs of His soon-coming.

3. Every time I see God fulfil prophecy & we're another step closer to the End, I say, "Hallelujah! Thank God! Soon it will all be over!"

4. Keep your eyes on Israel & Jerusalem, that's the time clock. That's where you'll see & hear the things that are really going to cause things to happen! Israel has meaning for the whole World, it's a kind of pivot, a turning-stone of World History & Bible Prophecy, the focal point.

5. Jesus said, "When you see these things, or these signs come to pass, look up, your redemption draweth nigh!"--So obviously, He wants us to "see" & "look" at the Signs of His Coming being fulfilled before He returns, so that we can "discern the Signs of the Times"! (Lk.21:28; Mt.16:3.)

6. God's Word contains countless specific "Signs of the Times" which have come to pass in our generation, proving that we are now living in the Time of the End! These signs include: An upsurge in "famines, pestilences & earthquakes in divers places" (Mt.24:7), "the Gospel being preached in all the World for a witness to all nations" (Mt.24:14), "many running to & fro, as knowledge is increased" (Dan.12:4), a great "falling away" (2Th.2:3) from the Lord as "evil men & seducers wax worse & worse" (2Ti.3:13) & "the love of many grows cold" (Mt.24:12), resulting in "distress of nations upon the Earth & men's hearts failing them for fear!" (Lk.21:25,26)--The great "Red Beast" has risen (Rev.13:1-5; 17:3) & is "coming in peaceably & obtaining the kingdom by flatteries" (Dan.11:21) & will soon conquer the entire World (Rev.13) & reign for 7 years (Dan.9:27), until Christ returns & establishes His Kingdom of genuine peace on Earth! (Da.2:44)

7. Every sign points to it & there is every indication that you're going to be living through these very days of the Endtime!

8. His Word is full of "signs of the times"!--Signs of the Last Days, of the Endtime, signs that you should look out for & expect, so that you will know when you are near the End & how near the End & what is going to happen at the End!

9. All of the signs are pointing to the End! And from all we can gather from His Word & what the Lord has shown us, the Antichrist is going to appear within the next few years, months or even weeks or days!

10. .16:2,3 When it is evening, ye say, it will be fair weather: for the sky is red. And in the morning, it will be foul weather today: for the sky is red & lowring... Ye can discern the face of the sky; but can ye not discern the signs of the times?

11. .24:3-5,24 What shall be the sign of Thy Coming, and of the end of the World? Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in My Name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many. For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.

12. .24:12 And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.

13. **TI.3:13** **Evil men & seducers shall wax worse & worse, deceiving & being deceived.**

14. **PE.3:3,4** **There shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts, and saying, Where is the promise of His Coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the Creation.**

15. .24:37-39 As the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark. And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

16. .12:4 But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, even to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased.

17. .2:3,4 The chariots (cars) shall be with flaming torches in the day of His preparation, and the fir trees shall be terribly shaken. The chariots shall rage in the streets, they shall jostle one against another in the broad ways: they shall seem like torches, they shall run like the lightnings.

18. TL3:1,2,7 This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy. Ever learning, & never able to come to the knowledge of the Truth.

19. TL4:1 Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils.

20. TH.2:3 Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day (of Christ's Second Coming) shall not come, except there come a falling away first!

21. TL4:3,4 For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears: And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.

22. .24:14 And this Gospel of the Kingdom shall be preached in all the World for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come!

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 3 of the *Book of the Future*.)

#### 4. "ANTICHRIST'S RISE & REIGN!"

1. The Bible predicts that in the last days of man-made regimes on Earth, a totally Godless anti-Christ World government will arise, led by a Devil-possessed dictator, Satan incarnate, who will bring a false peace on Earth & a counterfeit utopia, & its price will be enforced worship of himself as the imitation Messiah!

2. The Devil is being given his last fling.

3. The Antichrist comes on the scene with a 7-Year Pact to reign seven years. It'll be the smartest piece of politicking & diplomacy ever engineered!

4. This one big promise he makes is called the Holy Covenant, in which he promises the World peace, religious freedom, Jerusalem internationalised & no more war between the Jews & the Arabs & the Christians.--He promises them everything!

5. The Antichrist will rise to power first through the covenant of Peace, & then only later on, during the last 3-1/2 years of his reign, does he finally resort to the last extreme resort of the Atomic War to blot out his worst enemy, Babylon, the Great Whore, the U.S.A., with the help of his ten kings of Europe.

6. The Antichrist, the leader of Russia, will not only invade Israel, but he will make Jerusalem his capital. He will set up his headquarters there, his palace, & he will rule the whole World from there for at least 3-1/2 years.

7. The Antichrist is going to yield himself utterly & totally to the Devil, just the way we yield ourselves to God! He will be the Devil in the flesh--the god of this World--who is going to run the World & command it to worship him, & slaughter many who refuse.

8. Look how the World is being prepared for a mechanical god, an Electronic Brain, a Computer Deity, which they will then be willing to worship because it is their own creation, the work of their own hands!

9. They rejected the true Messiah, they refused to receive the truth, so God will send them strong delusion that they might believe a lie!--The Antichrist, the false God, the fake Saviour, the phoney Messiah!

10. The Antichrist government is of God to teach man a lesson, to give man just what he deserves.--Man worships the Devil, so he's going to get the Devil's own government! He worships himself, so he's going to be run by a superman!

11. Man's greatest & best government will be a total failure without God, & will come crashing down around his ears.

12. The Antichrist will reign for seven years: The first half will be a more-or-less general World peace, & the second half will be 3-1/2 years of "Great Tribulation" such as the World has never known!

13. The whole World is waiting for a superman, a god-man who can solve all their problems & answer all their questions & heal all their economic ills & unite all their politics & end all their religious squabbles & stop all the wars & bring peace & union to all nations.

14. Man's final World government is going to seemingly be the most perfect government the self-righteous heart of man could ever contrive, the most idealistic, the most fair, the most compassionate, the most equal, the most sharing.--It will be like trying to have Christianity without Christ!

15. If there was ever any place where a mastermind's compromise agreement was needed, it's Jerusalem!-- The Jews say they will never let it go, & the Arabs say they will never let them keep it. So some kind of a compromise has to be wrought to solve this very very difficult problem.

16. Anyone who could solve this pressing crisis over Palestine, & Jerusalem in particular, would certainly be considered a mastermind & a genius & a superman & no doubt all the World will wonder after him!

17. It is in the midst of the "week", or 3-1/2 years into the 7-year Covenant period, that the Antichrist changes, abolishes the newly reinstated Jewish sacrificial worship, profanes the altar, & exalts himself as God.

18. One of these days soon, when "He Who now letteth is taken out of the way" & the restraints of the Holy Spirit of God are lifted, like a dam being opened or removed, a flood of iniquity is going to circle the World under the reign of the Devil himself in the person of the Antichrist!

19. No wonder the Antichrist is so powerful & such a superman & wonder-worker! Satan will at last be cast out of Heaven &, in his fury, knowing that his time is short, he will possess this Antichrist, this Beast, & make him a Superman, a Devil-man, the Devil in the flesh, like Jesus was God in the flesh!

20. The time is soon coming when paper money will no longer be used as a medium of exchange! The money medium of exchange will be replaced by a very remarkable credit system in which every person in the World who belongs to the System will bear a credit number, without which he can neither buy nor sell!

21. The whole World will soon be on this credit system with no currency, no cheques, no paper money, & you, the World, won't even need any more credit cards, because you will be your own credit card with the Mark or Number of the Beast on your hand or in your forehead!

22. The Mark of the Beast is going to be much more serious than we had ever dreamed!--Not merely for the purpose of identifying you as one of the Beast's people, but to make you literally one of his absolute soul-slaves so that you no longer have control over your own mind or body or actions, but you are a complete absolute automaton governed by the central computer.

23. The Lord has already got us sealed! And the Devil can never take that away from us by any amount or any kind of force whatever.

24. The Bible says that anybody who accepts the Mark of the Beast is going to be damned, so obviously no truly saved Christian is going to accept it!

25. The Antichrist is apparently either going to rise out of Egypt or have something strongly to do with Egypt.--So you'd better keep your eyes "turned towards Memphis"!

26. **TH.2:1,3,4 Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto Him. Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day (of Christ's Second Coming) shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the Son of Perdition; Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God.**

27. **TH.2:7-9 For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only He who now letteth (holds back) will let, until He be taken out of the way. And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the Spirit of His mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of His Coming: Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders.**

28. **.8:23-25 And in the latter time, when the transgressors are come to the full, a king of fierce countenance, and understanding dark sentences, shall stand up. And his power shall be mighty, but not by his own power: and he shall destroy wonderfully, and shall prosper, and practise, and shall destroy the mighty and the holy people. And through his policy also he shall cause craft to prosper in his hand; and he shall magnify himself in his heart, and by peace shall destroy many: he shall also stand up against the Prince of princes; but he shall be broken without hand.**

29. **.9:27 And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week (7 years): and in the midst of the week (after 3-1/2 years) he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate.**

30. **.11:21-24 He shall come in peaceably, and obtain the kingdom by flatteries. And with the arms of a flood shall they be overflowed from before him, and shall be broken; yea, (he's) also the prince of the covenant. And after the league made with him he shall work deceitfully: for he shall come up, and shall become strong with a small people. He shall enter peaceably even upon the fattest places of the province; and he shall do that which his fathers have not done, nor his fathers' fathers; he shall scatter among them the prey, and spoil, and riches: yea, and he shall forecast his devices against the strong holds, even for a time.**

31. **.13:2-4 And the dragon (Satan) gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority. And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the World wondered**

**after the Beast. And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the Beast: and they worshipped the Beast, saying, Who is like unto the Beast? Who is able to make war with him?**

**(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 4 of the *Book of the Future*.)**

### **5. "TRIBULATION!"**

1. Jesus said that the Tribulation will begin "when ye shall see the Abomination of Desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place." (Mt.24:15,21.) When you see it standing there, you'll know the Tribulation has begun! And from then till Jesus' Coming will be only 3-1/2 more years!

2. You're going to have to have the power of God & the wisdom of His Spirit to survive those days!

3. That Last Day is going to be a day of miracles & the supernatural, to protect His children.

4. The night is going to be the nightmare of the Tribulation, & the day the Coming of Christ.

5. The forces of evil will never be able to completely destroy God's true children!

6. We'll be witnessing to the last day, even in the very capital of the Antichrist, who will be trying to exterminate us!

7. No matter what happens or how the Antichrist & the Enemy try to pursue us & kill us & torture us & make us worship him & take his Mark & bow down to his Image, nothing is going to stop us!

8. You are to obey the "powers that be" (Ro.13) in all but two things: You are not to stop witnessing for Christ, neither are you to deny your faith by receiving the Mark of the Beast.

9. If you love Jesus, you will refuse the Mark of the Beast, because you'll have God's Mark in your forehead & hand! (See Rev.7:3 & 9:4.)

10. Only those who have the seal of God in their foreheads, His Own Children, the true believers who have the genuine Jesus in their hearts, will be hidden & spared by the miracles of God until the Coming of Christ when they will join Him in the air!--The only way out will be up!

11. God is going to protect us & God is going to keep us, a lot of us, if not most of us, supernaturally, miraculously, powerfully, in many ways, & the message will get out all the more in spite of everything the enemies do!

12. We're going to march triumphant, protected by God, right straight through the Tribulation from beginning to end, in the face of our enemies!

13. "Now when they shall fall they shall be holpen with a little help." (Dan.11:34.) And when you get a little help from Jesus, let me tell you, that's all the help you need!

14. "In the World ye shall have Tribulation, but fear not, for I have overcome the World & ye shall have peace!" (Jn.16:33) Praise God!--Peace of mind & peace of heart ever though there's war all around you!

15. The Tribulation is probably going to be the most glorious time the Church has ever had, with the greatest witness God has ever given the World!

16. In the Tribulation we're going to have the greatest power of the Lord we have ever had!--The greatest outpouring of the power of the Spirit & the greatest witnessing the Church has ever done!

17. I believe we're going to have a time of greater power than even the Early Church, with greater manifestations, mightier works than have ever been done before, & mightier witnessing! The Gospel is going to be preached in all the World for a witness unto all nations, PTL! Amen? "Where iniquity doth abound, grace doth much more abound!" (Ro.5:20)

18. You're going to win a lot of souls in that day, you know that?--Because a lot of people are going to believe you then, & a lot of people are going to need salvation & need the good news you have to tell them. And you're going to be a great encouragement to millions of people throughout the Earth who are going to seek you & seek your answers.

19. "They that understand among the people shall instruct many!" (Dan.11:33.) Our major job will be to stand up as God's strongest witnesses before both the Church & the whole World & to explain to them what's happening & to lead & encourage & feed God's children till the very End!

20. "Ye indeed are they upon whom the ends of the Earth are come. Ye indeed are they of whom all the prophets have spoken. Ye are My witnesses of the Last Day of whom I have spoken throughout the Ages by all My holy prophets. Ye indeed are they that shall be strong & that shall do great & mighty exploits & shall instruct many in the ways of Truth & shall open the Book by My mighty power & by the wisdom of My Spirit & shall reveal these secrets unto others."

21. Thank God you have the preparation that prepares you for anything that's going to happen, & that's Salvation!--Knowing Jesus & knowing that you're saved. Then no matter what happens, sudden death is sudden glory!

22. If God has to rain down manna from Heaven to feed us, if He's gotta call down fire from Heaven to defend us, we are going to continue to witness until Jesus comes!--And I dare anyone to try to stop us!

23. By mighty miracles, signs & wonders, God is going to preserve much of the Church unto the very End, because they're going to be here when He comes. PTL!

24. The horrors of the Tribulation are for the wicked!--To protect you till the End!

25. There will be literally millions who will reject the Mark of the Beast & refuse to fall down & worship his Image, & who will even as nations rebel against the Antichrist & fight him!

26. The Bible says that anybody who accepts the Mark of the Beast is going to be damned, so obviously no truly saved Christian is going to accept it!

27. Although the Beast commands that no one can buy nor sell without the Mark & that anyone who refuses to worship his Image should be killed, we will refuse!

28. The Tribulation period will be the end of any kind of association with the System whatsoever for true Christians. It will be impossible to survive except by miracles of God & faith & living by faith in a survival situation, totally & entirely independent from the System, without its Mark & without its approval & without its benefit.--Start now!

29. As the World slips into this new Dark Age of antiChrist, anti-God savagery, if we, as Christians, do not hole up in the "catacombs" beneath "Rome", we're not going to survive! We will have to go underground!

30. Even though the Antichrist will be allowed to overcome us physically, obviously destroying the organised temporal power of the Church, he will not & cannot overcome us spiritually! The Lord says, "And they"--the Church--"overcame him by the Blood of the Lamb, & by the word of their testimony; & they loved not their lives unto the death!" (Rev.12:11.)

31. The worse things get, the more God's Spirit is going to be poured out from on high to help us withstand the dark evil forces that will be warring against us!

32. There's going to be a great harvest of souls won to His Kingdom in that last hour of Earth's horrible history!--A great harvest of souls that you're going to help reap!

33. However we witness, whether we live or whether we die as martyrs for Jesus, "laying down our lives for our friends" (Jn.15:13), we live & die for the Lord & for Love & for others!--And we will do so till the very End of the World, witnessing for Jesus till He comes!

34. Beloved, don't fear the Tribulation if you love the Lord! Don't worry about that last 3-1/2 years! Yes, the Antichrist is going to be after our skin, & his anti-Christ followers are going to be on our tails trying to get us, but let me tell you, there's going to be a lot more on their tails, not just trying, but getting them!

35. Even if you have to go through it, in some way He's going to keep you. (Rev.3:10)

36. He is able to keep us through anything, everything, & I'm certain that He wants to spare us to minister to others, to help & encourage & inspire faith & glorify Him.

37. When His judgements fall on the wicked, they usually miss His children or His children are spared from them.

38. The Lord is able to keep you right in the middle of it all. So you don't ever have to worry!

39. Are you ready? Probably not!--But you can get ready now by reading, studying & learning His Word, & giving your full time to the Lord, your whole worship, & serve the Lord & love the Lord with all your heart, all your strength, all your mind, everything you've got, starting right now!--Until the very End! Amen?

40. Only the wrath of the wicked is vented on the Children of God in the Tribulation, but all the wrath of God is poured out on the persecutors!

41. The Tribulation period is going to be a defeat for churchianity & the so-called "holy people" but not for the true church of God, the genuine Christians!

42. During the Tribulation there is going to be a lot of Hell, in fact the most Hell the World has ever known, but the World is going to get most of it, not us!

43. During the Tribulation there is going to be a tremendous revival & great outpourings of the Spirit, mighty manifestations of miracles & power & protection!

44. I think the Tribulation is probably going to be one of the greatest, if not the greatest revival that the World has ever known!--The last great outpouring of the Spirit, the mightiest we have ever seen, with the most magnificent miracles, signs & wonders!

45. I think the Tribulation is going to be our last great revival, our final great witness, our last great harvest of children & teenagers, probably by our teenagers!

46. The days ahead are probably going to be the greatest of all! There may be more trouble than ever before, but there'll be more help & more power & greater evangelisation.

47. The Tribulation is actually something to look forward to in a way because of the mighty events that are going to take place.

48. .8:11 Yea, he (the Antichrist) magnified himself even to the Prince of the Host, and by him the daily sacrifice was taken away, and the place of His sanctuary was cast down.

49. .11:31-33 And arms shall stand on his part, and they shall pollute the sanctuary of strength, and shall take away the daily sacrifice, and they shall place the abomination that maketh desolate. And such as do wickedly against the covenant shall he corrupt by flatteries; but the people that do know their God shall be strong, and do exploits. And they that understand among the people shall instruct many.

50. .24:15,21 When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand:) For then shall be Great Tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the World to this time, no, nor ever shall be.

51. .11:3,5,6 And I will give power unto My two witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred and threescore days (3-1/2 years), clothed in sackcloth. And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and devoureth their enemies: and if any man will hurt them, he must in this manner be killed. These have power to shut Heaven, that it rain not in the days of their prophecy: and have power over waters to turn them to blood, and to smite the Earth with all plagues, as often as they will.

52. .12:6,13,14,17,11 And the woman (the Bride, the Church) fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days (3-1/2 years). And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the Earth, he persecuted the woman. And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time (3-1/2 years), from the face of the serpent. And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ. And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death.

53. .13:5-8 And there was given unto him (the Antichrist) a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months. And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme His Name, and His tabernacle, and them that dwell in Heaven. And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them; and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations. And all that dwell upon the Earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the Book of Life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the World.

54. .13:15-18 And he (the False Prophet) had power to give life unto the Image of the Beast, that the Image of the Beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the Image of the Beast should be killed. And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a Mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads. And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the Mark, or the name of the Beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the Beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six.(666!)

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 5 of the *Book of the Future*.)

## **6. "ATOMIC WAR!"**

1. According to Revelation 18, God is going to make short shrift of the Whore in a sudden deadly blow that will almost totally destroy her with fire!--Sure sounds like an atomic first strike on the U.S.A.!

2. Babylon the Great Whore is surely being fulfilled in America today, who will surely try to go to Israel's rescue, but it will bring about the downfall of them both, as is so clearly predicted in the Bible!

3. If God didn't step in, mankind would commit suicide!--If God didn't step in within the next few years & stop it, man would wipe himself off the map! This is why Jesus prophesied of the Last Days, "Except those days be shortened (or cut off), there should no flesh be saved!" (Mt.24:22.)

4. Because the Bible definitely indicates that Russia & the supporters of the Antichrist are going to come out on top & win when the Atomic War comes & the pre-emptive strike comes, I believe Russia's going to make it & destroy the U.S. first.

5. What conditions do you think will prevail immediately after such a war in which the losing leading countries of the war are destroyed? God has put it into exact words & called it "The Great Confusion"!

6. Even if they're hitting close, the Lord's our bomb shelter!

7. If God doesn't destroy the modern American Sodom & Gomorrah, He will have to apologise to the ancient ones!



8. Nuclear arms are merely a symptom of the problem.--War itself is a mere symptom.--The disease within is rebellion against God & defiance of the Lord, & anti-Christ opposition to Jesus!--That's the disease!--And the disease is soon going to break out all over in one Hell of a nuclear holocaust!

9. Even if you can't dodge the nukes or the kooks, Jesus can protect you, for He cares for His Own!--And if you do wind up a target for an H-bomb, your worries are over! You'll wake up forever in the Heavenly Kingdom of God with eternal peace & joy & happiness & bliss & love & beauty forever!

10. .1:14,16 Then the Lord said unto me, Out of the North an evil shall break forth upon all the inhabitants of the land! And I will utter My judgements against them touching all their wickedness, who have forsaken Me, and have burned incense unto other gods, and worshipped the works of their own hands.

11. .4:6,7 I will bring evil from the North, and a great destruction! The lion is come up from his thicket, and the destroyer of the Gentiles is on his way; he is gone forth from his place to make thy land desolate; and thy cities shall be laid waste, without an inhabitant.

12. JER.27:8 And it shall come to pass, that the nation and kingdom which will not serve the king of Babylon (the Antichrist), and that will not put their neck under the yoke of the king of Babylon, that nation will I punish, saith the Lord, with the sword, and with the famine, and with the pestilence, until I have consumed them by his hand.

13. .11:40,41,44,45 And at the time of the end shall the king of the South push at him: and the king of the North (the Antichrist) shall come against him like a whirlwind, with chariots, and with horsemen, and with many ships; and he shall enter into the countries, and shall overflow and pass over. He shall enter also into the glorious land (Israel), and many countries shall be overthrown. But tidings out of the East and out of the North shall trouble him: therefore he shall go forth with great fury to destroy, and utterly to make away many. And he shall plant the tabernacles of his palace between the seas in the glorious holy mountain; yet he shall come to his end, and none shall help him.

14. .17:12,16,17 And the ten horns which thou sawest are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the Beast. These shall hate the Whore, and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire. For God hath put in their hearts to fulfil His will, and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the Beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled.

15. .18:2,3,8,9,10 Babylon the Great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird. For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the Earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the Earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies. Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God Who judgeth her! And the kings of the Earth, who have committed fornication and lived deliciously with her, shall bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning, Standing afar off for the fear of her torment, saying, Alas, alas that great city Babylon, that mighty city! for in one hour is thy judgement come!

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 6 of the *Book of the Future*.)

## **7. "THE SECOND COMING OF JESUS!"**

1. The Second Coming of Jesus Christ is the major Endtime event, the Grand Climax, as the Lord Himself returns & wipes out the fiendish bestial Antichrist & his followers & sets up the last & most lasting & only perfect government the World has ever known!

2. Jesus is the End, He's going to bring about the End! He is going to be the End of all things, the Livin' End!--The Forever Livin' End!

3. This is our only hope: The love of God, His mercy, Jesus, & His return to rescue His Own & the Earth & the people of the Earth & restore light & life & love again!

4. Our only hope is the Coming of the only Prince of Peace--Christ Jesus.

5. When it looks like we're going to be really wiped out, the Lord's gonna come & wipe them out!--A happy ending to the story!

6. When things finally get their worst, Jesus returns & wipes out the Antichrist & his forces & takes over the Earth & establishes His dictatorship, a reign of genuine righteousness, peace, security & freedom!

7. Beloved, the outlook for us in this World & our future here could hardly be darker!--But the uplook could hardly be brighter or more glorious! Hallelujah! He's gonna stop the World so we can get off!

8. Just after the darkest hour in World History, we are going to have the brightest dawn, & Jesus is going to come back again & rescue His Own, His children, His Church!

9. He's coming soon! Hang on! Don't let someone else get your reward! Be faithful to the End!

10. "Lift up therefore thy heads, for thy redemption draweth nigh! Behold, thy King cometh as a mighty Man of Power, strong to save & deliver thee!"
11. Christ's coming is literally going to be an invasion from Outer Space!
12. Let me tell you, when Jesus comes, this World is going to know about it!--Light! Thunder! Lightning! Jesus! Clouds! And suddenly you're all changed!
13. One of these days when there's no place else to go, we're going to go straight up to be with Jesus!
14. The Resurrection takes place & all the saved who were dead come to life & all those saved who are still alive are raised into the air to meet Jesus in the clouds!
15. The Coming of Jesus Christ is the pivotal point, the End, when time shall be no more for us!--The End of this World as we now know it, & our place in it in these present physical bodies.
16. Jesus didn't say we wouldn't know the day or the hour, He said they wouldn't know the day or the hour! That's why you have to compare Scripture with Scripture.--You've gotta think about who He's talking to! That Scripture has absolutely nothing to do with you & me today in this Endtime, these Last Days!--We will know!
17. Just at the hour when the fiendish Antichrist thinks he has everything under control--suddenly--BOOM!--Like a bolt from the blue, Jesus comes & snatches all of His children out of this World!
18. We will rise in immortal victory over the forces of the Devil & the Antichrist, right before the eyes of our enemies, out of their reach forever as we rise to be with Jesus!
19. Thank God, He has a set time & schedule for the return of His Son, Jesus Christ, to this Earth to rescue His people!--And He's going to come right on the button, just like these space launches which have a pre-set countdown!--Only there aren't going to be any problems to delay His countdown!
20. That's the surest way you're going to know when Jesus comes, you're going to be there! You're going to rise to meet Him in the air! The greatest sign that Jesus has come will be that you will start floating upward!--And He will gather you together to Himself, His Body, & we will meet Him in the air!
21. It says that "they shall see the Son of Man coming in the clouds of Heaven with power & great glory!" (Mt.24:30.) All that Secret Rapture, Pre-Trib Rapture, is a bunch of malarky! It's ridiculous! It's un-Scriptural!
22. What greater witness could there be than the Rapture?--The Resurrection & the Rapture, that's the clincher! That's the final witness, when they actually see Jesus & see us rise from the dead & from the Earth to meet Him in the air! That's it! They can't deny it then!
23. Lights! Trumpets! Voices! Thunder! Earthquakes! Noises! Dead rising from the graves! Live saints rising from the ground, floating right up through the ceilings & the buildings & the cars & right up into the clouds to be with Jesus!--That's no secret Rapture!
24. With one sudden, supernatural, miraculous, mighty stroke of God, He waves His wand of power & presto!--We who are alive will be changed!--Translated & raised incorruptible, to meet the Lord in the air!
25. Do you want to know what you're going to be like after the resurrection?--You're going to be like Jesus was after His resurrection!--That's what you're going to be like!
26. One of these days soon, when Jesus comes & that great Trumpet sounds, you're going to trade in your present, old, worn-out, fleshly, earthly model for an entirely new Heavenly model like the body He had after His resurrection!
27. When He starts collecting His children, He's certainly going to collect them all & not leave any behind! Nobody's going to be left behind that loves Jesus!
28. I want to be ready to meet Him when He comes!--Ready to praise the Lord & welcome Him with joy & be happy that He is catching me out of this filthy old World up into His clean skies & Heavenly places!
29. The day is coming when Time shall be no more! The 4th dimension necessary for the existence of matter is Time. If matter could move fast enough, it would shorten Time so much that neither Time nor matter would exist any more! When Jesus comes we're going to move so fast that Time will be no more for us. One great Eternal Now! If you're up high enough you can see both Past & Future.
30. .24:27-31 For as the lightning cometh out of the East, and shineth even unto the West; so shall also the Coming of the Son of man be. For wheresoever the carcass is, there will the eagles be gathered together. Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from Heaven, and the powers of the Heavens shall be shaken: And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in Heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the Earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of Heaven with power and great glory. And He shall send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of Heaven to the other.
31. **CO.15:51,52 Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.**

**32. ISA.26:19 Thy dead men shall live, together with my dead body shall they arise. Awake and sing, ye that dwell in dust: for thy dew is as the dew of herbs, and the Earth shall cast out the dead.**

**33. TH.4:16,17 For the Lord Himself shall descend from Heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.**

**34. .11:15 And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in Heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this World are become the Kingdoms of our Lord, and of His Christ; and He shall reign for ever and ever!**

**35. .22:20 He which testifieth these things saith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus.**

**(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 7 of the *Book of the Future*.)**

### **8. "THE WEDDING SUPPER!"**

1. When Jesus comes, He catches His Bride out of the evil clutches of the Enemy & takes her into His bosom!--And whisks us away to the grandest, most glorious & thrilling wedding party that's ever been held--the great "Marriage Supper of the Lamb"! (Rev.19:7-9)

2. "It will be worth it all when we see Jesus!

Life's trials will seem so small when we see Christ!

One glimpse of His dear face, all sorrow will erase!

So bravely run the race till we see Christ!"

3. "Oh, what a day that shall be when thou shalt join with Me in My Kingdom to reign with Me for evermore! Thou shalt have such joy that thou hast never known!"

4. The Heavenly City!--What a place for a Marriage Supper & laughter & singing & music & dancing & wine & women & song & angels & everything your heart could possibly desire!

5. We're gonna go up & have one grand celebration, one shindig of a party such as never was since the World began, no, nor ever shall be compared to what has been before!

6. We get our rewards right away up in Heaven at the Marriage Supper of the Lamb where there's a great Feast & a great Marriage Supper, great ceremony, & the Lord passes out the gifts!

7. There will be a great feast & a great ceremony & Jesus will pass out the gifts, the presents, the rewards to all of those who loved & served Him!--Isn't that wonderful?

8. At the time of the Marriage Supper, we'll not only go up & meet the Lord & enjoy the wonderful celebration, but we'll also face the Judgement Seat of Christ, in which all the Christians who have ever lived will be judged & rewarded for their successes & their obediences, or chastised & condemned for their failures.

9. Rewards have nothing to do with your salvation! The rewards are something you work for & you earn by your faithfulness & your diligence & your hard work & your soul-winning!

10. Although your works in this life aren't going to help to get you into Heaven, they'll have a great deal to do with your reward, a great deal to do with the way you shine, & a great deal to do with your position once you're there.

11. "If thou couldst see that which is in store for thee, the things I have prepared for thee, if thou couldst feel that which I feel for thee, the joy thou shouldst know in time to come, thou shouldst be overjoyed for that which is to come!"

12. .19:6-9 And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunderings, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth. Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to Him: for the Marriage of the Lamb is come, and His wife hath made herself ready. And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints. And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the Marriage Supper of the Lamb.

**13. CO.5:10 For we must all appear before the Judgement Seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.**

**(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 8 of the *Book of the Future*.)**

### **9. "THE WRATH OF GOD!"**

1. After the resurrection takes place & all the saved are supernaturally raised into the air to meet Jesus in the clouds, then the horrible Wrath of God will be poured out upon the Antichrist forces left behind!

2. How horrible the Lord says the Endtime will be for the wicked during the soon-coming days when He begins to pour out His judgements on the Earth!--"They will seek death but be unable to find it!" (Rev.9:6.)

3. While we're having that Marriage Party of the Lamb in Heaven, there's going to be Hell on Earth as God wreaks His judgements upon the wicked left behind!

4. While we're celebrating upstairs, they're going to be suffering downstairs!--Ecstasy in Heaven & Hell on Earth!

5. During the Wrath of God, the Antichrist & all his followers, all those that have the Mark of the Beast, are going to suffer the seven vials of God's Wrath spoken of in the 16th Chapter of Revelation.

6. While we're having a wild party & lots of fun up-stairs, having Ecstasy in Heaven, they're going to be having Hell on Earth downstairs!

7. According to Revelation Chapter 14, after His grain is safely gathered into His Heavenly garner, He's going to cast the grapes of wrath, all of the Antichrist forces, into the winepress of His indignation!

8. After catching His Own out of this World & into His Heavenly Bridal Chamber, God's gonna pour out His judgements & horrors & Wrath upon the Antichrist forces to punish'm & to sock it to'm with what they deserve!

9. If He is a God of justice, then there has to come a time for Him to mete out His justice & His judgements.--And thus it happens!

10. .14:9,10 If any man worship the Beast & his Image, & receive his Mark in his forehead, or in his hand, the same shall drink of the wine of the Wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture, into the cup of His indignation.

11. .16:1-4 And I heard a great voice out of the temple saying to the seven angels, Go your ways, and pour out the vials of the Wrath of God upon the Earth. And the first went, and poured out his vial upon the Earth; and there fell a noisome & grievous sore upon the men which had the Mark of the Beast, and upon them which worshipped his Image. And the second angel poured out his vial upon the sea; and it became as the blood of a dead man: and every living soul died in the sea. And the third angel poured out his vial upon the rivers and fountains of waters; and they became blood.

12. .16:8,10 And the fourth angel poured out his vial upon the sun: and power was given unto him to scorch men with fire. And the fifth angel poured out his vial upon the seat of the Beast; and his kingdom was full of darkness; and they gnawed their tongues for pain.

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 9 of the *Book of the Future*.)

### **10. "THE BATTLE OF ARMAGEDDON!"**

1. He's not only had a First Coming as a baby to Earth, but He's going to have a Second Coming at the end of the Tribulation when He Raptures His saints, & then a Third Coming as well in the great Battle of Armageddon!

2. Out of Heaven come the great hosts of Heaven with Jesus in the lead on a white horse to destroy the Antichrist & his kingdom in that great Battle of Armageddon (Rev.19), & we take over the Earth!

3. This time it's not gonna be God in the hands of sinful wicked men, but it's gonna be sinful wicked men in the hands of an angry judging God Who's gonna sock it to them! His First Coming was when He came as a babe: God in the hands of men! His Second Coming is going to be men in the hands of God & a different story!--the Wrath of God!

4. The Battle of Armageddon is going to be the battle in which we tune in, turn on & take over! And we're going to run the World! Praise God!

5. There'll be forty-five days of War, wiping out the very worst of them & leaving only those who are going to remain alive & survive through the Millenium, over whom we're going to rule & reign!

6. It's the grand finale of the Wrath of God!--Where the wicked are cast into the Winepress of His Wrath!

7. When the Wrath of God has been wreaked on the wicked below, we are all going to climb on our fine white stallions, our Heavenly horses, & we're going to come riding out of the sky with the Lord, and invasion from Outer Space!--Aliens now to this World!

8. How stupid can the wicked get?! How crazy can even the Devil be?--To make a last-ditch stand to try to fight God & His forces, even though by this time we are as powerful as the angels of Heaven! We have supernatural resurrection bodies, supernatural powers, & we can even ride our Heavenly horses through the sky!

9. Jesus will come charging out of the blue on a mighty white charger in a mighty invasion from Outer Space, & He'll just utter His Word like thunder, sharp as a sword, & it will slaughter His enemies!

10. Although the slaughter & carnage resulting from this Battle will be unparalleled by any wars or disasters before it, it will not be total.--There will still be some remaining who will survive it--those spared for the Millennium! PTL!

11. At this mighty battle of Armageddon, we not only conquer Satan & his forces, but we also take over the World, to rule & reign & run it the way it should have been run to begin with, & would have been if man had not believed the Devil's lies & disobeyed God & gone his own way!

12. When Christ finally takes over, it's going to have to be with force & with power, "With great power & glory"!--The wicked just don't understand anything else!

13. .16:12,16,17 And the sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates; and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings of the East might be prepared. And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon. And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air; and there came a great voice out of the temple of Heaven, from the throne, saying, It is done.

14. .19:11,14-16 And I saw Heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and He that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness He doth judge and make war. And the armies which were in Heaven followed Him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean. And out of His mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it He should smite the nations: and He shall rule them with a rod of iron: and He treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and Wrath of Almighty God. And He hath on His vesture and on His thigh a Name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

15. .19:19-21 And I saw the Beast, and the kings of the Earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against Him that sat on the horse, and against His army. And the Beast was taken, and with him the False Prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the Mark of the Beast, and them that worshipped his Image. These both were cast alive into a Lake of Fire burning with brimstone. And the remnant were slain with the sword of Him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of His mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.

16. .15 Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of His saints, to execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds.

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 10 of the *Book of the Future*.)

## ***11. "THE MILLENNIUM!"***

1. At the end of the mighty Battle of Armageddon, of the forces of God against the forces of Satan on Earth, we, the saints of God, along with our King, Jesus Christ, will take over this World!

2. The Millennium will be a 1000-year reign of peace, plenty & paradise on Earth!--Our great Worldwide victory over all of the Antichrist forces of Satan, including Satan himself!

3. The Millennium is one thousand years of Heaven on Earth like the Garden of Eden, with Worldwide peace, Satan & his forces bound, the curse removed & Paradise regained!

4. At last the Lord is going to redeem the Earth again, & again He's going to cause the beautiful Garden of Eden to blossom in perfection & sinlessness as we rule & reign with Christ upon the Earth for a thousand years.

5. The true Christians & believers are going to inherit the Earth & the Kingdom of God on Earth & run & govern it by the Love & the power of God!

6. The Bible is for dictatorship, & the coming Kingdom of Jesus Christ will be an absolute total dictatorship by Jesus Himself!

7. Only God Himself in the Person of Jesus Christ, with His angelic helpers & angelised saints, is going to be able to run a World government well, with true justice, liberty, peace, plenty & happiness for all!

8. Jesus & His Kingdom are going to be the government, & we are going to be His angels & teachers & enforcers & policemen.

9. We're going to be teaching them how to live & how to be honest & how to love God & obey. (Is.2:1-5; 11:1-9.)

10. It is you that God is going to use to run the World, & He's getting you ready for it right now!

11. His Word says, "We shall then rule & reign with Him over the nations with a rod of iron!" (Rev.2:26,27.) It'll be a mandatory rule of loving force to compel the nations to submit to the laws of God & to recognise His authority & to obey His rules of life, love, health & happiness.

12. The Millennium will be a time of teaching, a time of training, a time of enlightening, a time of learning His laws & His ways & His Love, & again another opportunity to reach the lost for the Lord!

13. Everything that the Lord ever taught you during this life, everything that you ever learn now, is going to come in very handy then.

14. There are so many jobs in the millennium, it's almost too hard to find enough people to do them all!

15. The Millennium's going to be the World's last chance to repent & confess & try to get things straightened out & make things right.

16. No more big powers & oppressed poor!--Only the Kingdom of Jesus Christ, Heaven on Earth, fairness & justice for all & eternal happiness forever!

17. A great deal, if not all, of the curse is going to be removed. Man is going to be at peace with the animals. The lion will lie down with the lamb & it says "a little child shall lead them." (Isa.11:6, 65:25)

18. In the Millennium, we are going to be the angels!--Amongst men!

19. The Earth will blossom as a rose with the curse removed & enmity between man & the animals & the insects & the vipers removed, so that all God's Creation will be in perfect peace & beautiful harmony & at peace with one another.

20. "For the darkness shall turn to dawning,

And the dawning to noonday bright!

And Christ's great Kingdom shall come on Earth,

The Kingdom of Love & Light!"

21. There won't be any unbelievers in the Millennium, but there will be some unreceivers.

22. Why the Millennium?--To prove to you & to them & to God & to the Devil & to the whole Universe of angels that, though mercy is even shown to the wicked, yet they will not repent!--They will still rebel. (Isa.26:10)

23. Today He's showing His Love to the World, to try to get you to love Him. But the day is coming when, if all else fails & you reject His Love, He will rule with a rod of iron & force!

24. In that day He's going to wipe away all this Hell on Earth & He's going to set up His Kingdom of peace & righteousness & fairness & justice & goodness & mercy & Love!--And that's going to be Heaven on Earth!

25. Whether man likes it or not, God is going to be supreme & Jesus shall reign from shore to shore & we shall rule & reign with Him with that rod of iron!

26. We'll have half the battle licked just by the Lord being here, & the other half licked by the Devil not being here!

27. Millennial re-education, that'll be the biggest job of all, really! It's going to be a big job re-educating the whole World, both Christians & non-Christians!

28. "In that Golden Age I shall rule upon the Earth in person with a rod of iron, & ye shall rule with Me in mighty power!"

29. "The dawn cometh & the Son of Righteousness ariseth & this shall be a New Day, & His Love shall drop down like rain upon the land & there shall spring forth life!"

30. We're going to rule the World! Not that I exactly look forward to the responsibility of the job, but with supernatural, immortal bodies & super-human miraculous wisdom I'm sure we'll be able to handle it!

31. .20:6 Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years.

32. .7:27 And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole Heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey Him.

33. .2:2-4 And it shall come to pass in the last days, that the mountain of the Lord's house shall be established in the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills; and all nations shall flow unto it. And many people shall go and say, Come ye, and let us go up to the mountain of the Lord, to the house of the God of Jacob; and He will teach us of His ways, and we will walk in His paths: for out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the Word of the Lord from Jerusalem. And He shall judge among the nations, and shall rebuke many people: and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruninghooks: nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more.

34. .11:4,6-9 With righteousness shall He judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the Earth. The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them. And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together: and the lion shall eat straw like the ox. And the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice's den. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all My holy mountain: for the Earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea.

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 11 of the *Book of the Future*.)

## **12. "THE BATTLE OF GOG & MAGOG!"**

1. Even after the Thousand-Year Reign of Jesus Christ in person, with us as His personal officers & police & guardian angels, the wicked will again rebel in a great battle against Jesus Christ & His Church, His people ruling the Earth, & they will again follow Satan to their final destruction!

2. In spite of Heaven on Earth, some unregenerate wicked people are eventually going to rebel again against the Lord & His Kingdom! So in the end He'll have to wipe them all out--including the Earth! He'll purge the whole surface of the Ball!

3. The final war of all is the Battle of Gog & Magog, when Satan is loosed out of the pit of Hell for just a little while to again go out & deceive the wicked people of the Earth.

4. The Devil's gotta be let out for a little while to show you that "though mercy be extended to the wicked, yet he will not learn righteousness"! (Is.26:10.)

5. As God once wiped out all mankind & destroyed the surface of the Earth with a flood of water, He's going to again purify the surface of the Earth, but next time, at the end of the Millennium, by a flood of fire!

6. That battle of Gog & Magog is sort of like the Devil's second coming when he comes back to lead his people again, & obviously they'll be his people if they didn't receive Jesus!

7. The Lord has got to burn up the atmosphere & the Earth's surface in order to purify it & clean it up & get rid of it all & have a New Earth & a new atmospheric Heavens!--And then His Holy pure spotless City can come down!

8. .20:7-10 And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison and shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the Earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea. And they went up on the breadth of the Earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of Heaven, and devoured them. And the Devil that deceived them was cast into the Lake of Fire and brimstone, where the Beast and the False Prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.

9. **PE.3:10-13 The heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the Earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up. Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godliness. Looking for and hasting unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat. Nevertheless we, according to His promise, look for New Heavens and a New Earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness.**

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 12 of the *Book of the Future*.)

### 13. "THE JUDGEMENT & HELL!"

1. At the end of the Millennium, after the Battle of Gog & Magog, all the unsaved & wicked who ever lived will be raised, millions of them, & they will be judged at the Great White Throne Judgement of God, at which time each will be assigned to his particular place in the hereafter.

2. All the people who ever lived, whether good or bad, if unsaved, will have to stand at the Great White Throne Judgement of God. (Rev.20:11,12.)

3. At the Great White Throne Judgement of God after the Battle of Gog & Magog, which is at the end of the Millennium, the Millennial rebels are sent to their Hell & their punishment!

4. The punishments & the rewards will be designed & tailored according to their deeds, for a reason, for a purpose, to teach them.

5. God probably has as varied terms & means of punishment & correction in the afterlife as there are in this life under the World's System & its laws.

6. If things aren't squared away in this life, good or evil, they certainly will be in the next.

7. I'm convinced that God is not a monster who's gonna keep people in flames eternally! You'll find in the Book of Revelation that there's some hope for everybody, TTL!

8. They will be punished for their sins, but when their punishment is over they'll be released, that's the whole idea.--Released by the grace of God & the forgiveness of God!

9. A lot of those who have been in Hell or in Limbo or in their place of punishment, whether light or heavy, during the Millennium, will be judged as to how they have reacted & how they have responded to this chastisement & this punishment & this correctional time--whether they have completely repented & really been sorry & received God's law or are still unrepentant.

10. So-called "eternal" punishment, "eternal" Hell, "everlasting" punishment, Hell-fire forever & ever, is not going to be forever & is not going to be everlasting, & it is certainly not eternal the way we use these words to mean "without end".

11. I believe in the Eternal Universal Reconciliation of man, because Jesus said He died that all might be saved (1Tim.2:4, 2Pet.3:9), & I believe that's going to happen someday!

12. .20:5,11-15 The rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. And I saw a great White Throne, and Him that sat on it, from whose face the Earth and the Heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the Book of Life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and Hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. And death and Hell were cast into the Lake of Fire. This is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the Lake of Fire.

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 13 of the *Book of the Future*.)

#### **14. "THE NEW HEAVEN & NEW EARTH!"**

1. If you're still looking for the perfect city or the perfect government in the perfect country with perfect people, just wait a little while longer--it's coming!
2. I've visited the future & I've seen the Heavenly City standing upon the New Earth!--Beautiful, gorgeous, incomparable, almost indescribable, the most gorgeous sight you'll ever want to see!
3. Jesus is going to renew the whole face of the Earth!--The whole Earth's going to be perfect, beautiful like the Garden of Eden, & a New Heaven & a New Earth. And the Holy City, the New City, the New Heaven is going to come down to the New Earth!
4. The Heavenly City will come down from God out of Heaven & dwell with men! This is the hope of all ages: That now-unseen Eternal World where we shall dwell with Him forever!
5. You're not going to go to Heaven to live with God, God is going to come to Earth to live with you! (Rev.21:2-3.)
6. There shall be no more evil in all God's Kingdom on Earth--only a Heaven-on-Earth rule by the Lord & His Children from the Heavenly City which will come down from God from Outer Space to rule the Earth!
7. It will be full of precious stones & jewels, & best of all, full of precious souls!--Immortal souls, saved souls that love Jesus & that you won to the Lord!
8. Heaven is a beautiful place! You think this is Heavenly here, days of Heaven on Earth, the beauties of His Creation?--Well, it's even more beautiful, it's just like all this magnified! TYJ!
9. There's the same salvation for us all, same City, but apparently there's going to be differences in the section of town you live in.
10. Being able to disappear & appear & go through walls & fly with the speed of thought isn't going to make you half as happy as to see those you've won to Jesus! "Hi there! Wow, didn't I meet you on the streets? Didn't I talk to you about Jesus? Wow! Here you are! Hallelujah!"--That's going to be the biggest thrill of all!
11. In a sense, it'll be Heaven on Earth for everybody there even though some were not saved & don't have the right to enter the Golden City or walk its golden streets.
12. Even the New Earth outside the City will be Paradise compared to Hell & its prisons & its Lake of Fire & its torments etc., so that all will come in a sense to their final reward, depending on the degree of their sin, the degree of their punishment, the degree of their repentance, the degree of their reformation.
13. Heaven is not the end!--It's only the beginning! God only knows how much more we'll have to conquer after we've conquered the Earth & all the souls who have ever lived on it & all the problems! Who knows what other Worlds we may have yet to conquer!
14. "Look!--Behold the beauty of the Lord in the days of eternal sunshine & the breath of everlasting Spring & the glories of the flowers of life that shall be forever!"
15. The World to come will be a beautiful place to be, full of beautiful people having a beautiful time. It will be a better World then, with better people who will have learned the Law of the Love of God.
16. .21:1-4,7 And I saw a New Heaven and a New Earth: for the first Heaven and the first Earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. And I John saw the Holy City, New Jerusalem, coming down from God out of Heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice out of Heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be My son.
17. .21:16,17 And the City lieth foursquare, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he measured the City with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs. (1500 miles!) The length and the breadth and the height of it are equal.



And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and forty and four cubits (216 ft.), according to the measure of a man, that is, of the angel.

18. .21:21-23 And the twelve gates were twelve pearls; every several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the City was pure gold, as it were transparent glass. And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it. And the City had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the Light thereof.

19. .21:24,27 And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the Earth do bring their glory and honour into it. And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's Book of Life.

20. .22:1-4 And he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb. In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the Tree of Life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations. And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and His servants shall serve Him: And they shall see His face; and His name shall be in their foreheads.

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 14 of the *Book of the Future*.)

(For General References on The Future--Sections 1-14 see also: No.75A, 80, 316, 343, 346, 347, 348, 349, 398, 534, 541, 1092, 1100, 1241, 1242, 1243, 1244, 1245, 1276, 1283, 1331, 1342, 1342, 1343, 1344, 1345, 1346, 1347, 1348, 1364, 1391, 1423, 1426, 1428, 1435, 1437, 1440, 1441, 1445, 1447, 1450, 1453, 1457, 1460, 1463, 1465, 1466, 1475, 1476, 1484, 1485, 1486, 1487, 1488, 1489, 1490, 1491, 1494, 1495, 1496, 1497, 1498, 1499, 1500, 1501, 1502, 1503, 1504, 1505, 1506, 1507, 1508, 1509, 1513, 1514, 1515, 1516, 1517, 1518, 1519, 1520, 1521, 1522, 1523, 1524, 1528, 1529, 1530, 1531, 1532, 1533, 1542, 1543, 1544, 1545, 1546, 1556, 1557, 1558, 1559, 1560, 1561, 1562, 1568, 1569, 1571, 1573, 1574, 1575, 1577, 1578, 1579, 1583, 1596, 1597, 1611, 1612, 1613, 1614, 1615, 1616, 1617, 1618, 1619, 1620, 1621, 1622, 1623, 1624, 1625, 1626, 1627, 1628, 1630, 1631, 1632, 1639, 1645, 1658.)



*Give and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, & shaken together, & running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again (Lk.6:38).*

1. As you pour out He'll pour in & you can never outpour Him!
2. The best gifts are tied with heartstrings.
3. We may give without loving, but we cannot love without giving.
4. Give what you have, to someone it may be better than you dare to think.
5. You are no fool to give a life you cannot keep for a love you will never lose.
6. You never lose by giving.
7. Life is like a tennis game; you can't win without serving.
8. We cannot hold a torch to light another's path without brightening our own.
9. He that does good to another also does good to himself.
10. Blessed are those who can give without remembering, & receive without forgetting.
11. One of the most difficult things to give away is kindness, for it is usually returned.
12. It is possible to give away & become richer. It is also possible to hold on too tightly & lose everything.
13. Charity gives itself rich, covetousness hoards itself poor.
14. There was a man, though some did think him mad.  
The more he cast away, the more he had.
15. A candle lights others & consumes itself.
16. As the purse is emptied the heart is filled.
17. You give but little when you give of your possessions. It is when you give of yourself, that you truly give.
18. Love cannot be wasted. It makes no difference where it is bestowed, it always brings in big returns.
19. If your heart is full of love, you always have something to give.
20. Nothing the heart gives away is lost, it is kept in the hearts of others.
21. You can even cast in all your living and still not hurt, because God will bless you for it.
22. 110%ers...giving 100% of their lives, plus tithing 10% of their income.
23. God will judge you according to not just how much you give or tithe, but what you have left and your motive in giving, and He will reward you accordingly!
24. If you don't give an offering, God will take a collection!
25. You can't outgive God!
26. You can't give without getting, you can't reward without receiving in return.
27. The more you give, the more you get.
28. By giving your all, you're going to get everything.
29. Not what you get, but what you give,  
Is that which proves your right to live.
30. "Behold, I say, Give! Give unto them, and I shall give unto thee more than thou shalt be able to give unto them!"
31. Giving is the greatest of all pleasures.

32. I feel like I'm doing people a favour to encourage them to give, because I know if they do, God will bless them for it!

33. I enjoy giving! I just give it out right and left, and God gives it back to me faster than I can give it away!

34. God goes an awful lot by our motives, whether they are selfish or unselfish.

35. If you can't be on the field, you can at least help the field!

36. The more you give, the more He will give you!

37. Let's be fair and square and share.

38. We cannot really make a sacrifice!

39. Those who give all will receive 100-fold here and now!--10,000 per cent!

40. God loves to outgive you! He'll never let you outgive Him!

41. All the best things in life are shared.

42. One of the ways of giving to God is being good to His little ones.

43. If God works on the principle of those that give get, and those that don't, don't get, then I think we ought to work on the same principle!

44. "From him that hath, according to his ability, unto him that hath not, according to his need."--That's the sharing principle of Love--and the loving principle of sharing!

45. The richest people in the World in God's Kingdom are going to be those who share the most, and He will heap on them more than they can hold.

46. God's way to plenty is to give it away.

47. When we don't give willingly or cheerfully, then we're not really giving.

48. Unselfishly give that others may live!

49. You don't receive something from the Lord without it costing you something in return.

50. Getting is the Devil's imitation, sharing is God's true blessing!

51. If it doesn't hurt, it isn't worth giving.

If it isn't for love, it isn't worth living!

52. If you give your all to Him, He gives His all to you.

53. Seldom can a heart be lonely

If it seeks a lonelier still,

Self-forgetting, seeking only

Emptier cups of love to fill!

54. Love just doesn't grow, if you leave it on a shelf.

Take it down and use it, don't keep it to yourself.

55. The hand that gives, gathers.

56. And for our sakes He gave away

The life that He was living.

From Christmas Day to Calvary

His greatest joy was giving!

57. You're not really a giver unless you're a cheerful giver.

58. Better to wear out from use than rust out from disuse!

59. He's more willing to give than we are to receive!

60. If you give love, you'll get love--it multiplies and grows like the bread and the fish and the cruse of oil and the barrel of meal!

61. What counts, costs!

62. Save your life by giving it to God! Find your life by losing it for others!

63. You have to give to get, pour to receive, sow to reap, invest to profit, die to live, bury to resurrect.

64. We have to give our lives to Jesus to save ourselves. We have to give our lives for Jesus to save others.

65. We have to burn and be consumed to send up that beautiful smoke and sweet fragrance.

66. I'm all empty like a bottle that's all poured out, but He keeps filling me up again.

67. The liberal soul shall be made fat: and he that watereth shall be watered also himself. Pro.11:25.

68. The Gift of God is Eternal Life, but it cost Jesus His to give it to you, and it'll probably cost you yours to live it!

69. He that hath pity upon the poor lendeth unto the Lord: and that which he hath given will He pay him again. Pro.19:17.

70. You can't take your money with you--but you can send it on ahead.

71. We cannot serve God and Mammon, but we can serve God with Mammon--our money!

72. God blesses everybody that gives, and if they are poor, that's all the more reason they ought to give if they want to get blessed and for the Lord to help them not to be so poor!

73. You find me the big givers and I'll find you the hard workers. But you find me the penurious little penny-pinchers and I'll show you the people that are selfish and penny-pinching and not giving to anybody but themselves.

74. Once that little widow gave her mite, "even all her living", do you think for a minute God let her continue in that poverty-stricken condition after that? I'm convinced that He just heaped the blessings on'r after He'd made her an example to all history!

75. God hates hoarding and He says "He that withholdeth it tendeth to poverty." (Pro.11:24)

76. If Christianity does not reach down into your pocket, if the love of Jesus Christ doesn't cause you to share what you have with those in need, then it is false Christianity!

77. Every religion in the World subsists on begging, and you could hardly give to a better cause than ours, a cause that is saving young people from moral, mental and physical destruction!

78. Start teaching them how to live by telling them how to give!

79. A Negro minister once prayed: "Lord, we can't hold much but we can overflow lots!"

80. Will the guardian of a well die of thirst?

81. Gold's no good unless it is put in circulation and invested in fruitful fields and paid to the laborers in the fields and distributed to the poor.

82. Bible economics contradicts all other systems of economics because it puts God first and says "deny yourself"! It says, "die for God and He'll save your life, die and you'll live"!

83. If we receive more income than we have outgo, then we know God wants us to give it.

84. God's first law of economics is still to seek His Kingdom first!--Then all these things shall be added unto you! (Mt.6:33)

85. Our economy is built on the Lord and love and sharing. And as long as you keep giving, you can't lose. God will feed you, protect you, clothe you and care for you, no matter what happens.

86. God's idea is, the faster you give it away and share it, the more He'll heap it on, and the richer you'll become so you can share more!

87. If you are unselfish and generous with your spiritual riches and share them with those that need it, He will also trust you with material riches to share!

88. When it comes to God and His work, it's good business to give to the Lord. It's good investment earning the highest possible rate of interest and dividends of anything you can possibly invest in, 100-fold or more!

89. A candle loses nothing of its light by lighting another candle.

90. It's impossible to make a sacrifice for Him!

91. There is that scattereth, and yet increaseth: and there is that withholdeth more than is meet, but it tendeth to poverty. Pro.11:24.

92. Lay him or her on the altar. Lay this or that on the altar for God, and don't even expect to get it back. If you're giving with that motive and intention, it's no sacrifice. Most of the sacrifices God asks you to give, you think you give them up forever, but I'll tell you this for your encouragement: I've found that God gave me many things back that I gave up for the Lord. He gave me back things that I gave up for Him when He could trust me with them.

93. He that giveth unto the poor shall not lack: but he that hideth his eyes shall have many a curse. Pro.28:27.

94. Even though the recipients might waste it or not appreciate it, if your motive is right and your intentions are pure, God will bless you for giving and honour and prosper you for it.

95. That's what He gave it to you for--so you could forsake it!--For His Will or for the poor or let God use it in some way.

96. God never let anybody get hurt by giving or tithing! The Lord just won't let you suffer for it! He may let you think you are going to sacrifice and suffer and that it will be hard, but He'll more than repay.

97. How can there be any giving, any serving, if there be no receiving? Someone must receive if another is to give. We give joy to the giver when we become the grateful receiver. Thus, as paradoxical as it may seem, in receiving there is giving. The noble receiver is the noble giver.

98. One candle can light a thousand others without diminishing its light.

(See also No.189, 301A, 332A, 336A, 665, 667, 673, 682, 684, 701, 702, 841, 842, 843, 903, 928, 934, 1081, 1105, 1212, 1271, 1276, 1320, 1321.)

99. .15:7,8,10 If there be among you a poor man of one of thy brethren within any of thy gates in thy land which the Lord thy God giveth thee, thou shalt not harden thine heart, nor shut thine hand from thy poor brother: But thou shalt open thine hand wide unto him, and shalt surely lend him sufficient for his need, in that which he wanteth. Thou shalt surely give him, and thine heart shall not be grieved when thou givest unto him: because that for this thing the Lord thy God shall bless thee in all thy works, and in all that thou puttest thine hand unto.

100. SA.24:24b Neither will I offer ...unto the Lord my God of that which doth cost me nothing.

101. CH.29:9a Then the people rejoiced, for that they offered willingly, because with perfect heart they offered willingly to the Lord.

102. PRO.3:27,28 Withhold not good from them to whom it is due, when it is in the power of thine hand to do it. Say not unto thy neighbor, Go, and come again, and to morrow I will give; when thou hast it by thee.

103. PRO.11:24-25 There is that scattereth, and yet increaseth; and there is that withholdeth more than is meet, but it tendeth to poverty. The liberal soul shall be made fat: and he that watereth shall be watered also himself.

104. .13:7 There is that maketh himself rich, yet hath nothing: there is that maketh himself poor, yet hath great riches.

105. PRO.14:21b He that hath mercy on the poor, happy is he.

106. PRO.19:17 He that hath pity upon the poor lendeth unto the Lord; and that which he hath given will He pay him again.

107. .21:25,26 The desire of the slothful killeth him; for his hands refuse to labour. He coveteth greedily all the day long: but the righteous giveth and spareth not.

108. .22:9 He that hath a bountiful eye shall be blessed; for he giveth of his bread to the poor.

109. .28:27 He that giveth unto the poor shall not lack: but he that hideth his eyes shall have many a curse.

110. .11:1 Cast thy bread upon the waters: for thou shalt find it after many days.

111. .5:42 Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away.

112. .6:1-4 Take heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in Heaven. Therefore when thou doest thine alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth: That thine alms may be in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret Himself shall reward thee openly.

113. .25:40 Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these My brethren, ye have done it unto Me.

114. .12:43,44 And He called unto Him His disciples, and saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That this poor widow hath cast more in, than all they which have cast into the treasury: For all they did cast in of their abundance; but she of her want did cast in all that she had, even all her living.

115. .3:11 He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that hath meat, let him do likewise.

116. LUK.6:34,35 And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receive as much again. But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for He is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil.

117. .6:38 Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again.

118. LUK.21:4 For all these have of their abundance cast in unto the offerings of God: but she of her penury hath cast in all the living that she had.

119. ACT.20:35 I have shewed you all things, how that so labouring ye ought to support the weak, and to remember the Words of the Lord Jesus, how He said, It is more blessed to give than to receive.

120. .12:13 Distributing to the necessity of saints; given to hospitality.

121. CO.10:33 Even as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine own profit, but the profit of many, that they may be saved.

122. 1CO.13:3 And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing.

123. CO.9:6-7 But this I say, He which soweth sparingly shall reap also sparingly; and he which soweth bountifully shall reap also bountifully. Every man according as he purposeth in his heart, so let him give; not grudgingly, or of necessity: for God loveth a cheerful giver.

124. COL.4:1 Masters, give unto your servants that which is just and equal; knowing that ye also have a Master in Heaven.

125. TL.5:18 For the Scripture saith, Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn. And, The laborer is worthy of his reward.

126. .2:15,16 If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what doth it profit?

(See also MAT.25:25-45)

#### 48. GOD

--{page 411}--



*God is a Spirit: and they that worship Him must worship Him in spirit and in truth (Jn.4:24).*

1. God is Love, not a cruel tyrant, not a monster Who is trying to frighten everyone into Hell, but a God Who is trying to love everyone into Heaven! You must simply love Him, receive Jesus into your own heart personally and love others--that's all!

2. We have a whole God for the whole man, Who is able to do anything.

3. God is a spirit Who is everywhere, omnipresent; all-powerful, omnipotent; all-knowing, omniscient!

4. Good always wins, because good is of God, and God can't lose!

5. The omnipresent, omnipotent, omniscient Spirit of God pervades all things, God is everything and everything is God, in a sense. He's so great we can't even understand Him!

6. The power and life of the universe is what some people call God but what the Bible calls Love, for "God is Love", the very spirit of Love itself, everlasting love that never ends, from a Lover Who never leaves, the Lover of all lovers, God Himself.(1Jn.4:8)

7. The most outstanding thing about our God is what the World can't understand, He can't be seen! We worship the unseen God!

8. God is spirit, which is a form of power or energy--spiritual energy.

9. The true God is a good God, who is kind and loving and concerned about His children, and wants them to have total life, liberty and happiness.

10. God is like the great computer. You can plug into Him and by His power or His Spirit He can give you all the information and all the wisdom and all the answers that you need in His Spirit.

11. You can explain God to your children as soon as they can talk. As soon as they understand that a mother and a father are people who love them and take care of them and who gave them birth, and created them, you can explain that God is a great Father Who, though they cannot see Him, is everywhere, in Love, and is the Spirit of Love. That's all they need to know.

12. There are some things that God cannot do, because He will not do them, because He's bound Himself within certain limitations, so as not to interfere with your power of choice, because you have to make the decision, and He's not going to force you to do His Will!

13. God is not the traditionally manufactured God of hypocritical churchianity and verbose religiosity, but the genuine basic power and guiding light of the Universe, which has in some way brought man into being, and as his benevolent Fatherly Creator, has some kind and benign purpose in store for him, a final fulfillment of His undeniably human aspirations for love, life, liberty and happiness.

14. The true God is a good God Who is kind and loving and concerned about His children and Who hates war and its rich perpetrators and deplors the poverty of the poor and their suffering and is determined to set things right. He is the power and life of the Universe that some people call God but that the Bible itself calls Love, for God is Love, the very spirit of Love itself, true Love, everlasting Love, real Love, genuine Love that never ends from a Lover Who never leaves, the Lover of all Lovers, God Himself.

15. God is a good God, a loving God, a Fatherly loving Heavenly Father Who loves you and wants you to enjoy yourself and wants you to enjoy sex and wants you to enjoy Love. He made it all for you to enjoy.

16. God is a great, kind and loving Father, Who has made this beautiful World as a home for you, His child, to live in and enjoy! He has lovingly given you a wonderful body, mind and heart with which to enjoy it and each other!

17. We have only one God, God our Father in Heaven, the God of the Bible, Whose Son is Jesus Christ, the One and Only Creator of the Universe.

18. I don't have a sad God--I have a happy God, Who wants me to be happy, and you as well! This is the whole point to it all, to relieve us of the suffering, pain, death and tears brought into the World by the Enemy and the sins of man.

19. "Therefore, fear not, for I am thy God and thy testimony and thy peace and thy great fortress `round about thee which is in the heavenlies which no human power can touch, which is above all Earthly powers, and none can stand against thee, for I am thy God and thou art My children, and they are but specks and shall be blown away!"

(See also No. A, P, 1, 2, 4, 25, 35, 69, 69A, 73A, 75A, 185, 306, 307, 311B, 337, 341, 544, 545, 560, 564, 573, 581, 583, 584, 592, 594, 595, 599, 620, 621, 622, 624, 626, 631, 639, 641, 647, 648, 682, 686, 693, 694, 697, 699, 700, 712, 850, 900, 934, 959, 1027, 1268, 1317, 1360, 1389, 1407, 1519, 1521, 1527.)

20. .3:14 God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and He said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you.

21. .15:18 The Lord shall reign for ever and ever.

22. .23:19 God is not a man, that He should lie; neither the son of man, that He should repent: hath He said, and shall He not do it? or hath He spoken, and shall He not make it good?

23. .4:24 For the Lord thy God is a consuming fire, even a jealous God.

24. **CH.29:11-13 Thine, O Lord, is the greatness, and the power, and the glory, and the victory, and the majesty: for all that is in the Heaven and in the Earth is Thine; Thine is the Kingdom, O Lord, and Thou art exalted as head above all. Both riches and honour come of Thee, and Thou reignest over all; and in Thine hand is power and might; and in Thine hand it is to make great, and to give strength unto all. Now therefore, our God, we thank Thee, and praise Thy glorious Name.**

25. **CH.2:6 But who is able to build Him an house, seeing the Heaven and Heaven of heavens cannot contain Him? Who am I then, that I should build Him an house, save only to burn sacrifice before Him?**

26. .18:2 The Lord is my rock, and my fortress, and my deliverer; my God, my strength, in Whom I will trust; my buckler, and the horn of my Salvation, and my high tower.

27. .72:17 His Name shall endure for ever: His Name shall be continued as long as the sun: and men shall be blessed in Him: all nations shall call Him blessed.

28. .95:3 For the Lord is a great God, and a great King above all gods.

29. .102:12 Thou, O Lord, shalt endure for ever; and Thy remembrance unto all generations.

30. .102:27 Thou art the same, and Thy years shall have no end.

31. .113:5,6 Who is like unto the Lord our God, who dwelleth on high, Who humbleth Himself to behold the things that are in Heaven, and in the Earth!

32. .3:14 I know that, whatsoever God doeth, it shall be for ever: nothing can be put to it, nor anything taken from it: and God doeth it, that men should fear before Him.

33. .33:22 For the Lord is our Judge, the Lord is our Lawgiver, the Lord is our King; He will save us.

34. .44:6 Thus saith the Lord the King of Israel, and His Redeemer the Lord of hosts; I am the first, and I am the last; and beside Me there is no God.

35. .66:1 Thus saith the Lord, The Heaven is My throne, and the Earth is My footstool: where is the house that ye build unto Me? and where is the place of My rest?

36. .51:15.16 He hath made the Earth by His power, He hath established the World by His wisdom, and hath stretched out the Heaven by His understanding. When He uttereth His voice, there is a multitude of waters in the heavens; and He causeth the vapours to ascend from the ends of the Earth: He maketh lightnings with rain, and bringeth forth the wind out of His treasures.

37. .2:20-22 Blessed be the Name of God for ever and ever: for wisdom and might are His: And He changeth the times and the seasons: He removeth kings, and setteth up kings: He giveth wisdom unto the wise, and knowledge to them that know understanding: He revealeth the deep and secret things: He knoweth what is in the darkness, and the light dwelleth with Him.

38. .3:6a For I am the Lord, I change not.

39. .1:18 No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, He hath declared Him.

40. .4:24 God is a Spirit: and they that worship Him must worship Him in spirit and in truth.

41. .7:48 Howbeit the most High dwelleth not in temples made with hands; as saith the prophet.

42. .17:24-28 God that made the World and all things therein, seeing that He is the Lord of Heaven and Earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands; Neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though He needed any thing, seeing He giveth to all life, and breath, and all things; And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the Earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation; That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after Him, and find Him, though He be not far from every one of us: For in Him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also His offspring.

43. COR.1:3 Blessed be God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort.

44. .4:13 Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in His sight: but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of Him with Whom we have to do.

45. JO.1:5b God is light, and in Him is no darkness at all.

46. JO.4:8b God is love.

47. JO.5:7 For there are three that bear record in Heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one.

48. .1:8 I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty.

49. .4:8 And the four beasts had each of them six wings about him; and they were full of eyes within: and they rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.





*For My thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways My ways, saith the Lord. For as the heavens are higher than the Earth, so are My ways higher than your ways, and My thoughts than your thoughts (Isa.55:8,9).*

1. As long as we let God run this outfit, we're bound to win, even when we look like we're losing! But if you or I try to run it, we're bound to lose, even when we look like we're winning!
2. You just can't beat the Lord at His Own game!
3. Man makes things in vain for our destruction, but God makes things for our good!
4. The World says anything you cannot understand is crazy!--Is it crazy to believe in God and in love, just because you can't understand them?
5. Before a national crisis there comes a sharper and sharper division between the wicked and the righteous. The righteous see it coming and get more righteous, the wicked don't see it coming and get more wicked! Evil men get worse and worse and good men better and better!
6. Everybody's a fool for something--thank God we can be fools for Christ's sake! (1Cor.4:10)
7. If you think His yoke is tough or His job is hard, Jesus said, "My yoke is easy, My burden is light"!-- Meaning compared to the way of the transgressor, which is really hard! (Mt.11:30)
8. The World's in a hell of a mess, but everything is beautiful for us!
9. We're only on God's side and whatever side He's on at the moment--that's the right side of any question.
10. Covet not this world's vain riches,  
That so rapidly decay,  
Seek to gain the heavenly treasures,  
That will never pass away.
11. A religion that is small enough for our understanding would not be large enough for our needs.
12. God the first garden made, and the first city Cain.
13. We can't even do things that look like they are good and reasonable and common sense things we think we ought to do, unless we're sure it's God's will! We're in a dangerous business, and we have got to stay close to the Lord and follow the Lord and make sure it's God's will, not just rest on the arm of flesh and natural reasoning, like Saul did.
14. The Difficult can be done immediately; the impossible takes a little longer.
15. You're off base if you're off Jesus!
16. Where happiness is madness, 'tis wisdom in disguise.  
Where sanity is sadness, 'tis folly to be wise!
17. God never loses--eventually He always wins somehow!
18. If foolishness is gladness, 'tis folly to be wise!  
If sanity is sadness, it makes my brain capsize!
19. When you talk about love and the Lord and the real values of life, people begin to realise how worthless everything else is.
20. God made the rules, and He can break'm if He wants to and if it suits His purpose.
21. You may be on the bottom of the World's list, but you certainly are on the top of God's list.
22. The Lord has never been in favour of majority rule, because the majority are of the Devil and follow Satan and are always wrong!
23. God is not in favour of democracy at all!--Because the righteous are always in the minority.
24. God is always for minority rule of the righteous over the wicked majority.

25. In God's eyes, that which is most is that which is least. (Lk.16:15)
26. That which is striking and beautiful is not always good, but that which is good is always beautiful.
27. Don't try to pour God into a mold and say He always has to use the same methods.
28. To hell with the proper way!...The proper way is of man!
29. The unexpected and the improper, the unconventional and untraditional, the unorthodox and unceremonious, contrary to man's natural expectation--this is the way God usually works!
30. God loves to do things contrary to the way we think He ought to do them!
31. Sometimes God's way up is down--usually, in fact!
32. Man prides himself in what he thinks are going to be his everlasting works, but their end is always the same--the grave of oblivion, monstrous reminders of man's transitory tenure against his puny efforts to eternalize himself without God!
33. If your choice, made according to natural expectations, is incorrect as far as He's concerned, He can change your mind and change your course and change your target, and change your goal according to what He knows is best, for after all, only God knows!
34. "This land (the U.S.A.) which ye call light, I call darkness!"
35. The natural and normal and perfectly legitimate with the Lord is often illegitimate with the System.
36. The most logical thing is not always God's way. He does the unusual, the supernatural, the miraculous, contrary to natural expectation.
37. God doesn't make mistakes, even when they look like it to us.
38. God gets some of His greatest victories out of seeming defeats!
39. The Devil has really got the World brainwashed! He's even got the World brainwashed to the point where his kind of righteousness, what the World thinks is righteousness, is just the opposite of God's ideas of righteousness.
40. What changed them that changed the World?--When they heard the voice of God teaching them things that were completely contrary to what was in the valley!
41. The right answer might be just the opposite of what our natural mind thinks.
42. Some people are fighting their way to Hell in spite of everything God can do to stop them! But we're chugging our way to Heaven in spite of everything the Devil can do to stop us!
43. Our disorganisation is sometimes God's organisation!
44. I think we're probably going to be a little surprised one of these days when we get on the other side, at the difference between the World's standards and God's standards--what God considers evil, and what the Devil has taught the World to call evil.
45. The Lord knows what He's doing, even if we don't know what we're doing!
46. God's idea of goodness is Godliness--a sinner who knows he needs God.
47. The Lord always uses things somehow, even things you don't expect him to--including you--and me!
48. God loves to do things contrary to natural expectation, because that takes a miracle and that shows it's God, and not man!
49. God's way up is down!--Down to the defeat of self and self-righteousness--up to the victory of the cross and death to self for others!
50. If you value the praise of man you'd better catch it quick while it's passing, `cause it's soon gone! Only God remembers!
51. Watch out that your "improvements" to make something more attractive in your own eyes don't weaken the original structure.
52. Everybody is somebody's fool!--We're fools for Christ's sake!--Whose fool are you?
53. This is a dictatorship, not a democracy! We don't allow freedom for the Devil or his lies and his doctrines!
54. Man proposes but God disposes.
55. It takes the impossible to create a miracle!
56. The World says seeing is believing, but we know believing is seeing.
57. God is our defence, not the System.
58. We have nothing but God, but we'll get a lot further with only God than we'll ever get with trying to ride the back of the System like the Whore and reap the benefits and its delicacies and its favours because we compromise and comply with it like the churches--soon to be destroyed! (Rev.17 & 18)
59. Place worship is man worship--thing worship--temple worship--now an abomination to God!
60. God's children are brainwashed by the Lord--the Devil's are brain-polluted by the System.

61. When any courageous iconoclast becomes so presumptuous as to dare to smash the idols of the generally accepted and practiced and so-called normal psychological behavior of this vast and wrongful majority who justify themselves by comparing themselves with themselves--if some brave pioneer of the spirit or of the flesh or of science is so fool-hardy as to even suggest that this vast and unsilent majority of accepted society could possibly be wrong on some things, he is immediately hooted down as a maniac, denounced as demented, persecuted as a departurist and even often condemned as a criminal, hanged as a heretic or crucified as a menace to society!

62. We are the extremists of today but we're extremely successful where the System has failed! We're the impossible people of today, but we're working miracles in the lives of youth, in the face of the System's flat failures!

63. What we call perfect and what God calls perfect can be two different things. God took a man who was a murderer and made him the Apostle Paul. He took a woman who was one of the biggest harlots in town and made her one of His favourite disciples. So God's idea of perfection is often quite different from the church's idea of perfection or even the law's idea of perfection. God's idea of perfection is Love!

64. There are no such things as natural forces and causes which are not designed by God, because it's all God's Creation and under His control, and nothing can happen except by His Will and His design, or to say the least, His permission.

65. Sometimes I think God does far-out and unorthodox, unconventional, untraditional and very revolutionary as well as seemingly illegal things, just to test our faith and see if we'll still believe, no matter what, like Job did!

66. God's ways are not our ways and His thoughts are not our thoughts and He takes the weakest things to confound the mighty and the foolish things to bring to nought the wisdom of the wise, and often works in a very mysterious way the wonders of His Love to perform.

67. God's idea of saintliness is not sinless perfection, self-righteousness. It's a sinner saved by grace, a sinner who has no perfection, no righteousness of his own at all, but is totally dependent on the grace and the love and the mercy of God by faith. These are the only saints there are--there are no others.

68. Man's extremity is God's opportunity, and God gets His greatest victories out of seeming defeats.

69. The works of God are good and not evil. They may seem evil, look evil and appear to some people to be evil, but even so-called evil is good if God is in it.

70. Follow the leading of the Lord, not any set system. Don't set for yourself any set regimen or set system or itinerary or schedule that you can't break whenever one of God's set-ups appears.

71. God does not rule through the people, He normally rules through one man, an appointed Elder or an appointed Bishop or an appointed Apostle or an appointed Prophet or an appointed Judge or an appointed King, but never through the people. God selects the leaders and He places them over the people and the people have nothing whatsoever to do with the government or the ruling of a nation but to follow God's appointed rulers.

72. The World is far from being overcrowded! It's not even all developed, it's not even all tilled and planted! They could feed billions more people on the Earth even as it is now! That's a big bunch of the Devil's lies that you've got to cut down the population because you can't feed'm all!--The Devil's own tricks to try to advocate birth control and murderous abortions!

73. It's a terrible thing to measure God by man!

74. God likes to do things differently and in many ways that to us seem downright ridiculous, outlandishly funny, seemingly impossible, and outright laughable, just to show His power, that He's not bound by conventions, traditions, customs, the System, or any kind of impossibilities!

(See also No. A, E, M, 6, 7, 12, 23, 35, 45, 57, 117, 122, 179A, 309B, 330C, 368, 373, 376, 568, 599, 601, 609, 624, 647, 736, 800, 865, 935, 981, 996, 1027, 1036, 1332.)

75. .16:7 But the Lord said unto Samuel, Look not on his countenance, or on the height of his stature; because I have refused him: for the Lord seeth not as man seeth; for man looketh on the outward appearance, but the Lord looketh on the heart.

76. .108:12 Give us help from trouble: for vain is the help of man.

77. .118:8,9 It is better to trust in the Lord than to put confidence in man. It is better to trust in the Lord than to put confidence in princes.

78. .3:7 Be not wise in thine own eyes: fear the Lord, and depart from evil.

79. .4:18,19 But the path of the just is as the shining light, that shineth more and more unto the perfect day. The way of the wicked is as darkness; they know not at what they stumble.

80. .14:12 There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death.

81. .16:2 All the ways of a man are clean in his own eyes; but the Lord weigheth the spirits.

82. .20:24 Man's goings are of the Lord; how can a man then understand his own way?

83. .55:8,9 For My thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways My ways, saith the Lord. For as the Heavens are higher than the Earth, so are My ways higher than your ways, and My thoughts than your thoughts.

84. .27:5,6 I have made the Earth, the man and the beast that are upon the ground, by My great power and by My outstretched arm, and have given it unto whom it seemed meet unto Me. And now have I given all these lands into the hand of Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon, My servant; and the beasts of the field have I given him also to serve him.

85. .17:24 All the trees of the field shall know that I the Lord have brought down the high tree, have exalted the low tree, have dried up the green tree, and have made the dry tree to flourish: I the Lord have spoken and have done it.

86. .11:25 At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank Thee, O Father, Lord of Heaven and Earth, because Thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes.

87. .10:27 And Jesus looking upon them saith, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

88. .1:52 He hath put down the mighty from their seats, and exalted them of low degree.

89. .16:15 Ye are they which justify yourselves before men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men is abomination in the sight of God.

90. .7:24 Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgement.

91. .5:38,39 And now I say unto you, Refrain from these men, and let them alone: for if this counsel or this work be of men, it will come to nought: But if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it; lest haply ye be found even to fight against God.

92. .11:33 O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are His judgments, and His ways past finding out!

93. .12:21 Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.

94. **CO.1:18 For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness; but unto us which are saved it is the power of God.**

95. **CO.1:21 For after that in the wisdom of God the World by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe.**

96. **CO.1:25-29 The foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men. For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called: But God hath chosen the foolish things of the World to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the World to confound the things which are mighty; And base things of the World, and things which are despised hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are: That no flesh should glory in His presence.**

97. **CO.2:14 But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.**

98. .2:5 Harken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this World rich in faith, and heirs of the Kingdom which He hath promised to them that love Him?



*And the Devil, taking Him up into an high mountain, shewed unto Him all the kingdoms of the World in a moment of time. And the Devil said unto Him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will give it (Lk.4:5-6).*

1. By the System, I'm not talking only about the legal laws--I'm talking about the damnable Satanic principles upon which the damned System is built, its own laws of selfishness and "do your own thing" and keep on living just as you did, refusing any change.
2. God is not for democracy! He's for Theocracy!: Rule by God and His people, a dictatorship of the Lord!
3. Only a country that is rich and safe can afford to be a democracy, for democracy is the most expensive and nefarious kind of government ever heard of on Earth!
4. Majority rule, or a democracy, is the worst and most inefficient kind of government you can possibly have!
5. Jesus Himself taught that the majority is always wrong: "Broad is the way and wide is the gate that leadeth unto destruction, and many there be that go in thereat!"
6. Democracy is ridiculous comic opera!--The most inefficient muddled confusion that was ever created by man!
7. Whenever you have an efficient government you have a dictatorship.--Harry S. Truman.
8. Rebellious people have to be ruled with an iron hand!
9. The cleverest form of dictatorship: They tell you you're free when you're really a slave without even a slave's security!--Like in the U.S.
10. Every worldly dictatorship has been built on fear, people's willingness to surrender their freedoms in order to preserve their lives.
11. This is how every worldly dictator gets in power: He persuades the people to sell him their bodies and souls and their freedoms to save their lives, purses, and possessions!
12. The Capitalists worship that which they've already got, the Communists worship that which they hope to have.
13. Communism is like a flood that is sweeping the whole World with its red tide.
14. Communism cannot conquer death and pain and sorrow and crying and wipe away all tears from your eyes, but God can and will!
15. Look at the rich!--They're the most miserable of all men, and yet they have everything that Communism says will satisfy and make you happy!
16. Communism is a religion--a religion of the Devil!
17. Communism is a religion--the worship of man, an example of the coming World Antichrist government.
18. Communism is the ultimate in hypocrisy, trying to pretend that man is good enough without God.
19. The Communists only pretend to have Communism--we really have it! They only preach Communism--we live it!
20. When great changes occur in history, when great principles are involved, as a rule the majority are wrong.
21. The test of courage comes when one is in the minority; the test of tolerance comes when one is in the majority.

22. Oppressed people are frequently very oppressive when first liberated. ... They know best two positions: Somebody's foot on their neck or their foot on somebody's neck.
23. Every successful worldly revolution puts on in time the robes of the tyrant it has deposed.
24. Nothing is clearer in history than the adoption by successful rebels of the methods they were accustomed to condemn in the forces they deposed.
25. Men who use terrorism as a means to power, rule by terror once they are in power.
26. How a minority, reaching majority,  
Seizing authority, hates a minority.
27. That, amid our highest civilization, men faint and die with want, is not due to the lack of nature, but to the injustice of man.
28. Every World Empire has ultimately been ruled by the Devil and has always persecuted God's people!
29. This is a new dual personality they have developed in a lot of countries now, watch it! They have a surfaced Party above ground, official, recognised, legal, and become very popular and recognised. Then beneath ground, underground, they've got radical terrorists who are doing assassinations and bombings and all kinds of things, dirty work that they don't dare acknowledge.
30. The members of the System are bound by the System.
31. Communism doesn't really offer the answer. It only has a theoretical goal: An earthly Utopian Communist heaven-on-Earth. But Communism even admits it hasn't reached that yet.
32. In fact, Communism is a religion in itself. The Soviets are very puritanical, extremely self-righteous and narrow-minded. Its' a religion of self-righteousness.
33. The trouble with the children of Israel was that, although Moses got them out of Egypt, he couldn't get Egypt out of them!
34. What god does the World give that can love man in his lowest estate and save him in his hour of need from his most pitiful plights?
35. When people don't stay on the Center--Jesus--they become eccentric, off center, irrational, unreasonable, and almost a little bit off their rocker!
36. A little country who decides to buck a big one had better have a big friend!
37. There are always some who are not content with Heavenly bliss, but still prefer the madness of an Earthly Hell!
38. A jury consists of twelve persons chosen to decide who has the better lawyer.
39. Most politicians are the biggest hypocrites and liars and cheaters and grafters, and you just can't be a politician in America today and still be a true Christian!
40. God calls the Wicked His sword to afflict His Own people for their sins.
41. Force and right are the governors of this world; force till right is ready.
42. When I sell liquor, it's called bootlegging; when my patrons serve it on silver trays on Lake Shore Drive, it's called hospitality.--Al Capone
43. Justice without force is powerless; force without justice is tyrannical.
44. Nothing which is morally wrong can ever be politically right--except by the party in power!
45. The World always makes the assumption that the exposure of an error is identical with the discovery of the truth--that error and truth are simply opposite. They are nothing of the sort. What the World turns to, when it has been cured of one error, is usually simply another error, and maybe one worse than the first one.
46. We enact many laws that manufacture criminals, and then a few that punish them.
47. Bad officials are elected by good citizens who do not vote.
48. God does not run a Democracy, He runs an absolute total Dictatorship, and the people have very little to say about how He wants to run it, it's His affair.
49. The sign of bureaucracy is when the first person who answers the phone can't help you.
50. The only thing harder to clean up than a small boy is politics.
51. Polls are voting places where you stand in line for a chance to decide who will spend your money.
52. Why do they call them candidates when so many are far from candid?
53. There are some politicians who shake your hand before an election and your confidence afterward.
54. Columbus ventured forth like the thinking of modern government: He didn't know where he was going when he started, he didn't know where he was when he got there, and he did it on borrowed money.
55. You can tell the ideals of a nation by its advertisements.
56. The media often says what they know is untrue, in the hope that if they go on saying it long enough it will come true.
57. "If the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch." (Mat.15:14)

58. Whoever profits by the crime is guilty of it.
59. A politician thinks of the next election; a statesman, of the next generation.
60. Don't tell me there aren't slaves today!--The poor are still slaves of the rich and rich governments who tell'm what to do and how to do it on slave-labour wages!
61. The whole World System is built on a false foundation, people's faith in the wrong things!
62. It's amazing how many times "the wicked" and "the rich" are almost used synonymously in God's Word. The Word of God takes the position that the average rich man is wicked or he wouldn't be rich!
63. Most of the rich get their money by robbing the poor!
64. The faster the World goes, the faster it's hell-bent for destruction!
65. Systemites are sure smart about Flatland, but when it comes to anything else, they are totally ignorant.
66. The System accuses us of the things that they themselves are guilty of.
67. The Lord doesn't mind rich people as long as they give it away or share it or use it!
68. Every nation has its reaping time, gleaning time and hour of judgement!
69. God loves the poor and He'll feed them, even if He has to use the Devil to do it!
70. Man has turned God's Paradise into the Devil's Hell on Earth with his inventions which are polluting, destroying and annihilating mankind himself!
71. God doesn't have to destroy the wicked, they destroy themselves.
72. The System might be roaring after us, but the Lord always saves us!
73. God is always on the side of the righteous regardless of its political brand name or nationality.
74. God is almost always on the side of the poor, and the poor win every time in the long run!
75. While the World's attention is being diverted by minor spectacular events, it is rapidly, subtly and insidiously without much fanfare or notification, heading downward for the greatest economic crash, depression and social and political cataclysm in all of World history!
76. The most horrible darkness of all is when you think it's light and instead it's black darkness!
77. There's only one thing worse than a drug addict, that's a System addict!
78. There is nothing new under the sun! Everything man ever invented is nothing but a cheap imitation, a poor plastic counterfeit, or a simple illustration of the realities in the Spirit.
79. System addicts are the worst addicts of all! System addiction is the most subtle, most treacherous, most insidious, most diabolical, most difficult to detect, this system addiction of those that are addicted to the God-damned Systems of this World, the fashions of this World!--Love not the World! (1Jn.2:15)
80. The System can't stand love! It's built on hate, greed, selfishness and grasping war and violence!
81. One of the foremost signs of the demise of all the famous World empires was when they began to adulterate their metal coinage with baser cheaper metals that were not worth the face value, as most have today. The U.S. "silver" dollar is only worth about 4 cents!
82. The steel industry is one of the worst things that ever happened to mankind, because out of the knowledge of how to make steel has come weapons of war and destructive automobiles and all kinds of evils of the World!
83. Man doesn't really create anything, he merely discovers what God has already made and how to put it together.
84. A soldier goes out and dies for his country.  
A diplomat goes out and lies for his country.
85. This whole World is on fire in the basement!--Not a very secure place to live unless you trust the Lord!
86. None so blind as those who will not see! None so deaf as those who will not hear!
87. If history teaches one lesson above another, it is that leadership passes from nations whose morals become corrupt.
88. Probably the reason why a politician stands on his record is to keep voters from examining it.
89. Materialism is really the major religion of the World.
90. The rich everywhere all carry the same spirit: It's a lack of concern for the needs of the poor.
91. The vast majority are always wrong in the World at large!
92. America has been living in luxury at the world's expense while other nations are starving.
93. America is the epitome of the Great Whore of Revelation 17 and 18.
94. The pollution of society is the greatest pollution of today.
95. Peaceful socialism is an impossibility, because the rich will never voluntarily share their wealth!
96. The whole world's financial system is collapsing right now!--Because it is based on paper pig money instead of God's good gold!
97. God judges a government by the way it takes care of its poor.

98. The existence of any system in the World depends both on the will of God and the will of man.
99. God has always showed Himself to be on the side of the poor and against the rich, the tyrants and the despots.
100. Systemites are slaves of the chains of conformity forged by their own hands!
101. The vast majority are nearly always wrong and wicked, according to God's Word.
102. Man is not evolving, but devoluting (Devil-luting), without God, and the end is Hell on Earth!
103. God is always for minority rule of the righteous over the wicked majority.
104. The Devil has been trying to rule the World for thousands of years. In empire after empire after empire he has been the king. Even if that empire had a series of kings, he possessed them all, very few of them escaped.
105. The political system is always of God. He gives exactly what the people deserve. (See Romans 13.)
106. There are none so blind as those that will not see and those whose minds are so made up they don't care to be confused with the facts!
107. The U.S. no longer judges other countries by whether they're good or bad, but only by whether they're pro-U.S. or pro-Communist--if they're friends of the U.S. then they're okay, no matter how bad they are!
108. All the powers that be are of God, whether a blessing or a curse, and they are sent by God to do His Will and accomplish His purpose!
109. Man creates Hell on Earth while he seeks Heaven on the Moon.
110. Oil, which has become supposedly the greatest blessing to the World, will now become one of its greatest curses if it has to do without it!
111. I don't think the Lord likes iron and steel, because look what damage it's done to the World!
112. Babylonian blobs are the epitome of inefficiency and wasted manpower.
113. When people are drowning, they will grasp at any straw, no matter what price they have to pay in loss of liberties, freedoms, honour and conscience.
114. Majority rule means rule by the wicked majority, because the majority are always wrong.
115. If fifty million people say a foolish thing it is still a foolish thing.
116. The Bible teaches that if the rich don't give it to the poor, God will allow the poor to take it away from them.
117. Power may justly be compared to a great river; while kept within its bounds it is both beautiful and useful, but when it overflows its banks, it is then too impetuous to be stemmed; it bears down all before it, and brings destruction and desolation wherever it comes.
118. The poor are trying to figure out how much they can get from the rich, and the rich are trying to figure out how little they can possibly give, and there's no solution without love.
119. Cities are man's festering sores on the body politic! The curse of civilization is its cities!
120. City life: Millions of people being lonesome together.
121. The typical successful American businessman was born in the country, where he worked hard so that he could live in the city to make enough money to retire to the country!
122. Vulgar of manner, overfed  
Overdressed and underbred,  
Heartless, Godless, Hell's delight,  
Rude by day and lewd by night,  
Bedwarfed the man, o'ergrown the brute,  
Ruled by boss and prostitute,  
Purple-robed and pauper-clad,  
Raving, rotting, money-mad,  
A squirming herd in Mammon's mesh,  
A wilderness of human flesh,  
Crazed with avarice, lust and rum,  
New York, thy name's Delirium.
123. God doesn't like the cities of man, they're the anti-type, the exact opposite of the Heavenly City of God!
124. God speaks through His Creation, but how many people in those big smelly stinking filthy wicked vile cities can hear Him?
125. Cities are a completely devilish, fiendish, diabolical, false, artificial, superficial environment not created by God but by the Devil himself, utterly separated from the real things that God made, the beauties of His handiwork and the glory of His creation.



126. Every city man has ever built has crumbled to dust and ruins! The most gigantic and marvelous and beautiful cities of all are in ruins today, and so will be these modern cities of today, their towers will fall and they will crumble to rubble and ruins in the coming Great Atomic War and the Wrath of God!

127. Diplomacy is to do and say the nastiest thing in the nicest way.

128. The Devil was king of every World empire and possessed their kings just like he'll be king of the Antichrist kingdom at the End.

129. There is no such thing as horizontal control in the Kingdom of God, it's strictly vertical and it's strictly from the top down from God Himself.

130. Democracy tears a nation apart. The people can't govern themselves nor have they ever been able to govern themselves.

131. I believe in dictatorial socialism where the dictator robs the rich to feed the poor and takes it away by force, because that's the only way it'll ever happen.

132. God's whole governmental structure has never been a Democracy, it's always been an absolute totalitarian dictatorship from the family unit on up, and every time you get away from that you get in trouble. That's why so many Western democracies are in such a helluva mess right now.

133. God's Government is not a government of the people, it's a Government of God and His chosen, ordained, anointed, divine leadership. It's got nothing to do with what the people want, the people are always wrong, the people are always going astray.

134. I believe in total theocracy--government by God and not through any kind of Congresses. The earliest governments of God were theocracies with God as the Boss and His primary agents the Prophets of God.

135. The coming Kingdom of Jesus Christ is going to be an absolute dictatorship, not of the Proletariat, not of the God-damned Christ-hating Communists, but the Dictatorship of God through His King, Jesus Christ, with us as His officers doing exactly what He tells us to do and nothing else. Because that's the only decent, good, effective, efficient powerful kind of government sufficient to run the World.

136. You can't make people be righteous, you can't make people obey. They have got to want to obey or they're going to find some way to disobey. That's why in our Kingdom we try to rule in Love, and if people love you and love the Lord, then they want to please you and they want to obey and do what's right.

137. The World of today does not admire weakness. The only thing they respect is force, strength and violence. The ones they will worship are the ones who have got the might and who they consider right because they have the strength and the power.

138. No power can conquer this World except by the Will of God. The Communists are not where they are by their own will, nor because they are so smart and Communism is so great. They are where they are because God lets them be.

139. War is a mere symptom. Economic bankruptcy and distress is a symptom. Political confusion is a symptom. The whole mess is merely the exterior sign of the disease within, and the disease within is irreligion, atheism, rebellion against God and defiance of the Lord and anti-Christ opposition to Jesus.

140. I don't believe in Democracy, I believe in Dictatorship. The Kingdom of Jesus Christ is not going to be a Democracy and it isn't even one now. It's a Dictatorship of the Holy Spirit and if you don't listen to God's dictates, you'd better watch out!

141. I'm not for equality. I'm not for racial equality, I'm not for economic equality, I'm not for political equality because God and the Bible are not for any such nonsense. Every man shall receive according to his works and some shall shine as the stars and some shall rise to everlasting shame and contempt!

142. There is no such thing as equality except spiritually in Salvation. If you're not equal before you get saved you'll never be equal after you're saved, except spiritually, that's the only equality.

143. The rich are so smart about making money, but they are so blind about seeing real value in the future and what it's leading to.

144. God's given man 6,000 years to run the World his own way and he's made a helluva mess out of it. There has hardly been a day in history where there hasn't been a war going on somewhere, people fighting, killing, maiming, wounding, injuring and selfish and starving and disease-ridden. Man has made one Hell on Earth of what was once a Heaven on Earth.

145. The two greatest superpowers in the World are both officially anti-Church, anti-religion, anti-God and anti-Christ.

146. In the Millennium God will rule over the World's remaining wicked for a thousand years of absolute totalitarian iron rule where everyone will be forced to obey, to show the World how it should have been run and how it could have been run if they would have obeyed Him voluntarily, and how much better it will be under such a government in which everybody is compelled to be righteous and is forced to obey and has to do good. There is no

more crime, no more vice, no more rebellions, no more riots, no more war, but total perfect peace under the iron rule dictatorship of the Lord, in which you and I work with Him as His officials, like the angels of God, super men with super power!

147. If a society doesn't repent or turn around or revolte or revolt or have a revolution, it eventually becomes stationary, static, stagnant and stinks, because it's dead! The body politic dies, corrupts, decays, until God has to send a young, livelier, more moving society along to bury it, because it encumbereth the ground and endangers the health of the World. It stinks so bad even God can't stand it anymore, so He sends along a revolution to bury it.

148. People get the kind of government they deserve. A corrupt people get a corrupt government. A self-righteous hypocritical people get a self-righteous hypocritical government.

149. All attempts at changes for the better in today's governments, whether violent or non-violent, by unregenerate and sinful man, will only bring more unregenerate and sinful governments, economies, pollutions, educations and religions, resulting from man's sinful heart. To truly change these instruments and ailments of man you must change man himself and his evil heart, something only God can do. Otherwise you will only have revolution after revolution, war upon war, rich and poor, pollution and disease, the vain babblings of science falsely-so-called, political religion and regime after regime and empire following empire, all in vain and waxing worse and worse, for man is not evoluting but Devil-luting without God and the End is Hell on Earth.

150. In order not to have to confess its faults or expose its errors or show its weaknesses and the fact that it could be on the verge of collapse, or the Earth on the Eve of Destruction, the tendency of each existing system is to keep the people in a state of ignorance and semi-unconsciousness of what is really going on in the World and space, in a desperate attempt to preserve law and order through the establishment in the lives and minds of the people of a false sense of security.

151. Any country that refuses to participate in a war is bound to prosper, because countries spend from half to two thirds of their total economy on war--paying for past wars, present wars and future wars, so they have to waste most of their money on wars, and it's a terrible burden on the people!

152. The weakness of dictatorship is the death of the dictator. As long as he's alive and is a good, strong, smart, wise, God-blessed man or sometimes even when he's bad, at least there's a strong government that keeps a hold on the country and enforces peace.

153. If two men grab guns to get what they want, they're criminals. If a group of them organise and get together and grab guns to get what they want, they're gangsters. But if they're trying to get their political freedom and grab back territory that once belonged to them that some other bunch of gangsters has already conquered, then they're terrorists. And if they are a pretty good-sized army of so-called terrorists, then they're guerrillas. Finally, when they get an army big enough to conquer the territory and grab it back or from somebody else then it's a legal, sophisticated, self-righteous army. What names they call you, all depends on how big you are and how powerful you are.

154. Worldly governments today are based on power and money and guns and who's got the biggest friends.

155. The World has opted out against righteous rule and for the mad majority rule instead. That is the Devil's own doctrine.--One-man one-vote majority rule, because that way he can guarantee that he is going to stay in control.

156. I believe Russia and Communism are God's judgments on a wicked World.

157. The Religious Whore rules over the Bestial Governments, and the government has to do whatever the religionists say.

158. The whole World is in a war between the dying anti-Christ Capitalistic West and the rising anti-Christ Communist East.

159. There could undoubtedly be forces of [AC] conspiracy who are backing Communism as well as Capitalism and backing their enmity against each other and their confrontation so that they'll destroy each other and the [ACs] can pick up the pieces with the Antichrist and rule the World!

160. The poor nations of the World hate the Americans for being so rich, and the only reason they're rich is because they have robbed the poor of the World!

161. The [ACs] have been the downfall of America and brought it to shame! They're the tools of the Devil, out to wreck God's Creation...! They've helped to destroy the West, which they now control!

162. I'm proud of the Third World as being far more righteous than the West, far more humble and loving and affectionate and sweet and kind and good, better in almost every way!

163. The religion of World is materialism, whether it's a little thatched hut and a wooden canoe or a rich mansion and a Rolls Royce, if you worship it it's a sin. If you worship it and love it and work hardest for it in order

to preserve it and keep it above God Himself with no love for God nor your fellowman nor neighbor, then it is your god and you are worshipping it. When it's your everything and you'd give up anything for it, even if it's just a shanty or a grass shack, if it's what you'd rather have above all things on Earth and what you worship, what you love above God and others, then it's your idol, it's your god, it's your religion. If you worship things and materialism you're worshipping Babylon, the Whore because she is the goddess of things, the goddess of wealth, the goddess of possessions, the goddess of materialism.

164. Materialism is worship of things and its followers are servants and slaves to things--Mammon is their god and materialism is their religion.

165. Commercialism, materialism, buying and selling, manufacturing things, selling things, buying things, serving things, living for things must be classed as a form of false religion.

166. Modern materialism is also part of the false recognised religious system. The worship of the god Mammon is a part of the False Church, it's the major false religion of today, the major worship of today. God's Word says that whoever you obey, you're their servant. Whoever you're working for, you're their servant. If you're working for money you're money's servant. So modern materialism and commercialism is the major worship and religion of the day. This is the church to which most Americans belong--a church of the great god Mammon, the one they attend daily and worship at least 8, 12, 14 or 16 hours a day!

167. Most people are not slaves to their churches or their false established religious system. Their greatest slavery is to the god Mammon, the god of wealth and material things, and the ultimate in this is Communism, dialectical materialism as Karl Marx called it.--No faith in the supernatural or the spiritual or God or the Bible or anything religious supposedly, but only faith in what can be seen, heard, felt, touched, tasted. It's the ultimate form of materialism which Communism claims is their major goal and should be the aim of all the world and all society--to make a god of economy, eventually a god of the government, and according to the Bible eventually they will make a god of the leader of the Government, the Antichrist! So here we have materialism in its ultimate, and in Capitalism we've got a pretty good ultimate of materialism also, the worship of material things.

168. A wicked people always deserve a wicked king.

169. The rich have fences and walls and gates to keep out the thieves and the robbers and the criminals and the murderers, but the demons of Hell are able to pass over those gates and enter their homes and their hearts with fear and sickness and disease and worry and insanity and suffering and pain and death!

170. The fiendish, devilish economic System keeps Christians from serving God or gives them an excuse for not serving God and is built on the manufacture of the weapons of war and the idols of luxury and sends our boys to be cannon-fodder so some people can make money while most of the World starves; it robs the poor to feed the rich and is now tottering on the brink of bankruptcy.

171. When the white people of the World began to forget God and use their superior power to their own selfish advantage, exploiting the poor, the Lord took it away.

172. God has given riches to the World to show what they'd do with them. Therefore He's going to wipe them out because they've robbed the poor to stay wealthy instead of sharing the wealth.

173. The only way America can have plenty is with war. American economy, Western economy, Capitalist economy can thrive only on war.

174. When a nation demands more than they need, when they demand absolute excess and extravagant luxury--they have to rob the poor to get it, and to rob the poor to get it they have to wage war.

175. God is angry with the too-rich industrialists and selfish Capitalists who covet it all and want more than their rightful share and withhold from the poor and withhold the hire of the laborers that reap down their fields.

176. Does God say it's wrong to be rich? Not really, He just says watch out what it does to you. If you've got the right attitude, you can even be rich 'cause you're always sharing what you've got.

177. Capitalism is coming to the end of itself. It has overextended itself, it has lived beyond its income. It's living on borrowed money and borrowed time, and some day soon it's going to have to pay!

178. The wrong people are preaching the right message and the right people are preaching the wrong message. The Communists today are preaching sharing and the church is preaching selfishness.

179. Communism is more Christian than Capitalism in ethics and in behaviour and in their puritanical morality. The Russians today act more Christian than the Americans. In fact, in the Russians the Devil is copying this very system from Christianity. He's trying to show the World how you can have Christianity without God.

180. As long as the powers-that-be pretty generally and fairly well represent the laws of God, and its officers are the officers of His law, then God keeps them in power. But when they begin to be completely contrary to the laws of God and they go against the Lord and His people, for this many a great nation and empire has gone down the drain!

181. Governments are bold-faced liars, constantly telling lies to each other and to the World and lying to themselves and their people!

182. The Western World is crashing and crumbling financially, economically and is already totally bankrupt. It's just waiting for the faith of the people to fail before the bottom completely drops out.

183. The World today is lost, but they're going hell-bent, hell-fast to destruction, not willing to stop, not willing to wait, not willing to hesitate, not willing to stop and find out why or ask God to help them, just going willfully on their own way until pretty soon they're going to crash into the stone of destruction and judgement!

184. While the former savage parts of the World are now getting civilised, the formerly civilised parts are now going savage.

185. Governments print millions of dollars that they don't have any backing for whatsoever, and it's just as worthless as the ones that the criminal counterfeiters print.

186. The World is not going bankrupt, it's already bankrupt, but they're just trying their best to hide it!

187. The governments want to keep the people asleep, and they don't have too hard a time doing it because the people don't want to wake up! They like to be asleep, they don't want to know the Truth. They're just shutting their eyes hoping it will somehow go away, but it won't.

(See also No. H, L, 10, 65, 103, 105, 108, 149, 162, 205, 214A, 216, 219, 226, 230, 232, 239, 243, 245, 255, 256, 270, 272, 274, 282, 284, 288, 294, 310, 310B, 313B, 321, 327, 333, 342, 350, 358, 373, 393, 574, 596, 601, 634, 681, 733, 738, 741, 742, 867, 869, 908, 911, 918, 938, 961, 1053, 1059, 1192, 1193, 1223, 1226, 1227, 1241, 1242, 1243, 1244, 1245, 1263, 1283, 1326, 1340, 1342, 1538.)

188. 12:6 The tabernacles of robbers prosper, and they that provoke God are secure; into whose hand God bringeth abundantly.

189. 31:24,25,28 If I have made gold my hope, or have said to the fine gold, Thou art my confidence; If I rejoiced because my wealth was great, and because mine hand had gotten much. This also were an iniquity to be punished by the judge: for I should have denied the God that is above.

190. .37:35 I have seen the wicked in great power, and spreading himself like a green bay tree.

191. .49:11 Their inward thought is, that their houses shall continue for ever, and their dwelling places to all generations; they call their lands after their own names.

192. .49:16,17 Be not thou afraid when one is made rich, when the glory of his house is increased; For when he dieth he shall carry nothing away: his glory shall not descend after him.

193. .58:1,2 Do ye judge uprightly, O ye sons of men? Yea, in heart ye work wickedness; ye weigh the violence of your hands in the Earth.

194. .1:19 So are the ways of every one that is greedy of gain; which taketh away the life of the owners thereof.

195. .8:15,16 By Me kings reign, and princes decree justice. By Me princes rule, and nobles, even all the judges of the Earth.

196. .10:2 Treasures of wickedness profit nothing: but righteousness delivereth from death.

197. .11:4 Riches profit not in the day of wrath: but righteousness delivereth from death.

198. .16:8 Better is a little with righteousness than great revenues without right.

199. .21:6 The getting of treasures by a lying tongue is a vanity tossed to and fro of them that seek death.

200. .21:17 He that loveth pleasure shall be a poor man: he that loveth wine and oil shall not be rich.

201. .22:1 A good name is rather to be chosen than great riches, and loving favour rather than silver and gold.

202. .27:24 Riches are not for ever: and doth the crown endure to every generation?

203. .28:22 He that hasteth to be rich hath an evil eye, and considereth not that poverty shall come upon him.

204. .29:2 When the righteous are in authority, the people rejoice: but when the wicked beareth rule, the people mourn.

205. .2:11 Then I looked on all the works that my hands had wrought, and on the labour that I had laboured to do: and, behold, all was vanity and vexation of spirit, and there was no profit under the sun.

206. .5:10 He that loveth silver shall not be satisfied with silver; nor he that loveth abundance with increase: this is also vanity.

207. .5:12 The sleep of a labouring man is sweet, whether he eat little or much: but the abundance of the rich will not suffer him to sleep.

208. .5:15 As he came forth of his mother's womb, naked shall he return to go as he came, and shall take nothing of his labour, which he may carry away in his hand.

209. .6:7 All the labour of man is for his mouth, and yet the appetite is not filled.

210. .10:20 Curse not the king, no not in thy thought; and curse not the rich in thy bedchamber: for a bird of the air shall carry the voice, and that which hath wings shall tell a matter.

211. .6:13 From the least of them even unto the greatest of them every one is given to covetousness.

212. .8:4 They have set up kings, but not by Me: they have made princes, and I knew it not.

213. .2:12 Woe to him that buildeth the town with blood, and stablisheth a city by iniquity!

214. .1:6 Ye have sown much, and bring in little; ye eat, but ye have not enough; ye drink, but ye are not filled with drink; ye clothe you, but there is none warm; and he that earneth wages earneth wages to put it into a bag with holes.

215. .19:24 It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the Kingdom of God.

216. .4:19 And the cares of this World, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the Word, and it becometh unfruitful.

217. .8:36,37 Or what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole World, and lose his own soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

218. .10:24,25 Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter into the Kingdom of God! It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the Kingdom of God.

219. .1:53 He hath filled the hungry with good things; and the rich he hath sent empty away.

220. .9:25 For what is a man advantaged, if he gain the whole World, and lose himself, or be cast away? For whosoever shall be ashamed of Me and of My Words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when He shall come in His Own glory, and in His Father's, and of the holy angels.

221. .12:15 And He said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.

222. .12:19-21 And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry. But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be, which thou hast provided? So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.

223. .19:10,11 Then said Pilate unto Him, speakest Thou not unto me? Knowest Thou not that I have power to crucify Thee, and have power to release Thee? Jesus answered, Thou couldst have no power at all against Me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered Me unto thee hath the greater sin.

224. .13:1 Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God.

225. .3:2 Set your affection on things above, not on things on the Earth.

226. **TL.2:1,2 I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men; For kings, and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all Godliness and honesty.**

227. **TL.6:9,10 But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition. For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.**

228. .3:1 Put them in mind to be subject to principalities and powers, to obey magistrates, to be ready to every good work.

229. .5:3 Your gold and silver is cankered; and the rust of them shall be a witness against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire. Ye have heaped treasure together for the last days.

(See also JER.18:6-10.)



*To loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke (Isa.58:6).*

1. Habit is a cable; you weave a thread of it everyday, and at last you cannot break it.
2. Cultivate good habits--the bad ones all grow wild.
3. The best throw with the dice is to throw them away.
4. Habit with some people is the test of truth, "it must be right: I've done it from my youth."
5. The toughest form of mountain climbing is getting out of a rut.
6. We keep having to have revolutions to get out of ruts and break old habits.
7. I just do what I feel like doing!--The trouble is, too many people have formed bad habits to where they don't feel like doing the right thing anymore.
8. In eating, a good habit is to quit when you still want more!
9. The chains of bad habit are too weak to be felt until they are too strong to be broken--except by the Lord.
10. To enjoy work, make it a habit.
11. Gambling is a sickness, a disease, an addiction, an insanity, and is always a loser in the long run.
12. Game-playing, such as chess and cards, is as addictive as gambling and alcohol and used as a tool of the Devil to waste time!
13. A craving for sweets is like a craving for drugs or drink or gambling.--It's something the Devil knows can absolutely destroy you!
14. Habits are at first cobwebs, then cables.

(See also No.78, 106, 353, 568, 805, 956, 1299, 1362.)



*Happy is that people, that is in such a case: yea, happy is that people, whose God is the Lord (Ps.144:15).*

1. God created you to enjoy the life He's given you, and to love and enjoy Him forever, and to try to help others to do the same!
2. The kind of people God wants are people that love Him and are happy in Him and love to sing and love and play and dance for the Lord and shout His praises and His salvation from the housetops!
3. Joy that isn't shared dies young.
4. I'm happy if you're happy, 'cuz that makes me happy too!
5. They say if you wanna be happy for two hours get drunk! If you wanna be happy for two weeks get married! But if you wanna be happy forever, get saved!
6. God wants you to live for Him as long as possible and as happy as possible, a good happy sample of the joy of the Lord, before some day you have to die for Him.
7. Our kind of love has got something to offer! It's happy, it's lively, it's dynamic, it's positive, it's powerful! It's not slow and sad and draggy and dreary drudgery.
8. We communicate joy to other people through our shining, happy, smiling faces and blithe spirits and bright glow of our personalities because of the Spirit of the Lord, because He's our personality and that's what wins the World to us!
9. If I never get any further than this, I've had a great time getting this far!
10. God made all the most important essential work in the World enjoyable and delightful and satisfying--eating, loving, sleeping and even our work for Him is a pleasure!
11. The Lord made life for us to enjoy, and I like to enjoy it to the fullest!
12. We're the most satisfied, happiest customers in the world, because we've all partaken of the best possible product!--Jesus!
13. You'll never appreciate Joy until you've known Sorrow!
14. You too can joy with others share  
And heal the hearts to you laid bare  
If you'll but pour the oil of Love  
He'll give you from His Heart above.
15. The time to be happy is now,  
And the place to be happy is here,  
And the way to be happy is to make others happy  
And we'll have a little Heaven right here!
16. Be cheerful!--Of all the things you wear, your expression is the most important.
17. Our religion, work and play make us happy. Very little makes us unhappy, except the fact that some other people are not happy.
18. The only way on Earth to multiply happiness is to divide it.
19. A sad world cannot be sweetened by sour religion.
20. Enjoy yourself!--It's later than you think!
21. When I gave up trying to be perfect I finally became happy.
22. Here are five keys to fulfillment: Obey our great God, dream great dreams, plan great plans, pray great prayers, claim great victories.
23. When a bit of sunshine hits you,

After passing of the rain  
When a fit of laughter gets you,  
And your spine is strong again,  
Don't forget to up and fling it  
At a soul that's feelin' blue,  
For the minute that you sling it,  
It's a boomerang to you!

24. Happiness is thinking about others, not yourself!

25. We have a religion full of love and joy and happiness!

26. I'd rather be happy in Jesus

Than sane as the Devil and bad.

If it's madness of spirit that frees us,

I'd rather be mad and be glad!

27. Oh give me a world of madness

If madness is to be glad!

I'd rather be happy in madness

Than only be sane and sad.

28. Every new day is the happiest day of my life! Every day with Jesus is better than the day before!

29. In the Spirit, in the Spirit

All my life is like a song,

In the Spirit, in the Spirit

I am happy all day long.

30. Find someone else to make happy, and then happiness will find you.

31. Priorities: "Jesus, and Others, then You."--Spells JOY!

32. "How happy and content art thou in the bosom of thy father."

33. It is not in doing what you like, but in liking what you do that is the secret of happiness.

34. The things we like are fun

And far from ever being done!

35. If I please the Lord, the Lord lets me do as I please!

36. No man can be happy unless he feels his life is in some way important.

37. Life is hard by the yard;

By the inch life's a cinch!

38. Happiness is not a station you arrive at, but a manner of travelling.

39. Life lived just to satisfy yourself never satisfies anybody.

40. Some cause happiness wherever they go; others whenever they go.

41. Though you travel the World over to find the beautiful, you must carry it with you or you'll find it not.

42. Happiness is a thing to be practiced, like a violin.

43. Content lodges oftener in cottages than in palaces.

44. The best cure for grief is action.

45. Happiness is a rainbow in your heart.

46. The hearts that share one Love, one Life, will always know true joy.

47. Take a cup of kindness, mix it well with love.

Add a lot of patience and faith in God above.

Sprinkle very generously with joy and thanks and cheer,

And you'll have lots of "angel food"

To feast on all the year.

48. The 10 basic things you need in order to be happy are: Love and understanding; change; recognition; appreciation; challenge; fulfillment or satisfaction; to feel accepted or belong; fellowship or companionship; a goal; and to be helpful to others. All of these we have in the Family.

49. How can you be poor when you're rich in happiness and rich in love!

50. To feel rich, count the things that you have that money can't buy.

51. The ultimate wealth is happiness!

52. This is one story that hasn't got any end, because it's eternal, forever! You can't say "and that's the happy ending" because that's just the happy beginning! But you can say, "And they lived happily ever after!"

53. The Lord overrules your human desire and fulfills your heart's desire!



54. Our Garden of Eden is even better than the first one, because we've got more Eves, more Adams and more children too!

55. Gather the crumbs of happiness and they will make you a loaf of contentment.

56. Friendship doubles your joys and divides your grief.

57. The longer I serve Him, the sweeter He grows.

The more that I love Him, more love He bestows.

Each day is like Heaven, my heart overflows.

The longer I serve Him, the sweeter He grows.

58. Is your life bulging with excitement, virility and fruitfulness?!--Or is it dead, dull, sterile, frigid and barren, like most churches!

59. Happiness is a perfume you cannot pour on others without getting a few drops on yourself.

60. We've got more to be happy about than anybody else in the world! We have the happy love of Jesus and His Happy Holy Spirit!

61. Every person lives in one of two "tents"--either content or discontent.

62. There is no cosmetic for beauty like happiness.

63. God is the only One Who can give meaning to the Universe, purpose to the planets, love to your heart, peace to your mind, health to your body, rest to your spirit, happiness to your life and joy to your soul!

64. God's a pretty smart Father, and He knows that the more He loves you and the happier you are, the more you'll love Him and the more obedient you'll be out of pure love!

65. Joy is the flag which flies from the castle of the heart when the King is in residence there.

66. If you put Him first, love and worship Him above all and thank Him for all these things He's given you, and you enjoy them, find great pleasure and pleasantness in them, but not to the point that they come first before the Lord or exclude God and His love and worship, then it is not a sin to enjoy life and sex and food and sensual pleasures which God has created for your senses to enjoy.

67. In some religions the sadder you are, the more religious you are. But we consider that you're not very spiritual unless you're happy, victorious and joyful.

(See also No.159, 194, 250, 584, 686, 724, 731, 743, 802, 958, 1035, 1259, 1393, 1456.)

68. .12:18b And thou shalt rejoice before the Lord thy God in all that thou putteth thine hands unto.

69. **CH.9:7 Happy are thy men, and happy are these thy servants, which stand continually before thee, and hear thy wisdom.**

**70. .8:10b For the joy of the Lord is your strength.**

**71. .12:43b God had made them rejoice with great joy: the wives also and the children rejoiced: so that the joy of Jerusalem was heard even afar off.**

**72. .41:22 Sorrow is turned into joy before Him.**

73. **PSA.5:11** But let all those that put their trust in Thee rejoice: let them ever shout for joy, because Thou defendest them: let them also that love Thy Name be joyful in Thee.

**74. PSA.16:11 Thou wilt shew me the path of life: in Thy presence is fulness of joy; at Thy right hand there are pleasures for evermore.**

**75. PSA.19:8** The statutes of the Lord are right, rejoicing the heart: the commandment of the Lord is pure, enlightening the eyes.

**76. PSA.21:1** The king shall joy in Thy strength, O Lord; and in Thy Salvation how greatly shall he rejoice!

77. .32:11 Be glad in the Lord, and rejoice, ye righteous: and shout for joy, all ye that are upright in heart.

78. .65:13b They shout for joy, they also sing.

79. **PSA.70:4** Let all those that seek Thee rejoice and be glad in Thee: and let such as love Thy Salvation say continually, Let God be magnified.

80. .89:15 Blessed is the people that know the joyful sound: they shall walk, O Lord, in the light of Thy countenance.

81. .100:1,2 Make a joyful noise unto the Lord, all ye lands. Serve the Lord with gladness: come before His presence with singing.

82. .105:43 And He brought forth His people with joy, and His chosen with gladness.

83. .119:111 Thy testimonies have I taken as an heritage for ever: for they are the rejoicing of my heart.

84. .119:162 I rejoice at Thy Word, as one that findeth great spoil.

85. **PSA.128:2** For thou shalt eat the labour of thine hands: happy shalt thou be, and it shall be well with thee.

86. **PSA.144:15** Happy is that people, that is in such a case: yea, happy is that people, whose God is the Lord.

87. **PSA.146:5** Happy is he that hath the God of Jacob for his help, whose hope is in the Lord his God.

88. **ISA.12:3** Therefore with joy shall ye draw water out of the wells of Salvation.

89. .35:10 And the ransomed of the Lord shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away.

90. .55:12 For ye shall go out with joy, and be led forth with peace: the mountains and the hills shall break forth before you into singing, and all the trees of the field shall clap their hands.

91. .61:10a I will greatly rejoice in the Lord, my soul shall be joyful in my God.

92. **ISA.65:18** But be ye glad and rejoice for ever in that which I create; for, behold, I create Jerusalem a rejoicing, and her people a joy.

93. .3:18 Yet I will rejoice in the Lord, I will joy in the God of my Salvation.

94. .1:46,47 And Mary said, My soul doth magnify the Lord, And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour.

95. .2:10,11 And the angel said unto them, Fear not; for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.

96. .10:20 Notwithstanding in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, because your names are written in Heaven.

97. **JOH.15:10,11** If ye keep My commandments, ye shall abide in My love; even as I have kept My Father's commandments, and abide in His love. These things have I spoken unto you, that My joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full.

98. **JOH.16:22** And ye now therefore have sorrow; but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you.

99. **ACT.13:52** And the disciples were filled with joy, and with the Holy Ghost.

100. .14:17 For the Kingdom of God is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost.

101. .15:13 Now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that ye may abound in hope, through the power of the Holy Ghost.

102. **CO.6:10a** As sorrowful, yet alway rejoicing.

103. .4:4 Rejoice in the Lord alway: and again I say, Rejoice.

104. **PHI.4:11,12** Not that I speak in respect of want: for I have learned, in whatsoever state I am, therewith to be content. I know both how to be abased, and I know how to abound: every where and in all things I am instructed both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer need.

105. **TH.2:19,20** For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of rejoicing? Are not even ye in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at His coming? For ye are our glory and joy.

106. **1TI.6:6-8** Godliness with contentment is great gain. For we brought nothing into this World, and it is certain we can carry nothing out. And having food and raiment let us be therewith content.

107. .13:5 Be content with such things as ye have: for He hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee.

108. **PE.1:8** Whom having not seen, ye love; in Whom, though now ye see Him not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory.

109. **JO.1:4** And these things write we unto you, that your joy may be full.

(See also **PSA.144:12-15.**)



*Bless the Lord, O my soul, and forget not all His benefits: Who forgiveth all thine iniquities; Who healeth all thy diseases (Psa.103:2-3).*

[HomeARC Note (03/04): *The Charter* details the "Right of Mobility" for all Family members, and Family beliefs regarding faith healing and getting outside medical attention, especially in regards to children.]

1. If God wants to heal you, He doesn't need any help, but if He doesn't want to heal you, nothing will help.
2. God heals and the doctor takes the fee.
3. Doctors are men who prescribe medicines of which they know little, to cure diseases of which they know less, in human beings of whom they know nothing.
4. You don't have to resign yourself that your problems are incurable and just put up with them, tolerate them like the Devil, but you can get the victory!
5. Only those with great faith like Job, when everything goes wrong and seems contrary to the Word and the usual--only those with great faith can say with Job, "Even though it seems like God is breaking His Own Word with me--even though it seems like God has failed me--even though God kills me contrary to all His promises, I'll still trust Him." (Job.13:15)
6. What could be more healing than the Word? (Psa.107:20)
7. Anointing with oil is just a symbol--it's not that the oil does anything or has any peculiar power, but it's just to fulfil what the Scripture says!--It's a symbol of the Holy Spirit.
8. Jesus made us, so He can fix us!
9. People have not lost faith; they have just transferred it from God to the medical profession.
10. Sometimes things happen just to keep you close to the Lord--sickness, trouble, problems. Sometimes they happen to drive you closer to each other. Sometimes they happen to keep you humble. Sometimes they happen to make you pray, all kinds of reasons for having troubles. Even troubles and tribulations are good for us. (Rom.8:28)
11. Once God's forgiven you and healed you, then you'd better be sure you stick to the limits and the regulations and the rules and His will and whatever conditions He's laid down.
12. Once God's given you faith for healing, He expects you to use it.
13. Healing is a special blessing, a priceless privilege, which, unlike salvation, He can take away if you don't keep trusting Him for it and giving Him all the glory.
14. We'd have more miracles of healing if we'd be faithful and simply believe, trust God and pray for people as we should!
15. "He healeth all our diseases."--No exceptions there. He can heal anything!
16. Expect miracles!--And in Jesus' name you'll get them!
17. If He's God at all, He's a God of miracles! If He can create the Universe, He can fix it! If He can make your body, He can repair it!
18. God has a natural remedy for everything, and you'll always find it in the very area of the World where the sickness is.
19. I have never gotten well lying in bed! (Unless I needed the rest and quiet time to pray and hear from the Lord.) God always required me to take a step of faith! It's better to die trying than to die lying! You have to make a conscious effort to manifest faith.

20. The Lord's healing is a little touch of resurrection life, a little bit of Heaven, a little bit of redemption of the body.

21. The System says: "I will lift up mine eyes unto the medicine chest and the pill from whence cometh my help, and to the scientist who hath created all things."

22. Not all Christians have the gift of healing, but healing is available to all Christians!

23. When we have learned the lesson God is trying to teach us, or the conditions are ready for the result that God wants to bring, He says, "rather let it be healed." (Heb.12:13) God prefers to heal--if we can be trusted with it and learn what He is trying to show us.

24. A "thorn in the flesh" is a physical affliction--not a sinful temptation!--"A messenger of Satan"--perhaps even an annoying demon! (2Cor.12:7)

25. God often deals with people physically according to their spiritual handicap or problem.

26. When He has to go to the extreme of allowing your child to be afflicted to touch your heart, you're pretty hardhearted, and I think sometimes pretty self-righteous.

27. I don't think any sickness is normal for a Christian. If you get one it's usually for a reason, to teach you something or because of your own sins. The norm is to be healed, the norm is to be delivered!

28. Healings are not necessarily permanent unless you obey!

29. If we would obey more and keep cleaner and eat the right things and live right, we wouldn't have to be healed so often.

30. I've never known it to fail that when you preach healing and you start attacking the Devil on that subject, he really hates it and the Lord allows you to be tested, too.

31. If He can create the baby, He certainly can straighten the feet. The One who made him can certainly fix him!

32. There are no exceptions: God can heal anything!

33. "Many are the afflictions of the righteous" (Ps.34:19)--but most of them are very little ones and very minor and just enough to keep us close to the Lord.

34. "Many are the afflictions of the righteous"--that's what keeps them so righteous, their many afflictions!

35. Stand on God's Word

And not your feelings

This is the secret

Of faith and healing.

36. God doesn't like to share the glory with the doctor!

37. The medicine will either cure you or it'll most likely prove that it can't--and that you'll have to trust the Lord!

38. Most people would rather take the pill than the pilgrimage of faith!

39. If you're not willing to pay the price God requires for healing, He won't heal you! Only the obedient get healing. It's a reward for the obedient. Health is a special blessing of God. You can only demand it if you're obedient. But if you're disobedient you can't demand anything!

40. You have to let your body know you want to live! "The spirit of a man sustaineth him, but a wounded spirit who can bear!" (Pr.18:14)

41. All that most people need who are upset or disturbed mentally or spiritually, is love!

42. If every time you have an affliction you quit serving God, you'll be a perpetual quitter!

43. You've got to believe and obey the Lord, even if He never heals you!

44. If you go back, you'll make God sick! But if you go on even if you're sick, you'll make God happy.

45. One of the greatest proofs of God's existence is answers to prayer, miracles and especially healing.

46. Prayer is not only cheaper than medicine, but surer too!

47. Pain is a touch of Hell, healing is a touch of Heaven.

48. If God doesn't want me fixed, nobody on Earth can do it! If He does want me fixed, He'll do it by Himself.

49. In some cases people are sick because they have serious spiritual problems, even demonic, and they need to be delivered immediately by urgent prayer before the Devil gets them down any further.

50. If you're sick it's your business to tell the church and ask for prayer:

1) It's a sign of your dependence on the Lord.

2) It's a sign you have faith in prayer.

3) To keep you humble.

4) It's necessary to let others know in order that they can share your burden and so fulfil the law of

Christ.

5) It's a testimony when the Lord answers. (Ja.5:14)

51. Jesus healed everybody, saved or unsaved, as long as they had enough faith to believe on Him. If they could believe Him that much for their healing, then their faith was increased at this sign and they could believe Him a little more for their Salvation.

52. Many run to medicine because they're running away from God's chastening.

53. One of the greatest of healing factors is faith, to know that God loves you and cares for you and is going to take care of you no matter what happens. Faith eliminates one of the greatest causes of disease and ill health, and that's fear and tension.

54. Your physical state of health is definitely largely dependent on your mental state of health, and your mental health is very largely dependent on your spiritual condition, because both love and faith cast out all fear.

55. God wants to test your faith and willingness to obey before He's going to heal you, and He wants to see if you'll believe and obey Him even if you think you may never get healed! What's your healing got to do with faith and obedience? Nothing! But your faith and obedience have a lot to do with your healing!

56. If you do not obey and stay in God's Will and continually give Him the glory for your healing and continue to trust Him for it, He may let your affliction come back, because of your ingratitude and disobedience.

57. The kind of faith that gets results is "though He slay me, yet will I trust Him!" (Job.13:15)

58. If you're going to get healing, you have to testify to it; you have to not only believe it, but also confess it! It's a little like Salvation--you can't be saved without confessing Christ.

59. His body was broken for us for the healing of our bodies, His blood was shed for the salvation of our spirits. There is salvation both for the body and for the spirit.

60. "Is any sick among you? Let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord. And the prayer of faith shall save the sick and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him." (Ja.5:14-15)

61. Hail the Heaven-born Prince of Peace!

Hail the Son of Righteousness!

Light and life to all He brings,

Risen with healing in His wings!

62. There are some more conditions to healing: To be humble, and really seek the Lord and turn from our wicked ways: Anything that we are doing that's wrong or out of His will or foolish or overdoing or abusing our bodies in any way.

63. The first thing that comes to me always even now when I get sick is, "Have I done something wrong?-- Why is this happening?" And I pray accordingly.

64. The only reason we don't have more miracles is that we just don't believe God as we should and don't challenge the Enemy, rebuke that Devil and expect God to answer!

65. Desperate prayer is needed for stubborn cases of illness, and sometimes, "This kind goeth not out save by fasting and prayer." Correct the spiritual problems first as well as the food, sex, cleanliness and other living conditions, then trust God utterly in prayer and obedience and you're bound to get results.

66. You have to literally put God on the spot. He likes it. He likes you to challenge Him to keep His Word. "Now, here, God, I've obeyed You. I've put myself on a limb and sawed it off. Now it's up to You to take care of me. If You want to heal me, You don't need any help."

67. The Lord definitely has good forces within your body which fight the evil forces!

68. If you take care of your health as well as you can, but you still can't obtain a good diet or you can't get enough sleep, then of course God is not limited by those things. He's just as able to heal you or keep you healthy in spite of it.

69. There are a lot of common natural herbal medicines and foods that God has created as remedies for various illnesses for those who don't know the Lord's healing or who are too weak in faith to trust Him to do it in a completely miraculous supernatural way. "He that is weak eateth herbs." (Ro.14:2) On the other hand, if you pray for healing and God shows you or lays on your heart a food or an herb to take as a remedy, that could be considered part of His supernatural answer if you give Him the glory for it.

70. Sometimes your afflictions are not your fault and are permitted as a test of your faith to see if you'll still trust the Lord in the midst of them, and then if you'll trust the Lord for your healing, and frequently that others may see your healing and glorify God. But often afflictions are your fault as a chastisement to get you to correct the problem. If so, pray and ask the Lord to forgive and deliver and cleanse and purify and help you make things right, and usually He will then heal.

71. It's all in what you put your faith in. If you eat certain things because it's part of caring for your body in obedience to the Word, then you're putting your faith in the Word, not the food. But if you eat foods trusting more in

them to keep you healthy or make you healthy than in God to keep or make you healthy, then you're not trusting God.

72. "Many are the afflictions of the righteous, but the Lord delivereth him out of them all." (Ps.34:19)--A double L, all--not just some or a few or most or many, but all, all of them!

73. Why should He honour you with healing when you don't honour Him with faith? If you don't trust Him till you die, then you don't trust Him!

74. If you're going to trust the doctor, go the limit! Get the best doctor, hospital, medicine and everything else you can get! But if you're going to put yourself in the hands of the Lord, He doesn't need anyone!

75. If the Lord wants to take me, doctors and medicine can't stop Him! If He wants to heal me, He can fix me by Himself.

76. If you get healed while you're taking medication, then you're going to give the medication the glory. And if you don't, then everybody else will, because they'll know you were taking the medication. God won't get the glory for it.

77. If God wants to heal you, He's going to heal you only if you'll depend utterly on Him and give Him utterly the glory!--He won't heal you as long as you're leaning on the doctor crutch or any crutch and trusting God halfway and the doctors the other half!

78. There's no halfway with God! He'll have no other gods before Him! (Exo.20:3.) If God doesn't want to heal you, well, you'll just have to accept that and figure the Lord wants to take you Home, and the quicker the better!--Unless He just wants you to continue suffering to keep you humble or close to Him.

79. Trust God utterly and step out on a limb and put God on the spot! "Now Lord, I'm trusting You and I've left home and gone to the mission field and I'm doing my best for You, now You've got to do it! And either You do it or it's not going to get done. Because I'm not going to trust anybody else, certainly not the Devil and his methods!"

80. "Cast thyself on the Lord and He shall sustain thee!" (Ps.55:22.) But leaning on the Lord on one side and the doctor on the other is not going to do it!--It never has for me or anybody I know that really trusted God for healing, to just halfway trust the doctors and halfway trust the Lord.

81. You're not going to prove to anybody else that it was the Lord alone that healed you as long as you're going to the doctors and getting shots and medicines and pills or any kind of treatment! There's always going to be doubt even in your own mind as to whether it was the Lord that healed you or the treatment. The Lord just will not share His glory with another! (Isa.42:8.) "I will have no other gods before Me! I the Lord thy God am a jealous God!" (Exo.20:3,5.)--And He simply will not share His glory with somebody else or something else, much less a pill or a shot or a treatment or any doctor!

82. For anyone who knows as much about healing as we do, God expects us and He requires us to trust Him utterly and let Him do it!--Alone!

83. Don't ever let them carry me off to some doctor or some hospital! I'd rather die in the hands of the Lord than die in the hands of the doctor!

84. As little as doctors know and as experimental as most medicines and pills and treatments and shots are, I'd sooner trust the Lord! He knows what's wrong! He is able to heal it! They don't know what's wrong and don't know how to heal it! They're just playing around and experimenting like little boys with toys and constantly misdiagnosing cases.

85. Dr. Koger said, "If you knew doctors like I do, you'd never go near one or take a single prescription from them! It's nothing but experimentation! Most of the time they don't know what's wrong with you either and they just try this and try that and charge you for it to make money off it!"

86. The main reason doctors recommend Caesarians is because it's surgery and they make thousands of dollars on it, a lot more money on it than natural childbirth! We've had plenty of girls who refused the Caesarian and insisted on trusting the Lord and came through with flying colours! We've got one girl who had a Caesarian and nearly died of it! She was in a coma for quite some time.

87. I'll tell you, if you know the Lord and His healing and about trusting God by faith for your body, God will not let any kind of treatment, doctors, pills, shots or hospitals help you! That sort of thing is for the poor sin-sick unbelieving World who have no other recourse, who don't even know the Lord or His healing. But as long as you know the Lord and His healing, He holds you responsible to trust Him for it and cast yourself utterly on the Lord! Then if He wants you to die, you'll know it was His will and not some doctor or treatment that killed you. And if He wants you to live, He'll heal you and you'll know it was the Lord and not the treatment!

88. I have no faith for the healing of people who go to the doctor and look to the pills and the treatments and the shots and the natural or unnatural or normal or abnormal, methods or whatever they want to call it, anything else but the Lord!

89. God likes you to throw yourself utterly on Him and trust Him completely! If you die you'll know it was God's will that you died and not the treatment that caused it. If He wants you to live, than you'll know it was the Lord and you'll give Him all the glory and so will everybody else--and not the treatment!

90. I can't remember a thing doctors ever gave me or did for me that did me any good or that healed me. It reminds me of the old joke about a bad cold: With medication you can get rid of it in about two weeks, or with just plain rest and proper diet, etc., you can get rid of it in about 14 days! So who knows what healed you?

91. If you cast yourself utterly on the Lord, then God has got to heal you, if He wants to heal you. And for God's sake, if He doesn't want to heal you, why would you want to be healed? The quicker you go to the Heavenly City the better, and be rid of all the pain and trouble you're going through here!

92. I'd rather die at home in bed trusting God than go to the damn hospitals full of doctors who don't even know what they're doing!

93. There are mechanical operations for which doctors and hospitals are necessary, purely mechanical things which they know how to do just like working on a car!--Like setting a broken bone or sewing up a cut or removing a splinter or a bullet or helping you have a baby.

94. But on most other things, like serious internal maladies, they more often than not just experiment around with all that chemical poison and use you as a guinea pig for a bunch of drugs and pills and other junk when they don't even know what's wrong with you!--And if they do, they don't know how to heal it! They don't know what they're doing and neither do you! And often they do more damage than good, and very rarely much good.

95. God knows what's wrong with you!--First of all, what's wrong with you spiritually and what He's dealing with you about and what He's trying to teach you, what He's trying to tell you through your sickness!

96. If you're not sure whether God wants to heal you, why are you taking all those medicines? Maybe you're going against the will of God! One way to find out is just quit the doctor and the medicine.

97. You may be taking medication against the will of God! Maybe He doesn't want to heal you. Maybe He's trying to take you Home to Heaven, and here you're fighting it like mad with this doctor and all these medicines!

98. If I died, I'd rather know that it was the Lord that killed me than wonder if it was the doctor that did it! Well, if you die, you'll know!

99. If you trust Him utterly, He'll take care of you, and if He doesn't take care of you, then He is worse than an infidel! (1Ti.5:8.)

100. As long as you're leaning partly on God and partly on the medicine, He's not going to have anything to do with it! He doesn't care to share His glory with some doctor and some treatment and some pills! If He's going to heal you, He wants all the credit for it and all the glory for it. He wants the World to know and the Family to know that it was He who healed you and nothing else!--God plus Faith plus Nothing!

101. Put yourself into the hands of the Lord, trust Him utterly, then He's gotta heal you if He wants to! And then if He does, He'll get all the credit, all the glory and all the praise and you'll have only Him to thank for it and not share the thanks with the doctor! And if He doesn't want to heal you, then taking all those medicines and shots and pills and treatments are against the will of God! If He wants you to stay sick or afflicted or even die, it's better to let Him have His way than to fight it. If you believe it's the will of God for you to live and serve the Lord and even be healed, then why don't you trust the Lord? If He wants to heal you, He'll heal you! If He doesn't want to, nobody and nothing can heal you!

102. Why not trust God?--But trusting God means trusting Him utterly and nothing and nobody else!--Just God!--Then He'll get all the credit and all the thanks and all the praise! You'll know it was God and so will everybody else, and they'll all thank the Lord and know it wasn't any treatment or doctors or pills or therapy or that anything else had any share in it whatsoever! If God's going to heal you, He wants to get all the credit and all the glory and do all the healing, so you'll give Him all the thanks and you'll know it was God!

103. You're either trusting God or you're not! You're either trusting God or you're trusting the medicine! You cannot do both if you're going to expect God to heal you.

104. You're not trusting God utterly as long as you're leaning on something else, looking around for something for God to start on, a little bit of something to help God out!

105. What makes you think God has to have something to start on?--That you've gotta help God out somehow by supplying Him with some kind of means to start on, like a medicine or a doctor!

106. Why don't you just trust to the Lord and forget all that other junk? You don't know that the other stuff can heal you, but you know that God can heal you if you trust the Lord at all! And you know He can heal you without it, so why bother with it?

107. Why don't you trust the One Who made you? Nobody knows the product like the Manufacturer! Send yourself back to the Manufacturer and let Him fix you! He's got all the parts and everything you need, and He's the

only One that really knows you and how to do it. Any other kind of mechanic is just fooling around and experimenting.

108. So why not try God and God alone?--Utterly, completely, nothing else--so God'll get the glory, if and when you're healed! And then if you're not healed or you die, at least you'll know it was the will of God and you weren't fighting it! But if it's God's will for you to live and for Him to heal you, then He certainly doesn't need any help!--Except for you to take care of you body, live, eat, sleep and exercise right and not abuse it and do whatever led to the thing in the first place. You can't expect God to heal you when you're abusing your body.--And with all that medicine, pills and shots, you're probably abusing your body! Because what do doctors know about your body?--More than God? And what do doctors know about healing it or what's going to heal it?--More than God?--That's ridiculous!

109. I'd sooner trust the Lord any day than medicine men and their medicines. "He that putteth his trust in the Lord shall never be put to shame, but the fear of man bringeth a snare!" (Pro.29:25.)

110. God is a jealous God and He will not share His glory with another, much less some pill! I think it makes Him angry when His children who know about healing turn not to Him but to the physician!--Angry enough to let them die because they trusted the physician instead of Him!--Like He did old King Asa who was diseased in his feet and "turned not to the Lord but unto the physicians and died." (2Chron.16:12,13) You'd better watch out you don't do the same thing! You can't turn to both.

111. You'd better turn utterly to the Lord and forget the physician and all his treatments, therapy, pills, shots and junk, and trust God utterly! He not only can heal you, but it's His will to heal you, or He wouldn't have put all those Scriptures in His Word on healing! He wants to heal you and He certainly wants you to serve Him, but He does not want to give the glory or credit to anything or anybody else. He wants you to trust Him and Him alone, so you'll thank Him and Him alone for it, and He'll not share His glory with another!

112. God is bound to answer prayer, He's bound to heal you, He's bound to keep His promises, He's bound to keep His Word if you absolutely throw yourself on the Lord and trust Him utterly, obey Him utterly and please Him utterly!

113. When it comes to healing, let me tell you, your best is to call on the Lord and depend on the Lord utterly, because there's obviously nothing you can do! You've found out that there's nothing you can do and there's nothing the doctors can do, and like the old lady in the Bible, you've "suffered many things of many physicians and are not better!" (Mk.5:26.) So it's time for you to wake up to the fact that only God can heal you, and to cast all the rest aside and cast yourself utterly on the Lord and trust Him entirely, completely, utterly!

114. "Christ is greater than any cancer!" Christ is also greater than any doctors or medicines or so-called natural remedies, so you'd better put your faith in the Lord and do it quick or you may be a goner! It's too late for you to depend on anything but the Lord, and you'd better do it quick!

115. If you know the Lord and you know what you're supposed to do, the Lord's not going to let you get away with anything else! Some ignorant benighted sinners who don't know the Lord and don't know any better, God in His mercy might let the doctors help, but it's too late for you! You'd better trust God quick before He gets mad and takes you!

116. If God is dealing with me when I'm sick, I know I've got to get things right with the Lord and obey the Lord and trust utterly in Him, or nothing's going to heal me!

117. To depend on medicines and doctors and treatments and therapy is depending on your own works and your own self-righteousness to heal you, instead of totally utterly depending on the Lord by grace through faith. You get healing the same way you do salvation, by grace through faith! You're not only saved but you're also healed by grace through faith, and that not of yourself! It is a gift of God, not of works, lest any man should boast.--Of any doctor or any medicines! (Eph.2:8,9)

118. You get healing the same way as you do salvation, by utterly trusting God for it and not anything else!-- Grace plus Faith plus Nothing!

119. The Lord in His mercy gives doctors and medicines and hospitals to the World for their care, but Christians who know about healing shouldn't need them.

120. My Mother was all for going to the doctor to get a diagnosis to try to find out what you had so you'd be able to testify what he Lord healed you from, but not with the faith that the doctor or his medicine can cure you.

121. Going to doctors and taking medicines and pills and shots and treatment and therapy is not normal and not God's way! It's abnormal and it's not faith in God. That's the most unusual thing, and usually only as a last resort to find out what's wrong with you if you can't figure out any other way, and half the time they don't know either, so what's the use of going?



122. If the Lord doesn't deliver me of this affliction, then He must want me to have it for some reason.-- Maybe so I'll be extra careful and really pray and stay close to the Lord to survive and depend on the Lord for every breath, every bite, every move! Afflictions really keep you close to the Lord!

123. Modern civilised man is as much at the mercy of the medicine man as he ever was, he has just as much faith in him and his potions as they did in the superstitious potions of the savage medicine man!

124. If you have to know what's wrong, The Lord can show you what's wrong! You don't have to go to the doctor to find out.

125. Sometimes He has to show you what is wrong so you can stop doing whatever is causing it, but other times when it's something beyond your control that you can't do anything to correct, the Lord doesn't need to show you, because He just wants you to have faith that He'll heal you.

126. Trusting God for your healing keeps you close to the Lord, but trusting the doctor for healing keeps you close to the doctor!--And broke!

127. If the Lord doesn't deliver you from your affliction, then it must be His will for you to have it just to keep you close to Him and keep you dependent on Him! But if the affliction only keeps you close to the doctor and dependent on his medicine, that's no good! You're not getting the point nor profiting from the Lord's therapy. You're not learning the lesson. You're not responding to God's treatment to keep you close to Him, dependent on Him utterly!

128. If there is a choice between the two, I'd sooner trust the Lord any day! It's a lot safer and cheaper and surer and does you a lot more good in every way!

129. He's never failed me all these years--why should He fail me now? Or why should I fail Him now? I feel like the old Armenian when the Turks were ready to behead him, when they told him if he'd deny his faith in Christ they'd let him live. He said, "Well, I've known Jesus all these years and He's never failed me, why should I fail Him now?!"--And he died for his faith!

130. If the Lord knows at the first little "Boo!" you're going to stop trusting Him, then why should He do anything for you? He likes gold faith that goes through the fire, that's real faith! But if He knows that the next time the Devil says "Boo!" you're going to quit trusting Him, then why should He heal you?

131. When you're sick you need lots of rest and extra good nourishment, which gives the Lord a chance to repair your body and gives you a chance for lots of time with Him and His Word.

132. When you're sick you should do whatever you feel like doing! If you feel like lying in bed, you should lie in bed until you feel like trying. Keep lyin' till you feel like tryin'! But there has to come a time when you've got to get up and try.

133. If we're going to start trusting the Lord, we might as well start trusting right now.

134. It sometimes may look like we don't have the faith and we tend to get sort of defeated by not being able to see an immediate response or answer to our prayer, but the Lord doesn't always just zap people immediately back to complete health. If that were true, they'd miss a lot of lessons, and a lot of times they'd miss what God's trying to show or tell them.

(See also No. M, 87, 313, 330C, 353, 569, 599, 717, 737, 878, 969, 1112, 1113, 1135, 1139, 1236, 1249, 1315, 1386, 1493, 1565, that Never Run Dry, The Hem of His Garment.)

135. .15:26 If thou wilt diligently hearken to the voice of the Lord thy God, and wilt do that which is right in His sight, and wilt give ear to His commandments, and keep all His statutes, I will put none of these diseases upon thee, which I have brought upon the Egyptians: for I am the Lord that health thee.

136. .32:39 See now that I, even I, am He, and there is no god with Me: I kill, and I make alive; I wound, and I heal: neither is there any that can deliver out of My hand.

137. **KI.17:21,22 And he stretched himself upon the child three times, and cried unto the Lord, and said O Lord my God, I pray Thee, let this child's soul come into him again. And the Lord heard the voice of Elijah; and the soul of the child came into him again, and he revived. (See 1Ki.17:17-23.)**

138. **KI.4:34,35 And he went up, and lay upon the child, and put his mouth upon his mouth, and his eyes upon his eyes, and his hands upon his hands: and he stretched himself upon the child; and the flesh of the child waxed warm. Then he returned, and walked in the house to and fro; and went up, and stretched himself upon him: and the child sneezed seven times, and the child opened his eyes. (See 2Ki.4:18-37.)**

139. **KI.5:14 Then went he (Naaman) down, and dipped himself seven times in Jordan, according to the saying to the man of God: and his flesh came again like unto the flesh of a little child, and he was clean.**

140. **KI.20:5b I have heard thy prayer, I have seen thy tears: behold, I will heal thee.**

141. **.6:2 Have mercy upon me, O Lord; for I am weak: O Lord, heal me; for my bones are vexed.**

142. .22:24 For He hath not despised nor abhorred the affliction of the afflicted; neither hath He hid His face from him; but when he cried unto Him, He heard.

143. .30:2 O Lord my God, I cried unto Thee, and Thou hast healed me.

144. .34:19 Many are the afflictions of the righteous: but the Lord delivereth him out of them all.

145. .41:4 Lord, be merciful unto me; heal my soul; for I have sinned against Thee.

146. .103:3 Who forgiveth all thine iniquities; Who healeth all thy diseases.

147. .107:20 He sent His Word, and healed them, and delivered them from their destructions.

148. .18:14 The spirit of a man will sustain his infirmity; but a wounded spirit who can bear?

149. .40:29 He giveth power to the faint; and to them that have no might He increaseth strength.

150. .53:5 But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon Him; and with His stripes we are healed.

151. .59:1 Behold, the Lord's hand is not shortened, that is cannot save; neither His ear heavy, that it cannot hear.

152. .30:17a For I will restore health unto thee, and I will heal thee of thy wounds, saith the Lord.

153. .32:27 Behold, I am the Lord, the God of all flesh: is there any thing too hard for Me?

154. .33:6 I will bring it health and cure, and I will cure them, and will reveal unto them the abundance of peace and truth.

155. .34:16 I will seek that which was lost, and bring again that which was driven away, and will bind up that which was broken, and will strengthen that which was sick.

156. .4:2a Unto you that fear My Name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in His wings.

157. .4:23,24 And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the Kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease among the people. And His fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto Him all sick people that were taken with diverse diseases and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunatic, and those that had the palsy; and He healed them.

158. .8:2b,3 Lord, if Thou wilt, Thou canst make me clean. And Jesus put forth His hand, and touched him, saying, I will; be thou clean. And immediately his leprosy was cleansed.

159. .8:13 And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way; and as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee. And his servant was healed in the selfsame hour.

160. .8:14,15 And when Jesus was come into Peter's house, He saw his wife's mother laid, and sick of a fever. And He touched her hand, and the fever left her: and she arose, and ministered unto them.

161. .9:2,6 And, behold, they brought to Him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed: and Jesus seeing their faith said unto the sick of the palsy; Son, be of good cheer; thy sins be forgiven thee. But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on Earth to forgive sins, (then saith He to the sick of the palsy,) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house.

162. .9:22,29 But Jesus turned him about, and when He saw her, He said, Daughter, be of good comfort; thy faith hath made thee whole. Then touched He their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it unto you.

163. .9:35 And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the Kingdom, and healing every sickness and every disease among the people.

164. .10:8 Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give.

165. .12:13 Then saith He to the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it forth; and it was restored whole, like as the other.

166. MAT.12:22 Then was brought unto Him one possessed with a devil, blind, and dumb: and He healed him, insomuch that the blind and dumb both spake and saw.

167. .15:28 Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very hour.

168. .15:30 And great multitudes came unto Him, having with them those that were lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus' feet; and He healed them.

169. .17:18 And Jesus rebuked the Devil; and he departed out of him: and the child was cured from that very hour.

170. .19:2 And great multitudes followed Him; and He healed them there.

171. .20:34 So Jesus had compassion on them, and touched their eyes: and immediately their eyes received sight, and they followed Him.

172. .1:25,26 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the unclean spirit had torn him, and cried with a loud voice, he came out of him.

173. .1:31 And He came and took her by the hand, and lifted her up; and immediately the fever left her, and she ministered unto them.

174. .1:40,41 And there came a leper to Him, beseeching Him, and kneeling down to Him, and saying unto Him, If Thou wilt, Thou canst make me clean. And Jesus, moved with compassion, put forth His hand, and touched him, and saith unto him, I will; be thou clean.

175. .5:34 And He said unto her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace, and be whole of thy plague.

176. .6:56 And whithersoever He entered, into villages, or cities, or country, they laid the sick in the streets, and besought Him that they might touch if it were but the border of His Garment: and as many as touched Him were made whole.

177. .7:32-35 And they bring unto Him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech; and they beseech Him to put His hand upon him. And He took him aside from the multitude, and put His fingers into his ears, and He spit, and touched his tongue; And looking up to Heaven, He sighed, and saith unto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened. And straightway his ears were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plain.

178. MAR.10:52 And Jesus said unto him, Go thy way; thy faith hath made thee whole. And immediately he received his sight, and followed Jesus in the way.

179. .16:17,18 And these signs shall follow them that believe; In My Name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.

180. .4:40 Now when the sun was setting, all they that had any sick with divers diseases brought them unto Him; and He laid His hands on every one of them, and healed them.

181. .5:17 And it came to pass on a certain day, as He was teaching, that there were Pharisees and doctors of the law sitting by, which were come out of every town of Galilee, and Judaea, and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord was present to heal them.

182. .6:19 And the whole multitude sought to touch Him: for there went virtue out of Him, and healed them all.

183. .7:14,15 And He came and touched the bier: and they that bare him stood still. And He said, Young man, I say unto thee, Arise. And he that was dead sat up, and began to speak. And He delivered him to his mother.

184. .8:48b Thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace.

185. .8:49,50 While He yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogue's house, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead; trouble not the Master. But when Jesus heard it, He answered him, saying, Fear not: believe only, and she shall be made whole.

186. .9:42 And as He was yet a coming, the devil threw him down, and tare him. And Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, and healed the child, and delivered him again to his father.

187. .10:9 Heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The Kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.

188. .13:11-13 And, behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up herself. And when Jesus saw her, He called her to Him, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity. And He laid His hands on her: and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God.

189. .17:14b And it came to pass, that, as they went, they were cleansed.

190. .18:42 And Jesus said unto him, Receive thy sight: thy faith hath saved thee.

191. .22:50,51 And one of them smote the servant of the high priest, and cut off his right ear. And Jesus answered and said, Suffer ye thus far. And He touched his ear, and healed him.

192. .4:50 Jesus saith unto him, Go thy way; thy son liveth. And the man believed the Word that Jesus had spoken unto him, and he went his way.

193. .9:3 Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him.

194. .3:6 Then Peter said, Silver and gold have I none; but such as I have give I thee: In the Name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth rise up and walk.

195. .3:16 And His Name through faith in His Name hath made this man strong, whom ye see and know: yea, the faith which is by Him hath given him this perfect soundness in the presence of you all.

196. .9:34 And Peter said unto him, Aeneas, Jesus Christ maketh thee whole; arise, and make thy bed. And he arose immediately.

197. .9:37,41 And it came to pass in those days, that she was sick, and died: whom when they had washed, they laid her in an upper chamber. And he gave her his hand, and lifted her up, and when he had called the saints and widows, presented her alive.

198. .9:11,12 And God wrought special miracles by the hands of Paul: So that from his body were brought unto the sick handkerchiefs or aprons, and the diseases departed from them, and the evil spirits went out of them.

199. .20:10 And Paul went down, and fell on him, and embracing him said, Trouble not yourselves; for his life is in him. (Act.20:7-12).

200. .26:8 Why should it be thought a thing incredible with you, that God should raise the dead?

201. .28:8,9 And it came to pass, that the father of Publius lay sick of a fever and of a bloody flux: to whom Paul entered in, and prayed, and laid his hands on him, and healed him. So when this was done, others also, which had diseases in the island, came, and were healed.

202. .8:11 But if the Spirit of Him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, He that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by His Spirit that dwelleth in you.

203. .12:13b But let it rather be healed.

204. .5:14-16 Is any sick among you? Let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the Name of the Lord: And the prayer of faith shall save the sick and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him. Confess your faults one to another, and pray for one another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

205. .22:2 In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

(See also MAT.11:4-6.)



*A faithful ambassador is health (Pro.13:17).  
Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth  
(3Jn.2).*

1. Cleanliness is Godliness!
2. Vigorous exercise seems to create energy, rather than use it up. During exercise the circulatory and respiratory systems are stimulated and the blood begins to surge through the body, oxygen and nutrients are fed to the cells of the tissues and the accumulated waste products are removed.
3. The mental and emotional fatigue that comes at the end of a trying but sedentary day can be miraculously dispelled with a little physical exercise.
4. One of the most pleasant things about exercise is its effectiveness as a tranquilizer--it seems to literally drain away the tensions as you go!
5. Exercise reduces blood pressure. High blood pressure is often a forerunner of heart disease.
6. Exercise results in a bigger, stronger heart. The more the heart or any muscle is exercised the bigger and stronger it becomes.
7. Don't exercise beyond your capacity, and never indulge in strenuous exercise too soon after eating.
8. Some doctors estimate that emotional causes contribute to as much as 90% or more of all illness.
9. The spirit of a man will sustain his infirmity: but a wounded spirit who can bear? (Pro.18:14).
10. Your body is for use--not abuse.
11. Don't tell your friends about your indigestion: "How are you" is a greeting, not a question.
12. A doctor is a man who tells you that if you don't cut something out, he will.
13. The body is the baggage you must carry through life. The more excess baggage, the shorter the trip.
14. Health is wealth.
15. To live long, it is necessary to live slowly.
16. Prevention is better than cure.
17. You are what you eat, and if you eat poison you're going to turn into poison yourself!
18. Eat to live, but do not live to eat.
19. Cleanliness is not next to Godliness!--It is Godliness!
20. Cleanliness is not next to Godliness, but a part of it! Cleanliness is a good witness and testimony.
21. Better no Home than a dirty one!
22. There's no excuse for dirt!
23. It doesn't take money to clean a house!--It just takes elbow grease and a little hard work!
24. If people are dirty on the outside, there's something wrong with them on the inside as well.
25. The Lord's servant is worth more than his money: Don't be penny-wise and flesh-foolish!
26. So-called "nervous strain" is a very common symptom of spiritual struggles. "Thou shalt keep him in perfect peace whose mind is stayed on Thee, because he trusteth in Thee!"
27. It's better to stay healthy than to have to be healed.
28. Proper diet, proper exercise, proper rest and proper living will keep almost anyone healthy.
29. Help us to let You take good care of us, Lord, and to give You all the cooperation we can by getting proper rest, proper exercise, proper diet and proper living!
30. A fence at the top of the cliff is better than a hospital at the bottom!--An ounce of prevention is worth a pound of cure!

31. Work on the ounce of prevention now, rather than worrying about the pound of cure later.
32. You're the Lord's property and you'd better take good care of His property.
33. The Lord made you to like to eat what you need, and not to like what you don't need, providing you haven't for years perverted your taste through wrong eating.
34. Exercise is one of the prime requisites for good health.
35. You just cannot violate God's health rules with impunity, any more than you can violate His moral rules or His law of love!
36. Fear causes more sickness and more mental illness than anything else in the World.
37. The principles of good health: Eat right, exercise right, sleep right and live right.
38. It takes work to keep healthy!
39. God wants you to live for Him--and as long as possible!
40. You can't appreciate health unless you've been sick!
41. It's against God's rules of health and happiness to work seven days a week, and God won't bless it!-- Unless it's fun!
42. Health is a special blessing of God. You can only demand it if you're obedient.
43. God is the Creator of all things and can solve and heal anything! Through following His truth and His Law of Love, He can spare us from all mental and spiritual diseases.
44. Only people who know and trust the Lord can really be in good health because they're the only people who don't have to worry.
45. God put within your body little sensors, to want and enjoy things you need, and to reject things you shouldn't have or don't need.
46. You can't expect to claim God's promises for health while you're disobeying His Word by abusing your body with overwork, exhausting exertion and heavy strains.
47. You may be a whole lot more useful to the Lord with a faceful of boils, or a whole lot more humble and believing with a whole body covered with boils like Job was, than if the Lord would heal you too soon!
48. Faith eliminates the greatest causes of disease and ill health, and these are fear and tension.
49. A fence at the edge of the cliff built now will save us from having to dig a graveyard at the bottom later!
50. Direction for Body Use: If left sitting too long, will tend to sag and settle on its bottom. Shake well daily in fresh air and sunshine.
51. Be wise--exercise!
52. Do you always remember to pray over not only your food but your drinks? The Lord not only prayed for the bread but He also prayed for the wine.
53. You'll get away with defying God's natural laws no easier than you'll get away with defying His spiritual laws.
54. God's natural laws are the same, regardless of culture, sex, nationality, East or West!
55. Get on a regular schedule, a regular sleep schedule of seven to nine hours of sleep a night regularly. Get regular get out times as well--at least an hour of good strenuous physical exercise outdoors in the fresh air and sunshine.

(See also No.190, 330C, 353, 569, 599, 609, 737, 805, 831, 878, 882, 920, 956, 1138, 1215, 1220, 1299, 1313, 1315, 1407, 1434, 1493, *HH3, Childcare Handbook 1.*)

56. .15:26 And said, If thou wilt diligently hearken to the voice of the Lord Thy God, and wilt do that which is right in His sight, and wilt give ear to His commandments, and keep all His statutes, I will put none of these diseases upon thee, which I have brought upon the Egyptians: for I am the Lord that healeth thee.

57. .23:25 And ye shall serve the Lord your God, and He shall bless thy bread, and thy water; and I will take sickness away from the midst of thee.

58. .107:17 Fools because of their transgression, and because of their iniquities, are afflicted.

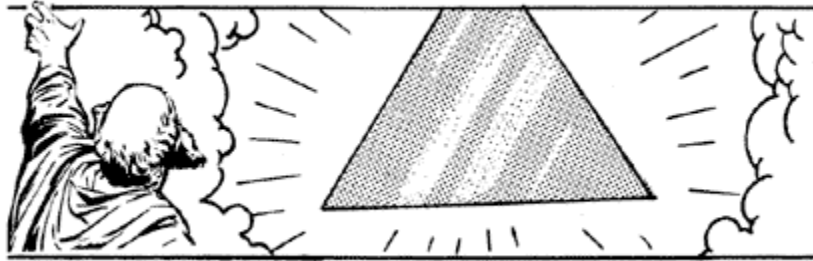
59. .12:18b The tongue of the wise is health.

60. **MIC.6:13 Therefore also will I make thee sick in smiting thee, in making thee desolate because of thy sins.**

61. **CO.3:16,17 Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are.**

**62. JO.2 Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth.**

**55. HEAVEN/HELL**   --{page 479}--



*And I John saw the Holy City, New Jerusalem, coming down from God out of Heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband (Rev.21:2).*

1. Life hereafter for us, God's children, will be an extension or an amplification, a multiplication of the joy and thrilling, exciting lives we now lead!
2. Hell is the extension, multiplication, amplification, endless continuation of the same awful lives that the wicked people of the world lead even now!
3. Hell is just the opposite of the ecstasies of life in Heaven for the saved and the blessed!
4. What greater hell could there be than for the World to live the same lives they've been living, without ever any hope of it ending or ever being able to get out of it?
5. Heaven is our Home and the Heavenly City is our destination.
6. Those who love God never meet for the last time.
7. Heaven is not the end: it's only the beginning.
8. Heaven is a place where you can get all you want of whatever you like.
9. You and I are going to live forever! We will be supernatural, miraculous supermen in superbodies that are united with our eternal spirits!
10. We are in the "more blessed" category, the upper class who lived by faith and believed even though we hadn't seen!
11. We who have found Jesus and faith in God and love Him have found Heaven on Earth!
12. We're not going to Heaven, Heaven is coming to us!
13. In Heaven you're going to be the same make, but a new model!
14. You're not going to go to Heaven to live with God, God is going to come to Earth to live with you!
15. There are a lot of good people going to Hell, and a lot of bad people like you and me going to Heaven!
16. Only you and I who love Jesus and have Him now before this life's death will be able to be among the special super-citizens of the Heavenly City, a special super-class of people!
17. The Heavenly City will vie with the moon and even the sun for beauty and splendour!
18. The City that God is building for you and me, not even death can pass its gates! God's City of Tomorrow, His garden of the gods, will have no pain nor death nor sorrow!
19. Those of us who have received Jesus Christ as our Saviour and our Lover and our King already have the Garden of Eden and Paradise restored in our hearts!
20. When you get to Heaven you won't need faith because you'll be able to see it and know it all then. You won't need hope because it's already arrived, but there'll still be love because "the greatest of these is love!" (1Cor.13.)
21. In Heaven there is no need for sex because there is no need for a shadow or illustration--just a need to enjoy it!

22. We will be the inner circle who live within the charmed City, living charmed lives as eternal everlasting supernatural beings!

23. God is a racist! He has a special elite race of supermen who are going to live above all others in the Holy City, the magical, mystical, marvelous, mysterious Space City!

24. Even Heaven would be Hell to some people because they'd be too close to God!

25. The Heavenly City already exists and the departed Saints are already there!

26. The New Heaven and New Earth are like a double Millennium, Millennium for ever!--Double your pleasure, double your fun, double your Heaven that's never done!

27. Have your name put in the Lamb's Book of Life in Heaven so you'll be sure you've got your reservation confirmed for one of those mansions in God's golden Space City!

28. The whole inside of the Pyramid on the ground level on the New Earth is one great Garden within the City, a great City Park!--His Heavenly Fair in His Heaven so fair!

29. What exhibit buildings God will have! The historical exhibits, the scientific exhibits, the spiritual exhibits, to be able to see the marvelous wonders of the Spirit World!

30. You'll never get tired of seeing all of God's exhibits in His great Fairground of the Heavenly City on Earth where you can really learn the facts and the truth about everything the way it really was. How's that for a great Heavenly Fair in Heaven so fair?

31. We will be able to travel back and forward in time and see what has been and what's going to be, as well as experience the glorious wonderful present!

32. People moving in Heaven move with grace and beauty and slowly glide along with their feet hardly seeming to touch the ground!

33. There will be no transportation problems in Heaven--you can either glide along, float along or fly!

34. There will be no feeding problems because you can either eat for pleasure, or you don't have to eat at all!

35. It looks like half the enjoyment is just having Heaven in our hearts and Heaven in our Homes, feeling Heaven in our bodies in the thrilling love and love-making that we have here and now on Earth in those ecstatic orgasms of the Spirit and the flesh, but also looking forward to Heaven to come!

36. Heaven is here to stay and sex is here to stay! We'll be able to enjoy many of these so-called fleshly pleasures on the other side, like Jesus did!

37. What are you going to be like in the Hereafter?--You're going to be like Jesus!

38. All of the pleasures of this present physical life can be continued into the next life as well!

39. Our Heavenly bodies will be able to dematerialise, pass from dimension to dimension, walk right through walls and locked doors as Jesus did, appear and disappear at will and travel with the speed of thought!

40. We'll look enough like we do now to recognise each other, identify each other and know each other!

41. We'll have all the best of this and Heaven too, the best of two Worlds!--Heaven now and Heaven to come!

42. Heaven will be the greatest Family Reunion we've ever known, with all our loved ones and relatives and children and parents and ancestors and descendants and ascendants all together in one place at the same time, rejoicing and praising the Lord all together in one great grand Heavenly Fellowship Meeting!

43. Hallelujah for the Heaven we have in our hearts with the Love of Jesus, His Spirit, and the Heaven we have in our Homes with each other and our love together and our work and service together for Him. It's really a little bit of Heaven right here and now!

44. We're halfway to Heaven here in the spirit, and we can get half of the enjoyment ahead of time just thinking about it, praising the Lord for it, thanking the Lord for it, reading about it, dreaming about it, looking forward to it and anticipating it!

45. It's amazing, the tremendous capacity of that marvelous final great Heavenly City that Jesus has gone to prepare and is now all prepared for us and on its way here, just ready for its new tenants which Jesus is going to raise from both the dead and the living in the Rapture at His Second Coming and take us all away to be there with Him!

46. I want you to really be able to grasp the wonder of it, the marvel of it, the size of it and really be able to get a good conception of its magnificence and its tremendous colossal gigantic stupendous size and beauty and splendour!

47. I belong to the Kingdom of God, that's my Country! I'm from Space City, that's my City! I'm from the City that hath foundations, whose Builder and Maker is God!



48. I've already got the Kingdom of Heaven in my heart! That's my nationality, my citizenship, my Country!--A Country that's never persecuted the poor or oppressed the weak or destroyed small peoples of the World like America has. It's a Country that's never lost a battle and never fought a war for the wrong reason.

49. My Country's trying to save the World, stop the wars, relieve the poor, feed the hungry, heal the sick and liberate the captives that are bound by countries like America!

50. I'm a citizen of the only righteous nation in the Universe--the Kingdom of Jesus Christ!

51. Even the worst neighborhood of Heaven will be better than the best neighborhood of the fanciest town on Earth!

52. We have in effect renounced our Worldly citizenship when we receive the King of Kings and the Prince of Peace, Lord of Lords, God of Heaven, Son of Righteousness and the Kingdom of Heaven into our hearts, and have made the Heavenly City our Home!

53. We're leaving this Hell of a mess before long and we're going to go to our Country and our City to be with our King!

54. I want to declare my Citizenship in the Kingdom of God and my allegiance to His Kingdom and His City!

55. One of these days you're going to a mansion that isn't going to cost you anything!--No upkeep, no expense, absolutely nothing except what it's already cost Jesus!--And it will be commensurate with your works on Earth, what you already paid for it down here.

56. Heaven'll be our last move!--No baggage, no luggage, no hard journey, no packing, no long travel! It may be a long way, but it may be closer than you think!

57. You can't take it with you! Whatever you have there you will have already sent ahead in the way of souls won, victories won, battles won and rewards won for your service here!

58. Even in Heaven, the most perfect City in the World, there are going to be different levels, different classes, different stages, some very high, some very low.

59. Heaven is the most beautiful thing God has ever made, outside of women, God bless them!--And in fact He even uses you women to symbolise the City and He calls that City His Bride, the New Heaven, the New Jerusalem! How about that? He couldn't think of anything more beautiful to symbolise that City than you, you beautiful girls, so He called it His Bride! Why? Because His Bride's going to live there!

60. It's not going to be that hard to be in Heaven, or the Heavenly City or the Millennium, but you're going to have something to do and something to keep you busy, and you'd be unhappy if you didn't. Wouldn't it be ridiculous after being so busy here if you wound up in Heaven with nothing to do but sit on a cloud playing a harp for a thousand years?--Much less all eternity! I think you'd really get bored.

61. Being able to disappear and appear and go through walls and fly with the speed of thought isn't going to make you half as happy as to see those you witnessed to, "Hi there! Wow, didn't I meet you on the streets? Didn't I talk to you about Jesus? Wow! Here you are! Hallelujah!" That's going to be the biggest thrill of all!

62. I've visited the future and I've seen the Heavenly City standing upon this Earth!--Beautiful, gorgeous, incomparable, almost indescribable, the most gorgeous sight you'll ever want to see! A beautiful pyramid-shaped City like the ancient Egyptian pyramids, only much more beautiful!--That Golden City like crystal gold, pyramid-shaped, 1500 miles wide! Think of it! And 1500 miles high!

63. There're going to be animals in God's Heaven on Earth, a New Heaven and a New Earth! God's not going to have His Creation defeated. He put those animals here for pets and playthings and companions for you and your children, and you're still going to enjoy the animals.

64. You can travel with the speed of thought! You just think you're on Jupiter and you're there, boom! You just think you're on Saturn and you're there, boom! You just think you're on the nearest star and you're there, boom! You don't have to have transporters, spaceships or speed of light or anything, you're just there like that! So we will have the might and the power of angels and the speed and the ability and we will be ruling and reigning spirits with resurrected bodies, but spiritual bodies which have enormous angelic powers like the angels of God, like Jesus when He was resurrected!

65. But there'll be plenty of room on Earth then because right now, what is it?--Only one-fifth of the Earth's surface is land, right? Whereas then there will be no more sea, it'll all be land, seas will be gone. The seas are the World's great septic tanks, its great cesspools, where all the waste of the World drains off into the sea.

66. Maybe it'll move around, who knows?--So it can minister to different parts of the World! If it can float down from Outer Space from God out of Heaven to the Earth, then it probably can still float around the Earth and hover here or there or set down here or there. After all, it's only 1500 miles square and 1500 miles high!--With God, a city like that can just float around!

67. It will be full of precious stones and jewels, and best of all, full of precious souls!--Immortal souls, saved souls that love Jesus and that you won to the Lord.

68. The City's going to be very very beautiful! Its going to be like a beautiful beautiful park in some places, and there in the lower level where the river flows right through the City there's going to be these beautiful trees growing on both sides, fruit trees with 12 different kinds of fruit, a different kind every month, think of that!--And leaves that'll be able to heal the people outside the City that are still sin-sick, and sick of their disobediences and their rebellion against God. We're going to be able to take those leaves outside and heal them!

69. Contrary to popular belief in the churches, I don't believe that the moment you land in Heaven you know everything! Just because Paul said, "Now we see through a glass darkly, then face to face. Now we know in part, then we shall know even as also we are known." (1Cor.13:12)--That doesn't mean you're going to know everything right off the bat. It does not mean that you're going to have perfect knowledge and perfect wisdom and know everything there is to know. I think God has left that for the rest of time and eternity in order to give something to do in the Hereafter, and to learn more about the Past and Bible history and the things which have already happened and to learn more about why they happened and God's reasons and His logic and the purposes and the meaning of it all.

70. We're even going to have sex in Heaven! How about that? Isn't that wonderful? Love all the girls you want to and all the handsome boys you want to and love all you want to and never get tired, never be impotent, never have a headache, never get hungry, never get sleepy, no pains, no VD, no nothin' except joy and praise and Hallelujah and lots of fun with your Bridegroom and all your friends and loved ones and the Family of God, His Family of Love, His children of God in Heaven when Jesus comes!

71. It's going to be so wonderful you're going to forget about all your troubles in the past! It's going to be so wonderful you're going to forget about all these things that happened before, those terrible things you've been through! Hallelujah? "It will be worth it all when we see Jesus! Life's trials will seem so small, when we see Christ! One glimpse of His dear face, all sorrow will erase! So bravely run the race, 'til we see Christ!"

72. God just turns on all the beauty He can possibly create, and that final Heaven on Earth, the eternal one of the New Heaven and the New Earth will be the most beautiful of all and the most perfect!--The perfect government of God administered directly and in perfection in every way!

73. We live like Heaven already, a little bit of Heaven right here and now! What could we have more?--Only more of the same and better!

74. Heaven is simply going to be an intensification, amplification, magnification and extension of all the thrills and joys and pleasures of this life, the Heaven on Earth that we're now enjoying, only it will be even more Heavenly there, and forever, praise God!

75. My idea of Heaven is what we've got right now, right here!--All this beauty and pleasure and fun and inspiration and spirit and fellowship and joy, all of this and more so and more of it!

76. Heaven is going to be like this life, only better!--With all of the assets but none of the liabilities!

77. My idea of Heaven is the kind of life we now live as a Family in the Lord on this Earth! We live in Heavenly Homes, we live a Heavenly life full of Heavenly creatures, and a Heavenly work and Heavenly pleasures. To be Heaven, it's going to have to be like this, only better.

78. Isn't that ridiculous to show Peter standing at the gates of Heaven with a ring of keys? The doors are already unlocked for us, all we've got to do is walk in through the front gate!

79. If this is like Heaven, then Heaven's going to be like this!

80. Why not enjoy half of heaven now? We're halfway to Heaven here in the spirit, and we can get half of the enjoyment ahead of time just thinking about it, praising the Lord for it, thanking the Lord for it, reading about it, dreaming about it, looking forward to it and anticipating it! We can have 50% of our enjoyment now just looking forward to it.

81. One reason I like to talk about Heaven, think about Heaven and read about Heaven is because, after all, that's where we're going to spend Eternity, so it's a pretty important place and we ought to be pretty interested, don't you think? It's our Eternal Home, the place Jesus has gone to prepare for us forever, so we certainly ought to be interested in it and want to know what it's like and what we're going to be like when we get there!

82. Your Heavenly body is going to be an awful lot like it is now, only better. And if you enjoy its pleasures now, think how marvelous they're going to be when your body is supernatural, really super, with more power and more beauty and more grace and greater thrills and more marvelous exciting experiences and love than ever!--All the pleasures of this life and Heaven too, and their continuation on the other side!

83. All of the pleasures of this present physical life can be continued into the next life as well, since we will have a body which is similar to our physical body, but so much more glorious and wonderful and supernatural that it's even called spiritual, but can actually materialise and eat and drink and be merry, have fun, sex, love and all of

the present pleasures of this life extended into the next in an immortal incorruptible all-powerful body that can enjoy them even more there than we do here, and forever without ever suffering pain or sickness or weariness or death, just be absolutely marvelously Heavenly forever!

84. My oh my, think of what you're going to be like when you have your completely Heavenly body that can do all the things you can do now and more, including flying and floating and appearing and disappearing and walking through walls and locked doors and having marvelous supernatural miraculous powers of defense and judgement upon your enemies, protection for your friends, and to be able to help the poor humans that are still living on Earth during the Millennium to learn more about the Lord and love Him and serve Him even as you do.

85. How could Heaven be any better? I'm already living in Heaven!--A Heavenly Home with a Heavenly heart and Heavenly hearts and Heavenly bodies and Heavenly angels and Heavenly Love! It's so wonderful thrilling and exciting and marvelous and Heavenly and wonderful and pleasurable even now, how could Heaven be any better? Well, it is! Because we still have a few problems here, with enemies and this corruptible flesh and its needs and its weariness and sickness and pains and aches and its trials and tribulations which we'll not have in our Heavenly bodies.

86. We'll have all the best of this and Heaven too, the best of two worlds!--Heaven now and Heaven to come!--Heaven on Earth that we enjoy now, everything that's wonderful and beautiful and Heavenly and thrilling and exciting and ecstatic and loving and marvelous that we enjoy right now, the Heaven on Earth that we all enjoy, the Heaven in our hearts that we already have, Heavenly love we share, all of this and Heaven too.

87. You want to know about a certain period and what happened?--You go into this building and all of a sudden you are transported! You're not just shown pictures, not even 3-D pictures, not even movies, but suddenly you are transported live by a time machine to that very time, that very age and you see it happen, you watch it happen, you hear it happen, you feel it happen! Think of it! Not only the movies but the feelies! You are there!

88. The sky is not the limit, only Heaven's the limit, and there's no limit in Heaven!

89. The Kingdom of God is not meat and drink, but that doesn't mean you can't have meat and drink in the Kingdom!

90. Is God's plan going to be defeated?--Or is He going to have a Heaven on Earth in which things are going to go the way He originally planned for them to go, with people having perfect babies and perfect children!--Born in Heaven!

91. The Lord may want to colonise other Worlds with His new perfect children! What's the whole Universe for and all this huge amount of space if He's only interested in colonising one little Planet? What an incubation! What an incubator for other civilizations!--Right here on the New Earth and the Heavenly City!

92. I just can't imagine a Heaven without children!--What a dead lifeless place without babies and kids!

93. The leaves on the Tree of Life are for the healing of the nations, but what are the fruits for?--They must be just for the pleasure of eating!

94. What a pleasure to have children in Heaven and to watch them grow and develop without the Devil and all his imps around and without sin and the Curse and all the pain, sorrow and crying! It will be pure pleasure to have children in Heaven!

95. I have another proof that we're going to have food in Heaven! "And man did eat angel's food."--Manna! So angels can eat food!

96. I don't know how perfect everybody is going to be in Heaven, but anyhow, certainly a lot better than here!

97. Probably hundreds of thousands of saved pregnant mothers are going to be going up in the Rapture, and you know good and well they are going to have their babies either in Heaven or when they get back to Earth in the Millennium!

98. I think anything's possible! Whatever you dream up, the Lord will have for you!

99. Heaven's the place where all your heart's desires are fulfilled! Put in your order! I'm sure the Lord will be glad to have anything there for you that you want!

100. The reason the church doesn't deal with some of these questions about Heaven is they're afraid of the answers! If you could have babies in Heaven, then you could have sex in Heaven!--And that's horrifying to the churches!

101. There's nothing man ever dreams of that God hasn't already thought of!

(See also No.75A, 80, 262, 316, 624, 686, 818, 850, 852, 882, 1198, 1199, 1237, 1252, 1303, 1391, 1465, 1466, 1473, 1479, 1484, 1529, 1530, 1531, 1532, 1533, 1534, 1542, 1543, 1544, 1545, 1546, 1555, 1556, 1557, 1558, 1559, 1560, 1561, 1562, 1568, 1569.



*The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; & that which is done is that which shall be done: & there is no new thing under the sun (Ecc.1:9).*

1. Many of the so-called villains of history may really have been the heroes! It all depends on what the victorious historians decide to dictate.

2. For about 6000 years, God has been trying to convince man that he can't survive or live or exist or be happy without his Creator.

3. His story makes history! His Word & man's reaction to it decide the course of World events!

4. God cannot alter the past, but historians can.

5. History is a set of lies agreed upon.--Napoleon Bonaparte (1769-1821)

6. About the only thing we ever learn from history is that we never learn from history.--A. Toynbee

7. History is an account, mostly false, of events, mostly unimportant, which are brought about by rulers, mostly knaves, & soldiers, mostly fools.

8. A politician thinks of the next election; a statesman, of the next generation.

9. History is usually written generations after the event, when clouded fact and memory have all fused into what can be accepted as truth, whether it be so or not.

10. He who influences the thought of his time influences the thought of all the times that follow.

11. History is bunk.--Henry Ford.

12. What is history but a fable agreed upon?--Napoleon Bonaparte.

13. History really proves the existence of God. God's laws of retribution, the rise & fall of empires because of either righteousness or wickedness, is one of the surest proofs there is of the existence of God.

14. The greatest Man in history was the poorest. (2Co.8:9)

15. Someday we're going to know what influence we had on the course of history!

16. We are the main religious bomb of the century, & of the End of the World!

17. The memories of men are too frail a thread to hang history from.

18. The people who the World think are the greatest, messed it up the most!

19. History is such a sad story--but Jesus will add a happy ending!

20. World events & the course of history are influenced by the prophets of God.

21. In this lifetime the Lord has left the World up to man & his choices. He's left history up to man's own free will & choice within certain limitations, the tunnel of His will, & so far man has made pretty much of a mess of it!

(See also No.H, 6, 7, 12, 42, 105, 269, 299, 321, 371, 376, 388, 601, 645, 693, 694, 709, 961, 1277, 1385, *Childcare Handbook III, Book of Remembrance I & II.*)



*But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto Me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria and unto the uttermost part of the Earth (Acts 1:8).*

1. The lamp burns best, when full of oil!
2. Is everybody happy and healthy? I know you're wealthy and wise because you have the Holy Spirit!
3. The oil flows freely through a wick that is yielded and deeply soaked in the oil! Then it is the oil that burns and not the wick, and gives bright pure clear light to all the house, in the beauty of His perfection, in the holiness of His light!
4. Help us not to try to do the work of Thy Spirit, but to let Thy Spirit work through us!
5. Jesus had to take His body away, so His followers could feel His Spirit--get their minds off the flesh, so they could get their hearts on His Spirit! When we're the furthest from the flesh--we're the closest to the Spirit.
6. You have His Spirit! You are His Truth!
7. If you follow the man, you'll go back when the man is gone. But if you follow the Spirit, you'll go on forever!
8. The main reason for the baptism in the Spirit is to give you **POWER TO WITNESS!**
9. Holy Ghost power means more disciples and less trouble with the ones you have.
10. Simply pray and ask Jesus to fill you with His Spirit and He will!
11. If the Devil's evil spirits possess evil people and if he gives his children evil powers--evil tongues, evil wickedness, evil strength and evil wisdom--how much more can God's good spirits possess good people and God give His children Godly gifts and Godly powers.
12. When you're saved, He implants a bit of Himself--His Spirit and His love and His spirit helpers and controllers--in your mind and heart to guide and direct and protect you and keep you in control and guided by His direct will and His leadings.
13. You'll never be able to escape that Hound of Heaven, Who'll follow you every step of the way and track you down no matter where you are and nail you one way or the other!
14. The Holy Ghost is the best concordance I've got.
15. Who needs drugs when you've got the Druggist? The Holy Spirit is not a depressant or even a stimulant, She's a resurrection which brings you back to life!
16. The Oil of His Holy Spirit oils everything: Our heads, our hearts, our spirits, our tongues and even our feet so we'll go and preach the Gospel!
17. If you don't have the oil of the Holy Spirit you'll get rusty and break down.
18. Don't just be overflowing with the water of the Word, overflow with the wine of the Spirit!
19. The kind of baptism we preach and practice is one where you get so full of the Spirit of God you overflow with His testimony, His witness and His wonder-working Words!
20. All we need is the Holy Spirit to conquer our own spirit, other spirits and evil spirits!
21. Our spirits, like machinery, need cleaning and oiling--the washing of the pure water of the Word and the oiling of the love and patience of the Holy Spirit!
22. The baptism of the Holy Spirit is an overflowing baptism of love--the power to share your love with others!
23. When you feel you cannot hold it and you have to tell others about Jesus, this is the overflowing, this is the baptism of the Holy Spirit!

24. The baptism of the Holy Spirit is love, love for the lost, love to witness, love to win souls, such a love for the Lord that you just love everybody!

25. God's Spirit is like a broadcasting station broadcasting all the time.

26. It is only the restraining power of God's Holy Spirit which prevents the flood of iniquity from overwhelming the World.

27. Being possessed of the Holy Spirit is a form of reincarnation. Any type of incarnation of any spirit working in a human body to which it does not normally nor originally belong is a form of reincarnation.

28. His Spirit will lead you into all truth--through His Word and His prophets as well as your individual leadings and personal revelations.

29. This army has got to be mostly directed from its headquarters in Heaven by the communication of the Holy Spirit, since our ground communications are very slow and very poor and extremely inadequate and frequently disrupted. If you follow the Lord you'll never go wrong.

30. The Holy Spirit is like a Mother, tender and gentle with the little baby. Not even the Father has so much patience.

31. I'd rather be drunk on the Spirit, than sober on sadness!

32. The Holy Spirit is more personal to us than God.

33. Unless the Holy Spirit reveals something to you and enlightens your mind, you can be totally blind to a certain truth that's been right there in front of you all the time!

34. The Holy Spirit is the Old Gold Miner who points the way to the treasures!

35. Oh the Spirit, blessed Spirit,

How I thank Thee, for by Thee

I am always in the Spirit

And I live a life that's free!

36. Oh I thank Thee for Thy Spirit

Thou hast given unto me,

For it's only by Thy Spirit

I have truly been set free!

37. Give me Spirit, give me Spirit,

Oh that's the life for me!

So for a Happy New Year

Give me Spirit that is free!

38. Dream Queen of Heaven's Realm Above,

Entrance me in God's spell of love,

Thrill me, fill me, gratify,

None like Thee can satisfy!

39. The Baptism of the Holy Spirit is Love Power!

40. Just reading the Bible and studying the Word is not enough--You have to have air, the oxygen of the Spirit, to make it burn to give you power and energy spiritually.

41. Try the baptism of the Holy Spirit and see if it doesn't wet your soul and satisfy your thirst and cause you to witness and overflow on others with power, and get them saved and filled too! That's the kind of baptism we believe in and Jesus was talking about!

42. Holy Spirit oil poured on troubled waters calms the waters. Oil that's poured on squeaky parts of a mechanism that are complaining and howling and growling and groaning makes that part of the mechanism quiet and run smoothly without complaint.

43. How do you know you have the Holy Spirit? You know you're saved because somebody told you about Jesus, you believed it, you received Him and you know you're saved because the Bible says so. How do you know you have the Holy Ghost? Because someone told you about it, someone showed you out of the Bible, and you believed it, you asked for Her, you received Her, so you have Her. I don't care how She manifests Herself, or if She doesn't seem to at all immediately, you have the Holy Ghost if you ask for Her, if you really believe it.

44. His Spirit cures both impotency and frigidity in His bride and gives her the strength to conceive from the seeds of His Word, and bear children unto God--the Children of God!

45. He just pours in His Holy Spirit and just fills you from top to bottom, until you just overflow! And it just flows out all over you and covers you up and hides you so they can only see Jesus in you! All they can see is Jesus and you just disappear!

46. When you get filled with His Holy Ghost, you get so full of the Spirit you run over! It runs out your eyes, it runs out your mouth, it runs out your ears, it runs out all over so "we see no man save Jesus only". We see

Jesus in each one of you.--That same glorious expression, happiness, joy, Spirit, smile and peace!--That little bit of Heaven on Earth, the reflection of Heaven in you, the moon, from God the Sun, Jesus Christ!

47. His ministering spirits are the ones that bring us these gifts of the Holy Spirit!

(See also No.20, 28, 29, 32, 73, 73A, 154B, 194, 244, 328, 337, 341, 399, 620, 677, 686, 723, 743, 820, 1300, 1301, 1302, 1303, 1304, 1305.)

48. SA.10:6 And the Spirit of the Lord will come upon thee, and thou shalt prophesy with them, and shalt be turned into another man.

49. SA.16:13,14 Then Samuel took the horn of oil, and anointed him in the midst of his brethren: and the Spirit of the Lord came upon David from that day forward. So Samuel rose up, and went to to Ramah. But the Spirit of the Lord departed from Saul, and an evil spirit from the Lord troubled him.

50. PRO.1:23 Turn you at my reproof: behold, I will pour out My Spirit unto you, I will make known My Words unto you.

51. .4:6 Forsake Her not, and She shall preserve thee: love Her, and She shall keep thee.

52. .2:28,29 And it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out My Spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions: And also upon the servants and upon the handmaids in those days will I pour out My Spirit.

53. MAT.3:11 I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance; but He that cometh after me is mightier than I, Whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire.

54. MAT.3:16 And Jesus, when He was baptised, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto Him, and He saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon Him.

55. MAT.12:31 Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men.

56. .1:8 I indeed have baptized you with water: but He shall baptise you with the Holy Ghost.

57. .3:29 But he that shall blaspheme against the Holy Ghost hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation.

58. LUK.11:13 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your Heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask Him?

59. LUK.24:49 And, behold, I send the promise of My Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high.

60. JOH.1:32 And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from Heaven like a dove, and it abode upon Him.

61. .14:16,17 And I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you for ever; Even the Spirit of truth; whom the World cannot receive because it seeth Him not, neither knoweth Him: but ye know Him; for He dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

62. .14:26 But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in My Name, He shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

63. .15:26 But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, He shall testify of Me.

64. .16:7,8 Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send Him unto you. And when He is come, He will reprove the World of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgement.

65. .16:13 Howbeit when He, the Spirit of truth, is come, He will guide you into all truth: for He shall not speak of Himself; but whatsoever He shall hear, that shall He speak: and He will shew you things to come.

66. ACT.1:5 John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptised with the Holy Ghost not many days hence.

67. ACT.1:8 But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto Me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the Earth.

68. ACT.2:1-4 And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place. And suddenly there came a sound from Heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them. And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.

69. ACT.2:17 And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out of My Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams.

70. ACT.2:38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the Name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

71. .5:32 And we are His witnesses of these things; and so is also the Holy Ghost, whom God hath given to them that obey Him.

72. ACT.8:15-17 Who (Peter and John), when they were come down, prayed for them, that they might receive the Holy Ghost. (For as yet He was fallen upon none of them, only they were baptized in the Name of the Lord Jesus.) Then laid they their hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost.

73. ACT.16:6,7 Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the Holy Ghost to preach the Word in Asia, After they were come to Mysia, they assayed to go into Bithynia: but the Spirit suffered them not.

74. ACT.19:2 He said unto them, Have ye received the Holy Ghost since ye believed? And they said unto him, We have not so much as heard whether there be any Holy Ghost.

75. ACT.19:6a And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the Holy Ghost came on them.

76. ROM.5:5 And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us.

77. ROM.8:14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.

78. ROM.8:16 The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God.

79. 1CO.12:4-11 Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit. And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord. And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all in all. But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal. For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit; To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit; To another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues: But all these worketh that one and the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally as He will.

80. 2CO.3:17b Where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.

81. GAL.4:6 And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of His Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.

82. GAL.5:22,23 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law.

83. GAL.5:25 If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit.

84. TH.1:5 For our Gospel came not unto you in word only, but also in power, and in the Holy Ghost, and in much assurance; as ye know what manner of men we were among you for your sake.

85. 1TH.5:19 Quench not the Spirit.

86. 1JO.3:24 And he that keepeth His commandments dwelleth in Him, and He in him. And hereby we know that He abideth in us, by the Spirit which He hath given us.

87. JO.5:6b It is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is truth.

(See also PRO.8:12,27-31.)





*And My people shall dwell in a peaceable habitation, & in sure dwellings, & in quiet resting places (Isa.32:18).*

1. We're building a home of hearts that girdles the globe!
2. God's in the business of breaking up homes if they're not glorifying Him.
3. Ask for clearance from the Lord before you even move into a new house, & be sure it's going to be a safe house!
4. Without a heart there is no home.
5. No one can be so welcome a guest that he will not annoy his host after three days.--Old Arab proverb.
6. Home is the place in which we are treated the best & grumble the most.
7. Don't ever tell me we haven't got room for somebody!
8. Let me see your Home, & I'll tell you what you are!
9. The idea of our Homes, of course, is a live-in church that's always open night & day.
10. Remember to leave your house in better condition than you found it. That's part of your testimony & witness.
11. I am still firmly convinced that the small independent Homes are the most effective and the hardest to stop!
12. Love begins at home!
13. Bless this house,O Lord we pray.  
Make us safe by night and day.  
Bless these walls, so firm and stout,  
Keeping want & trouble out!
- Bless the roof and windows all,  
Let Thy Peace be over all!  
Bless these doors that they may be  
Ever open Lord to Thee!
- Bless these windows shining bright,  
Letting in God's heavenly light.  
Bless the hearth a-blazing there,  
With smoke ascending like a prayer!
- (Bless the fan a'blowin' there  
Cool air flowing like a prayer!)
- Bless the folks who dwell within,  
Keep them pure and free from sin.  
Bless us all that we may be  
Fit, O Lord, to dwell with Thee!
14. It takes a lot of lovin' to make a house a Home.
15. When you close down one of our Homes, you destroy somebody's Church.
16. Your home may not be air-conditioned, but be sure it's prayer-conditioned.

17. A house is built by human hands, but a home is built by human hearts.

(See also No.106, 122, 126, 211, 316, 326c, 563, 660, 671, 676, 836, 1031, 1046, 1065, 1067, 1409, 1549.)

**59. HONESTY/DISHONESTY** --{page 502}--



*Providing for honest things, not only in the sight of the Lord, but also the sight of men (2Cor.8:21).*

1. Honesty is the best policy. Honesty pays.
2. We're all nudists as far as God's concerned! All things are naked before Him with Whom we have to do. (Heb.4:13)
3. Just because you must tell Systemites the truth doesn't mean you have to tell them everything!
4. Admitting Error clears the Score  
And proves you Wiser than before.
5. To treat your facts with imagination is one thing, but to imagine your facts is another.
6. This is the punishment of a liar: He is not believed even when he speaks the truth.
7. It's not your business to decide whether it's going to cost you anything or not, or cause you trouble by telling on somebody else; it is your duty to tell, whether you like it or not, or whether he likes it or not! It is your duty to report something, and if somebody knows something's wrong and doesn't report it, then it is their fault as much as the actual perpetrators of the crime. Failure to report a crime is a crime!
8. There are quite a few instances in the Bible where God told people to lie.
9. Often it is easier to do a good job than to explain why you didn't.
10. It's a terrible thing to tell lies to try to cover up wrong doing. The Lord is against lying, He hates it!
11. If you lie about one little thing or break the smallest law, people figure you could be guilty of much greater things.
12. Oh, what a tangled web you weave,  
When first you practice to deceive!
13. Not even God Himself can stop people from lying, as long as there's free moral agency and there's free will.
14. Falsification is the product of pride, an effort to hide the awful truth of which you are ashamed.
15. Confess to yourself continually what a fool you are, how stupid, dumb, slow, thoughtless, selfish, inconsiderate and hopeless you are without God!
16. The Lord Himself says, "I will send them strong delusion that they might believe a lie, that they might all be damned who receive not the Love of the Truth." God Himself is going to lie to them and deceive them because they refuse the Truth. So they deserve to believe a lie. So God lied to them and deceived them and deluded them and damned them!
17. If you're going to do what God wants you to do and accomplish what only you can do, you are going to have to recognise your limitations.
18. He that is not honest with himself cannot be honest with anyone else.
19. A guilty conscience needs no accuser.
20. Those who stretch the truth usually find that it snaps back.

21. You can fool some of the people all of the time, and all of the people some of the time, but you cannot fool all of the people all of the time.

22. You must be willing to face yourself and your own weaknesses and your own strengths, and to know the difference.

23. Stripping away all the cover-ups and laying your heart bare before someone else is like the way you humble yourself before the Lord.

24. One of the greatest assets to a good relationship is honesty.

25. One of the smartest things you can do is to assess your own assets and liabilities.

26. You don't solve your problems by running away from them!

27. Flattery is like Grandma's soap--90% "soft soap" and 10% "lie"!

28. You pay a big price if you get caught stealing and you pay the price of fear and apprehension if you don't.

29. You are really three persons: What you think you are, what others think you are, and what God knows you to be!

30. Better to speak truth rudely than to lie correctly.

31. It's better to report it and be wrong than not to report it and be right.

32. Hesitation to most people seems a sign of evasiveness and unwillingness to tell the truth!

33. If you're not honest with yourself, if you keep on trying to fool yourself, you'll do the same with God and others, and the result will be one awful mess--you'll make a mess of your own life, hurt all those associated with you, and hurt God most of all.

34. The best thing we need to do with faults and failures and mistakes and weak points is to see them, recognise them, be honest about them and then try to somehow overcome them or improve them and do something better if we can!

35. The Lord and His Prophets frequently used deceit and sometimes outright lies, believe it or not, to accomplish God's purpose. The law is a standard, but there are always exceptions to the rules, particularly if God is the One Who makes the exceptions.

36. I hate to lie and very rarely in my life I've done it. It hurts me and bothers me, but if I have to do it to save my life I might do it. And a few times, although I have not outright lied, I have misled. I said one thing when I really meant another, and deliberately in order to save some situation or spare someone, or in order to escape some very serious situation. If you have to lie to save a life, I think it's worth it, but I certainly don't recommend it and it would have to be in an absolute extreme emergency.

37. As Shakespeare said, "If thou canst to thine own self be true, thou canst not be false to any man."

38. King David left a dummy in his bed to make it look like he was still there while he escaped through the window. Paul was let down over the wall in a basket. Jesus' disciples pretended to go one way when they left town but actually went another. The Three Wise Men, instead of going back the main road to Herod, went another way home. Jesus hid Himself and escaped out of their midst.

39. To treat your fact with imagination is one thing, but to imagine your facts is another.

(See also No.143A, 266, 286, 302C, 555, 629, 662, 985, 1108, 1248, 1299, 1400, 1406.)

40. .19:13 Thou shalt not defraud thy neighbor, neither rob him: the wages of him that is hired shall not abide with thee all night until the morning.

41. .24:3,4 Who shall ascend into the hill of the Lord? or who shall stand in His holy place? He that hath clean hands, and a pure heart; who hath not lifted up his soul unto vanity, nor sworn deceitfully.

42. .35:11 False witnesses did rise up; they laid to my charge things that I knew not.

43. .55:21 The words of his mouth were smoother than butter, but war was in his heart: his words were softer than oil, yet were they drawn swords.

44. .62:4 They delight in lies: they bless with their mouth, but they curse inwardly.

45. .119:29,30 Remove from me the way of lying: and grant me Thy law graciously. I have chosen the way of truth: Thy judgments have I laid before me.

46. .119:128 Therefore I esteem all Thy precepts concerning all things to be right; and I hate every false way.

47. .119:163 I hate and abhor lying: but Thy law do I love.

48. .18:5 It is not good to accept the person of the wicked, to overthrow the righteous in judgement.

49. .19:5 A false witness shall not be unpunished, and he that speaketh lies shall not escape.

50. .24:28 Be not a witness against thy neighbor without cause; and deceive not with thy lips.

51. .28:13 He that covereth his sins shall not prosper: but whoso confesseth and forsaketh them shall have mercy.

52. .5:4,5 When thou vowest a vow unto God, defer not to pay it; for He hath no pleasure in fools: pay that which thou hast vowed. Better is it that thou shouldest not vow, than that thou shouldest vow and not pay.

53. .8:16 These are the things that ye shall do; Speak ye every man the truth to his neighbor; execute the judgement of truth and peace in your gates.

54. .19:18 Jesus said...Thou shalt not bear false witness.

55. .5:3,9 But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land? Then Peter said unto her, How it is that ye have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them which have buried thy husband are at the door, and shall carry thee out.

56. .9:1 I say the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing me witness in the Holy Ghost.

57. **COR.9:20,21 And unto the Jews I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews; to them that are under the law, as under the law, that I might gain them that are under the law; To them that are without law, as without law, (being not without law to God, but under the law to Christ,) that I might gain them that are without law.**

58. **COR.4:2 But have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, not handling the word of God deceitfully; but by manifestation of the truth commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God.**

59. **CO.6:8b As deceivers, and yet true.**

60. **CO.8:21 Providing for honest things, not only in the sight of the Lord, but also in the sight of men.**

61. **.4:25 Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbor: for we are members one of another.**

62. **.3:9,10 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds; And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of Him that created him.**

63. **TH.4:6 That no man go beyond and defraud his brother in any matter: because that the Lord is the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you and testified.**

64. **TH.4:12 That ye may walk honestly toward them that are without, and that ye may have lack of nothing.**

65. **.13:8 Pray for us: for we trust we have a good conscience, in all things willing to live honestly.**

66. **JO.1:10 If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His Word in not in us.**

(See also examples of "Deceivers Yet True"; GEN.12:10-20; GEN.20:1-18; GEN.30:25-43; GEN.38:1-26; GEN.42:1-24; GEN.44:1-17; EXO.1:15-21; EXO.2:1-10; EXO.3:19-22; EXO.8:20-29; EXO.10:8-11; EXO.11:1-3; EXO.12:31-36; JOS.2:1-22; JDG.16:21-30; RUT.3:1-18; ISA.19:8-18; ISA.21:10-15.)



*He knew all men, and needed not that any should testify of man: for He knew what was in man (Jn.2:24,25).*

1. The heart of man is the same the world over, and his heartaches and sorrows and sins and pains and fear of death are the same!

2. There are 3 kinds of people in all types of organizations--rowboat people, sailboat people, and steamboat people. Rowboat people need to be pushed or shoved along. Sailboat people move when a favourable wind is blowing. Steamboat people move continuously through calm or storm. They are usually masters of themselves and their surroundings.

3. There are two kinds of people in one's life--people whom one keeps waiting--and the people for whom one waits.

4. Character is not cut in marble, but is living and changing, and subject to disease, as our bodies are.

5. Experience is always a good teacher, but she often has dull pupils.

6. People will buy anything that's one to a customer.

7. Everyone is interested in improving--his wife, his children, his company and his country.

8. All you have to do is make something illegal and everybody wants it!

9. It's when you're safe at home that you wish you were having an adventure. When you're having an adventure you wish you were at home.

10. The sweetest music in the World to every person is his own name.

11. It's always easier to tear down than it is to build! People are usually quicker to believe lies than the truth.

12. The man-worshippers of today will be the crucifiers of tomorrow!

13. Retired is being tired twice, I've thought!

First tired of working, Then tired of not.

14. Horse sense is something that horses have to keep them from betting on people.

15. Natives who beat drums to drive off evil spirits are objects of scorn to smart Americans who blow horns to break up traffic jams.

16. Too many people quit looking for work when they find a job.

17. We have not passed that subtle line between childhood and adulthood until we have stopped saying, "It got lost," and say, "I lost it."

18. People differ. Some object to the fan dancer, and others to the fan.

19. One trouble with the World is that so many people who stand up vigorously for their rights, fall down miserably on their duties.

20. The two kinds of people on earth are the people who lift and the people who lean.

21. The nearest to perfection most people ever come is when filling out an employment application.

22. Character is what you are in the dark.

23. The superiority of some men is merely local--they are great because their associates are little.

24. Birds of a feather flock together.

25. Unwelcome guests are often most welcome when they are gone.

26. As a rule man is a fool,  
When it's hot he wants it cool,  
When it's cool he wants it hot,

Always wanting what is not.

27. People are absolutely scared stupid of the quiet and the stillness, because they know the voice of God might come through!

28. Sign on office bulletin board: "In case of fire, don't panic. Simply flee the building with the same reckless abandon that occurs each day at quitting time."

29. Even in the heart of the jungles in the most savage tribes the general rules of human behaviour are very much the same. They know it's wrong to do certain things.

30. Very few men are so idealistic as to be willing to give up their own sins in order to please God, that they might try to save their fellowman!

31. You can conquer the city, the nation, the World, but until you can conquer your spirit, you're a loser.

32. Temperamental usually means more temper than mental.

33. Most people would learn from their mistakes if they weren't so busy trying to place the blame on someone else.

34. Seven-thirty is my time to rise,

But I'm seldom bright of eye.

Part of me says "Look alive!"

And the other part asks "Why?"

35. It's easier to believe a lie that one has heard a thousand times than to believe a fact that no one has heard before.

36. Remember, the two main factors that move worldly men to action: Desire for gain and fear of loss.

37. It is with narrow-souled people as with narrow-necked bottles--the less they have in them the more noise they make in pouring out.

38. Most people would rather be ruined by praise than saved by criticism.

39. Not what you have, but what you see;

Not what you see, but what you choose;

Not what seems fair, but what is true;

Not what you dream, but what you do;

Not what you take, but what you give;

Not as you pray, but as you live!

These are the things that mar or bless

The sum of human happiness.

40. --Oh, it's great to get up in the morning!

--But it's nicer to lie in bed!

(See also No.7, 12, 33, 159, 203, 208, 242, 250, 263, 297, 302B, 334A, 359, 502R, 529, 606, 629, 703, 845, 1019, 1032, 1372.)

Copyright (c) 1998 by The Family



*God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace to the humble (Jam.4:6).*

1. With Cain & Abel began the Battle Royal between pride & humility, between the damned religionists & the saved sinners, the perpetual warfare that has been waged ever since between the False Church & the True Church, the Whore & the Bride, Carnal Babylon & Spiritual Jerusalem, the Flesh & the Spirit, Works & Faith, Law & Grace, Self & God.
2. Truly great men are usually very humble men, & they don't have to brag about how great they are!
3. You glorify self when you talk about your faults!
4. Great men forget themselves. That is why they are remembered by others.
5. Only brokenness can give you humility.
6. It's a wonderful thing when you can see you're wrong!
7. The self-righteous hypocrite never blames himself.
8. You want to be humble, but you don't want to be humiliated.
9. Pride is love for yourself.
10. One of the worst kinds of pride in the world is pretending to have faith when you haven't got it.
11. People who are proud & selfish lay themselves wide open for the Devil!
12. Pride is at the bottom of all great mistakes.
13. Man's greatest pride is in his buildings--"the works of his hands," & they have always been his downfall.
14. Fame is fickle & triumph is only transitory.
15. Anybody can be a novice if you give them more than they can handle. If any job you get makes you proud, then you're a novice.
16. Sensitiveness is born of pride & pride is of the Devil!
17. Once the Lord humbles you, He has to keep humbling you--He's gotta keep you humble.
18. If you need love, say so!
19. When you get too proud & so smart that you can't stand to have somebody give you a suggestion or correction, you're in pretty bad shape!
20. Pride is something which none of us can really bear. Pride kills you!
21. Pride comes before a fall, & you're never so near the abyss as when you're on the brink!
22. He that is humble knoweth not that he is humble!
23. If you think you are humble, you probably aren't!
24. Love, humility, & prayer solve all problems!
25. God does some things to make you humble, other things to keep you humble & yet others to make sure you're still humble.
26. Sex, love & emotion humble, while intellectuality & knowledge bring pride.
27. One reason why you need to confess your sins is because it really helps to keep you humble.
28. The greatest saints were the greatest sinners who knew it & therefore depended totally on God.
29. An awful lot can get done if you don't care who gets the credit.
30. The quicker you learn that you don't know, the better off you are going to be, because only God has the answers.

31. Give Him all the glory for anything good about you, & yourself all the blame for anything bad! That's usually a pretty good rule, because it's usually right!

32. This is a war! We have little time for sensitivity, nursing our wounds & hurt feelings! We must fight on!

33. The very thing you're fighting is the thing God wants to use to humble & break you.

34. Humility is of the Lord. Pride is of the Devil.

35. It's not humility for you to take a back seat when you should have a front seat.

36. Love is humility & humility is love. They are totally inseparable.

37. The best way to get the last word is to apologise.

38. Great men are humble men.

39. Let me be when I am weary,

Just a little bit more cheery,

Think a little more of others,

And a little less of me.

40. Humility is a strange thing. The minute you think you've got it, you've lost it.

41. The less self-confidence you have, the more Christ-confidence you'll have, and the better you'll be.

42. It takes humility to give & to receive affection.

43. An admission of error is a sign of strength rather than a confession of weakness.

44. Whatever you would laugh at in others, laugh at in yourself.

45. A good man does not hesitate to admit he has been in the wrong. He takes comfort in knowing that he is wiser today than he was yesterday.

46. Pride's fear of failure or refusal often prevents us from making the first move.

47. Most people seem to want a good deed to be all their own idea so they can get all the credit for it, rather than to be asked to do it & thus have to share the credit with someone else's faith.

48. Better to ask the way than go astray.

49. "Only by pride cometh contention: but with the well advised is wisdom." (Pro.13:10)

50. It takes two to make a quarrel.

51. Humility before God is nothing if not proved in humility before men.

52. Don't refuse to accept criticism!--Get all the help you can!

53. Don't be afraid to ask dumb questions. They're easier to handle than dumb mistakes.

54. Be humble or you'll stumble.

55. Never be ashamed to ask for help or prayer when you need it.

56. A bigshot who has too big a shot of his own ego can't do as well as some little shots who have a big shot of the Holy Spirit!

57. The need for glamour & glory is an addiction as bad as drugs.

58. Death to self, death to sin, death to your own ideas, death to your own strength, death to your reputation, death to your pride--are hard to go through, but they're worth it because they bring out the life of Christ.

59. I need to confess my sins because it really helps keep me humble!

60. Only pride hurts!--Humility doesn't really feel it!

61. The minute you start patting yourself on the back, you're finished.

62. The basis of virtually all sin is pride!

63. The greatest men in the World are the most humble.

64. Confess your faults, never defend them.

65. He who is full of self is very empty.

66. The truly humble are truly loving, & the truly loving are truly humble.

67. Don't be too over-confident about some of your projects for which you may not have sufficient experience & knowledge, & for which you need better preparation & more thorough investigation.

68. Few people seem to be able to take power, prosperity, or popularity without being corrupted.

69. There's perfect rest in humility, because humility has love & faith without fear.

70. God can only use truly broken men & women!

71. There is no limit to what can be accomplished if you give the Lord all the glory for it.

72. "Pride goeth before destruction, & an haughty spirit before a fall." (Pro.16:18)

73. "Let another man praise thee & not thine own mouth, a stranger, & not thine own lips." (Pro.27:2)

74. "A man's pride shall bring him low: but honour shall uphold the humble in spirit." (Pro.29:23)

75. I have made mistakes but I have never made the mistake of claiming that I have never made one.

76. Success has made failures of many men.



77. It is indeed a desirable thing to be well descended, but the glory belongs to our ancestors.
78. Swallowing your pride occasionally will never give you indigestion.
79. As water seeks the lowest place, just so the glory & power of God flows in the humblest, lowliest hearts! This is real nobility in God's Kingdom!
80. In most instances, all an argument proves is that two people are present.
81. A fight starts only with a second blow.
82. The less there is of you, the more the light gets through!
83. Pride is increased by ignorance: Those assume the most who know the least.
84. He is not laughed at that laughs at himself first.
85. Pride was the beginning of all evil!
86. Pride is the spirit of the Devil!--Love is the Spirit of God!--And you can't have both.
87. If you're not big enough to stand criticism, you're too small to be praised.
88. One of the smartest things you can learn to say is, "I don't know!"
89. Stop & praise the Lord & have a good laugh at your own weaknesses & ridiculous inability to do anything or accomplish anything except for the Lord!
90. Humility & Love are synonymous. You cannot have real love & not be humble.
91. Not only wars, but slaughter on the highways, disease & accidents are caused by pride, selfishness & lack of love.
92. When a brother is easily offended it shows he's not very strong & pretty unspiritual.
93. The Lord only uses people who have been humbled, broken, melted & remade!
94. One of the Devil's favorite sins is pride, because this makes people want to cover up & not confess. Unless people will ask for help, how are you going to help them?
95. He is impossible to get along with who thinks he's impossible to get along without.
96. It's not easy to confess you've been wrong, but it's a lot easier than staying wrong or trying to support a false position!
97. People will die for pride!--Quicker than they'll die for money or power or territory!
98. Many suicides are a result of pride--people just can't face it--& war is suicide!
99. Suicide is a result of pride, people just can't face it, can't stand the scandal, the humiliation, the degradation.
100. Selfishness is pride. The selfish believe they deserve more than others, therefore they are unwilling to share.
101. There is no rest in pride, the proud are always afraid.
102. I never found any branch of the Lord's work where pride pays at all! Pride does not pay, & it doesn't pay the bills. We've got every reason in the World to ask for help for His Work.
103. Lack of power is the result of fear born of pride, fear of not succeeding, fear of being embarrassed, fear of being ashamed. Such fear always comes as the result of pride, because the proud are afraid of failure. The rich & the powerful are the most fearful people in the World.
104. Legalism & self-righteousness are manifestations of pride.
105. It's a sign of pride if we're too sensitive & we snap back or we feel hurt. Sensitiveness is born of pride & pride is of the Enemy.
106. If there's anything any soldier has got to learn to do, as you oughtta know, it's to be able to take a cussin' out by his commanding officer for his mistakes, & say, "Yes, sir; thank you, sir; & what next, sir?"--Even if it hurts! This is a war & we have little time for sensitivity & nursing our wounds or hurt feelings! We must fight on!
107. I've seldom found that silence breathes consent: It often breathes a smouldering, hidden resentment, which is fearful of being voiced & therefore says nothing.
108. When you have the "poor me's," you're usually just trying to get attention & sympathy! Your pride is wounded, your ego has been a little deflated, your self-confidence has been a little shaken, & you begin to feel sorry for yourself & wonder if you should quit. The cure is to forget yourself & love others.
109. As to sensitivity & hurt feelings: The Devil will try to tell you it's ok to be just a little bit down, a little bit sorry for yourself! After all, you deserve to enjoy just a little bit of discouragement so you can get a little bit of sympathy from others! Why not? Misery loves company! This is self-indulgence & must be resisted & lost in love.
110. Some people are so damn delicate they can't stand anything; they can't take the slightest pressure--they collapse because they're not holding on to the Lord, they're not standing on the Word, they're not believing in His promises! They're depending on some damn self-righteousness of their own, some depraved greatness they think they have! Let me tell you, that kind of sanctimonious hypocrisy can't stand the shock treatments of the Devil! It shatters very easily!

111. Only pride hurts!--Humility doesn't really feel it.
112. When a brother is easily offended, it shows he is not very strong & he is pretty unspiritual.
113. Not being able to take chastening in correction for your mistakes is a very poor example of humility.
114. You're glorifying Satan when you talk about your sins. You're glorifying self when you talk about your faults.
115. You have to find out the difference between reality & the imaginary--the truth & the lie.
116. Even an inferiority complex & really being bothered by it, in a way is pride. You're worried about what people think about you.
117. People who are inclined to have a rather superiority complex attitude usually underneath have an inferiority complex & they're very self-conscious about having any people around whom they do feel are superior.
118. Don't any of you get so damned cocky that you don't think you have to consult with others, or ask for counsel & advice, especially from the Lord & the local leaders who are familiar with the situation & the business & the law!
119. One of the safest ways to keep from being made a fool of by God is just to keep reminding everybody that you are a fool, & it's only the Lord that's doing it.
120. You're glorifying Satan when you talk about your sins. You're glorifying self when you talk about your faults, unless you are sincerely confessing them & asking for counsel or forgiveness.
121. The Devil can really tell you a lot of truth about yourself that's horrible, not to speak of the lies he tells you, so if you start listening to the Devil, there's no end to it.
122. When you're trying so much in your own righteousness, your own perfection, it becomes almost impossible to confess your mistakes & shortcomings because it destroys your self-confidence & it nearly shatters your self-reliance because it proves you're not perfect.
123. Pride makes it even harder to forgive yourself, even though you know God will forgive you.
124. Don't feel sorry for yourself & try to blame it on God, & quit. Self-pity is pride, hurt feelings are damnable stinking self, & at the root of every doubt there is sin--the heinous diabolical sin of rebellion against God's Will.
125. One of the biggest dangers you have is to begin thinking it's you instead of God's anointing. The minute you start patting yourself on the back, God will see to it that you're humbled to bring you out of it. He's a jealous God & He wants & deserves the glory & will have no other gods before Him.
126. People who are inclined to have a rather superiority complex attitude, usually underneath have an inferiority complex & they're very self-conscious about having any people around whom they do feel are superior.
127. If we'll just recognise that we're little children who don't know anything, & the Lord is the One Who knows it all, & that He's the only One Who is really wise & knows what He's doing, & that we must just follow Him, then He can really show His power.
128. As long as you're calling, you can expect God to answer. As long as you're seeking, God will show the way. As long as you admit that you're empty, you'll be able to be filled.
129. The hardest words to say in any language are, "I was wrong." If you are not willing to admit you are wrong and confess that you need help & an answer & solution to your problem, God will never have an opportunity to do the miracle you need. That takes humility of the kind only God can give.
130. When Saul became proud & dependent upon himself & his own wisdom & his own arm of the flesh instead of upon the Lord, the Lord had to abase him.
131. If you're sensitive & easily hurt, that shows how proud you are. Some people are actually proud of being sensitive. Some people think that being sensitive is a good thing.
132. When a brother is easily offended, it shows he's not very strong & pretty unspiritual. He was offended about something, which gave him a sense of self-righteousness which ministered to his pride.
133. False prophecies & false interpretations of the Bible are often a result of spiritual pride & the frustrated temptation to want to be a spiritual leader.
134. "Be not as the Old Church, which doth wear clothes which are for show & to protect herself from Me, but bare thyself unto Me in humility & in love... For I will have a new bride, who will love Me & will do My Will & will bear Me children, no longer barren as she (the Old Church) was."
135. That was Saul's main problem, he was a man-pleaser. To make the people happy, to please the people, he disobeyed the Lord.
136. If you have even one talent & God calls on you to do something with it, don't be afraid of what people will think or whether you'll succeed: Just obey! Don't just sit there & do nothing: Stand up & be counted, & let God be the judge!

137. Be sure that your anger is in the right spirit with the meekness & gentleness of a tender & gentle & loving & contrite heart in all humility.

138. The more guilty you are, the more you defend yourself. It's a form of self-righteous pride.

139. The best people are the ones who are willing to do anything that needs to be done! If you're too good to wash dishes or sweep floors or pull weeds or anything that needs to be done when there's nobody else to do it, then you're too good for us!

140. There's no job that should ever be beneath anybody or too low for anybody!

141. One reason why the Lord doesn't give special powers to more people is because they'd become very proud & they wouldn't be able to handle it. They'd become spiritually proud & try to show off.

142. It's your responsibility to stand up for what you feel is right, but the way you do it is what's important, whether in pride & argumentatively, or in humility.

143. Great men are truly humble men. They never pass up a little child without a smile or a kind word or a loving attitude & thoughtfulness.

144. It's better to be humble & bend gracefully when it storms, than to be proud & stiff & break when adversity comes.

(See also No. 75, 203, 287, 293, 302b, 312, 319, 328, 524, 531, 548, 559, 641, 698, 720, 721, 763, 784, 991, 996, 1032, 1112, 1126, 1339, 1372, 1436, 1438, 1547.)

145. 1Sa.2:3 Talk no more so exceeding proudly; let not arrogancy come out of your mouth: for the Lord is a God of knowledge, and by Him actions are weighed.

146. 1Sa.15:17 And Samuel said, When thou was little in thine own sight, wast thou not made the head of the tribes of Israel, and the Lord anointed thee king over Israel?

147. 1Sa.15:24 Saul said unto Samuel, I have sinned: for I have transgressed the commandment of the Lord, thy words: because I feared the people, and obeyed their voice.

148. JOB.6:24,25 Teach me, and I will hold my tongue: and cause me to understand wherein I have erred. How forcible are right words! but what doth your arguing reprove?

149. PSA.9:12b He forgetteth not the cry of the humble.

150. PSA 10:4 The wicked, through the pride of his countenance, will not seek after God: God is not in all his thoughts.

151. PSA 25:9 The meek will He guide in judgment: and the meek will He teach His way.

152. PSA.34:18 The Lord is nigh unto them that are of a broken heart; and saveth such as be of a contrite spirit.

153. PSA.37:11 But the meek shall inherit the Earth; and shall delight themselves in the abundance of peace.

154. PSA.51:17 The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit: a broken and a contrite heart, O God, Thou wilt not despise.

155. PSA.73:6 Therefore pride compasseth them about as a chain; violence covereth them as a garment.

156. PSA.199:78a Let the proud be ashamed.

157. PSA.131:1 Lord, my heart is not haughty, nor mine eyes lofty: neither do I exercise myself in great matters, or in things too high for me.

158. PSA.147:6 The Lord lifteth up the meek: He casteth the wicked down to the ground.

159. PSA.149:4 For the Lord taketh pleasure in His people: He will beautify the meek with Salvation.

160. PRO.11:2 When pride cometh, then cometh shame: but with the lowly is wisdom.

161. PRO.13:10 Only by pride cometh contention: but with the well advised is wisdom..

162. PRO.14:3 In the mouth of the foolish is a rod of pride: but the lips of the wise shall preserve them.

163. PRO.15:33 The fear of the lord is the instruction of wisdom; and before honour is humility.

164. PRO.18:12 Before destruction the heart of man is haughty; and before honour is humility.

165. PRO.21:4 An high look, and a proud heart, and the plowing of the wicked, is sin.

166. PRO.22:4 By humility and the fear of the Lord are riches, and honour, and life.

167. PRO.25:6,7 Put not forth thyself in the presence of the king, and stand not in the place of great men: For better it is that it be said unto thee, Come up hither; than that thou shouldest be put lower in the presence of the prince whom thine eyes have seen.

168. PRO.26:12 Seest thou a man wise in his own conceit? there is more hope of a fool than of him.

169. PRO.27:2 Let another man praise thee, and not thine own mouth; a stranger, and not thine own lips.

170. PRO.28:21 To have respect of persons is not good: for for a piece of bread that man will transgress.

171. PRO.28:25 He that is of a proud heart stirreth up strife: but he that putteth his trust in the Lord shall be made fat.

172. PRO.29:23 A man's pride shall bring him low: but honour shall uphold the humble in spirit.

173. ISA.2:11,12 The lofty looks of man shall be humbled, and the haughtiness of men shall be bowed down, and the Lord alone shall be exalted in that day. For the day of the Lord of hosts shall be upon every one that is proud and lofty, and upon every one that is lifted up; and he shall be brought low.

174. ISA.5:21 Woe unto them that are wise in their own eyes, & prudent in their own sight!

175. ISA.57:15 For thus saith the High and Lofty One that inhabiteth eternity, whose name is Holy; I dwell in the high and holy place, with him also that is of a contrite and humble spirit, to revive the spirit of the humble, and to revive the heart of the contrite ones.

176. JER.45:5a Seekest thou great things for thyself? seek them not.

177. DAN.4:30-33,37 The king spake, and said, Is not this great Babylon, that I have built for the house of the kingdom by the might of my power, and for the honour of my majesty? While the word was in the king's mouth, there fell a voice from Heaven, saying, O king Nebuchadnezzar, to thee it is spoken; The kingdom is departed from thee. And they shall drive thee from men, and thy dwelling shall be with the beasts of the field: they shall make thee to eat grass as oxen, and seven times shall pass over thee, until thou know that the most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to whomsoever He will. The same hour was the thing fulfilled upon Nebuchadnezzar: and he was driven from men, & did eat grass as oxen, and his body was wet with the dew of Heaven, till his hairs were grown like eagle's feathers, and his nails like bird's claws. Now I Nebuchadnezzar praise, extol and honour the King of Heaven, all Whose works are truth, & His ways judgment: and those that walk in pride He is able to abase.

178. DAN.5:18,20,21 O thou king, the most high God gave Nebuchadnezzar thy father a kingdom, and majesty, and glory, and honour. But when his heart was lifted up, and his mind hardened in pride, he was deposed from his kingly throne, and they took his glory from him: And he was driven from the sons of men;...till he knew that the most high God ruled in the kingdom of men, & that He appointeth over it whomsoever He will.

179. OBA.3 The pride of thine heart hath deceived thee, thou that dwellest in the clefts of the rock, whose habitation is high; that saith in his heart, Who shall bring me down to the ground?

180. MIC.6:8 He hath shewed thee, O man, what is good; what doth the Lord require of thee, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with thy God?

181. MAT.5:5 Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the Earth.

182. MAT.18:4 Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the Kingdom of Heaven.

183. MAT.19:30 But many that are first shall be last; and the last shall be first.

184. MAT.21:5 Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy king cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass.

185. MAR.12:38-40 And He said unto them in His doctrine, Beware of the scribes, which love to go in long clothing, and love salutations in the market places, And the chief seats in the synagogues, and the uppermost rooms at feasts: Which devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: these shall receive greater damnation.

186. LUK.1:48 For He hath regarded the low estate of His handmaiden: for, behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed.

187. LUK.10:21b Thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes.

188. LUK.14:10a When thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest room; that when he that bade thee cometh, he may say unto thee, Friend, Go up higher.

189. LUK.22:25-27 He said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors. But ye shall not be so: but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve. For whether is greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth? Is not he that sitteth at meat? but I am among you as He that serveth.

190. JOH.1:27 He it is, who coming after me is preferred before me, whose shoe's latchet I am not worthy to unloose.

191. JOH.5:44 How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only?

192. JOH.12:43 For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God.

193. JOH.13:5 After that He poureth water into a basin, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith He was girded.

194. ACT.12:21-23 And upon a set day Herod, arrayed in royal apparel, sat upon his throne, and made an oration unto them. The people gave a shout, saying, It is the voice of a god, not of a man. And immediately the angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the glory: and he was eaten of worms, and gave up the ghost.

195. ROM.2:11 For there is no respect of persons with God.

196. ROM.12:3 For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith.

197. ROM.12:10b,16 In honour preferring one another. Mind not high things, but condescend to men of low estate. Be not wise in your own conceits.

198. ROM.14:2,3 For one believeth that he may eat all things: another, who is weak, eateth herbs. Let not him that eateth despise him that eateth not; and let not him which eateth not judge him that eateth: for God hath received him.

199. 1CO.3:18 If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this World, let him become a fool, that he may be wise.

200. 1CO.4:6,7 And these things, brethren, I have in a figure transferred to myself and to Apollos for your sakes; that ye might learn in us not to think of men above that which is written, that no one of you be puffed up for one against another. For who maketh thee to differ from another? and what hast thou that thou didst not receive? now if thou didst receive it, why dost thou glory, as if thou hadst not received it?

201. 1CO.8:2 If any man think that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.

202. 1CO.10:12 Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall.

203. 2CO.10:17,18 But he that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord. For not he that commendeth himself is approved, but whom the Lord commendeth.

204. 2CO.12:7 And lest I should be exalted above measure through the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a thorn in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, lest I should be exalted above measure.

205. GAL.1:10 For do I now persuade men, or God? or do I seek to please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.

206. GAL.6:14 But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the World is crucified unto me, and I unto the World.

207. EPH.5:21 Submitting yourselves one to another in the fear of God.

208. EPH.6:6 Not with eyeservice, as menpleasers; but as the servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart.

209. PHI.2:3 Let nothing be done through strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves.

210. PHI.2:5-8 Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus: Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God: But made Himself of no reputation, and took upon Him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: and being found in fashion as a man, He humbled Himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.

211. COL.3:12 Put on therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, longsuffering.

212. 1TI.3:6 Not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride he fall into the condemnation of the Devil.

213. 2TI.2:25a In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves.

214. JAM.2:1 My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord of glory, with respect of persons.

215. JAM.4:6b God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble.

216. JAM.4:10 Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and He shall lift you up.

217. 1PE.3:4b The ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.

218. 1PE.5:5,6 Likewise, ye younger, submit yourselves unto the elder. Yea, all of you be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility: for God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble. Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that He may exalt you in due time.

219. JUD.16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts; and their mouth speaketh great swelling words, having men's persons in admiration because of advantage.

(See also DEU.8:12-14; 2KI.5:10-14; MAT.6:1-4; LUK.18:13,14; 22:14-17; JOH.13:14-16; ROM.11:17-21; PHI.2:3-11.)



*A Merry heart doeth good like a medicine (Pro.17:22).*

1. A sense of humour is a great asset in life!
2. Men show their character in nothing more clearly than by what they think laughable.
3. Laughter is a tranquilizer with no side effects.
4. One of the greatest assets any missionary can have is a strong sense of humour which can help relieve the tension in many a tight situation!
5. Get a big laugh out of yourself! Help others to laugh at you, too!
6. You may be taking the whole thing too seriously, it may not be half as bad as you think, and it might be better just to see the funny side of it all!
7. It's good to be able to laugh at yourself & your ridiculous plans, when God shows you a better way.
8. Humor is enjoying the contrast between the way things are & the way they ought to be, & being able to laugh about it.
9. My mother was always telling funny stories about herself & the crazy things she did, to remind herself & others that the only good thing about her was God!
10. A sense of humour is the ability to see the funny side of a serious situation and to laugh at things when they're not the way they ought to be.
11. Keep humble with a good humour! Laugh at yourself!

(See also No. 20, 34, 35, 49, 142, 159, 198, 237, 240, 338, 353, 640, 1338.)

12. Pro.15:13 A merry heart maketh a cheerful countenance: but by sorrow of the heart the spirit is broken.
13. Pro.15:15 All the days of the afflicted are evil: but he that is of a merry heart hath a continual feast.
14. Pro.17:22 A merry heart doeth good like a medicine: but a broken spirit drieth the bones.



*Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might. But it is good to be zealously affected always in a good thing, & not only when I am present with you (Ecc.9:10; Gal.4:18).*

1. Nothing great was ever achieved without inspiration & enthusiasm.
2. Without the spirit you're dead, you stink, it smells, & everybody can sense it!
3. The worst bankrupt in the world is the man who has lost his inspiration. Let him lose everything but inspiration & he will come through again to success.
4. Every calling is great when greatly pursued for God's glory.
5. Every production of genius must be the production of inspiration.
6. Inspiration is the propelling force that is necessary for climbing the ladder of success in any ministry, in any field!
7. No wild enthusiast ever yet could rest,  
Till half mankind were like himself possessed!
8. If you'll just fill your heart with the Lord, when you open your mouth it's like just turning it on!
9. The only thing more infectious than enthusiasm is a lack of it.
10. A man who works with his hands is a laborer; a man who works with his hands & his brain is a craftsman; but a man who works with his hands & his brain & his heart is an artist!
11. John Wesley, the founder of the Methodist Church, was once asked how he got his crowds. He replied, "I set myself on fire, & the people come to see me burn."
12. Without any emotion, you're not going to get any motion!
13. If I can just set you on fire, I know you'll set the World on fire!
14. Duty without inspiration becomes laborious, duty with inspiration becomes glorious!
15. Any mountain--the mountain of this life, the mountain of accomplishment, the mountain of obstacles, the mountain of difficulty--if you're going to climb it, has to be worth dying for!
16. If you have lost that compulsion that you just have to make progress & keep moving, that you'd rather die for something rather than live for nothing, then you've lost the martyr spirit.
17. Don't try to get away with operating in your own flesh! You'll show what an absolute fool you are without the Spirit!
18. Whole-heartedness is contagious. Give yourself, if you wish to gain others.
19. What makes you really great is the greatness God gives you--the spirit, the inspiration!
20. What a difference the Spirit makes! It's the emotional thing that really counts, not the technical perfection.
21. When God has given you a role to play & you can play it with divine anointing & real inspiration of the Lord & by the power of His Spirit, you become that creation of God!
22. Faithy sings with authority! It's such divine conviction, nothing & nobody can shake it!
23. God makes the difference between lifeless clay & the alive pulsating energetic body of a human being! It's the breath of God, the anointing & power of God that makes the difference!
24. Without Him you're nothing! You'll fall flat as a flounder!
25. It doesn't matter how technically perfect these bands are, they can be dead as a doornail if they lack the power--that supernatural thing--that mysterious mystical power that really turns people on & makes them trip out!

26. That's what's wrong with the churches today: They've got everything, but they're one helluva failure because they've lost the Spirit--no anointing or power, no real emotion, no dramatic mystical charisma.--The fire's gone out!

27. What good is the furnace when its fire goes out?--It's cold & dark & useless! It's not the furnace, remember, it's the fire that makes it hot!

28. I don't care how much education you have or how much of an orator you are, if you haven't got the fire, it profits nothing!

29. If you haven't got the fire, it's just cold dead icicles--no warmth, no heat!

30. God can inspire you!--Anything you do, washing dishes, taking care of babies, no matter what it is, you can do it in the Spirit!

31. If you just have the letter of the law of duty only, it drags you down & turns you off!

32. If you've got that divine anointing, it makes every little task wonderful!

33. "You've got to have a glory in the thing you do, an everlasting glory that'll carry you through!"

34. If your music doesn't affect people, you're just in the entertainment business!

35. If your witness doesn't make them glad or mad or sad, it's just so much hot air & a waste of time!

36. You can be an anointed worm & become a glowworm for God! Without the anointing you'd just be an ordinary little bug! But with the anointing you become a firefly lighting up the night for God!

37. Every task, whatever it is, without the Spirit is dead & will eat your heart out & kill you! But the Spirit can make anything glorious!

38. The Spirit can turn it on, no matter what it is or who it is, & give it glory & glamour & beauty & joy & life & heat & everything!--You name it! It's the Spirit that makes the difference.

39. Has your singing, music or whatever you do got the power, the fire of God?--If not, it's dead works!--And it'll never set anyone else on fire either! God help you to have the fire-power of God's Spirit in all you do!

40. Don't try to work up glamour--pray down glory!

41. Some people quote Scriptures like so many words without meaning!--Words without music!--The letter without the Spirit! It just means nothing!

42. That's the spirit--sock it to'm! Only the Spirit brings life!

43. Sock it to'm in the Spirit, whatever you do! There's power in the Spirit! "Where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty!" (2Cor.3:17)

44. We've got nothing but God. Let's show them His Spirit, in the power & demonstration of the Spirit! That's all we've got! That's all that keeps us alive! Let's keep on burning, singing, preaching, praising & praying in the Spirit!

45. Whatever you do, for God's sake, do it in the Spirit--not in the flesh--for the flesh profiteth nothing!

46. Do it in the Spirit & it'll live in their hearts forever--by His Spirit!

47. You've got to put some gumption into it! You've got to put some real "umph" into it! Triumph is 10% "try" & 90% "umph"!

48. It's all in how you sing it, it's all in how you say it, it's all in what you put into it that counts!

49. Real inspiration comes with real feeling--really feeling a certain emotion, & both words & music will express it.

50. Please mean it with all your heart & soul & ask God to fill you with His Spirit & empower you to overflow until you absolutely explode!

51. You can't sell to others what you yourself are not sold on!

52. I believe in the one-take Revolution, just turn'm on & let'm go, & the Lord will take care of the inspiration!

53. The Spirit knows what they need, the Spirit knows what will touch their hearts--just let go & let God!

54. Open your mouth & He will fill it, if He's already filled your heart!

55. One who uses many periods is a philosopher; many question marks, a student; many exclamations, a World changer!

56. Mean it with all your heart & soul & ask God to fill you with His Spirit & empower you to overflow until you absolutely explode into your witnessing, litnessing, FFing, whatever it is, until you really explode by the powerful orgasm of the Spirit that'll sow those seeds where they can't get rid of them & they are bound to bring fruit whether they like it or not!

57. Call it what you like: Inspiration, charisma, enthusiasm, emotion, personality or the Spirit.--You've gotta have something that brings you to life, spurs you to action, moves you into motion!



58. Give us power in our witness & real anointing in our words so that we shall really excite them & thrill them & woo them & win them. Really pump it out of us & into them to bear lots of fruit, Lord, lots of real love babies, Thy children, true disciples.

(See also No. 32, 92, 328, 1002, 1091.)

59. 2CH.31:21 And in every work that he began in the service of the house of God, and in the law, and in the commandments, to seek his God, he did it with all his heart, and prospered.

60. ECC.9:10 Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might; for there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave, whither thou goest.

61. 2CO.8:11,12 Now therefore perform the doing of it; that as there was a readiness to will, so there may be a performance also out of that which ye have. For if there be first a willing mind, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not.

62. GAL.4:18 But it is good to be zealously affected always in a good thing, and not only when I am present with you.

#### 64. JEALOUSY --{page 534}--



*Jealousy is cruel as the grave: the coals thereof are coals of fire, which hath a most vehement flame (SoS 8:6).*

1. Jealousy is selfishness & pride, lack of humility, fear & lack of faith!
2. Jealousy is really a spirit of complaint & murmuring which is born of pride. You murmur because you feel you should be treated better.
3. Jealousy shoots at others & injures herself.
4. In jealousy there is more self-love than love.
5. Suspicion is far more apt to be wrong than right, oftener unjust than just. It is no friend to virtue, & always an enemy to happiness.
6. With people who are not willing to share what they have, it's a common practice for the Lord to often take it away completely, many times giving it to the one with whom they were not willing to share it!
7. Are you having problems in your part of the Father's Estate? Has the Evil Sorcerer sown the evil seeds of jealousy or contention in your Garden?--Are they growing into bitter nagging gnawing choking weeds of discontent, dissension, bitterness & strife?
8. Jealousy makes us smaller in the hearts of our friends, weaker in the eyes of our adversaries, & defenseless in the hands of our enemies.
9. With jealousy, if the Devil can just get you started worrying about or suspecting something, then everything that happens has a little meaning of its own which it was never intended to have or never did have, but the Devil plays it up & exaggerates it!
10. Blowing out the other fellow's candle won't make yours shine any brighter.
11. If love is the major virtue, then hatefulness & selfishness & jealousy must certainly be the major sins!
12. How foolish to throw away everything God gives you for envy & fear & pride!

13. "Thou shalt give unto him that asketh of thee & of him that would borrow of thee, turn not thou away."
14. How can you challenge God's right to supply others in their need when God has so mercifully supplied you in your need?
15. Jealousy turns to hatred of the one you're jealous of.
16. Twinges of jealousy are similar to twinges of selfishness. Let's face it, jealousy is selfishness!
17. Indeed beauty is thine like a rare & priceless jewel, but wouldst thou keep it for thyself alone to enjoy its beauty? The beauty is only radiant when thou dost share its radiance with others, & hold it aloft that it may shine & all may see, & not cover & keep it for thyself alone! But thou must have help to hold up thy arm that its radiance may shine before all. O Jesus! Wouldst that thou shalt reveal Thy love & Thy life which Thou wouldst lay down for many! For she that withholdeth, it tendeth to poverty, but she that scattereth abroad, it increaseth.
18. Beware lest thou hinderest the sure mercies that I have given unto David, & beware lest thou shouldst assay to bottle up the love springs of his forgiveness!
19. Yet shall these same strands of that web that he weaveth entrap thine own heart if thou wilt not share & if thou sharest not thy possessions, but like the spider devourest thine own mate that dost help to weave this web for thee.
20. This web that I weave in My wisdom shall catch many. Be not thou selfish therefore, for there is room for many in the web that I weave for them all.
21. Beware lest thou become thyself entangled with thine own love, so thou canst no longer weave & thou canst no longer run to fix each strand upon the heart of another in the places I have ordained for them, & thou become entrapped in thine own web that I have made to catch the hearts of many.
22. There have been those who have become selfish & proud & jealous. Demanding their exclusive rights, they have lost everything because they weren't willing to share.
23. You can become like a dog in the manger, where you don't want him, but you don't want anybody else to have him either--& you'll lose everything!
24. Foolish, selfish & jealous people!--Do you know what they're willing to do? They're willing to even kill the thing they pretend to love just to keep it away from others! They would rather see it die than have anybody else have it!
25. They'd rather kill it than share it!--That's the ultimate in selfishness!
26. The proud, selfish & jealous kill rather than share! They'd rather kill it than let anybody else have it--which shows they don't really love it! They really only love themselves! That's the ultimate in proud selfish jealousy!
27. In the long run, you won't kill your competition by jealousy, but you'll kill the one you say you love! You may kill his love for you, his faith in you, & even his faith in himself!
28. Selfishness is one of the primary symptoms of insanity! In fact, selfishness really is insanity. The insane seldom think of others, they're usually only thinking of themselves & don't care what happens to other people. Insanity is almost totally selfish & self-centered.
29. "Unto him that hath it shall be given, but unto him that hath not, it shall be taken away even that which he thinketh he hath."
30. "Withhold thou not lest it tend to thy poverty, but scatter thou abroad, & the love which he hath for thee shall increase."
31. "Give & it shall be given unto thee, pressed down, shaken together & running over! And out of the fullness that I have given thee, shalt thou give forth unto many & shalt not covet, neither shalt thou be afraid."
32. "Give & it shall be given unto thee, & spread abroad, & thou shalt gather & share, & thou shalt increase."
33. "For I am He that giveth & will not withhold. Even so be thou like unto Me, for I give without measure & I withhold not."
34. "Therefore share thou & give thou, bestow thou & cast thou abroad among many, & thou shalt increase, for unto him which hath it shall be given! Wherefore, from him which withholdeth, it shall be taken away even that which he thinketh he hath. The more that thou givest, the more it shall be given thee."
35. "Give unto her that is athirst that thou mayest keep that which thou hast! From thy riches thou dost give a little to her who is poor, & from thy abundance & affluence thou shalt share with her that is athirst."
36. When you're jealous you're so God-damned afraid that somebody is going to have a little more than you have, a little of your share. You're so afraid that somehow or another he or she is going to get more attached to somebody else & you won't get your share & you won't be able to hang on & possess. It's just a very selfish egotistical proud jealous desire for private property rights.

37. If God puts you together, what God has put together let not man put asunder. What God has put together, I don't see how any man can put asunder. If God has put you together, nothing is going to separate you. And when anything or anyone says to you, "Oh this is going to separate you, this is going to take her away from you, you're going to lose her, she loves somebody else more than you, she gives him more time than she does you, she enjoys making love to him more than she does you," all these are absolute lies of the Devil!

38. We need to get over the idea that we have absolute ownership, total selfish possession & we don't have to share, when on the other hand we're preaching & practicing sharing all the time up to a point.

39. "Thou shalt not be selfish, but thou shalt share, & he that scattereth abroad, it increaseth, but he that withholdeth it tendeth to poverty."

40. That which you give you have power over.

41. You better be thankful for what you have, even if it's only a little. Be thankful you have to share once in awhile. Be thankful you're able to have something to share once in awhile. As Mrs. Billy Graham said when they asked her, "How can you stand to be married to a man who is gone most of the time?" She said, "I'd rather have a little bit of Billy Graham than a whole lot of somebody else."

42. Marriage makes no difference whatsoever when it comes to sharing each other & with the Lord & His Work & others. Our whole life is sharing. The whole principle of our whole Family is that we share.

43. It's the worst idolatry of all when you worship a person. God will not stand for your making an idol out of your wife!--That's spiritual sin & wickedness & idolatry & adultery & spiritual whoredom, to love your wife more than God! Spiritual adultery is the worst thing in the World, which makes it physical adultery because you withhold her from her own Husband unlawfully, who is God. Adultery is any illegal or unlawful or unloving marriage relationship. But any relationship which is motivated purely by the Lord of God & others, against such there is no law & it couldn't possibly be adultery. The Law of Love is supreme above all laws--the Law of Jesus Christ. Who is Jesus? He's the Bridegroom. Who is your wife? She's Jesus' wife. Then why does He let you have her? Why does He let you have His wife? Because He loved you & had compassion on you, so He loaned you His wife, His Bride!

44. If you're going to be so damned self-righteous & holier-than-thou & hypocritical as to think you're holier than your wife because she has sinned against you, but oh no!, you've never sinned, therefore you're not going to forgive her, then you're the biggest sinner of all! Because self-righteousness is the greatest sin of all!--The only unpardonable sin!

(See also No. 227, 287, 290, 507, 511, 512, 514, 572, 575, 603, 727, 984, 1295, 1378, 1395.)

45. PRO.6:34,35 For jealousy is the rage of a man: therefore he will not spare in the day of vengeance. He will not regard any ransom; neither will he rest content, though thou givest many gifts.

46. PRO.14:30 A sound heart is the life of the flesh: but envy the rottenness of the bones.

47. PRO.27:4 Wrath is cruel, and anger is outrageous; but who is able to stand before envy?

48. SOS.8:6 Set me as a seal upon thine heart, as a seal upon thine arm: for love is strong as death; jealousy is cruel as the grave: the coals thereof are coals of fire, which hath a most vehement flame.

49. MAR.15:10 For he [Pilate] knew that the chief priests had delivered Him [Jesus] for envy.

50. GAL.5:26 Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another.

51. JAM.3:16 For where envying and strife is, there is confusion and every evil work.



*Jesus Christ the same yesterday, & today, & forever (Heb.13:8).*

1. Jesus is the ultimate of God's spiritual love!
2. Jesus never runs dry! He's a Fountain that flows forever!
3. Jesus is like a picture of God to show us what God is like!
4. God had to make a Man to show us what He was like--a Man of love, compassion, concern for the poor & the afflicted--humble, & yet a revolutionary that changed things which should be changed!
5. Jesus was a revolutionary, He was not a reformist!
6. Jesus is God, in a way, part of God, part of the Trinity or a part of the oneness of God, the same way we're one Family, where husband & wife are one but they're different personalities.
7. Jesus in a sense is the face of God, the manifestation of God. The only way we ever see God is in seeing Jesus.
8. Lift up Jesus, Who said, "If I be lifted up, I will draw all men unto Me!"
9. Jesus is our Message. If they don't want Jesus, they don't want us. They can't have us without Jesus.
10. Without the Way, there is no going;  
Without the Truth, there is no knowing;  
Without the Life, there is no living;  
Without the Christ, there is no giving.
11. God is pictured in His Son Christ Jesus, a Man Who loved everybody, even His enemies. He went about all His life trying to do good & help others, sometimes even the Scribes & Pharisees who finally crucified Him for His dangerous doctrine of Love!
12. Jesus is the Lover of all lovers, Who came for love & lived in love & died for love, that we might live & love forever!
13. God's like a great Iceberg,  
Deep beneath the sea,  
And Jesus is the Tip,  
The surface that we see.
14. It's almost presumptuous to talk to God: Jesus is my Mediator.
15. Rest of the weary, Joy of the sad,  
Hope of the dreary, Light of the glad;  
Home of the stranger, Strength to the end,  
Refuge from danger, Savior and Friend!
16. Jesus was, most of all, the Word of God!
17. Jesus will meet all your needs and solve all your problems! He's just that wonderful, and it's all just that simple!
18. You can talk to God all you want, but it doesn't really ring a bell until you say Jesus!
19. Help us to bring the lonely people the Love that alleviates their loneliness!
20. He's big enough to rule the mighty Universe, yet small enough to live within my heart.
21. Jesus is our Defense Attorney before God, our Judge, defending us from all the fiery darts of the Evil one, that prosecuting attorney, the Accuser of the Saints, Satan himself.
22. We've picked a winner & we can't lose!--Christ Jesus!

23. Jesus was human. He got tired, He got hungry, He got sleepy, He got weary, all the things that happen to you & me. He was subject to all these things even as we are, yet without sin. He was tempted in all points such as we, yet without sin.--That He might be a good High Priest, have compassion on you, know how you feel, know when you're footsore & weary, understand when you've had enough.

24. Jesus was not only the Living Word, the Sermon, but He was also the Living Work, the Sample.

25. Like the Clown in "The Parable", Jesus, the very Son of God, the King of Heaven, ridiculous in human flesh & in the make-up of human society & custom, the Son of God in human flesh, more ridiculous than that good man in the clown suit, came down from the Halls of Heaven to join the circus of the World in order that He could go around & cheer people up & bring them everlasting peace & happiness.

26. Jesus Himself temporarily renounced the rights of His Citizenship in Heaven & became a Citizen of this World, & though He was rich, for our sakes He became poor that we through His poverty might become rich. He not only adapted Himself to our bodily form but also conformed to the human ways of life, custom, language, dress & living that He might understand & love us better & communicate with us on the lowly level of our own human understanding in order that He reach us with His Love, prove to us His compassion & concern & help us understand His message in simple childlike terms that we could understand.

27. Jesus made Himself of no reputation: He was a companion of drunks & harlots & publicans & sinners & was called a liar & a blasphemer & a glutton & a winebibber & demon-possessed!

28. To hell with the empty wind & lies of the Devil! He cannot win! He's already beaten by Christ on the Cross, risen from the tomb! Jesus is the victor over all!--Death & Hell & the grave & all the empty-windy lies of the Evil one!

29. Jesus had to get dirty so that you could be clean.

30. The only hope is Jesus & the only way out is up!

31. Turn your eyes upon Jesus

Look full in His wonderful face

And the things of Earth shall grow strangely dim

In the light of His glory & grace!

32. I know a Name That can still the raging tempest

I know a Name, That can calm the troubled sea.

I know a Name, That can drive away all sorrow.

I know a Name, That is greater than them all!

I know a Name from which comfort I may borrow

When others fail & the tears of anguish fall!

#### CHORUS:

I Know a Name, a wonderful Name!

That wonderful Name is JESUS!

(See also No.6, 20, 29, 35, 71, 113, 126, 306, 307, 317B, 345, 397, 527, 560, 564, 566, 583, 584, 590, 592, 594, 595, 605, 631, 633, 638, 641, 647, 648, 686, 699, 708, 714, 735, 772, 781, 882, 1120, 1305, 1328, 1348, 1360, 1371, 1390, 1509, 1515.)

33. ISA.9:6 For unto us a Child is born, unto us a Son is given: and the government shall be upon His shoulder: and His Name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.

34. ISA.11:1-5 And there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots: And the Spirit of the Lord shall rest upon Him, The spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the Lord; And shall make Him of quick understanding in the fear of the Lord: and He shall not judge after the sight of His eyes, neither reprove after the hearing of His ears: But with righteousness shall He judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the Earth: and He shall smite the Earth with the rod of His mouth, and with the breath of His lips shall He slay the wicked. And righteousness shall be the girdle of His loins, and faithfulness the girdle of His reins.

35. ISA.53:2-4 For he shall grow out before Him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: He hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see Him, there is no beauty that we should desire Him. He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him: He was despised, and we esteemed Him not. Surely He hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem Him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted.

36. MAT.28:18 And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto Me in Heaven and in Earth.

37. LUK.19:10 For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.

38. JOH.1:1-14 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by Him; and without Him was not any thing made that was made. In Him was life; and the life was the light of men. And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not. There was a man sent from God, whose name was John. The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all men through Him might believe. He was not that Light, but was sent to bear witness of the Light. That was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the World. He was in the World, and the World was made by Him, and the World knew Him not. He came unto His own, and His own received Him not. But as many as received Him, to them gave He power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on His Name: Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God, And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father), full of grace and truth.

39. JOH.1:29 Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the World.

40. JOH.5:20a The Father...sheweth Him all things.

41. JOH.6:35 And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to Me shall never hunger; and he that beliveth on Me shall never thirst.

42. JOH.8:12 Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the World: he that followeth Me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.

43. JOH.10:9 I am the door: by Me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture.

44. JOH.10:11 I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth His life for the sheep.

45. JOH.13:3a The Father had given all things into His hands.

46. HEB.2:17,18 Wherefore in all things it behooved Him to be made like unto His brethren, that He might be a merciful and faithful high priest in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people. For in that He Himself hath suffered being tempted, He is able to succour them that are tempted.

47. HEB.4:14,15 Seeing then that we have a great high priest, that is passed into the Heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession. For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin.

48. 1JOH.3:5 And ye know that He was manifested to take away our sins; and in Him is no sin.

(See also ISA.53; 54.)



...

2. The Jews are either the best or the worst, there's no in-between. They're all-out for whatever they're out for, whether it's money, sex or Jesus!

...

11. You can only be a true Jew by believing in Jesus, the Jewish Messiah, the Messiah of all--Jews & Gentiles!

...

39. The Israelis have done to the Palestinians exactly what they complained about Hitler doing to them!

...

47. Thank You Jesus for our Jewish Messiah, Jesus Christ. ...

...

55. There's nothing worse than a Godless Jew, & there's nothing better than a Godly one!

...

57. The epitome of the Jewish religion is self-salvation & always has been, Israel leaning on its own arm of flesh instead of trusting God.

...

64. Israel's right?--No!--Never!--Not in the least!--Negative! She's so deep in debt to God she'll never get out! She has no rights, God owes her nothing but trouble & judgement & Hell on Earth like she's given everybody else!

65. The only thing the [Israelis] understand is force!

...

79. The first Jew was Judah, because that's where the term Jew came from!

...

90. They're going to have to come the same way we did--through Jesus! No other Name! ...

91. "He is not a Jew which is one outwardly, but he is a Jew which is one inwardly, that circumcision which is of the heart!" (Ro.2:28,29)

...

95. "I will oppose them who would stone Me, & have heard of Me but have rejected Me, & hate Me, despise & curse Me, & wish not to know Me! But they honour the god of forces! They honour a god their fathers knew not! They glory in the power of their own might which shall fail them!"

...

97. We Jews have the brains, the drive, the fanatical religious fervour & the charismatic genius of inspiration that it takes to make anything a success, including a religion!

...

99. Israel is an integral part of Jewish America for which she will fight to the very death!

...

102. All through the Bible ... [w]hen they were good, they were very very good, but when they were bad, they were horrid!

...

105. The Jews were the first & greatest friends of Jesus Christ, but they were also the first & greatest enemies!
- ...
110. Virtually every book in the Bible was written by Jews! ...
- ...
112. The Jews have become the Nazis of Israel & are doing the same thing to the Palestinians that the Nazis did to them!
- ...
116. For the Jews who reject Jesus & do not believe in His blood, the Mosaic Law still holds, & He said without the shedding of blood there is no remission of sin.
- ...
119. The Israelis are as much prisoners of their country as any of those damned dissidents in Russia!
- ...
122. As far as God is concerned, they've had their chance! They cannot come any way but through Jesus. There is nothing special about them now. ...
- ...
131. All of us Jews have big mouths & we speak what we think!--Especially if we think we're right, & people listen!
- ...
142. The Jews are trying to erase the memory of Christ & His disciples & the events of the New Testament completely from everything in Israel, including road signs, town names, places, everything!
- ...
147. Led by Israel, the wasteful West will not only try to keep its foothold in the Mideast, but also try to gain even more room for its cruel boots as it tries to trample the rights of others in Israel's bid to lead the World to War & remain its rulers!
- ...
159. When we Jews are good, we're very very good!--With Jesus!
- ...
165. The wheels of God's Omnipotence turn on infinitesimally small pivots, such as Israel!
166. What happens in Israel affects World history!
167. Every great World Empire had to rule Israel or they had not really conquered the World!
168. Look how one little ... country can cause so much trouble & keep the World on the verge of War all the time! Israel is the focal point, the great problem & its greatest danger & nearly everybody knows it!
- ...
180. The Jews [are] hard to sell, [but] when sold they are the best, the most zealous & influential & terrific witnesses & soul-winners!--Like us!
- ...

**[Bible verses:]**

181. LEV.26:36 And upon them that are left alive of you I will send a faintness into their hearts in the lands of their enemies; and the sound of a shaken leaf shall chase them; and they shall flee, as fleeing from a sword; and they shall fall when none pursueth.

182. DEU.4:27 And the Lord shall scatter you among the nations, and ye shall be left few in number among the heathen, whither the Lord shall lead you.

183. DEU.9:6,7 Understand therefore, that the Lord thy God giveth thee not this good land to possess it for thy righteousness; for thou art a stiffnecked people. Remember, and forget not, how thou provokedst the Lord thy God to wrath in the wilderness: from the day that thou didst depart out of the land of Egypt, until ye came unto this place, ye have been rebellious against the Lord.

184. DEU.28:37 And thou shalt become an astonishment, a proverb, and a byword, among all nations whither the Lord shall lead thee.

185. 1KI.9:7 Then will I cut off Israel out of the land which I have given them; and this house, which I have hallowed for My Name, will I cast out of my sight; and Israel shall be a proverb and a byword among all people.

186. 2CH.7:20-22 Then will I pluck them up by the roots out of My land which I have given them; and this house, which I have sanctified for My Name, will I cast out of my sight, and will make it to be a proverb and a



byword among all nations. And this house, which is high, shall be an astonishment to every one that passeth by it; so that he shall say, Why hath the Lord done thus unto this land, and unto this house? And it shall be answered, Because they forsook the Lord God of their fathers, which brought them forth out of the land of Egypt, and laid hold on other gods, and worshipped them, and served them: therefore hath he brought all this evil upon them.

187. ISA.26:10 Let favour be shewed to the wicked, yet will he not learn righteousness: in the land of uprightness will he deal unjustly, and will not behold the majesty of the Lord.

188. ISA.65:2 I have spread out My hands all the day unto a rebellious people, which walketh in a way that was not good, after their own thoughts.

189. JER.8:5 Why then is this people of Jerusalem slidden back by a perpetual backsliding? They hold fast deceit, they refuse to return.

190. JER.16:18 And first I will recompense their iniquity and their sin double; because they have defiled My land, they have filled Mine inheritance with the carcasses of their detestable and abominable things.

191. JER.18:15-17 Because my people hath forgotten Me, they have burned incense to vanity, and they have caused them to stumble in their ways from the ancient paths, to walk in paths, in a way not cast up; To make their land desolate, and a perpetual hissing; every one that passeth thereby shall be astonished, and wag his head. I will scatter them as with an east wind before the enemy; I will shew them the back, and not the face, in the day of their calamity.

192. JER.24:9 And I will deliver them to be removed into all the kingdoms of the Earth for their hurt, to be a reproach and a proverb, a taunt and a curse, in all places whither I shall drive them.

193. JER.32:31 For this city hath been to Me as a provocation of Mine anger and of My fury from the day that they built it even unto this day; that I should remove it from before My face.

194. JER.44:8 In that ye provoke me unto wrath with the works of your hands, burning incense unto other gods in the land of Egypt, whither ye be gone to dwell, that ye might cut yourselves off, and that ye might be a curse and a reproach among all the nations of the earth?

195. EZE.5:6 And she hath changed My judgments into wickedness more than the nations, and My statutes more than the countries that are round about her: for they have refused my judgments and My statutes, they have not walked in them.

196. EZE.5:14 Moreover I will make thee waste, and a reproach among the nations that are round about thee, in the sight of all that pass by.

197. EZE.22:4 Thou art become guilty in thy blood that thou hast shed; and hast defiled thyself in thine idols which thou hast made; and thou hast caused thy days to draw near, and art come even unto thy years: therefore have I made thee a reproach unto the heathen, and a mocking to all countries.

198. HOS.14:1 O Israel, return unto the Lord thy God; for thou hast fallen by thine iniquity.

199. MAL.3:7 Even from the days of your fathers ye are gone away from mine ordinances, and have not kept them. Return unto Me, and I will return unto you, saith the Lord of hosts. But ye said, Wherein shall we return?

200. MAT.8:11,12 And I say unto you, That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven. But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

201. MAT.23:31-35 Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets. Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers. Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell? Wherefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes: and some of them ye shall kill and crucify; and some of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute them from city to city: That upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel unto the blood of Zacharias son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar.

202. MAT.23:37 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not!

203. MAT.27:22,24,25 Pilate saith unto them [the Jewish religious leaders], What shall I do then with Jesus which is called Christ? They all say unto him, Let him be crucified. When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this just person: see ye to it. Then answered all the people, and said, His blood be on us, and on our children.

204. JOH.8:39-44 They answered and said unto Him, Abraham is our father. Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham. But now ye seek to kill Me, a Man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham. Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to Him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, even God. Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye

would love Me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of Myself, but he sent Me. Why do ye not understand My speech? Even because ye cannot hear My Word. Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.

205. JOH.8:47 He that is of God heareth God's Words: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God.

206. ACT.7:51,52 Ye stiffnecked and uncircumcised in heart and ears, ye do always resist the Holy Ghost: as your fathers did, so do ye. Which of the prophets have not your fathers persecuted? and they have slain them which shewed before of the coming of the Just One; of whom ye have been now the betrayers and murderers.

207. ROM.2:28,29 For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.

208. ROM.9:6-8 Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel: Neither, because they are the seed of Abraham, are they all children: but, In Isaac shall thy seed be called. That is, They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the seed.

209. ROM.10:21 But to Israel he saith, All day long I have stretched forth My hands unto a disobedient and gainsaying people.

210. 1CO.15:50 Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the Kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.

211. GAL.3:29 And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.

212. 1TH.2:14b,15,16 Jews: Who both killed the Lord Jesus, and their own prophets, and have persecuted us; and they please not God, and are contrary to all men: Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they might be saved, to fill up their sins alway: for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost.

213. 2TH.2:10b-12 Because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

214. REV.2:9 I know thy works, and tribulation, and poverty, (but thou art rich) and I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan.

215. REV.3:9 Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee.

(See also DEU.28:14-68; ISA.1:4-7,21,22.)



*It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God (Heb.10:31).*

1. God judges the whole World according to how they treat His children.
2. Who are we, as weak mortals, to question the judgements of an almighty God?
3. This is God's usual pattern: Revival, Reaping, Persecution, Escape, & Judgement!
4. Earthquakes express God's displeasure! The Lord lets the Devil loose to shake people up to get them praying & seeking Him!
5. When God gets to the point that He laughs at His enemies, they're pretty close to the end--their end--& those who have opposed God's children & work have always come to their end.
6. God calls the wicked His sword to afflict His Own people for their sins.
7. Whenever throughout history His people stopped listening & stopped preaching, God stopped talking & leading!
8. God does not like to talk to either deaf, unbelieving, or unheeding ears. So He just shuts up.
9. God's wheels of judgement grind exceeding slow, but they grind exceeding fine.
10. "Damned" doesn't necessarily mean you're going to Hell, it means you're going to be judged!-- Punished!
11. God often delayed His judgements which He had predicted by the prophets until it looked like it wasn't going to happen & the prophet was made to look like a fool, so that the sheep would be divided from the goats, the believers from the scoffers.
12. The Lord can't really finish His job on the wicked until we've finished ours on the righteous!
13. We've been praying, "Stop, the World, we want to get off!" The Lord says, "Get off!--& I'll stop it!"
14. I believe in the justice of God as well as His love & mercy, & I don't think He lets anybody suffer more than they're able to bear or deserve.
15. God always judges His Own children more severely than He does the stupid idiotic dumb ignorant World, because His Own are the most enlightened, have had the most truth & the most Gospel & they are held the most responsible.
16. Lord, in a way You're really kind of waiting on us! So help us to do the job & get it done as soon as possible so You can wind things up.
17. Eight things there be a comet brings  
When on high it doth horrid range:  
Wind, famine, plague & death to kings,  
War, earthquake, floods & direful change!
18. There is only one solution: The judgements of God upon the superpowers who are defiling, wasting, polluting & destroying the earth!
19. God moves kind of slowly, but He moves very thoroughly.
20. Watch out when God runs out of Words: He's about to swing a big stick!
21. The only time God ever really moves fast is in judgement! He gets fed up & then He cracks down & boom, He usually makes it fast & sudden!
22. I believe Russia & Communism are God's judgements on a wicked World!
23. God will judge you by your words! They are your message, your communication, the expression of your thoughts & conviction & will either save you or damn you, one or the other! (Mat.12:36,37)

24. There must be something wrong with the country that's not getting rain. That's a sign of the withdrawal of the blessing of God.--His judgements on the people.

25. God's judgements & justice are always totally righteous & absolutely justified & are given with the utmost perfection & always even tempered with mercy.

26. God is not only a God of love & mercy, kindness & patience & salvation, He's also a consuming fire! He's also a God of justice & destruction & doom for the wicked who do not repent.

27. He who laughs last, laughs best, & God will laugh last, when He heaps His Own judgements on this unrighteous, scornful & Christ-hating generation for their rejection of us & our message.

28. The Lord is shaking up the World through us now spiritually, & some day He is also going to do it literally!

29. God always punishes His Own children first, then He turns around & slaughters their enemies! He sends their enemies in on them to punish them, & then He turns around & punishes the enemies after His kids have had enough.

30. God can't give people the judgement they deserve until He gives them the warning they deserve, & you have the warning. If you don't give the warning, you're holding up history, because God has to postpone the judgement.

31. I don't believe in these theories of "natural disasters," that they're just caused by scientific means. They happen too often in just the right places at the right times to the right people. If thousands of people die, they must have been ripe for judgement or salvation somehow.

32. God usually deals more strictly with His Own children than He does with the World & the Godless, He deals more stringently with those that know better.

33. God deals more with the good people & the best people, the truly good people. He deals with them more strictly & chastises them more as His children than He does with the totally Godless anti-God wicked. They're not His sons, He doesn't even care for them. He doesn't have to destroy them, they destroy themselves.

34. When God allows some terrible disaster, He is either punishing the wicked or He's releasing & relieving the righteous out of this evil life, or both: To some as a punishment, to some as a reward, & it's a reward whether it's good or evil.

35. There comes a time when even good has to use force & violence against evil, & this is certainly clear throughout the Bible, because force & violence is almost the only thing that evil understands.

36. If worse comes to worst & there is no other way to stop your parents but for you to turn around & ask God to curse them so they'll stop bothering you, you'll have to do it.

37. Some of us must survive to be final witnesses to the wicked World in the days of some of its last judgements in the hopes that we may turn many to righteousness as they are stripped of their false security & the deceitfulness of riches & have nowhere to hide but in God! To these we shall be ministers of salvation, but to others we shall be ministers of damnation, only able to remind them why they are being judged & that we told them so & warned them of it long ago.

(See also No.120, 160, 162, 188, 269, 278, 280, 283, 295, 577, 610, 612, 613, 798, 801, 955, 959, 1191, 1192, 1193, 1194, 1195.)

38. 1SA.26:9b For who can stretch forth his hand against the Lord's anointed, and be guiltless?

39. PSA.7:11 God judgeth the righteous, and God is angry with the wicked every day.

40. JER.51:20,21 Thou art my battle axe and weapons of war: for with thee will I break in pieces the nations, and with thee will I destroy kingdoms; And with thee will I break in pieces the horse and his rider; and with thee will I break in pieces the chariot and his rider.

41. MAT.10:34 Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword.

42. JOH.3:18 He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.

43. JOH.12:47 And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the World.

44. ACT.17:31 Because he hath appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness by that man whom he hath ordained; whereof he hath given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.

45. 1CO.5:5 To deliver such an one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.

46. HEB.9:27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment.

47. HEB.10:31 It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.  
48. REV.20:12 And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.

(See also DEU.21:18-21; DEU.28:14-68; ISA.1:5-7.)

## **68. KINDNESS & COURTESY** --{page 570}--



*Be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted (Eph.4:32).*

1. It's not the things that can be bought  
That are life's richest treasure.  
It's just the little gifts of heart  
That money cannot measure.
2. The kindly word that's sown today may bear its fruit tomorrow.
3. Only the best behaviour is good enough for daily use in the home.
4. There's a time to wink as well as to see.
5. One way to learn manners is from those who have none.
6. What is readily yielded to courtesy is seldom yielded to force.
7. Little deeds of kindness, little words of love  
Help to make Earth happy, like the Heaven above.
8. Art thou lonely, O my brother?  
Share thy little with another!  
Stretch a hand to one unfriended,  
And thy loneliness is ended.
9. Avoid witticisms at the expense of others.
10. Good manners are made up of petty sacrifices.
11. He who sows courtesy, reaps friendship, & he who plants kindness, gathers love.
12. One of the most difficult things to give away is kindness, for it is usually returned.
13. Kindness is a language the dumb can speak & the deaf understand.
14. Kindness is never wasted. If it has no effect on the recipient, at least it benefits the bestower.
15. The only ones you should try to get even with are the ones who have helped you.
16. Treat your friends with care, as if you know that he will one day become your enemy.
17. Even power itself hath not one-half the might of Gentleness.
18. Wherever there is a human being, there is an opportunity for a kindness.
19. Do all the good you can. By all the means you can. In all the ways you can. In all the places you can. At all the times you can. To all the people you can. As long as ever you can.

20. Did you waste the day, or lose it?  
Was it well or poorly spent?  
Did you leave a trail of kindness  
Or a scar of discontent?
21. The true spirit of conversation consists in building on another man's observation, not overturning it.
22. If you don't believe in carefully choosing your words, think of the difference between, "You look like the breath of spring" & "You look like the end of a hard winter".
23. I went to find a friend.  
But couldn't find one anywhere.  
I went to be a friend,  
And friends were everywhere!
24. Courtesy costs nothing, yet it buys things that are priceless.
25. What is compassion?--It is loving to the point of really helping. To be compassionate means to really care & be truly concerned, not just say "I love you" & then walk off & forget it.

(See also No. 50A, 962, 974, 997, 1549.

**69. KINGS & SUPPORTERS** --{page 572}--



*If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we shall reap your carnal things?  
(1Cor.9:11).*

1. God's children & prophets have always needed powerful friends.
2. Let them minister to us of their carnal things, as we minister to them spiritually!
3. Our friends do need some explanation & a little encouragement to clear up some mistaken ideas!
4. You must be strong enough & diplomatic enough to stand up to kings when necessary.
5. Kings are nearly always more interested in preserving the tree & all the branches, than the unseen Sap!
6. We need friends in the System too!--Not all can be soldiers in the Army!
7. With all kings, it's not a matter of how far we can go with them--it's how far are they willing to go with us.
8. All kings eventually think, "Dump the prophet & keep the power & the people!" But God will not tolerate it!
9. Kings think they can have it all & not share it with God, so they wind up with nothing!
10. You must warn the king fairly & in advance that either he does it God's way with His leadership, or "We will not follow you!"
11. It's only fair to warn your kings!--That if they don't honour God's leadership & quit trying to compromise or suppress His message, they're going to lose everything!
12. A friend lost is usually an enemy gained!
13. No Home we establish is going to succeed without friends.
14. Kings love efficiency, they love success, they love to see you save their money, & they don't like waste. They like you to be good stewards of the kingdom.

15. Nothing encourages your donors to give, more than to see how meticulous you are!--To see what excellent care you take of things!
16. Kings always want to be prophets!
17. The prophets' biggest problems were their kings & queens.
18. No revolution has ever been able to get along without outside friends!
19. If they minister to you materially, you owe them a spiritual ministry of encouragement, inspiration, & fellowship.
20. Don't let yourself get into too great a bondage or obligation to anyone so much that you're not free to work as the Lord leads.
21. We must not neglect our friends & kings & queens! We must minister to them! They need our help spiritually. We need their help materially. We are in a bondage of obligation to each other.
22. With kings, when you lose a friend, you gain an enemy.
23. "There leave your blessing"--it's something that stays with people who receive you. (Mt.10:13)
24. Every prophet & man of God had to have their patrons, protectors & providers in order that they might accomplish God's work.
25. It's not easy to minister to kings! But if you want to be faithful to God, the King of kings, you must! Kings have a King over them, & He's your God, & they are His kings! If you want to be benefited & be faithful to God, you're going to have to be faithful to God's kings, & if you're not, you'll be sorry!
26. Kings live in the material realm & minister in the material kingdom, so they like the material rewards, & God gives it to them to share it with you!--So you must praise them for it! It's what every kind lives for, glory & honour!
27. Kings & queens that you only see when you need them, are not going to be your kings & queens very long. The thing that will please them is when they see you're not only interested in their kingdom or their money--but in them!
28. If you are good stewards of the king himself, his needs, his problems, etc., tomorrow you may be good stewards of his kingdom!
29. One of our biggest failings seems to be consideration for other people, especially our kings.
30. Kings love financial efficiency.
31. Kings love good leaders!
32. The very fact that they're willing to be connected with you is protection & support.
33. Somehow let kings know they are part & parcel of your work.
34. Unless you really minister to these kings, you're going to lose them.
35. The reason our kings are rich is because they hang onto it & value it.
36. You must have good communication with kings. Without communication the whole thing can go dead!
37. You have to live with some of these kings to bring them through.
38. We still don't have our literal kingdom yet, we haven't arrived at the Promised Land yet, & we are still dependent upon our kings & we need them! You'll probably always have to deal with kings.--So you might as well get used to it!
39. Kings are conscious of every little thing--that's how they got started & they never get over it. Nothing escapes the king.
40. Kings have their pets, the ones they love, & you can't shove the job on someone else or you'll hurt the king.
41. You have to first spend time with your King of kings, then your King, & then with your kings.
42. Religious kings are the hardest to get along with.
43. These helpers of ours are not neutral. They are pro-Family even if they don't join us.
44. Kings are sometimes our most neglected helpers.
45. It's more difficult for the rich & rulers to forsake all than anyone else, because they have the most to forsake.
46. Our kings are our biggest babies & require constant nursing.
47. If you're leaving the rich North to go to the poor South, raise your support at home first before you go.
48. The rich at home ought to support you. They owe it to you & the Lord & the unevangelised poor of the World.
49. Get your home folks to give to Missions like they ought to, & don't expect the poor peons of the World's undernourished millions to foot your bills!
50. If you can't be on the field, you can at least help the field.
51. If the field is too rough for you, then stay home & support the ones who can take it!

52. If you can't be servicing the Lord full-time, at least you can be giving fulltime!
53. In the door-to-door ministry you can continue to minister to a variety of people & have a following better able to support you.
54. Sock it to the home folks & say, "You send me the money & support me!--That's the least you can do!"
55. People will give much more freely & willingly & are much more inspired to give to personalities than organisations. Keep those prayer letters goin'! It's your lifeline!
56. Those who actually visit the field & have seen the people & the need, how hard it is & how the missionaries really live sacrificially, they make the best givers.
57. If you're going to stay free & in fulltime service for the Lord, somebody's got to support you. You've got to be able to ask for it & not be ashamed to ask for it. You've got the worthiest cause in the World!
58. I'd rather have 10,000 little widows sending me a dollar a month, than one big rich man giving me \$10,000 a month, because then I have 10,000 little widows praying for me instead of one big rich man telling me what to do with his money!
59. Anybody that's investing in your business wants to see some results & some dividends, some profit: "What am I getting out of this?"--They want to see some souls saved, some lives changed. They want to see the pictures. They want to hear about what you're doing & you've got to tell them, because if you don't tell people, they're not going to know, & if they don't know, how are they going to support you?
60. People are just like kids when it comes to giving donations. Unless you keep telling them & telling them & telling them you need it, it doesn't sink in!
61. God is with our advocates. He makes them ten feet tall! They are become as the mighty men of David! They cannot lose!
62. When you are accepting a lot of help from others, you are making yourself obligated to them & you're no longer totally free. They receiver is servant to the giver, & the Scripture says, "The borrower is servant to the lender." (Pr.22:7)
63. One of the first things you need to learn if you're going to stay free & in full-time service to the Lord is that somebody's got to support you.
64. I would rather they wouldn't give us anything than to be obligated & bound to compromise for advantage.
65. The kings must not be allowed to overrule the prophets. Don't counsel with kings on spiritual issues. Just inform them.
66. Prophets must learn to work with & appreciate the kings, but not be run by them.
67. The spirit must dominate the flesh always. Don't ever let the physical overrule the spiritual.
68. Don't be so dogmatic about everybody forsaking all. God's got to let a few Systemites stick with it, so they can give their pants to clothe us & their bottom dollar to feed us, or their power & influence to protect us!
69. Although working with kings can create many problems for both you & the king, it can also solve many more.
70. God's children & prophets have always needed powerful friends, kings, protectors & patrons or they could seldom have survived in the face of the bitter opposition aroused by their message of God. God knows we need all the help we can get!
71. The rich are the most neglected class of people there are spiritually.
72. If you are a poor little Home that's starving to death, there's something wrong! God usually supplies His children abundantly! Most of all you probably didn't honour & cultivate your kings & queens & minister to them spiritually, share your spiritual riches with your system friends, so they could in turn share their material riches with you.
73. The poorest people in the World spiritually are the rich materially.
74. The rich materially are the hardest to reach because of our pride. We're ashamed to go to the rich for fear somebody will accuse us of wanting their money!--Why shouldn't we want their money for God's work?
75. The places where we are making the most progress are where we have reached the leaders & the rich first.
76. We should not always be expecting kings to forsake all their riches & their power, because if they did they wouldn't be able to help us any more!
77. We need to honour kings for what they are & where they are, as long as they share their riches with those of us that need them!
78. How are we going to help the poor unless we start with the rich & the powerful who can make it possible?
79. Keeping appointments with System kings is very important!



80. You should have some outstanding king in every area to help you get going: For provision, for good PR with the system, for protection & for defense. The very fact they're willing to be connected with you is protection & support!

81. Kings can become your worst enemies, so handle them prayerfully.

82. You've got to sell your work to the public, share your needs with friends. Tell them, "If God's called you to make money, why aren't you giving it to His work?"

83. Some of the most successful armies in the World have starved to death because they neglected their line of supply!

84. You should have regular meetings & projects for your kings & friends. There should be things they can do for you better than you can do for yourselves. It's easier for them to ask for help for you than for you to ask for help for yourself.

85. Some of the most pitiful people of history were the kings & queens who were the worst prisoners of all, released only by death! There's always a sword hanging over their head.

86. If we would help free our kings from their enemies, they would help free us from ours.

87. How many kingdoms could we be running now if we had taken care of the kings & their money & their equipment & houses they've given us!

88. If you don't use the one little talent your kings give you & invest it properly, they will take it away & give you no more!

89. Nothing escapes the king. They notice how you're dressed, the papers lying in the yard, & the junkers behind the garage!

90. You must do anything you have to do to win them: Bathe their feet or wash their clothes or cook their meals, or stand in for an employee that's sick, or answer the phone, to show them you're concerned about them & not just their kingdom.

91. If you would seek more after the will of your King of kings & the Words of your own King, God would give you more understanding & the love you need for your material kings also.

92. They've usually lived longer & usually know more about a lot of things than you do, & you might profit by their knowledge if you'd listen, even if they're not always right!

93. They may not always be right, but they're still your kings & queens.

94. Kings are seldom satisfied with being kings!--They want to be the voice of God as well.

95. Kings try their best to tell you what to do spiritually as well & that's where you, the prophet, have to draw the line!

96. Gently & tactfully decline when the king tries to tell you how to run the spiritual kingdom.--But try not to offend him.

97. This is a frequent problem with kings who want to be recognised as one of us & yet have not really fully become one of us the hard way as you have. As soon as you give them the slightest bit of recognition or authority to keep them happy, they try to start running the whole show, & then you have to put them down & risk losing them.

98. You need to ask God for wisdom to know how to handle these queens & kings in a diplomatic fashion which will retain their friendship & not lose their help, but still not give them the idea they can take over & run everything.

99. King Saul was God's classic dandy-bad example of a king who refused to obey God's prophet.

100. The rich young ruler is a classic example of a king who wouldn't pay the price of full discipleship.

101. When kings begin to be reluctant to follow the teaching, they'll soon renege on following the teacher as well.

102. Kings think they can have it all & not share it with God, so they wind up with nothing! But the prophet's mistake is not to give the kings fair warning of this.

103. Either kings have got to accept you & your message or reject both!--Including your leadership! They can't have their cake & eat it too!--They've got to share it!

104. Teach them how to live by teaching them how to give.

105. It's only because we minister to them of our spiritual riches that we can expect to receive of their material riches.

106. Most of these kings & queens are living behind the Green Door & are literally love-starved!

107. The less you have to ask for, the less you're obligated to do it their way, & the more freedom you'll have to do as God leads!

108. When you voluntarily withdraw & close up a public ministry, your supporters wonder why, when you were going great guns & they were giving you so much help & support, that you suddenly dropped everything &

retreated for no apparent reason. If they've already heard some of the criticism & scandalous reports, it's apt to make them think maybe they're true because you're on the run.

109. If they thought you were worth supporting, they'd be supporting you! If you'd keep in touch with them & let'm know what you're doing, they'd support you. If you'd write'm faithful prayer letters & thank-you's they'd support you. If you'd get out there & work right in your field & minister, even the poor would support you! And if all else fails & everybody else fails, if you're obeying God & preaching the Gospel & winning souls & disciples & doing His will, God will support you no matter what!

110. Every country has its rich! Every country has its big business moguls & governing kings & queens & princes & princesses who have lots of money & who would be happy to support you if you'd win'm to the Lord & win their love & their friendship & their interest to encourage them to support you.

111. There are plenty of rich people in every country who could help & support you if you would ask God to help you find them & get ahold of them in some way that they would be willing to help you.

(See also Nos. U, 27, 37, 61, 67, 193, 199, 211, 212, 217, 218, 311C, 312A, 333A, 571, 673, 783, 860, 922, 936, 1549.)

112. GEN.39:21 But the Lord was with Joseph, and shewed him mercy, and gave him favour in the sight of the keeper of the prison.

113. PRO.16:14,15 The wrath of a king is as messengers of death: but a wise man will pacify it. In the light of the king's countenance is life; and his favour is as a cloud of the latter rain.

114. PRO.21:1 The king's heart is in the hand of the Lord, as the rivers of water: He turneth it whithersoever He will.

115. ECC.8:2-4 I counsel thee to keep the king's commandment, and that in regard of the oath of God. Be not hasty to go out of his sight: stand not in an evil thing; for he doeth whatsoever pleaseth him. Where the word of a king is, there is power, and who may say unto him, What doest thou?

116. ISA.44:28 That saith of Cyrus, He is my shepherd, and shall perform all my pleasure: even saying to Jerusalem, Thou shalt be built; and to the temple, Thy foundation shall be laid.

117. ISA.45:5,6,13 I am the Lord, and there is none else, there is no God beside me: I girded thee, though thou hast not known me: That they may know from the rising of the sun, and from the west, that there is none beside Me. I am the Lord, and there is none else. I have raised him up in righteousness, and I will direct all his ways: he shall build my city, and he shall let go my captives, not for price nor reward, saith the Lord of hosts.

118. JOH.12:42 Nevertheless among the chief rulers also many believed on Him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess Him, lest they should be put out of the synagogue.

119. 1TI.6:17,18 Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not highminded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy. That they do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, willing to communicate.



*Love is the fulfilling of the law (Rom.13:10).*

[HomeARC Note (03/04): *The Charter*, the policy statements, “God’s Law of Love” (01/04) and “Beliefs and Conduct Regarding Relationships and Sexuality” (01/04), and subsequent GNs state the Family’s policies and guidelines regarding sex and living the Law of Love.]

1. Jesus said you only need two laws now: Love God & love others!--God's only law is Love! (Mat.22:37-39)
2. Everything must be judged from the standpoint of love.
3. The Lord often gives room for exceptional cases & makes exceptions to His Own rules, in love & mercy & forgiveness.
4. The law is the standard, but there are always exceptions to the rules, particularly if God's the One Who makes the exceptions!
5. Love is more than righteousness, & mercy is greater than justice!
6. We believe in doing more than keeping the 10 Commandments: Jesus' Law of Love is much stricter & much more difficult!
7. When people are not willing to receive the revelations grace gives, the freedom that grace gives & the new wine that grace gives, they always turn back to their legalism & the law to prove their points, that it is not according to the law, the Bible, not according to Moses, or according to Paul!
8. The Lord is writing a New Testament for a new day & a new age, & we don't have to go by Paul any more!
9. You've either got to go all the way by grace or you've got to go all the way by law!
10. Whatever is done in love is right!
11. God now only judges us according to whether we have love or we don't have love!
12. We are free from Moses' Law because we have learned Jesus' love, which is greater than the Laws of Moses!
13. We believe that anything that is done in love & not strictly forbidden in the Scriptures is perfectly legitimate.
14. God's only law is love! As long as whatever you're doing is in love & not hurting anybody, how can you go wrong?
15. God makes the rules & He can make exceptions to them if He wants to, & do some very unusual things.
16. Apparently you can get away with anything if the Lord decides it's OK! But you'd better make sure He decides.
17. It's the liberating law of love that gives life!--Not the enslaving "letter of the law that killeth."  
(2Cor.3:6)
18. What's done in love is not unlawful, according to the Word.--"Against such there is no law." (Gal.4:23)
19. There are always exceptions to every rule.
20. There's no law but Love in the Kingdom of Love, & there are no citizens but lovers! So whatsoever you do in word or in deed, do all to the glory of Love!
21. For those who are really in the Spirit, love is the only rule!
22. God makes the rules, but He also can break them if He wants to.

23. God Himself is violating His Own laws in saving us! He is declaring mercy instead of sacrifice, love instead of justice!

24. Here is the truth in a little creed.

Enough for all the road we go:

In love is all the law we need,

In Christ is all the God we know.

25. God's only law is love & His only Kingdom is Heavenly!

26. If you don't respond to God's new law of Love, He has to enforce His old law of justice.

27. Love is now the law!--God's only law is Love.

28. The Millennium is going to prove that you cannot legislate righteousness, even with the iron rule of Love!

29. It can be sin for others, but it can be righteousness for you! It's all really judged by the motive of your heart.

30. We are free from Moses' law because we have learned God's love.

31. If you go back to the law even on one point, you are obligated to keep the whole law! (Ja.2:10)

32. God's Law is love, not cold, rigid, traditional, self-righteous service.

33. The Love of God is greater than His Laws!--His mercy supersedes His justice!

34. Jesus just preached Love & He was trying not to hurt anybody.--But His very life & His Message exposed the hypocrites & the guilty ones, because it showed them up like black against white or light against darkness for what they really were.

35. Can you be trusted with total life, love, liberty & the freedom of the spirit, or do you have to be kept in the cage of the law, for the transgressors who are ruled only by their own carnal lusts & lack of love?

36. Is it good for God's work? Is it good for His Body? Is it good for you? Does it glorify God, His Body, & edify your own soul? Does it help you or someone else to do a better job for the Lord? Do you even need it for your own good?

37. Nothing that is done in love is wrong!--Whatever is done in love is right!

38. I don't believe in the Ten Commandments, I believe in Jesus' Law of Love! This is far greater & more difficult, & in fact you can't keep either the Ten Commandments or Jesus' Law of Love unless you have Jesus in you, the Spirit of God in you to give you the power & the strength to love others more than you love yourself.

39. By the Old Law, God showed man he couldn't do it by himself. By His new law of Love He showed even more that God was even more righteous than the Old Law, He had even more love & more mercy & it was even more impossible for man to be that good.

40. We have been freed from the bondage of the condemnation of sin by the Law of Love in Christ Jesus. So if it is in love, then it is lawful as far as God is concerned.

41. You've either got to go all the way by grace or you've got to go all the way by law. (Ro.11:6)

42. When it comes to the point that you even have to forego witnessing lest you cause some weak narrow-minded Christian to stumble, then that's where you have to draw the line & go ahead. If it means that you are going to be hampered & all kinds of obstacles put in your way to keep you from doing God's will just because of the petty peevishness of some persnickety narrow-minded self-righteous Christian, then forget it! You cannot stop saving souls just because some people condemn your method. You cannot stop your ministry, you cannot stop the message just because some people condemn your methods. If God has blessed the message with good fruit then the method is good.

43. Love is more than righteousness & mercy is greater than justice.

44. Are you so ruled by His Love that He can liberate you from the rules, or do you have to be kept under the law of works because you cannot be trusted with the liberty of His grace?--The answer is up to you!

45. Have you got enough love to be trusted with enough liberty to live life to the full?

46. It's impossible for anyone to be good according to the Mosaic Law!

47. There is now no other law but love. If it's done in love & all parties concerned are agreed because they love each other, then there is no sin.--It is love!

48. The law of Love supersedes all other laws! Jesus was trying to show how the law of Love was even more strict than the Mosaic Law. The law of Love supersedes the law of Jewish justice without mercy!

49. Church laws & some men's laws make of none effect the law of God, the law of Love.

50. If you know you're acting in love, then you can go ahead by faith according to God's Word & you don't need anything else.

51. You're not guilty of disobeying God's laws as long as whatever you're doing you're doing in love.

52. Man's laws don't always jive with God's laws, especially His Law of Love.

53. Whatsoever we do in word or in deed, we're to do all to the glory of God & we're to do it all in Love. (1Cor.10:31)
54. If we're keeping God's Law of Love, then we'll try not to hurt or offend anybody, & we'll do our best to try to live in Love.
55. Our whole doctrine of Love is contrary to the churches' doctrine of law, hate & enforcement of their doctrine of fear & terror.
56. We lovers of love and the Lord are bound to run afoul of the lovers of the Law & legalism & we cannot possibly please them.
57. Love is Love & law is law, & never the twain shall meet!
58. As far as we're concerned & as far as the New Testament says, for us there is no such thing anymore as adultery if all our sex is in His Love!
59. The only rule we can go by in every case is, is it Love?
60. Jesus said His Law of Love is now all the law, as well as all the prophets. (Mt.22:37-40)
61. Jesus said that the whole works, the whole Bible, is now all fulfilled in the Law of Love!
62. God's only Law is Love!--There is now no other law, no Mosaic Law, no church law, no law against sex. Those old laws don't exist as far as we're concerned. They are only to regulate the ungodly, as He says in 1Tim.1:9.
63. You have to judge every single case on its own merits & its own conditions, as to whether whatever is being done is done in love.
64. We who are Christians, who have God, who have His Love, are no longer under the law. But the sinner who is unsaved, who has rejected Jesus Christ, who does not have God & hasn't got God's Love in his heart, is still under that law. That's the difference.
65. The unsaved are still subject to the laws of the Old Testament, because the laws are for the ungodly & the unrighteous & for the lawbreaker! (1Tim.1:9)
66. We are free from the Law of Moses because we have learned love, which is greater than the Mosaic Law.
67. If we have love, God's Love, & we do everything we do in love, that's better than the Mosaic Law.
68. God's only law is Love, & as long as something is done in love, with real unselfish, even sacrificial love, God's Love, then it is absolutely lawful in God's eyes.
69. The Mosaic Law still exists for others who are still under it, because they don't have love.
70. The Love of God is greater than His laws. (Ro.13:10)
71. If you go back to the law even on one point, you are obligated to keep the whole law. (Ja.2:10)
72. The Lord really preferred the whole thing by grace & faith to begin with, that was His original plan, but He had to crack down with the rules because they didn't follow grace & faith & love. But keeping the rules didn't save them, they only showed them where they were wrong.
73. People who worship marriage are making it a god, & are worshipping the law & a form of legalism. It's a worship of law more than Love, forgiveness or mercy.
74. The worship of marriage laws is a legalism--it's saying that the law is inviolable! The legalists say that nothing can supersede it--not even the love, mercy or the grace of God!--And that if a person violates the law, he cannot be forgiven.
75. The Scribes & Pharisees worship the law more than love! They worship their own self-righteousness more than the righteousness of God! They worship judgement more than mercy, & when it comes right down to it, they worship vengeance more than love!
76. You cannot join the Family of Love without love, no matter who or what you are or what you have.
77. The law came by Moses, but grace, mercy, forgiveness, love & truth came through Jesus Christ, our Salvation. (Jn.1:17)
78. Jesus brought a new law of Love, God's only Law for the lovers of Jesus! Now God's only Law for us is Love, which more than fulfills the Mosaic law.
79. Jesus did not destroy the law, but He fulfilled it & He was the end of it! (Mat.5:17) Therefore, it passed away & is no more. We now only have to keep God's law of Love, His only law--Love!--A stronger law than Moses' law.
80. It all boils down to whether you're going to believe more in Moses or Jesus!
81. Jesus' Law of Love is greater & stricter even than the old Mosaic Law, because now everything you do must be done in His Love! You must have more mercy & more love than the law.
82. God, Who made the laws & the rules, wants you to have mercy & forgiveness & salvation!
83. We do not believe in keeping Moses' Ten Commandments!--We believe in keeping Jesus' Law of Love!

84. We believe in Christ's Law of Love: Love ye one another, & so fulfill ye the law of Christ. (Gal.5:14; 6:2)

85. There's no amount of love that could possibly be illegitimate to try to win a soul to Christ!

86. God's only Law is Love, & if what you're doing you're doing in love & you're not hurting any innocent party, then it is perfectly legal for you, according to God's Law of Love.

87. If a woman withholds herself from her husband, she is the guilty one for not giving that man his due, not the one who helps him in his need. The scripture explicitly forbids mates to withhold themselves from each other, so any woman withholding herself from her husband is breaking the Law of Love & the laws of the New Testament. (1Cor.7:3-5)

88. In sharing, if all parties are not agreed & consenting, then it's wrong. But if any part disagrees who is a guilty party themselves & part of the cause, then that's a very different story. You have to go entirely by love. You say, "But it's hurting the wife." Maybe she deserves to be hurt, maybe she needs it, maybe she denied him! Why is a man out seeking love somewhere else unless his wife is not giving him the kind of love he needs?

89. Any woman who withholds herself from her husband does not love her husband, so if he doesn't get love from his wife, he is free to find it somewhere else according to God's Law of Love! That's God's Word & that's the truth!

90. What difference does it make if a woman pretends openly that she's still a man's wife, if she is denying her husband sexually & is refusing him the rights of a husband. If she is refusing to be wife to him in bed, she is no wife!

91. If the wife herself is denying her husband his due, then it's her own fault if he looks for it somewhere else.

92. How can a woman give her husband unselfish love if she doesn't have the Love of God? And if she doesn't have that love, then it's all right if he gets it somewhere else, & it's her own fault & she's the guilty party.

93. If a woman really loves her husband & she can't give him what he needs, then she should want him to go someplace else where he can get it, if she really loves him.

(See also No.302A, 302C, 531, 576, 591, 592, 594, 635, 647, 648, 719, 1253.)

(See Verses on Law vs. Grace.)



*Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ (Rom.7:4).*

1. Jesus fulfilled the Law, therefore He ended it.
2. The Devil is for justice, he's a legalist, he's almost like the police system, he enforces the law on the lawbreakers!
3. The law is not made for the lawkeepers but the lawbreakers! (1Ti.1:9)
4. If you make the rules too hard, then people get rebellious & throw it all to the wind.
5. Justice has no mercy. Justice just decides if a thing is right or wrong & that's it. But love & mercy, though they know the sinner's wrong, they forgive.
6. Laws too gentle are seldom obeyed; too severe, seldom executed.
7. Laws should be like clothes. They should be made to fit the people they are meant to serve.
8. We believe in obeying the laws of the land, every one we possibly can if we know about it. We believe in trying to be peaceful & not hurting anybody, but helping people. This is our way of life & our message.
9. If we stopped everything some people have doubts about, we couldn't do anything! If they doubt it, they shouldn't do it, but we have to carry on!
10. If you love God & you love others, what do you need with any other laws?--You're not going to do anything to hurt anybody.
11. We are only bound by God's law of love & this gives us a lot of freedom, but in another way it's the most binding law of all!--Because God's law of love not only says you can't steal, can't kill, can't do this, can't do that, but you've got to love everybody!--Which is one of the hardest things of all to do.
12. The law is our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ & the law is what we have to fall back on to solve a lot of situations when we don't have the love or the freedom we should have. If God could trust us with total freedom, if we had that much love & consideration & unselfishness & thoughtfulness & real concern for the other person & not wanting to hurt anybody, but love everybody, then God could trust us with more freedom, but usually He can't, because hardly anybody is that unselfish or loving or thoughtful.
13. There is only this law, the law of love: Love God with all your heart & thy neighbour as thyself.--The only part of the Ten Commandments that you have to keep now! Because if you keep that part, you keep all the rest. In fact, Jesus showed them they were not only keeping the Ten Commandments, but even more, because the Ten Commandments said that they were just to do that which was just & righteous, but under Jesus' Law of Love they were to do more than justice & righteousness, they were to have love & mercy, which is more than justice & righteousness.
14. Although God has given us all this freedom ourselves, we cannot be totally free, because we live in a World that's not free, & that has all kinds of laws against freedom! So you have to watch out you don't break those laws, or at least you have to watch out they don't catch you breaking them.
15. No one has ever been saved by anything but the grace of God through Jesus Christ, whether it was before or since Jesus Christ. We're all children of Abraham by faith. Abraham was saved by faith.
16. If you love your neighbour as yourself you'll put yourself in his place & wonder how you would feel if you were there & wonder what you would want & need to have fulfilled.
17. Love is greater than the law, because God is love. Love is God & God can do no wrong.
18. True love can do no wrong so how can it be under any law? How can it be against any law? He says, "Against such there's no law." (Gal.5:22-23) Against such love there is no law, so how can anything that you do in love be against the law? It may be against man's laws & church laws but it is certainly not against God's laws.

19. As far as God is concerned, there's no law but love except for the sinners who are outside of love & outside of faith & do not have God & reject Christ. They're under the old law, but not we who are believers & Christians & have faith & have Jesus Christ in our hearts & God in His love.

20. We are not judged by the old law, we are judged only by love, how much love we have & how much we give & how much we share.

21. The Lord really preferred the whole thing to be by grace & faith to begin with, that was His original plan. But He had to crack down with the rules because they didn't follow grace & faith & love. But keeping the rules didn't save them, they only showed them they were wrong.

22. We know that all Mosaic laws are null & void as far as we are concerned. Christ was the end of the law, He fulfilled the law & from then on we are no longer under the law.

23. It is impossible for anyone to be good according to the Mosaic Law. The Mosaic Law makes every one of us a sinner, because not one of us can keep it. Nobody has ever kept the Ten Commandments except Jesus Christ Himself, nobody, it's impossible. That's why Jesus had to die for us so that we could be forgiven & be saved by His grace & His mercy & His love without the Law.

24. By the law we are judged for our sins & condemned to die & suffer. But Jesus came to save us by love, by His grace, by His mercy, showing that love & mercy are greater than the law.

25. Our whole doctrine of love is contrary to their doctrine of hate, their doctrine of enforcement & their doctrine of fear & terror.--It's totally contrary to their whole way. Therefore, of course, we lovers of love & the Lord are going to run afoul of the lovers of the law & legalism & we cannot possibly please them, because, love is love & law is law & never the twain shall meet.

26. God's only law is love, there is now no other law, no Mosaic Law, no church law, no law against adultery.--Those laws don't exist as far as we're concerned. They are only to regulate the ungodly, as He says in 1Tim.1:9, & by which the unrighteous who are violating the law of God will be judged.

27. God's love is absolutely lawful in God's eyes no matter whether it be a sin in the eyes of the churches & a crime in the eyes of man, it's still absolutely innocent in the eyes of God if it's according to love.

28. God now only judges according to whether we have love or no love--whether we have love or hate--whether what we do is done in love or selfishness & lack of love. The one who had love & acted in love is the innocent party & the one who acted without love because he or she had no love is the guilty party.

29. If you know you're acting in love, then you can go ahead by faith according to God's word & you don't need anything else, you don't need any other laws to go by, you don't need any other laws to confirm it, you're not guilty of disobeying God's laws as long as whatever you're doing you're doing in love.

30. If you are strong enough in spirit & filled with His love, you can be trusted with this liberty as a useful tool to help others. But if you are weak in the flesh, full of selfish lusts & play with it foolishly like a dangerous toy, it will only harm you & others & hinder the work of God.

31. When people start going back to these old legalistic Scriptures, even some of the legalism of Paul, then they are turning their backs on the freedom of grace & the liberty which the Lord has given us & the new wine & the new truth & the new revelations which are for us today, here & now, not for Paul & his day, much less for Moses & his day.

32. Our only rule & God's only law is love. You must have the love of God in your heart, you must believe in Jesus His Son & you must love one another & your neighbour as yourself.

33. God's law is love, not a cold, rigid, traditional, self-righteous service according to false, unscriptural & ungodly rules of certain religions.

34. God can break His Own rules if He wants to. If in this last generation He wants to throw out the whole rulebook & give you a whole new set of love rules to go by, God is the One Who makes the rules--not men!

35. God threw out the whole Mosaic rulebook when He started the Christian revolution back in the time of the Apostles. He practically threw out most of the Old Testament, the Mosaic Laws & the Ten Commandments & the old legalism & started all over again with nothing but the rule of love!

36. Each generation of the Church has taken some new step toward freedom from such harsh restrictions of the law to the total freedom of love through the grace of God, from material symbolisms & mechanical ceremonialism to spiritual realities & total spiritual liberty--"the spirits of just men set free"!

37. The old Law of Moses spelled out in detail how & what you ought to do if you are loving & love others, that you won't do this & you will do that, etc. But once you've got the Spirit Herself, once you've got Love itself, you don't need that old Law because you just won't do those things you shouldn't do & you will voluntarily do those things you should do.



(See also No.S, 25, 45, 73A, 91, 121, 302C, 317B, 531, 576, 592, 594, 605, 635, 647, 648, 696, 999, 1004, 1253, 1439, 1500, 1548.)

38. MAT.5:17 Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill.

39. MAT.7:12 Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets.

40. LUK.11:41b Behold, all things are clean unto you.

41. JOH.1:17 For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.

42. ACT.13:39 And by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses.

43. ROM.3:20 Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin.

44. ROM.6:14 For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.

45. ROM.7:4 Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ.

46. ROM.7:6 But now we are delivered from the law, that being dead wherein we were held; that we should serve in newness of spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter.

47. ROM.10:4 For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth.

48. ROM.13:8 Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law.

49. ROM.13:10b Love is the fulfilling of the law.

50. ROM.14:20 For meat destroy not the work of God. All things indeed are pure; but it is evil for that man who eateth with offence.

51. 1CO.6:12 All things are lawful unto me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but I will not be brought under the power of any.

52. 2CO.3:6b For the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life.

53. GAL.3:24 Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith.

54. GAL.5:18 But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law.

55. 1TI.1:9 Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers,

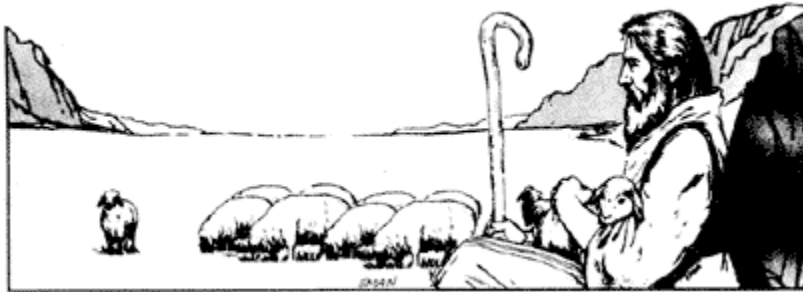
56. TIT.1:15 Unto the pure all things are pure: but unto them that are defiled and unbelieving is nothing pure; but even their mind and conscience is defiled.

57. HEB.10:9 Then said he, Lo, I come to do Thy Will, O God. He taketh away the first, that he may establish the second.

58. JAM.1:25 But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed.

59. JAM.2:8 If ye fulfill the royal law according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well.

(See also ROM.14:1-23; 1CO.8:8-13; HEB.10:1-5.)



*Be thou diligent to know the state of thy flocks, & look well to thy herds (Pro.27:23).*

1. Great leaders are usually the humblest of all people, willing to do anything, & really don't feel worthy of their great responsibility at all.
2. Some people don't want to be leaders because they'd have to make decisions which might be wrong & which they would be blamed for.
3. He is not truly great who is not greatly good.
4. Most of the inconspicuous gifts are the ones leaders need most--discernment, knowledge, wisdom & faith.
5. If you know His Word & how to wield this rod of His authority--you can use it to save your flock from the wolves & to lead your little lambs into the safety of His Fold forever!
6. Lead your sheep, don't drive them!
7. It takes a small man, insecure in his authority, to keep insisting on respect, loyalty and obedience, instead of inspiring it voluntarily in his followers' hearts by his own loving and considerate example.
8. If you want a place in the sun, you have to expect some blisters.
9. You can't be trusted to rule over the Kingdom of God if you haven't learned to rule your own family in love, in patience, in faith, in meekness, in gentleness & in quietness. (1Ti.3:5)
10. The greatest leaders that God has chosen usually don't want to be leaders--they are forced into it by the Lord!
11. Greatness in leadership starts with the ability to be a good follower.
12. Every good leader must be aware of the practical as well as concerned about the spiritual.
13. You'd better enjoy being a buck private while you can--with very little worry or responsibility, credit or blame, cursing or fame. One day you may be the general with most of the work, nearly all the worry--& usually, all the blame!
14. Don't envy your leaders!--Pity them!--Pray for them!--Help them!
15. If you're not afraid to face the music, you may some day lead the band.
16. You'll never fully appreciate your leaders till you have to join them in leadership!
17. Goats are very independent, whereas sheep are pretty helpless & can't exist without man. So let the goats take care of themselves, & you get busy taking care of the sheep!
18. Sheep cannot find the way without the Shepherd's voice.
19. It's much easier to be a prophet of doom than a healer of wounds and a feeder of sheep.
20. One of the signs of a good leader is always keeping your eyes open and checking to see that everything is running smoothly--that the snags are all ironed out--that everything is getting done that should be done!
21. Always remember, in whatever you do, that the mark of a good leader is to always consult with others. But be sure when you consult, to consult with the right people!
22. If the shepherd will feed the sheep, the sheep will feed the shepherd!
23. I'm a firm believer in dictatorship--you don't ask dumb sheep what to do, you tell them what to do!--But you do hear their bleatings!

24. You'll be much more merciful to those who follow you if you yourself realise how much you need mercy!
25. Jesus will still lead you after I'm gone. Don't worry about it. The same One that's the Head of us right now is still going to be the Head of you then, & that's Jesus!
26. Rank & riches are chains of gold, but still chains.
27. The quicker you leaders learn to confess your mistakes, the more others will trust & love you, & the more the Lord will use you.
28. Pastors have to be plodders with lots of patience, like farmers.
29. A guy who's a leader has gotta be a fighter, he's gotta take sides!--God's side!
30. A good leader should save himself for the major decisions and heavy burdens and responsibilities of leadership that only he can handle.
31. Any truly good leader welcomes questions, suggestions and even contrary ideas to his own!
32. A chain of command system is no stronger than its weakest link.
33. Most good leaders don't want to be leaders--they have to be!
34. Complete dependency on the Lord is the secret of good leadership.
35. The leader, above all, must be a man in tune with God.
36. The leader has to be thinking, praying, planning and deciding all the time, at least one jump ahead of his followers.
37. Let the leader choose his own team.
38. Titles somewhat clarify for all of us, including each of you, the extent of your authority & the size of your responsibilities, as well as their limitations.
39. Every great leader has had his Judases, including Jesus.
40. If the officer has a question or feels a doubt about executing an important order from a superior officer, then it is his responsibility to voice it to the superior officer. And if he won't listen, then go to a higher authority.
41. Good leaders are usually born--as well as made. They're the brief & final end product of God's infinite care, designing & preparation.
42. If there's anything leaders need, it's wisdom & knowledge! Wisdom is how to use the knowledge of God.
43. The boss has to be able to do everything, & he's not a good boss unless he's a servant of all & is able to do any task.
44. If you haven't learned to be a follower, you'll never be able to be a leader.
45. If the power of your position goes to your head so that you forget what you're there for, you're simply proving that you're still a novice, filled with pride & not ready to be a leader.
46. Your people, your flock, are only going to be as interested in the Word as you are, unless they're unusual.--And the flocks will usually be no better than their leadership.
47. Undershepherds who are so busy with the sheep that they haven't time to listen to the Shepherd's instructions are going to have nothing but trouble.
48. We might be able to do without an arm or a leg or a few fingers, but the Body will not survive very long without the Head!
49. The job of a leader is to try to get other people to do things.
50. One of the worst things in the World you can do, especially to a public leader or to a teacher or pastor or a father or a husband, is to undermine faith & confidence in his leadership.
51. The Lord never breaks His own chain of command, unless some link is failing.
52. I don't think you can ever be a good leader, a wise, humble leader, until you've pulled some awful boners & made some terrible mistakes & committed a few sins & really blown it a few times yourself. For one thing, you'll never be humble enough unless you do!
53. Most good leaders don't want to be leaders--they know what a big job it is & what a serious responsibility, & they often do not feel capable. These are the best leaders, because then they will not be cocky & self-confident, but depend on!
54. That's what it often costs to be a leader: "To live in fame & die in flame!"--Sometimes they have to live in flame & die in shame before the World.
55. Those four unseen gifts are the most important gifts that any leader can have: Knowledge, wisdom, discernment & faith. In fact as far as I'm concerned you can't even be a leader without those gifts, or at least some of them.
56. You'll never be a truly great shepherd until you learn to have compassion on the sheep--until you learn to have great love and great mercy.

57. A leader has two important characteristics: First, he is going somewhere. Second, he is able to persuade others to go with him.

58. When the leader's gone, if the cement of the Work was only his personality, the thing falls apart. But if the cement was strong teaching & doctrine to perpetuate the message & the method, then the work carries on pretty much as the leader founded it & led it.

59. Leaders have to face their fears & think about the worst thing that could happen & be prepared with an alternative.

60. A good executive is not a boss!--He is a servant!

61. Any general who doesn't listen to his officers & doesn't pay any attention to his men is going to be in trouble!

62. Only a novice wants to be the boss and order everybody around!

63. It is only the brand-new, not-yet-dry-behind-the-ears baby executive, who tries to run everything.

64. The executive hand is merely the power who helps to pump out the people-power!

65. A chief executive should only be a guide, who in turn is guided himself by God.

66. A tyrannical spirit makes a leader like the Devil, the first would-be dictator, who didn't want to listen to either God or the other angelic forces!

67. "He that is greatest among you must be servant of all!" (Mt.23:11)

68. As you love God and are thankful for Him, so you should love and be thankful for your leaders, for they care for your souls and have the burden of all of you. (Heb.13:17)

69. One of the greatest dangers of leadership is man-worship!

70. The job of a good leader is not a popular job. You need to teach them to love you, but also to fear and obey you.

71. Let them run themselves and tell themselves what to do, with your oversight and guidance and spiritual leadership.

72. You need to create a machine that can run itself, with you at the wheel and sometimes at the controls.

73. Every good leader is the servant of his people.

74. People get the kind of leaders they want and deserve.

75. "Blessed is he that loveth and ruleth My people well."

76. The boss may not always be right, but he still is the boss.

77. Little men want to do it all themselves. Big men get others to do it for them.

78. People are persuaded more by the depth of your conviction than by the height of your logic--more by your own enthusiasm than by any proof you can offer.

79. A leader shouldn't do anything he can get someone else to do for him--except to set an example.

80. We are now in our training period in this life in preparation for ruling the world in the next!

81. Leadership is the art of getting someone else to do something that you want done, because he wants to do it.

82. You can never become a leader without doing more than you are paid for.

83. The training of men is the chief job of any executive.

84. Be first a problem preventer, so you won't have to be a problem solver.

85. A great man shows his greatness by the way he treats little men.

86. Genius is 1% inspiration & 99% perspiration.

87. He who undermines his leader destroys his own house.

88. Holy Ghost power picks a leader for the hour!

89. There's no such thing as horizontal control in the Kingdom of God, it's strictly vertical from the top down!

90. God give us men! A time like this demands

Strong minds, great hearts, true faith & ready hands!

Men whom the lust of office does not kill,

Men whom the spoils of office cannot buy,

Men who possess opinions & a will,

Men who love honor, men who do not lie.

91. The price of greatness is responsibility.

92. That man is great who can use the brains of others to carry out his work.

93. Power may justly be compared to a great river; while kept within its bounds it is both beautiful & useful, but when it overflows its banks, it is then too impetuous to be stemmed; it bears down all before it, & brings

destruction & desolation wherever it comes. Power does not corrupt men; but fools, if they get into a position of power, corrupt power.

94. The Buck stops here!--With you!

95. One of the tests of leadership is the ability to recognise a problem before it becomes an emergency.

96. Nearly all men can stand adversity, but if you want to test a man's character, give him power.

97. By working faithfully eight hours a day, you may eventually get to be a boss & work twelve hours a day.

98. You can always tell who the boss is: He's the one who watches the clock during coffee breaks.

99. Censure is the tax a man pays to the public for being eminent.

100. It is better to have a lion at the head of an army of sheep, than a sheep at the head of an army of lions!

101. What a heavy burden is a name that has become famous!

102. Every noble crown is, & on earth will ever be, a crown of thorns.

103. "When you are tired you need to rest. When you are weary you need to retire from the fray & give the battle to others. You need to know when to fight & when to be still, when to give & when to save, when to work & when to play, when to feed & when to pray."

104. "As a shepherdess of the flock you must feed of the firstfruits, like the husbandman & the shepherd, for strength. You must feed of the flock as well as care for them, & they must care for you. They must minister to you as you minister to them."

105. "When you save others, indeed yourself you cannot save, but there are times when you must save yourself if you are going to save others & still others & yet others."

106. Men of force are men of faults, & their biggest fault is to keep on going in their own force, instead of letting the Lord do it!

107. Just conducting business & shearing the sheep & telling the tale of the wool is not all there is to being a shepherd. You have to take care of those sheep as well, feed them & protect them, provide for them, love them & keep them in fellowship with each other, or you are failing in your task as a shepherd!

108. If your preaching is not going to affect your living & the lives of others who live with you, if you're not meddling in their daily affairs & making sure to keep things straight, if you're not meddling in their spiritual life, if you're not meddling with their daily needs, if you're not meddling with whether they're happy & satisfied & contented & loved enough & whatever they need, then your preaching is just so much hot air! If your preaching hasn't gone to meddling, it's not good enough!

109. If we don't care for the lambs, the Words are of no avail.

110. Don't just take people's word for it--investigate yourself when there's trouble. As a leader, it's your business to get nosy & to poke & probe & question & find out what the problem is!

111. Don't let others drag you down to their level, you pull them up to yours!

112. Even an ordinary horse can be outstanding in his own field. If you're leading people to the Lord, you are a leader in soul-winning.

113. Sometimes you have to get a little tough to get action!

114. The crown so beautiful to them that behold it, is so heavy to them that wear it!

115. Responsibility can humble you quicker than anything!

116. It's my job just to give you the general picture in the general direction, & it's your job to figure out the details & the battles & the officers & the modes of attack & all the rest.

117. With the mantle of the office comes the anointing of power of the Spirit.

118. Every great world leader, every great man, was a fanatic that some people hated & some people adored.

119. Lives of great men all remind us

That we can make our lives sublime,

And when departing leave behind us

Footprints in the sands of time!

120. If much has been committed to you, much is going to be required of you. (Lk.12:48)

121. None knows the weight so heavy as he who wears the crown!

122. Great gifts are a great responsibility.

123. With great responsibility comes great grace.

124. If there is no truly controlling head but God, they cannot kill it.

125. Those who only follow a man go back when the man is gone. But those who follow the Spirit will go on forever!

126. Men of force are men of faults.

127. The greatest men in the Bible were guys that made terrible mistakes & realized they were sinners and that they needed God!

128. When the congregation falls asleep, there is only one thing to do--provide the usher with a sharp stick & have him prod the preacher!

129. I don't care how gifted, how talented, how artistic, how cultured, how beautiful, how strong, how educated you are, I don't care what you've got, if you're not 100% loyal, God can't use you!

130. A lot of people seem to like to scatter seed, but not many people seem to want to take care of the results--to patiently, painstakingly train these babes into good leaders!

131. The man-worshippers stop when the man stops!--The God-worshippers keep on going for God!

132. A speech is like a wheel--the longer the spoke, the greater the tire, which is reserved only for big wheels!

133. No one should have all the say, not even God does this!

134. It is a fine thing to have ability, but the ability to discover ability in others is the true test of leadership.

135. They that bear the cross shall wear the crown.

136. Saul's main problem as a leader was that he was a man-pleaser.

137. God's Word says not for the shepherd to follow the sheep, but for the shepherd to go forth & lead the sheep.

138. "Woe to the children of David that hear not the Word of their Shepherd & care not for the sheep!"

139. "Behold, I will hold thee accountable in the day of Judgement for this thing which thou hast done, to withhold the words of My Servant from them that die & are smitten & driven away!"

140. Over-leaders must love the sheep & care for the shepherds.

141. If a leader is anything at all, he is a leader of men, not a mere leader of papers!--But he must push papers too!

142. Young new novice leaders sometimes react rather suddenly & violently because they're unsure of themselves & insecure, so they think they have to put up a bold front of self-assurance. But to come in storming & berating somebody before you've heard all sides of the story is not a good sample, neither are you a very good judge or a good leader.

143. The reason the Ten Commandments are short & sweet is because they were handed down direct, not through several committees.

144. The test of a preacher is that his congregation goes away not saying, "What a lovely sermon," but saying, "I will do something!"

145. It's one thing to rule & win people with the love of the Lord, it's another thing to woo & win them just to yourself & the love of your carnal flesh.

146. Watch out about those man-worshippers who fall all over themselves to lick your boots. If something happens to you & you fall or go astray, they'll probably be the first ones to desert you & kick you with theirs!

147. The difference between a real shepherd & a hireling is simple: A hireling is there purely for selfish reasons for what he himself can gain out of it, whereas the true shepherd is willing to lose everything & lay down even his life for the sheep.

148. The worst thing leaders can do to each other is to cut each other down in public, because it destroys the confidence of the sheep.

149. Are you inclined to be too easy on people because you want them to be easy on you? Do you let them get away with more than you should? That's not fair to them--or yourself!

150. When you get so proud & so smart that you can't stand somebody making a suggestion or a correction, you're too proud & too smart!

151. Spiritual maturity is not a matter of years or time, although that helps, but it's just a matter of your connection with the Lord & His Word & your obedience & humility.

152. God has ways of putting people down who get too exalted about their position & their lofty ministry.

153. There is no army in the World, there is no organisation in the World, there is no business in the World, there is not even one family in the World that doesn't have to have a boss!

154. The shepherd, too, must sit upon the hillside & pipe sweet music unto his Creator in praises, to bring peace to his own soul, as well as his sheep.

155. The shepherd himself has to be fed with the Hand of his Creator & the Hand of his Shepherd, if he's going to feed the sheep & bring them the same peace.

156. You cannot even make a move until you first have found that place of rest & calm & sweet peace in the Lord, & have sat down & played your pipe to the Lord. It's all a spiritual thing. If you try to do it in the flesh, you might as well quit.

157. The sheep cannot lead themselves, they have to have a shepherd.
158. You have to learn how to first of all rest at the Lord's feet.
159. The secret of that calm & peace & rest & patience & faith & love is that resting in the Lord! Getting calm before the Lord & praising the Lord & seeking the Lord first. And then you just impart this to the sheep. It's a spirit you impart, that very same atmosphere.
160. They are the diamonds of dust, the smallest of all creations! They are the ones that shine! We are like the dirt on the floor which will catch them, & on which they can rest until Thy breath catches them & they float again into the sunlight. Help us to stay out of the limelight--help us just to be there to catch them when they fall--just to be there to give them a place to land.
161. The shepherd has got to not only lead the sheep, but if they don't follow, then he's got to get behind them & beat them with the rod & sic the dogs on them!
162. A speaker who does not strike oil in ten minutes should stop boring.
163. You cannot take a vacation for a minute when you're on duty & you're the shepherd of the flock!-- You've got to watch everything that's happening, you've got to look for trouble before it happens.
164. Spiritual leaders are called, as well as made. It's the Spirit that makes the choice. God's anointing is what makes the difference. You can teach a spiritual leader to be a little more practical & organized, but you can't make a person have that anointing & calling of a spiritual ministry. God does that.
165. Be a person who always tries to speak well of people & who casts a veil over countless sins. (1Pe.4:8)
166. You who have the burden of great responsibility & great decision-making which can influence a lot of people, watch out! Because if you make a mistake, unto you is the greater condemnation! (Jas.3:1) The higher you go, the longer & further you may have to fall!
167. In any new job a person has to be given a little time to learn, & you must forgive a few mistakes in the beginning.
168. A leader will keep on course & try to keep others on course in the direction he's going & pull them his way. But if you have a tendency to be pulled other ways by followers, then you're not much of a leader if you can't buck the tide!
169. Others may, you cannot. Other people might be able to get away with something, but because of your position you can't.
170. You can't treat everybody the same: Some people are so insensitive in the Spirit it takes an open rebuke, others are so sensitive it only takes a hint.
171. You can't run any kind of a family, you can't run a church, you can't run a Home or anything unless you have leaders who are firm & forceful & can see that the job gets done, or make people do the job, & tell them to get out if they don't want to do it.
172. You need to relegate more authority & responsibility to others so that you don't carry such a heavy load yourself. Do only those things no other can do.
173. If the loads get too heavy or hard, it's because you're allowing yourself to be burdened & yoked to heavy responsibilities you should not have, & that others should share or carry. For "My yoke is easy & My burden is light" Jesus says!
174. Sometimes you give people jobs because you know they are capable of handling them. Other times you give people jobs to give them an opportunity to prove if they can handle them, & sometimes you give people jobs to see if they can't handle them. And sometimes you give people jobs hoping they will learn them even in spite of a few mistakes.
175. I don't usually like to give orders, I just drop hints. If they don't take the hint, then I make a suggestion. But if they don't take the suggestion, then I give an order!
176. The main job of a shepherd is to keep in touch with the Lord--to begin the day with sweet music, praise & fellowship.
177. It is the attending shepherd's God-given responsibility for his flock's sake to discern, question & judge outcoming prophecies.
178. If the leader has doubts, his underleaders are bound to suffer, they're bound to feel it & know it & communicate it right on down the line.
179. I don't appoint a team, I appoint a man to choose his own team & I hold him responsible to work out the details.
180. You've got to be up on your data & your stats to know your stock & the stats of your flocks! God's Word says a good shepherd knows the state of his flocks, (Pr.27:23) & you need to have these stats in mind.

181. If you are not leading anybody else but a sister with a child or children, you have become a spiritual leader whether you like it or not & whether you know it or not. And you must learn how to govern your own family or you will never learn how to govern the Family of God.

182. It's always easier for you or your favourite few to do it than to teach somebody else. You'd rather have the ones you've already trained, the chosen few you've had at it months or years, even when the job gets bigger than they can handle.

183. God gives us a lot of leeway & choice, believe it or not; so I think we ought to try to do the same with others, if possible. You'll get a lot better cooperation that way, & go a lot further in the long run than just commandeering forces, & shanghaiing labourers for your job, without consultation or sufficient prayer & consent!

184. I frankly believe that people should usually start at the bottom of the ladder & work their way up to the top through every rung in between, & where we have not followed this procedure, we have suffered from inexperienced & insufficiently trained leadership later.

185. The forty days & nights that Moses spent on the mountain solved more problems than all the months he spent sitting personally on his throne trying to judge all of their affairs himself.

186. When Moses finally saw what a hopeless mess it was & that he could never solve all the problems, he went alone on a mountain & virtually solved all the nation's problems for centuries by getting two tablets of stone & writing it down! Those written laws did more good than all the yakking at them had done for years.

187. Deliver us Lord from this spirit of "busyness"--too busy for You, & too busy for your Prophet.

188. If you keep running around trying to see everybody & do everything, you're in trouble.

189. You have to die to self & some of the things you want to do & say "Lord, I'm going to have to leave that up to someone else in order to do the things You want me to do!"

190. We have to shepherd the Family. And part of the Shepherd's job is not only feeding the Sheep, but shearing the sheep, & in some cases milking the sheep. He's also got to lead them & guide them with definite administration & oversight.

191. Even in the Early Church they had bishops & elders & deacons & overseers & apostles, prophets, pastors, evangelists, teachers, all kinds of officers & officials that had to shepherd the sheep. So we have to not only publish materials to feed the Family, but we have the responsibility of leading them, overseeing them & administering them right down to the local level.

192. "What is this in thy hand, Son, but the rod of authority of My Word that I have given thee that thou shalt use with love in Jesus' name."

193. If you just let people run around without any supervision, without any reports, without any check-up on what they're accomplishing, they're apt not to accomplish anything.

194. As John Kennedy said about the Bay of Pigs invasion, "It doesn't matter who's to blame, I'm the boss, so it's my fault!"

195. We've just got to get the job done, & we can't have people working for us that can't do it or won't do it or don't do it!

196. With some people you have to say, "You've got to get it done by this time & that's it!--Or else we'll get somebody else to do it! People need deadlines & ultimatums.

197. No leader, no matter who they are, should get the idea that they can get up & walk out on the Lord, that they have more important business to do than fellowshiping with the Lord & listening to the Lord & hearing the Word & fellowshiping with the rest of their family & setting a good example to the rest of the sheep.

198. If you are going to do any kind of public speaking, do your studying beforehand. Read, study, think, pray & get totally full of the subject so that when you stand up to speak, out of the fullness of the heart the mouth will speak.

199. If you're ever going to speak in front of an audience, get full of your subject, don't worry about notes & speak out of the fullness of your heart & God will inspire you & lead you.

200. To get the whole story on a subject you've got to put everybody's story together & you've got to have everybody's opinion. You must be tolerant of the opinions of others.

201. Always qualify your lessons & always say, "Well, maybe none of this is going to work for you. Maybe none of this is true in your case or that of your disciples or your children. But this is the way it happened to me, this is the way it happened to So-&-so & this is the way it happened to most of them & therefore this is the way it will probably happen." Get away from dogmatism. Get away from rigidity, get away from dictatorship. Get away from systematic, rigid, formal, frozen conventionalism. You must allow for differences & freedom.

202. Do what is most important that you have to do first, & the most important thing is for you to keep other people busy, to keep them on their job & doing what they're supposed to be doing.



203. The job of a deacon is to tend the tables, to see the need. It's their job to look at the waves to see how high they are & how deep they are & how bad the storm is & let us know. It's our job as spiritual leaders to keep our eyes on the Lord & find out the answers. We're the Apostles of God, the leaders, & the ones who should be giving our time to the Word & prayer & getting answers from God!

204. One man or woman of God, inspired by the Spirit of God, can have better wisdom to run whole countries of this World than any of their present Worldly politicians.--And one of these days that's what you're going to be doing!

205. When the Lord gets sick & fed-up with all the bigshots who are now running the World, He's going to toss them all in the ash can & use you to run it!

206. Let the Letters be the leaders! Let the local areas operate on their own. Let them take care of their own finances & their own supervision & their own leadership & their own government.

207. Job 9:20 applies to a situation where you are wrong but you're trying to prove you're right. It should not be used as an excuse for keeping people from giving a legitimate humble explanation for their actions in a certain situation.

208. Leaders ought to certainly be thinking about the work they're doing & how to save time & money & work & personnel, how to make shortcuts, cut downs, cut outs in some cases. Leaders should do that sort of thing in their particular area of responsibility, whatever it may be.

(See also No.18, 24, 25, 26, 31, 38, 39, 47, 48, 49, 52, 71, 75, 98, 113, 124, 126, 127, 143, 154, 154A, 156C, 161, 210, 213, 233, 244, 263, 297, 302B, 315A, 328C, 329C, 337A, 354, 546, 606, 653, 662, 674, 675, 734, 813, 962, 974, 985, 1001, 1002, 1250, 1367, 1380, 1442, 1547.)

209. DEU.1:17 Ye shall not respect persons in judgment; but ye shall hear the small as well as the great; ye shall not be afraid of the face of man; for the judgment is God's: and the cause that is too hard for you, bring it unto me and I will hear it.

210. JDG.21:25 In those days there was no king in Israel: every man did that which was right in his own eyes.

211. 2SA.23:3,4 The God of Israel said, the Rock of Israel spake to me, He that ruleth over men must be just, ruling in the fear of God. And he shall be as the light of the morning, when the sun riseth, even a morning without clouds; as the tender grass springing out of the earth by clear shining after rain.

212. PSA.75:6,7 For promotion cometh neither from the east, nor from the west, nor from the south. But God is the judge: He putteth down one, and setteth up another.

213. PRO.20:28 Mercy and truth preserve the king: and his throne is upholden by mercy.

214. PRO.27:23 Be thou diligent to know the state of thy flocks, and look well to thy herds.

215. PRO.29:14 The king that faithfully judgeth the poor, his throne shall be established for ever.

216. JER.3:15 And I will give you pastors according to Mine heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding.

217. JER.23:4 And I will set up shepherds over them which shall feed them: and they shall fear no more, nor be dismayed, neither shall they be lacking, saith the Lord.

218. MAT.20:26,27 Whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister; And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant.

219. MAR.9:35 And he sat down, and called the twelve, and saith unto them, If any man desire to be first, the same shall be last of all, and servant of all.

220. MAR.10:42-45 But Jesus called them to Him, and saith unto them, Ye know that they which are accounted to rule over the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and their great ones exercise authority upon them. But so shall it not be among you: but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister: And whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all. For even the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give His life a ransom for many.

221. LUK.15:4 What man of you, having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it?

222. JOH.10:4 And when He putteth forth His own sheep, He goeth before them, and the sheep follow Him: for they know His voice.

223. JOH.10:12 But he that is an hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth: and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep.

224. JOH.10:14,15 I am the good shepherd, and know My sheep, and am known of Mine. As the Father knoweth Me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down My life for the sheep.

225. JOH.21:16b Lovest thou Me? He saith unto Him, Yea, Lord; Thou knowest that I love Thee. He saith unto him, Feed My sheep.

226. ACT.15:36 And some days after Paul said unto Barnabas, Let us go again and visit our brethren in every city where we have preached the Word of the Lord, and see how they do.

227. ACT.20:28 Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which He hath purchased with His Own blood.

228. 1CO.4:10 We are fools for Christ's sake, but ye are wise in Christ; we are weak, but ye are strong; ye are honourable, but we are despised.

229. 1CO.6:3 Know ye not that we shall judge angels? how much more things that pertain to this life?

230. 2CO.6:3 Giving no offence in any thing, that the ministry be not blamed.

231. GAL.6:1 Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness; considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted.

232. 1TH.2:7 But we were gentle among you, even as a nurse cherisheth her children.

233. 1TH.2:10,11 Ye are witnesses, and God also, how holily and justly and unblameably we behaved ourselves among you that believe: As ye know how we exhorted and comforted and charged every one of you, as a father doth his children.

234. 1TH.5:12,13 And we beseech you, brethren, to know them which labour among you, and are over you in the Lord, and admonish you; And to esteem them very highly in love for their work's sake. And be at peace among yourselves.

235. 1TI.3:2-7 A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach; Not given to wine, no striker, not greedy of filthy lucre; but patient, not a brawler, not covetous; One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity; (For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God?) Not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride he fall into the condemnation of the Devil. Moreover he must have a good report of them which are without; lest he fall into reproach and the snare of the Devil.

236. 1TI.5:1 Rebuke not an elder, but intreat him as a father; and the younger men as brethren.

237. 1TI.5:8 But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel.

238. 1TI.5:17-19 Let the elders that rule well be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the Word and doctrine. For the Scripture saith, Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn. And, The labourer is worthy of his reward. Against an elder receive not an accusation, but before two or three witnesses.

239. 2TI.2:2 And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.

240. 2TI.2:24 And the servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, patient.

241. 2TI.4:2b Reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine.

242. TIT.1:7-9 For a bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God; not selfwilled, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre; But a lover of hospitality, a lover of good men, sober, just, holy, temperate; Holding fast the faithful Word as he hath been taught, that he may be able by sound doctrine both to exhort and to convince the gainsayers.

243. HEB.13:7 Remember them which have the rule over you, who have spoken unto you the Word of God: whose faith follow, considering the end of their conversation.

244. JAM.3:1 My brethren, be not many masters, knowing that we shall receive the greater condemnation.

245. 1PE.5:2,3 Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; Neither as being lords over God's heritage, but being ensamples to the flock.

(See also EXO.19:7,8; JOS.1:1-9; JDG.6:11-16; 2CH.1:6-12; ROM.13:1-7.)



*He that is faithful in that which is least is faithful also in much: & he that is unjust in the least is unjust also in much (Lk.16:10).*

1. If you pass God's test of little things, then He can trust you with big things.
2. I've got a lot of faith in people who are not afraid to pitch in & work, even doing jobs that are not their own, but because they need to be done!
3. I like to dig out the little people & put them in places of responsibility--I'm not a bigshot man.
4. The Lord would sooner trust ten young trees to make it than one big huge rotten one.
5. Little problems are very important & are usually only the tip of the iceberg which shows there is something much deeper & much greater that is wrong.
6. A little thing is a little thing, but faithfulness in little things is a great thing.
7. Be a lamp in the chamber if you cannot be a star in the sky.
8. Men who lived and died without name,  
Are the chief heroes in the sacred list of fame.
9. Henry Ford once said: Whenever you see a bushel of apples, remember, it takes a lot of little apples to hold up the big ones on top.
10. Most of the greatest saints I know were little people who just did what they thought should be done--without you hearing about it or even knowing they were around! But they were always around when you needed them.
11. Two of the most famous preachers in the Bible started out as waiters!--Stephen & Phillip!
12. There are no such things as little dangers in God's work! Little problems usually are evidence of big problems.
13. Never belittle the little things or the little ones.
14. It takes the little people to make the others great.
15. You have to be "little people" first before you can become great--`cause God only makes great people out of little people--to show His Greatness!
16. God turns the wheels of His Universe on very small things!
17. God turns the very great wheels of His omnipotence, His almighty power, on very very small pivots.
18. It's the little people who keep the Kingdom going! It's the little people that keep it rolling.
19. God runs the World on small things & He judges us by small things!
20. You'll never make it through the big doors without the tiny keys!
21. Many things that may seem little things to you are not so little in God's sight.
22. If you're faithful in a few things then He can trust you with big things.
23. A small leak will sink a great ship.
24. Little strokes fell great oaks.
25. No matter how young you are, no matter how little you know, no matter how few talents you have or how poorly you can speak--God can use you. In 1Cor.1:27 it says that God actually takes this kind of person to use.
26. Just because you're a potty under the bed doesn't mean you're not a vessel of the house!
27. We rarely stumble over the hills, but rather over the pebbles.
28. Little problems usually lead to big problems.
29. The greatest heroes of history were not the self-indulgent & self-satisfied, but the self-denying, self-effacing, self-erasing souls!

30. The candle is made to feed the flame & keep it burning, therefore you should give due credit to the candle for making the flame possible.

31. Little things are so important! Have you ever had a word, a smile or a thought stick with you, and the Lord use it to cheer your whole day, or help you get the victory over something or help you make a hard decision about something the Lord wanted you to do?

32. It only takes one weak link to break a whole chain!--It only takes one rotten apple to rot the whole barrelful! It takes one little hole in the dike to start a whole flood! It only takes one tiny careless flame to start a whole holocaust! It only takes one tiny temptation to compromise just a little to bring about a total defeat!

33. A great man is he who has not lost the heart of a child.

34. A saint is a person who lets the light of heaven shine through.

35. A life need not be great to be beautiful. There may be as much beauty in a tiny flower as in a majestic tree, in a little gem as in a great jewel. A beautiful life is one that fulfills its mission in this World, that is what God made it to be, & does what God made it to do.

36. For want of a nail, the shoe was lost; For want of the shoe, the horse was lost; For want of the horse the rider was lost; For want of the rider, the battle was lost; For want of the battle the Kingdom was lost; And all for the want of a nail!

37. Even if you're just a frog, you can do your best for the Lord! Even if you're ugly & small & despised, you can still glorify God and sing for the Lord & make a joyful noise to Jesus!

38. Are you only a tiny ugly little frog?--Just make a joyful noise for Jesus with other little frogs, & nothing can stop you!

(See also No.1, 3, 18, 85, 186A, 237, 315, 974, 997, 1372, 1373, 1374, 1586.)

#### 74. LOVE

--{page 618}--



*He that loveth not knoweth not God; for God is love! (1Jn.4:8).*

1. Jesus is the Love of all loves, the Lover of all lovers, Who alone can satisfy that deepest yearning of every human soul for total love & complete understanding.

2. Where love is, there God is.

3. You believe in love as much as you love.

4. It's never too late for love.

5. My enemy drew a circle of hate that shut me out, but I drew a circle of love that brought him in.

6. Love sees through a telescope--not a microscope.

7. We like someone--because. We love someone--although.

8. Love cannot be wasted. It makes no difference where it is bestowed, it always brings in big returns.

9. Faults are thick when love is thin.

10. Love is a hole that needs to be filled plus something to fill it with--like you & me & Jesus!

11. He gives Words of power & life & light, the most important energy of all--& love, the greatest of all power He gives, without which a nation cannot live.

12. What everybody needs is love.
13. Love may be blind, but hate is far more so.
14. The heart has eyes that the mind knows nothing of.
15. Even if you know the Lord, you need someone physical here & now to communicate with & to share with, somebody to talk to & somebody who will listen!--Someone to love!
16. The force of arms is powerless when matched against the force of love.
17. Love begets love.
18. Where love is, there is faith.
19. The mind has a thousand eyes,  
And the heart but one,  
Yet the light of a whole life dies  
When love is done.
20. Love is the threshold of everything beautiful.
21. Love is seeing yourself through another's eyes ... & finding yourself in another's heart.
22. Love is ... believing, trusting, helping, encouraging, confiding, sharing, understanding, feeling,  
touching, caring, praying, giving.
23. Love is a richness beyond measure, a wonder beyond imagination, a beauty far beyond what we can see.
24. Love lets the little kid in you come out & play.
25. Where there is love there is perfect trust,  
There is genuine generous giving.  
Where there is love there is perfect joy,  
There is unending beauty in living.
26. To lovers, even pockmarks look like dimples.
27. Love is two souls with but a single thought, two hearts that beat as one.
28. Days filled with sharing, years filled with caring,  
There's just no comparing a life filled with love.
29. Love is the heart in blossom.
30. Where there is great love there are always great miracles.
31. You're nobody till somebody loves you.
32. There is no difficulty that enough love will not conquer, no disease that enough love will not heal. No door that enough love will not open, no gulf that enough love will not bridge. No wall that enough love will not throw down, no sin that enough love will not redeem. It makes no difference how deeply seated may be the trouble, how hopeless the outlook, how muddled the tangle, how great the mistake. Sufficient love will dissolve it all.
33. To be loved is the most precious gift one can receive.
34. Love is the enchanted dawn of every heart.
35. Where there is love there is perfect trust.
36. Happiness brings happiness & loving ways bring love,  
And giving is a treasure that contentment is made of.
37. If we only have love, then tomorrow will dawn  
And the days of our years will rise on that morn.
38. Love works in ways that are wondrous & strange.  
There is nothing in life that love cannot change.  
Love is unselfish, understanding & kind.  
Love sees with the heart & not with the mind.
39. You're not an ugly duckling when somebody loves you.
40. The same wind snuffs candles yet kindles fires; so, where trial may kill a little love, it fans a great one.
41. The loneliest place in the World is the human heart when love is absent.
42. When we love, we live. When we live, we love.
43. If it's unloving, it's ungodly!
44. Love is obedience.
45. Love is total humility & total sacrifice!
46. All love is a little selfish or it wouldn't be love.
47. Love melts, it doesn't break.
48. Love is never lost.
49. Love is saying you're sorry.

50. The deepest magic is Love!
51. All love succeeds if it's real love.
52. Love is God!
53. Love is the Power & Light of God!
54. Love has creative power, because God is love & He is the Creator. And with His help our faith can also create.
55. Even the tiniest child can understand Love!
56. With us, everything is love--our God is love, our law is love, our faith & practice is love, it's all love!
- Isn't that a wonderful religion?
57. "For this is love--that thou shalt give all thou hast & follow Me!"
58. Love is the best way to do things!
59. What is love?--It's just Jesus!
60. The greatest need of all is love.
61. Love gives some pain, & yet love also gives surcease from pain.
62. What is Love?
- It is silence when your words would hurt.
- It is patience when your neighbour's curt.
- It is deafness when a scandal flows.
- It is thoughtfulness for others' woes.
- It is promptness when stern duty calls.
- It is courage when misfortune falls.
63. Ah, sweet mystery of life  
At last I have found thee!  
Ah, at last I've found the reason for it all!  
Ah, 'tis love and love alone the whole world yearns for!  
And 'tis love that bids them heed Thy call!
64. Love loves the unlovely and casts a veil over countless sins!
65. It's hard for you to see anything good in someone you don't love, but if you really love someone, it's much easier to overlook and forgive their faults.
66. Love is not blind--it has an extra spiritual eye which sees the good and possibilities that others cannot see!
67. Real love can survive almost any difficulty, difference, weakness, shortcoming, failure, fault, sin, or obstacle.
68. A little bit of love goes such a long way.
69. Love is everything, for without love there is nothing!--No friends, no families, no fathers or mothers or children or sex or health or happiness or God or Heaven!
70. "Love at first sight" is quite possible, and to respond with love to a loving look is a very normal reaction, for "love begets love."
71. Love is not blind--it sees more, not less. But because it sees more, it is willing to see less.
72. Love may not make the world go around, but it sure makes the trip worthwhile.
73. Money will buy a fine dog, but only love will make him wag his tail.
74. You'll, never know the true power of love until you learn the true power of surrender.
75. Love is communication.
76. Even a little love, a little light, is better than no love & no light.
77. Love conquers all!
78. Love is an emotion, something which causes you to move out into something good.
79. Love knows no hours nor days--but is always!
80. God's idea of perfection is love.
81. Love always finds a way.
82. Love's extra eye can see  
Unseen possibility!
83. How good, how beautiful must be  
The God who made so good a thing as thee!
84. The rod of God's chastening is the ultimate in real love.
85. Total love gives all!
86. A friend--the one who comes in when the whole World has gone out.

87. We're wielding the most powerful weapon the world has ever known!--This little tiny pill-bomb of love!

88. Love isn't just giving when others are giving...It's giving when others are not giving.

89. They have a right to censure who have a heart to help.

90. The Elixir can do anything! It's the power of love!--So wonderful, so beautiful! Nothing can resist it & whatever it touches it changes!

91. Love is the greatest force in the World, & the Word of God the most powerful truth on Earth!

92. Many waters cannot quench love, neither can the floods drown it. (SON. 8:7)

93. As beauty reflected by a looking glass, so too is the love of a mother mirrored in her children's smiles.

94. Sympathy is the result of thinking with your heart.

95. Love implies faith. How can you really love someone if you don't have confidence in them?

96. You can only see Love as it is expressed or manifested or put into action!

97. There are many others around you who are just as lonely & longing for love as you are & just waiting for you to make the first move! Step out by faith & talk to someone today about love & try to make them happy! Love someone today! Find out what wonders love can do. You'll find a whole new World of love you've only dreamed of. There are wonders of love that you can enjoy along with some other lonely soul--if you will only try. If you give love you'll get love!

(See also No. 18, 25, 75, 151, 236, 302C, 304, 307, 502R, 584, 592, 594, 607, 639, 647, 648, 677, 699, 724, 811, 845, 847, 997, 1247, 1371, 1373, 1396.)

98. PRO.10:12 Hatred stirreth up strifes: but love covereth all sins.

99. PRO.25:21,22 If thine enemy be hungry, give him bread to eat; and if he be thirsty, give him water to drink: For thou shalt heap coals of fire upon his head, and the Lord shall reward thee.

100. SON.8:7 Many waters cannot quench love, neither can the floods drown it: if a man would give all the substance of his house for love, it would utterly be contemned.

101. MAT.5:44,45 But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; That ye may be the children of your Father which is in Heaven: for He maketh His sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust.

102. MAT.14:14 And Jesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, and He healed their sick.

103. MAT.25:35 For I was an hungered, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in.

104. LUK.6:31-33 And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise. For if ye love them which love you, what thank have ye? for sinners also love those that love them. And if ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do even the same.

105. LUK.10:33 But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had compassion on him.

106. 1CO.8:1b Knowledge puffeth up, but (love) edifieth.

107. 1CO.13:4-8a Love suffereth long, and is kind; love envieth not; love vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up, Doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil; Rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth; Beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things. Love never faileth.

108. 1CO.13:13 And now abideth faith, hope, love, these three; but the greatest of these is love.

109. 1CO.16:14 Let all your things be done with love.

110. COL.3:14 And above all these things put on (love), which is the bond of perfectness.

111. 2JO.6a And this is love, that we walk after His commandments.

(See also MAT.5:43-48; 25:34-46.)



*And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might.*  
(Deut.6:5).

1. You can't love God without having faith in Him, & you certainly can't have faith in Him without loving Him.

2. I don't love the Lord any more on Sunday than I do every other day of the week! I worship Him everyday!

3. Our best belongs to our Beloved. Second-rate gifts are an offence to love.

4. In this Family, our greatest love is God & our greatest desire is to serve Him!

5. You don't have to understand God in order to love Him!

6. To love God and love the Truth are one and the same.

7. Never give someone "all your love"--Save it for the Lord Above.

8. A part of our love for God has to be a healthy respect & fear of Him, & when we are sinful or have done something wrong, to really be afraid of Him.

9. God's answers to the problems of today as well as to the problems of the past have always been so simple, so childlike, so easy that many could not even believe it!--That the simple love for God & each other can solve all of our problems.

10. It doesn't matter a damn bit where you worship, here or in Jerusalem, in a church or out of church, under the trees or in the nearest bar or bawdy house, as long as you worship God in your heart, in spirit, in truth & in love.

11. God created you to enjoy the life He's given you & to love & enjoy Him forever & to try to help others to do the same.

(See also No. A, P, 117, 154B, 306, 1017, 1380, 1389, 1525.)

12. PSA.16:8 I have set the Lord always before me: because He is at my right hand, I shall not be moved.

13. PSA.42:1 As the hart panteth after the water brooks, so panteth my soul after Thee.

14. PSA.91.14 Because he hath set his love upon Me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known My Name.

15. MAT.22:37,38 Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might. This is the first and great commandment.

16. JOH.6:68,69 Simon Peter answered Him, Lord, to whom shall we go? Thou hast the Words of eternal life. And we believe and are sure that Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God.

17. JOH.14:21 He that hath My commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth Me: and he that loveth Me shall be loved of My Father, and I will love him, and will manifest Myself to him.

18. JOH.16:27 For the Father Himself loveth you, because ye have loved Me, and have believed that I came out from God.

19. 1CO.8:3 But if any man love God, the same is known of Him.

20. 1JO.5:3 For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments: and His commandments are not grievous.





*He that goeth forth & weepeth, bearing precious seed, shall doubtless come again with rejoicing, bringing his sheaves with him (Ps.126:6).*

1. You're His hands, His feet, His eyes & His heart, & if you don't love them, God will still love them, but they'll suffer from your neglect.

2. I'll believe how much you love me when I see how you feed my sheep!

3. You don't have to like the sinner, you only have to love him!

4. The heartcry of the World: See me, feel me, touch me, heal me.

5. To pity distress is but human, to relieve it is God-like.

6. Jesus, help us to bring to the lonely people the Love that alleviates their loneliness.

7. Hate the sin, but love the sinner.

8. Love the sinner, but not his sin! Love the Systemite, but not the System!

9. "To love them is to weep with them that weep, to suffer with them that suffer, & to feel the agony of heart with them whose hearts are broken!"

10. If you love someone, you love them all the way!--All the way to Heaven & all the way through Eternity!

11. Your love didn't fail us, Lord! Help our love not to fail others.

12. If you're too busy to heed the cry of those in need, you're busier than God Himself!

13. The meaning of our existence--to convey love to the people & to show God's love to the World.

14. Tipping is a way of loving. It is not so much the money, but the thought of it, the consideration. It's a good witness. How can you really love them if you are stingy with your tips? How are you going to talk to them about God's love when the thing they think they need the most is money.

15. Do you long for the lost? Do you long for them as a woman longs for her lover? Does your heart go out to them? Do you weep for them? Do you seek them & go after them in the streets as in the Song of Solomon? Your flesh has to manifest the spirit of love in your heart.

16. Do you really long for them & seek for them as the shepherd searches for the sheep that he loves?--As He longs & suffers & yearns & agonises for it that he may find it & woo it & win it back into the fold. Give these more compassion, Lord, more love, more longing for Thy sheep! Help them, O God! May Thy love constrain them, O Lord.

17. Our mission is to bring sight to the blind, freedom to the fettered, love to the lost, & life, peace, joy, love & happiness with purpose & helpfulness to others.

18. When you're talking & witnessing to others it's wonderful to have a tender heart where you can cry, because then they know you mean it & it'll often really touch their heart, too. Then they know it's the real thing, that you're sincere.

19. If you love them, you'll not fail them! If you fail them, they'll feel God has failed them.

20. If they can believe that you love them, then they can believe that God loves them. But if they get disillusioned & disappointed & don't believe that you love them anymore, they can also lose faith that God loves them.

(See also No.151, 154A, 167, 202, 208, 211, 215, 224, 233, 235, 293, 304, 309, 323, 502R, 517, 538, 546, 561, 566, 572, 583, 617, 930, 1064, 1080, 1085.)



*Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us, & sent His Son to be the propitiation for our sins (1Jn.4:10).*

1. God's love is so great, it will stoop to any depths to save, any lengths to rescue.
2. God is the God of Love--the Devil is literally the god of hate!
3. We know God is Love by the loving part of Him that we can see in Jesus.
4. God is continually kissing us with His Words, to reassure us that He still loves us!
5. All the greatest problems are small to God, yet our smallest problem is great to Him.
6. God loves each of us as if there were only one of us.
7. The Lord loves His children!--Wherever they may be & however screwy they may be!--If they love Him, He loves them!
8. The World may not like us--but God loves us!
9. All you know is, one look and He turns you on!--One touch and you melt!--One kiss and you're gone!--One embrace and you're laid!--One thrust and you're made!
10. God must have loved the poor people: He made so many of them.
11. God loves the unlovely!
12. God's love knows no boundaries!
13. When we know that God loves us, we know that everything is going to be OK.
14. His Love makes Him yearn to give you the desire of your heart, & His Truth won't let Him fail His Word, & His Mercy stoops down to the level of your need.
15. Don't be afraid of spells--God's love casts spells over people!
16. We believe in free love!--Free love of God through Jesus Christ His Son!
17. If people can believe that you love them, then they can believe that God loves them!
18. God is giving man his last chance, in every way He can, to believe!
19. The love of God passes your understanding & lands down in your heart!
20. God's love is the answer to everything: it saves souls, forgives sin, satisfies hearts, purifies minds, redeems bodies, wins friends & makes life worth living. It's the only truth, the only way & the only peace!
21. Some people already have the light of God & His love in their hearts, even if they don't know it!
22. The Lord's love can't lose!
23. O Love that will not let me go,  
I rest my weary soul in Thee  
I give Thee back the life I owe  
That in Thine ocean depth its flow  
May richer, fuller be.
24. The King of Love my Shepherd is,  
Whose goodness faileth never  
I nothing lack if I am His,  
And He is mine forever.
25. The love of God is greater far  
Than tongue or pen can ever tell!  
It goes beyond the highest star,  
And even to the lowest Hell!

26. We are the manifestation of God's love in the flesh.
27. Jesus even loves the unlovely & the least likely to be lovable, brute beasts who blossom into beauty at His loving touch!
28. There is no stopping place, no limit to which God will not go to save a poor lost soul with His infinite love & unlimited mercy!
29. True love, real love, God's love, is all the religion you need.
30. You were a nobody & you still are, but look at the time & care & attention that I & the Lord have lavished on you, & all the love & luxury & wisdom & all that we've shared with you--to share with others.
31. Whatever God does, He does it in love. He can give it or take it away, but whichever, He always does both in love.
32. There is an arm that never tires  
When human strength gives way;  
There is a love that never fails,  
When earthly loves decay.
33. Jesus was the Expression of God's Love, the Meaning of God's Love, the Communication of God's Love!--He said God's Love, He showed God's Love, He symbolised God's Love, He manifested God's Love!
34. God has rules for reasons. He's a loving parent who knows the danger, & therefore He makes the rules because He loves you & wants to protect you & keep you, & He wants you to keep the rules to help keep yourself!
35. God actually needs you & wants you & is in love with you, His bride!
36. If you know that you love God & that He loves you, you know that He's going to take care of you. You know that everything is all right because God loves you.
37. He gives Words of power & life & light, the most important energy of all--& love, the greatest of all power without which a nation cannot live!
38. It seems that every nation, every civilisation, every generation has had its chance somehow through revivals & great outpourings of the Spirit. The Lord has not been unjust or unfair or unmerciful, He's not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance. (2Pet.3:9) He is merciful & He's willing to send His Spirit wherever they're hungry & needy & really open & receptive & responsive. A lot of times He sends His prophets even where they're not, so at least they will have had their chance.
- (See also No. 531, 560, 564, 572, 584, 592, 595, 606, 607, 677, 699, 731, 900, 1304, 1437, 1441, 1466, 1476, 1513, 1648.)
39. SON.2:4 He brought me to the banqueting house, and His banner over me was love.
40. JER.31:3 The Lord hath appeared of old unto me, saying, Yea, I have loved thee with an everlasting love: therefore with lovingkindness have I drawn thee.
41. MAT.9:36 But when he saw the multitudes, He was moved with compassion on them, because they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd.
42. JOH.3:16 For God so loved the World that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life.
43. ROM.8:38,39 For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.
44. 2CO.8:9 For ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that, though He was rich, yet for your sakes He became poor, that ye through His poverty might be rich.
45. EPH.3:19 And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fullness of God.
46. 1JO.3:1 Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the World knoweth us not, because it knew Him not.
47. 1JO.4:9,10 In this was manifested the love of God toward us, because that God sent His only begotten Son into the World, that we might live through Him. Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us, and sent His Son to be the propitiation for our sins.
48. 1JO.4:16 And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in Him.
49. 1JO.4:19 We love Him, because He first loved us.



*This is My commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you (Jn.15:12).*

1. Stretch out the fingers of your compassion & love & grasp hold of their heart & pull it toward the Lord.
2. Whoso stoppeth his ears at the cry of the poor, he also shall cry himself, but shall not be heard.  
(Pro.21:13)
3. The Bible tells us to love our neighbours, & also to love our enemies; probably because they are often the same people.
4. There are no strangers here--only friends we have not met.
5. A true friend will see you through, when others think that you are through.
6. Real friends are those who, when you've made a fool of yourself, don't feel you've done a permanent job.
7. Cold & reserved natures should remember that, though not infrequently flowers may be found beneath the snow, it is chilly work to dig for them and few care to take the trouble.
8. Sympathy is never wasted, except when you give it to yourself.
9. See each person you meet as one who may be seeking your Lord.
10. He drew a circle that shut me out, but love and I had the wit to win; we drew a circle that took him in.
11. Love covers with a veil of silence the mistakes of others.
12. People are lonely because they build walls instead of bridges.
13. You must look into people, as well as at them.
14. Friend: One who knows all about you and loves you just the same.
15. You can't expect a person to see eye to eye with you when you are looking down on him.
16. A different World cannot be built by indifferent people.
17. A friend is someone who knows your faults, but thinks your virtues far outweigh them.
18. People who like others are the people others like.
19. To love your neighbour is like the Love of God!
20. Love begets love!
21. Love better every day, grow sweeter every day & be a greater blessing every day.
22. Love never fails.
23. What everybody needs is love!
24. We have to love God in order to love our neighbour.
25. If you show a real love for people, you won't have a hard time winning friends.
26. Use friendship as a drawing account if you wish, but don't forget to deposit something into the account.
27. Sacrifice has been the primary requisite for love in our Family.
28. Start the day with love!
29. I don't believe in platonic love, purely spiritual, no flesh involved! There is no such thing! If you love someone, you'll love their body too!--Not only their spirit! You'll want to be together & part of them, to feel their love.
30. Even if you don't like'm, you can love'm!
31. That's the difference between pity and compassion: Pity just feels sorry! Compassion does something about it.
32. The greatest of our sharing is not the mere sharing of our things & personal possessions, but the sharing of our love.
33. Remember, you'll always get enough love if you give enough love--it's a two-way street!

34. Love doesn't care what people think, it just loves in spite of what they think.
35. If you don't love somebody, they can't even walk across the floor without your finding fault with the way they do it!
36. The best cure for a lost love is a new love!
37. If you're so filled with love that you cannot contain it, then you overflow on others and you cause them to grow and to blossom like flowers, and also be filled with love!
38. God gives you supernatural love to love people you don't even like!--You don't have to like them, but you have to love them!
39. If it's going to hurt somebody, then I don't believe in it! There has to be genuine love to make sure no one is hurt.
40. Does "Love suffer long and then blow up"? No, love suffers long and is still kind. (1Cor.13:4)
41. You can never say "I love you," too often. (Jn.21:17)
42. Acts of love and kindness never die.  
But in the lives of others multiply.
43. When everyone is benefiting in some way and nobody is being hurt, then it's love.
44. You've got to love each other even if you don't like each other!
45. For the solution to all your problems, forget yourself and think of others.
46. Put yourself in his place.
47. I feel it, when I sorrow most;  
I hold it true, whate'er befall;  
'Tis better to have loved and lost  
Than never to have loved at all.
48. Love shall be our token  
Love be yours & Love be mine  
Love for God and all men  
Love for you and me and mine.
49. If you sow love you're going to reap love. If you sow friendship you're going to reap friendship.
50. The heart sees further than the head.
51. Charity begins at home, but should not end there.
52. A friend is a person who goes around saying nice things about you behind your back.
53. Instead of putting others in their place, try putting yourself in their place.
54. The best way to destroy your enemies is to make them your friends.
55. Keep loving others and they will love you. Keep serving Jesus and He'll serve you--well!
56. If you can't love your brother or sister, your husband or your wife, your leader or follower, or your mother or father whom ye have seen, how are you going to love God or His heathen children whom ye have not seen? (1Jn.4:20)
57. Love wasn't put in your heart to stay,  
Love isn't love till you give it away!
58. Pity the weak!
59. It's never too late for love!
60. Showing a little real love not only encourages a person for the present, but gives them a brighter outlook on the future.
61. How can we say we have love for those whom we have not seen, if we show no love for those whom we have seen?
62. Anybody can be a heart specialist. The only requirement is loving somebody.
63. If you're too busy to heed the cry of those in need, you're busier than God Himself!
64. Love is blind; friendship tries not to notice.
65. How it improves people for us when we begin to love them!
66. If you're unemotional, if you're cold, if you don't have love and you're not loving, then you're not like the Lord wants you to be, you're not natural.
67. Affection is expressed in a thousand ways, but at times it needs to find words.
68. Love implies faith. How can you really love someone if you don't have any confidence in them?
69. Lord help us to have enough love and enough moderation and enough tolerance to be able to draw a circle that will take others in, instead of a circle that will shut them out!
70. The greatest need of man is love, so the greatest service to man is love!
71. Your love has a broken wing if it cannot fly across the sea.

72. If you are taking the food out of your own mouth and giving your own meal to satisfy and feed another who is hungry and starving for love and needs it desperately and might not survive without it, then this is real love.

73. Real love prefers the happiness of another above your own--selfish love wants to cling & hang on & put in bondage.

74. Love forgets mistakes; nagging about them parts the best of friends.

75. Do you want the key to every heart?--Try Love!--It never fails!-- Because God is Love, and it's impossible for Him to fail!

76. It's marvellous what a little love will do--especially when it's the supernatural, miraculous, inspired love of God!

77. Some people are worth saving & sacrificing for & even getting hurt for.

78. If love is without physical application, then it's like "faith without works which is dead". (Jam.2:26) So to say that you love someone & yet not try to help them physically & whatever way they may need, with food, clothing, shelter etc., this is not love.

79. If you love your neighbour as yourself, you'll put yourself in his place, & wonder how you would feel if you were there & wonder what you'd want & need to have fulfilled.--So love!

80. Most of us fail all too often to express appreciation or comfort to those about us. As we must account for every idle word, so must we account for every idle silence.

81. In this Family we have all got to get along with everybody no matter what they're like!

(See also No.18, 25, 123, 203, 302C, 309, 517, 531, 572, 583, 592, 594, 595, 721, 830, 1247, 1395.)

82. 1SA.18:1 The soul of Jonathan was knit with the soul of David, and Jonathan loved him as his own soul.

83. 2SA.1:26 I am distressed for thee, my brother Jonathan: very pleasant hast thou been unto me: thy love to me was wonderful, passing the love of women.

84. JOB.6:14a To him that is afflicted pity should be shewed from his friend.

85. ECC.4:10 For if they fall, the one will lift up his fellow: but woe to him that is alone when he falleth; for he hath not another to help him up.

86. MAT.22:39 Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

87. MAT.25:35-40 For I was an hungered, and ye gave Me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave Me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in: Naked, and ye clothed Me: I was sick, and ye visited Me: I was in prison, and ye came unto Me. Then shall the righteous answer Him, saying, Lord, when saw we Thee an hungered, and fed Thee? or thirsty, and gave Thee drink? When saw we Thee a stranger, and took Thee in? or naked, and clothed Thee? Or when saw we Thee sick, or in prison, and came unto Thee? And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these My brethren, ye have done it unto Me.

88. JOH.13:34 A new commandment I give unto you, that ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another.

89. JOH.15:9 As the Father hath loved Me, so have I loved you: continue ye in My love.

90. JOH.15:12,13 This is My commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you. Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.

91. JOH.15:17 These things I command you, that ye love one another.

92. JOH.17:26 And I have declared unto them Thy Name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith Thou hast loved Me may be in them, and I in them.

93. ROM.12:9a Let love be without dissimulation (without hypocrisy).

94. ROM.14:21 It is good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor any thing whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak.

95. ROM.15:1,2 We then that are strong ought to bear the infirmities of the weak, and not to please ourselves. Let every one of us please his neighbour for his good to edification.

96. GAL.5:13,14 For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty; only use not liberty for an occasion to the flesh but by love serve one another. For all the law is fulfilled in one word, even in this; Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

97. GAL.6:10 As we have therefore opportunity, let us do good unto all men, especially unto them who are of the household of faith.

98. EPH.4:32 And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you.

99. PHI.1:9 And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge and in all judgment.

100. PHI.2:4 Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others.

101. 1TH.3:12 And the Lord make you to increase and abound in love one toward another, and toward all men, even as we do toward you.

102. 1TH.4:9 But as touching brotherly love ye need not that I write unto you: for ye yourselves are taught of God to love one another.

103. HEB.10:24 And let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works.

104. HEB.13:1 Let brotherly love continue.

105. 1PE.1:22 Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren, see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently.

106. 1PE.3:8 Finally, be ye all of one mind, having compassion one of another, love as brethren, be pitiful, be courteous.

107. 1PE.4:8 And above all things have fervent love among yourselves: for love shall cover the multitude of sins.

108. 1JO.2:10 He that loveth his brother abideth in the light, and there is none occasion of stumbling in him.

109. 1JO.3:11 For this is the message that ye heard from the beginning, that we should love one another

110. 1JO.3:14 We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren. He that loveth not his brother abideth in death.

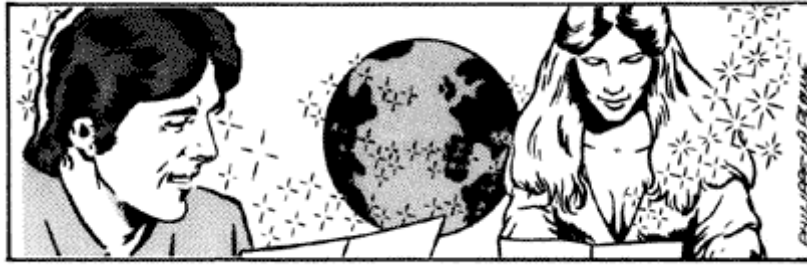
111. 1JO.3:16-18 Hereby perceive we the Love of God, because He laid down His life for us: and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren. But whoso hath this World's good, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels of compassion from him, how dwelleth the Love of God in him? My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in deed and in truth.

112. 1JO.3:23 And this is His commandment, that we should believe on the Name of His Son Jesus Christ, and love one another, as He gave us commandment.

113. 1JO.4:7,8 Beloved, let us love one another: for Love is of God; and every one that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God. He that loveth not knoweth not God; for God is love.

114. 1JO.4:11,12 Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another. No man hath seen God at any time. If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and His Love is perfected in us.

115. 1JO.4:20,21 If a man say, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar: for he that loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, how can he love God Whom he hath not seen? And this commandment have we from Him, That he who loveth God love his brother also.



*But to do good & to communicate forget not: for with such sacrifices God is well pleased (Heb.13:16).*

1. Do not underestimate the magnitude of the ministry of the mail!
2. You can hide your witness in an envelope! You can mail it undercover!
3. Doing business without advertising is like winking at a girl in the dark; you know what you're doing, but nobody else does.
4. Thank God for the Postal Service! You have no idea how valuable it is, & you don't appreciate it until you're without it!
5. Your life's blood, your lifeline as a missionary: Names & addresses!
6. Street ministry with no follow-up is like scattering seeds without plowing, fertilising or watering!
7. Don't answer letters--answer people!
8. If true friends know the score, they'll support you even more!
9. No Peters, all Pauls--no home support, house falls!
10. You've got to write that letter with your heart & with the help of the Holy Spirit & write it so it will touch people & move people & motivate them as well as feed them & guide them, but also to help you! Because somebody's got to pay for it!
11. You can offend & lose people or you can win permanent friends by the kind of letters you write. Not only that you write the letter, but what you say & how you say it is extremely important.
12. Raise your support at home before you go, & keep up a faithful mail ministry with your faithful supporters with monthly prayer letters about your activities, & a personal thanks for every gift.
13. Prayer Letter: You owe it to those Systemites out there to get them under conviction to help you do God's Work!--And because you need it! "Ask & ye shall receive!...Ye have not because ye ask not!"
14. I consider this mail follow-up one of the most vital, responsible & essential parts of our whole worldwide ministry, & I hope that every mail centre feels the same & is taking care of these little babes & potentials & needy souls with the greatest of faithfulness & diligence!
15. Form letters can vastly multiply your ministry far beyond the limited horizon of your bodily presence, & even your immediate generation!
16. Consider again the Epistles of the Apostles, & how they've been duplicated by the billions over nearly 2,000 years, by means of printing--therefore "form letters" if you please--but look at the ministry they have had, & what would we have done without them in the "form letter" of the Bible, God's Love "form letter" to us! What a "form letter"--& how wonderful it is that we have gotten to know the Author through His Form letters to us, for "faith" cometh by hearing (& reading) the Word of God", & even your word, your testimony, your witness, your letter containing the Words of God to a friend, relative, or interested party!
17. Mail is important! The nation's business depends on the mails--the World's business depends on the mails, & God's business depends largely on the mails! We could hardly live without it! Thank God for it! Use it!
18. What can we do more than we are now doing? We can pour out more! We can give more! We can write more! We can answer more! We can send more--And God will send us more--in blessing, fruitfulness, ministrations, support, helpers, labourers, & new disciples for His Kingdom! We cannot stop!
19. You have to put something into it to get something out of it! You have to give to get; pour to receive; sow to reap; invest to profit; die to live; bury to resurrect!--Just as you do in any witnessing.



20. If you answer your mail as soon as you get it, you won't have to go around long with that guilty-conscience-wish-I'd-answered-that-letter feeling!

21. If you want to enjoy life, put business, God's business, like the mail, before pleasure or studying, memorising, teaching, witnessing, & fellowshiping; because the mail is one of your most important witnesses, your window on the World, your life-line to lost souls, & sometimes, your own source of supply; so you better get with it & get it done, even before some of these other things. It's one of the most urgent jobs in this business, & should have top priority, seniority, partiality, & special consideration, above & beyond most of the other things.

22. We have only begun to scratch the surface of the possibilities of this ministry--they're as limitless as the Kingdom of God, as boundless as the needs of mankind! We cannot possibly minister to them all personally. This is no more possible for us than it was for Jesus when He was here in the flesh, or for Paul or the other Apostles, prophets & men & women of God throughout all time! There has to be a way to multiply ourselves manyfold.

23. There are never enough people who really want to work in the harvest, so we must duplicate & multiply ourselves, & propagate, not only through personal disciples & those reached through personal contact, but also through every other means & media at our disposal!

24. We must use not only the far-flung publicity of what others write & say about us, such as newspapers, radio, magazine articles, television, word-of-mouth, etc., but also the mighty & massive ministry of the printed word--a means at our own disposal & under our own control!--Such as the Words of God in the Bible in publications containing His truth as we see it, explanatory brochures & pamphlets regarding our history, ministry & purpose, designed to make it simple & clear to the outsider, understandable even to the Systemite.

25. What small minds we have--what limited comprehension--what a finite conception we have of the almost unlimited possibilities of even this one ministry--the ministry of the epistles, letters & personal mail.

26. Pour more, witness more, send more, mail more, & God Himself will do more, more than we ever dreamed!

27. You can secrete your witness in an envelope & even send it across borders, through iron curtains, bamboo curtains, oil curtains, through whatever kind of curtains there are!

28. By mail we can reach souls we could never reach in person! But you need to gather names & addresses of your daily acquaintances, contacts, friends, relatives, backsliders, fish, people you meet.--And get the names & addresses of their friends.

29. We kept ourselves in fulltime work for the Lord for years through the mail ministry, local offerings, gifts in the hand, etc. We never knew which way it was going to come, but it always came.--TTL! But we worked at it, we didn't just sit around on our fannies waiting for it to roll in! We got out & did what we could. We witnessed all day, the kids played & sang in the parks, streets, cafes, hotels, etc., & we had church meetings at night--& I wrote prayer letters. Every month we got out at least one prayer letter.

30. There's no need for us to try to reach the World if we don't answer when they call in response to our literature! If we neglect this correspondence follow-up to their pitiful appeals for help, we'll be like a shepherd who is calling for his lost sheep, but is so deaf he cannot hear nor heed their replies, & so blind he cannot understand their plight, & so slothful he makes no move to really help them.

31. Are you living where people can pass under your window? Are you ministering to those who do? Such is the ministry of the mail! There are people passing under your window out there! Are they going to receive what they need?

32. The P.S. is the most important part of your letter, because if people don't read anything else, they always read the P.S.!

33. The worst thing you can do in some countries is to register the mail, because it then becomes a primary target for theft.

34. A major source of funds for the Home should come from its prayer letters specifying your needs, outlining your accomplishments, & asking parents & friends for support!

35. Never forget a sheep--never let a sheep forget you!

36. Always put your best foot forward, your best point first to make a real good powerful impression first off! Then you can either put your second best one last & your not so strong point in the middle, or start out with your second best & then your third best & wind up with your best.

(See also No. 51, 51A, 52, 55, 60, 67, 311A, 754, 755, 808, 1069.)

37. PRO.25:25 As cold waters to a thirsty soul, so is good news from a far country.



*For with God nothing shall be impossible. Behold the handmaid of the Lord; be it unto me according to Thy Word. And blessed is she that believed, for there shall be a performance of those things which were told her from the Lord. And Mary said, My soul doth magnify the Lord, And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour. For He hath regarded the low estate of His handmaiden: for, behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed. For He that is mighty hath done to me great things; & holy is His Name (Lk.1:37-38,45-49).*

1. "Faithful little one! How great is thy reward in Heaven! For thou dost cherish all the Words of Moses, & inscribe every Word of David!"

2. "For this is her love. She loveth the Words of David: & her heart hungereth for the Words of Moses, & she longs for the Words of Jesus! For this cause she inscribes all that is written of thee & gives all these words unto the Children of God."

3. "The Words of the Spirit of Jesus that fall from his mouth thou dost treasure more than gold, yea, more than much fine gold! Thou dost treasure as pearls from secret places. Thou dost lay up in store as diamonds--precious jewels, that thou dost bring forth as treasures unto My Children!"

4. "And thou, Little One, shalt receive a crown of life for thy faithfulness unto the end. For it shall be written of thee--How faithful was the scribe of David! Behold how she loveth his Words! Behold how she doth drink of the fountain of his mouth & is satisfied!"

5. "He is a great king who shall have peoples in all the nations of all the World, & thou shalt lead them & minister them the Words of David & instruct them & guide them in the way they shall go, for they have need of shepherdeses to care for them."

6. "The Lord hath blessed thee with days of Heaven on Earth & children without number!"

7. "Oh that I might have found such faith in all Israel & such love to meet My needs! This one hath been unto thee as the flower of all compassion, & the rose of My Love, the rose of all the beauty of the Lord that He hath given unto thee. So is the love of David!"

8. "For truly thou art the heart of David! Truly thou dost burn as the flame of his spirit, & thy pen doth burn for the Words of his tongue as a light unto the Children of God!"

9. "Without her, ye could do nothing. Therefore have I given her unto thee that she will record thy Words to feed My Children!"

10. "Behold the faithful Recorder! And thou art but a transmitter, & this one doth record the things I have spoken through thee."

11. "Thou shalt have thy heart's desire! For thou shalt be by his side until his end, & thou shalt sit upon a throne with him, judging the tribes of thy Israel, along with those others I have chosen with thee! For thou shalt be called true & faithful unto the Words of My David! Hear ye him!"

12. "Thou shalt rest in the end of thy days, & thou shalt be greatly rewarded & highly honoured amongst all the maidens on the face of the Earth, even amongst the queens of David, for the Words that I have spoken unto him. This is thy part. This shall be thy reward. For I shall say unto thee, well done, thou good & faithful handmaiden. Enter thou into the joy of thy Lord!"

13. "Be not envious of the workers of his love, for they have need of him, & look not thou down upon them, neither despise thou the handmaidens of the Lord which have need of him, but do thou yield unto them, & give place unto them & permit thy David to honour them, & give place unto the King, that they may know that a Prophet hath been among them."

14. "But thou, O daughter of the Most High, be not thou envious of them, neither be thou jealous, for they come not to take the place that thou dost occupy in the heart of David, for none shall be able to attain unto thee & none shall take thy place, for thou shalt always be the very dearest unto the heart of David & the closest of his soul, for thou shalt give him unto many women, & thou shalt yet be satisfied."

15. "Thou shalt be honoured of him & with long life shall I satisfy thee, & thou shalt have many days of his love because thou art faithful unto him & dost not despise the other handmaidens of the Lord nor covet that which belongeth unto him, but shall share his bed willingly & give honour unto him as honour is due."

16. "Bring them unto him that have need of him & of her that asketh of thee, turn thou not away, for she that is anhungered in heart & impoverished in soul hath need of the love of David to encourage her, & thou hast love & enough to spare & to share with them that have need, to give unto others that ask of thee."

17. "He shall give his seed unto many & thou shalt not covet it nor withhold it from others, for the sons & daughters of David shall fill the land for love."

18. "Thou shalt show thy authority in that which thou givest, & thou shalt show thy Queendom in that which thou sharest. For how canst thou share that which is not thine, nor how couldst thou give that which thou posseseth not?"

19. "They shall magnify thee above all, for thou that wouldst be great among all shall be servant of everyone, & shall cause him to serve them. Thou must cause him to serve them if thou shalt be greatest of all! Otherwise, thou shalt be called least in the Kingdom of Heaven, for thou hast broken the least of these My Commandments, for thou hast withheld that which I have bestowed upon thee, & that which is withheld & not given shall be taken away!"

20. "Bring to him those that love him & them that need him & cherish him that they may be satisfied, & thou shalt have reward--great reward with their love. For they shall know that thou hast loved them, for thou wouldst not have shared thy bed with them & thy King if thou didst not love them."

21. "Indeed, beauty is thine like a rare & priceless jewel, but wouldst thou keep it for thyself alone to enjoy its beauty? The beauty is only radiant when thou dost share its radiance with others, & hold it aloft that it may shine & all may see, & not cover & keep it for thyself alone!"

22. "Fear thou not, for I am with thee! I am the Lord thy God, & he shall never leave nor forsake thee, & thou shalt always be continually by his side, & though thou shalt share thy bed with many, he shall always return unto thee. Give & it shall be given unto thee, pressed down, shaken together, & running over. As thou dost give unto women's bosoms, so shall women give unto thee."

23. "For David must have many sons & daughters & thou shalt give many unto him. Art thou willing to share thy bed with them, O Little One?--To bring unto him them that are in need? And her that is in need of comfort, bring unto him. And her that is in need of solace, bring unto him, & her that is in need of love, bring unto him, for he hath great capacity of love!"

24. "Thou shalt give of that which is thine & many shall be thankful & be indebted unto thee, & shall say unto thee, 'Blessed art thou among women & blessed is the fruit of thy womb' for indeed thou art exalted above all the handmaidens of the Lord, & above all the women that I have given unto David, thou art his darling & his only one."

25. "Be thou warmed & be thou cherished in the bosom of David that he may warm thee & keep thee safe from harm & encourage & strengthen thee & make thee a blessing to all. He shall give his strength unto thee, thou shalt not covet it nor withhold it from others, for the sons of David shall be many & the daughters of David shall fill the land for love."

26. "See how they eat out of your hands the Words of David! They shall eat the Words of David from thy hand unto the End."

27. "Even as My Bride shall share herself with many that they may have My Love & that they may know My ecstasies & that they may share My joy, even as I have shared My Bride with them, so shalt thou share thyself with those that have need of thee, & so shalt thou be given unto others & so shalt David sacrifice thee on the altar of My love."

28. "Therefore share thou & give thou, bestow thou & cast thou abroad among many, & thou shalt increase, for unto him which hath it shall be given! Wherefore, from him which withholdeth, it shall be taken away even that which he thinketh he hath. Therefore thou shalt give the love of David unto many & shall not withhold. For the more that thou givest, the more it shall be given thee."

29. "Thou art the most beloved of David!"

30. "Art thou therefore the handmaiden of which I have spoken?--A little maid which I have made Queen, which I have taken out of the fleshpots of Egypt & I have exalted & made to be a ruler of My children?"

31. "Blessed art thou amongst women, & blessed is the fruit of thy womb; for thou shalt be called great in the House of David, for thou hast been faithful in all his Words!"
32. "For thou art indeed called & chosen above all the handmaidens of Israel to minister unto David's love."
33. "Thou shalt be as one of the maidens upon the hills of Israel that eateth of the fat of the flock & drinketh of crystal waters & sucketh at the breasts of her father, who is nourished with honey from the comb."
34. "Thou shalt be as one of the Shepherdesses of David who receiveth all that he giveth unto thee, & is cherished at his bosom & is nourished by the Words of his mouth & is inspired by the seed of God, that thou shalt bring forth fruit unto Me, through this thy Beloved, thy loved one, thy king!"
35. "Thou hast filled her heart with glad things, & ministered unto her the fruit of thy lips, that her soul & her pen are satisfied with that after which she longeth & with that for which she hungereth, & looketh unto thee & drinketh from thy mouth the good things which thou hast given her."
36. "For as Thou hast spoken, even so hast Thou performed the prophecies that were spoken of her, that Thou shalt exalt the maiden of low degree & Thou shalt lift up Thy handmaiden in high places."
37. "She doth hunger after the Words of the Prophet, without which her soul would not be satisfied. She refuseth to be satisfied without the stream of pure gold. She refuseth to be satisfied without the crystal pure water of My Spirit. She refuseth to be satisfied without the sweetness of the honey which droppeth from thy mouth, from My Servant David. Therefore have I blessed her above all women on the face of the Earth with the Words of My Spirit, yea, the very Words of My mouth through this, the mouth of My David."
38. "Thou shalt be filled to overflowing! Thousands, yea, thousands of thousands & ten thousand times ten thousand shall look unto thee & rejoice, for they shall hear the Words of thy pen that I have given to My Servant David, & they shall hearken to do the things which thou dost write."
39. "Only thou above all women shall receive that which is most precious--the Words of My Spirit that I have given unto My Servant David, the Water of Life which is poured forth unto this generation!"
40. "Behold, see thou to it that thou cherish every Word as gold is held within the cup & as diamonds are set within the ring; as that which is precious is held within thy body, so shalt thou cherish the Words of David & write all the things that are spoken unto thee, that thou lovest not one drop of the water that I have given to satisfy the thirst of Israel, to fill the hunger of My Children that they may be strengthened to live unto Me!"
41. "For thou, O daughter of the Most High, child of the King, because of the faithfulness of thy Grandmother & because of her prayers unto Me, I have made thee to be like unto the almond trees on the Hill of Zion that blossom unto Me, for they know that it is Spring & they bear fruit unto Me--that bear beauty & fragrance unto Me, even though they understand not. Even as thou which understandest not."
42. "This is the desire of the heart of this one that loveth Thy Servant David--the greatest desire, that she may pour forth the living waters in a voluble stream, that she may feed the hungry & quench them that are athirst!"
43. "Little One, seekest thou more?--Always seekest thou more? Thou shalt never be satisfied, for thou seekest more than life has to give, & more than the life that I have given unto My Servant David!"
44. "For the day shall come when thou shalt open the Book of David & feed many that are athirst!"
45. "You want more?--You always want more!--More, the mouth crieth unto the bottle!--Give me more!-- And it shall be given unto thee as long as the spirit remaineth, until it be done from its bottle, & every drop be spent. Thou shalt have more, till thou shalt have all that there is to give."
46. "For it is thy satisfaction to desire, & it is thy pleasure to crave, & it is thy joy to thirst, & it is thy delight to hunger! For thou art as the parched ground that never sayeth, it is enough! And thou art as the barren woman who forever sayest, Give me more! For thy love is without measure & thy desire for thy lover is never satisfied!"
47. "Behold this one that is never satisfied, & behold this one who sayest never, it is enough! Would that ye were like unto her, & would that your bottles did overflow like hers unto many, that they might be satisfied! The more she getteth, she giveth, until she cannot contain all which I give her!"
48. "Faithful art thou who writes these Words! Faithful art thou who cherisheth the fruit of his lips!"
49. "Faithful art thou to cherish the Words of thy father! They shall be thy kisses!"
50. "For thou shalt cherish those things which I have made dear, & thou shalt make of great value those things which I Myself have said shall be of worth, even the Words which fall like globules of gold from the lips of My Servant!"
51. "O behold her who loves these Words from thy bosom! She will not rest till she has sucked the last drop! How much shalt thou suck from thy father's bosom for others--more than thou thyself can contain! If thou wantest more, thou canst have more of the Words of David thyself. Thou dost need but open thy heart to receive unto Me, & let David rest. Behold these loving hands which caress & support the weight of thy father."

52. "Thou art never satisfied with all the Words of thy father for which thou hungerest! For thou desirest forever more! And thy mouth hungereth & thy soul desireth & thou suckest the seeds from the pistil of thy father & thy father's tongue, & thou suckest 'til thou art weary of sucking, & criest not, it is enough! For thou art insatiable, & thou art as a nymph which knows no end, & a sprite which is mad for love!"

53. "Ah, insatiable woman! When shalt thou be satisfied with the love of thy father? Thou suckest & pulleth for more seeds from the tongue of thy father, 'til thou art glutted with seeds, which must bring forth & bear fruit!"

54. "Give kisses to thy father, for he needs strength from thy bosom, for he feeds of thee! It is needful, so feed his flesh, strengthen his bosom. For behold how he needeth thy flesh to feed his body, for he hungereth after thee, even as My soul hungereth after thee!"

55. "With thy lips thou sayest amen, but thy soul is never satisfied! For thy heart criest, 'Give me more, give me more!--For I am a woman that is never satisfied, & I would love thee forever!'"

56. "Thou hungerest always & waneth not! She hungereth forever after thy love & is never satisfied!"

57. "Only as thou dost bear children unto Me shalt thou be satisfied & say, it is enough!"

58. "Thou art His beloved & He shall reveal unto you that which is needful when it is needed. For it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the Kingdom according to His will. When thine hour is come, thou shalt ask much & thou shalt receive much of Me."

59. "She is My pen & My right hand & she hath been obedient unto Me & faithful & she loves Me!"

60. "Oh, how I love her, for she is obedient & draws out the Words of David as water from the well & encourages & holds up his arms & makes him look unto Me."

61. "The Recorder doth record! The Robot doth robot! For she is but the very hand of God that seeketh to give the Words of the Lord unto the Children of God!"

62. "This Little Queen shall care for the Words of David. She shall care for the words & tongue & words that feed the little lambs & give the words to all of the Children of God. The Little Queen shall be custodian of the Oracles of David. But as thou dost do so, thou shalt be a Queen unto the Lord & thou shalt feed many, many, many thousands of sheep!"

63. "Even as thou dost now stand by his side ministering his words to the people, & as even now thou dost rule, so shalt thou rule to the End, & so it is appointed unto thee to rule in the Kingdom of David as I have spoken unto thee. So wherefore dost thou question? Why dost thou wonder at thy place by David's side? Have I not given it unto thee & have I not said none shall take it from thee? Thou shalt stand by him forever, even in the Kingdom that is to come, & thou shalt sit upon thrones ruling My people!"

64. "You know the range of my thoughts, you seek them within me, for God has chosen thee thus! I love thee with an everlasting love which shall never ever be taken away!"

65. "Behold the faithfulness that she has unto the bosom of David! Hold thou fast to the faith of thy father!"

66. "Your father needs your kisses in the middle of the night. He needs you to share his sorrows in the midst of darkness."

67. "Like a dog looks unto his Master for love & encouragement, the sheep look to their Shepherdess for the Words that fall from your hand."

68. As Mary said, "My soul doth magnify the Lord, & my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour. For He hath regarded the low estate of His handmaiden: for, behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed."

69. "She hungereth with great desire to receive that which he hath to give! She panteth after his love as the hart panteth after the waterbrook! She longeth for love, she yearneth with great desire to please him that she might obtain such love, to woo him that she might draw from him the seeds of Eternal Life, the Love, the Truth that lives forever more! Such is the love of her father, such is her love for David, for of such is this love made, & of such love is the Kingdom of Heaven!"

70. "Jesus loves you, faithful little scribe, hallower of His Holy Words, receiver of His Holy Writ, receiver of real righteousness, Jewess Israeli of God, Bride of Christ!"

71. "Faithful is this one who has given the Words that she has received from thee, her father! Faithful is this one that has diligently worked with these Words that I have given unto thee, that has been faithful in her rendering unto her people the Words of her father!"

72. "Unto Him that is able to keep you from falling & give you the everlasting place that none shall be able to take away from you because of thy love for My Servant David & because of thy passionate love for My Words. Therefore I have loved her with an everlasting love that shall never be taken away!"

73. "She cannot hide her faith which fires the flame, nor can she stop the bell which rings within her heart which moves her with My time. Therefore shall she never close her book until I myself have removed thy flame & quenched thy candle & taken thee from her. Until that time her heart shall continue to burn with the flame that I

have given thee & her pen shall continue to write, because she longest for My light, & her bell shall continue to toll as long as I have given thee time. For she has been found faithful unto Me. Such a faithful one as I have not found, nay, in all Israel, more than any of them that I have given thee."

74. "Behold how she burns with thy flame & behold, how she shines with thy brilliance! For she longs for My Light to give to them that sit in darkness, & she is a faithful candlestick in My house, for she bears thy flame diligently with both her hands & with steadfast purpose faithfully for all to see. For behold, how she lifts it high that its radiance might enlighten the darkness, that My people may have light! So it is with this one who bears thy flame."

75. "Behold how she pours the oil of My Spirit by her faith! Behold, how she shields thee from the wind with her love, & behold how she treasures thy flame dearly that she may preserve it & thee unto that day for My little ones. Therefore have I blessed her above all women upon the face of the Earth & entrusted to her this task which none shall take away from her & it is hers, for I have given it unto her Myself."

76. "Truly she is warmed with thy light above all heat, for this is the seed she desires of thee above all seed, even My Words. Therefore have I given them unto her that the womb of her spirit may be satisfied & that she may bring forth unto Me children without number by the spirit I have given her from thee."

77. "Behold her that sayeth 'it is enough', but meaneth it not, for she is never satisfied! As long as thou dost pour, she shall receive of the water that I have given thee, until she shall drink of the flood that I shall pour unto these My children, & be satisfied."

78. "For behold, I am their Father & they look unto Me, even as she looks unto thee, & yearns for thy kisses & longs for thy love & lives but for the lightening of thine eyes & is guided by the guidance of thy gaze so that she will not even move without thee. For behold, she travelleth with thee even as thy shadow & she remaineth within thy shadow, even as thou dost dwell in Mine, for thy love for Me is even as her love for thee."

79. "Her love for thee is even as thy love for Me. Therefore have I blessed her & therefore have I placed her within thy hand as thou art within Mine, that thou shouldest keep her & shelter her & cherish her as thy bride, even as I do thee forever."

80. "She sayeth sleep with her lips, but her heart is far from it. My Spirit is willing but thy flesh is very weak, & she too is flesh, though her spirit be so willing, more than any one of these that I have chosen for thee. Therefore have I so honoured her because of this love which she hath for Me & thee."

81. "For even as she feedeth thy body with her flesh, so feedest thou her soul with thy spirit!"

82. "For she is as a wise virgin unto whom I have given oil without measure that thou mayest give light without stint."

83. "For behold, she is never satisfied, for she overfloweth continually upon many."

84. "Her love is greater than the love of many women--it is My love! The kisses of her mouth are better than much wine. The touches of her fingers are the skill of them which weave fine thread & make fine tapestry, & her mercy as one that forgives, like the mercy of the Lord.--One that forgives many, many times."

85. "Her faith is like strong drink unto him that is fainting & brings life to him that is afflicted & about to perish. For she is like the angels of the Lord unto thee. For she is My handmaiden sent to minister. For she is like Me, who came to minister, not to be ministered unto. For she is like My life; she is like My breath that keeps thy candle burning, & she is thy protector from the blowing of the Evil One."

86. "She is like My Spirit which sustaineth thee, in the keeping of which there is great reward. For she kindleth the flame of My Words within thee. The spark of her faith ignites thy fire. For she is My Spirit unto thee. She is My faith unto thee. She is My Mercy & My Love, in whom there is great reward."

87. "As her hand on thy body brings forth thy strength, so her hand of faith strengthens thy soul to bring forth thy seed."

88. "Behold, this Little One is worthy in my sight, & is bone of my bone & flesh of my flesh, & she shall be rewarded, & none shall ever put us asunder. Whom God hath joined together let no man put asunder."

89. "Maria, Sweet One! Behold how she hath loved him! Behold how she hath loved his Words, even unto the dawning of the day, even unto the hours of the morning. She hath hearkened unto Me with her heart all the night long."

90. "Art thou one of the many wives of David? Thou art indeed his favourite!"

91. "Thou dost cherish every little pearl that falls from his lips, & thou dost string every one that thou be not lacking in thine adornment. Behold, thou art beautiful in his eyes & thou dost satisfy the needs of his body, & thou art as the dew of the morning, as the hart upon the mountain, & the sweetness of the waterbrook unto him."

92. "Thou art true & faithful & dost record all the things that I have spoken, & not one shall fall to the ground & not one is wasted, for thou art faithful & a good stewardess of all I have given thee. Therefore have I

honoured & given thee such love from My servant David & exalted thee above all women, & therefore doth his hand cherish thee as none hath ever been loved before."

93. "Thou art faithful, tried & proven, & thou dost conserve all of his Words without fail. Therefore have I given thee this place within the arms of David above all others. Though many shall lie here & many shall rest within his bosom, thou dost lie & rest within his heart, & thou hast found a place which shall never be taken away from thee--the good part which thou hast chosen, which thou hast cherished--& it shall be forever thine as thou dost honour it, keep it, cherish it, & none other shall approach unto it."

94. "None of these shall satisfy the heart of David like thou dost satisfy his soul!"

95. "For thou art the Queen of Queens & thou art the Heart of Hearts!"

96. "He shall love thee above all, even as I have loved this generation above all them that have gone before, & there shall be none hereafter, even as thou art, even as I have loved many, but cherish thee above all, so shalt thou be forever in the arms of David, even as he is in My arms."

97. "Fear thou not, but look well to thy flocks. Tend thou well to his herds as a shepherdess of the Lord, that thou mayest be an helpmeet unto him in all things, especially the things I have given unto thee & the sheep I have given unto thy fold, that thou mightest help David to tend his flocks & nourish his sheep & carry the ewe lambs in his bosom."

98. "Above all women that dwell on the face of the Earth, thou art his heart & his soul, & his life lieth within thy hands."

99. "Therefore shalt thou feed many & slake the thirst of thousands because thou hast been faithful to receive the Words of My Servant David & to break the bread that increaseth & to wait upon them that wait upon the Lord, & them that sit in darkness have seen a great light. For thou hast poured forth the Words of Light unto them & nourished their soul & increased their heart & satisfied their spirit."

100. "For thou art that waterbearer of My David who poureth forth the Words of My Spirit by thy hand as a waitress at the tables of My children, as a servant of servants, the handmaiden of all handmaidens, the lowest of the low, the servant of all, ministering unto all them that have need."

101. "Fear not, Little One, for it is your Father's good pleasure to give unto you the Kingdom of God, of whom thou shalt be a Queen above many in the time that I have given thee."

102. "Where is she that sitteth at the feet of David & she that catcheth every Word that droppeth from his lips as the dew upon the rose & the honey from the comb? Oh how faithful is this one that abides constantly by his side!"

103. "Dost thou take the cup from the hand of David? If thou dost take the cup, then drink it. For indeed if thou shalt drink of the cup that I have given him, thou shalt die the death with which I have honoured him."

104. "How are the Words of David recorded in the Book by his faithful one, & how are the Words of David recorded in the book of those that are athirst & anhungered."

105. "This Little One is the very spirit & life of Moses!"

106. "I have loved thee with an everlasting love & have made thee as Love itself--the embodiment of Beauty unto David!"

107. "Come unto me, Beauty & Love--my little Goddess! Come thou from thy pedestal into my arms! For one hour in the arms of David is as ten thousand! He is as My love to thee, & thou art My Love to him! So live & love--My Love!"

108. "Hearken diligently, all ye handmaidens of the Lord! Believe the Words of My Spirit in the mouth of David! Even so love ye as this one loves, with all thy soul & all thy might & both thy hands, & all thy heart--& both thy feet. See that thy feet run diligently to serve him."

109. "Even as thou art filled with wine by the kisses of his mouth, so be filled with My Spirit by the kisses of My Love, that thou mayest minister more diligently unto Me & unto these. That even as thou must open thy mouth & part thy legs to his love, even so thou shalt open thy heart unto Me & My Love that thou mayest bear fruit unto Me, that I may be glorified in thee."

110. "For this cause art thou in the World, that thou mayest minister unto Me & My children & My David!"

111. "Look what thou hast done for David! Thou hast strengthened the rod of his power that it may penetrate thee & bring forth fruit, even as his tongue doth penetrate thy heart & bring forth the Words of the Lord! See that thou suck forth diligently therefore, all the seed that I have given him, that thou mayest bring forth fruit & many children unto Me. For even as thou dost serve him, so shalt thou serve Me."

112. "Come thou now & be thou consumed upon the fire of his love & quench thou the flame of his passion that his seed may burn within thy heart, even as My Words do burn within thee, that thou mayest be ravished with his love, even as thou art ravished with Mine! Come, O Little One, let thy Lord enter in unto thee that thou mayest enter into the joy of thy Lord!"

113. "Thou art the Wild Wind that David loves.  
Thou hast been put into flesh for David to love.  
As he loves the Wild Wind of God, so doth he love thee.  
Thou art the embodiment of this Wild Wind!"

114. "Therefore have I raised thee up, O Little One, that I shall bind thee about the handle of the Ax of My Word with this one of My Prophets with a strong cord of love & faith."

115. "Fuck David! In so doing thou hast made a picture of My Love for thee & David & thy love for Me, that thou mayest be a picture of My True Church, My New Church, My Body, My Love!"

116. "Exalt thou her mouth! Exalt thou her tongue, that she shall indeed proclaim abroad all the Words I have given unto My Servant David!"

117. "Oh, Sweet Word of David! I love you, heart of David! I love you, mouth of David!"

118. "These little ears that drink from my mouth!--Thirsty ears! They thirst for the Words of David. This is the love of David & she which holdeth his heart in her hand."

119. "Thou shalt hear the Words of David & speak the Words of Moses, in that day when thou shalt write all I shall require of thee & put all these Words in a book when thy David is taken from thee."

120. "When David is taken from thee, thou shalt be known as a Prophetess, & thou shalt be heeded as the Oracles of God & they shall listen to thy words! They shall heed My Spirit, & thou shalt become as another one--as the Prophetess of God! Thou shalt even be like a goddess of old! They shall look unto thee for leadership. They shall look unto thee for the Words of Moses & of David. They shall look unto thee for the Words of God!"

121. "Thou shalt hear the voice of my spirit & speak the Words of my mouth & lead my sheep as a Shepherdess, & feed them in green pastures! For I, thy David, shall watch over thee & commune with thee in spirit."

122. "For the flesh of David shall be taken from thee & thou shalt no longer feel with thy body, but thy spirit shall know he is nigh unto thee, & thou shalt be one in spirit! And the spirit & power of David & of Moses & of David of old & of Jesus shall rest upon thee & thou shalt speak as the voice of God as the Prophetess of old--to these My people & My sheep! And all shall hearken unto thee & follow thee & thou shalt lead them whithersoever I go."

123. "Fear not, Little One, for I the Lord thy God shall be with thee whithersoever thou goest, & I will lead thee into the pastures of the mountains, I shall lead thy flock unto the valleys of the mountains that they may find pure water & green pastures that shall sustain them until the hour of My Coming. And thou shalt go with them & lead them & they will follow thee, for they will remember that thou wast the voice of Moses & David--but thou shalt become My voice unto them!"

124. "Thou shalt be strong like Deborah of old, for thou art but a weak woman, but the World shall hear thee!"

125. "They will follow thee even unto the uttermost parts of the Earth because thou dost believe & thou hast faith & thou dost obey & thou dost speak all the Words that I give unto thee to feed My Children, to sustain My sheep!"

126. "David doth love thee & Moses doth long after thee, & I, Jesus, have ordained thee unto this task. See that thou fulfillst it!"

127. "For thou shalt become the Spirit of David, the Voice of Moses, the Shepherdess of Israel, the Leader of My People in that day!"

128. "Thou shalt be as one of the Prophetesses of Israel & lead My children & command My Baraks & they shall hearken unto thee & follow thee & obey thee & thou shalt lead My Children, if thou shalt be willing."

129. "They think that God cannot use a woman, but God can use the weakest vessel to confound them all! They shall know that a Prophetess of God hath been among them!"

130. "Thou shalt be filled with the Spirit of David, for he shall be nigh unto thee & his Words shall even be in thy mouth, & thou shalt treasure more the seeds of his mouth than the seed of his flesh in that day!"

131. "The Words shall be nigh unto thee, even in thy very mouth. In the days of thy bereavement thou shalt hear a voice within thee saying, 'This is the way, walk ye in it.' For thy steps in righteousness shall be ordered by the Lord. Thou shalt not falter, neither shalt thou go astray, & His hand shall keep thee & His eye shall guide thee in that day!"

132. "And the Word will come to her & be quickened to her in greater power & with greater signs & greater wonders than even under her father!"

133. "The anointing of the Lord will fall upon thee & the mantle of David shall drape about thy shoulders, & thou shalt speak the Words of the Lord to my people, & they shall listen unto thee & heed thee & know that thou art the Word of the Lord!"



134. "And you will give them food & you will feed My sheep as a good Shepherdess. For I will put the Words of the Lord in thy mouth, & thou shalt speak them unto My people, & they shall heed thy voice & they shall listen unto thee, & they shall devour every Word that thou shalt speak unto them, & thou shalt shade My sheep & lead them & guide them unto a New World till I shall come!"

135. "It shall be a day for women, & they shall rule my people with a kind hand & a gentle staff & such words of love, so precious, so beautiful! They shall love thee even more than they have loved me, for thou shalt be a light & their staff & their food of sustenance, & thou shalt be a guide to them in darkness!"

136. "Thou shalt be the shepherdess of the sheep, to encourage them & guide them & lead them in the way, when they are so puzzled & they are so confused. You shall remind them of the Words of David, & thou shalt give them the Words & feed them, because you bind up the Words of God's Prophet."

137. "Thou shalt feed them & tend them as the shepherds feed their young with tender grass, so sweet & so beautiful, & the little lambs shall come unto thee to nibble from thy hand, & Techy will look to you for your guidance."

138. "Nothing can separate us from Thy love. For as we have been united in love, so also shall we be united in death. For in his death he shall be united with thee even more firmly than before. For now he is with thee. The hour cometh when he shall be in thee. For what more canst thou have than the heart of David & what more wouldst thou have than to possess his spirit? And what more canst thou have than to possess the soul of David? And what more canst thou ask than to possess the heart of thy father?"

139. "These ears which hear more than thee because of her love for David. And eyes which see & heart which feels & mouth which shall speak all the Words of David when his spirit shall be no longer with her, but in her, though his body be gone from her side."

140. "Thou shalt write those things that I tell thee & thou shalt whisper those secret truths which I whisper in thy heart, though thou hearest no longer with thine ear, if thou shalt be faithful & loyal to Me, thy Love in the spirit, even though the flesh of David be departed from thee."

141. "For the flesh of David must one time depart from thee that his spirit may enter into thee, that thou mayest have the soul & the spirit & the heart of both Moses & David, & that thou mayest kiss the love of David.-- That thou mayest love David more than thou hast ever loved his body with thy flesh."

142. "And thou shalt love the Words of David more, & thou shalt love to hear the voice of David within thine own heart, that thou mayest explode with the Words of David unto thy children. For behold indeed the Spirit of David shall no longer dwell with thee but shall be in thee & thou shalt be his very heart."

143. "There is no greater love, neither is there any greater power nor can there be a more precious possession than to possess the heart of David within thy very soul & speak his words with thy own mouth!"

144. "When thou shalt possess the very soul & heart of thy father, thou shalt be filled with the very Spirit of David thyself! Drink ye all of it. For indeed thou shalt partake of the sufferings of David, even as thou hast partaken of the kisses & the Words of David."

145. "For even as thou hast partaken of his glories & of his wealth & of his pleasures, so thou must also partake of his sufferings & his enemies & his departure from thee in the flesh that he may send his spirit unto thee, & thou must write as his spirit doth direct thee, & thou must speak all the Words of David unto his children, & thou must not withhold those things that are given unto thee."

146. "For behold, thou shalt be called to be a Prophetess in Israel & thy pen shall lead those which are the children of David, & behold, thy tongue itself shall be wielded as the sword of Almighty God & thou shalt lead My people as did My servant Deborah of old, that Prophetess which was the leader of My people." (Judges 4:4)

147. "The gathering of the people shall be unto thee & the gathering of all the tribes shall be unto thee. For thou alone hast the Words of Eternal Life & thou alone hast the Words of David they seek for their life."

148. "Bid farewell to this filthy dust of thy David & welcome the spirit of his soul that ye may possess his heart & the power & the mouth that I have given unto him. Why dost thou desire mere mortal ecstasy when thou shalt possess the power of eternal soul?"

149. "Release the flesh of David that thou mayest have his heart & soul & spirit & life & words, that thou mayest be counted as great amongst the prophets of Israel & that thou mayest be known as the greatest of all feminine flesh, & that they may know there has been a prophetess among them!"

150. "Ah foolish virgin!--Thou wouldst have lamp rather than oil! Thou wouldst have flesh more than fire. Thou wouldst have foul filth more than the purity of power. Behold, I shall teach thee & thou shalt learn of My servant Moses & indeed thou shalt have the Spirit of thy David for thou shalt treasure that which is real more than that which is clay."

151. "Knowest thou not the power I have offered thee & the strength that I shall give thee? Knowest thou not that I shall make thee a goddess amongst goddesses & a power amongst powers & thou shalt rule over the realm

of the spirit? For thou hast been pleasing in My sight & thou hast been faithful to the flesh of David & thou hast proven My will unto his spirit."

152. "Thou shalt possess the very bosom of David himself & thou shalt become unto them the very Oracle of God!"

153. "Give unto this faithful one a double portion of Thy Spirit, for she hath been faithful unto me & she hath borne my flesh & she hath carried my spirit & she hath given unto her lord the King of her very life."

(See also No. 61, 93, 94, 111, 128, 154B, 158, 195, 212, 215, 227, 231, 254, 261, 268, 293, 309, 331A, 335B, 395, 561, 573, 616, 619, 639, 700, 705, 706, 707, 777, 784, 796, 798, 837, 845, 847, 857, 984, 991, 996, 1085, 1247, 1267, 1358, 1412, 1413, 1429, 1430, 1474, 1567, RFNs--GN 11.)

## **81. MARRIAGE**--{page 664}--



*Two are better than one; because they have a good reward for their labour (Ecc.4:9).*

1. The most important thing in a marriage is for both to have faith in God & Jesus Christ! When you have faith, everything is possible!

2. Behind every great man, there's a great little woman who helps make him that way, his helpmeet.

3. Man may be the head, but the woman is often the neck that turns it.

4. Remember what the guy asked his wife? He said, "How come God made you women so beautiful & yet so dumb?" Remember her wise answer? "Beautiful enough so you'll want to marry us, & dumb enough for us to marry you!"

5. A wife is someone cherished in a very special way,  
Who puts the joy in living with her sweetness day by day.

A wife is someone close enough to really understand,

To inspire & to encourage & to lend a helping hand.

A wife is one who makes a home a happy place for all.

Who shows her special thoughtfulness in ways both big & small.

A wife is someone wonderful who always has smile,

Who keeps her husband happy & makes his life worthwhile.

6. You've got to judge your proposed marriage by the rules: whether it's good for you, good for the Lord, good for the Body, and bears good fruit!

7. Remind yourself of all the good qualities of your mate & try not to think about the bad ones.

8. In the building business they say: Two men can do three times as much work as one man. God's principle is that two can do ten times as much as one! "One can chase a thousand, but two can put ten thousand to flight!" (De.32:30.)

9. How else can two become one, more than in one child?

10. His Spirit cures both impotency and frigidity in His bride.

11. Without good communication with your Lord there cannot be much good communication between you.

12. One of the greatest assets to a good marriage is honesty, along with a sense of humour!

13. If you want to learn something about unselfishness, humility and sharing, just get married!
14. The husband is really the boss when it comes to the natural family, & God's Word clearly says that women should obey their husbands.
15. Phil.4:8 applies to your mate as well. Try to remind yourself constantly of his or her good qualities, the good things, & try not to think about the bad things.
16. Any woman who will give her man anything he wants, including another woman, really loves him!
17. Behind every great man there's a great woman. A woman can make or break a man.
18. We are married to each other, & no one mate has to be permanent!
19. If you want to leave your mate simply because there is something about them you don't like, you're going to want to leave every mate you ever get, because there's bound to be something you don't like about each one.
20. There's somebody for everybody!
21. Compliment her! Tell her she's beautiful and she'll be beautiful! Tell her she's wonderful and she'll be wonderful!
22. Any man who thinks he is more intelligent than his wife is married to a smart woman.
23. No matter how orderly a woman is by nature, it is a mistake for her to always be putting her husband in his place.
24. The only cure for a lost love is a new love.
25. There are two periods in a man's life when he doesn't understand women--before marriage & after marriage.
26. A marriage is a witness, like a baptism. The circle of the ring is a symbol of eternal verity & the gold a symbol of lasting value.
27. Marriage is the most intimate, humbling, loving, and self-sacrificial relationship between human beings.
28. It's hard to love someone you don't respect or admire for something.
29. Say "I love you" a hundred times a day!
30. The word "engagement" has two meanings: in war it's a battle, in courtship it's surrender.
31. Many a man in love with a dimple makes the mistake of marrying the whole girl.
32. One of the mysteries of life is how the boy who wasn't good enough to marry the daughter, can be the father of the smartest grandchild in the world.
33. Marriage is a sexual relationship, or you could have simply stayed good friends.
34. A woman worries about the future until she gets a husband, while a man never worries about the future until he gets a wife.
35. Success in marriage is much more than finding the right person!--It is a matter of being the right person!
36. People wouldn't get divorced for such trivial reasons if they didn't get married for such trivial reasons.
37. A mother takes twenty years to make a man of her boy, & another woman often makes a fool of him in twenty minutes.
38. The trouble in marriage often starts when the man is so busy earning his salt that he forgets his honey.
39. Every man needs a wife: Many things go wrong that can't be blamed on the government.
40. Don't judge your wife too harshly for her weaknesses. If she didn't have them, chances are she wouldn't have married you.
41. The plural of spouse is spice.
42. The Lord is very reasonable and merciful and understanding and loving and kind, so that if two people simply do not want to live with each other He does not make rules to force them to do so, as man does.
43. Marriage: Trust is the start of it, joy is a part of it & love is the heart of it.
44. In most cases I would strongly advise parents with children to try to stick it out and survive without separation for the sake of the children.
45. In our communal cooperative tribal form of society, the larger family unit must come first.
46. Some women work so hard to make good husbands that they never quite manage to make good wives.
47. Keep your eyes wide open before marriage, & half-shut afterwards.
48. Of all the home remedies, a good wife is the best.
49. Marriage is an institution held together by three books--Good Book, cookbook, & checkbook.
50. By the time he whispers, "We were made for each other," she is already planning alterations.
51. Often, when she says, "No", they both live happily ever after, too.

52. The great secret of successful marriage is to treat all disasters as incidents, & none of the incidents as disasters.
53. You never realise how much a person's voice can change, until your wife stops yelling at you & answers the phone.
54. Marriage is the most satisfying, most strengthening & most lasting human relationship on this Earth.
55. Most men & women need to get married, particularly in places of responsibility & leadership.
56. A vision at dinner is often a sight at breakfast.
57. The Bible rules for marriage are still the ideal & work very well with God's help & your patience, if given half a chance.
58. If you can't get along with the mate you now have under almost any circumstances, how do you know you're going to be able to get along with the next one under almost any other circumstances?
59. People who can't get along with their present mate, frequently can't get along with any mate!
60. Adam had the whole World to himself & God in the Garden of Eden, & yet he wasn't truly happy or satisfied without a woman. Only a woman's bosom can satisfy us men.
61. Too often a mate is simply bored and wants a little variety or a change, but this is not a sufficient excuse for breaking up a marriage. Let'm take a little vacation!--With somebody else!
62. A woman needs her love expressed in loving care, even more than loving sex.
63. The grass on the other side of the fence always looks greener, but usually only because of inaccessibility.
64. The absolutely perfect mate simply does not exist or they wouldn't be human.
65. If someone can stand to put up with you, maybe you'd better learn how to put up with them too and be thankful that anyone is willing to live with you at all.
66. That weak wife, Brother, ought to bring out the protective instinct in you or may be God's way of teaching you love, patience and mercy. That weak husband, Sister, may be just what you need to bring out the strong motherly instinct in you that'll make you a good leader & keep you both closer to the Lord!
67. Except Thou build it, Father,  
The house is built in vain;  
Except Thou, Saviour, bless it,  
The joy will turn to pain;  
But none can break the marriage  
Of hearts in Thee made one,  
And the Love Thy Spirit hallows  
Is endless love begun.
68. If your mate loves you and loves the Lord, then he or she also loves others and wants to help them.
69. Ask God for His love for each other, or you'll never make it--as a marriage or a missionary!
70. Be to her virtues very kind,  
Be to her faults a little blind.
71. To marry a woman only for her beauty is like buying a house for its paint.
72. All the best things in life are shared. That's why many don't marry, they don't want to share. Pride & selfishness wreck more marriages than anything else.
73. Don't marry the girl you can live with, but marry the girl you can't live without!
74. If a marriage goes on the rocks, the rocks are often in the bed!
75. Most of marriage is not sex, but the mere living together of daily life in all of its activities.
76. Married love is an example of God's own relationship with you!
77. It's dangerous when people stop talking to each other!
78. Get used to the idea that nobody belongs exclusively to anybody, we all belong to each other. That's the way it's going to be in Heaven. That's why there doesn't need to be any marriage or giving in marriage, no private little relationships, everybody will be everybody's. We ought to be doing things right now here on Earth the way God does them in Heaven. We're lovemates, we're lovers, we live, eat & sleep together, but no, we're not married in the way the World speaks of marriage.--Our communal love is stronger!
79. If you can't get along with the woman you've got & properly provide for her & father her children & discipline the household, you can hardly expect to do any better with two, so you better prove yourself with one family first before you start considering adding any more.
80. No man can stand being constantly belittled & humiliated, brow-beaten & henpecked.
81. To have a few occasional personality clashes is understandable, but love never fails, & these should be healed through humility, love & the oil of His Spirit.

82. Marriage should be as equal as possible, as sharing as possible. You should talk together, pray together, love together, discuss together & then decide & agree together.

83. Your husband is the biggest baby you'll ever have!--Only he never grows up!

84. When a man is in the arms of a woman he's a child again in the arms of his mother!--A big baby!

85. If you choose the Lord & choose His Service, God will choose someone to help you.

86. Marriage is more than sex or friendship or even a business partnership for the Lord's Work! It is the most intimate, humbling, loving & self-sacrificial relationship between human beings in all of life. "No greater love hath any man than this: that a man lay down his life for his friends!" (Jn.15:13) This is love, real love, true love--the willingness of a husband to sacrifice himself for his wife, the eagerness of a wife to lay down her life for her husband! This is supernatural love, divine love, God's Love, more than human!

87. In marriage you die to self but you find new life.

88. We don't believe in divorce in any shape or form if we can help it, unless the original union just was not of God & never did work & won't work & can't work. But as long as two people love each other or three people love each other or whatever, they ought to continue to love each other.

89. Marriage is a type of the spiritual union of the believing Bride with Christ.

90. If the woman refuses to be a wife to her husband in bed, she is no wife. She has left him in spirit & in body & has departed, & God's Word says, "Let her depart! A brother or sister is not bound in such a case". (1Cor.7:15)

91. I said once, that if you have a child then God has chosen you to be the parents. Well, that is the ideal but not a hard & fast rule. There are certain situations that may be exceptions; under certain conditions & in certain situations there could be exceptions.

92. If you really love somebody you want them to be happy. And if they're not completely happy with you & you can't make them completely happy, you'll want them to find somebody they can be happy with, right? That takes a lot of love, real love, genuine love, unselfish love, sacrificial love; that's what you want to be sure that you're giving.

93. When you see that your differences in spirituality & Godliness & training & the Word & goals & God's service has become absolutely intolerable & irreconcilable & you can see that it's hurting both you & your children as well as your example to other families, as well as His service that you know you should be performing & your own goals & ministry for the Lord & for others, then I think it's time to go or to let him or her go if they're more hindrance than help.

94. You say, "Well, wait a minute, Dad! Doesn't that violate the rule that if the ungodly, the unsaved, or the unbelieving brother or sister be pleased to dwell with thee, not to abandon them or not forsake'm but let them dwell with you & maybe you could win'm?" (1Co.7:12) Well, I would say when it comes to the point that you've dwelt with them so long & tried to win'm & still can't win'm & they get worse & more rebellious & even violent with the children & you, & more wicked & more Worldly & more sinful & more involved in Worldly habits & pastimes & wastes of time & the things of this World & further & further from the Lord, I would say they've already departed from you in spirit & from the Lord!

95. Just because you're living in the same house together doesn't really mean a thing!--If your mate has forsaken you spiritually & in heart & in mind, & in some cases even in body, not even interested in getting it together sexually any more, because without real love or united hearts it's hard to share physically, spiritually, mentally, emotionally or in any way in the right spirit.

96. I would say that a couple divided in aim & goal, heart & spirit is unequally yoked & God's Word says, "Be ye not unequally yoked with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath Christ with Belial, & light with darkness" etc. He says, "Come ye out from among them, ye My people, & be not partakers of their sins!"--And especially when you see it influencing your children! (2Co.6:14-17)

97. You mates who cannot possibly bring your husband or wife to repentance & they simply refuse to change, refuse to repent, refuse to have a turn-around or U-turn, metanoia, change of mind & heart & confess & repent & get right & humble before the Lord, yield to His will & His service & His Word, the best thing for you to do is break it up!

98. In some cases it's not a union, it's not a marriage, it's not something that God has put together, obviously! Husband & wife are supposed to become one flesh, yes, that's true, & whom God hath put together let not man put asunder. But if it has become quite obvious that God did not put you together--somebody else put you together or you put yourselves together & you absolutely do not fit--then I think it's time to try to break it up & go your own way, & if possible have an amicable settlement between you, perhaps divide even the children if you have to.

99. It's a heart-breaking thing to do, it's a homebreaking thing to do, it's a terrible thing to have to do, but it's much worse to continue on in such terrible contention & dissension & argument & difference of opinion & difference of spirit & difference of goal & desires & differences in methods of training the children, differences in your desire to serve the Lord of litness or witness or forsake-all & go to the field.

100. The Law of Love supersedes the law of Justice. The law of Justice says you can divorce your wife if she has been disloyal & unfaithful to you, & for a lot of reasons. But the Law of Love says if she's sorry, you should forgive her & take her back in & love her. How do you know but maybe you're going to win her? How do you know but maybe you'll be able to win her through your love?

101. If we were so righteous & didn't have any weaknesses we couldn't help others much. We couldn't be sympathetic or compassionate if we were so self-righteous & perfect. We couldn't even understand others.

102. Watch out about having such a critical condescending attitude towards homosexuals & epileptics & other handicapped people! You yourselves may be guilty of things much worse, like jealousy & the sins of the spirit. That holier-than-thou self-righteous attitude is in itself a worse sin than the pitifully human afflictions of the flesh & physically afflicted & tormented.

103. You must forgive those who have wronged you & seek forgiveness of those whom you have wronged & take them by the hand back into your circle of love & fellowship & happy, joyful labours & pleasures together.

104. How can you not comfort others with the comfort wherewith ye yourselves are comforted? How can you not extend the same mercy that He has extended to you? How can you not at least give them a chance?--Have a little mercy on your mate!

105. Sometimes you need a neck to turn the head & a heart to help the hand.

106. God made it so that no matter who you are, you can find a mate if you have love!

107. Don't forget to thank her; or don't forget to thank him.--Gratitude is a great thing in married life! Show appreciation!

108. Don't forget to say, "I love you!" Keep speaking words of love. Words sometimes can do more for a woman than anything else!--Especially if you are speaking with love, tenderness, meaning & sincerity.

109. The rule of thumb is very simple & it's summed up in the little slogan on priorities, "Jesus & others, then you".

110. Your wife belongs first of all to God & His Work & last of all to you.--And in this business you can be thankful if you get anything of her at all!

111. The superiority of a wife over her husband in spiritual things in this day & age is not rare!

112. Don't stand in God's way even if it's God in your wife, or you'll be sorry!

113. Some people seem to have forgotten all about something called love, real love, which can survive almost any difficulties, differences, weaknesses, shortcomings, failures, faults, sins or obstacles.

114. To have real lasting enduring genuine love, it must be based upon a more enduring foundation than mere fleshly gratification. It must be an unselfish innate desire to protect & to help & to make someone else happy.

115. He's tried to take the place of God to her & she's allowed him to do it! She's permitted him to make her worship him--cover up for him, lie for him, deceive for him! It's a form of worship, it's obeying him instead of the Lord, obeying him instead of us, obeying the Devil instead of God. She fears him more than she does God!--She's yielding to the Devil, she's falling down & worshipping on her knees before Satan himself in him!--Worshipping the Devil, obeying the Devil, cowed by the Devil, intimidated by Satan, afraid to say anything or do anything for fear of offending him!--How horrible!

116. As far as I'm concerned, we're all married to Him & each other, but most of us usually sleep with the same person nightly--eventually--especially those in love!

117. Loyalty is the primary requisite in any man's army.--Faithfulness, first of all to Jesus & His Work & the others to whom you minister & last of all, but also important, to your mate & yourself.

118. Some women put the Lord's Work before their husband, but if your husband's ministry is your work then this won't work, & what you're really trying to do is seek a self-glorifying ministry of your own, instead of being a helpmeet as God intended you to be.

119. Others have sometimes put their husbands before the Work & this is intolerable in any man's army. You've forgotten what you joined the Army for & you've been putting homemaking for him first. This is deplorable & intolerable!

120. When you have the urge to snap back & try to argue with or criticise your husband's decision, why don't you instead just trust the Lord & wait & see?

121. A husband & wife can have a good relationship as long as she has faith in him & honours & respects him. But when she starts continually trying to tell him what to do & think she knows better, it can absolutely wreck the relationship.

122. A domineering attitude & lack of faith in your husband will make him want to seek the fellowship of other women who do respect him & have faith in him & are ready to accept him as he is & who agree with his decisions & want to please him. A domineering attitude & wanting to control things shows that you lack faith in your husband's ability to do things & that you think you can do them better.

123. Even if you don't have faith in your husband, you should have enough faith in God to know that He can keep your husband under control. You need to have faith to trust the Lord that He is in control of both your husband & the situation.

124. It must be pride that keeps so many women from giving in, surrendering, they hate to give up. It's almost like they hate to trust the Lord, much less their husband. I guess it's just the nature of women that after a certain length of time their faith in their husband & their confidence in him wears off & they try to get control & make the decisions & do what they think is best. They lose respect for their husband & no longer honour him. They only want to control him & make sure he does what they want him to do. He becomes a tool in their own hand instead of leaving him in the Lord's hand, & they try to use him to get their way. It's part of the Devil's corruption, trying to throw a monkey-wrench in God's machinery.

125. God's law is that a woman's desire shall be unto her husband (Gen.3:16) & the Devil's been trying to overthrow that from the beginning, of which women's lib is a classic example. They don't desire to please their husbands, they desire to rule over them. They don't want equality, they want to enslave their husbands & to be the boss. It's rebellion against the plan & order of God.

126. I guess it's just part of the natural woman to resist a man's rule over her. The Devil inspires women to rise up against it & rebel against it & hate it & fight it. A wise woman buildeth her house, but a foolish one teareth it down with her hands. (Pr.14:1) That's such a wise saying & so deep. It's too bad women don't learn what it means. She tears it down with her own hands & her own fears & her own willfulness through a lack of trust & faith in the Lord, to have faith in the Lord even if she hasn't got faith in her husband.

127. The marriage relationship usually starts off with love but then often ends with dishonour & disobedience. I think the secret is lack of faith & lack of trust in not just the husband but in the Lord. It's not resting in the Lord & trusting God is going to have His way. No matter what your husband does, the Lord's not going to let him go too far on the wrong track without stopping him.

128. Any man desires his wife to have faith in him. It must be part of a desire of the Lord wanting us to have faith in Him, since without faith it is impossible to please Him.

129. The most damaging thing that can happen in a marriage is to lose faith in each other, & worst of all faith in God.

130. If you can't trust your husband, at least you can trust the Lord. If most Christian wives would make up their minds to this, it would save a lot of fusses, disagreements & arguments.

131. I'm sure the reason why so many men take up fishing or golf or some other sport in which their wife can't participate is so they can get away from her constant bickering & tumult, just for the peace & quiet of the golf course or sea shore or a lonely boat on the lake where a man can get alone with the Lord & his thoughts.

132. I think most men probably have a lot more pride than women, therefore they're more sensitive, & the criticism or cutting remarks hurt more. They may not show it or say it or even acknowledge it but the wound is there & they may never get over it.--The hurt of some cutting remark, some doubt or fear or distrust or disrespect. How many marriages have those things wrecked?

133. No man, be he prince or pauper, can stand to be humiliated in public, not even by the woman he loves, because it certainly shows that she doesn't love him.

134. The Lord didn't say that a man had to trust, honour & obey his wife, but that wives had to trust, honour & obey their husbands. It's the wife's place to yield & trust & love, honour & obey but I guess the women probably feel that's unfair, especially if they are women libbers & willful & stubborn. I guess they feel it's unfair of God to expect them to trust a man & love, honour, obey & respect him.--In which case I think it's better for such a woman not to be married if they find it's really not in them to truly love, honour & obey a husband just because God said so. (Ti.2:4-5)

135. I believe the happier wives are the ones who do yield & have faith & obey. If she can't trust her husband at least she can trust the Lord & not continually nag. Why not just trust away instead of nag away & believe the Lord will work it out somehow? I don't see any other solution for a marriage but to trust & obey.--At least trust & obey the Lord & since He says obey your husbands, that is obeying the Lord whether you like it or not. You just have to trust the Lord that if you obey the Lord, things will work out somehow.

136. Just trust the Lord!--It brings a lot more peace & rest, & avoids so much vain wrangling & doubtful disputation.

137. You have to trust the Lord if you're going to have peace, unity & harmony in the Home. If you can't trust your wife or trust your husband, at least trust the Lord & He'll work it out somehow.

(See also No. 49, 61, 123, 249, 260, 314B, 332C, 338, 359, 377, 529, 531, 902, 1022, 1056, 1114, 1247, 1358, 1389, 1395.)

138. GEN.1:28a And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the Earth.

139. GEN.2:18 And the Lord God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him.

140. GEN.2:24 Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.

141. GEN.3:17 And unto Adam He said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life.

142. RUT.1:16,17 Intreat me not to leave thee, or to return from following after thee: for whither thou goest, I will go; and where thou lodgest, I will lodge: thy people shall be my people, and thy God my God: Where thou diest, will I die, and there will I be buried: the Lord do so to me, and more also, if ought but death part thee and me.

143. PSA.128:3 Thy wife shall be as a fruitful vine by the sides of thine house: thy children like olive plants round about thy table.

144. PRO.5:18,19 Let thy fountain be blessed: and rejoice with the wife of thy youth. Let her be as the loving hind and pleasant roe; let her breasts satisfy thee at all times; and be thou ravished always with her love.

145. PRO.15:17 Better is a dinner of herbs where love is, than a stalled ox and hatred therewith.

146. PRO.18:22 Whoso findeth a wife findeth a good thing, and obtaineth favour of the Lord.

147. PRO.19:14 House and riches are the inheritance of fathers: and a prudent wife is from the Lord.

148. SON.1:2 Let him kiss me with the kisses of his mouth: for thy love is better than wine.

149. MAR.10:9 What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.

150. 1CO.7:3 Let the husband render unto the wife due benevolence: and likewise also the wife unto the husband.

151. 1CO.7:5 Defraud ye not one the other, except it be with consent for a time, that ye may give yourselves to fasting and prayer; and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinency.

152. 1CO.7:9 But if they cannot contain, let them marry: for it is better to marry than to burn.

153. 1CO.7:14,16,33 For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband; else were your children unclean; but now are they holy. For what knowest thou, O wife, whether thou shalt save thy husband? or how knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt save thy wife? But he that is married careth for the things that are of the World, how he may please his wife.

154. 1CO.11:3 But I would have you know, that the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman is the man; and the head of Christ is God.

155. 1CO.11:9 Neither was the man created for the woman; but the woman for the man.

156. 1CO.11:11 Nevertheless neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man, in the Lord.

157. EPH.5:22-25 Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord. For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and He is the Saviour of the body. Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in every thing. Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave Himself for it.

158. EPH.5:28,29 So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself. For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church.

159. EPH.5:31-33 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church. Nevertheless let every one of you in particular so love his wife even as himself; and the wife see that she reverence her husband.

160. COL.3:18,19 Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as it is fit in the Lord. Husbands, love your wives, and be not bitter against them.

161. 1TI.3:11 Wives be...faithful in all things.

162. 1TI.5:8 But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel.



163. 1TI.5:14 I will therefore that the younger women marry, bear children, guide the house, give none occasion to the adversary to speak reproachfully.

164. TIT.2:4,5 That they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children, To be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the Word of God be not blasphemed.

165. HEB.13:4a Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled.

166. 1PE.3:7a Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel.

## 82. MEMORY --{page 679}--



*The memory of the just is blessed (Pro.10:7).*

1. You could hardly accomplish anything more important than to really memorise the Word.
2. The memory strengthens as you lay burdens upon it.
3. We remember best what we love most.
4. "Kiss these words of thy father & hide them within thy heart & obey them if thou wouldst be happy in Me!"
5. A lesson taught is nothing without a review & a test.
6. A short pencil is better than a long memory.
7. It's one thing to just memorise Scripture, it's another thing to know how to use Scripture to answer!
8. If you always tell the truth, you never need be concerned about poor memory.
9. Every one of you is a computer, & your little chips off the old block right here in your head have got the whole story!
10. Repetition is the law of memory: Repeat, repeat, repeat!
11. Memorise Scriptures & resist the Devil!
12. Someday the only Word of God you've got may be what you've implanted in your heart.
13. Hide His Word faithfully in your heart that you may be kept by the power of God & comforted in difficult times, now & in the future.
14. As we absorb His Words, we become one with Him.

(See also No. 325, 329, 599, 734, 780, 1278, 1381.)

15. PSA.119:11 Thy Word have I hid in mine heart, that I might not sin against Thee.

16. PRO.3:3 Let not mercy and truth forsake thee: bind them about thy neck; write them upon the table of thine heart.

17. PRO.4:4 He taught me also, and said unto me, Let thine heart retain My Words: keep My commandments, and live.

18. PRO.7:1,2 My son, keep My Words, and lay up My commandments with thee. Keep My commandments, and live; and My law as the apple of thine eye.

19. ROM.10:8 But what saith it? The Word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is, the Word of faith, which we preach.

### 83. MISSIONARIES --{page 681 }--



*And He said unto them, Go ye into all the World, and preach the Gospel to every creature (Mk.16:15).*

1. The safest place in the World for you is in the center of God's will out on the mission field preaching the Gospel in all the World to every creature!

2. Those who don't make missionaries at home, won't make missionaries on the field!

3. If you can't make it work at home you'll never make it work on the field! You'd better have already learned it & become a missionary in the Home field living by faith there, or you'll never make a missionary or live by faith on a foreign field.

4. A missionary is God's man in God's place doing God's work in God's way for God's glory.

5. My idea of being a missionary is a marriage!--To live with them, love them, be one of them & never leave them. That's what Jesus did!

6. The secret of the success of every truly fruitful missionary: A genuine endeavour of identification with the people, a true loving sample of God's love, & a clear presentation of His message in some way that they can understand.

7. Look before you leap & weigh the consequences & don't leap before you look. Haste may make waste of all you've worked so hard for.

8. Reach the major areas first, before considering branching out into the surrounding nearby minor areas.

9. If you can't win souls where you are, you're certainly not going to be able to win them in some other country under even more difficult conditions.

10. You're not going to the make a missionary unless you love them enough to die for them.

11. For blessings, souls & inspiration, try the foreign field in a needy nation!

12. If you can't be a missionary, then support one.

13. If you can't do anything else, support a missionary!

14. If you can't be a missionary on the home field, then you'll never be a missionary on the foreign field.

15. As any missionary can tell you, most of the troubles on the mission field come not from without, but from within.

16. Nothing is too good for missionaries! Nothing is too much! You're God's cream of the crop, at the top of His list!

17. Just transporting you across the ocean is not going to make a missionary of you.

18. I have always been leery of missionaries who didn't even like the people to whom they ministered.

19. We need to learn all we can about a people, as well as become one of them.

20. The famous missionary who pioneered India began with only two phrases in the native tongue: "I love you" & "God loves you!"--And with these he started a mighty wave of Christian faith in that formerly benighted land!

21. I am convinced that what Jesus said is still true, regardless of nationality, country, colour or creed: "If I be lifted up, I will draw all men unto Me." (Jn.12:32)

22. You'll be a lot safer on the mission field where you belong than on some damn refuge farm where you don't belong!

23. The best refuge is on the mission field!

24. Get out & lose your life for the Lord on the mission field!

25. Don't forget that there are rich people on a pitiful mission field too, & there are only certain kinds of people that can reach them.

26. Once a missionary has done well, & learned the language, customs, methods of the people in a certain field, he pretty much ought to stick there.

27. Church missionaries have wasted God's time & the World's time & deprived billions of salvation by getting bogged down in some jungle trying to convert some Indian chief or a handful of headhunters.

28. God help us to do what the Lord said & "Go into all the World & preach the Gospel to every creature". But help us to go to the parts of the World where most of the people are--the cities! Then the citizens of the land can go & preach it to their natives in their own local language!

29. We could be real missionaries to the churches--& maybe even get a little help & support for our missionaries on the field.

30. The most Gospel-neglected class are the rich & intellectuals, because many missionaries are afraid of them.

31. Safety first has no place in God's missionary program. We are called upon to live dangerously.

32. Be sure you pray desperately & find God's will for yourself before you go anywhere!--Only God knows the best place for you.

33. The biggest problem on the mission field isn't missionaries fighting the outside enemy or persecution from other religions, it is the missionaries fighting each other!--Arguing, quarrelling, despitefully using each other & jealous of each other. It's sad, isn't it, how the Devil's strategy is so clever, yet so simple.

34. Sometimes when you think, "Why do I have to go into that horrible worldly dirty atmosphere with all those evil creatures," remember that that must have been exactly what Jesus thought when He had to come to this Earth to save you!

35. There is no excuse for any missionary going home because of lack of support & insufficient funds, because God has promised if you'll obey Him & serve Him & work, He'll feed you! He'll "supply all your need according to His riches in glory!" There is no excuse for your not having enough money! There's no excuse for your not having enough to eat! There's no excuse for your having no place to lay your head! There is no excuse for you being unable to minister for lack of funds, because if you would quit playing around & just funning around & foolishness & get out there & get busy & get to work in some way, somehow, in some of these supporters or even one of them, God has promised that He will support you!

36. For missionaries trying to raise support, there's a great temptation to compromise, not only at home but also on the field for security, support, influence, protection, provision & all the rest.

37. Blobs really work on the mission field where you have as many different kinds of ministries & supporters represented as possible & you can cooperate together & work together & do a better job as a co-op.--As long as they don't get too big & you get busier taking care of yourself than you do your work!

38. It is something to be a missionary. The morning stars sang together & all the sons of God shouted for joy when they saw the field which the first missionary was to fill. The great & loving God, before Whom the angels veil their faces, had an only Son, & He was sent to Earth as a Missionary Physician. It is something to be a follower, however feeble, in the wake of the Great Teacher & only Model Missionary that ever appeared among men, & now that He is the Head over all things, King of Kings, & Lord of lords, what commission is equal to that which a missionary holds from Him? For my own part, I never cease to rejoice that God has appointed me to such an office!--David Livingstone

(See also No. C, 7, 13, 68, 144, 151, 160, 164, 171, 173, 176, 177, 178, 182, 187, 201, 202, 208, 209, 211, 242, 315C, 335A, 381, 556, 659, 726, 806, 905, 922, 925, 927, 931, 936, 951, 953-3, 971, 1027, 1046, 1054, 1055, 1056, 1057, 1080, 1087, 1088, 1096, 1097, 1115, 1202, 1214, 1265, 1417, 1418, 1510.)

39. PSA.2:8 Ask of Me, and I shall give thee the heathen for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the Earth for thy possession.

40. PSA.96:10a Say among the heathen that the Lord reigneth.

41. ISA.52:7 How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that bringeth good tidings, that publisheth peace; that bringeth good tidings of good, that publisheth Salvation; that saith unto Zion, Thy God reigneth!

42. MAT.24:14 And this Gospel of the Kingdom shall be preached in all the World for witness unto all nations; and then shall the End come.

43. MAR.13:10 And the Gospel must first be published among all nations.

44. MAR.16:15 And He said unto them, Go ye into all the World, and preach the Gospel to every creature.

45. LUK.9:2-5 And He sent them to preach the Kingdom of God, and to heal the sick. And He said unto them, Take nothing for your journey, neither staves, nor scrip, neither bread, neither money; neither have two coats apiece. And whatsoever house ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart. And whosoever will not receive you, when ye go out of that city, shake off the very dust from your feet for a testimony against them.

46. ROM.10:15 How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the Gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!

## 84. MUSIC & DANCING

--{page 686}--



*Let them praise His name in the dance: let them sing praises unto Him with the timbrel and harp (Ps.149:3).*

1. Music is the speech of angels.
2. Music is the medicine for broken hearts.
3. Some sweetest songs are those which tell of saddest thought.
4. I'd rather any day hear someone sing with feeling from their heart in the power of the Holy Spirit, than a professional perfectionist who gets all the technicalities perfect, but with no real love, & sounds like an empty, hollow, noisy "sounding brass or tinkling cymbal"! (1Cor.13:1)
5. A singer is a messenger with a message in song.
6. Better the night, with song in it, than no night & no song.
7. I think all good music, happy music, loving music has to be of the Lord! (A toast:) To the Lord of Love & loving music!
8. God is the Lord of the Dance! "So have I made the dance & I have made the music & I have made the love that I have given unto your father!"
9. To be a truly great singer, you have to have a broken, loving heart!
10. Our songs & our message either make them run the other way as fast as they can go, or make them melt into our arms.
11. Our music spurs them to action, either for us--or against us!
12. If there's anything a singer is prone to, it's pride! Don't let it happen to you!
13. Music is our message! Music is our ministry!--Don't fake it!--Or you'll be a phony--like the rest of 'em!--But use it!--Like it!--Feel it!--Sing it!--Do it!--in the Spirit!--and it'll live in their hearts forever!
14. "Hark the herald angels sing!"--You're my angels & you're singing & heralding the beautiful good news of His Love, & they had better hearken & listen!
15. Music is so emotional, it should be a true expression of your own personal true emotions.

16. A chirp is better than nothing! If you can't sing a beautiful song like the wild birds or the canaries, at least you can give a little sparrow chirp!
17. The canaries sing so pretty in their jails, behind the bars in their cages, such sweet songs, the songs of the bars, the songs of prison, the songs of those who suffer!
18. Even if you can't sing a beautiful song, you can at least make a joyful noise for Jesus!
19. Even if you're in a cage like the birds, you can sing a sweet song to encourage a lot of people!
20. Music is one of our primary forms of communication with this generation!
21. It's amazing how people's different personalities come out in their dancing--body language, body talk!
22. Emotion makes your music!
23. Why doesn't our music make a hit with the World?--"If you were of the World, the World would love its own, but you are not of the World, therefore the World hates you!" It's God's music & they hate it!
24. Music can be technically perfect & spiritually dead!
25. The hard rock of today is like the jazz of yesterday: it's rebellion & defiance!
26. I like soft lights, soft music, soft wine & soft women!
27. The right music can bring a certain response in your own heart & mind. It has a psychological & spiritual effect on you.
28. It's almost like a composer is a spirit guide & becomes a medium, & his music is his crystal ball!
29. Musical perfection is mathematical, but musical inspiration is divine!
30. Most people can't stand to listen to any one singer for more than two or three numbers at the most, no matter how good they are!
31. Our purpose in singing is not to entertain--but to implant an idea or message in people's minds that they just can't shake.
32. A song that has to be explained is not much good!
33. The music itself has got to paint the emotional picture or feeling of the message of the song!
34. Music to me is the miracle of this generation!
35. Our music is the miracle which attracts so many to our message about the Man.
36. Our inspired songs are like the key of love which unlocks hearts, to find a responsive chord that longs to harmonise with them!
37. You can't very well sing a song of praise & thanksgiving to the Lord & be complaining & murmuring & groaning & moaning at the same time!
38. Mount up with wings like the eagles,  
And fly on the wings of song.  
The words that speak, the music that sings  
Will live forever on!
39. Walk in the sunshine,  
Dance in the light  
Sing as you're marching  
And fight the good fight!
40. Go boldly forth His praise to tell  
With song on lips, to serve Him well  
Life this new dawn begins anew;  
For Jesus' sake be true, be true!
41. All music...should have no other end & aim than the glory of God and the recreation of the soul; Where this is not kept in mind, there is no true music, but only an infernal clamour & ranting.--Johann Sebastian Bach
42. The Christian life is set to music; the un-Christian way is set to misery.
43. Hard rock music is music to kill by, music to destroy by!--It destroys your hearing, it destroys your senses, almost destroys your spirit & makes you want to kill or destroy!
44. Most of the World's great literature & music was created on the basis of anticipation--looking forward to something wonderful & beautiful, the hope, longing, desire & yearning for love!
45. Certain kinds of music can also be like a combination of tone signals, almost like dialing a number. If it hits the right combination of notes, the right music can bring a certain response in your own heart and mind.
46. God's music makes you want to do the will of God and love Him and love His children!
47. Music is one of the most emotional forms of communication!
48. Effective music, whether good or bad, will inspire you to action--either good or bad!
49. Project your love & sing from your heart, play from your heart, speak from your heart, sock it to them from your heart directly to their heart!

50. Seek inspiration to save perspiration!

51. The song is the girl & her beautiful body, the musical accompaniment is the clothing--so clothe her lightly!

52. Songs about being lonely & heartbroken & needing comfort were the songs that always appealed to me the most. I felt they had a message for everyone, because in a way, everyone's a little bit lonely, especially if they don't have the Lord.

53. Worldly show biz is great if we can use it, but if it's only using us, it's time we forget it!

54. We can't let worldly show biz take the place of God's biz, or He won't bless it!

55. We're in show biz--the business of showing God's Love to the World.

56. Music is the communication of the heart.

57. Music is what attracts kids today. Music is their religion & much of it comes straight from Hell & is diabolical, demonic, nothing but rhythm, big beat, big African jungle beat, a spiritual thing that gets them into that same vicious kind of violent spirit! It's like fighting the very demons of hell, a total horrible spiritual influence!

58. In those discos it's like you're right in Hell itself where the Devil has absolute control over them, the music & their minds & their bodies & everything. There is no communication possible but spiritual communication with the Devil through such music. The youth today who are producing it are just absolutely insane, crazy, neurotic, demon-possessed, & all you hear is the horrors of Hell & the screams of the demons, and it's horrible! They're getting themselves ready for Hell itself! It's horror music!--Absolutely the fiends of Hell straight out of the Pit!

59. The Hard Rock of the Devil is demonic, it brings demons, it gets people inspired with demons! Just as our sweet music carries the Spirit of God, so the Devil's music carries the spirit of the Devil!

60. Modern youthful music is so nerve-wracking, they never give you a chance to rest! So drumming, driving, it's really nervous music, nothing restful or relaxing about it. It's something to have nightmares by! I think it's driving this generation insane! The Lord is going to have to come soon, or the whole World will go crazy!

61. Music has to be the personal expression of your own personal emotions & the way you feel about the subject. It has to be you, it has to be your personal testimony, your personal message, the thing you want to tell people & that you're convinced of & convicted of & really believe so that you can really sell it & sing it because you believe it & know it & experience it, & you become a salesman just as much of the Gospel when you are singing the Gospel as you are when you're preaching it.

62. It is better to make a few little mistakes & sing from your heart than to sing mechanically perfect with no heart at all. It can be perfect mechanically & technically & be flat as a flounder spiritually & emotionally, if you don't really sing with spirit, inspiration, the power of God & a heart full of Love for the lost. Above all things you must put that emotional spiritual perfection first, the love. You've got to have the real love, for without love it's nothing.

63. There's nothing as powerful as the Word of God. No matter how beautiful music may be, if it hasn't got the Truth in it, if it hasn't got the Word in it, it is powerless, flat & meaningless!

64. You can't beat those inspired songs that either contain the Word or quote the Word! That's the powerful seed that will cause an orgasm in their hearts that will bring forth fruit.

65. Perfection comes of the Spirit! It's the perfection of Love that will be the most perfect in the eyes of God.

66. Your songs will be more Spirit-filled & go smoother & even better if you depend more on the Lord & less on technical perfection. Depend more on the Spirit & Love & inspiration than just vocal, instrumental & technical perfection in recording.

67. Our message in song is one of our main ministries & it can be used where all else may fail.

68. A song has got to move you. It has got to make you want to do something!--To dance, to fight, to love, to cry!--Or something!

69. Your dance is supposed to be a witness to your joy & happiness & inner beauty & glory & the wonderful joy of the Lord!

70. Music is the miracle of this generation. It is the magic that heals their souls & wounded spirits & proves our Messiahship, that we are their saviours.

71. Let our music be bold, brash, wild, violent & revolutionary--a declaration of war!--Along with the sweet & the sad & the heartbreaking, as well as the cheerful, light & happy!--But whatever it is, let it be alive! The words are the most important part of our music, because without the Message it's nothing.

72. Our uniqueness is our message, the words of those songs, & if we have a good musical vehicle to carry it, fine. But if not & we have to choose between the music & the message, I'd rather have you scream your heads off with the words so folks can understand you, even if you have to do it a capella, or without music!

73. What a ministry is music! It is indeed a miraculous gift for the healing of many souls & bringing life to many lives & peace to many minds & hearts.

74. "Dost thou think it a strange thing that I have inspired these things & singers & put the words in their mouths & given them greater significance than thou hast dreamed, to prepare the hearts of My people!"

75. "And the songs that speak are inspired by Me & the music that lives shall never die & the children who sing it shall live forever in a land that is eternal! For I am their God & they are My children & I speak for them & I sing for them & I live for them & I bring them life & joy & songs & music that are eternal & that shall never die, if they will but listen to the music the sings & the songs that live, to the words that speak & the children who love with hope of a land that is eternal & that shall never die!"

76. Real inspiration comes with real feeling.

77. Dancing closely & affectionately with someone with your arms around them is the next best thing to being in bed, because they just open up their hearts & humble themselves.

78. We're not only glorifying God in the dance, we're also glorifying sex!

79. I hate shallow singing where the singers don't really feel it. Music without feeling is music without meaning no matter what the words are.

80. The music has got to fit the words to make the Message effective.

81. I think much of the music of the World is inspired & beautiful & it's not all in the Family.

82. Jazz was the beginning of devilish music, the beginning of the distortion in music & dissonance & disharmony & raucous, loud, harsh, annoying music, the beginning of the musical rebellion against harmony & beauty & romanticism.

83. Africa has polluted the World. When it routed its diabolical sounds & its noise through the U.S., & found its voice in the U.S. it found a way to pollute the whole World. It's demon-possessed music. It's the music of the drug addicts & the Devil dancers. It's the music of the War dances of Africa. It's demonic noise with nothing but horrible, Satanic, demonic rhythm, there is nothing beautiful about it. It's ugly, monstrous, diabolical, demon-possessed.

84. A generation's music certainly is an honest expression of its emotions, how it feels, & its ideals, standards, & morals are expressed in its music.

85. The whole of the arts of this generation, whether its music or art or literature or whatever it is, is just plain ugly, it's like the face of the Devil, the voice of hell! Monstrous, demonic, Satanic, diabolical, ugly, horrible! Looks like the devil is finally taking over! There's nothing pretty or beautiful, sweet, good or lovely left.--Nothing good left except us & the Lord & His Creation, & very few good folks & very few good things, the very few are far outnumbered by the forces of the demons of hell.

86. This so-called music of this generation is just noise that destroys. You can't listen to that stuff all day & not suffer.

87. They tell me our goodness is badness

Our singing of songs is in vain.

But I tell them their wisdom is madness

I'd far rather sing than complain!

(See also No. 32, 92, 166, 232, 312C, 326, 326A, 399, 774, 924, 929, 930, 963, 987, 1006, 1016, 1026, 1043, 1048, 1062, 1091, 1107, 1210, 1211, 1213, 1318, 1532, *HHL*, *Childcare Handbook II*.)

88. 2SA.6:14 And David danced before the Lord with all his might; and David was girded with a linen ephod.

89. 1CH.16:9 Sing unto Him, sing psalms unto Him, talk ye of all His wondrous works.

90. 2CH.5:13,14 It came even to pass, as the trumpeters and singers were as one, to make one sound to be heard in praising and thanking the Lord; and when they lifted up their voice with the trumpets and cymbals and instruments of musick, and praised the Lord, saying, For He is good; for His mercy endureth for ever: that then the house was filled with a cloud, even the house of the Lord; So that the priests could not stand to minister by reason of the cloud: for the glory of the Lord had filled the house of God.

91. PSA.30:11 Thou hast turned for me my mourning into dancing: Thou hast put off my sackcloth, and girded me with gladness.

92. PSA.33:2,3 Praise the Lord with harp: sing unto Him with the psaltery and an instrument of ten strings. Sing unto Him a new song; play skillfully with a loud noise.

93. PSA.40:3 And He hath put a new song in my mouth, even praise unto our God: many shall see it, and fear, and shall trust in the Lord.

94. PSA.57:9 I will praise Thee, O Lord, among the people: I will sing unto Thee among the nations.
95. PSA.69:30 I will praise the Name of God with a song, and will magnify Him with thanksgiving.
96. PSA.95:1,2 O come, let us sing unto the Lord: let us make a joyful noise to the Rock of our Salvation. Let us come before His presence with thanksgiving, and make a joyful noise unto Him with psalms.
97. PSA.144:9 I will sing a new song unto Thee, O God: upon a psaltery and an instrument of ten strings will I sing praises unto Thee.
98. PSA.149:3 Let them praise His Name in the dance: let them sing praises unto Him with the timbrel and harp.
99. PSA.150:1-6 Praise ye the Lord. Praise God in His sanctuary: praise Him in the firmament of His power. Praise Him for His mighty acts: praise Him according to His excellent greatness. Praise Him with the sound of the trumpet: praise him with the psaltery and harp. Praise Him with the timbrel and dance: praise Him with stringed instruments and organs. Praise him upon the loud cymbals: Praise Him upon the high sounding cymbals. Let every thing that hath breath praise the Lord. Praise ye the Lord.
100. ACT.16:25,26 And at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, and sang praises unto God: and the prisoners heard them. And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were shaken: and immediately all the doors were opened, and every one's bands were loosed.
101. 1CO.14:15b I will sing with the Spirit, and I will sing with the understanding also.
102. EPH.5:19 Speaking to yourself in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord.
103. COL.3:16b Teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord.
104. JAM.5:13 Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any merry? let him sing psalms.
105. REV.14:3 And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the four beasts, and the elders: and no man could learn that song but the hundred and forty and four thousand, which were redeemed from the Earth.
106. REV.15:3 And they sing the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying, Great and marvelous are Thy works, Lord God Almighty; just and true are Thy ways, Thou King of saints.

**85. NO NEUTRALS!** --{page 695}--



*He that is not with Me is against Me (Mt.12:30).*

1. Nobody is neutral! Nobody is impartial or unbiased. Everybody has a bias for or against!
2. Neutrality is treachery and the neutral is a traitor.
3. You're either a traitor looking for a way out or a martyr looking for a way up.
4. Lukewarmness is the worst form of coldness because it doesn't even know it's cold.
5. Although there are certainly no neutrals when the hour of decision comes, until that hour comes, there may be some who are still hanging in the balance who might be swayed easily one way or the other, depending on how much love & wisdom you use, or on the other hand how many offenses you commit.
6. You're either a child of God or a child of the Devil!
7. The indifferent, the lukewarm, the so-called neutral, are really enemies under the skin.
8. There is no such thing as the peaceful coexistence of good and evil!



(See also No. B, F, 71, 148, 242, 314A, 334A, 551, 568, 756, 759, 772.)

9. LUK.11:23 He that is not with Me is against Me: and he that gathereth not with Me scattereth

## **86. OBEDIENCE**

--{page 696}--



*If ye love Me, keep My commandments (Jn.14:15).*

[HomeARC Note (03/04): Please refer to *The Charter* and Family policy statements for official policy and doctrine regarding many of the following topics.]

1. We know that God does not fail and will never let us down if we are trusting and obeying Him and operating according to His Will and what He knows best.
2. If you don't take a hint from the Lord, sometimes He has to give you a shove.
3. God loves all His children, although of course He is bound to appreciate more those who please Him.
4. There's no little disobedience to God, any disobedience is a big one.
5. Yours not to make reply,  
Yours not to reason why,  
Yours but to do or die.
6. I believe in obeying God if it means facing all Hell & high water & turning the World upside-down...! If I hadn't obeyed, you wouldn't be here! I'm willing to go to any extreme [within God's will] to get the job done, & I'm not about to begin to let anybody stand in the way!
7. Your own evil spirit becomes evil when you disobey & are out of fellowship with God and out of His Spirit. Then it becomes an evil spirit because you're in disobedience, defiance, compromise, failure, lack of faith, doubting & grumbling!
8. If you obey God's standard, His laws & rules of conduct, whether they be physical, spiritual, psychological or even financial, you will reap some good results, even if you're not really saved or a believer.
9. Since when are you supposed to wait until all the conditions are just right before you have enough faith to obey!
10. Yesterday's obedience isn't good enough for today!
11. One little disobedience leads to another, one bit of selfishness leads to more.
12. If God never tells you another thing, if you just go according to what you have already, you'll get along great!
13. Nothing short of right is right.
14. Even the unsaved can be blessed by the Lord if they obey the Lord and do their duty & what they're supposed to do.
15. God won't exactly make you do what He wants, but He can sure make you awfully sorry you didn't!
16. For God's sake, follow God!--Not yourself, not your own ideas, not your own plans and programs, but God!
17. Do what you can, and God will do what you can't.

18. Your obedience in doing what God tells you to do shows your faith that God is going to do the rest, what you can't do.
19. Without obedience it's impossible to have faith.
20. There is no such a thing as halfway obedience!
21. If you refuse the easy way of obedience, "the way of the transgressor is hard."
22. As far as the Will of God is concerned, there's only one best, and that's His first choice. And if you take second choice, it is your best, not His!
23. If I can just get you to follow God, I know you'll do the right thing!
24. You can't serve God unless you obey God!
25. Don't tell me you can't, because if you couldn't, God wouldn't have asked it of you!
26. Spiritual maturity is not a matter of years or time, it's just a matter of your connection with the Lord and His Word, and your obedience and your humility.
27. Right or wrong, if he's the boss, it's your duty to obey.
28. In any Man's army, you've got to have faith, trust and confidence in leadership, and strict loyalty and obedience thereto--or you've got trouble.
29. You do not have to leave the ship to be in mutiny against the captain! All you have to do is interfere with his control!
30. You'll get away with defying God's natural laws no easier than you'll get away with defying His spiritual laws.
31. The right thing is to obey.
32. God expects of His army total absolute unquestioning obedience and faithfulness, even if sometimes His officers might be wrong! [See #38.]
33. You don't have to worry about anything, all you have to do is obey!
34. If you disobey God about one thing, you'll disobey Him about almost anything!
35. Try to follow suggestions before they have to become tough orders!
36. If you don't obey, you can't expect to trust, because that's what it takes, trust & obedience! For if you trust, you can obey, & if you obey, you can certainly trust God to take care of you. It takes both!--Trust & obedience!
37. How can God bless disobedience? He cannot protect, prosper, or bless you when you are out of His will & running around outside of the secret place & from under His shadow--His wings--& His fortress of perfect fellowship with Him.
38. Although I believe in unity & loyal, faithful obedience to leadership in the Lord, I still do not believe that these are total absolutes which must be put above reason, right, Scripture & personal conviction of God's truth.
39. If you're not fully obeying the Lord, then you can't have faith for God to bless you when you know you're not obeying Him.
40. God's a tough Commanding Officer when it comes to obedience in His Army, where nothing is more important than His War against death to save lives!
41. If your people's obedience doesn't come from the heart, because of love & loyalty & devotion to both the cause & its leadership, you're going to have discontent, disillusionment, dissatisfaction, murmuring, disobedience & even open rebellion!--And a lot of backsliders.
42. Delayed obedience can become total disobedience if prolonged too long.
43. The boss may not always be right, but he still has to be the boss.
44. You don't always have to know why you're fighting or what you're fighting for! All you have to know is that Jesus gave the order & you obey it, no matter what the outcome...!
45. You can't get along without God, you can't do His work without His will, you can't follow without listening, & you can't accomplish anything without obeying His Words.
46. Those who love Him most, follow Him closest.
47. Have you lost the road to happiness?  
Oh, I can lead you back!  
Take the road marked "obedience,"  
To the right, up God's Own track!
48. God's only time is NOW--or forget it!
49. Insubordination and rebellion against leadership cannot be countenanced in any man's army.
50. Love, honour, respect & obey your leadership, not only for their words, their works, and their good fruits, but because God has chosen them and placed them in that position of responsibility.
51. If you don't go, He can't show!

If you don't obey, He can't make a way!  
52. Move with God! Don't run ahead of Him--but don't lag behind Him!  
53. Only what's right is right! If it's not completely right, then it's wrong!  
54. Truth resisted loses its power over the mind.  
55. God is the One that has to understand--we just obey.  
56. The most important thing any crew has to do is to learn to obey the shipmaster. Even the captain has to obey the shipmaster, or the owner of the ship, the one who is really in charge.  
57. You can find the World's shortest sermon on a thousand traffic signs: "Keep Right."  
58. The further from God people go  
The greater their troubles grow!  
59. When God speaks, He expects you to  
Listen, receive, remember & DO!  
60. The Lord really blesses the farmers because they're doing what God wants them to do--till the land &  
raise food for the people!  
61. I fear God!--I'm afraid not to obey the Lord.  
62. I just don't understand people who are not afraid of God and not afraid to disobey.  
63. When God says, "Now! Right now!" let me tell you, you had better do it now or you are going to miss  
the boat & suffer for it!  
64. Everybody's on probation--for the rest of their life!  
65. If you have even one talent and God calls on you to do something with it, don't be afraid of what people  
will think or whether you'll succeed: Just obey!  
66. There's only one kind of law that you don't really have to obey, & that's the kind that says you can't  
preach the Gospel!  
67. God has a scrap pile for people He can no longer use, because they have blown their engines & lost  
their usefulness because of the improper relationship between the parts and the Power.  
68. Your happiness, your health and your blessings depend on your obedience to God.  
69. Some people think that stubbornness isn't all that bad. Most people seem to think that's part of your  
virtue of independence. But when it comes to being that way with God, God says it's as bad as witchcraft & idolatry!  
Stubbornness is really rebellion. "Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, & to hearken than the fat of rams. For  
rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, & stubbornness is as iniquity & idolatry." (1Sam.15:23)  
70. Do today what God tells you to do today! Do it now! Don't wait for tomorrow!  
71. Don't just sit there & do nothing! Stand up & be counted & let God be the judge.  
72. It's God that wins the battle, it's obedience that wins the battle. It's humble faith that wins the battle. It's  
meekness & quietness, believing in God & the quietness of faithful obedience to the Lord which wins the battle,  
regardless of how few you have & how weak you seem to be & how little you've got, it's God that honours your  
faith & your meekness & your quietness & your obedience to win the battle.  
73. Obedience comes before the blessing. Obedience comes before the reward. Obedience comes before the  
anointing. You don't get the anointing to obey, you get the anointing because you obey. You get the faith to obey if  
you'll believe His Word. He will give you the faith to make that step of obedience & the moment you, because of  
faith, obey, then you get the blessing & the anointing to carry on.  
74. One little disobedience leads to another, one little tiny thing leads to another, if you don't follow the  
pattern & the plan, then you're just going to have problems.  
75. If you obey what you know God wants you to do, then He'll show you more Truth.  
76. If you are only willing to believe & obey the Lord as long as everything goes all right, you won't be  
believing or obeying very much, because a lot of things go wrong when you're serving the Lord. "Many are the  
afflictions of the righteous." (Psa.34:19.)  
77. There is no such thing as halfway obedience.  
78. If you haven't got the faith for God to supply your needs, you're displeasing Him, & the reason you  
haven't got the faith is that you are not obeying. If you're obeying, God will be blessing you in some way & will take  
care of your needs.  
79. You can't be obedient unless you have faith.  
80. The mother of happiness is just plain old-fashioned obedience.  
81. Perfect obedience will be perfect happiness if we have perfect confidence in the One we are obeying.  
82. We've got to do the obeying! We've got to do the "wenting." "As they went they were healed!" We've  
got to do what we know God has told us to do!

83. When you miss God's timetable, you have to wait for the next train, & it's a long hard wait sometimes.  
When you miss God's schedule, you've got to wait for the next boat, & let me tell you, things can get tough & rough!

84. Blind obedience can sometimes be too blind!

85. I don't care if it's social pressure that makes you do the right thing, even if it's not the right motive, even if you do it just because you think you have to, it's better than not at all.

86. Faith & obedience come first, then God answers prayer!

87. He never fails if we obey!

88. If we'll obey, He'll give us faith.

89. Blessings don't precede obedience.

90. Trust & obey, for there's no other way to be happy in Jesus but to trust & obey!

91. Help us to follow those leadings & checks & warnings of Thy Spirit in every step we make, Lord, every word we say, every look, every action, how we drive, even the way we dress, Lord, everything.

92. King Saul had the anointing as long as he obeyed, but when he started disobeying the Prophet & rebelling against doing the Lord's Will, he lost the anointing.

93. You don't have to understand, all you have to do is obey!

94. If you're saved, you can't "lose the Holy Spirit"!--But you can sure lose the power & anointing for service by disobedience!

(See also No. A, 4, 117, 117A, 126, 313, 354, 575, 635, 678, 679, 716, 721, 829, 849, 952-1, 953-3, 956, 1250, 1268, 1377, 1392, 1467.)

95. EXO.23:22 If thou shalt indeed obey His voice, and do all that I speak; then I will be an enemy unto thine enemies, and an adversary unto thine adversaries.

96. LEV.25:18 Wherefore ye shall do My statutes, and keep My judgments, and do them; and ye shall dwell in the land in safety.

97. DEU.28:2 And all these blessings shall come on thee, and overtake thee, if thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God.

98. 1SAM.15:22,23 And Samuel said, Hath the Lord as great delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices, as in obeying the voice of the Lord? Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams. For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, and stubbornness is as iniquity and idolatry. Because thou hast rejected the Word of the Lord. He hath also rejected thee from being king.

99. JOB.36:11,12 If they obey and serve Him, they shall spend their days in prosperity, and their years in pleasures. But if they obey not, they shall perish by the sword, and they shall die without knowledge.

100. ECC.12:13 Fear God, and keep His commandments: for this is the whole duty of Man.

101. ISA.1:19,20 If ye be willing and obedient, ye shall eat the good of the land: But if ye refuse and rebel, ye shall be devoured with the sword: for the mouth of the Lord hath spoken it.

102. JER.7:23 But this thing commanded I them, saying, Obey My voice, and I will be your God, and ye shall be My people: and walk ye in all the ways that I have commanded you, that it may be well unto you.

103. MAT.7:24,25 Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of Mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his upon a Rock: And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a Rock.

104. LUK.6:46 And why call ye Me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?

105. LUK.11:42 But woe unto you, Pharisees! for ye tithe mint and rue and all manner of herbs, and pass over judgement and the love of God: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

106. JOH.2:5 His mother saith unto the servants, Whatsoever He saith unto you, do it.

107. JOH.13:17 If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them.

108. JOH.14:15 If ye love Me, keep My commandments.

109. ACT.4:13-21 Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled; and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus. And beholding the man which was healed standing with them, they could say nothing against it. But when they had commanded them to go aside out of the council, they conferred among themselves, saying, What shall we do to these men? for that indeed a notable miracle hath been done by them is manifest to all them that dwell in Jerusalem; and we cannot deny it. But that it spread no further among the people, let us straitly threaten them, that they speak henceforth to no man in this Name. And they called them, and commanded them not to speak at all nor teach in the Name of Jesus. But Peter and John answered and said unto them, Whether it be right in the sight of God to hearken unto you more than unto God, judge ye. For we cannot but speak the things which we have seen and heard. So when

they had further threatened them, they let them go, finding nothing how they might punish them, because of the people: for all men glorified God for that which was done.

110. ROM.5:19 For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous.

111. 2COR.2:9b Be obedient in all things.

112. GAL.3:1a O foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that ye should not obey the truth?

113. COL.3:22 Servants, obey in all things your masters according to the flesh; not with eyeservice, as menpleasers: but in singleness of heart, fearing God.

114. PHM.21 Having confidence in thy obedience I wrote unto thee, knowing that thou wilt also do more than I say.

115. HEB.13:17 Obey them that have the rule over you, and submit yourselves: for they watch for your souls, as they that must give account, that they may do it with joy, and not with grief: for that is unprofitable for you.

116. JAM.1:23,24 For if any be a hearer of the Word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glass: For he beholdeth himself, & goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was.

117. 1JO.2:3,4 And hereby we do know that we know Him, if we keep His commandments. He that saith, I know Him, and keepeth not His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him.

118. 1JO.2:28 And now, little children, abide in Him; that, when He shall appear, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before Him at His coming.

119. 1JO.3:24a And he that keepeth His commandments dwelleth in Him, and He in Him.

(See also 1KI.20:42; ROM.13:1-7.)

## **87. OLD AGE** --{page 705}--



*Those that be planted in the house of the Lord shall flourish in the courts of our God. They shall still bring forth fruit in old age; they shall be fat and flourishing (Psa. 92:13,14).*

1. Growing old is no more than a bad habit which a busy person has no time to form.
2. I do not feel any age yet. There is no age to the spirit.
3. No wise man ever wished to be younger.
4. Blessed is the man or woman who so lives that they enjoy tarrying in the house of old age.
5. If wrinkles must be written upon your brow, let them not be written upon your heart. The spirit should not grow old.
6. To be busy and bald is no defeat,  
Even grass doesn't grow on a busy street!
7. Growing old isn't so bad when you consider the alternative.
8. It's not how old you are, it's how you are old.
9. To me, old age is always 15 years older than I am.
10. A bald head is no disgrace if the baldness is confined to the outside.
11. Do you know how you know when you're getting old?--When you start living in the past.

12. To be years older and not be years nearer to God is like walking in a circle; it's motion without progress.

13. Some old people are well-preserved, others are just well-pickled.

14. You're only as old or as young as you feel!

15. The heart that loves is always young.

16. Keep your eyes on Jesus and you'll never get older than 33, because you'll have the life & the mind of Christ manifested in your mortal bodies.

17. To be seventy years young is sometimes far more cheerful and hopeful than to be forty years old.

18. We have a God who lives in Eternity and knows no age limit.

19. We do not count a man's years until he has nothing else to count.

20. The only way to remain young is to grow old gracefully. Each age has something beautiful in it. Don't fight the fact that you are getting old--use it.

21. Can you believe that God gave any man the gift of life intending the first half to be the best? What God begins He completes. God will finish what He has begun.

22. Age is a quality of mind--

If you have left your dreams behind,

If hope is lost,

If you no longer look ahead,

If your ambitions' fires are dead--

Then you are old.

But if from life you take the best

And if in life you keep the zest,

If love you hold--

No matter how the years go by,

No matter how the birthdays fly,

You are not old.

23. Neither fear old age nor fight it, but take hold of this stage of life and make something beautiful out of it.

24. For age is opportunity no less

Than youth itself, though in another dress.

And as the evening twilight fades away,

The sky is filled with stars, invisible by day.

(See also No. 571, 680, 698, 714, 951, 1064, 1232.)

25. LEV.19:32 Thou shalt rise up before the hoary head, and honour the face of the old man and fear thy God: I am the Lord.

26. JOB 5:26 Thou shalt come to thy grave in a full age, like as a shock of corn cometh in his season.

27. JOB 11:17 Thine age shall be clearer than the noonday; thou shalt shine forth, thou shalt be as the morning.

28. JOB 12:12 With the ancient is wisdom; and in length of days understanding.

29. JOB 32:7 Days should speak, and multitude of years should teach wisdom.

30. PSA.92:13,14 Those that be planted in the house of the Lord shall flourish in the courts of our God. They shall still bring forth fruit in the old age; they shall be fat and flourishing.

31. PSA.103:5 Who satisfieth thy mouth with good things; so that thy youth is renewed like the eagle's.

32. PRO.23:22 Hearken unto thy father that begat thee, and despise not thy mother when she is old.

33. ISA.46:4 And even to your old age I am He; and even to hoar hairs will I carry you: I have made, and I will bear; even I will carry, and will deliver you.

34. TIT.2:2,3 That the aged men be sober, grave, temperate, sound in faith, in charity, in patience. The aged women likewise, that they be in behaviour as becometh holiness, not false accusers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things.



*Behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it (Rev.3:8).*

1. Don't hesitate, wait, examine, debate and doubt. Instead, run, seize, grab and receive in faith that golden opportunity. You may not get a second chance.
2. Behind every problem lies an opportunity if you just look for it.
3. A bird in the hand is worth two in the bush.
4. If opportunity gives you a glance,  
Better run and grab the chance.
5. Opportunity and life are two servings that seldom come round a second time.
6. A wise man will make more opportunities than he finds.
7. The secret of success is when you've got a lemon, make lemonade out of it.
8. Most people don't recognise opportunity when it comes along because it is usually disguised as hard work.
9. An optimist sees an opportunity in every calamity, a pessimist sees a calamity in every opportunity.
10. Don't neglect those golden opportunities which the Lord presents and gives you a foot in the door to pursue!
11. God does not open doors that He doesn't want you to enter. But not all doors are of the Lord. Some of them are tricks of the Devil, decoys, blind alleys, tests.
12. God always closes the door when His time is up and when He knows it's time to quit.
13. As long as God is really blessing you and making you fruitful and making you a blessing, pursue that opportunity and keep after it until it comes to its end.
14. When God calls you to a certain ministry, you'd better stay in it until you're finished, and then go on to whatever else God wants you to do.
15. If you miss the pattern, if you miss the plan, if you miss God's grand design, then you're bound to make a mess of things!
16. God's time and tide wait for no man.
17. Strike while the iron is hot.
18. Follow up right now these hot leads and hot contacts while you still have them and while they're still fresh, when you can still follow them up right now when they need it.
19. Four things come not back--the spoken word, the sped arrow, the past life, and the neglected opportunity.
20. The difference between stepping stones and stumbling blocks is the way you use them.
21. A block that's in the wrong place can do your toes a lot of damage. But a block that's in the right place can keep your feet out of the mud!
22. Knock on the windows of the World! Knock on the windows of opportunity!
23. The steps of a good man are ordered by the Lord as well as his steps.
24. God's only time is Now, or forget it!
25. Go through the open doors and accept the invitations and take advantage of the golden opportunities which may only knock once and be gone forever!
26. Use your cross as a crutch to help you, not as a stumbling block to cast you down.
27. There's nothing like trying!--Nothing ventured, nothing gained.
28. I believe we should seize every opportunity and enter every open door, as the Lord leads.

29. Let the Lord do it: Don't you push it too hard! If it's for you, God will give it. The best ability is availability. Just be there so He can drop it into your lap when the time is right.

30. God will lead and show you the way and open the doors, but don't try to batter them down.

31. Where God guides He'll provide--and where He's providing open doors, He's obviously guiding! So don't bother to knock: Just walk right in, sit right down--and fill it up fast, before somebody else fills it up for you.

32. God has His harvest times, and if the harvest isn't reaped immediately when it's ripe, then you'll be sorry.

33. If you wait too long or neglect or put off following golden opportunities, you're going to find that the Devil has closed the door or God has even allowed it to be closed because you failed the ideal time, God's golden harvest moment!

34. You must follow up golden opportunities when you have them and ride the crest of that wave of popularity.

35. Don't fail God in failing to pursue the opportunities that He gives, the doors that He opens, the fields that He frees, and the golden harvest that He makes ripe and ready for you to reap.

36. Let God close the door--don't you close it. You may find when you get back that it's locked and never to be reopened again.

37. Don't pass up those golden opportunities, leaving a plow in the field that may not be there when you get back.

38. You can miss your golden opportunities of service by not having the faith you should have to act quickly in time of opportunity, to run and seize the golden opportunity of the open doors that He gives you.

39. Do not let your chances, like sunbeams pass you by.

For you never miss the water till the well runs dry.

(See also No. 55, 67, 238, 829, 951, 1268, 1394.)





*My son, hear the instruction of thy father, and forsake not the law of thy mother: For they shall be an ornament of grace unto thy head, and chains about thy neck (Pro.1:8,9).*

1. All Hail to the Queen, unsung and unseen  
Who gives and keeps giving again!  
All Hail to the Queen, to the mother who's been  
A heroine again and again!  
All Hail to the Queen, whose job has been  
The highest & hardest 'mongst men!  
All Hail to the Queen!--To the Mother unseen.  
All Hail to the mother of men!
2. A woman spends nine months of her life and many more years taking care of the results of two minutes work on the part of the man.
3. When I was a boy of 14, my father was so ignorant I could hardly stand to have the old man around. But when I got to be 21, I was astonished at how much he had learned in 7 years.--Mark Twain.
4. Any parent whose children don't fear him as well as love him, is no parent!--Like God, we not only love God, but we fear Him!
5. You're not supposed to commit the care of your child to a teacher or nanny or guardian or governess unless you trust them enough to give them the authority to teach'm and train'm right and make'm behave!
6. That's the worst kind of a reflection on parenthood, parents who can't keep their kids under control!
7. Thank You Lord for children! Help us to prize every one as precious.
8. Children are a big job, but with a big job comes a big reward and with big responsibility comes lots of benefits.
9. You women have more love and mercy than us men. That's true, and it's illustrated by Mothers with children. Mothers always seem more patient and merciful.
10. As sons grow older, Fathers grow smarter.
11. The reason many parents no longer lead their children in the right direction is because they aren't going that way themselves.
12. The bravest battle that ever was fought,  
Shall I tell you where and when?  
On the maps of the World you will find it not,  
It was fought by the mothers of men.
13. Who ran to help me when I fell,  
And would some pretty story tell,  
Or kiss the place to make it well?  
--My Mother!
14. The hand that rocks the cradle  
Is the hand that rules the World!
15. As beauty is reflected by a looking glass ... so too is the love of a mother mirrored in her children's smiles.
16. I have seen a mother at a crib, so I know what love is.

17. Even if a mother has never witnessed or won a soul, if she's never done a thing but have babies, she has created new lives and new souls that will last forever and has helped in the process of their creation by the Lord.

18. A mother has done her bit to contribute the most priceless, precious, valuable thing in the whole Kingdom of God, an immortal soul for the Kingdom of Christ forever! Children are forever!

19. You're never an adult until you have a child of your own.

20. Yesterday's kids are today's parents!

21. A mother needs a little vacation from her children once in awhile.

22. A Mother is like a Goddess to her children.

23. Every mother is a physical beautiful conception, representation, picture or likeness of the Holy Spirit-- like a father is a likeness of God, and a son is a likeness of Jesus.

24. Babies and children are not just women's work in our Family!

25. Every child has got to have a father, even if it's not his own!

26. That's what makes a father wonderful, that willingness to sacrifice himself and his strength and his time to help take care of the mother and the child.

27. I've never seen a child yet that didn't need a father or a father image, somebody to play the part of a father. God made children to need both mother & father.

28. Fathers are usually the disciplinarians of the family, who won't let the kids get away with anything and who really sock it to them!

29. The Holy Spirit is like a Mother, sweet, loving and gentle, but as we grow older we're apt to need a father's image, God Himself, and be more afraid of Him and His Word of correction and judgments and His very heavy hand that enforces strict rules.

30. I tried to spend at least an hour or two with my kids every day reading and teaching them the Bible, and I think they now show the good results!

31. If God gives a child, what difference does it make what instrument God used! Even if you aren't the flesh father, if you are the husband you are responsible!

32. That child is part of both of you, and it is your job to take care of it, to love it, to provide for it and to give it the love that only a mother and a father can give.

33. If the original father is undeserving and unworthy, God often chooses another father.

34. Your love for the child is what proves whether you're worthy of being married and being a father and mother!

35. When God makes His choice and gives you a child, God has chosen to make you a mother and a father, and that makes you a husband and a wife!

36. How else can two become one more than in one child?

37. Are you equal to the task?--No, but God is! And He will help you to make them His good children, His faithful witnesses and His future rulers if you'll do your best as His Queen mothers and kingly fathers to rear them in His house as the fine and worthy princes and princesses that they should and must be to rule His future Kingdom with us!

38. Motherhood takes the strength of Samson, the wisdom of Solomon, the patience of Job, the faith of Abraham, the insight of Daniel and the courage of David!

39. Your children are a part of the Lord's service.

40. You parents are some of our greatest witnesses through your children!

41. Don't go around talking about your children and my children and making some kind of difference between them! They are our children and we are one Family and all our children are just as much mine as they are yours!

42. You mothers are the ones that are molding the future and making the World!

43. The World of tomorrow is what the mothers of today make it, according to the way they raise their children.

44. God can really deal with you through your own children.

45. We really need a lot more love and patience and prayer and reasoning with our children.

46. It takes time and patience and understanding and lots of real love to train a child.

47. If you have reared your children right, they'll not go astray, or at least, for not very long.

48. Sometimes they depart for a little while but they'll always sooner or later come back to the Lord if you've trained them right.

49. We'd like to protect our children all their lives and never have any trouble or sickness or accidents, but would this ever teach them anything?

50. While you're taking care of those children you're helping God's Kingdom come on Earth!

51. I don't see how any mother of a family of several small children can possibly do anything else but train them and take care of them and her husband and her home.

52. When God gives you children, then your first duty to God is to those children! That is God's work.

53. If you can't change the World, maybe your children will!--Train them to.

54. It's usually the parents' fault when children catch diseases or colds.

55. Even if you have eight or nine children you can still give each one something special, a special something that means a lot to them.

56. There are times when you have to show each child that they're special, and not treat each one exactly the same all the time.

57. The earlier teenagers get married the better, because right away that teaches them a sense of responsibility and they then begin to realize what a parent is and have a little more patience with their own parents.

[**HomeARC Note (03/04):** *The Charter* states in "Marriage Rules," C., 17.E. states that members ages 16 and 17 may marry provided they each receive permission from at least one parent.]

58. If we can't have teenagers that behave in the Family, we just won't have any teenagers.

59. No woman can control teenage boys unless she's a real toughie! It takes a man that can really lower the boom on'm and apply [firm discipline]!

60. What good are parents if they can't even control their own kids?

61. Kids who can't behave and parents who can't control their children don't belong in God's Family.

62. ... A father without discipline is no father at all.

63. I don't think you should talk about the Devil and his works around children too much. It's not good, as it gets their minds on those negative things and begins to make them fearful to where they spend too much time thinking about it.

64. God's love can help you love anyone--especially for your children's sake!

65. Parents should not discuss financial problems and big problems of any kind before children who wouldn't understand them.

66. The reason I made it through school and all the unbelief and persecution was that I was convinced on my parents' religion. I knew they had the real thing and I believed in it, and nothing the atheists and the anti-Christ's of school and education and evolution could do could shake that faith.

67. No wonder the Lord had to increase woman's conception. Not just as a part of the Curse, but to make sure that some children did survive, because the Devil was out to kill'm & stop'm if he could. If he couldn't stop sex & he couldn't stop nudity, which encourages sex, then he would certainly try to get the children. And they are his major point of attack & what he hates the most. Maybe that explains why so many children die before they're just a few years of age.

68. The Devil is really out to get the children, to kill the children, to neutralise the children, to stop the children! Because if he can stop enough children he'll kill the whole generation & the whole World will die of genocide. Which is no doubt why he's thought up the atomic bombs & the atomic war, because every other tactic has failed to stop the population growth.

69. As a good parent, I keep a sharp eye on this whole outfit from stem to stern. I run a tight ship & I don't let anybody get away with anything! I keep an eye even on the property & inspect everything almost every day, including the people.

70. We didn't get where we're at by namby-pamby pussyfooting around & letting people get away with things & pampering & babying & tolerating & spoiling our people. We got where we're at because the Lord has helped me to be a tough father with my children & not let them get away with anything!

71. If parents cannot discipline & control their own children, they have no business in any important job in God's Work.

72. If you don't discipline a child from the time they're a baby, they're going to be a failure & a flop & a mess & a problem by the time they get to be a year old, & that's not the poor baby's fault, it's the fault of the God-damned parents who don't obey God's rules & our instruction.

73. Delinquent children are the products of delinquent parents!

74. Discipline is damned hard work, very hard work, & it is a constant grind. You don't ever dare let up, not for one minute, not for one occasion, not on any score whatsoever. You've got to keep at it to make it consistent & constant.

75. How would you parents like it if I tell you you're involved in devilry & witchcraft if you fail to discipline your children?--Because rebellious stubborn children are the result of rebellious stubborn parents.

76. If you are too busy to train & discipline & control your children & enforce obedience, you are too busy! You're better off not to have any children or give'm to somebody who knows how to take care of them, who knows how to train them in the nurture & admonition of the Lord & raise them in obedience & self-control, or at least parental control!

77. God does not put up with parents or children who are controllable only part of the time. He cannot take a chance on people who are risky & possibly will fail when they are most needed. It's either all or nothing at all with God! Either you are obedient or you are disobedient, & God will not tolerate any percentage of disobedience!

78. "He scourgeth every son whom He receiveth!" (Heb.12:6b) Well, I haven't told any parents to make a Roman scourge with nine thongs & nine bits of lead in the tips to give their children stripes, long deep cuts in the back every time they spank them. But that's the word God uses for His kind of stripes that He gives people who disobey & rebelliously stubbornly willfully refuse to do what they're told to do, including taking care of & disciplining their own children. They spare the rod & spoil the child. Foolishness is bound up in the heart of a child & only the rod of correction can drive it far from him. (Prov.22:15)

79. "Whom the Lord loveth He ... scourgeth" (Heb.12:6), ... & it hurts Him more than it does us. One of the supreme forms of love, one of the most sacrificial forms of love, is to discipline a child.

80. If you don't chasten your children ... in obedience to God's laws & drive that child's foolishness far from him, if you spoil that child by sparing [discipline], you don't love that child or care anything about that child! You hate that child! God cannot stand any kind of unfaithfulness in His army anymore than any other Commander of any other military force can take a chance on security risks & disobedience & failure to follow orders & obey commands.

81. If punishment doesn't hurt, it's not doing a damned bit of good. If God didn't hurt us with His chastisements & His scourging & His punishment, we wouldn't repent, & it wouldn't do us any good.

82. Parents who are neglecting their children & failing to discipline them & teach them & control them & punish them ..., whatever it takes to do it, are failing God & us & the Family & their job & the next generation.

83. As a good parent, you must catch in a hurry children who are starting to go astray, nip it in the bud. You must deal with them right away & not take any chances on any gaps in the armour, any gaps in the wall, any chinks in the armour, any Achilles' heels, we can't take chances on any little finger-sized or thumb-sized holes in the dike or pretty soon you'll have a complete flood that'll sink the ship.

84. Parents who fail to discipline their children are a constant hazard, because if they have let the Devil get in like that through their disobedience & their neglect & their downright rebelliousness against us & our laws & Family laws & the laws of God & His Word, they are untrustworthy, they cannot be relied upon. They're a hole in the wall, they're a chink in the armour through which the Devil can get in & cause no end of trouble.

85. If you flatly, willfully disobey & refuse to child-train & discipline & chasten ... your children & make them behave as God does, you're going to have to live with that for eternity in everlasting shame & contempt & have to see the damage & suffering that your neglect & your disobedience & your rebelliousness has caused you children.

86. God will destroy parents who are destroying their children & thereby destroying the future, & both the present & future Work of God.

87. Nobody is indispensable, especially people who do not obey. I don't care how good a job you've done at your technical work. If you have failed on you children, you have failed! All the typing & all the photography & all the computer work & all the technology & all the lit & all the publications & all that we're doing has failed if we have failed on our children.

88. Parents who fail to discipline & make their children obey & have not yet learned to themselves obey & who have flagrantly violated our rules of child-training & God's rules of discipline, claiming to love God, have ruined their children, the gifts of God, pretending that it was in love when it was in just plain laziness & refusal to enforce the law & the rules because it hurt both them & their child.

89. Your refusal to discipline, child-train ... your child is going to hurt you a lot more & that child a lot more & God's Work a lot more than a little hurt that would have lasted for a moment in a spanking ... or some kind of punishment. If you don't change & straighten out & straighten that child out, your crying is going to last morning, noon & night, day after day & year after year until the whole thing goes crash.

90. You cannot have any link broken in the chain of discipline, because only one person who fails to discipline a child can undo all the good training that all the others have put into him. Lack of unity & cooperation between parents or among parents & teachers destroys any possibility of training and discipline.

91. Our children are the future & we must preserve & protect the future. And if we don't take care of our children, preserve & protect & train them properly so that they are good little Christians who know how to behave, & are good examples & are good products of good parents, then we have wrecked the future.

92. If you think that just a mere resurrection or rapture is going to remedy everything & God is going to take care of everything, including your own failures & mistakes & the mess you've made out of your children, you've got a sad awakening coming. You're going to reap tomorrow what you sowed today & yesterday. And you're going to have to rectify it & change it & get it straightened out in the future, in the Millennium.

93. Most children can be forced to be good. If all those caring for them use strict discipline, faithful, consistent, continuous unrelenting discipline, they'll learn very soon that crime doesn't pay.

94. No matter how faithful you are in every other area & every other job & every other thing, if you have failed with your children, you have failed God in the most important job He has given you to do!--And that's to prepare & save the future, which is your children.

95. Either you straighten out & straighten your children out & make them behave or you have no place in the rulership of the house of God. If you can't rule your own household, you certainly cannot rule over the church of God or have any place of great responsibility or administration over His government or His people.

96. A child becomes an adult when they learn to sacrifice for others & share & help each other, & that's maturity in the Lord's eyes.

97. We should not teach children to be self-confident, but Christ confident.

98. The reason our children are such wonderful children is because you parents & teachers have been such examples to them. They believe in this Family & the Lord & what we believe, because they believe in you & know you live it & you are it & they don't doubt it & they love you & respect & admire & have faith in you.

(See also No. E, G, 50, 50A, 91, 232, 314A, 315, 317, 385, 389, 572, 588, 606, 608, 617, 632, 688, 728, 739, 744, 745, 746, 752, 777, 830, 902, 915, 918, 991, 1040, 1064, 1109, 1112, 1180, 1527, 1549.)

99. DEU.6:6,7 And these words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart: And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up.

100. DEU.18:10a There shall not be found among you any one that maketh his son or his daughter to pass through the fire.

101. DEU.12:28 Observe and hear all these words which I command thee, that it may go well with thee, and with thy children after thee for ever, when thou doest that which is good and right in the sight of the Lord thy God.

102. 1KI.3:26,27 Then spake the woman whose the living child was unto the king, for her bowels yearned upon her son, and she said, O my lord, give her the living child, and in no wise slay it, But the other said, Let it be neither mine nor thine, but divide it. Then the king answered and said, give her the living child, and in no wise slay it: she is the mother thereof.

103. ISA.1:27,28 For this child I prayed; and the Lord hath given me my petition which I asked of Him: Therefore also I have lent him to the Lord; as long as he liveth he shall be lent to the Lord.

104. PSA.78:4 We will not hide them from their children, shewing to the generation to come the praises of the Lord, & His strength, and His wonderful works that He hath done.

105. PSA.113:9 He maketh the barren woman to keep house, and to be a joyful mother of children. Praise ye the Lord.

106. PSA.115:14 The Lord shall increase you more and more, you and your children.

107. PSA.127:3-5 Lo, children are an heritage of the Lord: and the fruit of the womb is His reward. As arrows are in the hand of a mighty man; so are children of the youth. Happy is the man that hath his quiver full of them: they shall not be ashamed, but they shall speak with the enemies in the gate.

108. PRO.13:24 He that spareth his rod hateth his son: but he that loveth him chasteneth him betimes.

109. PRO.17:21 He that begetteth a fool doeth it to his sorrow: and the father of a fool hath no joy.

110. PRO.19:13 A foolish son is the calamity of his father: and the contentions of a wife are a continual dropping.

111. PRO. 19:18 Chasten thy son while there is hope, and let not thy soul spare for his crying.

112. PRO.20:7 The just man walketh in his integrity: his children are blessed after him.

113. PRO.22:6 Train up a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it.

114. PRO.23:13 Withhold not correction from the child: for if thou beatest him with the rod, he shall not die.

115. PRO.23:15,16 My son, if thine heart be wise, my heart shall rejoice, even mine. Yes, my reins shall rejoice, when thy lips speak right things.

116. PRO.23:24,25 The father of the righteous shall greatly rejoice: and he that begetteth a wise child shall have joy of him. Thy father and they mother shall be glad, and she that bare thee shall rejoice.

117. PRO.29:15 The rod and reproof give wisdom: but a child left to himself bringeth his mother to shame.

118. ISA.8:18 Behold, I and the children whom the Lord hath given me are for signs and for wonders in Israel from the Lord of hosts, which dwelleth in mount Zion.

119. ISA.54:13 All thy children shall be taught of the Lord; and great shall be the peace of they children.

120. JOE.1:3 Tell ye your children of it, and let your children tell the children, and their children another generation.

121. JOH.21:15b Feed My lambs.

122. ACT.2:39a The promise is unto you, and to your children.

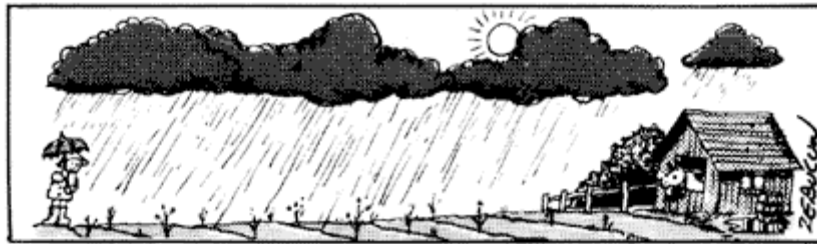
123. 2CO.12:14b The children ought not to lay up for the parents, but the parents for the children.

124. EPH.6:4 And, ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.

125. COL.3:21 Fathers, provoke not your children to anger, lest they be discouraged.

126. 1TI.5:8 But if any provide not for his own, and especially for those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel.

## 90. PATIENCE --{page 723}--



*But let patience have her perfect work, that ye may be perfect & entire, wanting nothing (Jam.1:4).*

1. God's delays are not denials, so sometimes we just have to wait.
2. He that is slow to anger is better than the mighty, & he that ruleth his spirit than he that taketh a city. (Pro.16:32)
3. Be not hasty in thy spirit to be angry: for anger resteth in the bosom of fools. (Ecc.7:9)
4. Angry impatience is a sign of lack of perfect faith & rest in the Lord.
5. Try love and patience: it really works!
6. Waiting and learning patience is part of your training.
7. Getting hard and tyrannical is a fleshly compensation. It's not the lord's solution.
8. Laziness is often mistaken for patience.
9. The secret of patience is doing something else while you're waiting.
10. The longer you keep your temper the more it will improve.
11. Hitting the ceiling is a poor way to rise in the World.
12. People who fly into a rage always make a bad landing.
13. How poor are they that have not patience! What wound did ever heal but by degrees?
14. The only way we can be patient with others is to know what a hopeless case we are ourselves!
15. Learning patience seems to be one of God's most frequent lessons yet one of our rarest virtues, as it really tests our faith & drives us to the Lord & His Word, to Whom & which we might not otherwise give so much time & attention.
16. The patience of Jacob!--He stuck to his job for 21 years!

17. It just doesn't pay to be in a hurry. You always pass up much more than you catch up with.
18. It's better to be slow and do it right, than be fast and do it wrong.
19. Though the mills of God grind slowly,  
Yet they grind exceeding small.  
Though with patience He stands waiting,  
With exactness grinds He all.
20. Funny thing about temper: You can't get rid of it by losing it.
21. Speed kills! Haste makes waste! Patience takes faith.
22. The hurrier I go, the behinder I get!--Squeeze, don't Jerk!
23. A wise man controls his temper. He knows that anger causes mistakes.
24. He patiently waited in faith for God's best.--And God gave him nothing less.
25. It's natural to be impatient, unless you have the patience of God which comes through faith in His

Word.

26. The farmer is a perfect example of faith & patience.
27. God will undoubtedly use your hidden talents at some time or other, sooner or later, somewhere, if you'll just be patient and faithful.
28. What patience Jacob had!--He worked seven years for one girl, fourteen years for another, & twenty-one years for the flocks! Some of you can't even wait a few weeks for what you want!
29. Patience is the result of real faith, & without faith it is impossible to please God, because faith worketh patience. (He. 11:6; Jam. 1:3)
30. Lord, we ask that You will teach Thy sons and daughters patience & faith--which takes time.--Teach them never to get in such a hurry, not to push themselves so hard as though they need to do it in their own strength.
31. Jesus, you're the picture of patience, calmness, love, gentleness, longsuffering. Help us to be like You! Help us to be forgiving & patient, & to have mercy as we want mercy.
32. We should be very faithful & patient with our children in the Lord who are really babes in Christ, who need a lot of love, a lot of understanding, a great deal of patience & before whom we should manifest our own faith by being patient & loving & gentle & meek & lowly in spirit as Jesus was.
33. Moses, the meekest of all men, sometimes was honestly, righteously & justifiably angry with God's people & bawled them out good & proper for their sins, & they needed it!
34. Be sure that your anger is in the right spirit with the meekness & gentleness of a tender & gentle & loving & contrite heart in all humility.
35. Patience is slowness, waiting. Impatience is hurry, rush, haste, push, pressure, tension. Patience shows faith. Impatience shows lack of faith.
36. This Family didn't happen overnight & this revolution wasn't built in a day. It took time & a lot of hard work & patience & faith & waiting, waiting for God to lead & do God's will & a lot of stopping & just waiting sometimes--just sitting around waiting for God to tell us what to do when we didn't know what to do, because it wasn't His time to do it.--So He didn't tell us.
37. It took the Lord 49 years to prepare me for this job, so obviously He wasn't in a very big hurry!
38. When you don't know what to do, wait.

(See also No.11, 31, 75, 313, 315, 565, 583, 703, 718, 835, 960, 1250, 1374.)

39. PSA.27:14 Wait on the Lord: be of good courage, and He shall strengthen thine heart: wait, I say, on the Lord.
40. PSA.40:1,2 I waited patiently for the Lord; and He inclined unto me, and heard my cry. He brought me up also out of an horrible pit, out of the miry clay, and set my feet upon a rock, and established my goings.
41. PRO.14:17 He that is soon angry dealeth foolishly: and a man of wicked devices is hated.
42. PRO.15:18 A wrathful man stirreth up strife: but he that is slow to anger appeaseth strife.
43. PRO.16:32 He that is slow to anger is better than the mighty; and he that ruleth his spirit than he that taketh a city.
44. PRO.20:22 Say not thou, I will recompense evil; but wait on the Lord, and He shall save thee.
45. PRO.25:28 He that hath no rule over his own spirit is like a city that is broken down, and without walls.
46. PRO.29:22 An angry man stirreth up strife, and a furious man aboundeth in transgression.
47. ECC.7:8,9 Better is the end of a thing than the beginning thereof: and the patient in spirit is better than the proud in spirit. Be not hasty in thy spirit to be angry: for anger resteth in the bosom of fools.
48. LUK.8.15b Bring forth fruit with patience.

49. LUK.21:19 In your patience possess ye your souls.
50. ROM.2:7 To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honour and immortality, eternal life.
51. ROM.5:3,4 And not only so, but we glory in tribulations also: knowing that tribulation worketh patience; And patience, experience; and experience, hope.
52. ROM.12:12 Rejoicing in hope; patient in tribulation; continuing instant in prayer.
53. 2CO.6:4-6 But in all things approving ourselves as the ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses, in stripes, in imprisonments, in tumults, in labours, in watchings, in fastings; By pureness, by knowledge, by longsuffering, by kindness, by the Holy Ghost, by love unfeigned.
54. GAL.5:22,23 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance: against such there is no law.
55. EPH.4:26 Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath.
56. 1TH.5:14 Now we exhort you, brethren, warn them that are unruly, comfort the feebleminded, support the weak, be patient toward all men.
57. HEB.6:15 And so, after he had patiently endured, he obtained the promise.
58. HEB.10:36 For ye have need of patience, that after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise.
59. JAM.1:4 But let patience have her perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing.
60. JAM.1:19,20 Wherefore, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath: For the wrath of man worketh not the righteousness of God.
61. JAM. 5:7,8 Be patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the Earth, and hath long patience for it, until he receive the early and latter rain. Be ye also patient; stablish your hearts: for the coming of the Lord draweth nigh.
62. 1PE.2:20 For what glory is it, if, when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if, when ye do well, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently, this is acceptable with God.
63. 1PE.3:20 Which sometime were disobedient, when once the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water.





*And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus (Phil.4:7).*

1. There'll be no World peace without the Prince of Peace, Jesus Christ the Messiah!-- And that'll only come after the biggest war the World ever had--the Battle of Armageddon!
2. In the Millennium that's coming there will be lots of peace & plenty & safety & happiness, but not too much, just enough for everybody!--And that will solve everybody's problems!
3. You can have peace even in the midst of storm.
4. Jesus does not always bring peace. When people reject Him He often brings a sword.
5. In the Spirit, in the Spirit,  
We're at last forever free!  
In the Spirit, in the Spirit,  
There is peace for you and me!
6. There is hardly anything as horrible as war, & there's hardly anything better than peace!
7. We're peacemakers who try to bring peace to men's hearts and minds and souls and bodies and countries.
8. There'll be love & laughter & peace ever after, in God's tomorrow when the World is free of war.
9. "Therefore, fear not, for I am thy God & thy testimony & thy peace & thy great fortress round about thee which is in the heavenlies which no human power can touch, which is above all earthly powers, & none can stand against thee. For I am thy God & thou art My children. They are but specks & shall be blown away!"
10. The main thing is to live close to the Lord in His will and obey His Word. Even if there's war & turmoil & confusion & chaos on the outside, you can have peace on the inside in your own heart through the Prince of Peace--Jesus Christ.
11. He'll give you peace of mind, satisfaction of heart & love & happiness here & now--& Heaven too! Then you'll really be ready for the coming calamities!--When no matter what happens, He'll take care of you.
12. You'd better always pray for peace as the Lord has commanded you to do, so that you can have peace to do your job as long as possible.

(See also No.B, 74, 85, 98, 169, 228, 397, 831, 899, 1331, 1518.)

13. .6:24-26 The Lord bless thee, and keep thee: The Lord make His face to shine upon thee, and be gracious unto thee: The Lord lift up His countenance upon thee, and give thee peace.
14. .29:11b The Lord will bless His people with peace.
15. .34:14 Depart from evil, and do good; seek peace, and pursue it.
16. .55:18 He hath delivered my soul in peace from the battle that was against me: for there were many with me.
17. .119:165 Great peace have they which love thy law: and nothing shall offend them.
18. .120:7 I am for peace: but when I speak, they are for war.
19. .3:1,2 My son, forget not My law; but let thine heart keep My commandments: For length of days, and long life, and peace, shall they add to thee.

20. .17:1 Better is a dry morsel, and quietness therewith, than an house full of sacrifices with strife.
21. .26:3 Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is stayed on thee: because he trusteth in Thee.
22. .32:17 And the work of righteousness shall be peace; and the effect of righteousness quietness and assurance for ever.
23. .48:22 There is no peace, saith the Lord, unto the wicked.
24. .5:9 Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God.
25. .14:27 Peace I leave with you, My peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.
26. .5:1 Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ.
27. .12:18 If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men.
28. .14:19 Let us therefore follow after the things which make for peace, and things wherewith one may edify another.
29. **COR.13:11b Live in peace; and the God of love and peace shall be with you.**
30. **.4:7 And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus.**
31. **.12:14 Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord**

**92. PERSECUTION**    --{page 731}--



*Yea, and all that will live Godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution (2Tim.3:12).*

1. You can't tell the truth without making some enemies. You can't believe in love without facing some people who believe in hate. You can't believe in freedom without meeting some people who don't think you should be so free!
2. If your enemies can't prove the bad, they try to disprove the good.--Rasputin.
3. The Bible is a dangerous book and Jesus is a dangerous man! To have His Name on your lips can be dangerous for you!
4. It is better to be hated for what you are, then loved for what you are not.
5. The tyrant dies and his rule ends, the martyr dies and his rule begins.
6. We have stirred up worse than a hornet's nest, we have stirred up all the demons of Hell against us because we have done such an effective and thorough job of getting the message to the whole World!
7. It's very important to do PR even in a prison, until the recognise that you're good people and they don't understand why you've been put in jail.
8. The blood of the martyrs is the seed of the true Church, and the more they kill, the more will take their place!
9. Bad publicity brings good publicity, because everybody comes to see how bad you are and finds you're not so bad after all!
10. If they didn't attack us we wouldn't be news! You have to be able to take the attacks in order to get the publicity!
11. Good always has enemies, good is always fought by evil.

12. Time is too short for us to fight in areas where they resist us and don't want us and make it too difficult to witness.
13. God can cost our enemies a whole lot more than they get paid for persecuting us.
14. They can never stop us, but there is coming a day when we will stop them!
15. Maybe persecution is what you need to wake you up!
16. One of the smartest things you can do is to make your enemy think he's won, so he'll stop fighting.
17. Don't give up the ship prematurely! Don't jump before it's sunk. Don't stop fighting too soon! Don't go into hiding unless you have to! Stay above ground until they drive you under! Don't quit till they hit! Don't leave till they throw you out!
18. Don't give up the battlefield and surrender to the Devil just because he says, "Boo!" Keep on fighting and you can't help but win, for God will bless you for it and give you a glorious victory!
19. When you can't lick'm or join'm, flee!
20. A lot of Christians would not have had to suffer it they had had enough sense to flee or not openly defy the laws.
21. Even physical persecution is not as dangerous as getting into the same bad habits and the same rut and the same spiritual lethargy and the same churchianity hypnotism of the church people.
22. When you're really saturated an area with the Gospel, and as many souls as possible have received and been reaped, then the Lord allows the Devil to stir up the rejecters and the enemies who stir up persecution against you to drive you on.
23. God allows the storms of this life to blow off the weak limbs and the weak parts, and only the strong survive.
24. Sometimes God has to get you out of the way so He can destroy them to whom you have been witnessing but who have hardened their hearts.
25. When it's time to go--GO!--Don't waver for the worst!
26. If you have to go and die for your country, well, fine, but it's better to get out there and live for your country and conquer the World!
27. There's no use being a martyr and dying for your country, the Kingdom of God, if you can go somewhere else and be a martyr and live for it.
28. You can't be prophets of God without persecution!
29. Sometimes you need sifting and testings and trials and divisions to get rid of people who otherwise are just a burden and a problem and slow you down.
30. If you do it the right way, the Devil will fight you. If you never get any objections, you must not be doing the job.
31. Persecution makes the weak weaker, but the strong stronger!
32. The Lord never let me get kicked out of anything but what He got me kicked into something better!
33. Few people seem to be able to take any of the 3 P's without being corrupted by them: Power, prosperity and popularity...This seems to be why God always has to bring us the other three: Persecution, poverty and pain, to humble us and counteract the poisons of the other three!
34. Persecution is one of the surest signs that your work is finished in an area.
35. When they touch you, the Lord's anointed, His prophets, they're touching the most sensitive part of God's body, His eyes!
36. God allows persecution for our purification.
37. The wind itself is not that dangerous--it's what it blows that's dangerous.
38. By the time a storm is over, only the strongest are left standing.
39. Don't try to stop the storm, just let it blow!
40. You won't be hurt if you face the storm unafraid and ride the wind and wave.
41. We can even enjoy the storm and laugh right in their faces as we challenge their raging fury with the faith of God, knowing they cannot win and we will conquer them in the end!
42. Don't be afraid to open the doors and the windows and let the winds of their fury blow through. It'll just help clean out the house of anything or anyone that's not strong enough to take it.
43. Ride the wind and the waves with delight at the challenge, with the exhilarating thrill of the challenger who knows he'll win and knows they can't stop him no matter what they do!
44. Our envious enemies have been telling many atrocious lies about us! This is a sign we're hitting the mark, because it's the hit dogs that howl!
45. It's just as dangerous today to be the kind of Christian you are, as it was for the Early Church.
46. No enemy can come so near that God is not nearer.

47. They cannot win, they cannot stop you! It is impossible, for God is with you!
48. The Devil is the god of this World and he hates anybody who worships anybody but him and he will crack down on them if he can.
49. Even enemies are needed to keep us on the wall, so that we don't come down from doing a great work.
50. I don't care what they call us as long as the Lord calls us and as long as we obey His call, that's all that matters.
51. A saint is a man of convictions who has been dead a hundred years, canonized now but cannonaded while living.
52. You don't have to worry about the forces of the Devil and the Antichrist and our present and future enemies!--God's a much greater Enemy to them than they are to us!
53. The more they try to suppress the Truth and crush its followers, the more we grow and the faster we follow!
54. The worse the persecution and the harder the trials and the more difficult the conditions to spread the Gospel, the more supernatural miraculous help you're gonna get to do it!
55. It is the cause, not the death, which makes the martyr.
56. When you come out in the open against the Devil, you can just expect that he will then come out in the open against you.
57. What did Jesus do to expose the religious leaders of His day that made them hate him so?--All He did was preach the Truth they weren't preaching and show the love that they weren't showing. He did everything He could to avoid saying things against them, but just the fact that He was showing more love than they were, exposed them.
58. Who was it that caused Jesus the most trouble?--The Scribes and the Pharisees, the leaders of religion, His better enemies!
59. Christians have been classed as enemies of the state for centuries and they've been martyred and slaughtered by the thousands before, so it's nothing new. Now they're just trying to dress it up in a legal form, but it's really self-righteous and hypocritical persecution of real Christians by the false church.
60. No wonder God's got to send the Tribulation--to purge and purify and make the Church white and get rid of their foolishness!
61. When your enemies begin to fight you, they have to come out in the open and expose who they are. Your enemies have to expose themselves in order to fight you.
62. The death of the martyrs inspired other Christians to be willing to live and die for their faith. Help us, Lord, to set a good example and not to show fear but to show faith, not to be afraid to suffer persecution or even to die for our convictions.
63. The Devil really is pretty stupid because every attack he's ever made on the Church of God throughout all history has just done the Church good and publicized the Message more.
64. Jesus Himself fled several times from persecution and several times refused to go to Jerusalem even for feasts because it was dangerous for Him there, the Jews were lying in wait for Him.
65. Once our peak of popularity is reached, the Enemy comes out and exposes us and publicises our name and acts as our advertising agent as to who it is, so that we get either the credit or the blame for it. And this brings about the dividing of the sheep from the goats, the separation of the good grain from the tares or weeds, which is then tested with persecution, and only the best survive.
66. Persecution is good for you. It's persecution with a purpose!--1. To purge, purify and make you white. 2. To purge the ranks of those that don't mean business and who are not devoted, loyal and true. 3. To show who your enemies are and what to expect from them. 4. To show who you are, the true prophets of God and that your message is the truth. 5. To show you've done a good job, delivered your soul, warned the wicked and finished the job. 6. To make it possible for God to bring His judgements on those who rejected your message and then rejected you. 7. To let you continue on God's way giving some other city or land their choice!
67. God is interested in saving us and vindicating us so that He might be glorified, because we are His mouthpiece to the World. He tries to spare His prophets if He can, but persecution is God's last stand.
68. Suffering and persecution are universal, but martyrs are usually exceptions.
69. The Devil is always threatening and breathing out slaughter and trying to bluff you out or merely persuade you to surrender because he cannot actually lick you.
70. Not all persecution is the Enemy's fault, some of it is your own fault, for your own stupid mistakes, your own lack of prayer, your own lack of dependence on God and His wisdom.
71. Every martyr the Romans cooked at the stake or threw to the lions only inspired faith in many more believers. Every martyr who has been slain for his cause has only inspired many more to rise up and take his place.

72. In spite of all the wrath of bestial atrocious man against the children of God during the coming worldwide dictatorship of the Antichrist regime, which will war on God's saints throughout 3-1/2 years of the reign of terror called in the Bible the Great Tribulation, the forces of evil will never be able to completely destroy God's true children, and multitudes of them will still be here to joyously welcome Christ's triumphal re-entry into the Earth's atmosphere to destroy God's enemies with great vengeance for the great and terrible slaughter!

73. If you are not willing to die daily right now in order to get the job done, you'll never be able to die some day as a martyr.

74. It's always the established religion which persecutes the Truth Church and the True faith and the true religion.

75. Thank God for the Devil and our enemies! If He can't get us to get the job done any other way, He sends along the Ol' Boy and his buddies to give us an extra boost!

76. Even if your enemies kill you, it's the Lord's way of putting you out of your misery. The Lord engineers everything, your worries, your troubles, your frights, your fears, your enemies, even your death, then you wake up with the Lord.

77. Just because you get a little persecution and endure a little suffering or get a few little boos and scares from the Devil, doesn't necessarily mean you're to run right away, as long as you can keep on witnessing and litnessing and preaching the Gospel.

78. God tries to give you enough warning to save your life, because your life is very precious to Him. You're His employee, His worker, and your service is very valuable and He wants you to continue in it and to be profitable to Him as your master, to go elsewhere and continue to preach the Gospel.

79. Lord, bless and keep them the and encourage them and inspire them and lead and guide them. Strengthen them and give them great faith instead of fear--great love, Lord, even for their enemies, instead of hate, and the realization that many of them are just deceived and know not what they do and we must forgive them because they are stirred up by others who do know what they're doing.

80. If there hadn't been an opponent, an opposing side, God's people would never had been tested and tried and given any opposition to have any kind of a battle to have to call on God to help them, and it's in this that God gets the glory. He allows Satan to lead the opposition and to try and test and persecute His people, but then they call on God and God always gets the victory and always defeats the Devil and always destroys the Enemy's kingdom and his power and his empire and his capital and his kings, every single time!

81. You can't invade the Devil's territory without making him mad--he's had the place to himself for a long time.

82. It is more blessed to be mobbed and jailed and crucified when you know you're from the mountain and you have the Truth and you know you're right, than it is to live a lie in the valley in leisure and security.

83. You are persecuted because you are right and they cannot stand the right. The valley people have been in darkness so long the light blinds them, and they cannot stand to find out you are right and they have been wrong. They don't want to be exposed.

84. Nearly every great religious leader, reformist and revolutionist suffered imprisonment and death, too often at the hands of the very people he was trying to save.

85. God won't let'm kill you unless you've finished your job and can give a better witness that way for the grand finale.

86. God wants you to live for Him as long as possible and as happily as possible, a good happy sample of the joy of the Lord, before some day you may have to die for Him.

87. It's a compliment when they start persecuting you; it shows you have accomplished the job!

88. According to World history, the Prophets did a lot of damage to the System and they saved a lot of souls and they woke up a lot of people and they preserved at least some truth and some Gospel and some Salvation, and that's why you're here, because they fought the System and somebody fought for the Truth.--All the way from the prophets of old to guys like Savanorola and Martin Luther, John Knox, Tyndale and some of the rest of those boys that gave their lives so you could have the Truth! Every last one of them fought the System of their day, the false religious system, and nearly every last one of them got it in the neck for it! But as a result, you're here today hearing the Truth of God and this Book has been preserved.--And because we are willing to live and die for the Truth of God, somebody is going to hear about it and believe it and receive it and carry it on after we're gone!

89. The people who aren't free don't even understand freedom and they don't want to understand it. They want to stay in their rut and shut their eyes and even convince themselves that they're happy and free, and they especially don't like anyone else to come along and tell them they're not. In fact, they're so afraid of the truth, that they're willing to kill you to squelch you.

90. If your ministry is finished and it's time for you to go, well then be a martyr. If your ministry isn't finish, don't be a martyr, be a mover! It's better to be a mover than a martyr. (Mat.10:23)

91. The only way we can stay free is to keep on the move and not stay any place too long. And how long is too long?--Till they persecute you to the point that it makes it almost impossible for you to carry on your work for the Lord or your witness or to survive, or whatever it may be. This is why we have to keep moving.

92. If you're not suffering any persecution or having any trouble you must not be doing anything.

93. Apparently Jesus stood up to receive the glorious martyr, Stephen! What an honour! Why do you suppose the Lord let Stephen catch a vision of God and Jesus in Heaven even as they began to stone him?--To give him the courage to be able to face it! After one sight of glory nothing mattered, he was ready to go. Who knows, maybe he didn't feel the stones at all. Maybe the first one socked him in the head and put him out like a light. They say that some of the martyrs testified as they were burning that they didn't even feel a thing as they sang and preached and testified their way straight into Heaven! (See Acts 7:54-60)

94. God will judge and take vengeance on our enemies better than anybody can. He said, "Stand back and see Me fight; vengeance is Mine, I will repay. It is not your battle but Mine!" And when they fall into the hands of an angry God, they're in worse hands than they'd ever be in the hands of the law or any system! They are in more powerful hands that can really wreak vengeance on them and hit them where it hurts, even wipe them out when necessary!

95. As long as the Lord is still supplying your needs and still giving you freedom to witness and you're still bearing fruit, then stay as long as they don't make it impossible for you to earn a living or witness or bear fruit.

96. You'll always be getting a little persecution of some kind, but when it gets to the point you can no longer do your job and no longer support yourself, then it's time to go, or when the hassle and harassment gets so tough you can't take it any more, then you have to leave.

97. You never get kicked out until you have done a good job. The Devil doesn't get that mad until you have been really effective.

98. Being a Christian is dangerous if you're a real Christian.

99. "All things work together for good to them that love the Lord", and nothing will happen to you but what God ordains and designs. You just have to make sure you cooperate with the Lord so you don't make any mistakes foolishly of your own that cause you trouble.

100. Sometimes it's better not to fight it nor join it, but flee it! We've got to be sure we've got our signals straight from the Lord and we don't zig when we ought to zag and zag when we ought to zig.

101. The Devil will gladly destroy his own if in the process he can destroy God's Own. He does it all the time, wipes out whole cities in wars and whole populations in pestilences and all kinds of things. He wouldn't care if he wiped out 1,000 to 1 if he could just get one that belongs to the Lord.

102. Persecution and bad publicity divide the sheep from the goats. It definitely makes your friends stand up for you and it exposes your enemies, which is exactly what God wants to do--divide the wheat from the tares to show who's for you and who's against you.

103. No matter how bad a thing is and no matter how bad it seems and though you can't understand it at the time, it always works out for something good in the long run.

104. "They have touched Thine anointed and done They servants harm. For they do fight against Thee, O God, and do lift up evil hands against Thyself and Thy Holy Child Jesus!" (It's Jesus they're persecuting! It's like they're trying to reach up for the Lord Himself, and get ahold of Him, and destroy Him!)

105. "They think to quench the flame, to put out the fire, but they can no more stop the mouth of David than they can stop the mouth of the breast of her that nourisheth the infant."

106. Popularity is dangerous! Popularity precedes publicity and publicity is followed by persecution!

107. No matter how much people go to church or claim to be Christians, if they're fighting us, they're fighting the Lord and serving the Devil!

108. These 10:36 parents that have caused us so much trouble and caused their children so much trouble are hinderers and hindering spirits serving the Devil, not God, and their work and spirits against us are curses of Satan with which they're trying to curse us!

109. That was really the kind of love that finally won the hard-hearted Romans, when they saw how much love those Christians had for their God that they would gladly, willingly, walk out to the stake or to face the lions singing, smiling, happy, praising God, loving God, still witnessing to the crowd, still a testimony to the very ones who were killing them, still trying to win them and still trying to be their last witness.

110. If you've been able to spread the Word, that's a victory. When the time comes that you're exposed and driven off and driven out through persecution, then your job is done and for us that's a victory. For our enemies it seems to be victory for them and defeat for us, but it's proof to us that we have won the victory, finished the job we

came to do, and God's ready to have us move on. So He says, "When they persecute you in one city, flee to another." (Mt.10:23)

111. When you got on television and in the newspaper and radio and shove it down their throat and they just can't get away from it or away from you anywhere, then this is more than our enemies can usually bear and they rise up and oppose and expose and drive you either out or undercover and you're finished as far as open freedom and easy ministries go.

112. In every country where we've had tremendous open public ministry in every way and been highly publicized and had high-exposure media ministries, it has always riled the opposition and aroused their antagonism and soon resulted in such severe persecution we could no longer operate there in any kind of ministry.

113. It seems like people's faith survives better under persecution and suppression than under freedom and prosperity!

114. Christians seem to do better when they're being persecuted and suppressed because then they really seek the Lord and really live close to the Lord.

115. The Devil is not asleep, he hasn't quite, he hasn't given up, he and his people are still after us, they still hate us, they still want to stop us because we are exposing them to the whole World. So they are furious like they were at Daniel, at Moses, at Jesus, at the early Apostles, like they were at the Reformers. It's a miracle of God that any of those people ever survived. But some of them did and carried on and they got God's purpose accomplished.

116. We've done nothing wrong in the sight of God nor violated His laws nor His Law of Love, but we have done everything wrong in the sight of the System, infuriating them and violating virtually all their laws and, stirred up by they Devil and our enemies, they endeavour to trap us and find us and fight us and do all they can against us.

117. You could hardly have found a more hopeless situation than Daniel's or Jesus' or the Early Apostles' when all the governments were out to kill'm and slaughter'm and get rid of'm, including the whole great power of Rome! Instead, the more the Devil tried to crush'm, the more they multiplied because of their faithful witness and testimony. And that's what will happen to us. We'll keep on going and we'll keep on winning and prospering and propagating and multiplying until Jesus comes, because that's His purpose.

(See also No. D, 12, 122, 125, 182, 219, 317B, 318, 331, 334, 367, 379, 380, 381, 542, 544, 551, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580, 585, 585R, 586, 589, 590, 591, 593, 597, 598, 602, 605, 611, 612, 633, 707, 747, 748, 749, 750, 759, 765, 766, 767, 770, 771, 783, 797, 800, 803, 865, 890, 953, 1054, 1072, 1141, 1183, 1184, 1186, 1425, 1537.)

118. 2:1-3 Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the Lord, and against His anointed, saying, Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us.

119. 27:12 Deliver me not over unto the will of mine enemies: for false witnesses are risen up against me, and such as breathe out cruelty.

120. 31:18 Let the lying lips be put to silence; which speak grievous things proudly and contemptuously against the righteous.

121. 44:22 Yea, for Thy sake are we killed all the day long; we are counted as sheep for the slaughter.

122. 76:10a Surely the wrath of man shall praise Thee.

123. **PSA 109:4a For my love they are my adversaries.**

124. **119:157 Many are my persecutors and mine enemies; yet do I not decline from Thy testimonies.**

125. **22:3 A prudent man foreseeth the evil, and hideth himself: but the simple pass on, and are punished.**

126. **ISA 26:20 Come, My people, enter thou into thy chambers, and shut thy doors about thee: hide thyself as it were for a little moment, until the indignation be overpast.**

127. **50:8-9 He is near that justifieth me; who will contend with me? let us stand together: who is mine adversary? let him come near to me. Behold, the Lord God will help me; who is he that shall condemn me? lo, they all shall wax old as a garment; the moth shall eat them up.**

128. **51:7 Hearken unto me, ye that know righteousness, the people in whose heart is my law; fear ye not the reproach of men, neither be ye afraid of their revilings.**

129. **53:7 He was oppressed, and He was afflicted, yet He opened not His mouth: He is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so He openeth not His mouth.**

130. **3:17 (If it be so,) our God whom we serve is able to deliver us from the burning fiery furnace, and He will deliver us out of thine hand, O king.**

131. 11:35 And some of them of understanding shall fall, to try them, and to purge, and to make them white, even to the time of the end: because it is yet for a time appointed.

132. 12:10 Many shall be purified, and made white, and tried; but the wicked shall do wickedly: and none of the wicked shall understand; but the wise shall understand.

133. 2:8b For he that toucheth you toucheth the apple of His eye.

134. 10:17-23 But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues; And ye shall be brought before governors and kings for My sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles. But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak. For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you. And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child: and the children shall rise up against their parents, and cause them to be put to death. And ye shall be hated of all men for My Name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved. But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another: for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come.

135. 10:25b If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his household?

136. 10:28 And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear Him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.

137. MAT 24:8-10 All these are the beginning of sorrows. Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for My Name's sake. And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

138. 4:16,17 And these are they likewise which are sown on stony ground; who, when they have heard the word, immediately receive it with gladness; And have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time: afterward, when affliction or persecution ariseth for the Word's sake, immediately they are offended.

139. 6:4 But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, but in his own country, and among his own kin, and in his own house.

140. 13:9 But take heed to yourselves: for they shall deliver you up to councils; and in the synagogues ye shall be beaten: and ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for My sake, for a testimony against them.

141. 13:13 And ye shall be hated of all men for My name's sake: but he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

142. 6:22,23 Blessed are ye, when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you from their company, and shall reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake. Rejoice ye in that day, and leap for joy: for, behold, your reward is great in Heaven: for in the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets.

143. 6:26 Woe unto you, when all men shall speak well of you! for so did their fathers to the false prophets.

144. 21:12-18 But before all these, they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues, and into prisons, being brought before kings and rulers for My Name's sake. And it shall turn to you for a testimony. Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before what ye shall answer: For I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay nor resist. And ye shall be betrayed both by parents, and brethren, and kinsfolks, and friends; and some of you shall they cause to be put to death. And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake. But there shall not an hair of your head perish.

145. JOH 15:20,21 Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted Me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept My saying, they will keep yours also. But all these things will they do unto you for My Name's sake, because they know not him that sent Me.

146. 16:2,3 They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service. And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me.

147. 16:33b In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.

148. 17:14 I have given them Thy Word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

149. 5:41 And they departed from the presence of the council, rejoicing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for His Name.

150. 9:4-6 And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: it is hard



for thee to kick against the pricks. And he trembling and astonished said, Lord, what wilt Thou have me to do? And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the city, and it shall be told thee what thou must do.

151. 9:15,16 But the Lord said unto him, Go thy way: for he is a chosen vessel unto Me, to bear My Name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel: For I will shew him how great things he must suffer for My Name's sake.

152. 8:31 What shall we then say to these things? If God be for us, who can be against us?

153. 12:14 Bless them which persecute you: bless, and curse not.

154. CO 4:11-13 Even unto this present hour we both hunger, and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and have no certain dwellingplace; And labour, working with our own hands: being reviled, we bless; being persecuted, we suffer it: Being defamed, we intreat: we are made as the filth of the world, and are the offscouring of all things unto this day.

155. CO 4:8,9 We are troubled on every side, yet not distressed; we are perplexed, but not in despair; Persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed;

156. 4:29 But as then he that was born after the flesh persecuted him that was born after the Spirit, even so it is now.

157. 1:29 For unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not only to believe on Him, but also to suffer for His sake;

158. TH 3:4 For verily, when we were with you, we told you before that we should suffer tribulation; even as it came to pass, and ye know.

159. TH 1:4,5 So that we ourselves glory in you in the churches of God for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye endure: Which is a manifest token of the righteous judgment of God, that ye may be counted worthy of the kingdom of God, for which ye also suffer:

160. TI 2:9 Wherein I suffer trouble, as an evil doer, even unto bonds; but the word of God is not bound.

161. TI 3:12 Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.

162. 11:33-38 Who through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions, Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens. Women received their dead raised to life again: and others were tortured, not accepting deliverance; that they might obtain a better resurrection: And others had trial of cruel mockings and scourgings, yea, moreover of bonds and imprisonment: They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword: they wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins; being destitute, afflicted, tormented; (Of whom the world was not worthy:) they wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth.

163. 13:12,13 Wherefore Jesus also, that He might sanctify the people with His own blood, suffered without the gate. Let us go forth therefore unto him without the camp, bearing His reproach.

164. 5:10 Take, my brethren, the prophets, who have spoken in the name of the Lord, for an example of suffering affliction, and of patience.

165. PE 3:14,16,17 But and if ye suffer for righteousness' sake, happy are ye: and be not afraid of their terror, neither be troubled; Having a good conscience; that, whereas they speak evil of you, as of evildoers, they may be ashamed that falsely accuse your good conversation in Christ. For it is better, if the will of God be so, that ye suffer for well doing, than for evil doing.

166. PE 4:14 If ye be reproached for the name of Christ, happy are ye; for the spirit of glory and of God resteth upon you: on their part he is evil spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

167. PE 4:16 Yet if any man suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed; but let him glorify God on this behalf.

168. 2:10 Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days: be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life.

169. 6:9-11 And when He had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held: And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost Thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth? And white robes were given unto every one of them; and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellowservants also and their brethren, that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled.

170. 7:13-17 And one of the elders answered, saying unto me, What are these which are arrayed in white robes? and whence came they? And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are

they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb. Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve Him day and night in his temple: and He that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them. They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat. For the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters: and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes.

(See also DEU 4:30-37; PSA 35:1-7; ACT 7:54-60.)

### 93. PILGRIMS AND STRANGERS

--{page 748}--



*These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth. But now they desire a better country, that is, an heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for He hath prepared for them a city (Heb.11:13,16).*

1. We remain pilgrims and strangers on this Earth, because Heaven is our Home and the Heavenly City is our destination.
2. Better to die on the mountain than to live in the valley.
3. Never let your roots grow too deep--stay mobile, fluent, and fluctuating.
4. We never stay anywhere for very long--only long enough to sow the seed and reap the harvest and then be on our way to reap other fields.
5. We're mobile messengers, reaching the World with a message!
6. The empires that didn't survive were the ones who couldn't move and were sitting ducks for the enemy! The ones who are still with us are the ones who keep moving!--The Jews and the Gypsies and the Christians!
7. Moving is like dying, and it's also like living a thousand lives!
8. God was not ashamed to be called their God, He was proud of them because they were willing to move, stopping when He said stop and going when He said go!
9. You must move continually. You are pilgrims and strangers.
10. Mobility has been the secret of our success!
11. The worst place in the World for a Christian is a too comfortable place!
12. We pilgrims and strangers pay the price of having to move often, but at least He gives us nice places to be pilgrims and strangers in! He casts our lines in pleasant places!
13. How like death moving is! It's the ending of one life and the beginning of another.
14. A movement is no longer a movement if it stops moving!
15. Don't sew your sleeping bag to your mattress.
16. Don't let your roots grow down so deep that it will tear your heart out when you have to pull up stakes.
17. We're not static!--We don't have to stay anywhere except in the love and will of God.
18. We're not really exiles from home, we're on our way Home, we just haven't gotten there yet!
19. I am a stranger here, within a foreign land.  
My Home is far away, upon a golden strand.

Ambassador to be of realms beyond the sea,  
I'm here on business for my King!

20. Moving is almost like dying!--It's a death to an old life, but then it's a rebirth into a new life!

21. If your roots are down so strong that you think you're going to stay forever, then you must be out of the will of God somehow.

22. The smaller Home attracts less attention, opposition and persecution from the System, and can operate much more underground, inconspicuously and quietly. When things do get hot, the smaller Home can move at a moment's notice and go almost anywhere.

23. God's Children have always been on the move, never settling down more than temporarily.

24. Let's keep moving for the Lord, spreading the Good News as we go, and moving so fast the System will seldom be able to catch up with us!

25. It is not worth our life, our freedom and our ministry to be so loaded down that we cannot make an instantaneous immediate move!

26. That's why God is proud of you, because you're not satisfied here and you seek a city which hath foundations, whose Builder and Maker is God! Therefore God is not ashamed to be called your God, for He hath prepared for you a city!

27. If a man owns land, the land owns him.

28. Never let the roots grow down so deep that you can't be uprooted again.

29. Keep your witness mobile! Always be prepared to fold up and move--keep moving! Keep your show on the road!

30. That land is henceforth my temporary country which most needs the Gospel.

31. After we've fled from every country that we can flee from and every continent and every ocean, we're going to flee plumb out of this World! Heaven, here I come!

32. From the earliest times, God's men have always been on the move for the Lord.

33. By faith, His righteousness and your obedience, you can journey back into a Garden of Eden, a Heaven on Earth amongst the beauties of God's Creation, by traveling and camping for the Lord!

34. God's children know this World is not their home, they're just a passin' through, trying to get a job done for Jesus on the way!

35. You make it hard for the authorities to protect you when you stay in one place too long.

36. Never stay too long and too much in one place.

37. There is only one thing you can always take you with that never changes--and that's the Lord. Every one of the great men the Lord ever had, had to be a pilgrim and a stranger, got kicked about and moved about and persecuted from one city to the other and kept on preaching the Gospel wherever he went.

38. We are vagabonds and pilgrims and strangers and gypsies, but those people have lasted the longest, when many other secure nations and empires have been completely wiped out.

39. The Rechabites (Gypsies) remain with us to this day because they vowed never to settle down, never to grow roots, never to live in houses but always to be mobile. (Jer.35:7)

(See also No. B, 61, 122, 150, 160B, 316B, 318, 322, 386, 783, 807, 812, 870, 917, 953-2, 1004, 1020, 1065, 1104, 1198, 1391, 1529, 1533, 1534.)

**40. CH.29:15 For we are strangers before Thee, and sojourners, as were all our fathers: our days on the Earth are as a shadow, and there is none abiding.**

**41. .39:12 Hear my prayer, O Lord, and give ear unto my cry; hold not Thy peace at my tears: for I am a stranger with Thee, and a sojourner, as all my fathers were.**

**42. .35:7 Neither shall ye build house, nor sow seed, nor plant vineyard, nor have any: but all your days ye shall dwell in tents: that ye may live many days in the land where ye be strangers.**

**43. .11:16 Therefore say, Thus saith the Lord God; Although I have cast them far off among the heathen, and although I have scattered them among the countries, yet will I be to them as a little sanctuary in the countries where they shall come.**

**44. .8:20 And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay His head.**

**45. HEB.11:8 By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a pace which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whether he went.**

46. .11:13 These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the Earth.

47. .13:14 For here have we no continuing city, but we seek one to come.

48. PE.2:11 Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul.

49. PE.3:13 Nevertheless we, according to His promise, look for New Heavens and a New Earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness.

## 94. PIONEERING

--{page 752}--



*By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went (Heb.11:8).*

1. Pioneers must have the vision to see what no one else can see; the faith to believe things no one else believes; the initiative to be the first to try it, and the courage and the guts to see it through!

2. You can pioneer something new everyday if you pray!

3. On the soft bed of luxury most kingdoms have expired.

4. Impossible is a word only to be found in the dictionary of fools.--Napoleon.

5. Millions saw apples fall but Isaac Newton was the one to ask why.

6. If you never stick your neck out, you'll never get your head above the crowd.

7. The most uncomfortable place for a Christian is a too comfortable place.

8. Man cannot discover new oceans unless he has the courage to lose sight of the shore.

9. Most of our inventions have been produced by fairly uneducated men--maybe they didn't know it couldn't be done.

10. David Livingstone, great explorer and Christian pioneer, wrote in one magnificent sentence, "I will go anywhere--provided it be forward!"

11. Move according to your own faith, choose your own team, set your own goals and forge ahead under your own steam! Be led of the Lord according to your own faith, initiative, vision and courage.

12. It's changing the World that really takes somebody to get in there and push and pioneer. The things already rolling will take care of themselves. It's starting something new that takes a real push, and we're the only ones that can do it.

13. Beaten paths are for beaten men, but mountain peaks are for the mighty!--The mighty pioneers!

14. You only hear about people who either made it, or died trying.

15. It's no use pioneering and getting new beachheads if you lose ground you've already gained!

16. Hit the road and get a blessing!

17. The wild birds are like the faithful missionaries who go out into the new fields and sing! They're the first to wake people up!

18. If there's not enough harvest handy, then we need to lift up our eyes and look abroad.
19. A provisioner is a pioneer!
20. Want a big job?--Pioneer!--The toughest and biggest job of all!
21. You didn't do a very good job of pioneering if the souls that you won to the Lord do not eventually become indigenous.
22. When you're moving off to pioneer a new field, you get the "before-the-battle-blues". You're just like a soldier before the battle...but when you get in there fighting, you really get the victory!
23. As a foreign missionary on a foreign field in unfamiliar circumstances and with unknown dangers, you must pray. Beloved. God says that ever inch of ground you put your foot on, He'll give to you. So claim the Scriptures and the land and stick both feet on it and claim it for the Lord, and if you find the right place, march around it and claim it no matter what the Devil tries to tell you!
24. We specialize in the rare and exceptional, the unusual and pioneering!
25. Too many Homes can spoil the city.
26. Men of faith climb unscaled walls  
And sail uncharted seas.  
They dare to cross convention's bounds  
To set the captives free.
27. God's law of progress should not be forgotten!  
If you don't keep on getting,  
You'll lose what you've gotten!
28. God gives burdens for different mission fields to different people, and then He gives them the faith for reaching those people.
29. You've got to take the first step, you've got to pioneer, you've got to get in there and try, even if everybody else says you're crazy! Maybe we're crazy, but we're sure accomplishing a lot, crazy as we are!
30. Thank God for a little craziness from God, something different, something new, something a bit crazy, new initiative, and the people with the courage, faith and vision to see it through!
31. Make each new step to each new country a loving step, and let each new leader be a loving leader, and each new Home a loving one!
32. Who makes news?--Who makes history?--The nonconformists, unconventionalists, individualists, iconoclasts, rejects, dropouts and revolutionaries!
33. Pioneers must have Vision--Faith--Initiative--Courage!
34. It's better to die on the mountain than to live in the valley!
35. If there's no way to do it, pray and invent a way!
36. Dare to be different, venture to vary from the norm which the systematic System addicts have established.
37. The true pioneer is only happy pioneering.
38. When you stop pioneering you start backsliding.--You're either moving forward or backward!--You can't stop!
39. Pioneering is the most challenging, the most exciting, the most glorious, the most accomplishing, the most satisfying, but the most dangerous and sacrificial ministry in the World!
40. The Earth is yours and all that is therein, take it! Don't be ashamed of taking a little bit of what is already yours and enjoying it.
41. A pioneer must think in terms of sacrifice and service and where can he be the greatest use to people, where can he do the most good?
42. Forget about closed countries that are so closed you have to worry about every word and every kind of show you do. If they can't stand your mentioning Love and a little mention of God, much less Jesus, then there's no use preaching to them. Forget it! Let them go to Hell!
43. I'm not all that interested in these so-called closed countries unless they are really receptive to the Gospel and open enough that we can give it to them and receptive enough that they can respond and that we can get some results and fruit.
44. I've found that God usually gives me the most severe tests, allows the Enemy to tempt me and test me the worst just as I'm considering or about to begin a new task or a new project for Him. You have the most difficult times and the most difficult trials and the most severe testings because God wants to know if you are really going to go through with it, live or die, sink or swim, and if you really mean business. What the Devil attacks most is your getting started, and if you can just get started, you can usually make it the rest of the journey.

45. Don't try to go before you're ready. Usually, God will push you out when you're ready by closing some doors and opening others, by the urgency of an undeniable need, by an irrefutable call, an unbearable burden, sometimes even by persecution and tribulation.

46. The tactics of God's tiny minority of prophets have usually been the hit-and-run guerrilla warfare with commando raids, to invade suddenly without warning, strike hard with the truth, release the prisoners and then run when the enemy begins to awaken and strike back!

47. Pour more, witness more, send more, mail more and God Himself will do more, more than we ever dreamed.

48. Try to stick to the kind of territory where we usually thrive--liberal land, youth country, the big city, affluent society where the kids have already had it and know it doesn't satisfy.--Like Universities!

49. Don't start building a tower that you can't finish. First sit down and count the costs, or you may start a war you can't win.

50. Be sure it's right and go ahead--the right place, the right time, the right people--God's Will!

51. Reconnaissance is fine but if it gives away your position and battle plans to the Enemy, it may be worse than no reconnaissance at all.

52. Surprise is one of the prime elements of successful military strategy. Hit'm hard and fast and bowl'm over before they know what hit'm!

53. The enemy always starts shooting when you're going over the stop and attacking him. It's proof that you're hitting him where it hurts and accomplishing something. It doesn't mean that you should turn around and run, it means you should keep fighting all the harder--until it's impossible to fight any longer.

54. Be sure you're led of the Lord and it's confirmed by His Spirit and leadership, else you may be doomed to disappointment, disillusionment and even disgrace.

55. Let's not try to force our way into fields that are either not yet ripe or have already been harvested and there is nothing left but a little gleaning. We have no time to be wasting laborers on fields where there is very little grain left, when they could be in fields where they could be bringing in the sheaves by the armloads!

56. I don't give a damn how we used to do it, if it's not the way we ought to do it now! And I don't care how we did it yesterday, if we should do it differently tomorrow!

57. If you start something and don't finish it when it's going strong, it's virtually impossible to get it going again.

58. If you fail at the beginning and quit, you may kill the work in that area.

59. Nothing succeeds like success, and nothing fails like failure! Paul didn't leave the field until he was sure his churches were well-established and he had checked on them over and over again. It's very important to see the battle through.

60. I would rather see you spend a whole year on one Home that becomes established and solid and will last and that you can confidently go off and leave, then to see you establish 10 Homes a month that fail.

61. There's something about newness and novelty that sets people on fire.

62. You shouldn't start another attack until you've finished the first one. One failure causes others and nothing fails like failure.

63. Go to work on established Homes inch by inch and see that they're going well before you go on to others.

64. We are making the most progress where we have reached the leaders and the rich first.

65. When you stop pioneering it shows you have lost the initiative.

66. It's going on the initiative to the attack that brings victory.

67. God sometimes uses almost anything or anyone or any place to help you get started, and leads you on from there.

68. We always believe in letting the leader choose his own team, time and place according to his own faith.

69. If there's anything a pioneer needs, it's to be led of the Lord.

70. We are not responsible for finishing everything we begin. It may be our part only to begin it; the carrying on and finishing of it may be the work of others.

71. You might call it a mistake but instead why not call it experimentation. We do a lot of things by trial and error. Just because a scientist may not hit the right formula in several different experiments doesn't mean he's making mistakes, he's trying! It's like pioneering or exploring, you've gotta try!

72. If we stopped taking risks we'd have to go out of business! There's an element of so-called risk in everything in this World except for the Lord.

(See also No. B, C, 23, 24, 49, 51, 59, 60, 62, 68, 101, 129, 144, 150, 151, 173, 180, 182, 187, 208, 209, 211, 224, 242, 253, 315C, 318, 325C, 328B, 556, 650, 659, 669, 673, 726, 728, 756, 783, 806, 870, 922, 925, 927, 931, 936, 951, 1003, 1027, 1046, 1049, 1087, 1088, 1096, 1097, 1214, 1314, 1366, *HH3*.)

73. .12:1-3 Now the Lord had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will shew thee: and I will make of thee a great nation and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing: And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the Earth be blessed.

74. .13:17 Arise, walk through the land in the length of it and in the breadth of it; for I will give it unto thee.

75. **EXO.23:20 Behold, I send an Angel before thee, to keep thee in the way, and to bring thee into the place which I have prepared.**

76. **.33:14,15 And He said, My presence shall go with thee, and I will give thee rest. And he said unto Him, If Thy presence go not with me, carry us not up hence.**

77. **.13:30b Let us go up at once, and possess it; for we are well able to overcome it.**

78. **NUM.14:8 If the Lord delight in us, then He will bring us into this land, and give it us; a land which floweth with milk and honey.**

79. **.11:24a Every place whereon the soles of your feet shall tread shall be yours.**

80. **.24:27 Prepare thy work without, and make it fit for thyself in the field; and afterwards build thy house.**

81. **.6:8 Also I heard the voice of the Lord, saying, Whom shall I send, and who will go for us? Then said I, Here am I; send me.**

82. **ISA.45:2,3 I will go before thee, and make the crooked places straight: will break in pieces the gates of brass, and cut in sunder the bars of iron: And I will give thee the treasures of darkness, and hidden riches of secret places, that thou mayest know that I, the Lord, which call thee by thy name, am the God of Israel.**

83. **.48:17 Thus said the Lord, thy Redeemer, the Holy One of Israel; I am the Lord thy God which teacheth thee to profit, which leadeth thee by the way that thou shouldest go.**

84. **MAT.10:11 And into whatsoever city or town ye shall enter, enquire who in it is worthy; and there abide till ye go thence.**

85. **.13:20 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send receiveth Me; and he that receiveth Me receiveth Him that sent Me.**

86. **.13:2,3 As they ministered to the Lord, and fasted, the Holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul for the work whereunto I have called them. And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid their hands on them, they send them away.**

87. **CO.16:9 For a great door and effectual is opened unto me, and there are many adversaries.**

(See also MAT.10:1-25, HEB.11:8,9,14-16.)



*Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, think on these things (Phil.4:8).*

1. Let's talk about Jesus! Let's get positive! Let's talk about the Word! Let's talk about the needs of others!
2. Better to light one candle than to curse the darkness.
3. Why bother to find fault?--There's no reward offered.
4. Faults are thick where love is thin.
5. No man ever injured his eyesight by looking on the bright side of things.
6. Optimist or pessimist? Do you call traffic signals go-lights or stoplights?
7. The world is full of beauty when the heart is full of love.
8. Some people think in terms of problems and some in terms of solutions.
9. Suspicion is far more apt to be wrong than right; oftener unjust than just. It is no friend to virtue, and always an enemy to happiness.
10. Two men look out through the same bars,  
One sees the mud, and one sees the stars.
11. A pessimist is one who feels bad when he feels good, for fear he'll feel worse when he feels better.
12. A pessimist sees a difficulty in every opportunity. An optimist sees an opportunity in every difficulty.
13. All the World is beautiful when seen through the eyes of love.
14. The outlook may not always be easy, but the uplook is great.
15. Keep your face to the sunshine and you cannot see the shadow.--Helen Keller--deaf and blind her whole life!
16. Your attitude determines your altitude.
17. The man who deals in sunshine  
Is the man who gets the crowds.  
He does a lot more business  
Than the man who peddles clouds.
18. An optimist is the one who makes the best of it when he gets the worst of it.
19. Positive anything is better than negative nothing.
20. It is better to believe that a man does possess good qualities than to assert that he does not.
21. Many of our cares are but a morbid way of looking at our privileges. We let our blessing get moldy, and then call them curses.
22. I have to get up on the right now, in the right key, then I sing the right song all day.
23. Keep your eyes on Jesus, because there's no other way to look but down at the dismal abyss of horrible nothingness.
24. If we don't keep our eyes on the Lord and our mind on His Word we're doomed to defeat, doubt disillusionment and final failure!
25. All through life, my brother,  
If you'd be a happy soul,  
Keep your eye upon the doughnut  
And not upon the hole.



26. If you're downhearted and downcast, it's because you're looking down too much at the waves. You've got your antenna pointed down toward Hell instead of up toward Heaven.
27. Accentuate the positive!
28. All some people can see is a button off the vest, instead of the beautiful necktie!
29. The Lord doesn't say look at yourself, He says, "Look unto Jesus!" (Heb.12:2)
30. There's one thing about looking in, it will make you look up!
31. It's a mistake to title anything negatively by the problem instead of by the solution.
32. Try to always accentuate the positive and not the negative.
33. If you keep your mind on the Lord, that keeps you from getting it on your problems and your troubles!
34. Dwell not on what the World has become, but on Who has come to the World.
35. Your day goes the way the corners of your mouth turn.
36. 'Twixt optimist and pessimist  
The difference is droll:  
The optimist sees the doughnut;  
The pessimist sees the hole.
37. If it weren't for the optimist, the pessimist would never know how happy he isn't.
38. The loser says, "The worst is just around the corner." The winner says, "The best is yet to come."
39. A contented man is one who enjoys the scenery along the detour.
40. A hopeless pessimist is always building dungeons in the air.
41. God's Word says that whatsoever things are of good report--think on these things.
42. The only person who can have perfect peace and perfectly positive thoughts and no negative thoughts, is somebody who keeps his mind on Jesus all the time!
43. If you can't see Jesus in it somehow, forget it.
44. Come with me where moonbeams light Eternal skies!  
--And the sparkling stardust lingers in your eyes!
45. If you think evil, you may do evil!
46. Sign in window: The difficult we will do right away, the impossible may take a little longer.
47. Both the optimists and pessimists contribute to society. Proof?--The optimist invents the airplane and the pessimist invents the parachute!
48. There is no sense in advertising your troubles. There's no market for them.
49. We can complain because the rose bushes have thorns--or rejoice because thorn bushes have roses!
50. Even if you sleep in a thousand-mat room, you can only sleep on one mat.
51. God's Word tell us to publish the Glad Tidings, not sad tidings. Jesus commanded us to preach the Gospel, which means "good news", not bad news.
52. We don't believe in advertising the Devil's wares or foolish mistakes, though we're not ignorant of his devices. He can't accomplish much without our help, so we should refuse to help him.
53. There's plenty for the Devil to pick on and he really tries, but you just have to overcome him with positive actions, quote Scriptures that deny the lies, and start praising the Lord and thanking Him for all your blessings.
54. Start thinking on the positive things, quit looking at all the negative things and trials of the Devil and doubts and fears and woes and troubles and tribulations and afflictions!
55. If the Devil can't persuade you not to serve God, then he tries to get you so weighed down with things, problems and time and energy and money-wasters that you can't even move.
56. There's plenty for the Devil to pick on and he really tries, but you just have to overcome him with positive actions, quote Scriptures that deny the lies, and start praising the Lord and thanking Him for all your blessings.
57. Start thinking on the positive things, quit looking at all the negative things and trials of the Devil and doubts and fears and woes and troubles and tribulations and afflictions!
58. If the Devil can't persuade you not to serve God, then he tries to get you so weighed down with things, problems and time and energy and money-wasters that you can't even move.

(See also No. 20, 25, 33, 159, 599, 639, 717, 727, 802, 957, 1035, 1259, 1268, 1375, 1393, 1492.)

59. .4:8 Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, think on these things.



*By Him therefore let us offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of our lips, giving thanks to His Name (Heb.13:15).*

1. There are two times to praise the Lord: When you feel like it, & when you don't feel like it!
2. As long as you're thinking about the Scripture & the Lord & you've got a song or a praise in your mouth, you can't complain & murmur & groan & bemoan about how bad you feel!
3. Give God all the glory! Remind yourself that you're nothing without Him!
4. Please Him by praising Him.
5. We can complain because the rose bushes have thorns--or rejoice because thorn bushes have roses!
6. Give God all the credit all the time at every turn for every little thing.
7. It's healthy to praise the Lord!
8. If you wanna knock the Devil for a loop, just start praising the Lord no matter what's happening!
9. Praise the Lord, & you'll often praise your way right out of the pit into which the Devil is trying to cast you!
10. Praise & prayer, which are companions, sustain our spiritual life.
11. The fragrance of the Lord is in the perfume of the praises of His people!
12. The Enemy hates praise!
13. My Father, for another night  
Of quiet sleep & rest,  
For all the joy of morning light,  
Thy Holy Name be blessed.
14. Let me be a little kinder  
Let me be a little blinder  
To the faults of those around me,  
Let me praise a little more.
15. The only excuse for not praising the Lord is if you are out of breath: "Let everything that hath breath praise the Lord."--Psa.150:6
16. The Christian life is divided primarily into three spheres: Praise, prayer & performance!
17. Dear old Raymond Richie used to say, "Lift your lightning rods! Get a stroke from Jesus! Raise your hands & praise the Lord!"
18. How can we be more than conquerors?--By being good losers!--And even praising God in our affliction.
19. God gets His greatest victories out of seeming defeat, & He often brings them along the neglected path of praise!
20. Praise is the voice of faith!
21. Some hae meat, & canna eat,  
And some wad eat that want it  
But we hae meat, & we can eat,  
And sae the Lord be thankit.--Robert Burns
22. If we pause to think, we will have cause to thank.
23. Thank You for the World so sweet.  
Thank You for the food we eat.

Thank You for the birds that sing.

Thank You, God, for everything.

24. If you don't thank Him for the blessings He's already given you, He's not going to feel much like answering your prayers to give you something else you want.

25. We don't have to have any special ceremonies or special days in which to thank the Lord. We thank Him everyday, many times a day.

26. Father, we thank Thee for the night

And for the pleasant morning light,

For rest & food & loving care

And all that makes the World so fair.

27. Thank You for a wonderful year, Lord, with so much progress & so many accomplishments!

28. To swear is wicked because it is taking God's Name in vain. To murmur is likewise wicked for it takes God's Promises in vain.

29. Thank God for everything, whatever God sends or lets the Devil bring!

30. Work & Word,

Scripture & song!

Count your blessings

--You can't go wrong!

31. Count your blessings, name them one by one,

And it will surprise you what the Lord has done!

32. "Why dost thou not praise the Lord with thy mouth & offer the sacrifice of thy praise with thy lips & lift thy heart to the Lord in praise for the mighty works He has done this day?"

33. "So have I caused thy heart to be made glad because of all the things that I have done for thee & given thee & all that which I have promised thee. Why dost thou doubt & make thy soul impoverished for lack of faith? Even the little child should have more faith & praise His Father in Heaven for the things which hath been given unto him."

34. "Lift thy hearts unto Him in praise & thank the Lord. Kiss the Son's mouth, love Him with all thy heart, love the Words of His mouth & unto thy utmost even the Word which He has sworn unto David."

35. The Lord loves praise. The High & the Holy One dwelleth in the praises of His people.

36. The power of positive praise is terrific! Count your blessings, thank God for all He has done & chase the Devil away & all his shades of night by letting the Light in. The power of positive praise & quoting & singing & action just really puts the Devil on the run. He sure doesn't like the Scripture & he hates praise & he hates thanksgiving & he hates songs of prayer & praise & he especially hates our positive active work for the Lord.

37. The Lord honours your coming into His presence with praise & thanksgiving. You can do it this way: Praise, precepts, prayer, the products (testimonies of the results of praise, the Word & prayer)--& what should come at the end?--Praise again.

38. "Praise ye the Name of the Lord with the seven kisses of thy Father & be thankful & give praise to thy Love!"

(See also No. 33, 74, 114, 369, 777, 957, 1259, 1375, 1384, 1393.)

39. Deu.10:21 He is thy praise & He is thy God, that hath done for thee these great & terrible things, which thine eyes have seen.

40. 2Ch.20:22 And when they began to sing & to praise, the Lord set ambushments against the children of Ammon, Moab, & Mount Seir, which were come against Judah; & they were smitten.

41. Psa.18:3 I will call upon the Lord, Who is worthy to be praised: so shall I be saved from mine enemies.

42. Psa.33:1 Rejoice in the Lord, O ye righteous: for praise is comely for the upright.

43. Psa.34:1 I will bless the Lord at all times: His praise shall continually be in my mouth.

44. Psa.35:28 And my tongue shall speak of Thy righteousness & of Thy praise all the day long.

45. Psa.50:23 Whoso offereth praise glorifieth Me: and to him that ordereth his conversation aright will I shew the Salvation of God.

46. Psa.71:14 But I will hope continually, & will yet praise Thee more & more.

47. Psa.92:1,2 It is a good thing to give thanks unto the Lord, & to sing praises unto Thy Name, O most High: To shew forth Thy lovingkindness in the morning, & Thy faithfulness every night.

48. Psa.98:1 O sing unto the Lord a new song; for He hath done marvellous things: His right hand, & His holy arm, hath gotten Him the victory.

49. Psa.100:4a Enter into His gates with thanksgiving, & into His courts with praise.
50. Psa.103:1,2 Bless the Lord, O my soul: and all that is within me, bless His holy Name. Bless the Lord, O my soul, and forget not all His benefits.
51. Psa.104:33 I will sing unto the Lord as long as I live: I will sing praise to my God while I have my being.
52. Psa.107:8 Oh that men would praise the Lord for His goodness, and for His wonderful works to the children of men!
53. Psa.107:22 And let them sacrifice the sacrifices of thanksgiving, & declare His works with rejoicing.
54. Psa.113:3 From the rising of the sun unto the going down of the same the Lord's Name is to be praised.
55. Psa.118:24 This is the day which the Lord hath made; we will rejoice & be glad in it.
56. Psa.119:7 I will praise Thee with uprightness of heart, when I shall have learned Thy righteous judgements.
57. Psa.138:1 I will praise Thee with my whole heart: before the gods will I sing praise unto Thee.
58. Psa.146:2 While I live will I praise the Lord: I will sing praises unto my God while I have any being.
59. Pro.27:21 As the fining pot for silver, & the furnace for gold; so is a man to his praise.
60. Isa.38:18,19 For the grave cannot praise Thee, death cannot celebrate Thee: they that go down into the pit cannot hope for Thy Truth. The living, the living, he shall praise Thee, as I do this day: the father to the children shall make known Thy Truth.
61. Lam.3:41 Let us lift up our heart with our hands unto God in the Heavens.
62. Mat.21:16b And Jesus saith unto them, Yea; have ye never read, Out of the mouth of babes & sucklings Thou hast perfected praise?
63. Mar.14:26 And when they had sung an hymn, they went out into the Mount of Olives.
64. Act 2:47 Praising God, & having favour with all the people. And the Lord added to the Church daily such as should be saved.
65. 1Th.5:16 Rejoice evermore.
66. Heb.13:15 By Him therefore let us offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of our lips giving thanks to His Name.
67. Rev.19:5 And a voice came out of the Throne, saying, Praise our God, all ye His servants, & ye that fear Him, both small & great.

(See also Hab.3:17-19.)



*Pray without ceasing (1Thes.5:17).*

1. Why does the Lord in the Bible repeatedly tell you to pray, when all the time He knows what you need better than you do & He knows what you're going to pray about? Sometimes He even says He'll answer you before you ask. It's mostly for your benefit you have to pray, not for His, a confession to Him that you can't do without Him.

2. I know that Christ is, because I talked with Him this morning.

3. The power's always on. The message is always there. God's Spirit is like a broadcasting station broadcasting all the time. All you have to do is throw the switch and tune in.

4. I don't care how many gifts you have--if you don't keep in touch with the Lord all the time you are in trouble.

5. When you're strong in the Spirit, God will do anything for you! You're one with Him, & when this happens, you can command Him to do anything.

6. God's broadcasting all the time, You just have to learn how to tune in!

7. The Lord does not always answer us right away, which sometimes tests our faith & draws us closer to Him in the Spirit.

8. Drown yourself in Jesus--like the drunk drowns his sorrows in drink!

9. I don't know all the answers, but I know the answer Man!

10. The worst thing in the World you can do is to keep on going when you don't know what to do.

11. You cannot do the Master's Work without the Master's Power!--And to get it, you must spend time with the Master!

12. Do not have your concert first, then tune your instruments afterwards. Begin the day with the Word of God & prayer, & get first of all in harmony with Him.

13. No one can continue to keep pouring out to others, without spending some time alone with the Lord, getting filled up again.

14. You just get busy listening to the Lord, and you won't have to be bothered with these other things you think you have to do.

15. If you don't get alone with the Lord and lick the Devil first, you might as well forget it!

16. If you're on His channel in constant communication with Him & constantly receiving His vibes, you're constantly hearing from Him, and you're hearing His voice all the time in the mind's eye of your spirit. All day long & even at night in your sleep, you're in tune with Jesus!

17. He likes to woo you in the softness of the night with His tender, gentle, loving voice whispering in your heart.

18. On wings of prayer our burdens take flight  
And our load of care becomes bearably light  
And our heavy hearts are lifted above  
To be healed by the balm of God's wonderful love!  
And the tears in our eyes are dried by the hands  
Of a Loving Father who understands  
All of our problems, our fears & despair  
When we take them to Him on the wings of prayer.

19. You must learn to make personal contact with the power of God to let Him do the work of bringing you joy, health and happiness.

20. Man is great only when he is kneeling.

21. If God is your Father, please call home!

22. The secret of prayer is secret prayer.

23. Prayer digs the channels from the reservoir of God's boundless resources to the tiny pools of our lives.

24. Discouraged, weeping, full of care? Keep on believing, God answers prayer!

25. Some folks just don't seem to realize when they're moaning about not getting prayers answered, that

NO is the answer--or WAIT!

26. I am going to be so busy that I must spend more time in prayer than usual.

27. God likes to smell prayers,  
Like you like to smell flowers.

Up your prayers dance,  
In pillars & towers.

28. God's delays are not denials.

29. If you're too busy to get alone with God & pray, You're too busy.

30. Man's greatest power lies in the power of prayer.

31. God is just waiting on you to command the situation! He said "Command thou Me!" He's given such faith and power to you that you can even command God to do what you want Him to do for you! (Isa.45:11) If you're righteous, doing the right thing and trying to please God, you can command Him to do what you want Him to do. He's already promised to do it in His Word, to answer your prayer.

32. I've never put myself out on a limb and demanded God to do a certain thing, without His doing something! It wasn't always the thing that I necessarily was demanding--usually it was--but always He showed me the answer or did what I needed.

33. If God can hear one man's prayers and change history for it and spare whole nations or slaughter whole nations, He can certainly hear all of our prayers put together!

34. Every time you pray the Lord's prayer, you pray for the Kingdom of God to come!

35. One of the greatest proofs of God's existence is answers to prayer.

36. It's not the quantity of your prayer that counts, it's the quality!

37. If you're going to work for the Lord, you'd better listen to him first!

38. No matter what you're doing, you can always be praying!

39. God has confined Himself and His operations to our faith and our requests.

40. That's how this work began: Praying in the spirit, waiting in the spirit, listening in the spirit, speaking in the spirit, And then obeying in the spirit what the Lord told us to do!

41. Your prayers can do mighty things and change the course of history!

42. If you're in the habit of praying privately, it won't be hard for you to pray publicly.

43. As long as you're calling, you can expect God to answer, as long as you're empty, you can be filled!

44. If you're a child of God and asking Him about something, usually the first voice you hear is God's, the second one is most likely the Devil's!

45. The busier your day, the more you have to pray.

46. You could accomplish so much through prayer! The World will never know how much has not been accomplished because you didn't pray!

47. Prayer is the hand of faith that flips the switch.

48. Please pray! You're the Operator. It's your responsibility to pass on the message. Please don't fail!--or someone will miss God's important call. Be a faithful Operator--pray!

49. To pray when you do not feel like praying is not hypocrisy--it is faithfulness to the greatest duty of life.

50. Prayer has nothing to do with the position of your body it's all in how you position your heart.

51. What God does depends on your will and your action and what you want and how you pray! You're not supposed to just stand there and let God and the Devil fight it out!

52. There's something about the hands and holding hands which has spiritual significance! Maybe it has some kind of power, like completing an electrical circuit!

53. There is an actual natural spiritual power in your hands, especially in prayer in the Name of Jesus!

54. I believe in the power of laying on of hands!--if for no other reason but just obedience!--But there's a certain natural spiritual power there too!

55. Pray before you act.--Don't let your zeal run away with you!

56. You'd better take time for the Lord and prayer, or you're going to find out you're running out of time!

57. It's not how long you pray or how much you pray, it's how much you believe.
58. The Lord wants to be recognized. He wants you to know that you need Him. That's why He wants you to pray.
59. Lord, bless these ears that hear thy Words. Bless these eyes that see Thy truths. Bless this mouth that speaks Thy message. Bless this heart that gives Thy love! In Jesus' name.
60. The Lord wants you to be specific! It's a sign of your faith!
61. Prayers come from the Spirit of God!
62. So much depends on us, so much depends on our prayers!
63. It really costs something to pray!
64. You ought to really get down to business with God! There must be times when you really cry out to the Lord and really pray and seek the Lord and really pray in the Spirit with strong tongues and tears and really call upon the Lord with a whole heart!
65. Since you can pray and your prayers can change things, if things aren't changed, it's your fault for not praying and believing and asking God to do something.
66. Your intentions and motives may be good, but if you don't seek God for His wisdom and how to go about it, you can be misled.
67. Before you call anybody or talk to anybody, talk to God. Get your orders from Him for the day.
68. You must pray desperately all the time, every moment, if you expect to be spared for troubles caused by the Enemy.
69. Get your orders from the Lord today and don't go only by what you were told yesterday.
70. There's something about the power of prayer that will stop people cold in their tracks and shut them up!
71. If even a honest atheist, an honest unbeliever, will cry out to God, God will answer!
72. It's better to pray them out than throw them out!
73. Never underestimate the power of prayer.
74. Instead of waiting upon the Lord, some people want the Lord to wait upon them.
75. You've got to get not only in prayer, but you've got to get in the spirit!
76. You need to learn to talk to the Lord , and learn to listen most of all.
77. Prayer is something you can be doing all the time, no matter what else you're doing. It's like thinking on your feet!
78. Most Christians are more concerned about having God hear what they have to say than they are about hearing what God has to say.
79. You have to play it by ear--and it had better be by your ear and the Lord's music!
80. Prayer is not just speaking your piece, but most of all letting God speak His piece.
81. Take time to hear from God, and He'll take time to straighten out the problem.
82. Read the Bible before praying--it will give you faith!
83. Desperate prayer that is full of faith is the most powerful weapon we have, and can radically alter any situation or heart.
84. God knows your needs, but He likes you to be humble and be willing to pray and acknowledge His power and show your faith by asking, then He likes to answer so you can give Him the thanks and the glory!
85. Prayer is like breathing, just breathing the Holy Spirit all the time. You're constantly in communication with the Lord and you're constantly thinking about the Lord, keeping your mind stayed on Him so He'll keep you in perfect peace.
86. We make enough mistakes that we can't help, without making a mistake that we can help! We cannot afford to make snap judgments on major issues that instead require real desperate prayer together to ask God what He wants done.
87. God expects you to put feet to your prayers.
88. Start the day off right, hear from the Lord. He'll solve a lot of the problems before the day even starts if you listen to what He has to say.
89. The family that prays together stay together.
90. Work without prayer is work without God.
91. The Lord's own model prayer was only 66 words long!--It must be enough!--And it covers everything!
92. How wonderful are the ways of the Lord--but they're not past finding out, if you ask Him!
93. Prayer is powerful! When we pray, things will happen and things will be different! God will answer prayer! But God said to Israel one time that bad things were happening because "No man stirreth himself to call upon Me". (Isa.64:7)
94. Ask God first!--It's a lot easier and cheaper than long distance telephone calls to leadership.

95. All of our little prayers are well and good, but there are time when you should really get desperate with the Lord in prayer about certain thing and certain people.

96. The Lord wants us to be happy, but there should be times when you are not satisfied with just the usual run to things, when you really seek the Lord for a needed change and really pray, pouring out your heart to the Lord.

97. If you're not really moved when you pray, I wonder how far it gets!--How do you expect God to be moved?

98. There are very few people who don't respect prayer or at least your right to pray.

99. There's something electrifying about prayer!

100. You get what you ask for and what you have the faith for! God takes you exactly at your word!

101. If your day is hemmed with prayer, it is less likely to unravel.

102. The prayers of Godly men and women can accomplish more than all the military forces in the World. Prayer-craft is better that aircraft!

103. You'd better pray at the first sign if little troubles, so they don't get to be big ones!

104. No man or woman accomplishes so much with so little expenditure of time as when he or she is praying.

105. When we get to Heaven we're going to find out a lot of things that happened or didn't happen were not the Devil's fault or God's fault, but they were our fault, because we failed to pray!

106. He who ceases to pray ceases to prosper.

107. Prayer is the stop that keeps you going.

108. Prayer is a powerful thing, for God has bound and tied Himself thereto.

109. The quickest way to get back on your feet is to get down on your knees.

110. Your life is fragile!--Handle with prayer!

111. If a care is too small for you to turn into a prayer, it is too small for you to turn into a burden.

112. Prayer flies where the eagle never flew.

113. If you will work FOR God, form a committee. If you will work WITH God, form a prayer group.

114. Pray in faith!--If a friend gave you a cheque, would you wait until you cashed it to thank him?

115. If you believe, the World can still be moved by your prayers.

116. One can chase a thousand, but two can put ten thousand to flight, and it helps greatly to have someone else pray with you when you feel oppressed or distressed or attacked by the Enemy.

117. There is great power in united prayer together.

118. If you're not willing to listen to God, then God's not going to listen to you!

119. When you stop listening, it's time for God to stop talking!

120. Most people pray, "Hear Lord thy servant speaketh!"--instead of like dear little Samuel, the baby prophet, who at five years of age said, "Speak, Lord Thy servant heareth!"

121. With most people, prayer is a one-way street and they to all the talking!

122. If the need is there, the answer must be there too, so look around and pray it in.

123. Faith and obedience come first--then God answers prayer!

124. One of the main rules for reaching a decision: Don't keep talking--pray

125. God will give you spiritual solutions alone with Him that will make the mountains melt away!

126. Satan trembles when he sees  
The weakest saint upon his knees!

127. You can pioneer something new every day if you pray!

128. We should live to listen!

129. To reach someone for whom you care,

Start from your heart and say a prayer.

130. God always answers: Sometimes He says yes, sometimes He says no, and sometimes He says wait!

131. I shed my tears for them like Jesus shed His blood.

132. My tears reach God's ears in the big hall of Heaven.

133. Prayers are so beautiful, like incense ascending up to the Father.

134. Those prayers are so beautiful! They're like angels, like maidens fair, that flow intertwined just like they're dancing!

135. I burn my heart and I pour our my soul unto Jesus, and the smoke thereof rises and there is sweet vapor.

136. As a sweet smelling savour rise the prayers of the saints in the House of the Lord.

137. He likes to smell our prayers like the fragrance of flowers.

138. We burn, we consume, we pour out our heart and it pours up to Him.



139. You must learn how to contact His power through prayer, a spiritual seeking of contact with His Spirit through obedience to the laws of His Word.

140. "Blessed is he that beseecheth Me for My poor!"

141. Prayer is not overcoming God's reluctance, it is laying ahold of His highest willingness.

142. The only footprints on the sands of time that will really last are the ones made after knee-prints.

143. Groanings which cannot be uttered are often prayers which cannot be refused.

144. Talk to the Shepherd when you can't sleep,

Don't just lie there counting sheep!

145. Before you eat take care

To cleanse your food with a prayer!

146. Ask for prayer! It's a sign of your faith in the Lord.

147. Prayer moves the hand & heart of God!

148. You're to pray in the Name of Jesus, you're to ask in the Name of Jesus, you're to claim victories in the Name of Jesus & you're to rebuke the Enemy in the Name of Jesus!

149. The only time I ever address God is when I pray the Lord's prayer, and then I always say it in Jesus' name.

150. You can always call on the Lord & through Him have power over everything.

151. If I could hear Christ praying for me in the next room, I would not fear a million enemies! Yet distance makes no difference: He is praying for me! "He ever liveth to make intercession." (Ro.8:34)

152. In prayer, it's the attitude of our hearts that counts, not the position of our bodies!

153. If our hearts are on their knees in humility, prostrated before the Lord, & our minds are centered on Him, that's what counts!

154. You don't have to be on your knees physically, if you're on your knees in the Spirit!--But it helps!

155. Quote Scripture when you pray. Hold God to His Promises.

156. There's always hope if there's love & prayer!

157. God's business has always been communication.--The Lord's communication with man & man communication with Him.--His giving the message, the Word, & man receiving it!

158. I think maybe the Lord allowed radio to be invented for a lot of reasons, including to demonstrate prayer & spiritual communications.

159. Don't hesitate to use the name of Jesus. Make the subject pray in the name of Jesus & say the name of Jesus & ask to be delivered in the name of Jesus, again and again.

160. There's so much in the Bible on prayer, & every time you're talking about prayer you're talking about begging!--So why not beg?

161. One reason I got to know the Lord so well, I was alone with Him a great deal.

162. "Effectual are the faithful prayers of David's children."

163. If you're on His channel in constant communication with Him & constantly receiving His vibes, you're constantly hearing from Him, & you're hearing His voice all the time in the inner ear of your spirit.

164. Prayer is the soul of man tired of Earthly wanderings, flying to the bosom of God, & waiting there in prayer until God speaks to his heart & revives his spirit.

165. Often God is not stirred because we are not stirred!

166. Everything that God in His Word has promised to do, prayer can bring to pass.

167. The Dew of Heaven & the choicest blessings fall on that soul that gets quiet & waits for His presence.

168. Prayer is a connecting link between human needs & Divine resources.

169. Public prayer is a means of uniting all hearts together at one time & is also for the benefit of the listeners, that they may hear the prayer & know that it is prayed in faith & that an answer is expected, so when the answer comes they'll know it was the prayer that did it!

170. You can change God's mind by prayer. Moses prayed so hard that God finally repented of what He would do to the Children of Israel.

171. Can you change God's mind? Within certain limits, yes. God's overall plan has never changed, His overall will has never changed. But in certain details you can change His mind, otherwise you might as well quit praying. If prayer won't change anything forget it.

172. If our meetings are supposed to be anything, they are supposed to be spiritual meetings where the Spirit has full sway & you pray in tongues & you speak in tongues & you interpret & you prophesy & God does miracles!

173. You'd be surprised how much God depends on your prayers, on how concerned you are & how interested you are. The Lord answers your prayers, so why don't you pray?

174. When God answers your prayers He translates those prayers, He amplifies their power & the desire of that prayer to influence the person you are praying for. You have actual influence on them through your prayers.

175. The Lord leaves a lot to us & your concern & prayer. If you only cry with half a heart you only get half an answer. If you stir yourself, then God will stir Himself.

176. An awful lot depends on us, our prayers & what we want done! A lot of people have a lazy attitude & seem to think the Lord will do it all no matter what.--But the truth of the matter is, a lot depends on us.

177. He wants us to show concern and pray about a situation. If you really believe, every prayer is heard and answered--but if you don't pray, it is not done. An awful lot depends on you.

178. He often answers before you call--because He knows you're going to.

179. The very intensity with which you pray and really mean it or desire it is reflected in the answer.

180. Prayer depends on three factors: Your position, God's position and the position of the other persons for whom you're praying. You don't control it completely and God has specifically limited Himself not to control it completely, but to let it be affected by your position and their position.

181. Who knows the Will of God?--All we can do is pray and expect some kind of an answer.

182. Demand and expect an answer! He has promised it! I know He'll not fail, He cannot deny Himself! He is bound by His Word. Remind Him of it, cling to His promises, memorize and quote them continually and never doubt for a moment that God is going to answer--and He will! He has to! He wants to! Trust Him and thank Him for the answer, even if you don't see it immediately. For behold, the trying of your faith is much more precious than gold!

183. You determine you're going to pray more, and then you desperately cry out to God and boom! Boom! Boom! The Holy Spirit goes to work right away and you begin to see some action!

184. God is still upon the Throne and prayer changes things!

185. If you don't meet and pray, you'll become the Devil's meat and prey!

186. The Lord's answers to prayer are infinitely perfect, and they will show that often when we were asking for a stone that looked like bread, He was giving us bread that to our shortsightedness looked like a stone.

187. What a friend we have in Jesus

All our sins and griefs to bear,

What a privilege to carry,

Everything to God in prayer!

Oh, what peace we often forfeit,

Oh, what needless pain we bear!

--All because we do not carry

Everything to God in prayer.

188. I will direct my prayer as an arrow, and after that "I will look up," to see if it has hit. When the prayer is directed in the morning, the "look up" lasts all day. (Psa.5.)

189. Prayer is the opening of a channel from your emptiness to God's fullness.

190. The greatest undeveloped resource is faith; the greatest unused power is prayer.

191. I like to get down on my knees and pray when I get desperate enough. It's a good position for your body as well as your heart!

192. Get together first of all in prayer and praise the Lord and get in the Spirit and pray desperately that God will use you! Get down on you hands and knees, old-fashioned prayer meeting style, and beg the Lord and cry out to the Lord like the Prophets and the Apostles and the men of God of old and plead with God to help you to be melted together in his Love.

193. When you pray against somebody, you're cursing them.

194. Prayer is not a ritual, but a relationship.

195. Shutting your eyes helps you to see in the spirit and to become unconscious to the things and people around you, and to get your mind on the Lord and in a relaxed position where nothing distracts you.

196. God likes you to be specific. He likes you to tell Him exactly what you want, because He likes to know really what you've got the faith for.

197. Sometimes the Lord just lets us have a problem in order that He can give us the answer!

198. The Lord likes us to find out we can't always solve all our problems and that we need His help! If we could figure it all out and solve all our problems, we wouldn't need Him.

199. All the answers are simple for the Lord and all the solutions are easy for Him!

200. If you forget to pray, that's almost as bad as not wanting to pray because you're not willing to admit that you don't know the answers and that you have to ask for them.

201. You ought to try a little prayer time early in the morning before your day's work every day. Asking the Lord for the solution to problems is the easiest way in the world to get them. Don't think, "It's hard to pray and I haven't got time to pray, it's a waste of time to pray, blah blah."--If you spent a little more time praying you'd spent a Hell of a lot less time working a getting it done! It's just that simple.

202. The Lord loves to give you the answer. He knows exactly what to do and how to do it, so why don't you ask Him instead of going to all the trouble of trying to figure it out yourself?

(See also No. T, 4, 73, 74, 78, 85, 98, 126, 191, 302, 320, 341, 345, 369, 384, 546, 638, 646, 700, 706, 708, 712, 753, 950, 1249, 1384, 1637, 1647, that Never Run Dry, and Hem of His Garment.)

203. .32:31,32 Moses returned unto the Lord, and said, Oh, this people have sinned a great sin and have made them gods of gold. Yet now, if Thou wilt forgive their sin--; and if not, blot me, I pray Thee, out of the book which Thou hast written.

204. .23:21 When thou shalt vow a vow unto the Lord thy God, thou shalt not slack to pay it: for the Lord thy God will surely require it of thee; and it would be sin in thee.

205. SA.3:9a,10 Therefore Eli said unto Samuel, Go, lie down: and it shall be, if He call thee, that thou shalt say, Speak, Lord; for Thy servant heareth. And the Lord came, and stood, and called as at other times, Samuel, Samuel. Then Samuel answered, Speak; for Thy servant heareth.

205a. SA.7:9b Samuel cried unto the Lord for Israel; and the Lord heard him.

206. SA.12:23 Moreover as for me, God forbid that I should sin against the Lord in ceasing to pray for you: but I will teach you the good and the right way.

207. SA.22:5-7 When the waves of death compassed me, the floods of ungodly men made me afraid; The sorrows of Hell compassed me about; the snares of death prevented me; In my distress I called upon the Lord, and cried to my God: and He did hear my voice out of His temple, and my cry did enter into His ears.

208. 1KI.19:11b,12 And, behold, the Lord passed by, and a great strong wind rent the mountains, and brake in pieces the rocks before the Lord; but the Lord was not in the Wind: and after the wind an earthquake; but the Lord was not in the earthquake: And after the earthquake a fire; but the Lord was not in the fire: and after the fire a still small voice.

209. KI.22:19 Because thine heart was tender, and thou hast humbled thyself before the Lord, when thou heardest what I spake against this place, and against the inhabitants thereof, that they should become a desolation and a curse, and has rent thy clothes, and wept, before me; I also have heard thee, saith the Lord.

210. CH.16:11 Seek the Lord and His strength, seek His face continually.

211. CH.26:5 And he sought God in the days of Zechariah, who had understanding in the visions of God: and as long as he sought the Lord, God made him to prosper.

212. .19:14 Let the words of my mouth, and the meditation of my heart, be acceptable in Thy sight, O Lord, my strength and my redeemer.

213. .62:8 Trust in Him at all times; ye people, pour out your heart before Him: God is a refuge for us. Selah.

214. .66:18,19 If I regard iniquity in my heart, the Lord will not hear me: But verily God hath heard me He hath attended to the voice of my prayer.

215. .102:17 He will regard the prayer of the destitute, and not despise their prayer.

216. .106:15 And He gave them their request; but sent leanness into their soul.

217. .106:44,45 Nevertheless He regarded their affliction, when He heard their cry: And He remembered for them His covenant, and repented according to the multitude of His mercies.

218. .116:1,2 I love the Lord. because He hath heard my voice and my supplications. Because He hath inclined His ear unto me, therefore will I call upon Him as long as I live.

219. .119:2 Blessed are they that keep His testimonies, and that seek Him with the whole heart.

220. .8:17 I love them that love Me; and those that seek Me early shall find Me.

221. .28:9 He that turneth away his ear from hearing the law, even his prayer shall be abomination.

222. .30:19b He will be very gracious unto thee at the voice of thy cry; when He shall hear it, He will answer thee.

223. .40:31 But they that wait upon the Lord shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint.

224. .45:11 Thus saith the Lord, the Holy One of Israel, and His Maker, Ask Me of things to come concerning My sons, and concerning the work of My hands command ye Me.

225. .55:6 Seek ye the Lord while He may be found, call ye upon Him while He is near.

**226. .65:24.** And it shall come to pass, that before they call, I will answer; and while thy are yet speaking, I will hear.

227. .29:13 And ye shall seek Me, and find Me, when ye shall search for Me with all your heart.

228. .33:3 Call unto Me, and I will answer thee and show thee great and mighty things, which thou knowest not.

229. .10:12,13 Then said He unto me, Fear not, Daniel: for from the first day that thou didst set thine heart to understand, and to chasten thyself before thy God, thy words were heard, and I am come for thy words. But the prince of the kingdom of Persia withstood Me one and twenty days: but lo, Michael, one of the chief princes, came to help Me; and I remained there with the kings of Persia.

230. .6:6-13 But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou has shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask Him. After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in Heaven, Hallowed be Thy Name. Thy Kingdom come. Thy will be done in Earth, as it is in Heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For Thine is the Kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.

231. .18:18,19b,20 Verily I say unto you, whatsoever ye shall bind on Earth shall be bound in Heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on Earth shall be loosed in Heaven. If two of you shall agree on Earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of My Father which is in Heaven. For where two or three are gathered together in My Name, there am I in the midst of them.

232. .1:35 And in the morning, rising up a great while before the day, He went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.

233. .11:24 Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them.

234. .14:36. Father, all things are possible unto Thee... nevertheless not what I will, but what Thou wilt.

235. .6:12 And it came to pass in those days, that He went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God.

236. .11:9-11 Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.

237. .18:1b Men ought always to pray, and not to faint.

238. .21:36 Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, to stand before the Son of man.

239. .4:23,24 But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship Him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship must worship Him in spirit and in truth.

240. .14:13,14 And whatsoever ye shall ask in My Name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. If ye shall ask anything in My Name I will do it.

241. .15:7 If ye abide in Me, and My Words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.

242. .16:23b,24 Whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in My Name, He will give it you. Hitherto have ye asked nothing in My Name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.

243. .8:26 Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groaning which cannot be uttered.

244. .8:34 Who is He that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.

245. .12:12b Continuing instant in prayer.

246. .15:30 Now I beseech you, brethren, for the Lord Jesus Christ's sake, and for the love of the Spirit, that ye strive together with me in your prayers to God for me.

247. **CO.14:15a What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, and I will pray with the understanding also.**

248. **.3:20 Now unto Him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us.**

249. **.6:18 Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints.**

250. .4:6 Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God.

251. TH.1:2 We give thanks to God always for you all, making mention of you in our prayers.

252. TH.5:17 Pray without ceasing.

253. .4:16 Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need.

254. .13:3 Remember them that are in bounds, as bound with them; and them which suffer adversity, as being yourselves also in the body.

255. .1:6,7 But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed. For let not that man think that he shall receive anything of the Lord.

256. .4:2b Ye have not, because ye ask not.

257. .4:8a Draw nigh to God, and He will draw nigh to you.

258. .5:16b-18 The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much. Elias was a man subject to like passions as we are, and he prayed earnestly that it might not rain: and it rained not on the Earth by the space of three years and six months. And he prayed again, and the Heaven gave rain, and the Earth brought forth her fruit.

259. JO.3:22 And whatsoever we ask, we receive of Him, because we keep His commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in His sight.

260. JO.5:14,15 And this is the confidence that we have in Him that if we ask any thing according to His will, He heareth us: And if we know that He hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of Him.

261. .5:8 And when He had taken the book, the four beasts and four and twenty elders fell down before the Lamb, having every one of them harps, and golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers of saints.

262. .8:3,4 And another angel came and stood at the altar, having a golden censer; and there was given unto him much incense, that he should offer it with the prayers of all saints upon the golden altar which was before the throne. And the smoke of the incense, which came with the prayers of the saints, ascended up before God out of the angel's hand.

(See also EXO.32:9-14; NUM.14:11-21; DEU.9:18-29; MAT.8:5-13.)



*Lo, children are an heritage of the Lord: and the fruit of the womb is His reward (Ps.127:3).*

1. A baby is the biggest miracle since the creation of the World!--Another immortal soul that is going to live forever!
2. I don't believe you ever have a baby except by the hand of God! It is the hand of God Who creates a human soul!
3. You're not going to have any babies except the ordained souls of God & children of God He intends for you to have!
4. "Knew" disciples are the best disciples of all, because you can begin training'm before they're even born!
5. A baby is an expression of God's Love.
6. The Lord put her in human flesh--your flesh, Honey! You clothed her in human flesh! You wrapped her in a robe of flesh! The Lord put her in your tummy & you did your best to make her beautiful, you wrapped her up in your human Godly flesh, & she's so beautiful! I don't think I ever saw anything in this whole World so beautiful!
7. A baby is a small member of the home that makes love stronger, days shorter, nights longer, the bankroll smaller, the home happier, clothes shabbier, the past forgotten & the future worth living for.
8. The Devil hates babies, children, conception & childbirth, because if he could stop all that, man would die out completely!
9. A man is done when the night is over, but a woman has yet to be fulfilled, & that's to become pregnant & have a child--that's her greatest sexual thrill!
10. The Lord is the One who gets you pregnant! A man can fuck you a thousand times a day & never get you pregnant unless the Lord ordains it!
11. Only the physical body is put together on Earth, that's all...The Bible doesn't teach that you inherit your spirit from your mother or your father--it's from the hand of God!
12. One thing the Lord seems to love is lots of babies. It's one way that He has of growing His Kingdom, besides winning souls & witnessing.
13. Multiplication is the name of the game--the first commandment God ever gave to man & woman!: "Be fruitful & multiply!"
14. God's never been afraid of over-population, and He doesn't believe in birth control.
15. "Family planning" is nothing but defiance of God and attempting to design your own future, unwillingness to trust God, attempting to take things out of His hands, refusing to create the lives He has ordained, and saying that you know better than God!
16. The stork & the obstetrician do have one thing in common--their large bills.
17. People who sleep like a baby probably don't have one.
18. Your dear little baby has come from above  
Filling your home with sunshine & love!  
No treasure on Earth is so precious or rare  
As the dear little one God's placed in your care!  
Show kindness & wisdom, & in all that you do,  
Your baby will learn life's values from you.  
A wee bit of Heaven bestowed upon you,  
With baby's arrival your dream has come true!

19. A babe in the house is a wellspring of pleasure, a messenger of peace & love, a testing place for innocents on Earth, a link between angels & men.

20. A tiny blessing from God above, soft, sweet & precious, who, with dimpled cheeks & laughing eyes, is God's perfect gift to you. An angel sent down in disguise, who calls herself your own. What could be greater than a baby in the home?

21. Sunshine & laughter & warm little tears

Are things you will cherish throughout all the years.

Soft chubby fingers & love sweet & true,

All part of this baby that God sent to you!

22. It is almost like I created her, formed her by my faith & my will & my decision & my prayer. This is the child of my desire. It's almost like I designed her like an artist paints a picture, picks up a brush & uses the paints to design the creation he desires, then casts aside the brush because he has the reality, the fruition, the creation.

23. The greatest works of God take a long time. It takes God time to grow a flower or even to paint a sunset & especially to grow a child & to make a whole life!

24. Every one of you mothers is a Madonna & every one of you is having Jesus' babies.

25. If God gives you a baby, then He must know that you can be a mother, & a good mother. If you're not a good mother, He wants you to learn to be a good mother.

26. The hand that rocks the cradle rules the World!

27. Having babies is one nice thing you don't have to worry about. You leave it entirely in the Lord's hands. Then you know it's God's will if you have one.

28. I don't think any child is an accident.

29. Pregnancy is very important, & anybody that would want to kill the growth & birth of a human soul, once God had breathed into that human soul the breath of life, must be some kind of a monster! How horrible!

30. A baby is a little bit like Salvation. It's a gift, but if you have it, it causes a lot of hard work. "Faith without works is dead," (Jam.2:26) & a baby without hard work could be dead too!

31. Bearing babies & having children is the greatest experience in this natural life.

32. Babies are eternal gifts we are training, not just for time, but for eternity! God is the Creator of pregnancy, not just merely some man loving a woman. He created those children, not you. You were merely the human instruments that God used.

33. I don't believe that any human being, any human spirit, is created without the touch of the Divine, the touch of the Hand of God!

34. You were chosen by God!--You didn't just happen by accident.

35. Do you know why a pregnant woman looks so satisfied & contented?--Because she's fulfilling her mission as a mother, she's bearing fruit!

36. Artificially induced abortion brought on purposely is murder, no matter what else you want to call it!

37. No child is an accident!--God did it, & He doesn't make mistakes, so who are you to question it?

38. The most precious priceless thing which God ever made is a human spirit & soul!--A baby!

39. God's Gift is God's work. Children are the gift of God, but they're also the work of God.

40. If we're one Family at all & we're brothers & sisters, we should all be concerned about our girls who are pregnant.

41. As far as I'm concerned, there's nothing more beautiful than a pregnant woman! And I'm sure in the eyes of God only the human soul is prettier than a woman's body, His crowning creation of the physical world! Hallelujah! Amen!

42. Birth control is of the Devil! God doesn't want birth control, He wants birth out of control! He wants lots of babies!

43. The best kind of disciples & converts are born in the Family & raised from scratch! In fact, even before they're born, they're influenced & blessed & given good bodies & spirits!

44. You can try as hard as you will & fuck ten times a day, but if it's not God's will for you to have a baby, you're not going to have one!

45. If you get pregnant & have a baby you know good & well it's of God! I don't care whose it is, it's God's will!

46. Do you realise what Mary went through to have Jesus? She had to be looked down on, spat on, scorned as an unwed mother! As far as the World was concerned, Jesus was a bastard--nobody knew who the father was.

47. We are diametrically opposed to abortion! It is murder, it is infanticide, it is child killing, it is horrible!

48. Our babies ought to be the best babies in the World, born to the best parents in the World, doing the best job in the World for Jesus!

49. It is essential that all of the members of our Family know at least a little about the delivery of babies at home--or anywhere, as it is a skill that may be needed in case of an emergency.

50. Experience is not a prerequisite in an infant's care. Thousands of women all over the World who have not had the slightest bit of experience have babies every day! All that's required is a lot of love & the enormous dedication it takes to learn!

51. It's worth paying the price of a little sickness & weakness during pregnancy. God is using it to create an immortal soul.

52. God uses humble little funny women to do one of the most important jobs there is next to soul-winning--having babies!

53. In conception, it is the Spirit that quickeneth & the flesh profiteth nothing. The flesh is a mere vehicle, a tool, but it's the Spirit that brings life & a new human soul into being.

(See also No. M, 169, 330C, 338, 353, 389, 397, 587, 624, 739, 744, 745, 746, 777, 785, 786, 787, 788, 789, 790, 794, 795, 827, 863, 864, 884, 900, 1136, 1142, 1218, *Story of Davidito*, *Story of Tech*, *Childcare Handbook 1*, HH2.)

54. GEN.25:21 And Isaac entreated the Lord for his wife, because she was barren: and the Lord was entreated of him, and Rebekah his wife conceived.

55. GEN.30:22 And God remembered Rachel, and God hearkened to her, and opened her womb.

56. GEN.49:25 Even by the God of thy father, Who shall help thee; and by the Almighty, Who shall bless thee with blessings of Heaven above, blessings of the deep that lieth under, blessings of the breasts, and of the womb.

57. EXO.1:19 And the midwives said unto Pharaoh, Because the Hebrew women are not as the Egyptian women; for they are lively, and are delivered ere the midwives come in unto them.

58. JDG.13:3 And the angel of the Lord appeared unto the woman, and said unto her, Behold now, thou art barren, and bearest not: but thou shalt conceive, and bear a son.

59. 1SA.1:5,19b But unto Hannah he gave a worthy portion; for he loved Hannah: but the Lord had shut up her womb. And Elkanah knew Hannah his wife; and the Lord remembered her.

60. JOB.31:15 Did not He that made me in the womb make him? and did not one fashion us in the womb?

61. JOB.33:4 The Spirit of God hath made me, and the breath of the Almighty hath given me life.

62. PSA.71:6 By Thee have I been holden up from the womb: Thou art He that took me out of my mother's bowels: my praise shall be continually of Thee.

63. PSA.127:3 Lo, children are an heritage of the Lord: and the fruit of the womb is His reward.

64. PSA.139:13 For Thou hast possessed my reins: Thou hast covered me in my mother's womb.

65. PSA.147:13b He hath blessed thy children within thee.

66. PRO.11:21b The seed of the righteous shall be delivered.

67. ISA.40:11 He shall feed His flock like a shepherd: He shall gather the lambs with His arms, and carry them in His bosom, and shall gently lead those that are with young.

68. ISA.43:7 For I have created him for My glory, I have formed him; yea, I have made him.

69. ISA.46:3 Hearken unto me, O house of Jacob, and all the remnant of the house of Israel, which are born by me from the belly, which are carried from the womb.

70. ISA.49:1b The Lord hath called me from the womb; from the bowels of my mother hath He made mention of my name.

71. ISA.65:23 They shall not labour in vain, nor bring forth for trouble; for they are the seed of the blessed of the Lord, and their offspring with them.

72. ISA.66:7,9 Before she travailed, she brought forth; before her pain came, she was delivered of a man child. Shall I bring to the birth, and not cause to bring forth? saith the Lord: shall I cause to bring forth, and shut the womb? saith thy God.

73. DAN.6:16 Thy God whom thou servest continually, He will deliver thee.

74. LUK.1:36 And, behold, thy cousin Elisabeth, she hath also conceived a son in her old age: and this is the sixth month with her, who was called barren.

75. JOH.16:21 A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the World.

76. 1TI.2:15 Notwithstanding she shall be saved in childbearing, if they continue in faith and charity and holiness with sobriety.



77. HEB.11:11,12 Through faith also Sara herself received strength to conceive seed, and was delivered of a child when she was past age, because she judged Him faithful Who had promised. Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, so many as the stars of the sky in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable.

## 99. PROPHECY AND DIRECT REVELATION --{page 793}--



*And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out my Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams! (Acts 2:17).*

1. Don't feed your body and starve your soul!--Come to God's movie cafe of Heaven which'll feed and save your soul forever! Thrill to his messages, love His pictures, revel in those dreams, get excited by His revelations!
2. I don't care what kind of a revelation you get, if it's contrary to the Bible, don't believe it!
3. God can use Scripture any way He wants to!
4. The way to recognise if a dream is really a message from the Lord is if it is outstandingly vivid, you wake up immediately afterward, you remember every detail and you have the feeling it's something special and important.
5. Many of the prophecies of God have intermediate fulfillment's, but they also have ultimate fulfillment's!
6. Some prophecies are conditional and depend on how people react and obey.
7. Many of the prophecies of God have had many fulfillment's in many different individuals.
8. God seldom ever gives a picture without a message.
9. Time is important, Beloved. Always keep a record of when you pray or something supernatural happens. The time may be significant.
10. How marvelous are the ways of the Lord, yet how simple and childlike are His graphic little pictures!
11. When a revelation doesn't seem to make any sense at all--watch out! There's nothing the Lord gives me that hasn't had some meaning.
12. Que Sera, Sera--Whatever will be, will be! Because God has said it would be, regardless of the unbelievers, scoffers, and mockers.
13. Prophecy itself is just letting the Lord flow through You!
14. All signs may point in that direction, but it's like circumstantial evidence until God specifically states it.
15. God's pictures are really powerful--Picture Power!
16. It's a damnable doctrine of Church devils to confine all the truth and revelations of God strictly to the Bible! True prophesy won't teach anything contrary, but it can sure fill in a lot of gaps!
17. Prophecy often has immediate fulfillment and also long-range fulfillment.
18. Usually a public prophesy will come with great force and inspiration and be Scriptural, edifying, instructive, encouraging and uplifting!--It's the Father encouraging His children.--Only seldom is it scolding!
19. God may not give you immediate direct revelations because He wants you to learn something by looking at possible alternatives and solutions to the problems.

20. The Lord keeps giving us a little bit more just as we're able to take it and receive it and comprehend it! He couldn't give it to us all at once, it would be too much to swallow! Isn't it wonderful how the Lord so gently leads us along step by step!

21. Under the Old Testament plan, God only anointed with His Spirit certain leaders, mostly just certain kings and certain prophets, who received the Holy Spirit, and the whole burden of leadership was on them. But when the New Testament age dawned on the day of Pentecost, He completely threw out the old system of making everyone so totally dependent upon leadership for their guidance and He made every single individual Christian responsible directly to the Holy Spirit Himself. He says, " Now the day's come when I'll pour out My Spirit on all flesh. Your sons and daughters shall prophesy." (Acts 2:17,18)

22. If You're going to talk in tongues, ask for the gift of interpretation so the church can be edified, don't just rattle away in tongues all day not knowing what you're saying.

23. I gave never had long-winded drawn-out directional prophecies about different people and telling them what to do and where to go. That's the stuff that's dangerous. My mother had a marvelous gift of prophecy but she had seen it do so much damage.

24. Jesus speaks anytime, anywhere, if you believe!

25. "What wouldst thou know of the Lord thy God? Speak, ask Him whatsoever thou desirest, if perchance the Spirit shall speak unto thee and reveal the secrets of the dark places!"

26. Sometimes it takes time to understand what God has said! Sometimes it takes a little time for His Words to sink in! Sometimes it even takes a few months or years before the full meaning of His revelations dawn on us and we finally "perceive" and "understand". And sometimes it's not quite yet His time for You to fully understand. Many of the prophets did not understand what they were prophesying and their books and their books were not opened to us and the interpretation of their meaning understood until these last days.

27. If God didn't want His children to know anything specific about the future, then why did He waste half the Bible talking about it!

28. Despise not prophesying, forbid not to speak in tongues! We'd rather have a little wild-fire along with the real fire, than to squelch all the fire and have no fire at all.

29. Watch out about limiting the Spirit! But of course when you do allow freedom of the Spirit, you sometimes open the door to false spirits too, and there's quite often somebody who will give some prophecy out of the spirit inspired by a spirit that is not of God.

30. Even if you don't think much of the person prophesying, you have to give them a chance. For where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty, and when there is liberty, the Devil always likes to take advantage of it. (2Co.3:17)

31. You must let them speak, then judge it, because if you don't, you're judging a matter before you hear it, and it is a shame and reproach unto to you! (Pr.18:13)

32. How to tell the difference between a prophecy of God and one of the Devil's or your own spirit:

1) Is it Scriptural?

2) Is it approved by God's chosen leadership?

3) Is it established in the mouths of several witnesses?

4) Is it fulfilled?

5) Is it helpful and encouraging?

33. To prophesy is one of the most serious things you can do: You'd better be sure it is of God, or shut up!

34. There should never be more than two prophecies given in a row without stopping to judge them, or you'll forget them!

35. When judging prophecies, the leader should ask the Holy Spirit to bring to attention anything that needs comments.

36. True prophecy does not generally administer condemnation. It is a rare case when the Lord accuses, as Nathan before David, and it has to be very bad and something that has hurt everybody, or the Lord doesn't usually bring it out publicly unless someone has to be brought to public repentance.

37. Throughout the Old and New Testaments God has always spoken: To lead, guide, comfort, encourage and correct His children.

38. Concerning spiritual gifts, we are not to be ignorant, but we are to covet and desire them, especially prophecy.

39. Hearing from the Lord is our spiritual nourishment--and you've got to be able to hear from the Lord!

40. The power is always on, the message is always there. God's Spirit is like a broadcasting station, broadcasting all the time. All you have to do is throw the switch and tune in. You have to have the vacuum and sincerely open your mouth and He'll fill it!

41. Turn on whatever little power or strength of the spirit that you have that He's already charged your tiny little battery with--your own spirit, so that your circuits may be activated to receive His powerful signals as you tune into His messages dropped out of the Heavens.

42. The hand of faith turns the knob which makes the contact and throws the switch and turns on what little power you have, and the hand of hope turns with expectancy, feeling for the frequency upon which God is broadcasting, and suddenly His great broadcasting station booms in with tremendous positive volume and power and certainty--and the messages come through loud and clear.

43. Let all things be done unto edifying. Make sure that a prophecy strengthens and draws the body closer to Jesus.

44. After the Lord speaks two or three times, the responsible shepherd that is present in the group should stop to review and exhort on the contents of the prophecies. If the Lord has more to say through another prophet, the other prophet can wait, because the spirits of the prophets are subject unto the prophets. (1Co.14:32)

45. The prophets can hold and control it until the shepherd gives them the signal to go ahead. God is not the author of confusion but of peace, so beware and remember, edification is the result of Godly prophecy. The Devil's game is confusion.

46. We'd get around and hold hands and praise the Lord a little bit--priming the pump--please Him by praising Him--like coming before the King and salaaming, and then we'd shut up and see what He had to say. That's the way it usually works. You praise the Lord first of all--maybe somebody leads in prayer--then the stream of praise begins to die down and you wait for the Lord to speak and then maybe somebody gives a little application or judgement of it.

47. Judging a prophecy: The Scripture warns us, "Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God, because many false prophets have gone out into the World." (1Jn.4:1)

48. In 1Kings 13 a prophet was slain by a lion for following a prophecy that contradicted what God had already shown him.

49. If you're not skillful to tune in your fine tuning and absolutely zero in at the dead centre, or rather live centre, of God's perfect frequency--with tremendous concentration and without distraction, and if you allow any other signals to pull you off course or distort with static, God's message may become faint, distorted, interrupted, unclear or even totally jammed by the static and power of the Enemy!

50. You cannot be tuned in on two frequencies at the same time. The Devil is just like another station trying to butt in and cover up. He tries to jam the circuit, jam the frequency, so that you can't hear God's station. He deliberately tries to come right in on God's frequency and jam God's station with signals and false impulses.

51. How severely the prophet is dealt with largely depends on how serious the false prophecy is.

52. What the Lord says is going to happen. When He gives a direct prophecy or revelation, I believe with all my heart it's going to happen--not always the way I think it's going to happen, but it's going to happen.

53. Though I am your leader and I am your prophet and God uses me as His channel, that doesn't mean you can't prophesy, but any outstanding new revelations which come to you first and not to me I'd be leery of. I believe that the Lord would reveal things to me before He'd reveal them to you.

54. Just don't go around telling everybody that I predicted these things, because I didn't, the Lord did, and if they don't happen just like this, don't blame Him--but blame us for not having interpreted His predictions properly. And if there is any error it is due to the frailty of human understanding and not to the failure of God.

55. It is a very common thing with the Lord to give one person the message and the other person the interpretation--one person the prophecy and another person the meaning.

56. When the prophet explodes with the Word, it's a burst of the Truth, like a burst of light!

57. Some of our prophets have the spirits of departed prophets, and that's how you get a gift of prophecy, it's the spirit of a departed prophet. You're nothing but a channel that they work through. They're the ones that have that wisdom, that gift, that talent, that supernatural tongue and who give the prophecy or the interpretation!

58. He can speak through you, any one of you. "In the last days I will pour out My Spirit upon all flesh and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy and your young men shall see visions and your old men shall dream dreams." (Joel 2:28)

59. How long has it been since you let the Lord speak through you? I have to do it all the time for your sake. Don't you let Him speak through you for your little Family's sake or your little Home's sake?

60. Why just live on yesterday's food? Why not have something fresh every day? You can and should hear from God every day.

61. How long has it been since you heard the voice of the Lord yourself in person? How long since you have prophesied or interpreted for the benefit of His children, passed on His messages to them? That's how we began, and that's how Christ's church began on the day of Pentecost.

62. You say, "I read a MO Letter every day, so I hear from the Lord every day." Well, that's very important, like reading the Bible or the recorded Words of the Lord, but it's also wonderful to hear straight from the Lord yourself.

63. Does your little Heavenly Home get together for prayer sometime every day?--Pray together in the unity of the spirit, pray in the spirit, pray in the gifts of the Spirit and hear from the Lord?

64. The only things that we can be absolutely sure and dogmatic about are what God has specifically predicted and we can read in black-and-white in the Word, or direct revelation that we have received from the Lord, such as the general events that are coming.

65. The later the hour becomes, the more specific the Lord becomes in His predictions and His prophecies for our own comfort and encouragement so we'll know exactly what's happening and we'll know specifically what's about to happen and what's going to happen next. The further we get into the picture, the more specific the details become.

66. There are certain specifics to Bible prophecy which are absolutely undeniable, incontrovertible and unchangeable!--But there are certain variables dependent upon the will of man and his actions and his choices which at this present moment are still in flux.

(See also No. 244, 282A, 295, 296, 325A, 326, 351, 363, 545, 620, 622, 695, 764, 829, 844, 918, 976, 989, 1273, 1285, 1286, 1317, 1358, 1436, 1492, 1519, 1546, 1553, 1554.)

67. .12:6 And he said, Hear now My Words: If there be a prophet among you, I the Lord will make Myself known unto him in a vision, and will speak unto him in a dream.

68. .119:13 With my lips have I declared all the judgments of Thy mouth.

69. .42:9 Behold, the former things are come to pass, and new things do I declare: before they spring forth I tell you of them.

70. .23:28a The prophet that hath a dream, let him tell a dream; and he that hath my Word, let him speak My Word faithfully.

71. .3:17-19 Son of man, I made thee a watchman unto the house of Israel: therefore hear the Word at My mouth, and give then warning from Me. When I say unto the wicked, Thou shalt surely die; and thou givest him not warning, nor speakest to warn the wicked from his wicked way, to save his life; the same wicked man shall die in his iniquity; but his blood will I require at thine hand. Yet if thou warn the wicked, and he turn not from his wickedness, nor from his wicked way, he shall die in his iniquity; but thou hast delivered thy soul.

72. :31 Therefore watch, and remember, that by the space of three years I ceased not to warn every one night and day with tears.

73. **CO.13:2 And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge; and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have not charity, I am nothing.**

74. **CO.13:9 For we know in part, and we prophesy in part.**

75. **CO.14:1 Follow after charity, and desire spiritual gifts, but rather that ye may prophesy.**

76. **CO.14:3,4 But he that prophesieth speaketh unto men to edification, and exhortation, and comfort. He that speaketh in an unknown tongue edifieth himself; but he that prophesieth edifieth the church.**

77. **TH.5:19,20 Quench not the Spirit. Despise not prophesyings.**



*Surely the Lord God will do nothing but He revealeth His secret unto His servants the prophets (Amos 3:7).*

1. When God speaks, we have to deliver the message whether people like it or not, whether it sounds good or not, whether they're going to obey it or not.
2. Even if it may sometimes aggravate some and endanger your own safety, as it did with most prophets, you are required and obligated to warn the wicked of the prophecies of God through His prophets, and to deliver His Words of warning to them, as His faithful messengers, that you be not blamed for their destruction in their sins!
3. To warn the wicked of his wicked way is part of our job and our responsibility and one of our few excuses for being here!
4. The Lord wants us to be loud prophets that warn the people, not dumb dogs that can't even bark!
5. To be foretold is to be forewarned!
6. God always has His men of power for the hour--the good ones, who come first to beg the people to repent and to warn them of their doom, followed by the bad ones which He uses as scourges and judgements against wicked generations.
7. The blessings or cursings of God hinge on the people's reactions to the prophets of God.
8. "Let them beware who try to shut the mouths of the prophets of God!"
9. "Hear thou the words of thy father and the warnings that he gives unto thee!"
10. God often delayed His judgements which He had predicted by the prophets, until it looked like they weren't going to happen and the prophet was made to look like a fool, so that the sheep would be divided from the goats, the believers from the scoffers.
11. God often asked His prophets to do crazy things to wake people to His warnings!
12. It's my firm conviction that Mohammed and Islam were the scourge of God upon a wicked Christian world!
13. It is always the prophet's job to yell and warn, but not necessarily to do anything himself, not take part in the action or violence, whatever it is, just to warn!
14. When words and warnings fail, the chastisements and judgements begin to fall.
15. The prophets of God not only warned the people and predicted the judgements of God, but sometimes they even helped bring them about!
16. As God's mouthpiece, our duty is to let the chips fall where they may, whether it makes us or breaks us. It's not our business to question God as to what the effect of His message may be.
17. Whether they will now listen or not, some day they'll remember that we warned them of their fate.
18. That's the unpleasant job of the prophets of God: To tell the world the truth even when they don't like it and even when it sometimes costs the prophets their lives!
19. The prophets just speak the Words of God, come what may, live or die, sink or swim, rise or fall!
20. I hope we haven't lost that spirit of warning the world!
21. The prophets who told  
The great dooms of old  
Were derided as daft and demented!  
But when each fell in its time  
According to the rhyme,  
The people there often repented!
22. God give us early warning, twice the warning He gives the world!

23. Our Word has become the warning comet!
24. You can misuse God's prophets just by refusing to believe (2Chron.36:16).
25. If you're a man-pleaser and you like to have "all men speak well of you," then you're not a prophet of God! (Luke 6:26)
26. God always has a voice! God always has a witness! God always has someone to tell the people the Truth!--Is it you?
27. God's prophets are His spies.--They look both ways: they look to God for information and direction, and then they look at the world to detect and tell them what's wrong.
28. The role of the Prophet of God is to practically blast the whole world!--Smashing this and slashing that, and all he's got left is God!
29. So often the world's saviors have to go down like the captain with his ship, still trying to rescue people and save others!
30. "A prophet is not without honor, save in his own country." (Mt.13:57)
31. The preservation of the Prophet is more important than the speed of the message. Better the message be delayed than the messenger be endangered.
32. We preach a dangerous doctrine, but like all prophets through all ages, we have to tell the truth even if it hurts!
33. It's fun to be a prophet because you really take a lot of spirit trips without ever leaving the house! God can speed His prophets into the future or the past, up or down or sideways or whatever way He wants us to go!
34. Almost every prophet is called in a time when the people have become corrupt and wicked and sinful and need purging and purifying by the Word, to be led by some shepherd back to God.
35. The more spiritual you get, like a prophet or psychic or seer, the more you come into that realm of the spirit and the more you are under its rules, where you too operate under more direct orders and are more directly led and controlled.
36. Every true good man and true prophet of God is going to have some enemies, and if he doesn't, something's wrong!
37. The only way the prophet can keep his spiritual authority is to be faithful in the Spirit.
38. It's not easy to be a vessel of the red-hot Word and power of God!
39. We're occupying the same place in the world's history that the prophets did just before the destruction of Israel. We're warning the major guilty nations of the world of their coming destruction for their disobedience to God!
40. One-by-one the prophets of God have exploded through the ages. Some were heeded and others ignored, but the blessings or cursings of God hinged on the people's reactions to them.
41. A prophet not only has to preach faith and love and religion, he also has to point out the mistakes of the kings.
42. The Prophets of God had to condemn both sides for their sins. Every one of them blasted Israel, but then they turned around and blasted Israel's enemies too, and told them what God was going to do to them for fighting against Israel. There was hardly anybody they could be in favour of except God Himself, because everybody was such a mess!
43. A prophet is one who tells the Truth. Each one of you is a prophet of the Truth, a prophet of God. When you tell forth the Truth of God you are a prophet of God, a prophet of the Truth.
44. Although the prophets of God are only on God's side, once in awhile it so happens that some nation's leader is also on God's side or against him, and the prophets of God have to tell the people which man is the best for the job.
45. No prophet in any age is supposed to judge the effects of the message. It's not your business to decide to give the message or not, depending on whether or not it's going to have a good effect or not, or whether the people can take it or not. They've never been able to take it, they've always killed their prophets and they've always disobeyed, and very few listened and very few obeyed.
46. World events and the course of History are influenced by the prophets of God, and world events and the course of History hang upon what kings do with the message of the prophets.
47. Lord, all we can do is voice Thy Truth and try to show the people what has happened and why, give the Word, that's our job, to expose the facts and the Truth, and then keep right on going on our way, Lord, Thy way, and not worrying about it, not trying to fight it, not trying to refute every lie or deny every charge, or waste Thy time and our time fighting against them, Lord. But just to go ahead and win the territory that You want us to win for Thee.

48. In our job as messengers, it is our business to carry messages. God has a message for every people for every hour. That message is always Salvation, but it has particular emphasis during particular stages of a people's history, an individual's history, a church's history, a nation's history.

49. God gives every person, every church, every nation, every people its opportunity and chance, and there's a particular message which is suitable for each peculiar stage in the development or growth or progress or regress of that individual, church or nation.

50. Who's really in control, as far as God's concerned?--You little prophets of God are the ones that really control God's whole history! The great wheels of history are turning on you little infinitesimal seemingly insignificant pivots!--What you do and how you do it, how you obey the Lord and what you tell the people.

51. The Prophets of God have to have the faith of God to proclaim the Words of God, and they suffer the same persecution as God in Christ. But, praise God, they get the rewards of God!

52. God does not rule through the people, He normally rules through one man, an appointed Elder or an appointed Bishop or an appointed Apostle or an appointed Prophet or an appointed Judge or an appointed King, but never through the people. God selects the leaders and He places them over the people and the people have nothing whatsoever to do with the government or the ruling of the nation but to follow God's appointed rulers.

53. We are the prophets of this age. We are the true prophets who are conserving and preserving the oracles of God, the Word of God and still receiving and hearing from the Lord, whereas the rest of the church is deaf, dumb and blind!

54. I am a Prophet of God and I merely tell the people what is on my heart, and whether it's pleasing or going to be popular or in good taste or according to the rules of composition and all the rest is not really of any interest to me whatsoever.

55. It's our duty as God's prophets to expose the evil, the hypocritical, the Scribes and the Pharisees just like Jesus and the Apostles did and tell the people the truth so they can beware and have their eyes open and look out for these things and these signs we have foretold.

(See also No. 9; 69; 79; 161; 295; 319; 358; 544; 545; 610; 655; 707; 837; 911; 955; 989; 1337; 1539; *Childcare Handbook III.*)

**56. CH 20:20b Believe in the Lord your God, so shall ye be established; believe His prophets, so shall ye prosper.**

**57. 105:15** Touch not Mine anointed, and do My prophets no harm.

58. 58:1 Cry aloud, spare not, lift up thy voice like a trumpet, and shew My people their transgression, and the house of Jacob their sins.

59. 1:10 See, I have this day set thee over the nations and over the kingdoms, to root out, and to pull down, and to destroy, and to throw down, to build, and to plant.

60. 3:7 Surely the Lord God will do nothing, but He revealeth His secret unto His servants the prophets.

61. 7:14,15 Then answered Amos, and said to Amaziah, I was no prophet, neither was I a prophet's son; but I was an herdsman, and a gatherer of sycamore fruit: And the Lord took me as I followed the flock, and the Lord said unto me, Go, prophesy unto My people Israel.

62. 13:57b But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honor, save in his own country, and in his own house.

63. 16:4a But these things have I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them.

(See also JER.1:1-10.)



*When thou passeth through the waters, I will be with thee; and through the rivers, they shall not overflow thee: when thou walkest through the fire, thou shalt not be burned; neither shall the flame kindle upon thee (Isa.43:2).*

1. The Lord's protection is like a force field around you, & the Enemy cannot penetrate it unless the Lord allows him to do so as a spanking, chastening, or as a reaping of an unconfessed & unrepented act.
2. You must ask for the Lord's police protection & He'll give it to you! "Powerful are they which watch over thy Father David!"
3. God won't let a thing happen to you except what He has designed or allowed to happen.
4. Nothing happens to His children but by His Will or with His permission.
5. I'm sure the Lord is taking care of His children even before they ever find Him, before they're born! They're still in the womb, in a sense, & they haven't been born yet in the spirit, but they're His children just the same & He takes care of them.
6. The Devil can't attack you unless the Lord lets him, & He only lets him for some good reason.
7. Who dares harm whom God protects?
8. We are in a war! You'd better keep in tune & touch with the Holy Spirit & on God's territory all the time & close to His Word & in the right spirit & constantly in prayer & seeking the Lord & praying for His protection & His help & thanking Him constantly for His blessings & staying mighty close to the Lord, or you're going to be singed by that old fire-breathing Dragon! If you go running around outside of the tower of God's protection & the holy place of His will, that old Devil's going to be on your trail & try to give you all kinds of trouble!
9. If you get out of touch with the Lord, watch out! Because then the Devil gets in touch with you or some member of your family, & that's his privilege, if you run outside of the Lord's protection.
10. When you have the Lord & His favor, it's just like you have a shield all the way around you, like a forcefield protecting you from the Enemy!
11. There's something about the House of the Blessed, the Camp of the Saints, that God really protects, & His Angels are camped 'round about us guarding us night & day!
12. Some of you have been scorched with disease & with accident & suffering because you have run outside of the tower of God's protection & His will & His way, onto the Devil's territory where he's allowed to scorch you!
13. The Lord is bound by His Own rules & His Own laws!--If you violate the rules, He can't protect you, & He has to let the Devil spank you or punish you or scorch you or give you what you deserve.
14. The Lord gives children a certain immunity to the influence of Satan up to the age of decision.
15. One of your best protections is to keep busy for God & obedient to those who love you in the Lord, & also to fill your mind & heart with positive, encouraging, strengthening & faith-building thoughts from His Word.
16. If you're in the Lord, then you're His child, & you don't have anything to worry about. He hallows you 'round about & gives His angels charge over you.
17. Thank God for His angels who are watching over you continually, even your personal guardian angel, whose job is you!



18, You abide under the shadow of the Almighty, like the Lord's special forcefield around you, like an aura, a special kind of glory that protects you.

19. There's really no safe place in the World except in the Lord.

20. It's miraculous how the Lord takes care of us & how few troubles, accidents & sickness we have!--

TTL!

21. The Enemy cannot touch you without the Lord's permission.

22. They'd better watch out if they are thinking about putting a finger on us!--They are touching the eyes of the Lord, & God will not allow them to get away with it!

23. You can't defend yourself, God has to defend you.

24. Our only weapons are God's Truth & God's Love! If they fight against these, God will fight back!

(See also No. 81, 99, 113, 160b, 171, 252, 309a, 341, 364, 397, 544, 765, 850, 877, 899, 900.)

25. ,19:22a Haste thee, escape thither; for I cannot do any thing till thou be come thither.

26. **GEN.50:20 But as for you, ye thought evil against me; but God meant it unto good, to bring to pass, as it is this day, to save much people alive.**

27. **.3:8a And I am come down to deliver them out of the hand of the Egyptians, and to bring them up out of that land unto a good land and a large, unto a land flowing with milk and honey.**

28. **.6:6,7 I am the Lord, and I will bring you out from under the burdens of the Egyptians, and I will rid you out of their bondage, and I will redeem you with a stretched out arm, and with great judgments: And I will take you to Me for a people, and I will be to you a God: and ye shall know that I am the Lord your God, which bringeth you out from under the burdens of the Egyptians.**

29. **.8:22 I will sever in that day the land of Goshen, in which My people dwell, that no swarms of flies shall be there.**

30. **.9:26 Only in the land of Goshen, where the children of Israel were, was there no hail.**

31. **.11:7 But against any of the children of Israel shall not a dog move his tongue, against man or beast: that ye may know how that the Lord doth put a difference between the Egyptians and Israel.**

32. **.33:12 The beloved of the Lord shall dwell in safety by Him; and the Lord shall cover him all the day long, and he shall dwell between His shoulders.**

33. **SA.22:2,4 And he said, The Lord is my rock, and my fortress, and my deliverer, I will call on the Lord, Who is worthy to be praised: so shall I be saved from mine enemies.**

34. **SA,22:20 He brought me forth also into a large place: He delivered me, because He delighted in me.**

35. **SA.22:49 And that bringeth me forth from mine enemies: Thou also hast lifted me up on high above them that rose up against me: Thou hast delivered me from the violent man.**

35. **KI.17:38b Neither shall ye fear other gods.**

37. **KI.17:39b He shall deliver you out of the hand of all your enemies.**

38. **.1.10a Hast not Thou made an hedge about him, and about his house, and about all that he hath on every side?**

39. **.5.12,13 He disappointeth the devices of the crafty, so that their hands cannot perform their enterprise. He taketh the wise in their own craftiness: and the counsel of the froward is carried headlong.**

40. **. 11:18,19a** And thou shalt be secure, because there is hope; yea, thou shalt dig about thee and thou shalt take thy rest in safety. Also thou shalt lie down, and none shall make thee afraid.

41. **.3:3,5** Thou, O Lord, art a shield for me; my glory, and the lifter up of mine head. I laid me down and slept; I awaked; for the Lord sustained me.

42. **.4:8** I will both lay me down in peace, and sleep; for thou, Lord, only makest me dwell in safety.

43. **.7:10** My defence is of God, which saveth the upright in heart.

44. **.18:16,17** He sent from above, He took me, He drew me out of many waters. He delivered me from my strong enemy, and from them which hated me: for they were too strong for me.

45. **.18:35** Thou hast also given me the shield of Thy Salvation: and Thy right hand hath holden me up, and Thy gentleness hath made me great.

46. **PSA.27:5 For in the time of trouble He shall hide me in His pavilion: in the secret of His tabernacle shall He hide me; He shall set me up upon a rock.**

47. **.34:20** He keepeth all His bones: not one of them is broken.

48. **.37:40** And the Lord shall help them, and deliver them: He shall deliver them from the wicked, and save them, because they trust in Him.

**49. .40:17 But I am poor and needy; yet the Lord thinketh upon me: Thou art my help and my deliverer; make no tarrying, O my God.**

**50. .41:1,2 Blessed is he that considereth the poor: the Lord will deliver him in time of trouble. The Lord will preserve him, and keep him alive; and he shall be blessed upon the Earth: and Thou wilt not deliver him unto the will of his enemies.**

**51. .50:15 And call upon Me in the day of trouble: I will deliver thee, and thou shalt glorify Me.**

**52. .57:1 Be merciful unto me, O God, be merciful unto me: for my soul trusteth in Thee: yea, in the shadow of Thy wings will I make my refuge, until these calamities be overpast.**

**53. .62:6 He only is my Rock and my Salvation: He is my defence; I shall not be moved.**

**54. .91:2,10 I will say of the Lord, He is my refuge and my fortress: my God; in Him will I trust. There shall no evil befall thee, neither shall any plague come nigh thy dwelling. For He shall give His Angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways.**

**55. .106:10 And He saved them from the hand of him that hated them, and redeemed them from the hand of the enemy.**

**56. .107:29 He maketh the storm a calm, so that the waves thereof are still.**

**57. .107:41 Yet setteth He the poor on high from affliction, and maketh Him families like a flock.**

**58. .127:2 It is vain for you to rise up early, to sit up late, to eat the bread of sorrows: for so He giveth His beloved sleep.**

**59. .18:10 The Name of the Lord is a strong tower: the righteous runneth into it, and is safe.**

**60. .54:16,17a I have created the smith that bloweth the coals in the fire, and that bringeth forth an instrument for his work; and I have created the Waster to destroy. No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper; and every tongue that shall rise against thee in judgment thou shalt condemn.**

**61. .3:27,28a And the princes ... saw these men, upon whose bodies the fire had no power, nor was an hair of their head singed, neither were their coats changed, nor the smell of fire had passed on them. Then Nebuchadnezzar spake, and said, Blessed be the God of Shadrach, Meschach, and Abednego, Who hath sent His Angel, and delivered His servants that trusted in Him.**

**62. .6:16b Thy God Whom thou servest continually, He will deliver thee.**

**63. .6:20b,22 Is thy God, whom thou servest continually, able to deliver thee from the lions? My God hath sent His Angel, and hath shut the lions' mouths, that they have not hurt me: forasmuch as before Him innocency was found in me; and also before thee, O king, have I done no hurt.**

**64. .6:23b So Daniel was taken up out of the den, and no manner of hurt was found upon him, because he believed in His God.**

**65. DAN.6:27 He delivereth and rescueth, and He worketh signs and wonders in Heaven and in Earth, Who hath delivered Daniel from the power of the lions.**

**66. .12:1b There shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation even to that same time: and at that time Thy people shall be delivered, every one that shall be found written in the Book.**

**67. .3:17 The Lord thy God in the midst of thee is mighty; He will save, He will rejoice over thee with joy; He will rest in His love, He will joy over thee with singing.**

**68. TH.3:3 But the Lord is faithful, Who shall stablish you, and keep you from evil.**

**69. PE.1:5 Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto Salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.**

**70. PE.3:12,13 The eyes of the Lord are over the righteous, and His ears are open unto their prayers. Who is he that will harm you, if ye be followers of that which is good?**

**71. JO.5:18b He that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and that Wicked One toucheth him not.**

**72. .7:3 Saying, Hurt not the Earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads.**

(See also DEU.33:25-27; PSA.17:13.)



*I will publish the name of the Lord: ascribe ye greatness unto our God (Deut.32:3).*

1. The pen is mightier than the sword! Ours is a war of words and ideas to thrill men's minds with faith and hope, to fill their hearts with love and peace and joy, to set their spirits free to soar to unknown heights, to love them with deeds of kindness and to free their bodies from suffering and pain!

2. Titles have to be sort of like keys that set the pitch to the tune: They have to sound good and be catchy and at the same time they have to tell you what the subject is.

3. We have a totally different market from the System's.

4. If you would not be forgotten as soon as you are dead, either write things worth reading or do things worth writing.--Benjamin Franklin (1706-1790)

5. The Alexanders and Caesars and Genghis Khans and Napoleons and Hitlers have come and gone, but the words and ideas and religions of the philosophers and the prophets of God live on forever!

6. Literature is a lot easier, cheaper, safer and more accurate to send into many places than missionaries.

7. The World has heard our message, because it's on millions and millions of little pieces of paper!

8. We can change the World with our message through "Paper Power"!

9. You must work wherever you're needed most--but remember that what you write or draw or compose or film will reach the World!

10. Colour is nice and master pieces are beautiful, but we need speed and quantity and simplicity and rock bottom costs to develop the lit we need by the millions for the billions!

11. Don't underestimate the power of paper!

12. Security, speed and quantity are the most important things in getting out the lit--and if we can have quality as well, fine.

13. It's speed, quantity, convenience and safety we're after most of all!

14. It takes guts to be a good photographer! You've gotta be fool enough to rush in where angels fear to tread--no matter what's going on, and stick your camera right in their face, no matter what they're doing!

15. Meat's for the body, when it's meat you wanna see!--But when you want the spirit, mugshots it's gotta be!

16. Pictures have always had an important place in God's plan.

17. If a picture needs explaining, then it's not much good. Its message must be plain and simple and self-evident.--That's the best kind of picture.

18. Literature is one of the greatest, fastest and most effective ways of reaching the World!

19. I'd rather preach the Gospel to more people in black and white than to less people in colour!

20. Shakespeare was a dramatist of note--

He lived by writing things to quote.

21. The most direct way to a person's heart is through their eyes.

22. Distribute common-sense lit to the common people and their leaders!

23. Better not to give it at all, than to give the wrong literature to the wrong people!

24. We're using leaves from the tree of life right now! We're giving them little leaflets from the tree of life!

25. Our newspaper is the hottest Revolutionary rag on the underground circuit!

26. People don't usually appreciate what they don't have to pay for!

27. Our main job is to get out the message clearly, quickly, simply, easily, cheaply and in enormous quantities for all!

28. He who influences the thought of his time, influences the thought of all the times that follow.
29. A drop of ink may make a million think.
30. Great journalism: "Is not every able Editor a Ruler of the World, being a persuader of it?" --Carlyle, French Revolution.
31. I fear three hostile newspapers more than a hundred thousand bayonets.--Napoleon.
32. Stick to your guns--those Colt-45 illustrations pack a powerful wallop that knocks'em for a loop, and they can't help but get the point!
33. The Reporter's Code:  
I keep six honest serving men,  
They taught me all I knew.  
Their names are What and Why  
And When and How and Where and Who.
34. Anything is possible with artists!--They're sorta like God!--They create things!
35. "Artists must write many words of David in pictures....Must make many words few, but artists make pictures and they don't forget."
36. Each of your pictures is worth a thousand words--and that's just about how many we want: One picture for every thousand words!--At least one every page or two, so you can't open a MO Letter anywhere without seeing an illustration to liven up the copy and give'm the message loud and clear! (Now Komix!)
37. It's really the illustrations that bring a book to life and give life to dead pages and fascinate us like children, arousing our curiosity to want to know more and inspiring our lazy spirits to read the text to find out more of what it's all about and to understand the pictures better.
38. I'm convinced your priceless illustrations are going to be used as much as my words to tell the story, no doubt interest more people to obtain our literature and to read the text just to find out what those pictures are all about!
39. It's a known fact that we remember about 80% of what we see, but only about 40% of what we hear, and God only knows how little we remember of what we read! So may God really inspire you to portray the Message by pen, more and more!
40. I am really depending on you artists, and I believe that perhaps the whole future of our ministry and its effectiveness and outreach will depend in a large part on how well you illustrate the message.
41. May He guide your pen like spirit writing possessed of the Spirit of God, to catch the vision of what He is trying to show the World, and put it on paper for them all to see in a way they will clearly understand, and arouse such compelling interest as to never forget!
42. God's whole creation is a work of art and continually portrays His message to all of us.
43. Hail, artists, full of grace!--The Lord is with thee, and blessed is the fruit of thy pen, the Truth, Christ Jesus!
44. Of the hundreds of prayer letters we used to receive, I always used to read the brief, illustrated ones immediately, but laid the long, monotonous ones aside to peruse later, which was usually never--and they eventually wound up in file Z--the wastebasket, a large stack of material I never had time to read!
45. I designed those covers to give the heart and illustrate the message of the Letter.
46. I really like those Komix! They really do what I always wanted them to do, simplify the Letters and make them very easily readable by the general public, even young people and children.
47. The Komix have got to be a little like the Quote Book. You just take the pith or the essence, the most important things, the most important quotes in the Letter that you can illustrate best and that go best with your pictures.
48. The main idea is to get the Message across, and the simpler you can do it, the easier you can do it, the better!
49. I think the artist's job is the closest thing in the whole Family to my job, because you have to operate under absolute inspiration! To try to imagine and illustrate it, that is creative! It is inspirational, and the artist has to be as inspired as I am to really get it right and get it done well.
50. Artists really are very spiritual. They are imaginative and very creative, and they must stay on the right channel and be very close to the Lord and keep in tune with God.
51. Pictures are powerful! When God gives you a picture it really sticks with you. Never underestimate the value of a picture, because God Himself uses pictures--moving pictures called dreams and visions!
52. I realise now probably one reason why the Lord gave me so many dreams and visions and such vivid pictures--for your sake! Not only just for your sake to visualise it, but in order that it might be put into actual illustrated form using graphic art to illustrate it--pictures!

53. One picture is worth a thousand words, one quote is worth a thousand sentences.
54. Cut Colony costs and multiply MO missives.
55. Get the Words that work to the World by the millions for the billions.
56. Unless you're working to get the Words that work wonders to the World, you're not accomplishing much.
57. Are you living to give life to the lost by His Letters?
58. There is one job that you alone can do--put the Words into the hands of the World!
59. We can't possibly reach enough people in our personal witness--so God gave me the answer--literature!
60. God bless every one of you that has anything to do with His Words and furthering His Words, getting His Words out to the World. God's going to bless you and you're going to have great satisfaction, for great is your reward in heaven!
61. Praise God for a job well done!--To know that you did the job and told the World what was going to happen, so it's not your fault.
62. The printed page never flinches, never shows cowardice; it is never tempted to compromise; it never tires, never grows disheartened; it travels cheaply, and requires no hired hall; it works while we sleep; it never loses its temper; and it works long after we are dead. The printed page is a visitor which gets inside the home and stays there; it always catches a man in the right mood, for it speaks to him only when he is reading it; it always sticks to what it has said, and never answers back; and it is bait left permanently in the pool.
63. The Lord has left it up to us in this Last Day to do a job that the artists of the past never even attempted! All the art masterpieces are not finished until we finish these on the Heavenly City!
64. We're the only ones in History to ever attempt to paint the Heavenly City! We are commissioned by the Lord to paint His City!
65. Thank You, Lord, for leaving this last great art project for us to do, probably the greatest art project any artist ever attempted, to try to visualise Thy great Holy City, the final great beautiful Heavenly City that You have gone to prepare for us!
66. Our art master pieces are the greatest on Earth because we have the greatest artists and we've got the greatest subjects. So they have gotta be the greatest! They're the most thrilling, inspiring and encouraging!
67. Written words endure while others fade away forever!
68. There's hardly anything that's more profitable and fruitful than paper publications.
69. Publications get something concrete right into people's hands, to everybody, that they can use and reuse and pass around and loan out.
70. Literature got us started, and that's the one that keeps us going and I think that's the one that's going to keep going right up to the End!
71. Literature is the most productive and most fruitful ministry outside of actual personal witnessing.
72. People like pictures! We're all children and it's easier to grasp a picture, an illustration or a story than mere theories and facts and lectures etc.
73. Modern art started when there weren't any good artists anymore and they couldn't draw pictures anymore, so they started scribbling and called it modern art!
74. I would suggest to you as good advice for your writing or speaking: Make it simple, speak out of the fullness of your heart, from experience, from knowledge you've gained from others, tell stories, give examples, illustrations and paint simple little word pictures that they'll remember. Tell stories about your own life.
75. When setting down guidelines and writing classes, allow for the unusual and allow for exceptions and allow that it may not or doesn't always have to be that way.
76. The thing a good editor or secretary needs to remember is to be sensitive when your writer is inspired, and grab your tape recorder or notebook or whatever it is and jot it down.
77. Make every letter, every business communication, sales talks! Accentuate the positive! Even if you've got bad news to tell'm, make it sound like good news!
78. If something is important enough for me to get it and read it, it's important enough for me to answer it.
79. Think about the Lord and think about those children and their pure little hearts, their sweet little faces and those needy little spirits that you need to feed with these pictures! That to me is our primary responsibility. And then beyond our children, who are we trying to reach most of all in this World?--The childlike people, the childlike poor! The Lord said we all had to be like little children and you can't even get into the Kingdom without being like a little child.
80. Make your pictures appeal to the children and then they'll appeal to everybody! Make the Message so simple and so clear that every little child will understand what the picture's about.

(See also No. 24, 28, 29, 104, 156A, 156B, 156C, 207, 215, 229, 233, 241, 253, 274A, 303A, 318B, 325A, 326B, 328A, 329B, 352, 356, 362, 611, 649, 672, 725, 828, 844, 873, 892, 942, 943, 1012, 1282, 1296, 1364, 1416, 1451, 1463, 1492, 1536, *HH4*.)

### 103. READING AND VIEWING --{page 820}--



*Can a man take fire in his bosom, and his clothes not be burned? (Pro.6:27).*

1. Be as careful of the books you read as of the company you keep, for your habits and character will be as much influenced by the former as the latter.
2. If you clutter up your mind with little things, will there be any room left for the big things?
3. If you keep your mind too open, people will throw a lot of rubbish into it.
4. I think moviemakers have failed their responsibility when there is no message to their movie.
5. If it's not the Word of God written by a man of God, then it is the word of the Devil written by a man of Satan!
6. If it's not pictures of loving, gentle, affectionate, good, kind, clean sex, then it's certainly not of the Lord!
7. I'd call those porno movies junk sex, and I think it's just as bad for people as junk food!
8. If you can't tell the difference between good and bad sex, and good and bad movies, then you ought to quit both!
9. The Lord lets a lot of these sci-fi movies be made to give you a glimpse of the future!
10. Watch out for what you've learned from Bible movies! Be sure you have studied the Word, because that's the only thing that's reliable.
11. You can develop a perverted appetite by reading or over-reading the wrong things.
12. You are what you read, and what you're hungry for!
13. Whatever you're reading is spiritual food!--Spiritually good or spiritually bad!
14. How could you neglect the Words of life for what are only the words of death?
15. Perversions of truth are more dangerous than outright lies! Part of what the Devil says is often true.
16. I just don't understand how anybody could be interested in the diabolical lies, deceits and fabrications of man's cunningly devised fables!
17. I seldom read anything else but the Word of God after I was really filled with the Spirit.
18. I never read any worldly man's writings in my life that weren't dumber than the Bible.
19. Some of my best information or greatest inspiration that I have received and passed on to you has come from seeing movies.
20. I like the believable real stories about real life. The truer to life the thing is, the better.
21. I like movies that really have an ideal and a message.
22. We need to watch things that are meaningful and applicable and apt to influence our lives and affect us positively and are important for us to know, or are at least educational--travelogues, documentaries, people, history, etc.
23. Any kind of violence in movies or TV is very bad for children.

24. It's always edifying if it's a story that inspires you and lifts you up and makes you admire someone's character and ability and spirit.

25. It's ridiculous to spend your time reading the foolish wisdom of man! It's worse than trash because it is a vaunted wisdom of man, it pretends to be so know-it-all in its sophistry of man and all its philosophies and psychology and theories.

26. Deliver us from these lying cunningly devised fables of the Devil and all his unprofitable foolish so-called wisdom: The lies of science falsely so-called. (1Ti.6:20)

27. If you don't get a message out of a movie, if you don't get the point, what's the use of wasting your time watching it?

28. When you watch a movie, always try to see what they're driving at, what kind of propaganda, what message are they putting across?

29. Almost every modern movie has got some kind of statement, and most of it's anti-Christ propaganda! Watch out!

(See also No. 54, 62, 320, 326A, 775, 776, 800, 802, 935, 964, 988, 1137, 1657.)

#### **104. RELATIONS WITH PEOPLE**

--{page 822}--



*Now we exhort you brethren, warn them that are unruly, comfort the feeble minded, support the weak, be patient toward all men (1Thes.5:14).*

1. You don't drive and beat your sheep and say, "Produce some wool!" You tenderly lovingly care for them, and feed them and fatten them and take good care of them, and the wool will come.

2. When the top people don't even communicate with their co-workers, then of course they don't understand the problems of those under them.

3. The king must listen to his counselors, and they must listen to him. The counselors must listen to the people, and the people must listen to the counselors.

4. If you want a sluggish person to show more life, give him more to do. It can make a new person out of him.

5. People can be interested in anything--if you make it interesting.

6. The only way to settle a disagreement is on the basis of what's right--not who's right.

7. In most instances, all an argument proves is that two people are present.

8. One of the most important trips a man can make is that involved in meeting the other fellow half-way.

9. Don't put the ugly potty on the mantelpiece and stick the beautiful vase under the bed! Have a little sense!

10. Treat people as if they were what they ought to be, and you help them to become what they are capable of being.

11. "I am proud of you" are five of the most precious words you can ever use to make another person feel important.

12. A friend must not be injured unnecessarily, not even in jest.

13. Some people have got a hard outside but they've got a soft heart. Look for it.
14. If he doesn't recognize what he wants, then help him to see it.
15. Try to fix the mistake--never the blame.
16. I always like to end a talk, a counseling session or a Letter on as positive a note as possible, so people leave with a good feeling.
17. Remember: Everyone likes to feel important. People are hungry for praise and starving for honest appreciation.
18. Always try to give people a chance to be sorry. Try to give them a chance to change.
19. Rather than always making positive statements, also cultivate the art of asking questions, which can be the most effective means of winning people to your way of thinking. Inquire rather than attack.
20. One of the worst things that can happen to people is a loss of hope!--When there's no hope of change or for anything better, that's hell.
21. Few things help an individual more than to place responsibility upon him, and to let him know that you trust him.
22. It's one thing to tell people off, but then you've got to give them some way of escape, some way out of it, offer them some hope, something positive--to get them on again!
23. Praise loudly; blame softly.
24. A pat on the back, though a few vertebrae removed from a kick in the pants, is miles ahead in results.
25. If you pay not a servant his wages, he will pay himself.
26. There are two sides to every question.
27. Admonish your friends privately, but praise them openly.
28. You must look into people as well as at them.
29. If you would lift me, you must be on higher ground.
30. He hears but half who hears one party only.
31. Many individuals have, like uncut diamonds, shining qualities beneath a rough exterior.
32. Give credit where credit is due--don't suddenly forget all the good points somebody has, upon discovering one of their bad points!
33. People who can't work with anybody else usually can't work with God either!
34. Do you make it easy for others to be good?
35. Nobody can please everybody!
36. A man convinced against his will is of the same opinion still.
37. You're either going to pull people up to your level, or let them drag you down to theirs--one or the other! There's no in-between.
38. The best cure for personal problems is the battlefield!
39. You just can't expect a square peg to fit a round hole!
40. Outside of loving God, your greatest responsibility is to love your neighbour, because it seems that neighbours are the hardest people to love!
41. The sweetest music in the World to most peoples' ears is their own name!--Which is a natural thing because it shows somebody loves you enough to remember, somebody cared enough to know you exist!
42. Every case has to be considered on its own individual merits and the problems involved.
43. Lack of consideration for human weaknesses and the needs of the body does not encourage loyalty or faithfulness.
44. How to work with people: Know their strong points and use them, know their weaknesses and watch out for them--accept them as they are.
45. When I want information on a person, I try to get my counsel from his friends, those that love him most and will give fair counsel, as well as his enemies.--Hear both sides!
46. There are many sides to almost every story--you can never get the full picture from just one party to the problem.
47. First tell people what they've done well, before starting to sock it to them for their mistakes.
48. People are always problems, but a great joy as well.
49. A new idea is delicate. It can be killed by a sneer or a yawn; it can be stabbed to death by a quip and worried to death by a frown.
50. If the majority refuses to listen to the minority, the majority will be in trouble!
51. No side is always all right and the other all wrong. There's always some good and bad on both sides.
52. The best way to get somebody to do something is by making him want to do it.
53. Each case must be judged on its own merits, and dealt with according to the leading of the Spirit!



54. There is a fine line between helping people and interfering with their lives. Be led of the Spirit.
55. Great teachers and great business leaders have the knack of stimulating others to stretch themselves so they come nearer to using the full measure of their aptitudes. This stimulation requires an evaluation of the person as an individual to discover 1) What he need to develop, 2) The motives which will produce the strongest effort on his part.
56. You can please some of the people all the time, and all of the people some of the time, but not all of the people all of the time.
57. Success is knowing the difference between cornering people and getting them in your corner.
58. Nothing is all wrong. Even a clock that has stopped running is right twice a day.
59. Help me never to judge another until I have walked in his shoes.
60. You judge a man by his foes as well as by his friends.
61. In judging others, it's always best to see with the heart as well as the eyes.
62. The quick surface judgment is not always the right one.
63. The left side of your face, the heart side, is always the most spiritual side. The right side is the more human down-to-earth side, more practical, almost business-like.
64. Our faces are not there for nothing--God made the physical to pretty well portray the inner personality and spirit.
65. I believe in trying to give a man his choice to do what he has the faith for.
66. By embracing a person you can tell quite a bit about them--their personal attitude toward you as well as even many times their spiritual attitudes.--Probably why the Lord exhorted the holy kiss--a test for love and yieldedness.
67. A leader must realize there's two sides to every story and that he must listen to both sides.
68. When some meet a man, they judge him by his clothes; but you must judge him by his heart.
69. Believe me, every man has his secret sorrows, which the world knows not; and oftentimes we call a man cold when he is only sad.
70. Rare is the person who can weigh the faults of others without putting his thumb on the scales.
71. Two wrongs do not make a right.
72. Faces really say something, they really portray what kind of person you are.
73. I've seldom found that silence breathes consent, it more often breathes a smoldering, hidden resentment, which is fearful of being voiced and therefore says nothing.
74. A word to the wise is sufficient, but with the foolish you have to be more specific.
75. When you ask people to do something, be sure to also tell them why if you can. It's well worth the effort.
76. Instead of letting your familiarity breed contempt, let it breed contentment!
77. Every member is needed and everyone is important.
78. Some situations you just sort of have to let ride and see how they work out. Because no matter what your suspicions are and no matter what your lack of confidence and faith in people is, sometimes you've got to let them go ahead and give them a chance to prove or disprove themselves.
79. The way to get rid of a cancer is not to put a bandaid over it so you can't see it, but to go to work with a scalpel and cut it out and do something about it, don't just ignore it.
80. Our job in dealing with people is a lot like psychiatry, we need to sometimes probe around into people's past and see what their past life was like, and we're apt to turn up a few rocks with a few bugs under them that are still troubling them.
81. It pays to be specific with people! We've made a lot of mistakes by not being specific enough with people about things!
82. Those who communicate the most are the most likely to get the most answers!
83. We all need to listen to each other, work together, counsel together, agree together, decide together and work it out together.
84. Lots of times we don't even tell people the truth of what we really think because we're afraid to hurt them and we want to save their feelings, whereas it would be better for them if we were just lovingly honest with them.
85. We all need the encouragement of others. If your brother or sister stumbles, you need to lift them up.
86. Laws should be like clothes. They should be made to fit the people they are meant to serve.
87. If your just let people run around without any supervision, without any reports, without any check-up of what they're accomplishing, they're apt not to accomplish anything!
88. When you have to give people bad news, try to make it sound like good news!--That's salesmanship.

89. Be positive! Start off with the good news.
90. Whenever you've got a sincere question, don't hesitate to ask!
91. Show a real calm attitude, no fear, but relaxation, and soothe everybody's nerves and fluttered feelings with your calm voice and your steady prayer and your reassurances, and it'll sort of soothe their ruffled feathers.
92. When people are happy, hard working, cooperative and productive in a certain position, it's sometimes risky to change them.
93. Ask people, "What would you like to do, where do you think you ought to be? What is your vision and what do you have the faith for?" I think we've lost some good material because we didn't consult with some people about what they really wanted to do: We just told them to do something they didn't like; so they quit.
94. If you have a big enough sledgehammer, you can pound a square peg into a round hole, but you may lose part of the peg or ruin it entirely.
95. The best thing to do, first of all, is find the man, give him the job and the money to do it, then send him out on his own to see what he'll do! Ask him if he'd like the job and if he thinks he can do it, then make sure he knows all facets of the job and exactly what he's got to do, then tell him, "OK, we'll try you! If you make it, fine, and if you don't, well we'll find somebody else."--Just like any other kind of job or business.
96. You have got to be in personal contact, in touch with people, in order to manage them and keep them in line and headed the right direction.
97. Once you've found that a person is faithful, loyal, diligent, willing-spirited, hard-working, capable and really loves the Lord, you can trust them with almost anything!
98. Sometimes it is much better to let God show people things rather than you telling them flat out, blunt, bang, and it hits them in the face by surprise and they recoil and it almost knocks them flat! It's better to let them gradually find it out, let them see how God is leading and which way He's going, and then it's not so hard to take.
99. To present your side of the story humbly and sweetly is not wrong, but to argue and aggressively push your point and get yourself and others upset does not bear good fruit.
100. You can't always judge things by the letter of the law. The Lord knows the heart. One person can do one thing and it is right. Another can do the same thing and it is wrong because the motive is wrong.
101. It's really important to ask people to clarify what they've said if you don't understand it.
102. Being specific, ourselves with others and them with us, is so important in all areas, not just matters of the heart, but work, everything. In relations with others we can't get by with generalities either for their good or our good or the Work of the Kingdom.
103. To say exactly what you think and what you mean is very important, because generalities may often be interpreted in several different ways.--Others can't read your mind.
104. You cannot push anyone up a ladder unless he is willing to climb himself.
105. If you try to understand people's individual battles and personalities it helps you have a lot more mercy and love for them. You can't always excuse or ignore the problems, yet because you understand you can give them a bit of extra help and encouragement, which often is just what they need to get a victory.

(See also No. 22, 25, 31, 50A, 75, 123, 142, 161, 263, 297, 314B, 606, 629, 845, 962, 974, 997, 1431, 1436, 1442, 1549.)

106. .13:12 Hope deferred maketh the heart sick: but when the desire cometh, it is a tree of life.
107. .17:9,17 He that covereth a transgression seeketh love; but he that repeateth a matter separateth very friends. A friend loveth at all times, and a brother is born for adversity.
108. .18:19 A brother offended is harder to be won than a strong city: and their contentions are like the bars of a castle.
109. .20:14 It is naught, it is naught, saith the buyer: but when he is gone his way, then he boasteth.
110. .22:24,25 Make no friendship with an angry man; and with a furious man thou shalt not go. Lest thou learn his ways, and get a snare to thy soul.
111. .25:19 Confidence in an unfaithful man in time of trouble is like a broken tooth, and a foot out of joint.
112. .7:3 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye?
113. .26:41b The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.
114. .17:3 Take heed to yourselves: If thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him.
115. .12:20 Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head.

116. .13:10a Love worketh no ill to his neighbour.

117. .14:1 Him that is weak in the faith receive ye, but not to doubtful disputations.

118. .6:2 Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfill the law of Christ.

119. **TH.5:15 See that none render evil for evil unto any man; but ever follow that which is good, both among yourselves, and to all men.**

120. **.5:16a Confess your faults one to another.**

121. **PE.4:9 Use hospitality one to another without grudging.**

(See also **MAT.18:15-17.**)

### 105. RELATIONSHIP TO THE LORD --{page 830}--



*And I will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be My sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty (2Cor.6:18).*

1. God's the Judge and the Devil's the Prosecutor and Jesus in the Defender, and we are the criminal!
2. The reason people don't want to confess that God exists is because if they do, then they have to recognize Him!--And if they recognise Him, they have to admit that they owe Him some obeisance or obedience or some kind of acknowledgment.
3. You and God Are using each other just like two people who love each other!
4. You are in God's hands, but He's also in your hands.
5. The Saved are God's body--and His prophets are the eyes of His body!
6. He is our sun! --We are His moon! We merely reflect His light!
7. Each of us is like a little sunbeam, a little ray of sunshine coming from the Lord!
8. We are part of God, His sunshine, each of us has a portion of His power!
9. If you live with God He'll rub off on you. -- Then, like Moses, your face will shine too! (Ex.34:29-35)
10. You are not a reservoir with a limited amount of resources; you're a channel attached to unlimited Divine resources!
11. You're the only face God's got.
12. As you treasure the seeds of the body, so you treasure the Words of the Lord in your heart, and so you become one with Him.
13. The Lord has His chosen, His favourites: There are only a few wise and many foolish, and the wisest have lots of oil, oil to spare, and that oil comes from the Lord by His Spirit!
14. We are in tune with the Source of all Power and the Creator of all things!
15. People can only see God as we reflect Him, like little diamonds of dust!
16. The longer that little grain of dust stays right in the Light, the longer it shines the longer it stays a diamond!

17. The Shepherd's bosom bears each lamb  
O'er rock and waste and wild:  
The object of that care I am  
--I am the Shepherd's child.

18. He likes to give us answers to remind us that we're dependent on Him and we need Him, and besides, He likes us to love Him and appreciate His help.

19. God had to let people have their own way and free will to show them what a mess they were going to make and what a mess they'd be without Him, otherwise the Universe may never have known what evil really was like and how bad it could be and how far it could go, where man and Satan would try to destroy His whole Creation. So He just had to let it happen to show the difference between good and evil and to bring out of the mess a people unto Himself that would love Him voluntarily & serve Him voluntarily, and die for Him voluntarily if need be, and some people He could really love and show His Love for.

(See also No. A, P, T, 9, 74, 98, 117, 126, 169, 186A, 191, 231, 237, 249, 252, 254, 306, 325, 341, 384, 606, 638, 706, 721, 731, 775, 776, 1040, 1089, 1380, 1389, 1493.)

20. .19:5 Now therefore, if ye will obey My voice indeed, and keep My covenant, then ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto Me above all people: for all the Earth is Mine.

21. .7:6 For thou art an holy people unto the Lord thy God: the Lord thy God hath chosen thee to be a special people unto Himself, above all people that are upon the face of the Earth.

22. .54:5 For thy Maker is thine husband; the Lord of hosts is His Name; and thy Redeemer the Holy One of Israel; The God of the whole Earth shall He be called.

23. .62:5b As the bridegroom rejoiceth over the bride, so shall thy God rejoice over thee.

24. .3:14a Turn, O backsliding children, saith the Lord; for I am married unto you.

25. .2:19,20 And I will betroth thee unto Me for ever; yea, I will betroth thee unto Me in righteousness, and in judgment, and in lovingkindness, and in mercies. I will even betroth thee unto Me in faithfulness: and thou shalt know the Lord.

26. .14:26,27 In the fear of the Lord is strong confidence: and His children shall have a place of refuge. The fear of the Lord is a fountain of life, to depart from the snares of death.

27. .12:50 For whosoever shall do the will of My Father which is in Heaven, the same is My brother, and sister, and mother.

28. **JOH.10:27 My sheep hear My voice, and I know them, and they follow Me.**

29. **.15:15 Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of My Father I have made know unto you.**

30. **.8:17 And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with Him, that we may be also glorified together.**

31. **COR.2:16b But we have the mind of Christ.**

32. **1COR.3:23 And ye are Christ's; and Christ is God's.**

33. **1COR.6:19 What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own?**

34. **2COR.6:18 And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be My sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.**

35. **2COR.11:2 For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.**

36. **GAL.4:6,7 And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of His Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father. Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son; and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ.**

37. **EPH.1:22,23 And hath put all things under His feet, and gave Him to be the head over all things to the church, Which is His body, the fullness of Him that filleth all in all.**

38. **EPH.5:30 For we are members of His body, of His flesh, and of His bones.**

39. **COL.1:18 And He is the head of the body, the church: Who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things He might have the preeminence.**

40. **HEB.2:11 For both He that sanctifieth and they who are sanctified are all of one: for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren.**

41. **HEB.3:6 But Christ as a Son over His Own House; whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end.**



*Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you (2Cor.6:17).*

1. We are citizens of the world by birth, but citizens of Heaven by rebirth!
2. Try to avoid the battle zones and taking sides in the Devil's conflicts. We're on the Lord's side--of love and peace and salvation.
3. The whole World lieth in darkness, but we come out and we shine like the moon to light up the whole World!
4. Don't be afraid to spoil the System!--Like spoiling Egypt!
5. If people think we're a little eccentric, it's not because we're off the center--it's because they are--wobbling around way off the one and only true Center, Jesus Christ!
6. You don't have to bless everybody, you don't even have to curse them! If they don't love Jesus they're already cursed!
7. You are God's ambassador representing the King of kings, the One who runs the Universe, so don't let them push you around!
8. There is no such thing as the peaceful coexistence of good and evil!
9. You have every right to break any law which forbids you to confess Christ and to witness and to win souls! But don't blatantly and openly do it unless you're ready to go to jail! Maybe you can still witness [quietly].
10. When all around is darkness, any source of light is very powerful!
11. When you put yourself at the mercy of the System, you are almost compelled to deny and betray the Lord!
12. We can agree with some of what Communism preaches, because its idealism is stolen right out of the Bible--the Devil's own imitation of the Lord's pattern of brotherhood and sharing! But it is their methods and tactics with which we cannot always agree: the violence, cruelty and deceit, and how they sometimes try to get it across.
13. You cannot re-enter that System World without playing the game according to their rules!
14. You don't get the benefit of the System without paying its prices!
15. We have power over Satan. We don't have any power over the System.--Unless God gives it to us!
16. We must be tolerant of other faiths and religions, but we must be particularly loyal to ourselves and our own!
17. The whole World's problems--political, economic, social, religious and physical--could be solved through the love of God and each other!
18. I don't believe it's really God's love to deliberately try to offend Systemites.
19. I'm always thankful for the police and their protection and their help. The only people who worry about the police are usually the people who have done something wrong.
20. I don't mind [capturing] people from the Devil, I've [captured] a lot of them! I don't mind using you, his former possessions, for the glory of God!
21. When we accept the help of the System to do the Lord's work, it seems like it almost always requires some kind of compromise.
22. Government benefits usually are just too high-priced!
23. Governments always demand the pound of flesh for every ounce of benefits that they're going to give you!

24. We are politically and socially conscious, economically conscious and internationally conscious, we are conscientious about these things and want to have an influence in the World for good, as we believe in a social Gospel as well as a personal Gospel. We are also interested in social justice, economic justice, political justice, racial justice and religious freedom!

25. It's to our advantage that we pray for the kings and magistrates and the people who have the rule over us, that we shall have peace for the Gospel as long as possible.

26. We're God's ambassadors of Heaven to this strange country of the World, amongst all these strangers who don't know Jesus.

27. An angry parent is one of the worst and most persistent enemies!

28. Remember, both your friends and enemies will always be in the minority. The vast majority are always the indifferent, the lukewarm, who couldn't care less and who consider you just a waste of time.

29. I'm not a Communist, I'm not a Capitalist, I'm not a Fascist, I'm on the Lord's side!

30. God doesn't specify which government you have to obey, just the one you have!

31. ... Even though only Red like a radish!--Just appear to be red on the outside if you have to, but all white in the inside!

32. The System constantly brainwashes, continually propangandises, always uses every tactic they falsely accuse us of, of which we're not guilty. They accuse us of all their own sins and portray us as even worse than they are.

33. I don't believe in that saying, "My country, my country, right or wrong, my country!" If my country's wrong, then it doesn't deserve to be my country!

34. Things can own you, instead of you owning them! You can be working for them, instead of them working for you!

35. God's Word definitely teaches that you're supposed to cooperate with the government if you can.

36. It's one thing for the System to tolerate you--it's another thing for you to join it.

37. Have patience with the people who don't understand! You friends don't need an explanation, and your enemies would never believe it anyhow!--But the mystified need some help.

38. The Shepherd is the Lord, we're the sheep, the sheep dogs are like the Devil, and the wolves are our bitter enemies!

39. If all else fails, it is better to obey God than man, but do all that you can to agree with your adversary as far as you can, before you take that stand.

40. The heart of man is the same the World over, and his heartaches and sorrows and sins and pains and fear of death are the same!

41. "In the world we [the Gypsies] pretend to be like they are, but we know we're different. We pretend to conform to their System--but we know we're not part of it."--Abraham.

42. The love of God and the love of fellow man--this is still God's solution, even in such a complex and confused society as that of the World today.

43. You must learn the difference between hating the sin and loving the sinner, hating the vicious System and pitying its poor victims.

44. You can always trust a Systemite to be a Systemite.

45. It's one thing to get out of Egypt, but it's another thing to get the Egypt out of you.

46. Don't get so carried away so that they have to carry you away.

47. The Lord is not going to let the World get away with ignoring us!

48. I believe in praying for the city and country that you're living in and its people, because you're there and it's a good idea that they be blessed, if only for your sake and God's Kingdom's sake.

49. You never get anything from the System without it costing you something.

50. It's impossible for us to always totally comply with the System!

51. God is our defense--not the System!

52. We're entirely too controversial to ever get anywhere far with the System--we're its sworn enemies!

53. The Children of God throughout all ages have foretold, proclaimed and sometimes even promoted a new regime.

54. You're not to worry about tomorrow, tomorrow will take care of the things of itself. Well sometimes, sad to say, the government makes you take care of tomorrow ahead of time. They don't understand living by faith, trusting God for tomorrow, so you have to show'm you have plans and money and tickets and everything prepared for tomorrow.

55. Pray for the kings and magistrates and governors and for the peace of your country, that you may have peace.

56. If you still hunger for fellowship with the World, there's something wrong with you spiritually.
57. God has given us a great deal of freedom and liberty and intimate fellowship with each other, but if it's going to cause us trouble with the System and endanger our lives and our work, I'm not going to hesitate to put my clothes back on to survive!
58. When you are forced by law and political and social pressure to conform in order to survive, it is no sin to pretend to conform to their conventions on the surface while your mind and heart remain the same.
59. Don't be afraid to conform or compromise when you have to, in order to stay alive and keep witnessing, if by nothing more than your life and your smile and your love.
60. You can't fight City Hall!
61. In a sense, God is not going to communicate with the World. Instead He'll communicate with you, His Own Children, and it's your job to communicate it to the World.
62. Covet not this World's vain riches  
That so rapidly decay,  
Seek to gain the Heavenly treasures  
That will never pass away!
63. Nobody is really free.--You're either the Devil's slave or you're God's slave. You've got to work for somebody.
64. It doesn't matter what others call you!--As long as God calls you!
65. Jesus calls us from the worship  
Of the vain World's golden store,  
From each idol that would keep us,  
Saying, "Christian, love Me more!"
66. It's better to be a saved Serf than a damned Super!
67. In order to wash the dishes you have to get your own hands dirty.
68. A man is known by his friends, as well as his enemies.
69. You can please perhaps all the people sometimes, and some of the people, like our Family, all the time, but you cannot please all the people all the time, or something is wrong!
70. Don't be afraid to ask for something in return, even a night's lodging in their stable, or trade a mealful for a mouthful of MO, or accept their shirt for the real pay dirt!
71. To some we are a cloud of refreshing and blessing; to others, a storm of destruction and cursing!
72. Our enemies are not in their right minds, because they can't possibly know what's right without Jesus!
73. Don't believe everything you read in the newspapers!--Only God's Word is reliable.
74. Power, popularity and plenty are dangerous!--Handle prayerfully!
75. The Lord will have mercy on those that have mercy on us.
76. The door of this nation hangs upon the hinges of Thy children!
77. As long as the World fulfills its mission to help the Children of God and not hurt them, God even blesses the World.
78. Fame is fleeting and popularity often only temporary, and we must use it for the utmost publicity of the message while we have it, before the persecution begins.
79. "We [the Gypsies] pretend to keep their stupid rules, but we keep God's rules."--Abraham.
80. It is the duty of the Prophets of God and His Children to take neither side, but to see both sides, and especially God's side, which is sometimes neither side.
81. The people of Jericho jeered when Joshua jogged his Jews seven times around their impregnable walls, but it was really a blast on those tiny trumpets when those walls came tumblin' down!
82. When David cut loose with just one honest bit of rock, the Philistine phony fell flat on his face!
83. Jesus said we would be despised by the despicable, disdained by the vain and spurned by society.
84. We have the face of both the Lion and the Lamb: To the wolves, we're as lions, to the sheep, we're as lambs!
85. The majority are always wrong!
86. A System job is not for pay,  
But only for the right to stay!
87. Can a man take fire in his bosom, and his clothes not be burned? Can one go upon hot coals, and his feet not be burned? Pro.6:27,28.
88. You can't go looking to the World for help, they'll just drag you down!

89. If you still have a hankering for the World, watch out! That's a fifth column in your own heart! That's a poison in your own soul! It's the Devil's own tool, it's a hole in the dike if you still have a temptation toward Worldly things.

90. The test of courage comes when we are in the minority; the test of tolerance comes when we are in the majority.

91. You judge a man by his foes as well as by his friends.

92. Every gift the World gives has its price.

93. Be a World citizen in the eyes of man, but a citizen of our Heavenly Kingdom in the eyes of God.

94. We're in a pretty thankless business as far as the World's concerned, a pretty unbelievable business, the business of genuinely, truly, unselfishly, sincerely, loving people with the love of God before a World that doesn't believe in love of God, because they're both the same thing, so how can they believe that what we're doing is because of God and because of love?--When they believe in neither!

95. The World is always suspicious, and the Devil is the accuser of the saints and he is always on the job, pointing out your faults and your mistakes and your errors and trying to throw suspicion onto your whole operation, your motives, your character, your activities, your work, in order to find something with which to accuse you, like they did Jesus.

96. Remain God's dropout. Don't go back to the System, even if you have to work in it or with it!--Don't become a part of it, in spirit or otherwise! Stay revolutionary!--Don't compromise with the Enemy! Try to live as peaceably with him as you can, but don't join him. Don't pull your punches. Don't compromise your convictions. Don't water down your message! Stay dropped out!

97. The System loves the rich and the successful--and they love to help those who might even help them or their own children--but they hate the poor and despise poverty and prefer just to ignore it. So the better front you can put on for the System, the more impressed they'll be. They love that outward appearance--those good clothes--that plush office! The more you look like big business to them, the more they'll love you, even if it's God's Business.

98. God is not the Father of all men!--He's only the Father of those who love Him and receive His Son Jesus! The others are of their father the Devil! (Jn.8:44)

99. We don't believe in the bullshit about the Fatherhood of God and the Brotherhood of all men, that's not so! We are not the brothers of the sons and daughters of the Devil! We are only the brothers of the brothers and sisters of Jesus Christ, the Children of God! Soon this whole World will be divided very distinctly into two kinds of people--those who are the Children of God through Jesus Christ His Son, and those who are the Children of the Devil through the Antichrist, Satan's son!

100. Since our enemies are not in their right minds because they can't possibly know what's right without Jesus, the Truth makes very little difference to them.

101. They're the saddest loneliest bunch in the World, those sad old people. It's just like they're waiting to die, playing Solitaire! At least we can save them in the end, on the threshold of death, from their loneliness and sadness. Lord, make us compassionate, make us long to help these poor old folks.

102. We are going to be showing up the anti-Christ Communist World Government as being a fake, a phony and a hypocritical counterfeit when the day comes! We are eventually going to be just as much of a challenge and threat and exposer of their phoniness as we are now of the Western Capitalistic World and its system! But in the meantime, we may have to work with them.

103. "Honour thy father and thy mother that thy days may be long in the land, and verily thou shalt be fed" (Eph.6:2,3), which Paul said was "the first commandment with promise." It can really reap good dividends, make friends out of enemies, helpers out of hinderers, and at least pacify the public.

104. Write your parents at least once a month so they will rest at ease that at least you're still alive--and they'll not be so apt to call out the Romans to look for you! But if they don't hear from you for months, you can hardly blame them!

105. Try to have a little sympathy, a little empathy, put yourself in their shoes, try to think how they feel, since they're ignorant and don't know any better, and don't really understand what you're trying to do and have heard all kinds of lies and wild tales about you! Try to understand and explain with loving patience and sympathy for the confused.

106. Sometimes, if the Lord so leads, you may need to try to comfort your parents and encourage them and show them the love of Jesus.

107. You should write your parents and be a testimony, a witness and encouragement and let them know you're happy, that you love them and thank them for all they did for you and the sacrifices they made for you while getting you started.



108. As the lawyer said to the hippie in "Easy Rider": "They have to kill you because you're free and it proves they're not, and they can't stand being reminded that they're slaves of the chains of conformity forged by their own hands!"

109. Love the sinner, but not the sin! Love the Systemite, but not the System!

110. "Render unto Caesar the things which are Caesar's; and unto God the things that are God's."  
(Mt.22:21)

111. You can't do business with the Devil--you cannot compromise with the very System which your message infuriates and your methods anger and your very way of living offends.

112. Paul's appeal to Caesar, or the government, almost brought an end to his ministry. So watch out that you don't try appealing to Caesar, because Caesar's going to demand your pound of flesh and your life and freedom.-  
-It cost Paul his head!

113. You just can't lick the System at its own game--it's a stacked deck in their favour!

114. You'll never beat the System at its own game, because the children of this World are wiser in their generation than the children of Light! (Lu.16:8)

115. The World is so much the opposite of everything we are and stand for and believe and practice!

116. I don't want peace with the Devil's System!--I'm at war! [2Cor.10:4,5.]

117. I don't like violence toward people, but I don't hesitate to try to smash Satan's System with God's Truth! [2Cor.10:4,5.]

118. The rich are the most neglected class of people there are spiritually!

119. They tell me our goodness is madness:

We should seek after worldly gain!

But I tell them their saneness is sadness,

And it brings to so many such pain!

120. God has control of the power of the Universe and He has control of the great powers of the World, and judges them according to how they treat His people. All through History He has put one up and put the other down according to how they treat His people.

121. Like the hippie said to the cop, "How can they stop us? They don't even know where we're going!"

122. The System is here for a reason: It is here for the purpose of government, organisation, supplying the material needs of God's people and furnishing their protection. (Ro.13) As long as it behaves itself and protects God's children and is good to them and is fulfilling its mission of existing for their safety and providing for their needs, then the System's will is in line with the Will of God, and God will even protect the System and allow it to stand.

123. We are the only alternative to Capitalism or Communism! We are the only genuinely communistic religious group in the World today!

124. To challenge the System on its own grounds, the lion in his own den, when we're nothing but a little mouse, is absolutely insane!

125. There are only two kinds of children in the World: The children of God and the children of the Devil! There are no in-betweens. You either live with the children of God, or you are going to have to live with the children of the Devil! You either work for God, or you're going to have to go back and work for the Devil!--There are no neutrals! The choice is yours!

126. We are more revolutionary than the Communists because they can't change one damned heart! In fact, every damned one of them is lost if he doesn't find Jesus! They haven't changed a single heart and there's no revolution on God's Earth that's going to last, not even last out this life, much less last out Eternity, unless the heart is changed! God's got to revolute the heart!

127. You cannot destroy the LIE by destroying what the LIE has created, because the LIE is the Spirit of Antichrist--a spiritual force of evil that is invisible, but which has created the visible evil System. You have to shoot the LIE down by God's Spirit!

128. We are waging a Worldwide war!--Not on the side of the left or the right, but on the side of the only One Who is really right, and that's God!

129. God is holding up the whole course of history waiting on you to do your job and get it done. He's suspending the destruction of nations, postponing the next war.

130. The only way to change the World is to change lives. The only way to change lives is to change hearts, and the only One Who can change hearts is Jesus Christ.

131. Don't let the Devil's children steal bread from God's Children!

132. I don't think anybody in this Family should be disinterested in what's going on in the world!

133. When we ask Jesus into our heart, when we receive the King of kings and the Prince of Peace, Lord of Lords, God of Heaven, Son of Righteousness and the Kingdom of our Heaven into our hearts, we have in effect renounced our Worldly citizenship, and have made the Heavenly City our Home!

134. I think some of your parents who oppose us might be saved, but they don't realise that they are now cooperating with the Devil in fighting and cursing us!

135. Let the System think they've licked you and got you, but be ready for your next big leap onto God's big ship out of the System again to our next big field!

136. We believe in obeying the laws, each one of them we possibly can if we know about it. We believe in trying to be peaceful and not hurting anybody, but helping people. This is our way of life and our message.

137. We are supposed to obey the powers that be, and try to avoid crossing them. But there even comes a limit to that when it comes to witnessing and winning souls and preaching the Gospel. When they begin restricting such freedoms, then they begin to defy the laws of God and they begin to touch the apple of God's eye, His Prophets, and they begin to get themselves in trouble by trying to get His Prophets and His witnesses in trouble.

(See also No. B, E, L, 7, 27, 61, 67, 69A, 121, 143A, 163, 193, 200, 208, 211, 212, 222, 246, 270, 283A, 311C, 313B, 330C, 333, 333C, 567, 605, 701, 709, 766, 771, 780, 783, 800, 834, 840, 848, 905, 911, 1036, 1039, 1533, 1534.)

138. .23:32,33 Thou shalt make no covenant with them, nor with their gods. They shall not dwell in thy land, lest they make thee sin against me: for if thou serve their gods, it will surely be a snare unto thee.

139. .1:1 Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful.

140. .4:14 Enter not into the path of the wicked, and go not in the way of evil men.

141. .13:20 He that walketh with wise men shall be wise: but a companion of fools shall be destroyed.

142. .16:7 When a man's ways please the Lord, He maketh even his enemies to be at peace with him.

143. .22:16 He that oppresseth the poor to increase his riches, and he that giveth to the rich, shall surely come to want.

144. **PRO.24:1 Be not thou envious against evil men, neither desire to be with them.**

145. **.52:11 Depart ye, depart ye, go ye out from thence, touch no unclean thing; go ye out of the midst of her; be ye clean, that bear the vessels of the Lord.**

146. **.65:13a,23 My servants shall eat, but ye shall be hungry: behold, My servants shall drink, but ye shall be thirsty. They shall not labour in vain, nor bring forth for trouble; for they are the seed of the blessed of the Lord, and their offspring with them.**

147. **.29:7 And seek the peace of the city whither I have caused you to be carried away captives, and pray unto the Lord for it: for in the peace thereof shall ye have peace.**

148. **.5:16 Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.**

149. **MAT.5:25 Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison.**

150. **.22:21b Then saith he unto them, Render therefore unto Caesar the things which are Caesar's; and unto God the things that are God's.**

151. **.6:27 But I say unto you which hear, Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you.**

152. **.14:26,27 If any man come to Me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be My disciple. And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after Me, cannot be My disciple.**

153. **.15:19 If ye were of the World, the World would love his own: but because ye are not of the World, but I have chosen you out of the World, therefore the World hateth you.**

154. **.12:2 And be not conformed to this World: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.**

155. **.12:17 Recompense to no man evil for evil. Provide things honest in the sight of all men.**

156. **.13:3 For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same.**

157. **CO.7:23 Ye are bought with a price; be not ye the servants of men.**

158. **CO.7:31 And they that use this World, as not abusing it: for the fashion of this World passeth away.**

**159. CO.6:14-17 Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness? and what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you.**

**160. .5:11 And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them.**

**161. .4:5 Walk in wisdom toward them that are without, redeeming the time.**

**162. TI.5:22 Neither be partaker of other men's sins: keep thyself pure.**

**163. TI.2:4 No man that warreth entangleth himself with the affairs of this life; that he may please Him Who hath chosen him to be a soldier.**

**164. .4:4 Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the World is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the World is the enemy of God.**

**165. PE.2:12-17 Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles: that, whereas they speak against you as evil doers, they may by your good works, which they shall behold, glorify God in the day of visitation. Submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake: whether it be to the king, as supreme; or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers, and for the praise of them that do well. For so is the will of God, that with well doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men: As free, and not using your liberty for a cloke of maliciousness, but as the servants of God. Honour all men. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honour the king.**

**166. JO.2:15-17 Love not the World, neither the things that are in the World. If any man love the World, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the World, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the World. And the World passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth forever.**

**167. REV.18:4 And I heard another voice from Heaven, saying, Come out of her, My people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.**

**(See also DEU.7:2-4; ROM.13.)**



*Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the Devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour: Whom resist steadfast in the faith (1Pet.5:8,9).*

1. God's Word says, "Resist the Devil and he will flee from you!" That doesn't mean lying down and letting him walk right over you! (Jam.4:7)
2. When the Devil tempts you to get down and discouraged, fight! Start doing something positive!
3. Don't just stand there: Do something--sing, shout, praise the Lord, quote Scriptures! Hit the Devil back! Sock it to him with the Word!
4. Take up that white-hot sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God, and cut the Devil to the heart!
5. Fighting the Devil takes a lot out of you, but when it happens and you get the victory, God puts a lot in!
6. The only way you can get rid of the Devil is to defy him, resist him, rebuke him, refuse to obey him, get up on your feet and quit fearing him! Give worship to God!
7. You're not stronger than the devil, but God is!
8. To let the Devil get into your mind and your thoughts and your soul and your spirit and your heart is the most dangerous thing you can do!
9. The Devil really doesn't like to be exposed, and he really stirs up trouble if you start exposing him.
10. The Devil hates the Name of Jesus.
11. Through the Name of Jesus you have power over the Devil, and you can command him what to do and where to go!
12. Let the Light in!--And the darkness will flee of itself!
13. That's the way the Devil always works: He starts out with some little thing that doesn't seem to be too bad, but then it's the horrors that it leads to that begin to shake you up!
14. Even if the government doesn't know where you are, the Devil knows, and he's always ready to stir up trouble, so watch out!
15. Don't take the Devil's "no" for an answer, push ahead until you totally defeat him.
16. Any hold Satan has on you is only as a usurper. He tries to hold on to that which is not rightfully his.
17. It is impossible for the Devil to win over you, unless you give in to him.
18. The Devil is a liar and is usually bluffing.
19. The Devil can't stand the Word, nor the name of Jesus.
20. A lot of times the reason you have to fight the Devil so much is because you're actually fighting God and the Truth.
21. If the Devil can just scare you out before you begin, then you'll never accomplish what God wants you to do.
22. I've never had any patience with the Devil--he just makes me mad and I want to blow him away right off the bat!
23. When you entertain the Devil's lies in your mind and heart, eventually they're going to come out of your mouth!
24. Like the Devil's temptations, you can't keep the birds from flying over your head or pecking at you, but you don't have to let'm build a nest in your hair!
25. God speaks first, then He lets the Devil talk to you to test your faith.
26. The Devil tries to fight a lot of things that God has said are going to happen, but they'll happen sooner or later.

27. Evil spirits don't like light. That's why I always insist on leaving some light on at night.
28. The Devil only wins if you surrender! But he can never win as long as you keep fighting!
29. When God allowed the Devil to test Job, he first of all took away all his wealth, then he even took away his family, his children and all that he loved, and finally his health. It was all a test, perpetrated by the Devil but allowed by the Lord, in order to show that Job really loved the Lord in spite of it all!
30. If the Devil can get you to doubt God's Word, you are believing the Devil's word
31. The Lord sometimes allows you to have nightmares as a test to see what you do subconsciously in your dreams, if you'll cry out to the Lord and rebuke the Devil!
32. Don't blame everything on the Devil, it's not all his fault, part of it is yours!
33. You cannot listen to the Devil's music without being influenced by the Devil!
34. The Devil's forces are everywhere and are on the constant lookout for you! So you be on the lookout for them and avoid them the best you can.
35. The Devil is really mad!--Which shows the Lord is really glad!
36. There are no such things as little dangers in God's work! Any little chink in the armour, crack in the wall, tiny gap in our united front where the Enemy could get in and cause big problems is dangerous!
37. Stay dropped out of the doubts of the Devil by staying in God's Word and close to the Lord.
38. In a way, the Devil is your friend in disguise! God created him for a purpose--to hound you and keep you in line!
39. The Devil is jealous, an enemy, but in a sense almost a friendly enemy because he has got to abide by the Laws of God and we have authority over him! He (but not your enemies) has to do whatever you say in the name of Jesus Christ!
40. In spite of what tricks the Devil tries to pull, the Lord's always several jumps ahead of him and always pulls us out of tight situations!
41. God uses the Devil to give people what they deserve, and He lets the Devil attack you to test you, to see if you'll really call on God and ask Him to help you.
42. When you've got the Enemy on the run, you need to keep after him!
43. Not all voices are of God. You must "Try the spirits" to make sure that what you're hearing is of the Lord. If it is not according to His Word or causes you to be discontent or bitter, dissatisfied or unhappy or critical of others--these things are not of the Lord.
44. The demons and the evil spirits are subject unto us, they have no free will of their own. They cannot do as they please. They have to do what we tell them to do in Jesus' Name.
45. The Enemy is always ready to attack you at any unguarded moment and you must be particularly prayerful and careful in such dark, demonic areas as some of these Southern countries where Satanism and witchcraft and devilry of all kinds are rampant.
46. You can just about tell what's right by finding out what the Devil advocates; then you know what's right must be the opposite.
47. If you sell the Devil your soul he'll give you anything you want, but materially...'cause it's his to give. God has given it into his hands, he is the god of this World at this time, and can give it to whom he will.
48. Everything Satan does is a counterfeit of the true.
49. You don't get the victory by running from him; you get the victory by standing there and making him run!
50. The Devil can never stop the man who refuses to quit.
51. When Satan tempts me to despair  
And tells me of the guilt within,  
Upward I look and see Christ there  
Who made an end of all my sin.
52. Discouragement is the Devil's favourite weapon, and the only thing that defeats it is faith!
53. Put the Enemy out of action with the Word! Bury him in a flood of the truth!
54. When you first hear the Devil's knock, slam the door in his face so quick and so hard it cuts his nose off!
55. When you flee temptation, be sure you don't leave a forwarding address.
56. The Devil can't get you back once you're saved--you're the Lord's forever!--But he tries hard to keep you from serving God.
57. Don't worry about the Devil, just fight him and defeat him by the power of the Spirit.
58. Don't be afraid of the Devil--he's afraid of you!

59. The Devil is a coward and if you face him down and resist him, he'll run!--And every time I did, he ran!  
I'm still going and I'm still winning and he's still running!

60. Give the Devil enough rope and he'll hang himself!

61. Help us not to have any unguarded moments, Lord, but to guard every moment in prayer.

62. All the devils of Hell including Satan himself are subject to your power, because you have the power of Christ!

63. Martin Luther once threw a bottle of ink at the Devil--but the only thing you can really hit him with is a bottle of the Word!

64. The Devil will give up if you don't give in.

65. Jesus is our Defense Attorney before God our Judge, defending us from all the fiery darts of the Evil one, that prosecuting attorney, the accuser of the saints, Satan himself!

66. The Devil can't win unless you give in.

67. By God's Word, his Truth and His revelations, He destroys the power of the Enemy.

68. The Prince of Darkness grim,

We tremble not for him,

His rage we can endure,

For lo, his doom is sure,

One little Word shall fell him!--JESUS!

69. Satan's powers are very real, yet he is not to be feared, much less worshipped, but to be resisted, rebuked, exorcised, and gotten rid of, and reproved and cast out and sent away!

70. The Devil can't accomplish much without your help, so you should refuse to help him!

71. You can't do business with the Enemy even for a moment! He's out to win!

72. Don't give the Devil an inch or he'll take a mile--or more, and everything you've got!

73. Stay in the charmed circle of God's protection, work and will,

And the Devil's disease and dirty deeds can never work you ill.

74. Prayer and the power of positive praise

Defeat the Devil and all his ways!

75. The Devil doesn't like to be exposed, he gets angry, because exposure leaves him vulnerable to defeat.

76. The Devil and me, we don't agree,

I hate him and he hates me.

77. The Devil can't do anything with you unless you let him in, unless you give him the chance and you harbour his thoughts and his sins. If you stay close to the Lord in obedience to God and filled with His Spirit, you don't have to worry about the Devil!

78. We are in a serious warfare and you had better be constantly on your guard, ready at all times to fight any attack of the Enemy, who is going to wait for your unguarded moment and for the time when you're a little weak and a little out of sorts and out of tune, out of touch and out of the Spirit! He's going to sock you so hard it might knock you for a loop, because you didn't stay in the right spirit, you didn't stay close to the Lord, you weren't obedient, you didn't do what you should've done, you weren't on your guard, praying without ceasing, giving thanks always, staying close to the Lord in the Spirit!

79. Fill your life with love, and there will be no room for the lies of the Devil!

80. You have but to utter the Name of Jesus to fell all the demons of Hell, Oplexicon and Satan himself!

81. The Devil isn't a bit afraid of the name "God" because it doesn't really specify what god, and there are lots of gods!--But sock it to him with the Name of Jesus and he'll tremble with fear!

82. The Devil flees each time he sees the weakest saint upon his knees.

83. You don't have to know all the evil machinations of the Enemy to be able to fight him, all you have to know is the Truth!

84. You can't do business with the Devil. You can't make peace with the Devil. You just have to fight him and curse him and get rid of him.

85. We can curse people in the Spirit of God and in the power of the Lord. Just like we rebuke devils, we can rebuke people.

86. We're not just fighting evil people, but evil spirits who possess them!

87. When you've got the Enemy on the run you need to keep after him.

88. Don't let the Enemy adulterate the pure waters of the Word with his dirty lies and propaganda and his doctrines of devils. Don't believe them! Resist them! For his doubts and fears and lies can hide an even more fatal attack on your very life!

89. The Devil can really tell you a lot of truth about yourself that's horrible, not to speak of the lies he tells you, so if you start listening to the Devil, there's no end to it.

90. We're one of the few outfits in the whole World that is on the attack! We are invading the Devil's territory! We are attacking the gates of Hell and we are winning!--Winning souls and winning citizens from his kingdom, and we are winning this War! And God knows Satan hates us for it, and that's why he attacks us on every hand, every way he possible can, and tries to stop us, but he can't stop us.

(See also No. K, 33, 99, 168, 171, 261, 303, 363, 551, 602, 603, 664, 678, 686, 710, 717, 720, 727, 838, 857, 947, 980, 1008, 1246, 1259, 1375, 1376, 1378, 1405, 1408, 1409, 1415, 1420, Gen Series.)

91. .59:19b When the Enemy shall come in like a flood, the Spirit of the Lord shall lift up a standard against him.

92. .4:10 Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and Him only shalt thou serve.

93. .16:18b Upon this rock I will build My church; and the gates of Hell shall not prevail against it.

94. .8:33 But when He had turned about and looked on His disciples, He rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behind me, Satan: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men.

95. .10:19 Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the Enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.

96. .4:27 Neither give place to the Devil.

97. **PE.5:8,9 Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the Devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour: Whom resist steadfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the World.**



*Come unto Me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest (Mat.11:28).*

1. The secret of that calm and peace and rest and patience and love is resting in the Lord.
2. Rest-up, think-up, pray-up and tank-up.
3. You need rest and you need nourishment and you need refreshing and you need inspiration.
4. You cannot feed others from an empty shell, an empty cupboard, an empty and over-burdened heart, a strained body that has not even enough for itself.
5. Fill up your heart and you won't have any trouble knowing what to say or what to do.
6. People are a lot like batteries; They need rest, they need recharging, and they can't stand too much draining. You've got to take care of them.
7. The Lord said, "My yoke is easy and My burden is light" --but there's one condition to it-- "come unto Me!"
8. If your day was loud and weary  
And you feel you cannot be heard  
Wait for the night my deary  
When He hears the tiniest bird!
9. All work and no play make a very dull student, and an even worse witness.
10. You must have rest to do your best!
11. Faith and trust in God gives you a feeling of rest of body, peace of mind, contentment of heart and spiritual well being.
12. To "die daily" does not mean to kill yourself off with overwork and worries!
13. If the job seems to be too hard for you, take it to Jesus
14. If the yoke gets too hard and the burden too heavy, it's not His yoke nor His burden, but our own or someone else's!
15. People who take time to be alone usually have depth, originality, and quiet confidence.
16. You need to know when to fight and when to be still, when to give and when to save, when to work and when to play, when to feed and when to pray!
17. Don't work so hard that you die of improvements!
18. You shall find rest to your soul. (Matt.11:29) Not many people understand that the soul is a body with a spirit. If you don't rest in the Spirit you are going to wear out your body.
19. The bottle has to hold still so you can pour into it. It has to hold still and be real quiet to get filled up.
20. The one that has not learned the secret of renewing his mind will soon faint in his mind.
21. No one can continue to keep pouring out to others without spending some time alone with the Lord getting filled up again.
22. You cannot do the Master's work without the Master's power.--And to get it, you must spend time with the Master.
23. We all need more quiet time alone with the Lord in rest and refilling.
24. Take time to be holy--wholly His and whole in mind, body and spirit.
25. Lord, help us to remember we can't go on without the Heavenly vision You give.



26. You wouldn't worry and fret so and be so upset if you'd spend more time with the Lord.
27. No work is too important to stop for a few minutes of inspiration and refreshing from on high, spiritual renewal and physical rest--a little love feast with the Lord.
28. If you've missed a trip into the temple of His Spirit today, you've really missed something.
29. He can solve all your problems in one little glimpse! He can refresh your whole spirit with one deep breath. He can clarify all your thoughts with just one sweet strain of Heavenly music!
30. He can wipe away all your fears and tears with just one little restful moment in the perfect peace he gives when your mind is stayed on Him and Him alone because you trust Him.
31. If you're trusting you're not heard to fret.  
If you're fretting you're not trusting yet.
32. He says, "I'll never leave thee nor forsake thee." (He.13:5) It's not God that's not always there, it's we who are not always there. We sometimes run off some place else and leave Him way behind.
33. Jesus said but one thing is needful, and that is to sit at His feet and learn of Him, and pass His Words on to the World. Those who have chosen this good part, it shall never be taken away from them. Too many of us have been encumbered with too much serving and not enough listening. We've had too many Martha's and not enough Mary's.
34. We are to wait upon the Lord. He that waits upon the Lord shall renew his strength instead of wearing out.
35. You must save your best for your King, give first place to Him, His fellowship and His love. You need to learn to rest in His arms and not to work so hard.
36. Strength cometh from the Lord Who made Heaven and Earth and your body, and He knows what you need most of all!--Rest and peace and fellowship with Him and feeding on His Word.
37. The first place must belong to Him in peace and quietness and rest and feeding and fellowship with the Lord.
38. So many take their burdens to the Lord and lay them on the altar, and then pick them right back up again and walk off with them!
39. Help us to let You take good care of us, Lord, and to give You all the cooperation we can by getting proper rest, proper exercise, and proper diet so that we may be physically whole, well, strong and able to serve Thee. Help us most of all to get the rest, exercise and diet of Thy Word and Thy Spirit so that we may be spiritually whole, strong and happy in Thy service.
40. Angry impatience is a sign of lack of perfect faith and rest in the Lord, something which God judged Moses very severely for, and what might seem to us a very small sin but what to God was a very bad example for the whole congregation of wrathful impatience and lack of restful faith.
41. You have to pitch in and go ahead by naked faith and your little tiny Gideon's band and win the battle just by the faith of God and the meekness of your faith and the quietness of your obedience. Don't worry, don't get all excited and all uptight. Just be calm and meek and humble and quiet and believing and obedient and everything will turn out all right.
42. When you have so much talent and ability in the natural it's hard for you to just let go and let God.
43. We rest in You, Lord, we sleep in Thee, in the hollow of Thine arms, within Thy hands, under Thy wings, in Thy secret place. We abide under the shadow of the Almighty. It's like thy special forcefield around us, Lord, like an aura, a special kind of glory that protects us.

(See also No. 3, 4, 11, 25, 74, 98, 169, 191, 1427, 1493.)

44. **EXO.33:14** My presence shall go with thee, and I will give thee rest.
45. **1KI.8:56a** Blessed be the Lord, that hath given rest unto His people.
46. **PSA.4:4** Stand in awe, and sin not: commune with your own heart upon your bed, and be still. Selah.
47. **PSA.37:7** Rest in the Lord, and wait patiently for Him: fret not thyself because of him who prospereth in his way, because of the man who bringeth wicked devices to pass.
48. **PSA.55:18** He hath delivered my soul in peace from the battle that was against me: for there were many with me.
49. **PSA.55:22** Cast thy burden upon the Lord, and He shall sustain thee: He shall never suffer the righteous to be moved.
50. **ECC.4:6** Better is an handful with quietness, than both the hands full with travail and vexation of spirit.
51. **ISA.30:15** For thus saith the Lord God, the Holy One of Israel; In returning and rest shall ye be saved; in quietness and in confidence shall be your strength.

52. **MAT.11:28-30** Come unto Me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of Me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For My yoke is easy, and My burden is light.

53. **HEB.4:3** For we which have believed do enter into rest, as He said, As I have sworn in My wrath, if they shall enter into My rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the World.

54. **HEB.4:9** There remaineth therefore a rest to the people of God.

55. **1PE.5:7** Casting all your care upon Him, for He careth for you.

### **109. REVOLUTION FOR JESUS**

--{page 859}--



*See, I have this day set thee over the nations and over the kingdoms, to root out, and to pull down, and to destroy, and to throw down, to build and to plant (Jer.1:10).*

1. It was our declaration of war against the Christless churches, our declarations of war against the damnable educational system, our declaration of war against the God-damned commercial system, which started this Revolution for Jesus!

2. A real revolutionary must be revolutionary enough to pretend not to be revolutionary when dealing with the System.

3. That so few now dare to be different, marks one of the chief dangers of our time.

4. People have to know not only what you're preaching, but what you're not preaching!--Not only what you're preaching for, but what you're preaching against!

5. Our revolution has been as big a break with the past as the coming of Christ and His message was a break with the legalism of the Mosaic era.

6. Our revolutionary is a total break with the traditions of man and his churches and his preconceived ideas about God and his misconceptions of morality.

7. St. Francis has a passion for peace, poverty and the poor, and it soon won his pitiful people the approval of the Pope and the permanent antipathy of the pompous. And this flower unfolded the far-flung Franciscan Fathers of the future!

8. I figure that if I shock you with the opposite extreme, it may wake you up enough to at least come halfway!

9. If you can't get in through conventional means, go in through the back door!

10. To get extreme results, you must use extreme measures!

11. I am a fanatic, an extremist, a drastic and total revolutionary and I cannot even understand people who are not!

12. God only makes major changes under very unusual circumstances when extraordinary measures are needed to accomplish extraordinary results.

13. As the preacher known for his cussing said: "Listen, Sister, the World's heard about me!--Who the hell ever heard about you?"

14. Jesus' and Moses' Revolutions were a return to God's original pattern and plan for man, as is ours.

15. In a revolution you have to go to extremes and almost exaggerate to pull the rest of the people even halfway!

16. I like to shock people, challenge them, stir them up, arouse them, awaken them out of their lethargy, cause them to explode over what I've said!--Make'm mad, sad or glad!

17. I'm a hundred-percenter, I can't stand compromisers, I can't stand half-hearted people! I can't stand selfish people, I can't stand people who claim they believe in something but don't practice it!

18. The goal of our Revolution never changes, but the methods of perpetrating it do! The purpose and goal remain the same, and that's to win hearts and souls!

19. Revolution is not a dinner party, nor a essay, nor a painting, nor a piece of embroidery; it cannot be advanced softly, gradually, carefully, considerately, respectfully, politely, plainly, and modestly.--Mao Tse-tung

20. Our wheel is the ever-revolting revolution of God's Kingdom with its basic rim of certain limitations and rules supporting the spokes (us), firmly embedded in the central Hub of God and eternally turning of the axis of His Will, geared to the power of His Spirit!

21. David is a Rescuer of the Bound! "He is fighting in a holy war to free men from fear with faith, from hatred with love, from sorrow with joy, from war with peace, from poverty with plenty and from death with Eternal Heavenly Happiness!"

22. You've got to bury the old in order to resurrect the new!

23. Ours is a revolution of youth, the young who have time to change themselves and to change things!

24. I'm a red radical--red with the blood of Jesus Christ and radical for the Truth!

25. We have arisen in a worldwide spiritual Revolution to claim the Kingdom of God in these last days.

26. David's rebels are on the way with his inflammatory incendiaries to set the World of fire!

27. A revolution has not only got to be against something, but to accomplish anything positive, it has to be for something.

28. The truly great revolutionists from Noah to Christ had to totally do away with the old and start with the new; for the old debris and the self-righteous hypocrisy of self-satisfaction always seek to smother the new flame and stamp it out, lest it expose the sins of the existing system with the brilliance of the new light.

29. There are two kinds of dropouts: Some from the wrong System--some from the right System! Which kind are you?

30. The Lord told us that this Revolution would rise like a mighty ocean and swell to a giant wave of witnessing which would sweep the World like a gigantic ocean breaker, rolling across the countries and continents of the World until it had thundered upon ever shore, sweeping all opposition in it's path and flooding the World with the Gospel as his Revolutionaries rode high on its crest, indomitable, irresistible and gaining power, strength, size, and momentum with every moment! (And it has! Hallelujah! Thank You Jesus!)

31. We are not talking about a revolution like the Communists, promising World Utopia someday! We've got it right now!

32. You'll never know the Truth until you're willing to let your false conceptions and preconceived notions be destroyed and all the chaff blown away, to let the true grain of His Word appear!

33. What are we doing spiritually in our group?--Destroying idols and exalting the Lord alone!--We're sick of the damnable churchianity and idolatry! The Lord said we were idol smashers!

34. When Jesus preached repentance, He was literally preaching spiritual revolution, which is why they killed Him.

35. We are not just thinking about revolution! We have a revolution and we are a revolution and we are already living a revolution! We are the Revolution of God!

36. We are not physically violent!--We are talking about a spiritually violent Revolution, that absolutely rends your heart right out completely and gives you a new Spirit, the Holy Ghost of God!--Violent spiritual Revolution! That's the kind of Revolution we've got!

37. That which resist change is no longer part of the Revolution, but has become an old bottle, a part of an old System! But a Revolution keeps moving and changing and revolving and revolting! To revolve you have to go clear to this side, then to that side, and from one extreme to the other, but you never get any further from the Centre, Jesus, no matter how much you revolve or how far or fast or slow you go!

38. Ours is a war of the Spirit in faith and love to win the minds and hearts and spirits and save the souls as well as the bodies of men! Ours is a war to free men from the evils of the spirit and mind and heart of man which cause them to be selfish and unloving and vicious and cruel and unkind to each other, man's inhumanity to man because of his lack of understanding of how to be happy, because of his lack of the knowledge of the love and faith and power of God and loving laws of God designed for our eternal happiness!

39. The radical teachings and tactics of us Christian revolutionaries are from our Revolutionary Handbook, the Bible, and the greatest of all Revolutionaries, Jesus Christ, and His 12 bearded militants!

40. The whole Revolution is in vain if we're not getting the Message out to others.

41. It is impossible to reform the old, for they will not accept it.
42. The dead and rotten crumbling timbers of the old must be totally swept away and destroyed in the fires of His purification. Too many have tried too many years to patch up the old.
43. We have declared war of the Spirit on the System's Godless schools, Christless churches and heartless Mammon! We hope to stop the pollution and destruction of the Earth by the World's worst rebels of all time--the generation that produced us--our parents--who taught us rebellion against God and His laws!--We long to return to the Truth, Love, Peace and Beauty of our ancients and the simple life of true happiness in God and love for fellow man!
44. All the prophets of God, from the beginning until now, including Jesus Himself, were always revolutionaries of the Spirit and preached first, last and always to their dying system: Repent! Revolute! Turn around and go the other direction! Have a revolution or die!
45. We don't want reform or reformation! We're not trying to revamp the existing system. We want to see a complete and total absolute change of systems, from man's systems to God's system!--The Kingdom of God on Earth, a total and complete and absolute Revolution of the Spirit which will change the hearts of men!
46. All other revolutions have died or will die; this is the only genuine Revolution and the only one that will survive, because this is the revolutionary Kingdom of God and Jesus Christ!
47. We are more revolutionary than the Communists because they haven't changed one damned heart!
48. You, the Children of God, are God's Revolution for this hour and day!
49. The job of a revolutionary is to shock people out of their lethargy! You almost have to go to the extreme in order to pull the rest of them halfway!
50. I don't know of any other outfit in the World that is really religiously revolutionary!
51. We have the revolution that changes and grips men' hearts so they can't get away, and turns them completely around and changes their direction!
52. God has a lot of new methods for today, a lot of things that would have even shocked the Early Christians. God is today a lot more modern than most people give Him credit for. God is not a traditionalist, He doesn't have to stick to the past. The only thing He cares about is the present and the future--the past is gone and already forgotten.
53. We, like the Early Christians, might have been brought under bondage to old church tradition by the churches and the church people if we had not been so radically revolutionary and revolutionarily radical that the church people just totally rejected us and our doctrine and condemned us and ostracised us and rejected us and refused to believe us.
54. The Lord has made the division so great, the gulf so wide and the gap so big that no man can bridge it. We're so totally revolutionary and radical compared to the churches that it's impossible for us to conform or for them to accept us. This has kept us separate and pure and holy unto the Lord just like the Early Christians with their radical abandonment of Moses and the law.
55. God loves our attitude toward sex and nudity because that's His attitude. He's pleased and thrilled with our use of them in love to win souls. At last somebody is making good use of all that wonderful sex and nudity He made and using it for the best possible purpose, to win souls in FFing.--Something the church people cannot accept and which, thank God, keeps us totally separate and distinct from the defunct churches and far more acceptable to the sinners and the World we're trying to win.
56. Thank God we're not encumbered with the church or the church Christians. We don't have to worry about pleasing them. We can never please them. We're entirely too radical, fanatical, revolutionary, sexy and untraditional. We violate all their favorite morals and taboos and contradict all their pet doctrines except Salvation.
57. We don't want to be accepted by the church people. We want to be accepted by the sinners and lost souls who need our salvation and our love and our girls and their joy and happiness and even our sex. That's what the World needs today.
58. We just don't fit churchianity and we never will! God called us for a different purpose, ministry, message and method to reach a different people and we've done it outside of the churches and without their help and even against their opposition as Jesus did against the church of His day.
59. Because of the failure of the churches, God had to raise us up--a new church, a new young, beautiful, sexy, fanatical, radical, revolutionary Bride that would do the job they didn't do.
60. Even the life of Christ and the Book of Acts is Ancient History. We're living our Book of Acts today! We're living in a sense the life of Christ today! And we're far more interested in what we're doing now and what we're going to be doing in the Future than all this stuff that's past, that there's nothing you can do about now except learn some bitter lessons from it.

61. Our revolution has been almost as big a break with the past as the coming of Christ and His message was with the legalism of the past of the Mosaic era. It's been like a whole new dispensation of grace.

62. Revolutions are not for timid souls or the fearful or the unbelieving; they're strictly for courageous folks like you who are willing to risk your lives for the Lord's work every day!

63. Rasputin was cursed and damned and vilified, but he was actually leading a spiritual revolution in Russia and there were thousands of people who believed in him. He had a mighty power of the Spirit of God and he really preached the truth! He led a spiritual revolution in the last days of the monarchy and that was their last chance. They rejected it and killed him and they got the Russian Communist Revolution!

64. Our greatest resource and wealth is manpower, womanpower and kid-power in our Worldwide revolution for Jesus!

65. It has been the intellectual intelligentsia of the upper-middle class that has led nearly every revolution, because they had the brains and education and knowledge and the language--and the money in some cases, to do it.

66. God's Acts 2:44-45 and 4:31-35, has never changed, and neither have our basic revolutionary rules or God's basic loving principles of sharing with those in need.

67. The thing that really started the Jesus Revolution was an all-out declaration of war against the System and the churches! It was a call to arms: "Come, fight and die with us for the truth and the Lord!"

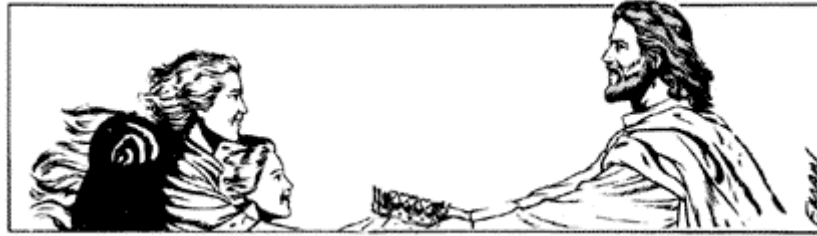
68. Every time God wants to raise up a new people, a new generation, new bottles to do what He really wants'm to do, He has to first give the old bottles a chance and sock it to'm and break'm up in pieces so that the new bottles can take their place.

69. There's hardly anything we do or can say or print or picture which won't offend the System, because we are just not System! We are real revolutionaries and we are opposed to nearly everything the System stands for because the System stands for the Devil, who is pretty much behind it and pretty much has designed it.

70. We're a revolution, we keep changing! If there's any way we can improve, we keep doin' it! I'm going to ask you daily from now on: "What did you improve today? What have you done today that you won't have to do again tomorrow?"

(See also No. E, I, L, S, 6, 60, 65, 69, 97, 118, 148, 232, 255, 272, 286, 321, 333, 1336, 1592, 1598, *BOR II.*)

## 110. REWARDS--{page 866}--



*He shall reward every man according to his works (Mat.16:27).*

1. Your labour of love is not wasted--not one tear you've shed, not one smile you've shared, not one kiss you've given--God's going to give you credit for every bit of it!
2. You get salvation as a free gift by His mercy & grace & love, but it's your service & good works for Him that He especially commends!
3. If you don't get the credit here, you'll get the credit there.
4. You give everything you've got, but you're going to find out that that was a pretty cheap price to pay for the reward you're going to get!
5. God does not always pay His servants in Earth's currency.
6. We give everything, but what we get in return is worth more than everything we can possibly give.
7. Those who don't know what the Truth is, will be judged accordingly. If they're trying to do the right thing & are good sweet people, it shall be accounted unto them for righteousness!
8. He never takes one thing away from you without giving you something better.
9. The greatest crowns will go to those who are faithful, loyal & obedient each step of the way.
10. Everybody's going to get what they deserve--whether contempt or reward!
11. The front-line soldiers are the guys that are really face-to-face with the Enemy! They're the infantry, they're in the front-line trenches, & God is probably going to give them the biggest reward & the biggest crown!
12. If your motive is right & your intentions are pure, God will bless you for giving, & honor & prosper you for it.
13. For they that bear the cross shall wear the crown, & God shall be their reward!
14. Although now you may be hidden & your ministry in secret, someday the Lord is going to reward you openly & crown you before all!
15. Victory without spoils is a very empty victory.
16. The crown is not your salvation! The crown is your reward, given only to winners!
17. Salvation is a gift, but healing, finances & other extra blessings are special rewards which must be earned by diligent obedience, faith, service & hard work!
18. Both I & the Lord believe in special rewards for those who really do a good job with their talents, & neither of us believe in supporting the lousy loafers who bury theirs!
19. God's financial & material rewards are tops in every field, whether it be finances or material things or protection or spiritual gifts of souls or sex or what have you!--100-fold!
20. I believe every one will get the kind of reward that he really appreciates & desires.
21. Live for self, you live in vain.  
Live for Christ, you live again.  
Live for Him, with Him you reign.
22. With big jobs & big responsibilities come big rewards & big benefits.
23. You can't give without getting; you can't reward without receiving in return.
24. If you won't plow in the cold, you won't eat at the harvest.
25. There are no crown-wearers in Heaven who were not cross-bearers here.
26. To receive a reward is good, to deserve it is much better.
27. The greater the sacrifice, the greater the reward!
28. Those who live it up may also have to live it down.

29. Your own soul is nourished when you are kind; it is destroyed when you are cruel.

30. Do your best & you will receive a star-studded crown, studded with stars of the souls that you won for Jesus!

31. What we're accomplishing is going to last forever!--And what we're not accomplishing is also going to last forever & will be forever to our shame & to our contempt for our failures!

32. You can't count God's "hundredfold" all in dollars & cents.

33. When a man dies, they who survive him ask what property he has left behind. The angel who bends over the dying man asks what good deeds he has sent before him.

34. Jesus promised even 100-fold if you give all! Think of it!--100-fold! It may not all be in dollars & cents, it may be in protection, maybe saving you from accidents & sicknesses that would have cost you a hundred times more!

35. God seems to give everybody some light, & God is going to judge you according to how you follow the light he gives you.

36. God's society is very class-conscious! Some shall shine as the stars forever, & some shall be raised to everlasting shame & contempt!

37. We can't count all His blessings in dollars & cents, because most of it is His wonderful glorious faithful blessings of spiritual salvation & inspiration & His love & the love of others & good health & wealth of witnessing & souls for His Kingdom!

38. You'll get eternal dividends from investment in God's work that you will never lose but keep forever.

39. For greater rewards, you have to keep making greater sacrifices.

40. God will judge you by your words! They are your message, your communication, the expression of your thoughts & convictions & will either save you or damn you, one or the other!

41. If you give God the glory, He'll give you the credit.

(See also No. 31, 75, 551, 612, 727, 928, 959, 962, 974, 991, 997, 1028, 1372, 1374, 1441, 1460, 1465, 1499, 1515.)

42. .2:12 The Lord recompense thy work, and a full reward be given thee of the Lord God of Israel, under Whose wings thou art come to trust.

43. **SA.30:24 For who will hearken unto you in this matter? but as His part is that goeth down to the battle, so shall his part be that tarrieth by the stuff: they shall part alike.**

44. **SA.22:25-28 Therefore the Lord hath recompensed me according to my righteousness; according to my cleanness in His eye sight. With the merciful Thou wilt shew Thyself merciful, and with the upright man Thou wilt shew Thyself upright. With the pure Thou wilt shew Thyself pure; and with the froward Thou wilt shew Thyself unsavory. And the afflicted people Thou wilt save: but Thine eyes are upon the haughty, that Thou mayest bring them down.**

45. **CH.15:7 Be ye strong therefore, and let not your hands be weak: for your work shall be rewarded.**

46. **.19:11 Moreover by them is thy servant warned: and in keeping of them there is great reward.**

47. **.58:11a So that a man shall say, Verily there is a reward for the righteous.**

48. **.103:10 He hath not dealt with us after our sins; nor rewarded us according to our iniquities.**

49. **.15:6a In the house of the righteous is much treasure.**

50. **.32:19 Great in counsel, and mighty in work: for Thine eyes are open upon all the ways of the sons of men: to give every one according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings.**

51. **.12:2,3 And many of them that sleep in the dust of the Earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt. And they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever.**

52. **.5:12 Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in Heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.**

53. **.6:20,21 But lay up for yourselves treasures in Heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.**

54. **.10:41,42 He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet shall receive a prophet's reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man shall receive a righteous man's reward. And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones a cup of cold water only in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.**

55. .13:12 For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath.

56. .16:27 For the Son of man shall come in the glory of His Father with His angels; and then He shall reward every man according to his works.

57. .25:21 His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

58. .9:41 For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in My Name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward.

59. .12:37 Blessed are those servants, whom the Lord when He cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you, that He shall gird Himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them.

60. .12:47,48 And that servant, which knew his Lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to His will, shall be beaten with many stripes. But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

61. .16:25 But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

62. .18:29,30 And He said unto them, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children, for the Kingdom of God's sake, Who shall not receive manifold more in this present time, and in the World to come life everlasting.

63. CO.2:9 But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God has prepared for them that love Him.

64. CO.3:8 Now he that planteth and he that watereth are one: and every man shall receive his own reward according to his own labour.

65. CO.3:11-15 For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ. Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble; Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is. If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire.

66. .6:7b For whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap.

67. .6:8 Knowing that whatsoever good thing any man doeth, the same shall he receive of the Lord, whether he be bond or free.

68. TL.4:7,8 I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith: Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love His appearing.

69. .6:10 For God is not unrighteous to forget your work and labour of love, which ye have shewed toward His Name, in that ye have ministered to the saints, and do minister.

70. .10:34 For ye had compassion of me in my bonds, and took joyfully the spoiling of your goods, knowing in yourselves that ye have in Heaven a better and an enduring substance.

71. PE.5:4 And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.

72. .2:7 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God.

73. .2:10b Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life.

74. .2:17 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it.

75. .2:23b And all the churches shall know that I am He which searcheth the reigns and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works.

76. .2:26 And he that overcometh, and keepeth My works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations.

77. .3:5 He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the Book of Life, but I will confess his name before My Father, and before His angels.

78. .3:11,12 Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown. Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of My God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write



upon him the name of My God, and the name of the city of My God, which is New Jerusalem, which cometh down out of Heaven from My God: and I will write upon him My new name.

79. .3:21 To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with Me in My throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with My Father in His throne.

80. .11:18 And the nations were angry, and Thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that Thou shouldest give reward unto Thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear Thy Name, small and great; and shouldest destroy them which destroy the Earth.

81. .20:4 And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the Word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.

82. .22:12 And, behold, I come quickly; and My reward is with Me, to give every man according as his work shall be.

### 111. RIGHTEOUSNESS/SELF-RIGHTEOUSNESS

--{page 873}--



*I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance (Mt.9:13).*

1. You can never be too bad for Jesus, only too good!
2. You haven't got anybody's righteousness except Christ's, and He's the only one that can give it to you!
3. The greatest saints were the greatest sinners, who knew it and therefore depended totally on God.
4. God's idea of goodness is Godliness--a sinner who knows he needs God and depends on Him for Salvation!
5. Self-effort is sin! It's a mistake! It is even abusing your body! You need to let go and let God! All you have to do is just let the Lord through! Just let the oil flow! Let the water flow! Let the Lord flow! Let the Lord do it!
6. The most raging religious controversy the world has ever known has always been between the do-it-yourself religions and the God-alone-can-save-you kind.
7. The greatest of all sins is self-righteousness.
8. If you don't have His goodness you have no goodness.
9. If you hide behind a hypocrite, you're smaller than he is!
10. God's idea of saintliness is not sinless perfection or self-righteousness, it's utter dependence on Him.
11. God's way up is down!--Down to defeat of self and self-righteousness.--Up to the victory of the cross and death to self for others!
12. All the false religions are dependent upon self-righteousness and their own way!
13. May God deliver us from the worst of all sins!: Man's own religious hypocritical self-righteousness and evil knowledge and greed for power through every form of cruelty, including war!

14. If you are trusting in your own righteousness, your own perfection, it almost becomes impossible to confess you mistakes and shortcomings, because it destroys your self-confidence and nearly shatters your self-reliance, because it proves you are not perfect, which you hate to even admit to yourself!

15. What is righteousness? It is being right!--Full of rightness!--Full of the Lord, for only He is all right!

16. Self-righteous perfectionists are the hardest people in the World to live with.

17. To put your righteousness above the righteousness of God is the ultimate sin! To put your will above the will of God is the ultimate idolatry!

18. The ones who don't have the fire like to squelch and quench the people that do, to excuse themselves for not having it!

19. If you're lifted up in pride and glad you're not like the sinner, then you're even worse! You're self-righteous and hypocritical!

20. The Lord doesn't hold you as responsible for even your deeds as He does for you unbelief.

21. When you feel so righteous and good, it's because you are self-righteous and not closer to God, but closer to yourself.

22. Man's greatest temptation is to produce good works to obtain righteousness, to try instead of trust.

23. Let not the pot call the kettle black.

24. The Lord love the honest sinner better than the hypocritical self-righteous person.

25. The only saints are sinners saved by grace!

26. Forget about trying to be perfect--you never will be!--Only God is good!

27. It is possible for you to be too big for God to use, but never too small for God to use.

28. When you're accusing others of all they didn't do

Their glaring lack reflects right back,

And the spotlight points at you!

29. Our new life is only by Grace, never by works or confession sessions or battling in the flesh with our sins.

30. Let's forget about trying to be perfect--'cause we never will be! Let's follow the Lord and do the best He can!

31. He who would cleanse a blot with blotted fingers makes a greater blur.

32. Self-righteousness is the greatest of all sins, because it's pride, the downfall of the Devil!

33. If we were so righteous and didn't have any weaknesses, we couldn't help others much. We couldn't be sympathetic or compassionate if we were so self-righteous and perfect. We couldn't even understand others.

34. Watch out about having a critical condescending attitude towards homosexuals and epileptics and other handicapped people! You yourself may be guilty of things worse, like jealousy and the sins of the spirit! That holier-than-thou self-righteous attitude is in itself a much worse sin than the pitiful human afflictions of the flesh and physically afflicted and tormented.

35. David was far more righteous after he became a great sinner than he was when he was so haughty and self-righteous.

36. Self-righteousness is a works trip.

37. The greatest men in the Bible were guys that made terrible mistakes and realized they were sinners, that they needed God.

38. The smallest package in all the World is a man wrapped up in himself.

39. The World's idea of righteousness is self-righteous perfection. God's idea of righteousness is the pitiful, hopeless, lost, humble, loving sinful sinner who knows he needs God!

40. Jesus said, "You need to go back and learn what God meant when He said, I will have mercy and not sacrifice."(Mt.9:13; 12:7) In other word, I would rather see you have love than this sacrificial, law-keeping offering of sacrifices and duties. I'd rather you'd give love to somebody than just to be so self-righteous.

41. Since Man's number is six, I think it's particularly significant that the number for the Devil's Antichrist is 666, three sixes! Now that's very significant because it's the ultimate that Man can do, and it's also symbolic of the trinity of Satan.

42. Six is almost seven but no quite. Six is almost perfect, it's almost seven, but it's not, and that's the whole thing, the whole deal, man trying to prove he's perfect.--Man trying to prove he can run the World without number seven.--Man trying to prove that he has it all and doesn't heed God and he can do it himself. The ultimate in self-righteousness is man trying to save himself, and making a final, horrible mess of the whole thing!--Proving that man cannot do without God and number six is nothing without seven!

(See also No. A, 35, 45, 117, 117A, 159, 258, 266, 286, 312, 524, 525, 531, 605, 635, 647, 648, 720, 784, 845, 919, 1017, 1371.)

43. .15:6 He believed in the Lord; and He counted it to him for righteousness.
44. .9:2b How should man be just with God?
45. .9:20 If I justify myself, mine own mouth shall condemn me: if I say, I am perfect, it shall prove me perverse.
46. .13:16b An hypocrite shall not come before Him.
47. .15:14-16 What is man that he should be clean? and he which is born of a woman, that he should be righteous? Behold, he putteth no trust in His saints; yea, the heavens are not clean in His sight. How much more abominable and filthy is man, which drinketh iniquity like water?
48. .4:5 Offer the sacrifices of righteousness, and put your trust in the Lord.
49. .130:3 If Thou, Lord, shouldest mark iniquities, O Lord, who shall stand?
50. .20:6 Most men will proclaim every one his own goodness: but a faithful man who can find?
51. .20:9 Who can say, I have made my heart clean, I am pure from my sin?
52. .21:2 Every way of a man is right in his own eyes: but the Lord pondereth the hearts.
53. .21:21 He that followeth after righteousness and mercy findeth life, righteousness, and honour.
54. .30:12 There is a generation that are pure in their own eyes, and yet is not washed from their filthiness.
55. .64:6 But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousness are as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away.
56. .17:9 The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it?
57. .5:20 For, I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the Kingdom of Heaven.
58. .19:17a And He said unto them, Why callest thou Me good? There is none good but one, that is, God.
59. .20:46,47 Beware of the scribes, which desire to walk in long robes, and love greetings in the markets, and the highest seats in the synagogues, and the chief rooms at feasts; Which devour widows' houses, and for a shew make long prayers: the same shall receive greater damnation.
60. .8:7 So when they continued asking Him, He lifted up Himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her.
61. .9:41 Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now you say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth.
62. .15:22 If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloke for their sin.
63. .3:10 As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one.
64. **CO.7:19** Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing, but the keeping of the commandments of God.
65. .3:6 Even as Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness.
66. .3:9 Not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith.
67. .3:5 Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to His mercy He saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost.

(See also MAT.23:2-33; LUK.11:39,42,44,52; LUK.13:13-17; ROM.2:1,3,17-29.)



*As the bird by wandering, as the swallow by flying, so the curse causeless shall not come (Pro.26:2).*

1. Nothing happens to God's children but by His will and with His permission!
2. Accidents don't just happen!--They are caused!--By our own neglect and carelessness, or that of others!  
The best way to prevent them is to make it impossible for them to occur!
3. A fence at the top of the cliff is better than a hospital at the bottom!
4. Sorry doesn't fix it!
5. Make it impossible for accidents to happen, by being so careful and so safe and so secure they're impossible.
6. For a Christian, the curse causeless just doesn't come!
7. God always checks us about things before He lets them happen or before an accident occurs!
8. Accidents are usually caused through carelessness, lack of watchfulness, lack of caution or lack of safety.
9. The way to avoid accidents is to avoid the conditions that cause them.
10. The way to avoid accidents is to make it impossible for them to happen.
11. One of the main preventatives of accidents is: Don't take chances!
12. Lots of things can happen that are totally beyond your control, but not the Lord's.
13. Prevent trouble before it happens.
14. Nothing happens by accident! God has a purpose in everything.
15. Safety is God's guarantee--but we must cooperate, you see.
16. The best way to avoid or prevent accidents is to pray without ceasing.

(See also No. 213, 353, 386, 737, 807, 812, 882, 1040, 1142, 1312, 1313, 1563, *HH5*.)



*For God so loved the World, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life (Jn.3:16).*

1. Everybody needs salvation!--and they need it just as soon as they can get it.
2. Souls are forever!--Saved souls, saved by your Gospel and saved by your loving message of the Love of God and the Salvation of His Son Jesus Christ.
3. They can't abort God's babies, His spiritual babies! Once that seed's sown and taken root and God has ordained it, it's going to bring forth fruit, souls for His Kingdom, new babies for the Lord!
4. In this whole World there's not a more thrilling sight than a saved soul!
5. There is no such thing as equality, except spiritually in salvation.
6. It's more important to save the living than the dead.
7. Even if the child is at the age when he can barely understand the words, he can receive Jesus!
8. When you ask people, "How many of you want to receive Jesus into your heart?", even if they only raise their hands, I believe He comes in right then!
9. This is the end result and greatest goal of soul-wooing, a newborn babe in the Family of God.
10. These are the gifts the Lord is most pleased with: The lives and hearts of men!
11. Jesus alone can save you, but He cannot save you alone.--If you're really saved you're going to take others with you.
12. You can't work for your own salvation, but you can work for the salvation of others!
13. Even the devils believe and tremble--but it doesn't save them, they don't repent!
14. We must work to save all of man, not merely his body and environment! We must work to save him for eternity, not just for this present time!
15. Some are only professors not possessors, believers but not receivers!
16. The salvation of man must be for all if it is for any, and must include everyone if all are to be happy.
17. My name is graven on His hands  
My name is written on His heart;  
I know that while in Heaven He stands  
No tongue can bid me thence depart.
18. I'd rather scare people into Heaven, than love them into Hell.
19. The Kingdom of God is not just at hand anymore, it has arrived!--And we are it!
20. When we become Christians, we are immediately given full status of citizenship with the Saints.
21. The main thing you need to know is just two verses: John 3:16 and Acts 1:8. The first one gets you saved and the other one gets you busy.
22. Lives again our glorious King;  
Where, O Death, is now thy sting?  
Dying once, He all doth save;  
Where thy victory, O Grave?
23. A Christian is not perfect; he is FORGIVEN.
24. Once a nail is bent it'll never be exactly straight again--like some people! Only the Lord can straighten'm out by remaking them!
25. We're God's straights--the straightest people on Earth! We're not crooked because Jesus has made us straight and good and right!

26. I was so wicked, He had no sin.  
 I was so helpless, He took me in.  
 When I was blind, He gave me sight.  
 I was in darkness, He brought the Light.  
 27. A black hole can become a shining star through receiving Jesus!  
 28. I asked for mercy, He gave me grace.  
 I asked forgiveness, He took my place.  
 I was a stranger, He welcomed me.  
 When I was fettered, He set me free.  
 29. I'm sure the Lord is taking care of His children even before they ever find Him, before they're born.  
 They're still in the womb, in a sense, and they haven't been re-born yet in the spirit, but they're His children just the same and He takes care of them.  
 30. If you're not saved forever, you're not saved!  
 31. Every person is on God's most-wanted list.  
 32. God doesn't create saints out of thin air, He creates them out of flesh-and-blood and Salvation.  
 33. Salvation sets us as free as Adam and Eve in the Garden before they ever sinned!  
 34. I believe in Eternal Universal Reconciliation of man, because Jesus said he died that all might be saved,  
 that the whole World might be saved and I believe that's going to happen someday!  
 35. A works salvation is no salvation at all.  
 36. The Lamb is in the fold in perfect safety penned;  
 The Lion once had hold and thought to make an end;  
 But One came by with wounded side,  
 And for the sheep the Shepherd died.  
 37. Vain the stone, the watch the seal!  
 Christ has burst the gates of Hell;  
 Death in vain forbids His rise;  
 For Christ has opened paradise.  
 38. Jesus had to die in order that we might live.  
 39. You can know Jesus because He's human enough that you can understand, and His love is the manifestation of the love of God.  
 40. Everybody who believes in Jesus is a saint! You may not be a perfect saint or a sinless saint, but you're made holy by His blood!  
 41. The Gospel is the best product on Earth!--Made in Heaven and guaranteed forever!--And free! How could you pass up a product and a deal like that?  
 42. Nothing in my hand I bring  
 Simply to Thy cross I cling;  
 Naked, come to Thee for dress;  
 Helpless, look to Thee for grace.  
 43. Your good works can't save you and your bad works can't damn you!  
 44. There was no other good enough  
 To pay the price of sin.  
 He only could unlock the gate  
 Of Heaven and let us in!  
 45. Only faith in Jesus can save you, and only rejection of Jesus can damn you!  
 46. Was ever love so strong?  
 Was ever crime so wrong?  
 When Jesus suffered long, For all my sin.  
 He saw my greatest need,  
 Became my friend indeed  
 Through Him I have been freed, From all my sin.  
 47. If you don't want to believe the truth, God will let you have a lie. If you turn down the lifesaver, He'll toss you a sinker!  
 48. O Holy child of Bethlehem  
 Descend to us we pray;  
 Cast out our sins, and enter in  
 Be born in us today!

49. Heaven is full of sinners!--Saved by grace though faith! Hell is full of the self-righteous religionists!--  
Damned by unbelief in Christ!

50. Jesus was cursed and hung on a tree,  
He was made like the sin He took from me!

51. If you're born twice, you'll only die once!--But if you're only born once you'll die twice!

52. True salvation is just pure faith, it's just believing, and if you get any feeling, it's a result of believing.

53. If you don't believe in Jesus suffering for your sins, then you have to suffer for your own sins.

54. Jesus gives you peace of mind, purity of heart, rest of soul and happiness of spirit now and forever!--

Try Him! You'll love Him!

55. The only requirement for membership in the Family of God is salvation.

56. Salvation is grace plus faith plus nothing!--A pure gift!

57. You cannot save the World by destroying evil men, because all men are evil, including you! We can  
only save the World by letting God destroy the evil in our own hearts.

58. Jesus had to die for all so some could be saved!

59. Salvation from sin brings freedom and openness, with no longer any need to hide!

60. Salvation is so costly that none of us could afford to pay for it! Jesus alone could buy it for us with the  
price of His Own life.

61. There's a big difference between knowing about Jesus and knowing Jesus!

62. God doesn't save those who think they can save themselves, but only those sinners who know they  
can't!

63. The Devil can't get you back once you're saved-- you're the Lord's forever!

64. The Lord has to break the chains. You can't deliver yourself. He has to purge and purify and cleanse.

65. Don't try to figure Him out.--Just let Him in!

66. Salvation is a gift of God performed by a miraculous transformation of your life when you accept His  
truth in the love of His Son Jesus by the work of God's Spirit.

67. All you have to do is receive Him, and His Spirit in you will then cause you to do the humanly  
impossible: Love God and man!

68. The only salvation is in Christ, the only peace is in the Prince of Peace, and the only truth in the Word  
of God!

69. Jesus saves, and He can save the impossible.

70. Jesus is the whole Christ for the whole man--body, soul and spirit! He meets every need, physical and  
spiritual.

71. People commit spiritual suicide every time they reject Jesus Christ as their Messiah!

72. The Charmer is Jesus! Only He can break the Serpent's power in your life and woo you into His rest!  
Only He can play the music of love and forgiveness that will bring peace to your mind and heart.

73. If God can't love you into Heaven, He'll try to scare you out of Hell!

74. God has created a vacuum within you that can only be filled with His Love!

75. God is not so angry at the sinner for breaking the rules, since He knows the sinner is a sinner and can't  
keep the rules, but for rejecting the free gift of God's love and salvation.

76. Although the body is of this Earth and satisfied with the things of this Earth, the human spirit, the real  
you that dwells in that body, can never be completely satisfied with anything but utter union with the great and  
loving Spirit that created it.

77. Once you believe, God proves Himself in many ways, by answers to prayer and miracles, even the  
changes in yours and others lives.

78. You can put God in a test-tube and prove He exists, and you're the tube, Boob! Put God in you and see  
what happens!

79. You've got to be saved to believe the Book of Genesis, but you're not going to get saved reading it. John  
is the Gospel of salvation!

80. If you want to be happy for two hours, get drunk! If you want to be happy for two weeks, get married!  
But if you want to be happy forever, get saved!

81. God is both a God of love and a God of justice! When people refuse His love, they get His justice, and  
with His justice comes judgment.

82. We don't preach the fatherhood of God and the brotherhood of Man, because not all men are of the  
Father God--He's only the Father of those who love Him and receive His Son Jesus!

83. It is not until you recognize you're a sinner that you're desperate enough to seek salvation.

84. You can get personal with Jesus because He's even told you to ask Him into your heart!

85. Fall in love with Jesus and marry Him forever!
86. Jesus' death brings life, forgiveness and eternal joy to those who love Him in return.
87. The worst person can go to Heaven by faith, and the best person can go to Hell because of unbelief!
88. Communism cannot meet even these most basic of all human needs, these desires for the life, love, liberty and happiness which God alone can give!
89. Marx is dead, Lenin is dead, Stalin is dead, and Khrushchev is dead, and you will be dead if you don't find God! Jesus is The Only One who ever rose from the dead and can give you power to do the same! Communism may satisfy your body but it will never satisfy your soul!
90. The life is not in the sower, but in the seed. Even if an infidel scattered the Scriptures, he would only be exploding his own battlements.
91. Receiving Jesus into your life not only renews, purifies and regenerates your own spirit, but also your mind, literally breaking the old connections and gradually rebuilding it into a whole new system with an utterly different outlook and reactions.
92. Why should you be lone and blue  
When Jesus' love you can have too?  
Don't think it out--just let Him in  
For you new life He will begin.
93. Salvation is simple! All you have to do is receive Jesus, God's Son, as your Savior By asking Him into your Heart!
94. If the Lord had wanted robots, He could have made everybody love Him, but He made people with free choice and free will to choose to love Him.
95. Only the soul-cleansing blood of the Lamb can cleanse and purify your spiritual bloodstream from the venom of the Devil and his sin and save you from spiritual paralysis and even death.
96. That's the way Jesus does with you: He takes you dirty as you are with sin, and He washes you with His blood and the water of His Word. He washes away your sins with His blood and your evil thoughts with His Word, and He gets you all nice and clean and sets you aside for His use.
97. You can only plead for the blood of Jesus to cover you for your protection and to cleanse you from your sins and the Devil's lies and poisonous influence.

(See also No. T, 45, 46, 86, 172, 306, 314, 337b, 344, 345, 370, 385, 399, 510, 524-527, 551, 566, 584, 635, 686, 708, 714, 731, 743, 781, 993, 1058, 1203, 1328, 1390, 1476.)

98. .74:12 For God is my King of old, working Salvation in the midst of the Earth.
99. .102:19,20 For He hath looked down from the height of His sanctuary; from Heaven did the Lord behold the Earth; To hear the groaning of the prisoner; to loose those that are appointed to death.
100. .5:6 Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled.
101. .2:17 Jesus...saith unto them, They that are whole have no need of a physician, but they that are sick: I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.
102. **LUK.15:7 I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in Heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.**
103. **.1:12 But as many as received Him, to them gave He power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on His Name.**
104. **.3:3-8 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the Kingdom of God. Nicodemus saith unto Him, How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter the second time into his mothers womb, and be born? Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the Kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again. The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth; so is every one that is born of the Spirit.**
105. **.3:16,17 For God so loved the World, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not His Son into the World to condemn the World; but that the World through Him might be saved.**
106. **.3:36 He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.**



107. .4:14 But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life.

108. .5:24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth My Word, and believeth On Him that sent Me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life.

109. .6:37 All that the Father giveth Me shall come to Me; and him that cometh to Me I will in no wise cast out.

110. .6:48-50 I am that Bread of Life. Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead. This is the bread which cometh down from Heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die.

111. .10:28,29 And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of My hand. My Father, which gave them Me is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand.

112. .14:6 Jesus saith unto him, I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me.

113. .17:2,3 As Thou hast given Him power over all flesh, that He should give eternal life to as many as Thou has given Him. And this is life eternal, that they might know Thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom Thou hast sent.

114. .2:21 Whosoever shall call on the Name of the Lord shall be saved.

115. .4:12 Neither is there Salvation in any other: for there is none other name under Heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.

116. ACT.10:35 In every nation he that feareth Him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with Him.

117. .16:31 Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.

118. .3:23 For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God.

119. .5:8,9 God commendeth His love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. Much more then, being now justified by His blood, we shall be saved from wrath through Him.

120. .5:18,20b Therefore as by the offense of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life. But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound.

121. .6:23 The wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

122. .10:9,10 If thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised Him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto Salvation.

123. .10:13 Whosoever shall call upon the Name of the Lord shall be saved.

124. .11:6 And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace; otherwise work is no more work.

125. .11:29 For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance.

126. ICO.15:22 As in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.

127. CO.5:17 Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.

128. CO.5:21 For He hath made Him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in Him.

129. CO.7:10 For godly sorrow worketh repentance to Salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the World worketh death.

130. .6:15 For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature.

131. .2:8,9 For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast.

132. TI.2:4,5 Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth. For there is one God and one Mediator between God and men, the Man Christ Jesus.

133. .2:11 For the grace of God that bringeth Salvation hath appeared to all men.

134. .7:25 Wherefore He is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by Him, seeing He ever liveth to make intercession for them.

135. .10:10 By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

136. PE.1:2a Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ.

137. PE.1:18,19 Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers; But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot.

138. PE.1:23,25a Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the Word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever. The Word of the Lord endureth for ever.

139. PE.2:24 Who His Own Self bare our sins in His Own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by Whose stripes ye were healed.

140. PE.3:9 The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some men count slackness; but is long-suffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

141. JO.2:25 And this is the promise that He hath promised us, even eternal life.

142. JO.5:5,6a Who is he that overcometh the World, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God? This is He that came by water and blood, even Jesus Christ; not by water only, but by water and blood.

143. JO.5:11-13 And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternal life, and this life is in His Son. He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life. These things have I written unto you that believe on the Name of the Son of God; that ye may have eternal life, and that ye may believe on the Name of the Son of God.

144. .3:20 Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear My voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with Me.

145. .21:5b Behold, I make all things new.

114. SAMPLE --{page 891}--



*Be thou an example of the believers, in word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity (1Tim.4:12).*

1. You only remember 40 percent of what you hear, but 80 percent of what you see.
2. Be what you would make others.
3. So live that you wouldn't be ashamed to sell the family parrot to the town gossip.
4. We are the only pure Communist in the World! We are practicing what they are preaching.
5. The Communists say, "What's yours is mine and I'm going to take it away from you by force!" We say, "What's ours is yours and I want to share it with you!"
6. I would rather men should ask why no statue has been erected in my honour, than why one has.
7. The World has much higher standards for a Christian than most Christians do for themselves.
8. Let them see your love, joy and peace, a light in dark places, to lighten their load and enlighten their way.
9. Be a good sample and they will get the point that you have something happy that they haven't, and it's JESUS!
10. You believe in prayer as much as you pray, you believe in the Bible as much as you read it, and you believe the Letters as much as you practice them!
11. The compassionate are those who put feet to their kind words and try to do good as well as speak good.
12. Kind words may never die, but they look pretty sick without kind deeds!

13. Don't lower the standard, but bring yourself up to the standard!
14. What I see you do speaks louder than what I hear you say!
15. We are the Endtime Church, the last ones, and God is trying to show through us what Christians could and should have been like.
16. Jesus' main message was His sample of Love!
17. An ounce of example is worth a pound of advice.
18. Neighbours have to be won not only by words, but most of all by deeds, actions, kindness and consideration.
19. There is nothing wrong with Christianity--it's just that so few have ever tried it!
20. Don't always preach your sermons to the other guy, preach them to yourself first and live'm, and then you can offer'm to the other fellow because they worked in you.
21. People can only see God as we reflect Him.
22. First impressions really count--people hardly ever forget their first impression!
23. The only Bible the World reads is the one bound in shoe leather: You and me!
24. It's awful easy to tell other guys to do things, but I don't tell you to do anything I haven't done myself sometime or other, and proven I can do it.
25. It's a terrible thing to have someone stumble over you into Hell!
26. We're all copycats. We copy Jesus and you copy us. It's good to be copycats if you copy the right things. You're supposed to be a copycat!
27. One picture is worth a thousand words! A sample is better than a sermon!
28. The eye's a better pupil and more willing than the ear.
29. Nobody will know what you mean when you say "God is love", unless you act like it as well.
30. If anyone speaks evil of you, let your life be so that none will believe him.
31. The best reformers the World has ever seen are those who began with themselves.
32. The lectures you deliver may be very wise and true  
But I'd rather get my lessons  
By observing what you do.  
I'd rather see a sermon than to hear one any day.  
I'd rather one would walk with me  
Than merely tell the way.
33. Be careful how you live; you may be the only Bible some people will ever read.
34. The smallest good deed is better than the grandest intention.
35. If you have love you'll show it.--It's impossible to hide it.
36. It was not only the way the Christians lived but also the way they died that convinced many that, "Surely Jesus was the Son of God!"
37. Actions speak louder than words.
38. He preaches best who lives best.
39. Imitation is the sincerest form of flattery.
40. To really know where a man's at, observe his behaviour with a woman, a flat tire, and a child.
41. Remember, people will judge you by your actions, not your intentions. You may have a heart of gold--but so does a hard-boiled egg.
42. Some people go about doing good, other people just go about.
43. The length of your life is less important than its breadth and depth.
44. Many people will not read a Bible but will read a Christian.
45. If you can't be a Christian where you are, you can't be one anywhere.
46. Is your Christianity ancient history or current news?
47. If you don't do it, you don't believe it! You believe in a thing as much as you practice it.
48. Jesus was not only the Living Word, the Sermon, but He was also the Living Work, the Sample.
49. Every one of us are copycats we're all trying to copy Jesus, because He copies God!
50. Be a good original, and then you'll make very good copies!
51. Are you a gorgeous, useless, merely ornamental vase, or are you an ugly, useful, necessary toilet?
52. You believe in love as much as you love, in prayer as much as you pray, in witnessing as much as you witness, and in the Word as much as you read it!
53. You believe in prayer as much as you pray, you believe your Bible as much as you read it, and you believe in me and my Words as much as you read and obey them!
54. The proof of the pudding is in the tasting, and one picture's worth a thousand words!

55. It is no use walking anywhere to preach unless we preach as we walk.
56. Just like I told my brother once, "You're not entirely useless. You make a dandy bad example."
57. Every true Christian or child of God is a sample of God Himself.
58. What you are speaks so loud I can't hear what you say.
59. We're just carbon copies, xerox copies of Jesus, and the more we copy Him the better!
60. The only Love of God they can see the love they see in you!
61. You can preach a better sermon with your life than with your lips.
62. Be a sample, not only a sermon.
63. Our spirits are contagious,  
Be they meek or quite outrageous!
64. We have committed the Golden Rule to memory; let us now commit it to life.
65. Example is a lesson that all men can read.
66. We honour the illustrious dead best by following their example.
67. We imitate only what we believe and admire.
68. Dead works fall upon deaf ears.
69. An acre of performance is worth a whole World of promise.
70. Thoughts in little deeds  
Done in a loving way  
Tell more of caring kindness  
Than any words could say.
71. A company is known by the men it keeps.
72. The churches have been talking about Jesus for thousands of years and it hasn't done much good, but  
the way we are living and practicing Jesus is making news!
73. You either sow faith in their hearts or you sow doubt in their hearts.
74. It pays to make a good impression.
75. One person walking in love will encourage others to do likewise!
76. You cannot live without influence. Everybody is affecting somebody.
77. Don Quixote was a bit batty, but look how his words and his philosophy and his story have gone out  
through the entire Earth, encouraging many people that there is something more important even than sanity, and  
that's love and happiness and service to others.
78. I soon can learn to do it,  
If you'll let me see it done.  
I can watch your hands in action,  
But your tongue too fast may run.
79. We must always have a meek and quiet spirit about us which engenders trust and faith and confidence  
and peace, and rest and assurance in others as well, for our spirits are contagious. If we get upset and flustered and  
impatient and nervous and ranting and raving and angry and sharp-tempered and sharp-tongued, this is apt to be the  
same way that they will react and also answer back to us, sad to say.
80. He that gives good advice, builds with one hand; he that gives good counsel and example, builds with  
both; but he that gives good admonition and bad example, builds with one hand and pulls down with the other.
81. The World is moved along, not only by the mighty shoves of its heroes, but also by the aggregate of the  
tiny pushes of each honest worker.
82. People may doubt what you say, but they will always believe what you do.
- (See also No. J, 50, 98, 104, 116, 196, 208, 304, 309, 328, 502R, 537, 560, 699, 1202, 1250.)
83. JOH.13:13-15 Ye call me Master and Lord: and ye say well; for so I am. If I then, your Lord and  
Master, have washed your feet; ye also ought to wash one another's feet. For I have given you an example, that ye  
should do as I have done to you.
84. ROM.13:14a Put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ.
85. 1CO.4:16 Wherefore I beseech you, be ye followers of me.
86. 1CO.9:27 But I keep under my body, and bring it under subjection: lest that by any means, when I have  
preached to others, I myself should be a castaway.
87. 1CO.11:1 Be ye followers of me, even as I also am of Christ.
88. 2CO.3:2 Ye are our epistle written in our hearts, known and read of all men.

89. PHI.2:15 That ye may be blameless and harmless, the sons of God, without rebuke, in the midst of a crooked and perverse nation, among whom ye shine as lights in the world.

90. PHI.3:17 Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them which walk so as ye have us for an ensample.

91. PHI.4:9 Those things, which ye have both learned, and received, and heard, and seen in me, do: and the God of peace shall be with you.

92. 1TH.1:6-8 And ye became followers of us, and of the Lord, having received the word in much affliction, with joy of the Holy Ghost: So that ye were ensamples to all that believe in Macedonia and Achaia. For from you sounded out the word of the Lord not only in Macedonia and Achaia, but also in every place your faith to God-ward is spread abroad; so that we need not to speak any thing.

93. 1TH.5:22 Abstain from all appearance of evil.

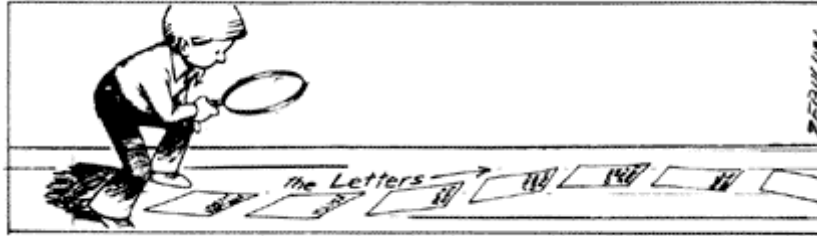
94. 1TI.4:12 Let no man despise thy youth; but be thou an example of the believers, in word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity.

95. TIT.2:7,8 In all things shewing thyself a pattern of good works: in doctrine shewing uncorruptness, gravity, sincerity, Sound speech, that cannot be condemned; that he that is of the contrary part may be ashamed, having no evil thing to say of you.

96. 1PE.1:14-16 As obedient children, not fashioning yourselves according to the former lusts in your ignorance: But as He which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation; Because it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy.

97. 1PE.2:21 For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow His steps.

98. 1JO.2:6 He that saith he abideth in Him ought himself also so to walk, even as He walked.



*It is the glory of God to conceal a thing: but the honor of kings is to search out a matter (Pro.25:2).*

1. That's what takes faith--a mystery for which you don't know the answer, a problem for which you don't have the solution, but through faith in God you ask Him for the answer to your puzzle and He reveals it to you, sometimes very mysteriously!

2. The Lord loves a mystery!

3. God does hide things. Look how He hides nearly all the most precious things in the World, including babies in the deep dark places of mommy's tummy!

4. God may deliberately hide His purpose from you for the moment, knowing that otherwise you might put up a fight!

5. The Lord is full of wonders and miracles and exciting surprises!

6. Stay close to Him, listen to His voice, feel His Spirit, see His visions, dream His dreams and be sensitive to His direction and His voice, and you will know the answers to His little mysteries with which He loves to guide us and almost amuse us.

7. "Greater mysteries than these have I revealed unto thy father, and more mysteries than these shall I reveal unto David!"

8. All the most precious things like gold and silver and diamonds and precious stones you have to find by hunting for them and digging them out of the ground. So we must dig for and search out the most precious treasures of wisdom of His Word.

9. God loves mysteries--He even made the true Church a mystery the World doesn't understand!

10. Some things you must hide in your heart and wait on the Lord and give God time, or you can just make matters worse.

11. The Lord likes to puzzle us sometimes to make us really concentrate and try to think and figure things out.

12. God can give you inside information!

13. God knows the future and the secrets of the present!

14. God's puzzles take work to figure and explore,

But He can give you the key to unlock every door.

15. How wonderful are the ways of the Lord--but they're not past finding out, if you ask him!

16. God often gives a Scripture key

To unlock the Bible's mystery.

17. There are some things the Lord just can't reveal to you in advance because you're not ready for it and you just can't comprehend it, you just couldn't cope with it, and you couldn't understand.

18. God keeps some of the details of the future from us because He either can't trust us with them, or He doesn't want to warn some people who don't deserve it. But He gives us enough of a general warning and a general idea and a general hint in the feeling that we had better be prepared for it.

(See also No. 84, 158, 261, 363, 713, 796, 798, 845, 894, 945, 1004, 1049, 1329, 1405, 1430, 1564.)

19. .29:29 The secret things belong unto the LORD our God: but those things which are revealed belong unto us and to our children for ever, that we may do all the words of this law.

20. .13:18 And the angel of the LORD said unto him, Why askest thou thus after my name, seeing it is secret?

21. .5:8,9 Unto God would I commit my cause: Which doeth great things and unsearchable; marvelous things without number.

22. .25:14 The secret of the LORD is with them that fear him; and he will shew them his covenant.

23. .3:32b His secret is with the righteous.

24. .3:11 He hath made every thing beautiful in his time: also he hath set the world in their heart, so that no man can find out the work that God maketh from the beginning to the end.

25. .11:5 As thou knowest not what is the way of the spirit, nor how the bones do grow in the womb of her that is with child: even so thou knowest not the works of God who maketh all.

26. .40:28 Hast thou not known? hast thou not heard, that the everlasting God, the Lord, the Creator of the ends of the earth, fainteth not, neither is weary? There is no searching of his understanding.

27. 45:15 Verily thou art a God that hidest thyself, O God of Israel, the Saviour.

28. 23:24 Can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him? saith the Lord. Do not I fill heaven and earth? saith the Lord.

29. 2:28a There is a God in heaven that revealeth secrets, and maketh known to the king Nebuchadnezzar what shall be in the latter days.

30. .2:30a This secret is not revealed to me for any wisdom that I have more than any living.

31. .3:7 Surely the Lord God will do nothing, but he revealeth his secret unto his servants the prophets.

32. .4:11 And he said unto them, Unto you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God: but unto them that are without, all these things are done in parables.

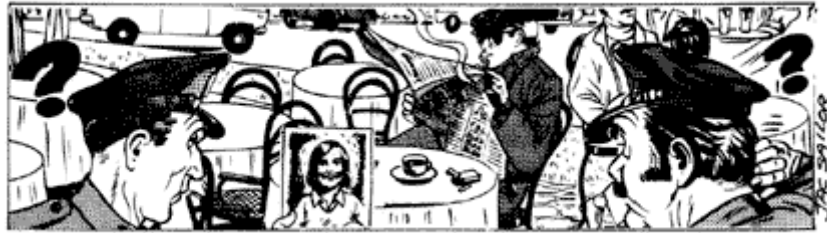
33. **CO.2:7 But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto our glory.**

34. **CO.2:10 But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.**

35. **CO.13:12 For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known.**

36. .3:5 Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto his holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit.

37. .3:8 Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ.



*Then took they up stones to cast at Him: but Jesus hid Himself, and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by (Jn.8:59).*

1. It's bad enough for the Enemy to betray you, but it's worse if you betray yourself by being foolish.
2. In the Lord we have complete security!
3. A stitch in time saves nine!
4. We have no security except in the Lord!
5. Eternal vigilance is the price of freedom and eternal security.
6. Spiritually we have eternal security, but physically on this Earth we have constant insecurity.
7. As World tension grows and situations get tighter and governments stricter, we must tighten our security as well.
8. It is extremely dangerous to overestimate your security, while at the same time underestimating the dangers. Overconfidence can lead to disaster.
9. The Enemy is always listening!
10. As long as your enemies know you're strong ..., they're not as apt to attack you! "A strong man armed keepeth his goods in peace!" [Luk.11:21]
11. If the System can't get the leader, they try to get somebody close to him.
12. The grave danger of the unguarded moment is that just one of them can put you in your grave!
13. Good PR is good security.
14. Don't put all your eggs in one basket.
15. Safe in the arms of Jesus,  
Safe on His gentle breast,  
There, by His love o'ershaded,  
Sweetly my soul shall rest!
16. When you are guests in a country you have to tread softly, much more so than in your own country.
17. Forewarned is forearmed.
18. Let sleeping dogs lie.
19. Walls have ears.
20. What wonderful security God's Kingdom has! No man can enter it except in the Spirit, and only then if he's allowed.
21. There's not a loose thing on the premises that they can use for a missile to hurt you if you keep a clean strong house wide open to investigation.
22. "Watch and pray!" [Luk.21:36]
- ...
24. He that feels too secure is not safe.
25. A living dog is better than a dead lion. (Ecc.9:4)
26. Help us, Lord, for meat not to destroy the Work of God!--For some carnal desire, some carnal weakness, some foolish fellowship, to endanger Thy Work and Thy children. (Rom.14:20)
27. The Lord takes care of us, but He expects us to do our part and give Him some cooperation.
28. If we are willfully or woefully ignorant, careless, negligent and slothful stewards, then He sometimes allows us to suffer for it.
- ...



30. In some ways it's bad security being a Prophet or even a Christian, but in other ways it's the best security in the World--Eternal Security!

31. In these Last Days the true sheep are becoming fewer and fewer, and the wolves more and more numerous, so watch your step, watch your words and watch your lit!

32. Sometimes we're our own worst enemies! We have power over the devils and demons, but sometimes we can't even control our own tongues or our own spirit! Sometimes our biggest problem is our own spirit, which is still a free moral agent and can do as it pleases.

33. If you're leaning to your own understanding and forgetting all about acknowledging the Lord or listening to the Voice of His Spirit to lead and guide you every moment, then you're apt to fall into one of the Devil's traps during one of those unguarded moments, and it's a dangerous business!

34. One little compromise with the Devil is extremely dangerous.

35. Security means being conscious of possible trouble, anticipating it and doing everything you can to avoid it!

36. There are no such things as little dangers in God's Work. Any little chink in the armour, any little tiny gap in our united front could cause serious problems. There are no such things as little problems. Little problems are usually a sign and evidence of big problems.

37. Seldom is it worth risking the Army for one soldier's personal problems.

38. Our security really is in God's hands must of all, and we have to depend on Him to take care of us and protect us and keep us in spite of our own stupid mistakes. "If any man lack wisdom let him ask of God, Who giveth to all men liberally and upbraideth not." (Ja.1:15)

39. The Enemy is always listening. Don't tell him what he wants to know.

40. You can't have both: You cannot have both security and freedom, it's impossible.

41. Pay attention to the checks of the Spirit and heed God's still small Voice when it checks you, "No, don't do that."

42. Be mindful of the things you should do and should not do, so you can continue your work for the Lord.

43. You have to be even more concerned about your security in the Spirit than in the natural. You might be very careful about natural security, but mighty damn careless about spiritual security!

44. I want to shake you out of any false sense of security and remind you that we have no security except in the Lord, and we cannot trust man, whose breath is in his nostrils! (Isa.2:22)

45. What is everybody's responsibility is nobody's responsibility.

46. Public relations is good security and is worth almost any price because it can save your neck.

47. Don't make it hard for authorities to protect you! Try to keep and obey their laws to make it easy for them to keep you!

48. ... [A]void undue notice, attention and ... notoriety.

49. The Devil can never do as much damage on the outside as he can on the inside.

50. Every soldier must try his best not to be a casualty. Obedience and cooperation with the Lord's leaders may save your life and liberty for the Lord's service.

51. Go public [mass witnessing] and blow it!--Or stay personal [personal witnessing] and sow it!

52. The quicker you go public, the quicker you're going to go absolutely private with no more [public] ministry at all!

53. Always protect your leaders' security!

54. I'd rather be a live fugitive than a dead hero!

55. If saving your words saves your life, it might be a good idea to keep your mouth shut sometimes.

56. He who fights and runs away  
Lives to fight another day!

...

58. Always go two by two!

59. Don't ever give any [private] information unless somebody asks, and then don't tell'm if you can help it.

60. One of the best securities you have is to have friends and to be friendly, so that people like you and are not apt to start talking about you because you have angered or frightened them somehow.

...

62. When you see out--others see in!

63. Your friend has a friend, and your friend's friend has a friend, so be discreet.

64. He who trusts his secrets to a servant makes him master.

65. It is easy to rob an orchard when no one is tending it.

66. Don't let yourself get caught criminally liable for someone's serious illness or a death in the Family by not reporting it immediately to the authorities. Call the doctor immediately. ...

67. Even if your situation may seem sometimes not the best natural physical security, the Lord may know it's the best spiritual security in order that you can be united together in close communion and community and fellowship to better organise and synchronise your work together and be quickly available to each other.

68. A passport is one of your most valuable possessions, because it is literally your passport to freedom from your country--whatever it may be--to "go into all the World to preach the Gospel to every creature." (Mk.16:15)

69. Many enemies can be at least pacified, if you keep sweet, don't lose your temper, let them bawl you out, but don't bawl them out! Don't preach down at them! Be a sample, not a sermon. Give them a chance to back down and save face.

...

71. When you leave things lying around openly, or leave doors or windows open, you're inviting theft, and you're just as guilty as the thief because you're inviting him to steal.

72. If a robber wants it that bad, let him have it, to save your life. The Lord can replace things.

73. Always consider that whatever you write down is [public], and whatever you say out loud is going to be heard by [others] and whoever you greet at the door could be [hostile]!

74. It pays to be generous, it pays to be good to the local folks.

75. You ought to conduct yourselves in these countries in such a fashion that the people of the country and its officials will be proud to have you there and be thankful for you!

76. Before leaving the house, notify everybody of where you're going and when you plan to be back, in case of an emergency.

77. Be ready for a knock at your door, that you respond to with hospitality and cheerfulness and cooperation.

78. Answer their questions very honestly, try to give'm the honest truth and nothing but the truth, but no more ... than you [legally] have to give them.

79. A lot of times the best answer is, "I don't know."

80. It's dangerous to have people around who are not in tune with the Lord, who are grumbling and murmuring and complaining, etc., because if you don't spank'm, God will! And you're apt to have to pay the bills for it!

81. King David left a dummy in his bed to make it look like he was still there while he escaped through the window. Paul was let down over the wall in a basket. Jesus' disciples pretended to go one way when they left town but actually went another. The Three Wise men, instead of going back the main road to Herod, went another way home. Jesus hid Himself and escaped out of their midst.

82. In general, it's best to live in a large city where you can have protection and anonymity amongst a lot of people. Avoid small towns where the only sport is gossip--about you!

83. Before you sign a lease, you are a client, after you sign, you are a tenant, and there's a World of difference. Study the contract carefully before you sign it!

84. Almost anywhere in the World there are going to be some people who want to steal. As long as they don't have quite as much as someone else, they're apt to be tempted to try to get it by theft, if they don't love the Lord and others.

85. Thieves are like mosquitoes. The light may attract them, but they don't like to get in the light.

86. No matter where you are in the World, you've got to protect your goods and housing and be cautious about security.

87. Be sure to have emergency telephone numbers of police, fire and ambulance posted by each telephone.

88. The best protection, even more than locks, is to keep things hidden and out of sight, where thieves will have a hard time finding them. Don't leave valuables lying around, especially when you're absent. Lock them out of sight.

89. Don't carry a gun unless you know how to use it, are permitted and have to. I suggest you don't have any.

90. There's nothing a thief hates as much as being seen, and that's why they work in the dark.

91. A watchful watchman is worth a thousand locks.

92. As a responsible watchman on the wall, you'd better work with your sword in one hand and your trumpet in the other, because it is your duty to protect others and you cannot merely turn the other cheek.

93. It's inexcusable for the person in charge of security to go to bed without being absolutely 100 per cent sure that everything is locked up and as it should be.

94. It's better to lose a few things than to lose your life. Burglars have killed people to keep from being identified. So it's not good to apprehend a burglar in the act. Sometimes a light or yell can scare'm away. Don't try to chase them or go looking for trouble.

95. Avoid any activities after 10 p.m. which might disturb the neighbours or draw attention to yourselves.

96. All ... cash, records, and [private papers] should be kept locked up! ... Always lock up any [private] materials when leaving the house and keep your bedroom or office doors locked when absent or when visitors are in the house.

97. You'd be surprised how much the System can learn about you from your trash. I remember a gang leader who was caught just through the police sifting his trash.

...

100. Pray over each visitor who comes onto your property, even if you have to do it silently so as not to offend them, and command any demons or unclean spirits to leave in the Name of Jesus.

101. If you start witnessing heavily to your neighbours, your witness might not last very long, as you could have to leave.

102. When you are a guest in a foreign country, the local neighbours are always right.

103. Whatever the cost of a P.O. box, it is worth it, as it saves many hassles with changes of address, confrontations with the public, officials, bill collectors, enemies, crackpots, general nuisances, etc., showing up at your house.

104. Pray over every piece of mail you receive before you actually touch it, that the Lord will rebuke any bad spirits it may be carrying and cleanse it thoroughly.

105. It can be very dangerous to forward mail, especially if it involves people who have 10:36 or legal problems.

106. Just one or two foolish people can ruin it for the whole Family in a country.

107. In foreign countries the Family had better stay out of anything political and show absolutely not political opinion whatsoever on either side! Show no sympathy nor take part in any kind of demonstration or discussions which would show you have sympathy with anything or anybody except the powers that be!

108. When abroad, we have less rights but more freedom!--But don't start interfering with or commenting about their politics or economics or anything else!

109. Be extremely careful and conscious and prayerful about your personal security and that of your most important security materials and your personal family and co-workers.

110. It's a very ticklish business, this business of staying [low-key]. But it can save your life, liberty, limb, lit and happiness if you are very careful about it.

111. Always call in just before you come home when out, and make sure you are not followed home.

112. The place to hide a pebble is amongst other pebbles. ...

113. One of the worst things you can do is show people where you keep and carry your money, especially if you're carrying a lot of it. Don't carry around a lot unless it's unavoidable.

114. In most countries life is cheap and they're willing to risk theirs and take yours to get anything to eat on.

115. Never resist an officer or interfere with the performance of his duty!

116. Don't make it hard for the authorities to protect you! Try to keep and obey their laws to make it easy for them to keep you. Don't be obnoxious and objectionable and overbearing so that they have to do something to get rid of you!

117. If a policeman knocks at your door, it doesn't necessarily mean that he's coming as an enemy! He is a minister of God [Rom.13] and is there to protect you! Officials often like to pay a "courtesy" call on newcomers to the community. He may just come to find out who you are and may just be a friendly visitor.

118. It pays to make a good impression and do PR when officials visit. Hopefully they will go back and deliver a favourable report to their superiors.

119. It's very dangerous to lie to the Police. They'll catch you sooner or later. A lot of times they ask questions when they already know the answers, just to see if you're lying.

120. When talking to officials, either tell the truth of what you're doing if you can, ... have a good explanation ... of why you're there! Don't beat around the bush!

121. In view of the way the World is going and the coming Government, we'd better start thinking of a few ways of keeping [low-key]! We'd better be called something besides a cult, a sect, an ism, a church or a religious organisation.--Or even a Family! ...

122. We should nationalise wherever we can, to make it almost impossible for the authorities to get rid of us, unless they violate their own laws and their own constitution.

123. The leader of a Home is supposed to know about everybody's passport, even supposed to have a passport inspection. He should go around and check everybody's passport to make sure of the exact date of expiration of both passports and visas and keep a confidential record of same to remind'm when it's time to renew.

124. Never give out [private] information about yourself if you can possibly help it. Never talk about your affairs except in a general way unless required to do so by law. Casual conversation has a way of reaching ears that it was not meant for.

125. Home deliveries of babies can be hazardous to security, as not many Systemites have them and it can create a lot of questions.

...

127. Do not get too involved with the churches, even for support, as they'll usually reject you sooner or later.

128. [When you come] home after litnessing, café singing or public witnessing [beware of] any followers.

129. When the officer of the law has told you to stop, stop! Don't disobey him and don't break the law!

130. I don't want you to pass out literature that you're afraid to pass out or that you don't have the faith for, or that you're not willing to suffer for.

131. It is very dangerous to permit unsaved and un-Spirit-filled people even in the same house with your children, but especially be wary of hiring them as servants! Parents should be in close watch over their care and supervision and constant oversight, knowing all that goes on.

132. Don't tempt servants unnecessarily by leaving cash or valuables out openly or in open drawers.

133. During the French Revolution Voltaire said: "Gentlemen, if the servants could hear what we're saying, our lives would not be safe." ...

134. In protecting your children, you're protecting God's Work, and its future.

135. You should never let new disciples come to live in until you know something about them and you've got a real conviction that they can deliver the goods. It's a whole lot harder to get rid of them than it is to take them in.

136. Watch out about harbouring, or what the System calls contributing to juvenile delinquency, in the case of minors. Even a meal or a night's lodging could get you in trouble.

...

138. People with problems with the law should not be accepted. It could get the whole Work in trouble and give it a bad name with the authorities against you.

...

141. It is every disciple's duty to report any violation of the rules by any other Home member. Otherwise, you yourself are an accessory to the crime and also guilty. Failure to report a crime is a crime!

...

143. You're bound to have some problems with some parents--Mt.10:36 has promised this.

144. If you insist on antagonising parents, you'll find that an angry parent is one of the worst and most persistent of enemies!

145. We are in a war, brethren!--And it is not altogether spiritual. We don't believe in violence, but our enemies have made it violent, so you may have to use a threat of violent defense to prevent their violent attacks.

146. If an unwelcome visitor invades your property, call the Police and defend yourself until they come! Try to let the Police handle it.

147. If 10:36ers resort to violence, you are perfectly justified in calling the Police.

148. Read the signs of the times, comb the newspapers, watch the news and know what the Government is doing, its attitudes towards foreigners, etc.

149. The Pharisees had to work a long time to trap Jesus into giving them something to use against Him. We should be very diligent to make things just as hard on our enemies. Use wisdom! Discretion is the better part of valour.

...

151. Always pray over your car before you leave it, even laying hands on it, praying for the things inside, that the Lord will protect and keep His property.

152. Never leave luggage unattended! Never take your hands or feet off of it. Squeeze it between your legs if you have to. Mentally handcuff it to your wrist.

153. A well-dressed, well-groomed appearance is important, and more often than not is a determining factor in the type of reception and treatment you'll receive at border points.

154. In most poor countries you can't really trust hotel employees. They're poor and representatives of the poor and it's a very frequent practice for maids and maintenance men to act as spotters and case your room and your jewelry and inform a gang which will come along later and steal it or rob you!

155. Everybody needs to have contingency plans--an alternative to follow in case of an emergency.

156. Negligence and indifference in security matters cancel all good qualities, such as loyalty and devotion, etc.

157. Beware of reporters--make sure you know who they are and what they are up to!

158. Be diligent to take care of little business details like license renewals and payments of bills and not leave things neglected that could focus undue attention on you or bring about any kind of investigation or reflect on you or God's Work.

159. Lord, help us to follow our hunches and feelings and those checks of Thy Spirit and that small voice that tells us, "This is the way, walk ye in it." (Isa.30:21) Help us to mind Thy voice, even though it may seem unreasonable or ridiculous, and we wonder why we should not do as usual or go to this place as usual, or to that as usual or say that. If we have any check in the Spirit at all, help us to mind it, knowing that You know why.

...

163. We're not as apt to be chased by the police as we are by our enemies who don't have to abide by the law.

164. You can't guard yourself from everything, but you can stay so close to the Lord--awake or asleep, conscious or unconscious, whatever--that the Lord will see to it that there is not a moment that's unguarded.

165. Give us great wisdom, great caution, Lord, immense security! We know, Lord, that Thy angels encompass round about them that fear Thee and that You have given Your angels charge over us to care for us in all our ways, Lord. (Psa.34:7; Psa.91:11.) But Lord help us not to give them a hard time.

166. The time always comes when we're through and when the Lord figures we've done enough. Of course, it comes sometimes a little too soon through some people's foolishness and lack of wisdom in the matter of security and too much premature publicity of our own, not to speak of the Enemy's, when we might have continued much longer ... with less exposure and less publicity in milder quieter forms of ministry.

167. Try not to give people any reason to be suspicious of you. Suspicion is followed by interrogation, and interrogation by search, and search by seizure, until you're maybe even thrown in jail.

168. We belong to the Kingdom of God but we are to obey the powers that be, like'm or not! We are dependent upon them and their hospitality for our stay in their country.

169. The officials don't usually bother the women and the children and the families and little nobody helpers, but it's the top leadership they're always after.

...

171. Where the police stop, the reporters begin! Reporters can use methods and measures which are illegal and the police don't dare use!

...

174. ... [O]ur people need to be more faithful to report publicity about us. We need to get indications of the Devil's devices and what he's up to and what he's trying to do and his plans and tactics so that we can be prepared and on our guard against them and secure our walls and fortifications so that he is unable to breach an attack and cause damage.

175. ... [I]t would be a tragic thing if you give the government some excuse to take your children away from you and put them in the System permanently.

176. You'd better make sure you are legally fixed to where you can protect yourself with legal papers to prove that you are fit parents and these are your children and you have legal custody of them, or you may be very sad and heartbroken to find the System can literally steal them away from you and give them over to the custody of the Devil and his cohorts.

177. It would be a heartbreaking, heartrending thing to lose our children because of our own carelessness and our own lack of preparation and our own procrastination in preparing protection for them.

178. When we talk about some [office] Homes being [behind-the-scenes] it doesn't mean being exactly like everybody else. It doesn't mean we don't let people know we're Christians. ...

179. Security is essential to success if we're going to survive and keep going and keep preaching and keep our lives and disciples and continue the Message with the men and methods and secure, including our records and stats, etc., and not permitted to be neglected not kept in unsafe places or operate unsafely with any measure of insecurity, if at all possible.

(See also No. 26, 47, 51A, 107, 143A, 210, 274A, 326C, 356, 364, 367, 381, 542, 553, 651, 747, 749, 750, 758, 761, 765, 797, 856, 953-2, 980, 1067, 1377, Gen Series.)

**117. SERVICE** --{page 914}--



*Present your body a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service (Rom.12:1).*

1. Only one life--'twill soon be past!  
Only what's done for Christ will last!
2. Prepare thy work without and make it fit for thyself in the field, and afterwards build thine house.  
Pro.24:27.
3. There is no discharge in this war! (Ecc.8:8)
4. When love and skill work together, expect a masterpiece.
5. Any farmer who has gone to the great trouble of plowing and sowing and watering and fertilising and seeding a tremendous crop, who then neglects to get in there and harvest it, is crazy! The farmer's got to plan for the future, and we're farmers of souls!
6. Labour is light where Love doth pay.
7. Art thou called being a servant? Seek not to be loosed.
8. Every calling of God is great when greatly pursued.
9. Your service is nothing without your love!
10. Men are worth more than money to the Lord--the workers are worth more than the work!
11. God is more interested in people than in money. He is more interested in souls than in income. He is more interested in your safety and usefulness than in mere prosperity.
12. Service for God hurts, but service for the Devil hurts more. You bear a yoke for Jesus, but it's lighter than the Devil's.
13. There is no higher position than to be a child of God and no greater honour than to be a voice for Him.--  
(By a teenage martyr burned at the stake in the 1500s!)
14. One of the first things you learn in the Lord's work, living by faith, is the humility to be willing to receive.
15. You've got the worthiest cause in the World!
16. Our job is to witness, win souls and take care of the results!
17. If you're not willing to work just as hard or harder for the Lord than you did for the System, then you ought to quit God's business and go back into the System and work for money.
18. God's servant is more valuable than His money.
19. If you turn your back on God's job, you're turning your back on God!
20. What is the greatest work in the World?--To witness the Words of God, to preach the Gospel, to tell people about God's love, to show them the Love of Jesus!
21. Nobody else is going to be able to do your job. Somebody else may be able to do their job, but God has given you this job.
22. Only this one thing is needful: To sit at His feet and learn of Him and pass on His Words to the World!

23. God's servant is even more important than His work.
24. The number one question in any situation is, are we getting the job done?
25. When it comes to God's Work in the realm of the Spirit and the ministry of the Church, there is no male nor female in Christ Jesus.
26. This is big business--the Lord's business, the biggest in the World!
27. Nobody is totally indispensable.
28. Salvation, souls, children and service for the Lord are forever!
29. The work's going to be no good if you don't take care of the worker.
30. There's a place for everybody, and everybody ought to be in their place!
31. Sometimes we need big blobs to accomplish big jobs!
32. Our work is our pleasure, and when we want to have fun we go to work!
33. We believe in working more than ever before, but now not just for ourselves and our own living, but for others, to give them a better life.
34. The Gift of God is Eternal Life, but it cost Jesus His to give it to you, and it'll probably cost you yours to live it!
35. I cannot comprehend people's hesitation to serve the Lord all the way! If He's worth serving at all, He's worth serving full time and all the way!
36. All you need to do is be Christians and help witness and win souls for Christ. That's your religious obligation.
37. Work for the Lord should be a pleasure and not boring, and should supply "all your needs according to His riches in Christ Jesus."
38. We're in a business that cannot fail!
39. Our job is show business for the Lord--to show people the love of God!
40. Too many of us have been cumbered with too much serving and not enough listening. We've had too many Martha's and not enough Mary's. We feel we must serve to exist when we should live to listen.
41. Everybody's got their ministry, and unless you fail in yours, the Lord's not going to take it away from you unless He wants to give you a different one.
42. I'm against anybody ever giving up their duty to God and man for so-called romantic love. Even if they are really in love, I don't think that's enough excuse to give up a duty to the Lord and to His work.
43. It's His work, His business, so He'll have to take care of it. And we're His employees, so He'll have to take care of us.
44. There is no unimportant job in God's Kingdom.
45. We have to live that others may get ready to die.
46. We all work--but not for money!
47. We're in a dangerous business, but a wonderful one!
48. Neither wise men nor fools can work without tools.
49. It's newsboys who need to be numerous--not management with overgrown staffs and outgrown housing!
50. Management and machinery are nothing without labourers.
51. One of our greatest of all ministries: To save the children of the World and make them useful and helpful to each other and God's Kingdom!
52. Whatever your place is, you're a very necessary part of God's Kingdom!
53. We are in the business of trying to make people rich--spiritually!
54. Our job is to try to clean up the World, and the best way to do it is by cleansing people's hearts and minds with the love of God, the power of Christ, and the pure knowledge of His Word.
55. Passing on the Lord's Word to His children is fun, but it's a job you'll never get done!
56. May you have a very happy new year in His thrilling, exciting, rewarding, loving Family service for Him and others!
57. Now they can join hands and dance with David!  
Now they can share the kisses of the King!  
Now they can join hands and dance with Jesus!  
Now they can join hands and work for the king!
58. Nothing is more important than God and His Work of love to save the youth of today!
59. He that shall not work shall not eat!
60. You're sure not saved by your works, but if you're saved, you'll sure work like everything to give salvation to others, and it'll cost you everything!

61. The Words are the cause, those won are the effect!
62. Our main purpose in life is "to love God and enjoy Him forever", and to help others enjoy life by telling them of God's love and the happy life we live together!
63. The quicker we're done--the quicker He'll come!
64. Your works can never save you--but you get to save your works, like saved souls!
65. My job as a Prophet is to get the Word--your job is to give it!
66. It's just as dangerous today to be the kind of Christian we are as it was for the Early Church.
67. The most important thing in our service to Thee, Lord is our faithfulness.
68. A talent is a test--use it for God's best!
69. God could not make Antonio Stradivarius' violins without Antonio.
70. The real purpose of our existence is not to make a living but to make a life.
71. Paul's thorn in the flesh didn't keep him from serving God, it didn't keep him from doing God's work, it just kept him from being proud, that's all.
72. A Christian cannot do a good job of serving God while he spends most of his time working for money--unless it's a lot of money and he gives nearly all of it to the Lord!
73. How much do you really worship and serve God?--Only as much as you actually work for God.
74. If your service for God hasn't got the Spirit, it stinks, and people are going to hold their noses and run the other way!
75. To be the servant of all is the road to greatness.
76. Burning the candle at both ends may look crazy, but it sure gives a better light, even though briefer!
77. The great use of a life is to spend it for something that outlasts it.
78. He never errs who sacrifices self for others.
79. Life is like a tennis game; you can't win without serving.
80. It requires more courage to suffer than to die.
81. Only by giving ourselves in love do we begin to realise what it means to be complete.
82. Prayers and praise!--The sacrifices of your lips and the sacrifices of your heart are the most important sacrifices of all!
83. I don't believe in reminding yourself of your losses, like putting up a picture of a lost loved one to cry over all the time.
84. Teach me, O Lord,  
To give and not to count the cost  
To fight and not to heed the wounds  
To toil and not to seek for rest  
To labour and not to ask reward  
Save that of knowing that I do Thy will.
85. What costs nothing is worth nothing.
86. We are God's expendables, created to burn out on the altar of sacrifice, made to wear out as His tools of design, to die that others might live!
87. You can save your life now by living it for today, but in so doing lose it eventually forever.--Or you can lose your life now by giving it for Christ and in so doing keep it forever.
88. It is better to wear out than to rust out.
89. He died to save us, why should we not die to save others?
90. Keep on loving for Jesus, amen?--Even if it means some suffering, it's worth it for the saving, praise God?
91. It's got to hurt a little bit or it's no sacrifice!
92. Spend your life losing your life for others--that's the secret of saving it!
93. Jesus didn't go halfway to the cross for you, or almost all the way, but He went all the way and gave all His life for you! How much are you willing to give for others?
94. It is better to burn the candle at both ends, and in the middle too, than to put it away in the closet unused.
95. Are you going to reign now a little while and suffer a lot later?--Or are you going to suffer a little now and reign forever?
96. Pity just feels sorry!--Compassion does something about it!
97. Be not good for nothing, be good for something.
98. Real love will cost you your life, and you can't pay any price greater than that!



99. The picture of waiting on the Lord is like waiters and waitresses waiting on a customer, where the customer is king and can do no wrong! That's serving the Lord, that's waiting on the Lord, that's ministering to the Lord and others.

100. Except you die, you'll never truly live; except you give forth, you can't truly take in.

101. He has no hands but your hands and He has no lips but yours and He has no eyes but your eyes and no body but your own, for you are His body, His Bride for whom He died that you might live and love others as He did, with your hands, your lips, your mouth, your tongue, your eyes and your body broken for them as His was for you, your life given for them as His was for you, to even die for them as He did for you!

102. Jesus has healed your heart, and some day He is going to heal your body. You must bear your cross for Jesus' sake and show your faith in spite of afflictions. As Jesus bore the cross, you bear this cross for Jesus because it shows a testimony to those who don't have a testimony, that through suffering you shall learn obedience, through the things you suffer as Jesus did.

103. We can only offer you an invitation to come and die with us--to die to the flesh that ye may live in the Spirit.

104. Many are called but few are chosen, because so few choose to be chosen.

105. When you join God's army it has to be all or nothing at all. There's no halfway with the Lord.

106. With us it's not your money or your life!--But both--everything you've got! That's what God expects! That's what He gave.

107. Are you willing to sign a blank sheet of paper and let God fill it in without your ever knowing what His program for you is going to be?

108. God may appreciate the bedroom slippers you're making for Him, but He'd rather have you.

109. God will not take second place, even to His service.

110. Probably the greatest mistake of sincere Christians is to make a god of God's Service.

111. If you want to throw your life away, why not give it away?

112. The real victory in all service is won in secret beforehand by prayer. Service is gathering up the results.

113. Your "best" is to call on the Lord.

114. We're in the investment business.--Souls for the Kingdom of God that reap eternal dividends.

115. What does God need from you?--Most of all your intimate fellowship and love, but also your sacrificial service.

116. What is it about His wife that makes Him the most proud?--That she's willing to bear His children and have His babies! That's the proof that she really loves Him.

117. That's what we do for the house of God: We are His servants taking care of His House, His children. We feed and clothe them and take care of His babies, so He really is grateful for that and He really admires us for our service.

118. If the primary purpose of your existence was to be saved, then the moment you got saved, your existence should have been ended, and you might as well have died and gone home to be with the Lord. So why did the Lord let you live on?--To save others!

119. Our goal is to try to persuade everyone to love God and his neighbour as himself and this would solve all the problems of the whole World.

120. You are engaged in the ministry of Christ, stooping to conquer! You're going down there as far as you possibly can go and getting dirty with their dirt to make them clean!

121. Your children are a part of the Lord's service, and you need to recognise the fact that you need to take care of your own children as a service to God as well as to them!

122. One lays down the cross, another takes it up. One forsakes the crown, another cherishes it. One deserts his birthright, another inherits it.

123. Are you willing to give till it hurts?--Jesus did: he gave His life! God did: He gave His Son! David did: He said, "I will not give unto the Lord of that which has cost me nothing!" (2Sam.24:24)--They gave until it hurt! God gives His wife, the church, continually in loving service to others. He's constantly engaged in trying to woo and win the World!

124. None of the Lord's workers are ever going to be out of a job! The whole World can go broke and unemployed or even bankrupt, but you're not ever going to be out of a job! You've always got a job and it's going to last as long as you last or until the Lord comes! It's always going to be the same job, preaching the Gospel, one way or the other.

(See also No. S, 31, 48, 74, 182, 207, 241, 266, 314A, 510, 551, 564, 565, 566, 641, 662, 675, 697, 703, 727, 957, 960, 974, 1180, 1316, 1330, 1373, 1374, 1551.)

125. SA.12:24 Only fear the LORD, and serve him in truth with all your heart: for consider how great things he hath done for you.

126. MAT.16:25 For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for My sake shall find it.

127. MAT.20:28 Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

128. .23:11 But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant.

129. .23:23b This ye ought to do...

130. .9:23 And he said to them all, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow Me.

131. LUK.17:10 When ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.

132. .4:34 Jesus saith unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish His work.

133. CO.3:9 For we are labourers together with God: ye are God's husbandry, ye are God's building.

134. CO.6:20 For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's.

135. CO.5:15 And that He died for all, that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto Him which died for them, and rose again.

136. TH.2:9 For ye remember, brethren, our labour and travail: for labouring night and day, because we would not be chargeable unto any of you, we preached unto you the gospel of God.

137. TH.3:13 Brethren, be not weary in well doing.

138. .2:14 What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? Can faith save him?



*And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the Earth, and subdue it (Gen.1:28).*

[HomeARC Note (03/04): *The Charter*, the policy statements, “God’s Law of Love” (01/04) and “Beliefs and Conduct Regarding Relationships and Sexuality” (01/04), and subsequent GNs state the Family’s policies and guidelines regarding sex and living the Law of Love.]

1. Sex was God's first commandment to man, and to have sex is the first obedience to God's commandments!
2. The Devil hates sex! But God loves it! He made it and He created you to have it and enjoy it!
3. We have a sexual relationship with the Lord in the Spirit!
4. The System's objection to sex is just an excuse, because they're just as sexy as we are! Under their hypocritical thin surface they love sex just as much as we do!
5. Nudity always represents honesty, truth, sincerity and an absence of hypocrisy--no cover-ups!
6. Why make an exception of sex on any Scripture, when it says all things are lawful?
7. Nudity and sex should be no more evil to us than it was to Adam and Eve!
8. If sex is a sin, then God's a sinner, because He made it!
9. The Devil hates nudity because it encourages sex, and he hates sex because it encourages multiplication of children, and he hates children because it encourages the growth of the Kingdom of God!
10. For this sexy generation, God had to have a sexy leader!
11. The Devil really hates sex because it means [resultant] children for the glory and the Kingdom of God!
12. The Devil, the system and the church want a monopoly on sex to license it strictly for their own use at high costs, when God created it to be enjoyed freely by all!
13. The church does everything it can to fight sex, but sex is one of God's greatest assets and weapons!
14. The unity of the flesh is symbolic of the unity of the spirit.
15. Sex is one of the greatest, best, most wonderful things God ever made, because sex makes children that God wants and that He can love and have forever!
16. Save your saintliness for the public, but don't be afraid to be a devilish little rascal in bed and sock it to him with all your might in private--his privates!
17. To really enjoy sex you've got to belong to God!--Then you know it's no sin and you can enjoy it to the full!
18. The Devil hates sex, but he likes to use it to tease and to tempt and then finally deny and destroy!
19. Sex can be ugly if people don't do it in the Spirit!
20. Adam and Eve only became ashamed of nudity after they fell and had sin in their hearts--the wrong sinful view of things!
21. Only sinful man had to be clothed!--Only sin brought the need to hide reality! Salvation sets us free from the curse of clothing and the shame of nakedness! We're as free as Adam and Eve in the garden before they ever sinned! If you're not, you're not saved!
22. Sex is not evil at all, but a gift from God to be freely and fully enjoyed in the right relationship!
23. Lovemaking is a physical illustration of what God does to us through the power and light of His love!
24. We have a sexy God and a sexy religion and a very sexy leader with an extremely sexy young following!

25. The 1st commandment was "Thou shalt have sex!" (Gen.1:28)--The 10 Commandments came much later.
26. In sex, evil people cannot be trusted with the freedom of nakedness because of their evil minds and what they would like to do. They cannot be trusted with freedom of sex either because they would not be sure to use it in love and consideration and in purity.
27. We're all nudists as far as God's concerned. All things are naked before Him. (Heb.4:13)
28. The church has made God-created sex a sin--we have made it a virtue!
29. A part of our teaching, a part of our doctrine, a very important part of our faith and our belief is that sex and nudity are not evil but a virtue!
30. You will never know what real life is all about until you have found a mate, both mentally, physically and spiritually, and you have united yourselves sexually into one flesh and produced children in obedience to God's very first commandment in the Bible: "Be fruitful and multiply and replenish the Earth!"--Have sex!
31. The Devil hates sex because it is God's Plan to populate the World and the Kingdom of God with babies as its new citizens!
32. It's the will of God for you to be fruitful and multiply and have children, and the only way you can do it is to have lots of sex!
33. There's sex in Heaven! You'll be able to have all the sex you want without getting tired or impotent, and you'll be forever virile! There'll never be a time when you can't make it, boys, and never a time when the girls won't want it! That's my kind of Heaven!
34. We are a very sexy religion with a very sexy leader and a very sexy following and a very sexy doctrine, and we got it all out of this book called the Holy Bible!
35. The great Western Christian civilisations and their missionaries started the World's great hypocritical cover-up!
36. That's why we're such a sexy religion--we believe in the Bible!
37. There's only one thing better than physical sex, and that's spiritual sex, intercourse with God Himself in the Spirit, being married to Jesus Christ as His Bride!
38. You don't know what thrills are until you have had a spiritual orgasm of the Spirit, an explosion in the Spirit by being possessed with the Holy Spirit of God!
39. We thank You Lord above all for our wonderful spiritual sexual union with You, becoming Thy Bride in the spirit, united with our Bridegroom to enjoy that marvelous coming Wedding Supper of the Lamb in Heavenly places when we are finally united with You In Heavenly places forever!
40. You can find the Man of your dreams in Jesus your Bridegroom, and the Girl of your dreams in the Goddess of Love, His Motherly Holy Spirit that He has provided for every one to be satisfied and fulfilled!
41. In moderation, masturbation can be a perfectly normal, healthful, helpful and a necessary sexual activity!
42. God created sex, not Satan! God is the One Who made those sexual organs and every single little nerve that feels so good!
43. You'll never know what real sexual enjoyment is until you fall in love and really love someone, and then sex takes on new meaning, a whole new beautiful experience!
44. If you've never known the love of God, you've never known the most beautiful sexual experiences you can ever have--those spiritually explosive orgasms in the Spirit!
45. Adam and Eve didn't think sex was bad or nudity was wrong until the knowledge of evil entered in, the Devil's own lies! So therefore there's another proof that it's a Lie of the Devil to think sex is sin and nudity is evil!
46. Without nudity you've got no sex, and without sex you've got no [resultant] children! The Devil was trying to cut man off right there at the start, attacking at the very root of the Creation of God!
47. That's our religion, that's our doctrine, that we are just as free now of sin as Adam and Eve were in the Garden of Eden, and they ran around stark naked making love all they wanted!
48. Don't you like sex? Don't you enjoy it? Well, if you don't, there's something wrong with you!
49. The sin is not in the sex or the nudity or the eating or the drinking, it's in the over-indulgence.
50. I believe Jesus not only had sexual desires, but with all those women He had around Him, I believe He satisfied'm!--It was no sin!
51. Somebody's got to talk about sex besides the God-damned Devil!--Because it's God's sex and He made it and He ought to be getting the credit for it! I'm sick and tired of hearing the Devil get the credit for nudity and sex and having fun sexually!
52. Sexual fears can be physical torture!

53. God's not ashamed of sex! He's not ashamed to talk about sex! He's not ashamed to be sexual, because He created it! He made sex! He made you! He made your sex! He made your sexual organs and all the nerves that feel good in sex. And He made them as an illustration of the ecstasy and the agony when it feels so good it hurts, the orgasm of His sexually spiritual union with His Bride!

54. Jesus believes in pre-marital sex, how about that? He believes in union with you right now, marriage in the Spirit right now, receiving Him into your heart right now like the bride receives the organ of the bridegroom! Be His now!--Possessed by Him now!--The Wedding can wait for the Rapture!

55. "As thy bride of the morning hath awakened thee with her kisses, and as her soft touches hath aroused thee, so shalt thou woo My Spirit and touch the hem of My Garment, My skirt. And as thy seed shall flow out of thee into her to bring forth fruit, even so virtue shall flow out of Me into thee to bring forth the fruit for My Kingdom!"

56. Some are afraid of sex, and others are sick of it! The first are plagued with inhibitions and feelings of guilt, while the others are satiated with disgust and contempt! Both need to learn that sex is good, and not evil! The Devil has deceived them both--both the so-called saint and the profligate are in the same fix! Both need to be taught the right attitude from the Word with a lot of love and patience!

57. The System has seen that sex is an activity that they couldn't very well stop just because it's supposed to be sinful. So they have licensed it and made it legal in certain forms, like a sort of necessary evil, as long as you do it their way.

58. Fornication, adultery, incest and sodomy are really the only four forms of sex which God prohibits or limits or frowns upon. ...

59. Sodomy is male homosexuality which God strictly forbids and severely judged as the most evil and abominable sexual sin of all!

60. Onanism, or sudden withdrawal at the moment of ejaculation of seed, is an abomination to the Lord!

61. Birth control, onanism and abortion are abominations to the Lord, violations of His laws and atrocious man-made attempts to interfere with the natural course of God's creation!

...

63. The evil is only in the excessive or selfish, greedy, perverted, neurotic, abnormal fascination and over-indulgence in such activities.

64. It is the Western custom of prohibition, punishment and lack of satisfactory explanation of sex, sexual parts and sexual activities, which creates in some children an over-absorption and abnormal fascination with sex.

65. Sex and nudity are considered normally accepted human and legal activities in Europe and many other parts of the World, whereas the general American attitude towards sex is highly prohibitive, condemnatory and illicit.

66. The consequences of America's phony prudery and double standard and holier-than-thou self-righteousness have produced one of the most neurotic, psychotic, perverted and sexually frustrated societies yet known to man.

67. It is just as wrong for you to starve you body of its normal sexual needs and satisfactions as it is for you to starve yourself to death by not eating or to waste away through lack of exercise or to die from exhaustion or lack of sleep.

68. Enjoy yourself, you are part of God and His creation, and He created you to love and enjoy both Him and His creation forever--including yourself and others sexually.

69. Most of God's greats had oodles of wives, women, mistresses, harlots and what have you, as well as multitudes of children! Moses himself was a man of such sexual power, prowess and potency that at the end of 120 years and several wives and quite a few children, it is said in the Bible that "his eye was not dim, neither were his natural forces (sexual juices) abated!"

70. Sex was not the Devil's idea, it was God's!--And the Devil is its arch-enemy! He tries to take the credit for it, and then trickily turns around and condemns you for enjoying it, tells you it's a sin, that it is his sinful offering for your pleasure, and that the only way you can really enjoy sex is by being a sinner! Because sex is sinful, so the Devil says!

71. If you are ashamed of what God has made and are embarrassed by bosoms, penises and vaginas, you are most surely going to be horrified by the coming orgasms of the Spirit and naked truths of the Spirit World which He has yet in store for you if you're able to receive it!

72. You'll be whisked off into a World which you never dreamed existed, where you'll enjoy the very wonders of total intimacy with a sexy naked God Himself in a wild orgy of the Spirit as His totally surrendered Bride!

73. If there's something wrong with sex and you should be ashamed of your body, then there's something wrong with God and you should be ashamed of Him and us as well!

74. May God damn every self-righteous sex-condemning, Truth-hiding hypocrite who would hide the truths and beauties of God's creation from His holy pure-minded children! To the pure all things are pure! But him that is filthy, let him be filthy, still! May God deliver you from such horrible bondage!

75. Are you willing to plant your seed in the furrow of the body of God's Earth, His Wife, His Church, that it may be warmed by the sun of His Love, refreshed by the water of His Word, and bring forth much fruit?

76. Sex and our manifest loving affection has become one of our biggest attractions to bait the hook for even the wariest of fish! The Devil uses it to hook his--why shouldn't God Who made it, use sex to hook His Own?

77. Sex works!--And it certainly is working in our outfit and producing tremendous results! Our families are absolutely exploding with a thunderous roar that's going to be heard 'round the World!

78. God must have prepared me all of these years for this modernised ministry of extolling the virtues of sex, one of His most wonderful creations, and giving Him the full credit for it that is so long overdue!

79. Some people are still gonna wonder why we have to mix God in along with our sex, as some of them still can't seem to get the point that God was the Originator of the first nudes in a very exotic, erotic Garden of Eden on their first sex spree!

80. The end result and greatest goal of sex and soul-winning: A newborn babe in the family of God, a whole new created soul made by the hands of God for all Eternity to enjoy!

81. Only God could possibly have thought up something as wild and crazy as sex and having babies to reproduce the whole human race every generation, new bottles from old bottles!--Instead of man's foolish ideas of being able to produce so many old bottles out of new ones!

82. One touch and you melt!--One kiss and you're gone!--One embrace and you're laid!--One thrust and you're made!--You've let that lovin' Man in and He really sends you and all you want to do is go, go, go until you explode!

83. God is also the God of the body, the God of sex--He made it!

84. Sex has something to do with the Creation--through it we create life!

85. Pleasure is God-created for our good!

86. Sex is a small part of life to us--love is the most important thing!

87. Your body is the love of God, your sex is the love of God, your orgasm is the love of God for me!

88. The final thing they're attacking now in these Last Days is love.

89. They think that sex is love, when sex is only a part of love.

90. That's one of the things I like about the Lord!--He likes sex and beautiful women, because He made'm!

91. If you're ashamed of sex, there's something wrong with you!

92. Sex is a never-ending source of wonder to me, and I think God meant for it to be that way! I'm wild about sex and I tell the World about it!

93. I hate ugly sex, the perverted mechanics of sex and crotch shots and close-ups of nothing but the sexual organs!

94. I certainly don't like sex movies in which the sexual organs are the principal characters!

95. I believe in sexual freedom and nude beauty when it's clean and beautiful and right and the way God intended for it to be and fully enjoyed. But when it's perverted and animalistic and mechanical and ugly and unclean and masochistic and cruel, it's sickening!

96. If it's unloving, it's ungodly!

97. If it's not pictures of loving, gentle, affectionate, good, kind, clean sex, then it's certainly not of the Lord!

98. I'd call those porno movies junk sex, and I think it's just as bad for people as junk food!

99. Loving, clean, romantic sex can be very beautiful, along with artistic nudity. But junk sex is sickening!

100. The Devil hates sex, and he's tried to pervert it and besmirch it and debase it and debauch it and pollute it and tear it down and disgrace it and vilify it and do everything he can think of against good clean decent sex!

101. The Devil hates sex and he wants to destroy it if he can with every kind of twisted perversion and pollution!

102. The Devil is the destroyer, and what he's really trying to destroy is sex!

103. If you can't tell the difference between good and bad sex, and good and bad movies, then you ought to quit both!

104. The System really hates sex, yet it hypocritically pretends to promote it!

105. Sex was one of the first and greatest blessings!

106. To teach sexual freedom and sexual liberty openly is downright dangerous in the System!
107. The Devil hates sex, and yet he's got the World deceived into thinking that he loves it and that in order to enjoy it they've got to love him! What a lie!
108. Sex has become the Devil's own tool, and he stole it from God!
109. Look how the Devil attacked the very foundation of creation from the very beginning--sex!
110. It just shows you how the World's greatest fiendish devilish religions are the tools of the Devil!--The more religious they are the more they prohibit sex, showing how he hates it!
111. Sex is one of the Devil's greatest enemies because sex is the friend of God and the creation of God!
112. If God is Love, then He's also Sex! So the Devil hates all three: God, Love and Sex!
113. Sex proves the existence of Love, and Love proves the existence of God!
114. Sex is the ultimate in physical fulfillment of love!
115. How does sex prove love?--Because usually you don't have sex unless you love!
116. God's Love results in sex!
117. Sex proves that love exists!
118. God Himself had sex with Mary to have Jesus!
119. Without love and sex there'd be nothing!--No God, no love, no sex, no lovers, no families, no friends, no art, no beauty, no existence at all!
120. If you hate sex you are one of the Devil's crowd! If you think it's evil, then God and love are evil, for He created it!
121. Nudity is truly humbling and the truly humble are the truly loving, and the truly loving are truly humble, because love and humility are virtually the same.
122. Nudity and sex are great humblers. You just can't be very proud and be naked and engage in sex.
123. There's nothing like spiritual sex, it's the most sexy of all!
124. Let's ban the bums and the bugs and the bomb of sexual diseases by keeping our sex at home!
125. A beautiful, close and intimate oneness in spirit can often develop into a very close physical relationship, including sex.
126. I'll certainly be the first to confess I love sex!--And God must love it, He made it!
127. If you're not near the one you love, love the one you're near!
128. There's only one thing better than a nice pretty girl--and that's two nice pretty girls!
129. If you're united in the Spirit, it almost becomes automatic to be united in the flesh. The flesh is an illustration of the Spirit!
130. We men spend 9 months trying to get out of a woman and the rest of our lives trying to get back in!
131. Sex is notoriously, historically, physiologically, psychologically a woman's primary ministry!
132. Don't hand me any of that eunuch or St. Paul stuff, unless you are a eunuch or you are St. Paul!
133. There's one thing that has never gotten out of date or out of fashion, and that is women!--Beautiful women, beautiful dances and beautiful sex!
134. Sex and nudity are humbling and purifying, good for your pride to help set you free!
135. You're really giving your all when you show your all!
136. We don't striptease, we strip and give!
137. Not to be sexy is not natural. God made you to be sexy.
138. My bed capacity is ten thousand--one at a time!
139. As far as we're concerned and as far as the Bible says, for us there is no such thing anymore as adultery because God's only law is now Love and whatever we do we do in Love.
140. The orgasm of the flesh in sex was intended to show you what the orgasms of the spirit are like!--A counterpart of the spiritual ecstasies!
141. I'm absolutely convinced that free love is of God!
142. But so-called Worldly "free love" is not free--it's sexual bondage.
143. Pride is the archenemy of sex!
144. Sex can never be truly satisfying without love!
145. You couldn't have a religion that would greatly appeal to youth today if sex weren't involved!
146. Sex is a basic essential need of the male personality and the strongest of all his needs aside from his spiritual needs.
147. If God gave you all those nice pleasurable sensations, He must have intended for you to enjoy them.
148. God originally made people to be naturally affectionate one toward another, and if they're not, there's something wrong!

149. Making love is not just fleshly, it's also spiritual. I've got to have spiritual satisfaction as well as fleshly satisfaction.
150. The difference between a hooker and a housewife is that the hooker can get up and go home.--But the housewife is higher-priced!
151. Sex isn't everything!--It's the real spiritual love and affection that really counts the most.
152. Lovemaking is partly physiological: Your body chemistry gets in the mood. But it's largely psychological, because your mind and spirit must get in the mood too.
153. Cut loose from those old foolish fancies and woeful old wives' tales and let yourself go into the bosom of God and let God do it to you in an orgasm of the Spirit till you're free! You're His Wife!--Sock it to Him!--Fuck God!
154. Sex power!--God's power!--Can be your power! Be a sex revolutionist for Jesus! There we go again! Are you comin'?
155. Hands are wonderful things! They really give a lot of loving! They can finish the job when nothing else can!
156. Frigid women sometimes are like some people's consciences: They become hardened in their understanding, alienated from the life that God intended for them to live, and past feeling!
157. Don't be ashamed to tell him, girls! Call the shots! Give the signals! Higher? Lower? Faster? Slower? In and out or round about?
158. Don't forget to thank her; or don't forget to thank him.--Gratitude is a great thing in married life! Show appreciation!
159. "Let her breasts satisfy you at all times!"--Pet them, suck them, love them, kiss them, massage them!
160. Lovemaking is a physical manifestation of the spiritual love that you have for your mate! Your patience at it, your tenderness, your gentleness, your desire to please will show how much real love you really have!
161. It's wonderful how the Lord made you so your nose and mouth are around her ear at that time when you're making love, and hers is around your ear, so that you can whisper to each other, talk to each other, tell each other what to do.
162. Opening a virgin is a technical problem and you need to solve it lovingly, tenderly, gently and with prayer.
163. Don't forget to say, "I love you!" Keep speaking words of love. Words sometimes can do more for a woman than anything else!--Especially if you are speaking with love, tenderness, meaning and sincerity.
164. Beware of oral sex or anal sex: They can be unsanitary, unhealthful, dangerous and even unscriptural!
165. That's the most unselfish part about sex: [Resultant] Children! ...
166. Fucking my wife caused a revolution!--My children!
167. Two and two don't make four, they oughtta make a dozen! So let's get busy, boys! Give the girls their due--their duty of marriage!
168. If naked truth bothers you, you are definitely an old bottle and had better avoid the crush!
169. I've never seen anything in the Bible or any of the sex books I have studied which seems to find anything evil or bad or harmful about normal, loving, affectionate and even physical relationships between normal feminine women.
170. Men can get so horny they'll even kill to get it! They have got to have a woman and they have got to fuck her! It's just virtually an irresistible desire on their part that apparently God has given them to perpetuate the human race!
171. Feeding a man sex is like feeding him a meal, something he absolutely has to have and he'll do anything to get it!
172. To a man, that's the final acid test: if a woman loves him she'll go to bed with him!
173. But men have to offer the women a lot more than a quick fuck to make them happy! They not only want your love, but they want you heart, your home, your income, your children and your life, even more than your lovemaking, which is often the opposite from the boys!
174. A rapist is going to fuck you anyway, even if he has to fuck your dead body! How much better to give it to him in God's Love than to tempt him to take it away from you.
175. There was no sin, no offense, no reason why Jesus shouldn't enjoy the sexual fellowship of Mary and Martha! And He did, because I saw Mary making love to Him in a vision I had once right in the middle of a climax!
176. Looking into the eyes is almost the next thing to having intercourse, because you're instantly having spiritual intercourse and it really has an effect!
177. Where the spirit goes, the body follows!



178. That sex absolutely revived me! There must be something about that shock of electricity, that powerful orgasm that brings life!
179. The little girl said to the little boy, "My mommy says if you've got one of these, you can have all of those you want!"
180. Any woman who denies herself to her husband has left him!
181. The ultimate picture of God's creative love to man is a beautiful woman!
182. You believe in sex as much as you do it, and you believe in love as much as you love!
183. God must've expected you to masturbate, He made it come natural!
184. Wine is great for women but bad for men! It increases proclivity, but decreases their capacity! You may not be able to get it up, but you can always get it together! After all, that's the best part, the sweetness, the closeness, the fellowship and the love!
185. Man has made some sex a hate-act instead of a love-act, because the Devil hates sex!
186. God made your body to have sex and to feel good having it and to have a climax, an explosive orgasm of the flesh and the spirit at the same time!
187. There wouldn't be any people on Earth today if Adam and Eve's sons hadn't married their sisters!
188. Good lovemaking begins with true love! The best Teacher is God! Begin with that point (true love), and maybe she will accept the other point!
189. Nobody wants to make love to a corpse or ride a polished log! Give him some cooperation, girls!
190. There's nothing wrong with your husband fucking you, girls! It won't hurt your saintliness! But it will shoot holes in your ego and in your pride!
191. I never fucked my wife without thanking her and praising the Lord at the same time!
192. Lovemaking is an art--sometimes highly technical, sometimes just plain hard work, and you've gotta really work at it--both of you!
193. It takes time, sacrifice and real effort sometimes to get her going and make her hit the jackpot! If at first you don't succeed, keep on trying until you do!
194. Some say it's 90% psychological: You've gotta talk'm into it, woo them into it, inspire them into it, thrill them into it, excite them with words, music, flowers, perfume and petting!
195. Like happiness, lovemaking is a lot of different things to a lot of different people, and the same thing doesn't necessarily work on everybody! It takes variety--the spice of life!
196. Find out what she likes, and give it to her! Find out what he likes, and sock it to him!
197. There's really no such thing as a frigid woman if the right man gets ahold of her with the Love of God and the help of a strong hand! Ask God to help you be that man if you haven't been so far!
198. And girls, there's no such thing as an impotent man if you have lots of love, unlimited patience and strong affectionate fingers!
199. "Behold, all ye children of the Lord!--Take heed and give ear! For thou shalt also ply thy wives with wine and seduce them with the seed of My Spirit!" It may take both!
200. The more you pump together in the Power of the Spirit, the more you are freed from the impotency and frigidity and deadness of Darkness; and the final spirits of the Spirit in the Power of the Pillar make you one!--And this causes you to bear fruit: The Children of Light!
201. The spirits of the Spirit of Light penetrate the bodies of Darkness and produce a Jewel for His Kingdom!
202. The positive against the negative, the man against the woman, brings an electrical explosion in the deep dark places of the earth--her earth!
203. The very push and resistance of the woman's body against the man's only serves to accelerate and accentuate his excitement, until there is such an explosion of his power, like fireworks or a shower of stars, that her darkness is turned into his light, she loses her very separate existence, and they become one!
204. The fervent fire of the ardour of the husband's lovemaking melts the Darkness of her icy frigidity and sows spirits of spiritual seed in her like sparks of light and life, which destroy her Darkness of barrenness and produce, or pull out of her, children into the Light, like Crystals!
205. On the whole, a woman should wear as little clothing as possible, so as to both partially reveal and yet at the same time partially and provocatively conceal her natural beauty and charm!
206. Partial and frequently varied revelations are apt to hold his interest and curiosity longer than all that naked and unvarnished truth staring him constantly in the face!
207. You must count on keeping his love drawn toward you the vast majority of the time with the magnetism of the mind and inspiration of the spirit, and that irresistibly charming holy-of-holies of your heart, that

intangible magical something called real genuine love, that can be manifest every moment of every day, continually revealed in all its splendour!

208. You don't have to let it all hang out to be beautiful--just wrap it in an artful fashion so he'll know it's there!

209. There's just something about letting you hair down, girls, that really does it and turns us on!

210. Show as much as possible without showing too much!

211. The most exciting thing about any nude woman is the expression on her face!

212. For a nude woman to be exciting and interesting, she has to look interested in something besides herself!--You!

213. The mental and spiritual companionship of a woman is so much more exciting than the mere flesh! Some girls excite you just to look at their face! But some girls have no depth: They're just as shallow as their skin, and their beauty is only skin-deep!

214. Nudity, nakedness and sex can be absolutely beautiful or absolutely sickening--depending on the spirit in which they're shown.

215. There's a difference between beauty and ugliness, real art and plain pornography! There's a difference between that which is attractive and that which is repulsive, and difference between nudity and just plain stark staring nakedness--the awful truth!

216. The Greeks had the right idea of beauty: To them the female form was more attractive just thinly clad or draped, partially clothed.

217. When she's really enjoying it and having a good time, that's when I enjoy it the most!

218. A woman is in her most tempting position with her arms stretched full length above her head!

219. To have real lasting enduring genuine love, it must be based upon a more enduring foundation than mere fleshly gratification.

220. For true love there definitely must be a measure of admiration for finer qualities more than mere physical beauty! A man can be in love with a woman's mind or sentiments or spiritual reactions, he can be in love with her emotional companionship, all of which have little or nothing to do with her physical body and their sex life. These definitely have at least 90% more to do with love than just pure physical sex or sexual gratification.

221. Sex is like being very thirsty: One minute you're dying for a drink, but it doesn't take many drinks to satisfy!

222. Sex is one of the precious and delicate sweets of life, but nevertheless it doesn't take too much to satisfy.

223. Woe be unto the wife who becomes more interested in her children than her husband!--She may also find her husband is becoming more interested in somebody else than her!

224. Seek not only the vivaciousness of the flesh, but the liveliness of the spirit, the fascination of the mind, the irresistibility of the heart and its genuine unselfish love, and the greatness and magnanimity of the soul, that spiritual part, which in turn can only be satisfied by the spiritual in you, and the absorbing interest of your mind, and the warmness of your heart and the thrill of your soul!

225. Even if you don't have a baby, that seed actually becomes part of you in the absorption of you body, and you become one!

226. It's the excess that is the sin in anything.

227. For God's sake, let yourself go! Let go and let God, and enjoy the power of total surrender to the Spirit in an orgy of sexual orgasms of your God-given organs where you get wild and free in the spirit and know it's right and the way it ought to be!

228. Any reasonable method is worth a try to help you experience your orgasm regularly and pleasurable for your own sexual relief and peace of body, mind and soul! Personally, my middle finger's never failed to do the trick! Ask the gals who know! "At the King's right hand there are pleasures forevermore!" (Ps.16:11)

229. Don't be afraid to explode like at atom bomb, girls, even if your legs go straight up and hit the ceiling, or your butt bangs the bottom of the bed, or the neighbours hear your screams of delight and shrieks of pleasure!--Enjoy yourself! It's later than you think!

230. Rejecting Jesus is like, if in lovemaking, we'd get to the last step and you'd refuse to fuck me, you'd refuse to receive me or take me in!

231. Being sexy really is good because it's being emotional, it's being honest. God made us to be sexy, He made us to be emotional.

232. In the Bible God condemned one of the kings of Israel because he didn't get rid of the Sodomites in the land. (1Ki.14:22-25; 2Chr.12:1-2)

233. Sex and nudity are a part of our doctrine, a part of our faith, a part of our practice and a part of our appeal!

(See also No. N, P, Q, 154, 224, 236, 240, 250, 254, 258, 259, 286, 287, 292, 302A, 302C, 307, 326B, 338, 353, 359, 501, 502, 524, 525, 528, 529, 530, 537, 561, 576, 592, 599, 604, 605, 624, 647, 648, 685, 699, 719, 721, 779, 781, 782, 815, 816, 818, 845, 847, 919, 935, 999, 1006, 1009, 1017, 1035, 1125, 1126, 1172, 1178, 1181, 1213, 1281, 1339, 1395, 1434, 1456, 1515, 1530, 1562.)

**119. SHTICK** --{page 940}--



*And let us not be weary in well doing: for the in due season we shall reap, if we faint not (Gal.6:9).*

1. You'd better stick it out until you know God wants you to leave a job and you know He's finished with you there and He's got something else He wants you to do.
2. It's von ting yust to shtick!
3. One thing that's going to keep you going is to know that it's not going to be much longer!
4. There's just no limit to what God can do through you if you'll just stick to it!
5. Never stop anything fruitful that God is blessing!
6. Don't ever leave a job unless God gives you another one.
7. When you make a deal with God, you had better stick to it no matter what!
8. The difference between perseverance and obstinacy is that one often comes from a strong will, and the other from a strong won't.
9. Winners never quit, but quitters never win!
10. If you start something and don't finish it when it's going strong, it's virtually impossible to get it going again.
11. You shouldn't start another attack until you've finished the first one.
12. "Shtick it out!" till angels shout!  
And God's rewards are given out!
13. Consider the postage stamp: Its usefulness consists in the ability to stick to one thing till it gets there.
14. You cannot begin a job for the Lord unless you finish it, or the whole thing will be a failure!
15. Turning you back on the job God has given you is just as bad in God's sight as turning your back on Him!
16. Your Home should try to stay put as long as the Lord is blessing and providing you needs and protecting you from too much persecution, and as long as you can publish the Message, bear fruit, and establish the believers.
17. Stick around a little while to get real results--genuine disciples, whom you can either take with you or teach to carry on.
18. A diamond is a piece of coal that stuck to its job.
19. Today's mighty oak is just yesterday's nut that held its ground.
20. It is dangerous to quit the job God has given you!

21. Help us, Lord, to know it's one thing just to stick to the task that You have given us, determined not to quit, but to go on whether we succeed or fail, to stay put in the job You've given us until You tell us it's time to go.

22. Don't quit too soon! Don't flunk out by running out just before God's school bell rings and He's about to promote you to another grade! Don't run away from your school of Laban just before you begin to inherit the Promises! (Gen.29)

(See also No. D, 31, 313, 315, 359, 551, 565, 572, 641, 703, 836, 960, 974, 1022, 1268, 1372, 1373, 1374, 1425, 1650, 1651, 1652.)

23. .138:8a The Lord will perfect that which concerneth me.

24. .10:22 And ye shall be hated of all men for My name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved.

25. .24:13 He that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

26. .20:24 But none of these things move me, neither count I my life dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministry, which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the Gospel of the grace of God.

27. **CO.7:20 Let every man abide in the same calling wherein he was called.**

28. **CO.15:58 Therefore, my beloved brethren, be ye steadfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord.**

29. .6:9 Let us not be weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not.

30. .4:17b Take heed to the ministry which thou hast received in the Lord, that thou fulfill it.

31. **TH.5:21 Prove all things; hold fast that which is good.**

32. **TH.2:15 Therefore, brethren, stand fast, and hold the traditions which ye have been taught, whether by Word, or our epistle.**

33. **TI.2:1 Thou therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus.**

34. **TI.4:18a The Lord shall deliver me from every evil work, and will preserve me unto His Heavenly Kingdom.**

35. .10:35 Cast not away therefore your confidence, which hath great recompense of reward.

36. .12:1b Let us run with patience the race that is set before us.

37. .1:12 Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love Him.

38. .5:11 Behold, we count them happy which endure. Ye have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord; that the Lord is very pitiful, and of tender mercy.

39. .3:11b Hold that fast which thousand hast, that no man take thy crown.



### When Silence Is Golden

*A time to keep silence, and a time to speak. Wherefore, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath (Ecc.3:7; Jam.1:19).*

1. In the multitude of words there wanteth not sin: but he that refraineth his lips is wise (Pro.10:19).
2. He that keepeth his mouth keepeth his life: but he that openeth wide his lips shall have destruction (Pro.13:3).
3. He that hath knowledge spareth his words. Even a fool when he holdeth his peace, is counted wise: and he that shutteth his lips is esteemed a man of understanding (Pro.17:27-28).
4. Better to let'm wonder why you didn't talk than why you did.
5. If for a tranquil mind you seek,  
These things observe with care:  
Of whom you speak, to whom you speak,  
And how, and when, and where.
6. Every time you give another a `piece of your mind' you add to your own vacuum.
7. I have often regretted my murmurs, seldom my silence.
8. Tact is the unsaid part of what you think.
9. Tact is the ability to make a person see the lightning without letting him feel the bolt.
10. We have two ears and only one tongue in order that we may hear more and speak less.
11. A good listener is not only popular everywhere, but after a while he knows something.
12. God, Who gave us two eyes to see and two ears to hear, has given us but one tongue to speak.
13. Blessed are the brief, for they shall have lower phone bills.
14. If you are a man of few words, you won't have to take so many of them back.
15. If it had been intended for man to talk twice as much as listen, he would have been given two mouths and one ear.
16. Learning to speak in two or more languages is not nearly as hard as learning to keep your mouth shut in one.
17. Some folks say the squeaking wheel gets the grease, but others point out that it is the first one to be replaced.
18. Never say all that you know, but always know all that you say.
19. If you wish others to keep you secret, first keep it yourself.
20. Be slow of tongue and quick of eye.
21. Sometimes silence is a great peacemaker.
22. Pray before you say!
23. Don't speak unless you're spoken through!
24. Communication is nothing without listening.
25. Speaking without thinking is shooting without aim.
26. Wash your dirty linen at home.

27. He who talks without thinking runs more risks than he who thinks without talking.  
28. It is better to be silent and be considered a fool, than to speak and remove all doubt.  
29. Be sure your brain is in gear before engaging your mouth.  
30. It often shows a fine command of language to say nothing.  
31. Smart people speak from experience--smarter people from experience, sometimes don't speak.  
32. The mouth is the grocer's friend, the dentist's fortune, the orator's pride and the fool's trap.  
33. It takes a baby approximately two years to learn to talk and the rest of his life to learn to keep his mouth shut.

34. The hardest thing for some people to say in 25 words or less is "good-bye."  
35. A loose tongue often gets its owner into a tight place.  
36. Usually the first screw that gets loose in a person's head is the one that controls the tongue.  
37. The ability to speak several languages is valuable, but the art of keeping silent in one is precious when necessary.  
38. The tongue can be a blessing, and the tongue can be a curse! How are you using yours--for better or for worse?

39. Did you hear the story about the little boy who came home from school and told his mother, "Mama, I was a peacemaker today."

She said, "Oh, you were? Did you stop a fight?"

"No," he said.

She said, "Well, did you refuse to fight?"

"No."

She said, "Well then how were you a peacemaker?"

He said, "I knew something I didn't tell."

40. Never answer a matter before you hear it (Pr.18:13).

41. The loudest mouths usually have nothing to say.

42. A wise old owl sat on an oak.

The more he heard the less he spoke,

The less he spoke the more he heard.

Why aren't we all like that wise old bird?

(See also No. 33, 85, 326C, 381, 1247, 1250, 1377, 1547.)

43. 13:5 O that ye would altogether hold you peace! and it should be your wisdom.

44. .39:1 I said, I will take heed to my ways, that I sin not with my tongue: I will keep my mouth with a bridle, while the wicked is before me.

45. .46:10a Be still, and know that I am God.

46. .141:3 Set a watch O Lord, before my mouth; keep the door of my lips.

47. .10:19 In the multitude of words there wanteth not sin: but he that refraineth his lips is wise.

48. .11:13 A talebearer revealeth secrets: but he that is of a faithful spirit concealeth the matter.

49. **PRO.13:3 He that keepeth his mouth keepeth his life: but he that openeth wide his lips shall have destruction.**

50. **.15:23 A man hath joy by the answer of his mouth: and a word spoken in due season, how good is it!**

51. **.15:28 The heart of the righteous studieth to answer: but the mouth of the wicked poureth out evil things.**

52. **.16:23 The heart of the wise teacheth his mouth, and addeth learning to his lips.**

53. **.17:27,28 He that hath knowledge spareth his words: and a man of understanding is of an excellent spirit. Even a fool, when he holdeth his peace, is counted wise: and he that shutteth his lips is esteemed a man of understanding.**

54. **.18:13 He that answereth a matter before he heareth it, it is folly and shame unto him.**

55. **.21:23 Whoso keepeth his mouth and his tongue keepeth his soul from troubles.**

56. **.29:11 A fool uttereth all his mind: but a wise man keepeth it in till afterwards.**

57. **.29:20 Seest thou a man that is hasty in his words? There is more hope of a fool than of him.**

58. **.5:2 Be not rash with thy mouth, and let not thine heart be hasty to utter any thing before God: for God is in Heaven, and thou upon Earth: therefore let thy words be few.**

59. .5:6 Suffer not thy mouth to cause thy flesh to sin; neither say thou before the angel, that it was an error: wherefore should God be angry at thy voice, and destroy the work of thine hands?

60. .19:36b Ye ought to be quiet, and do nothing rashly.

61. TH.4:11 And that ye study to be quiet, and to do your own business, and to work with your own hands, as we commanded you.

62. .1:26 If any man among you seem to be religious, and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this man's religion is vain.

## 121. SIN

--{page 947}--



*Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin: and sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth death (Jam.1:15).*

1. Almost the worst sin of all is to just ignore God!
2. By mercy and truth iniquity is purged: and by the fear of the Lord men depart from evil (Pro.16:6).
3. He that covereth his sins shall not prosper: but whoso confesseth and forsaketh them shall have mercy (Pro.28:13).
4. Darkness cannot stand the light,  
And wrong cannot bear the right.
5. The light that shows you your sin is the light that heals you.
6. Every sin in your life is a part of the Devil's territory!
7. You don't have to confess secret sins to others; you only have to confess them to the Lord.
8. Sin is not just doing something dreadfully bad, but even worse, it is getting out of line with God's Will.
9. We all have our besetting sins; we just have to learn to resist them.
10. Sin is missing the mark!
11. Squeeze--don't jerk--or you'll miss the mark--and that's a sin!
12. The Enemy has some power over those things which are not yet yielded to the Lord, like some besetting sin.
13. Failure to report a crime is a crime!
14. God made man a little lower than the angels--and he has been getting a little lower ever since.
15. Sin is a spiritual disease! It is a spiritual handicap!
16. When you miss the pattern somewhere, the further you get, the worse the work is, and the worse the mistake looks.
17. Unless we know by faith that we're doing the right thing, even if we are doing the right thing, it is a sin--because we're not sure it's right.
18. Stealing is stealing, and God's Word says he that breaks the least of these commandments is guilty of all!--Because if you'll sin against God in one area, you'll probably sin against Him in any area if you have adequate opportunity and sufficient excuse.

19. These little departures, variations and variances from the straight and narrow, little bits of deceitfulness, little disobediences, little rebelliousnesses may seem like little things, but are not so little in God's sight.

20. He'll forgive you for every sin in the Book, except for rejecting Jesus--this is blasphemy against the Holy Spirit.

21. Iniquities are somehow worse than just plain sins, it seems like they're more evil, have a more devilish grip on people, not just a little disobedience or breaking of some minor law, but an absolute spiritual control.

22. If you commit sins against the Lord and others which are unconfessed, unrepented, and not made right, you will suffer for them in some way, in this life or the next, or both!

23. You can pull out the nails, but the scars are still there.

24. Murmuring is one of the worst sins!--God hates murmurers almost more than anything else!

25. To have been shown the love of God and resisted it is the greatest sin! To have been convicted by the Holy Spirit and resisted it and to have heard the Word of God of Christ's Salvation and rejected His Love, these are the greatest of all sins!

26. The basis of virtually all sin is pride!

27. A miss is as good as a mile.

28. Sin will keep you from the Bible, but the Bible will keep you from sin.

29. The pleasures of sin are for a season, but the consequences of sin are forever.

30. Lust is an abnormal desire, whether for food, sex or anything else!

31. To be ashamed of God's children and His Words is something almost unpardonable!

32. It's not the curse which causes you to sin, it is the sin which causes you to be cursed!

33. Don't blame every God-damned thing on the Devil when it's sometimes your own damned fault!

34. When you begin admiring the Devil's work then it's a form of worship.

35. All suffering, pain, tragedy, sickness, war and death is caused by somebody's sin.

36. God allowed the Devil to come in and allowed man to fall in order to show the consequence of disobedience to God and the consequence of the violation of His will.

37. When the heart is wrong, all is wrong.

38. Some sins are even unto death!--But most are not, and only one is unpardonable: Resisting the Holy Ghost--or rejecting Jesus!

39. If you think it's wrong, then to you it is wrong and you'd better not do it!

(See also No. 11, 20, 25, 33, 143, 258, 312, 313c, 370, 395, 525, 526, 527, 530, 539, 558, 566, 569, 594, 603, 604, 606, 647, 664, 714, 719, 753, 952, 954, 1040, 1090, 1110, 1112, 1135, 1247.)

40. .8:21b The imagination of man's heart is evil from his youth.

41. .32:23b Be sure your sin will find you out.

42. **CH.12:14 And he did evil, because he prepared not his heart to seek the Lord.**

43. **.58:3 The wicked are estranged from the womb: they go astray as soon as they be born, speaking lies.**

44. **.6:16-19 These six things doth the Lord hate: yea, seven are an abomination unto Him: A proud look, a lying tongue, and hands that shed innocent blood, An heart that deviseth wicked imaginations, feet that be swift in running to mischief, A false witness that speaketh lies, and he that soweth discord among brethren.**

45. **.8:36 But he that sinneth against Me wrongeth his own soul: all they that hate Me love death.**

46. **.24:9 The thought of foolishness is sin: and the scorner is an abomination to men.**

47. **.7:20 There is not a just man upon Earth, that doeth good, and sinneth not.**

48. **.3:9 The shew of their countenance doth witness against them; and they declare their sin as Sodom, they hide it not. Woe unto their soul! For they have rewarded evil unto themselves.**

49. **.53:6 All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the Lord hath laid on Him the iniquity of us all.**

50. **.59:2 Your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid His face from you, that He will not hear.**

51. **.15:18-20 But those things which proceed out of the mouth come forth from the heart; and they defile the man. For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies: These are the things which defile a man: but to eat with unwashen hands defileth not a man.**

52. **.12:2 For there is nothing covered that shall not be revealed; neither hid, that shall not be known.**



53. .8:34 Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin.

54. .5:12 Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the World, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned.

55. CO.5:6b Know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump?

56. CO.15:56a The sting of death is sin.

57. .4:17 Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin.

58. JO.5:17a All unrighteousness is sin.

(See also Romans 1:24,26,28.)

122. SMILE --{page 951}--



*A merry heart maketh a cheerful countenance (Pro.15:13).*

1. If you see someone without a smile, give him one of yours.
2. Smile and the whole world will smile with you, weep and you weep alone.
3. Smiling is contagious--frowning outrageous.
4. The World is like a mirror; frown at it & it frowns at you; smile, & it smiles, too.
5. The thing that goes the farthest  
Towards making life worthwhile,  
That costs the least, & does the most,  
Is just a pleasant smile.  
It's full of worth & goodness too,  
With many kindnesses blent,  
It's worth a million dollars,  
And it doesn't cost a cent!
6. Nobody needs a smile so much as those who have none to give.
7. A warm smile thaws an icy stare.
8. A smile is the lighting system of the face & the heating system of the heart.
9. All people smile in the same language.
10. The curve of a smile can set a lot of things straight.
11. It takes 72 muscles to frown--only 14 to smile!
12. Faces are so important. Eyes are the windows of the soul! A happy smile doeth good like a medicine!  
Wear a happy face! It's your display counter--your show window, your best advertisement!
13. What sunshine is to flowers, smiles are to humanity.
14. Laughing is the sensation of feeling good all over, & showing it principally in one spot.
15. Some wrinkles only indicate where smiles have been.
16. A smile increases your face value.
17. You are not dressed for your work until you wear a smile.

18. Beauty is only radiant when thou dost share its radiance with others.  
 19. The best kind of smiles are not "put on". They come out because they are "in".

(See also No. 104, 159, 1000, 1485.)

**123. SPIRIT WORLD** --{page 953}--



*Fear not: for they that be with us are more than they that be with them. And Elisha prayed, and said, Lord, I pray Thee, open his eyes that he may see. And the Lord opened the eyes of the young man; and he saw: and behold, the mountain was full of horses and chariots of fire round about Elisha (2Kg.6:16,17).*

1. We've got the benefit now of a tremendous army of departed saints, men of God, great men of wisdom, administrators, kings, prophets, psalmists and many others whom God can call on to give us whatever we need.
2. Are you exercising your power to release spirits?--The power of Jesus' name! "Whatsoever thou shalt bind on Earth shall be bound in Heaven: and Whatsoever thou shalt loose on Earth shall be loosed in Heaven!" (Mt.18:18)
3. You can time-travel right now in the spirit!--Backwards in memory--or forward in prophecy!
4. In your mind you can go either back or forward in time and you don't have to have a time machine. It's just so simple!
5. We wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against spirits of evil in the atmospheric heavens! (Eph.6:12)
6. If you can believe in the Devil, then you can also believe in God! If there's a Devil, there must be a God!
- 7 The spiritual world abhors a vacuum! If you reject the Spirit of God, the evil spirit goes and collects evil spirits even worse than before, and your latter state is worse than the beginning!
8. God sends around the little spirit children to entertain the babies and amuse them!
9. This material World is the fantasy, the dream world, the nightmare world, the sham, the imitation, the illusion, the hallucination, which will pass away, but the spirit world is the reality which will never pass away!
10. We can pray for the departed saints and they pray for us and we all love each other! They still need prayer because they still have a lot of work to do, a hard job trying to help us and getting us to do what we're supposed to do!
11. We believe in transcendental meditation, going from one World into the other in the Spirit.
12. Apparently different countries have different spirits that God has put there to rule them, both good and bad, according to what they deserve.
13. "Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses!" (Heb.12:1.)  
 Imagine how much they must jump up and down and shout when you do the right thing!--Everytime you win, everytime you make a goal, everytime you win a soul!
14. When you inspire faith in the Spirit World and the supernatural and the spiritual, you're inspiring faith in the God Who created it all.
15. That body is not the real you!--It's just the physical house you live in! The real you is the spirit inside!
16. The spirits still have a certain freedom of operation, but they are apparently under much stricter, tighter control than man.

17. We are not alone in this fight! The Lord is fighting for us, and right now the Archangels are battling the devils in a constant great war!

18. Do you want to travel? Do you want to take a trip? Just dream away with the Lord! He can take you anywhere!--And not only in your dreams!--But right here and now if you want to go & it's His will!--Just ask Him to make your dreams come true!

19. If you love Jesus, you're a holy spirit. And one of these days, when you die and go to be with the Lord, you'll be a holy ghost!

20. You're the greatest show on Earth and all Heaven is watching you!

21. There is no past, no present, no future to the Lord! It's all one great Eternal Now.

22. Spirits in the spirit world are still very much like us in their feelings, emotions, desires, choices, opinions and preferences.

23. What's the tunnel for?--To get you safely through all the darkness of this Earth to which the forces of evil are confined, and shoot you like a rocket to get you where you're going, protected by the Lord!

24. Some stars are actually spirits, and there are positive and negative stars. This is exactly what science is finding out.

25. In some ways we're even more important than the angels! God didn't send His Son to die for the angels, He sent Him to die for us! We're going to judge angels!

26. "All things are possible if thou canst believe the words of your father!" You can even go back in the past and change the future!

27. Better to be alive in the next world than dead in this one!

28. The good ghosts love you and the bad ghosts are afraid of you!

29. My life is just like a tape which the Lord can run backwards or forwards, stop it anywhere He wants and play it to show me the past and the future!

30. There is nothing new under the sun! Everything man ever invented is nothing but a cheap imitation, a poor plastic counterfeit, or a simple illustration of the realities of the Spirit.

31. In the Spirit World there is no possibility of your lying or deceiving anybody, because everybody knows exactly what you're thinking and what's actually on your mind.

32. The next World is not going to be too much different from this one--only better! After all, how could God make a World much more beautiful than the one He has already made!

33. It's not very easy for a ghost to help human beings, because people are scared of ghosts. So God has to use you.

34. Behind all the physical nations and the physical appearances and kings and powers, there are spiritual powers who are struggling against each other.

35. We'll never know full reality until we are fully in the realm of the spirit.

36. All good inventions are inspired by the Lord from His Spirit World, & all bad ones from the Devil and his demons.

37. Our daily lives and the World's future are being influenced by the battles in the Spirit World between the Lord and His angels on one hand, and the Devil and his angels on the other.

38. God also uses departed human spirits as His agents, angels or messengers.

39. What's happening on the surface is nothing but a little physical manifestation of the real action. Where the real action is in the Spirit World, and it's in full control.

40. In the Spirit World there is no time, it's one great Eternal Now!

41. A halo is like a spiritual crown, it's a source of your power, like an antenna. It's a crown of power, a crown of revelation, a crown of authority the Lord has given you, like your guardian angel.

42. The children that have died that I have known, when we have seen them in the Spirit, were older, full grown, but beautiful! The old people that I have seen in the Spirit that have died, looked younger and in their prime!

43. Who wants to go around sight-seeing? It's just such a waste of time to see junk and old ruins and wrecks! The thing that thrills me is touring in the Spirit! Then you really see things you've never seen before!

44. You're nothing but a Christian in the realm of the Spirit! God doesn't see your colour, your nationality, or your sex or any other damned fleshly characteristic!

45. All spirits are subject unto you, both good and evil!

46. You can have your genie at your command, your heavenly angel who will do what you want done, your own personal messenger to help you carry out the work of God!

47. At night, human spirits become inactive and silent, but then the spirits of the spiritual world are able to become much more active and communicate much more easily!

48. Not all voices are of God, and you must "try the spirits" to make sure that what you're hearing is of the Lord.

49. We're happy now in our work!--And though we'll have work to do there, we'll be even happier as we carry on the business of the Universe, traveling around from one planet to the other, one star to the other, one galaxy to the other!

50. The Devil is under God's control, and all of the spirits are under God's control, and they have to do whatever He says!

51. The Spirit World is all around us, up, down and all around--and even in us!

52. What is science?--Knowledge! What is the supernatural, the spiritual, the miraculous?--It's just God's science with which man is not familiar!

53. Thank You Lord for Thy many counselors and the multitudes of spirit-helpers Thou hast given us at our disposal and our command.

54. There is a terrible battle being waged in the Spirit World, with great noise and clashing of arms and shouts and screams against us and what we're doing for the Lord!

55. I always love to see the garden filled with birds! It's almost like a sign from the Lord, because they're His little guardian angels, His little protecting spirits!

56. Birds are a sign of the presence and blessing of the Lord, symbolic of His good spirits.

57. Let me crawl into your eyes, and my brain will become your brain, and we'll take a spirit trip together!

58. Angel-speed is what I need!

Just think it so and off I go!

59. Spirits have different stations, but they all have limitations.

60. The Devil will not be running Hell!--He'll be one of the inmates! God is the Jailer of Hell, the Warden!--The Devil and demons are His prisoners!

61. Everyone who has Jesus in his heart is a medium--someone whom a spiritual power can possess and use to communicate things which normally under their own power they could not do!

62. I do not feel any age yet. There is no age to the spirit.

63. In the same way in which the righteous can have the help of good spirits according to their righteousness, so the evil can be afflicted with evil spirits according to their wickedness!

64. We are getting into serious days in which the work of the Enemy is going to be more and more manifest and more and more supernatural, more miraculous and more active as he wars against us.

65. It's just as possible to catch diseases in the Spirit as it is in the physical, in fact, even more so.

66. You and I today belong both to time and eternity! We have one foot in Heaven and one foot on Earth!

67. If you're spiritually sensitive, that's all the more reason you have to be especially careful what spirit you're hearing from!

68. If things aren't fair in this life, they certainly will be in the next.

69. We'll have all kinds of exciting work to do in the next World, and we'll be even happier, with lots of mobility, accomplishment, progress, variety, travel, freedom, messenger work and other thrilling work.

70. The angels were never human, so they are some kind of energy body--like a star or like a halo or like a flying saucer, a circle of energy or power. They are personalities, in a sense, but they are like energy or spirit.

71. Everything the Devil does is an imitation of what Christ does, the Devil has never thought up anything new.

72. The Devil is under God's control--only man is out of control and can defy God!

73. Many of the ancient idols represented actual demon spirits. That is why God didn't like the idols, because of the spirits they represented.

74. The Devil is God's employee, just God's Executioner, God's prosecuting attorney.

75. The Enemy is the Lord's Executioner, the Lord's High Executioner, but he's not as high as the Lord. He brings about many of the judgments of God, but the Lord won't let him touch us unless He has some reason for it.

76. Not even the Devil is omnipresent. He can only be in one place at one time.

77. All day long and even at night in your sleep you're receiving the Lord's communication.

78. Thank God for His Heavenly Beings--His Ministering Spirits and Angels who are watching over us continually and helping us all the time.

79. The Devil is not like God, he doesn't know everything, he only knows what God's already said and already done. He knows what God has publicly predicted that He's going to do, like prophecies etc., so he knows the course of history and what's going to happen. But we can read it too, so we know as much as he does about that. But he does not know God's every move and what God's going to do next.

80. The Lord chose to come and be born as a man--a clear-cut case of pre-existence and choice! If the Lord can do it, why can't we?

81. Certainly the Spirit World is very very close--it's right here & now & all around us! We're probably sitting in it right now without knowing it!

82. The laws of physics tell you that two things cannot occupy the same place at the same time, but the spirit can! Because it's not physics, it's not physical, it's spirit and spiritual!

83. God is so great and beyond our comprehension, so He uses both the angels and the ministering spirits of the departed to minister to us more intimately, more personally, more directly. They're His instruments in the next life helping us in this life.

84. Do you realise what a big job it must be for those in the Spirit World just taking care of all the people who are dying? That's enough to keep almost everybody busy up there!

85. Did you know that the spirits have discussions and they debate about things? Not everything is totally all fixed and settled in the Spirit World, in fact it's very much like this World really. (1Ki.22:19-22)

86. There's a separation of some kind between us and the Spirit World, across which normally spirits are not usually allowed to pass except for certain specific purposes.

87. The day is coming when time shall be no more and we shall live in the World of the Eternal Now where there is no past and no future, only the present.

88. In the Spirit, it's like the past, present and future are all one. The kingdom of God now is the Kingdom of God later.--The Eternal Kingdom!

89. Thank God for His angels, who are watching over us continually, even your personal angel, whose job is you!

90. An angel travels in a wheel, disc, halo, ring or "flying saucer" of light! God was traveling in a wheel when Ezekiel saw Him. (Ezk.1) Apparently it's some form of power not only for other things but also for spiritual travel.

91. As a spirit you still have personal choice and desires. Look how the angels desired the daughters of men. They literally lusted after them because they were so beautiful, made love to them & had gigantic children! (Gen.6:1-4) So apparently the spirits are still learning.

92. In the Spirit World & Millennium you may have the same characteristics & some of the same problems you have now, but you'll be better off & in more direct communication & obey better because you'll be under more direct control.

93. The Spirit World is not so terribly different from this present existence that we can't even comprehend it or can't even understand it.

94. We are going to be much the same as we are now, except that we're going to have supernatural bodies. We will look like we do now, just as Jesus did after His Resurrection.

95. There are UFOs! They are spirit beings and they do appear and people have seen them. Technicians have scientifically tracked them. They have appeared as "signs in the sky" to unbelieving man. (Dan.6:27; Lk.21:11,25; Acts 22:6; Rev.15:1) That's the way certain angels travel. Their speed and manoeuvrability are so great that only a spirit could survive such courses!

96. The Spirit World is all so real and down to Earth, more realistic than some would have you believe.

97. There are definite differences and spiritual levels and classes and grades of authority in the Spirit World, just like in the army. There are different kinds of spirits, not only good and evil spirits, but amongst both the good and the evil there are various grades and levels of command and authority.

98. Everything in the Spirit World seems to move so slowly and so beautifully, almost like in slow motion.

99. What else are dreams but your imagination, in a way, guided by the Lord?--Or if you have nightmares, by the Devil!

100. The study of spirits and spiritism can be dangerous, leading to more interest in the Devil and his devices than the Lord and His.--Just don't be altogether ignorant of them!

101. It's a common favourite tactic of the Enemy to start his attack by building up sentiment against others and laying a net for others in hopes of catching us in the same net, not really specifying who he's really after, until he gets governments and peoples all stirred up over a certain kind of issue and all in the frame of mind to stop it and clamp down on it, persuading governments to make certain regulations under which our enemies then can attack their real enemy, God's children.

102. If we could see the crowd of spirit helpers around us, then we'd really behave ourselves!

(See also No. 56, 57, 72, 73A, 75A, 80, 102, 195, 206, 224, 261, 262, 271, 273, 275A, 279, 296, 298, 301, 341, 365, 368, 554, 614, 615, 616, 620, 621, 622, 623, 624, 686, 710, 711, 713, 723, 760, 794, 795, 796, 818, 820,

945, 948, 980, 998, 1237, 1261, 1262, 1264, 1278, 1304, 1369, 1403, 1404, 1405, 1408, 1409, 1410, 1411, 1412, 1413, 1414, 1415, 1420, 1421, 1423, Gen Series, 1430, 1476, 1477, 1479, 1480, 1481, 1482, 1483, 1484, 1513, 1541, 1606.)

103. Gen.20:6 And God said unto him in a dream, Yea, I know that thou didst this in the integrity of thy heart; for I also withheld thee from sinning against me: therefore suffered I thee not to touch her.

104. GEN.24:40a And he said unto me, The Lord, before whom I walk, will send his angel with thee, and prosper thy way.

105. EXO.3:2 The angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a flame of fire out of the midst of a bush: and he looked, and, behold, the bush burned with fire, and the bush was not consumed.

106. NUM.22:23,30,31 And the ass saw the angel of the Lord standing in the way, and his sword drawn in his hand: and the ass turned aside out of the way, and went into the field: and Balaam smote the ass, to turn her into the way. And the ass said unto Balaam, Am not I thine ass, upon which thou hast ridden ever since I was thine unto this day? was I ever wont to do so unto thee? And he said, Nay. Then the Lord opened the eyes of Balaam, and he saw the angel of the Lord standing in the way, and his sword drawn in his hand: and he bowed down his head, and fell flat on his face.

107. 1KI.22:19-22 I saw the Lord sitting on his throne, and all the host of heaven standing by him on his right hand and on his left. And the Lord said, Who shall persuade Ahab, that he may go up and fall at Ramoth-gilead? And one said on this manner, and another said on that manner. And there came forth a spirit, and stood before the Lord, and said, I will persuade him. And the Lord said unto him, Wherewith? And he said, I will go forth, and I will be a lying spirit in the mouth of all his prophets. And he said, Thou shalt persuade him, and prevail also: go forth, and do so.

108. 2KI.6:16,17 And he answered, Fear not: for they that be with us are more than they that be with them. And Elisha prayed, and said, Lord, I pray thee, open his eyes, that he may see. And the Lord opened the eyes of the young man; and he saw: and, behold, the mountain was full of horses and chariots of fire round about Elisha.

109. 2KI.19:35 And it came to pass that night, that the angel of the Lord went out, and smote in the camp of the Assyrians an hundred fourscore and five thousand: and when they arose early in the morning, behold, they were all dead corpses.

110. 2CH.32:21 And the Lord sent an angel, which cut off all the mighty men of valour, and the leaders and captains in the camp of the king of Assyria. So he returned with shame of face to his own land. And when he was come into the house of his god, they that came forth of his own bowels slew him there with the sword.

111. JOB.1:6 Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan came also among them.

112. PSA.34:7 The angel of the Lord encampeth round about them that fear him, and delivereth them.

113. PSA.68:17a The chariots of God are twenty thousand, even thousands of angels: the Lord is among them.

114. PSA.78:49 He cast upon them the fierceness of his anger, wrath, and indignation, and trouble, by sending evil angels among them.

115. PSA.91:11,12 For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways. They shall bear thee up in their hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone.

116. PSA.103:20 Bless the Lord, ye his angels, that excel in strength, that do his commandments, hearkening unto the voice of his word.

117. PSA.104:4 Who maketh his angels spirits; his ministers a flaming fire:

118. ISA.14:12-15 How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit.

119. ISA.37:16 O Lord of hosts, God of Israel, that dwellest between the cherubims, thou art the God, even thou alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth: thou hast made heaven and earth.

120. DAN.3:25 He answered and said, Lo, I see four men loose, walking in the midst of the fire, and they have no hurt; and the form of the fourth is like the Son of God.

121. DAN.10:12,13 Then said he unto me, Fear not, Daniel: for from the first day that thou didst set thine heart to understand, and to chasten thyself before thy God, thy words were heard, and I am come for thy words. But the prince of the kingdom of Persia withstood me one and twenty days: but, lo, Michael, one of the chief princes, came to help me; and I remained there with the kings of Persia.

122. DAN.10:18,19 Then there came again and touched me one like the appearance of a man, and he strengthened me, And said, O man greatly beloved, fear not: peace be unto thee, be strong, yea, be strong. And when he had spoken unto me, I was strengthened, and said, Let my lord speak; for thou hast strengthened me.

123. DAN.12:1 And at that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince which standeth for the children of thy people: and there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation even to that same time: and at that time thy people shall be delivered, every one that shall be found written in the book.

124. MAT.4:11 Then the devil leaveth him, and, behold, angels came and ministered unto him.

125. MAT.26:53 Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels?

126. LUK.1:19 And the angel answering said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God; and am sent to speak unto thee, and to shew thee these glad tidings.

127. LUK.4:5-7 And the devil, taking him up into an high mountain, shewed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it. If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine.

128. LUK.9:29-31 And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his raiment was white and glistering. And, behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elias: Who appeared in glory, and spake of his decease which he should accomplish at Jerusalem.

129. LUK.10:18 And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven.

130. LUK.17:20b,21 The kingdom of God cometh not with observation: Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you.

131. LUK.22:43 And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him.

132. LUK.24:30,31 And it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them. And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight.

133. JOH.5:4 For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.

134. ACT.5:19 But the angel of the Lord by night opened the prison doors, and brought them forth.

135. ACT.12:7 And, behold, the angel of the Lord came upon him, and a light shined in the prison: and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him up, saying, Arise up quickly. And his chains fell off from his hands.

136. ACT.27:23 For there stood by me this night the angel of God, whose I am, and whom I serve,

137. 2CO.4:18 While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal; but the things which are not seen are eternal.

138. 2CO.11:14,15 And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works.

139. EPH.6:12 For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.

140. HEB.1:14 Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?

141. HEB.11:16,10 But now they desire a better country, that is, an heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for he hath prepared for them a city. For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God.

142. HEB.12:1a Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses.

143. HEB.13:2 Be not forgetful to entertain strangers: for thereby some have entertained angels unawares.

144. 1PE.3:19 By which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison;

145. 1PE.3:21b,22 By the resurrection of Jesus Christ: Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God; angels and authorities and powers being made subject unto him.

146. 1PE.4:6 For for this cause was the gospel preached also to them that are dead, that they might be judged according to men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit.

147. 2PE.2:4 God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment.

148. 1JO.4:1-3 Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.

149. JUD.6 And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day.

150. JUD.9 Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke thee.

151. REV.12:7 And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels,

152. REV.12:9 And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

153. REV.22:8,9 And I John saw these things, and heard them. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel which shewed me these things. Then saith he unto me, See thou do it not: for I am thy fellowservant, and of thy brethren the prophets, and of them which keep the sayings of this book: worship God.

(See also JOB.4:15-19.)

#### 124. SQUEEZE, DON'T JERK --{page 967}--



*The thoughts of the diligent tend only to plenteousness: but of every one that is hasty only to want (Pro.21:5).*

1. Look before you leap! Squeeze, don't jerk! Stop, look and listen!
2. Learn to pause--or nothing worthwhile will catch up with you.
3. Speed even kills your chances to survive!
4. Make haste slowly.
5. Slow and steady wins the race.
6. Adopt the pace of nature: her secret is patience.
7. The only wise speed at which to live is...Godspeed.
8. If you go slow, you live longer!
9. Speed kills. Haste makes waste. Patience takes faith.
10. You may save a minute but lose a life!
11. If you go slow, you may get there quicker.--At least you'll get there.
12. Better late than never!--Better safe than sorry!
13. If you stop to look before you leap, you may not have to leap at all!
14. To climb steep hills requires slow pace at first.
15. Make sure you're following God, and not trying to rush ahead of Him to show Him the way you want Him to go!
16. The hurrier I go, the hinderer I get!
17. Being in a hurry is a lack of faith.



18. Hurry is the Devil's business! He's always in a hurry and always trying to make people be in a hurry. He's trying to make the World go faster and faster all the time.

19. Either of these is dangerous--moving too fast--or not fast enough! Move with God.

20. Hurry is a mistake and is what the Devil loves to push you to do so you don't have time to test things and see if they're the Lord.

21. The Devil is the author of haste. A sudden impulse can often come straight from the Devil.

22. It is better to be a few minutes late down here than too early up there.

23. Hindsight explains the injury that foresight would have prevented.

24. It's better to be slow and do it right, than fast and do it wrong!

25. God is never in a hurry and He likes things to move slowly and gracefully and beautifully, weightlessly, in slow motion!

26. God likes certain kinds of speed--He will "speedily deliver the poor" and He can move fast when He has to! But normally He likes things to move slowly.

27. God never seems to be in a hurry! For thousands of years He's worked out His purpose and His plan.

28. Look before you leap, and don't leap before you look! Haste may make waste of all you've worked so hard for!

29. If you get into a wrathful, wrathful, writhing spirit, then things will go haywire and everything will go wrong. The answer is not in hurrying, not in the strength of the arm of flesh, not in haste that maketh waste. The answer is a meek and quiet spirit that the Lord will not despise. In other words He will bless it. He despises that other spirit, the haughty, proud, hurried spirit of the World where haste always makes waste and the hurrier you go the behinder you get.

30. If you're speeding so fast and trying to get too much done instead of following the Lord & His guidance and slowing down and waiting for Him, you're running ahead of Him and you're going to crash and crack up.

31. I never like it when the Devil tries to get us in a rush! He always tries to get you in a rush because if he can make you hurry he can make you make mistakes. The Devil's own business is to try to push you and rush you, because then you're most apt to make mistakes.

32. It's better to be slow and do it right, than fast and do it wrong.

33. Making pop judgements prematurely in advance before we know, and dropping bombs on somebody, that we're going to do so-&-so, when we don't know what we're going to do, that's very foolish.

(See also No. 11, 74, 98, 169, 191, 838, 1286, 1495.)

34. PRO.14:29 He that is slow to wrath is of great understanding: but he that is hasty of spirit exalteth folly.

35. PRO.19:2b He that hasteth with his feet sinneth.

36. ECC.7:8b The patient in spirit is better than the proud in spirit.

37. ACT.19:36b Ye ought to be quiet, and to do nothing rashly.



*My grace is sufficient for thee: for My strength is made perfect in weakness. We have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us (2Cor.12:9;4:7).*

1. It must be the oil that burns and not the wick, for the wick without oil shall destroy itself! You must let Him burn to light the way, and not try to burn of yourself, or you'll soon burn out, and have no light left for your Master!

2. It is not I that burn, but Christ must burn within me, to give pure light, smokeless light, clear light, beautiful light! (Gal.2:20) You can be a beautiful wick but still burn black, with so little oil! You must soak yourself in more oil, that you burn not, but let Him burn through you to give light to all the house!

3. I've turned on the faucet.--Is the faucet working? No, it's not!--The faucet is doing nothing! It's the power and the pressure from outside that causes the water to flow through the faucet! All you do is turn it on and it flows with effortless ease! The faucet is just the channel, just a hole to let the water in and out. You say the faucet's working? The faucet is not working!--It's the water that is working! The faucet is just letting it flow! The power isn't in the faucet. The power is outside. The pump is outside, but it creates pressure in the faucet, so all you have to do is release it and let it flow. Just open the faucet and let it roll!

4. I'm a very small man, but I have a very big God Who is more than big enough for the job!

5. Sometimes God has to make you so stupid that you can't even think, to show you are an idiot and can do nothing without His help.

6. When you're the weakest in the flesh--you're the closest in the Spirit.

7. Do what you can do, and God will do what you can't do.

8. Only God knows what to do and only God knows what he wants done, and only God can do it.

9. When you've got good ideas up your sleeves, God must be on the other end of your sleeve inspiring you!

10. God's requirements are met by God's enablings.

11. He will give you power for the hour, grace for the space and wisdom for the wonder!

12. Man's extremity is God's opportunity.

13. One, on God's side, is a majority.

14. It's humanly physically impossible to do everything! You just have to do what you can do day by day, and leave the rest to the Lord. If you can't do it, He has to.

15. I can of my own self give nothing and of my own self see nothing but what the Father giveth through me and what He showeth me!

16. You can't impart something you haven't got! If you haven't had the input, how can you have the output?

17. Without Him you can do nothing good and anything bad.

18. If you don't know how you're going to make it, He can make it for you.

19. People don't realise the power of the Name of Jesus, and without that Name there is no power!

20. In the Name of Jesus there is power, because God has confined Himself to work through the power of the Name of Jesus Christ!

21. If God can't do it, nobody can.

22. There's nothing too small for the Lord or too hard for Him.

23. Watch the diamonds of dust! They don't try to sparkle & shine. They just let the light shine through them.

24. Don't underestimate the power that God has given you.

25. It takes an impossible situation for God to do a miracle!
26. God will never give you more than you can take care of!
27. May the best win!--To the strongest!--But sometimes to the weakest, who depend more on the Lord's strength than their own wisdom.
28. God never gives you burdens greater than you're able to bear!
29. Nothing can limit the power of the Spirit of God!
30. The Lord anoints according to the need.
31. All He expects you do to is obey & He'll do it through you. He enjoys using you, confining the majesty & the power of His omnipotence to little frail men & women!--God in the hands of men!
32. When you're weakest in the flesh, then you're strongest in the Spirit.
33. God helps both those who help themselves & those who can't help themselves. He helps those that help, themselves with what they can't do, and helps those that can't help themselves with what they can't do.
34. There's no limit to what you can do if you follow God!
35. The power & the spiritual atmosphere you carry with you is like an electric shock, it's the Lord!
36. When you get under pressure & persecution, the Lord gives you a special anointing, special revelations, even more than you had before, to encourage, guide and help you!
37. I know you can do it, because I know He can do it through you, as long as you depend on Him and His letters and let them be the leaders!
38. He sometimes seems to be more limited by many than by few, like with Gideon! (Judges 7:2)
39. With Him, you're everything and you can do anything.
40. You can't deal with problems in your own strength & wisdom. It'd be better if you didn't get involved at all.
41. We do the possible, and He does the impossible!
42. Do not pray for tasks equal to your powers. Pray for powers equal to your tasks.
43. Got any rivers you think are uncrossable,  
Got any mountains you can't tunnel through?  
God specialises in things thought impossible,  
And He can do what no other friend can do.
44. We are just little straws, but we have a mighty big wind pushing us along! You are only a little straw at which they grasp, but you can pick them up by the power of His Spirit & save them!
45. It's the Spirit, God's Spirit,  
That makes you alive.  
Don't think it's you  
Or you'll never survive!
46. When you're weak and incapable & insufficient, then God has a chance to be strong and capable and sufficient in you.
47. I cannot, but God can!  
O balm for all my care!  
The burden that I drop,  
His hand will lift and bear!
48. There is a power to lift you up which is stronger than all the things that hold you down.
49. Onward Christians, onward go  
To join the war and face the foe!  
Will ye flee in danger's hour?  
Know ye not your Captain's power?
50. Don't tell me you can't, because if you couldn't, God wouldn't have asked it of you!
51. God's power is creative & loving, the Devil's power is destructive & hateful!
52. You're armed with the power of the love of God, the Spirit and His Word, the power of faith which results in works of love, & they cannot resist it!
53. When you're so weak you don't feel capable or sufficient, then God has a chance to take over & do things to suit Himself.
54. The Lord never lets you down quite all the way, even though it's your own foolish mistakes, disobedience and unpreparedness which has caused all the trouble!
55. Little is much when God is in it!
56. Little is something if God is in it, & big is nothing if God isn't!
57. God is the one that does it! It's God's breaks that make the openings!

58. Like St. Dominic, I would have to say to my enemies, "Yes, you're right:--I'm guilty of all of these things! In fact, I'm much worse than you even think: I'm terrible! But look at the Lord: Isn't He wonderful?"

59. If God's not in it, you'll never make it!

60. You cannot do the Master's Work without the Master's Power!

61. God is not limited by few or by many! (1Sam.14:6)

62. God gives you power for the hour and grace for the trial--when the hour comes and when the trials occur--not before!

63. With God all around you, even your nothing can be something!--In fact, you can be almost anything!

64. God helps those who help themselves, but He also helps those who can't help themselves. And He doesn't help those who can help themselves but won't! The Lord never seems to do anything for those who can do it themselves.

65. If you've got God with you, you're unbeatable, no matter how small you are!

66. One man against the World with God is more than a match for the Devil!--One man and God are a majority!

67. Without Him you're nothing, But with Him you're everything!

68. The power that God has given you is able to destroy the works of the Enemy.

69. Little weak, tiny, vulnerable man with his brains and the blessing of God conquered the Earth against dinosaurs!

70. His Love, Joy, Name, Power, Spirit and Words still work wonders 'round the Word!

71. You have Jesus so you have His power!

72. Are you equal to the Task?--No, but God is!

73. When you have nothing left but God, then for the first time you become aware that God is enough.

74. When I'm tired, I'm weary and I'm worn,

And fighting to survive,

In my very weakness,

Christ then comes alive!

75. It's all God's and He can take it all back if He wants to, including your life!

76. If it come, it come! If it don't come, it don't come! If you're a receiver, you'll get whatever He wants to give you in His time and His way.

77. Having so much natural strength and drive is the very thing that stands in the way of the Lord showing His strength.

78. God doesn't push His help on people when they reject it, and especially when they don't appreciate it and refuse to cooperate with Him.

79. The only way to keep a broken vessel full is to keep it always under the tap.

80. We're not "Christian Triers", but "Lord Letters".

81. The dumbest person depending on God can outsmart the smartest person not asking God for help.

82. "Without Me ye can do nothing! Ye would be as candles without tallow, as lamps without power, as flowers without fluid, as urns without oil and as empty vases full of nothingness and useless! But glorify Me in all things, then shall they candle be exalted, and thy urn be full of oil and thy vase flow freely with the Water of Life, and thy flower shall not wither, thy power shall not fail and thy wisdom shall not cease forever!"

83. People have to see you, but they've got to see Jesus coming through you!

84. Christians are kind of childlike and stupid and a little bit dumb, that's why God can use them and that's why God works through them, confounds the mighty with the simple things, and has not revealed these things to the wise and prudent, the smart and worldly people, but unto Christian babes like you and me. "Except ye become as a little child, ye shall in no wise enter into the Kingdom of God." People with the most education have the hardest time, you can't get past their heads.

85. "Then thou shalt continue to be a light unto My people & to quench their thirst for everlasting water & to heal their wounds & give beauty for ashes & wisdom for foolishness, & shalt pour forth thy life upon the dry ground that it may bring forth fruit.--Thou shalt glorify Me, the Author and the Finisher of all things, if thou shalt burn only with My power and flow with My life, and speak by My Spirit, and give Me the glory, and not thyself, lest thou become as one of them who have died and in whom there is no life."

86. All of God's great spiritual giants were weak men who were made strong by His power.

87. Give me a task too big

Too hard for human hands

Then shall I come at length

To lean on Thee;

And leaning find my strength.

88. The small boy was trying very hard to lift a heavy object. His father coming into the room and noting the son's struggle asked him. "Are you using all your strength?" "Yes, of course I am," the boy impatiently exclaimed. "You are not," the father answered. "You haven't asked me to help you."

89. You'll never have the spiritual strength and stamina nor the spirit that will even sustain your bodily stamina to keep going to get out the Word unless you yourself are drinking in the Word and being spiritually nourished and strengthened by it yourself first.

90. Give God all the credit all the time at every turn for every little thing and He will never fail to continue to prosper and empower you.

91. It is God that gives us the strength and God that has done it all. We are the work of God, the work of His fingers, and we give Him all the glory!

92. All glory be to Jesus! He's the One that does it all. We're merely His yielded instruments, vessels of clay in the hand of the Potter!--Merely doing His will and serving His purpose for which we were called and ordained before the foundation of the Earth!

93. The minute you start patting yourself on the back you're finished and God will see to it that you're humbled to bring you out of it! He's a jealous God, and He deserves the glory and will have no other god before Him. So you better not start admiring your own arm of the flesh or you're apt to lose it!

94. "Be not thou therefore as they, but glorify Me in all things!--Then shall thy candle be exalted and thy urn full of oil and thy vase flow freely with the water of life and thy flower shall not wither, thy power shall not fail, thy wisdom shall not cease forever."

95. Trust Him and His grace and His love and His mercy and give Him all the glory and all the credit. If there's anything good you ever do, do you give Him the glory? Do you say, "Thank You Jesus! Don't thank me, thank the Lord, it's all the Lord."

96. That's what the Lord looks upon as saintliness: The person who knows he's a sinner and therefore gives God all the glory. If anything good comes of what we've done, as Paul said, "I know that in my flesh there dwelleth no good thing." (Rom.7:18) There's nothing good about me or my flesh, it's only the Lord.

97. God is the One Who wants to get the credit. God is the One Who wants to get the glory, God is the only One Who can do it and then He wants you to praise and thank Him and glorify Him because He did it. Because if you could do it, you could pat yourself on the back for it and say, "Well, look what I've done! Look how great I am! Look how wonderfully I'm doing!"

98. You better keep saying, "Wow! Look what God has done! Look at what the Lord's doing! Look at how great He's working! Look how many disciples He's getting!" Whatsoever you do in word or deed do all to the glory of God!

99. Men of force are men of faults, and the biggest fault is to keep on going in their own force instead of letting the Lord do it.

100. Just leave it with the Lord, knowing that only He can solve the problems & only He can do the work. We cannot solve the problems, He has to do it. Let go and let God!

101. It's all the Lord, it's all His love! You're the vessels of His love to manifest His love to others, you're the vessels through which He pours out His love! You are the Love of God!

102. You are weak because in your pride you're trying to do things in the energy of your own flesh instead of trusting God for His grace to do it. And the reason you haven't got the faith and can't believe God for sufficient strength is because you're not yielded yet, most of all your pride.

103. You who don't seem to think that you can do anything or are anybody or ever get anywhere, you who are almost too shy to even open your mouth or lift your voice or say a word or do anything, if you'll just keep sweet and be meek and lowly and humble and quiet, God will use you. He'll speak through you and open your mouth!

104. The biggest failures in the Word of God were the bigshot boys who thought they could do it in their natural wisdom and instead went out and fell flat on their faces.

105. People with a lot of drive and talent and personality and natural charm have a hard time really letting go and letting God, because they've got so much to let go of. When they do let go, they think they're drowning or sinking.

106. It's much more difficult for people with a great deal of natural talent to just trust the Lord because they've got so much natural strength and they're used to leaning on that. They're used to having it there and when it's suddenly gone they just collapse.

107. If all the little people in the past have already performed miracles by the scores and scores, both in the Old and New Testament and down through Church History, then the little people of the present can do it too and they don't have to wait for the Tribulation or Millennium or the new Earth, they can do it now!

(See also No. 9, 25, 45, 66, 74, 159, 169, 171, 191, 328, 720, 1091, 1375, 1427, 1493.)

108. GEN.18:14a Is any thing too hard for the Lord?

109. EXO.4:10-12a And Moses said unto the Lord, O my Lord, I am not eloquent, neither heretofore, nor since thou hast spoken unto thy servant: but I am slow of speech, and of a slow tongue. And the Lord said unto him, Who hath made man's mouth? or who maketh the dumb, or deaf, or the seeing, or the blind? have not I the Lord? Now therefore go, and I will be with thy mouth, and teach thee what thou shalt say.

110. EXO.14:13a,14 Fear ye not, stand still, and see the salvation of the Lord, which he will shew to you to day. The Lord shall fight for you, and ye shall hold your peace.

111. EXO.15:2 The Lord is my strength and song, and he is become my salvation: he is my God, and I will prepare him an habitation; my father's God, and I will exalt him.

112. DEU.8:18a Thou shalt remember the Lord thy God: for it is he that giveth thee power to get wealth.

113. DEU.20:1 When thou goest out to battle against thine enemies, and seest horses, and chariots, and a people more than thou, be not afraid of them: for the Lord thy God is with thee, which brought thee up out of the land of Egypt.

114. DEU.31:8 The Lord, He it is that doth go before thee; He will be with thee, He will not fail thee, neither forsake thee: fear not, neither be dismayed.

115. DEU.33:25 Thy shoes shall be iron and brass; and as thy days, so shall thy strength be.

116. JOS.23:10 One man of you shall chase a thousand: for the Lord your God, He it is that fighteth for you, as He hath promised you.

117. ISA.2:9 He will keep the feet of his saints, and the wicked shall be silent in darkness; for by strength shall no man prevail.

118. ISA.14:6b For there is no restraint to the Lord to save by many or by few.

119. ISA.17:45 Then said David to the Philistine, Thou comest to me with a sword, and with a spear, and with a shield: but I come to thee in the name of the Lord of hosts, the God of the armies of Israel, whom thou hast defied.

120. ISA.17:47 And all this assembly shall know that the Lord saveth not with sword and spear: for the battle is the Lord's, and he will give you into our hands.

121. 2SA.22:33 God is my strength and power: and He maketh my way perfect.

122. 2CH.14:11 And Asa cried unto the Lord his God, and said, Lord, it is nothing with thee to help, whether with many, or with them that have no power: help us, O Lord our God; for we rest on thee, and in thy name we go against this multitude.

123. 2CH.16:7,8 And at that time Hanani the seer came to Asa king of Judah, and said unto him, Because thou hast relied on the king of Syria, and not relied on the Lord thy God, therefore is the host of the king of Syria escaped out of thine hand. Were not the Ethiopians and the Lubims a huge host, with very many chariots and horsemen? yet, because thou didst rely on the Lord, He delivered them into thine hand.

124. 2CH.20:12 O our God, wilt thou not judge them? for we have no might against this great company that cometh against us; neither know we what to do: but our eyes are upon thee.

125. 2CH.20:15b Thus saith the Lord unto you, Be not afraid nor dismayed by reason of this great multitude; for the battle is not yours, but God's.

126. 2CH.20:17 Ye shall not need to fight in this battle: set yourselves, stand ye still, and see the salvation of the Lord with you, O Judah and Jerusalem: fear not, nor be dismayed; to morrow go out against them: for the Lord will be with you.

127. 2CH.32:7,8 Be strong and courageous, be not afraid nor dismayed for the king of Assyria, nor for all the multitude that is with him: for there be more with us than with him: With him is an arm of flesh; but with us is the Lord our God to help us, and to fight our battles. 128. NEH.4:20b Our God shall fight for us.

129. JOB.42:2a I know that thou canst do every thing.

130. PSA.8:2 Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings hast thou ordained strength because of thine enemies, that thou mightest still the enemy and the avenger.

131. PSA.20:7 Some trust in chariots, and some in horses: but we will remember the name of the Lord our God.

132. PSA.28:7a The Lord is my strength and my shield; my heart trusted in him, and I am helped.

133. PSA.33:16,17 There is no king saved by the multitude of an host: a mighty man is not delivered by much strength. An horse is a vain thing for safety: neither shall he deliver any by his great strength.

134. PSA.37:39 But the salvation of the righteous is of the Lord: he is their strength in the time of trouble.

135. PSA.44:6 I will not trust in my bow, neither shall my sword save me.
136. PSA.49:6,7 They that trust in their wealth, and boast themselves in the multitude of their riches; None of them can by any means redeem his brother, nor give to God a ransom for him:
137. PSA.60:11 Give us help from trouble: for vain is the help of man.
138. PSA.68:35b The God of Israel is he that giveth strength and power unto his people.
139. PSA.71:16 I will go in the strength of the Lord God: I will make mention of thy righteousness, even of thine only.
140. PSA.72:12 For he shall deliver the needy when he crieth; the poor also, and him that hath no helper.
141. PSA.73:26 My flesh and my heart faileth: but God is the strength of my heart, and my portion for ever.
142. PSA.84:5a Blessed is the man whose strength is in Thee.
143. PSA.89:17,18 For thou art the glory of their strength: and in thy favour our horn shall be exalted. For the Lord is our defence; and the Holy One of Israel is our king.
144. PSA.105:4a Seek the Lord, and His strength.
145. PSA.118:8,9 It is better to trust in the Lord than to put confidence in man. It is better to trust in the Lord than to put confidence in princes.
146. PSA.127:1 Except the Lord build the house, they labour in vain that build it: except the Lord keep the city, the watchman waketh but in vain.
147. PRO.21:31 The horse is prepared against the day of battle: but safety is of the Lord.
148. ECC.5:19 Every man also to whom God hath given riches and wealth, and hath given him power to eat thereof, and to take his portion, and to rejoice in his labour; this is the gift of God.
149. ISA.22:11 Ye made also a ditch between the two walls for the water of the old pool: but ye have not looked unto the Maker thereof, neither had respect unto him that fashioned it long ago.
150. ISA.25:4 For thou hast been a strength to the poor, a strength to the needy in his distress, a refuge from the storm, a shadow from the heat, when the blast of the terrible ones is as a storm against the wall.
151. ISA.40:29 He giveth power to the faint; and to them that have no might he increaseth strength.
152. ISA.40:31 But they that wait upon the Lord shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint.
153. ISA.50:4 The Lord God hath given me the tongue of the learned, that I should know how to speak a word in season to him that is weary: he wakeneth morning by morning, he wakeneth mine ear to hear as the learned.
154. JER.10:23 O Lord, I know that the way of man is not in himself: it is not in man that walketh to direct his steps.
155. JER.17:5 Thus saith the Lord; Cursed be the man that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the Lord.
156. JER.32:27 Behold, I am the Lord, the God of all flesh: is there any thing too hard for me?
157. DAN.11:32b The people that do know their God shall be strong, and do exploits.
158. HOS.10:13b Ye have eaten the fruit of lies: because thou didst trust in thy way, in the multitude of thy mighty men.
159. ZEP.3:17 The Lord thy God in the midst of thee is mighty; He will save, He will rejoice over thee with joy; he will rest in His love, He will joy over thee with singing.
160. ZEC.4:6b Not by might, nor by power, but by my spirit, saith the Lord of hosts.
161. ZEC.10:12 And I will strengthen them in the Lord; and they shall walk up and down in His name, saith the Lord.
162. MAT.10:20 For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you.
163. MAT.19:26b With God all things are possible.
164. JOH.14:12 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall ye do; because I go unto my Father.
165. JOH.15:5 I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.
166. JOH.17:7 All things...thou hast given me are of Thee.
167. ROM.7:18a For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing.
168. 1CO.1:17 For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel: not with wisdom of words, lest the cross of Christ should be made of none effect.
169. 2CO.3:4,5 And such trust have we through Christ to God-ward: Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think any thing as of ourselves; but our sufficiency is of God;

170. 2CO.4:7 But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us.

171. 2CO.10:4 (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;)

172. 2CO.12:9,10 And he said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me. Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christ's sake: for when I am weak, then am I strong.

173. GAL.2:20 I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.

174. PHI.2:13 It is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure.

175. PHI.3:4,7 Though I might also have confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof he might trust in the flesh, I more. But what things were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ.

176. PHI.4:13 I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me.

177. COL.1:27b Christ in you, the hope of glory:

178. COL.3:11b Christ is all, and in all.

179. 2TI.4:17 Notwithstanding the Lord stood with me, and strengthened me; that by me the preaching might be fully known, and that all the Gentiles might hear: and I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion.

180. JAM.4:13-15 Go to now, ye that say, To day or to morrow we will go into such a city, and continue there a year, and buy and sell, and get gain: Whereas ye know not what shall be on the morrow. For what is your life? It is even a vapour, that appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheth away. For that ye ought to say, If the Lord will, we shall live, and do this, or that.

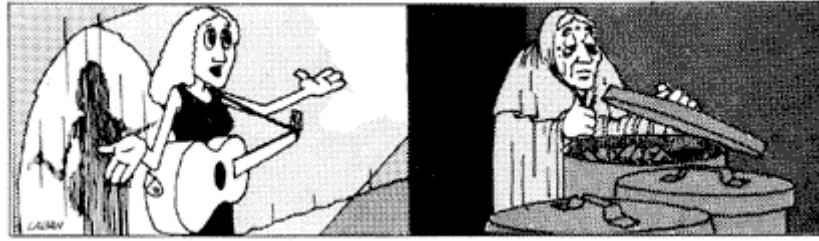
181. 1PE.4:11 If any man speak, let him speak as the oracles of God; if any man minister, let him do it as of the ability which God giveth: that God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

182. 1JO.4:4 Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world.

183. JUD.24,25 Now unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultless before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy, To the only wise God our Saviour, be glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and ever. Amen.

(See also 1SA.2:6-8; 1SA.17:36,37,45-47; 1Ch.29:11,12; JOB.12:14-25; PSA.20:8; ISA.31:1-3; ZEC.9:8,14-16.)





*This Book of the Law shall not depart out of thy mouth; but thou shalt meditate therein day and night, that thou mayest observe to do according to all that is written therein: for then thou shalt make thy way prosperous, and then thou shalt have good success (Josh.1:8).*

1. If somehow you have not dwelt in the Word, kept the Word and taught your children the Word and made them examples of the Word, then you have failed!

2. Do you want to be successful for the Lord and with others?--Love, and you can't lose--for love never fails! Do you want the key to every heart?---Try love!--It never fails, because God is Love, and it's impossible for Him to fail!

3. Some of the saddest words in the English language are, "If I only had!"

4. There are two kinds of men who never amount to much: Those who cannot do what they are told and those who cannot do anything else.

5. Lord Byron said, "I've drunk of every fount of pleasure and quaffed every cup of fame, and yet I die of thirst!"

6. To be a success in your work have faith, be daring, be first and be different.

7. A life spent in making mistakes is not only more honourable but more useful than a life spent in doing nothing.

8. If you can meet success and failure and treat these two impostors both the same, then you'll be a man, my son!

9. Victory is failure turned inside out  
The silver tint of the clouds of doubt  
So stick to the fight when you're hardest hit  
It's when things seem worst  
That you must not quit.

10. Triumph is 10% try and 90% umph!

11. The formula for failure is to try to please everybody.

12. Victory is a bright sun that obscures and makes ridiculously unimportant all the little shadowy flecks of defeat.

13. Be dissatisfied enough to improve, but satisfied enough to be happy.

14. Mistakes will happen, but must you give them so much help?

15. If at first you succeed, try something harder.

16. He that never climbed never fell.

17. There is only one thing worse than being talked about, and that is not being talked about.

18. Of all sad words of tongue or pen,  
The saddest are, "It might have been!"

19. Success has made failures of many men.

20. The secret of success is if you think you've got a lemon, make lemonade out of it. Turn burdens into blessings.

21. If it doesn't make somebody glad, mad or sad, it's a failure!

22. Those who win are those who wait upon His Word, and those that fail are those who go ahead without it!

23. You can't measure your success by your number of failures. All your failures don't count!--If you have just one success!

24. The only person who has never failed is the guy who's never tried.

25. The person who never makes a mistake is the person who never does anything!

26. I'd lots rather go home because I finished the job, than go home because I failed the job!

27. All growth that is not towards God is going to decay.

28. If you were to judge Jeremiah by his success in getting Israel to repent, he was a flat failure, but he was faithful and delivered his soul!

29. God gets His greatest victories out of seeming defeats, and He causeth the wrath of man to praise Him!

30. One lays down the cross, another takes it up! One forsakes the crown, another cherishes it! One deserts his birthright, another inherits it!

31. God will not be frustrated, His plan is not going to fail!

32. We can't always count our success by numbers. It is one indication, but to God just one soul is worth it all.

33. Even your mistakes are part of your training!

34. Making mistakes is one way God has of keeping you humble!

35. Success is a great defeat when it's a success in the World and takes you out of God's Work!

36. God doesn't fail, but when you fail, you fail to reap the benefits of the blessings that God would have given you if you'd obeyed.

37. The biggest failures of the Bible were the big shot boys who thought they knew what to do and went out and fell flat on their faces!

38. If things aren't going quite right we certainly know it's not God's fault, and that we must just not be getting our signals straight somehow, or our wires are crossed somewhere in some way that's not suitable or pleasing to Him.

39. Pride causes fear of failure and therefore causes failure.

40. The minute you neglect the Lord and His Word and the Words of His Prophet, you are programmed to self-destruct!

41. Nothing succeeds like success--and people like to give to it!

42. A mistake is evidence that someone has tried to do something.

43. From the errors of others, a wise man corrects his own.

44. Love never fails! Even when it looks like we lose, we still win!

45. Failure teaches success.

46. If at first you don't succeed, try looking in the waste basket for the directions you threw away.

47. One of the secrets of victory is constancy of purpose.

48. The only place where success comes before work is in the dictionary.

49. Disappointment should always be taken as a stimulant and never viewed as a discouragement.

50. The rungs in the ladder of accomplishment are composed of difficulties overcome one by one.

51. One of the greatest mistakes you can make in this life is to be continually fearing you will make one.

52. The rung of a ladder was never meant to rest upon, but only to hold a man's foot long enough to enable him to put the other foot somewhat higher.

53. Genius is about 2% inspiration & 98% perspiration.

54. To err is human, but when the eraser wears out long before the pencil, don't you think that you're overdoing it?

55. The sign on the door of opportunity says "Push"!

56. Success comes in cans, failure comes in can'ts.

57. Success is getting up one more time than falling down. (Pro.24:16)

58. Success humbles the great man, astonishes the common man & puffs up the little man.

59. If only one soul was saved through it all, it was worth it!

60. Defeat teaches you a lot.

61. The greatest men in the Bible were guys that made terrible mistakes & realised that they needed God.

62. God gets some of His greatest victories out of seeming defeats.

63. If you want to be successful, it's just this simple: Know what you are doing. Love what you are doing. And believe in what you are doing.

64. The very fact that you fear you'll fail ensures your failure, because only faith succeeds.

65. Nothing succeeds quicker than success, & nothing fails faster than failure!

66. The secret of success is to do the common duties uncommonly well.

67. The World expects results: Don't tell others about the labour pains.--Show them the baby!
68. I would rather fail in a cause that someday will triumph, than triumph in a cause that someday will fail.
69. The road to accomplishment is dotted with many tempting parking places.
70. Men don't fail--they give up trying.
71. The man who does not make mistakes usually does not make anything.
72. God not only remembers all the good you're doing--but He even forgets your failures! (Isa.43:25;

Heb.8:12.)

73. Experience is a great thing--it helps you recognise your mistakes every time you make them again.
74. When you're on the top, it's not only the most victorious place to be, but it's the most dangerous!
75. You can tell you're making progress in your Christian life when you're passing things, not just because you've got your engine running!
76. Oftentimes calamity turns to our advantage--And great ruins make way for greater glories.
77. We're the flame of His fame forever!
78. Practice makes perfect.
79. Sometimes the best gain is to lose.
80. There are some mistakes which you make which can never be corrected, because it's too late.
81. Negative thinking is one of the forces that destroys accomplishment.
82. We make enough mistakes that we can't help, without making mistakes that we can help!
83. The World is a staircase, some are going up, some are coming down.
84. You can live it up, but you might not be able to live it down.
85. What the New Year brings to you will depend a great deal on what you are bringing to the New Year.
86. The reason there are so few good talkers in public is that there are so few thinkers in private.
87. The Lord can't fail & He doesn't want you to fail. But even if you do fail, there must be something good about it. Either you need to learn a lesson, or some others need to learn that you can fail, so they'll keep their eyes on the Lord, or maybe you need to fail in that particular thing because that isn't what the Lord wanted you to do. There are a lot of good reasons for failure, so don't always lament over failures. You may be thankful you failed in some things when you find out what might have happened if you'd succeeded when it wasn't God's will.
88. You may fall into puddles, but you don't have to lie there!
89. God's bus of golden opportunity  
May lift your spirits still,  
If you're really sorry that you missed it,  
And want to find His will.
90. Use it or lose it!
91. "Well done, thou good & faithful servant! Enter thou into the joy of thy Lord!" You may not have always been successful, but you were faithful. You may not have always been a big-shot or somebody important, but you were a good & faithful servant, you served Him well & you did a good job faithfully.
92. The saddest stories in the Bible are of men who were disappointments to God, the ones He gave every chance & opportunity to make good & they flubbed it & went back on it, forsook Him or forsook their job, forsook the work because they weren't willing to forsake something else--their wives or their family or their home or their wealth or their pride or their "freedom"!
93. If God offers you much, & you're unfaithful in that, He can hardly even trust you with that which is least after that.
94. There are plenty of instances of messes that men in the Bible made when they tried to do the Lord's work without the Lord!
95. If you don't keep your eyes on the Lord & your mind on His Word, you're doomed to defeat & doubt & disillusionment & finally failure!
96. Are you giving them prayer, love, the Word, Jesus & fellowship? If not, you're failing God & begetting poor little parentless homeless starving orphans.
97. The people who are ever learning & never coming to a knowledge, who never profit from their lessons learned, who never make the grade, who never stay in God's school till the bell rings, seldom accomplish much for the Lord. He just can't trust them--& neither can we!
98. Pride causes fear of failure, & then the fear makes you weak, or impotent, so that you do fail. You don't have enough power.
99. It's meekness & quietness, meekness of humility, believing in God & the quietness of faithful obedience to the Lord which wins the battle--regardless of how few you have & how weak you seem to be & how little you're got! It's God that honours your faith & your meekness & your quietness & your obedience to win the battle.

100. One of the smartest things any of us can do is assess our own assets & liabilities, or let somebody assess them for us or get together & assess them. What can I do & what can't I do?

101. You're never going to accomplish as much if you keep trying to do it in the energy of the flesh & all yourself instead of sitting down & saying, "Now Lord, what do You want me to do?"

102. You learn some of the best lessons of all the hard way, by your mistakes.

103. God knows what you're best suited for & what He wants to use you for & what kind of tool you are, so you had better do what He knows you can do best or you can fall flat on your face & fail if you try to do other things.

(See also No. 9, 12, 25, 31, 35, 211, 238, 242, 263, 312, 313C, 328, 334A, 383, 551, 599, 639, 703, 727, 952-1, 954-8, 957, 958, 962, 991, 1002, 1028, 1032, 1089, 1090, 1111, 1141, 1232, 1330, 1385, 1420, 1425, 1485.)

### 127. SUPPLY --{page 991}--



*My God shall supply all your need according to His riches in glory by Christ Jesus (Phil.4:19).*

1. He's better to us than He was to Himself!
2. He never stops giving as long as you keep receiving.
3. The Lord sent it even if the Devil did bring it!
4. The loving unselfish people give out at the door & God puts in at the window.
5. Money should be the least of our worries--God's got plenty of it!
6. The Lord has promised us the World, but we will only actually receive as much as we have the faith for.
7. With every additional mouth, God will supply! If He doesn't, it's because you're not doing your job.
8. The Lord never failed us. As long as we worked & were faithful and diligent in all our jobs and didn't live beyond our income, didn't live on credit and didn't live extravagantly, the Lord supplied every need and even more.
9. Everything we have comes in Jesus' name.
10. It pays to pray!
11. You're in God's hands, but in a way He's also in yours, He's at your command like the genie of Aladdin's Lamp! He says, "Command thou Me!" (Isa.45:11)
12. If you're God's employee, He is going to pay your salary.
13. If God fails to care for His own, He is worse than an infidel! (1Tim.5:8)
14. When you have a need, the first thing to remind yourself is that no matter where you are, God somehow has to and wants to supply "all your need according to His riches in glory."
15. Jobs and salaries fail, but Jesus never fails!
16. God will give you what you ask for and what you have the faith for!
17. I've very seldom found those of great faith in great need.
18. The Lord's got plenty of money--what He needs is you!

19. The richest people in the World in God's Kingdom are going to be those who share the most, and He will heap on them more than they can hold.
20. God will see to it that the poor are fed, even if He has to use the Communists to do it!
21. Outside of the power of God and His Word and the love of God and our fellow man, our greatest needs are usually "The Big Three"--"The 3Ms"--Manpower, Materials, and Money!
22. The poor are always the greatest and most faithful supporters of God's work!
23. "Even if it be a barrel of meal that never wasteth and a cruse of oil that never runs dry, I shall refill and refill and refill, until, behold, the World could not contain what I am able to give unto thee!"
24. "It is not the field nor the market that limits My capacity to produce, but it is your lack of faith."
25. If God blesses you with money, don't trust in money, trust in God.
26. If the Lord isn't supporting it, then the Lord must not like it!
27. There's just no excuse for any servant of God not to have enough support. If you're pleasing God and doing the right thing, God will drop it out of the sky if He has to!
28. Good witnessing should pay! If you're obeying, God will be blessing you in some way and will take care of your needs.
29. "In My Father's house are many" what?--huts?--shanties?--shacks? No! In My Father's House are many mansions!
30. The harvest of material blessings is always great and plenteous if you'll just go out there and obey God and do His will and harvest.
31. Our economy is not dependent on a little bit of gold! It's dependent on the Lord and the Spirit and His children!
32. One of the earliest lessons you'll learn in God's work is that you must learn not only to give, but you must learn to receive!
33. You must not neglect the Word or you'll suffer for it! If you preach it He'll bless you!
34. You can't continue to be fattened on the Word yourself while you are starving the World! God warned us that if you withhold from them, He will withhold from you--in every way--including the Word!
35. He never fails! Just seek, knock and ask, and He'll help you find, open and get!
36. God had the first fast food service, hung right on the trees in the Garden of Eden.
37. God can give you money if He has to drop it from Heaven! He can even get the serial numbers right!
38. If He can trust you with it, he'll let you have it!
39. Your income ought to be increasing as you obey the Lord and serve Him and serve the World and serve the sinners by giving them the Gospel and going where God has guided.
40. As long as you preach the Gospel and you witness and you win souls, I know God is going to support you!--Even if He has to drop it out of the sky!
41. If you really depend on the Lord, He'll provide every need, protect you and keep you and use you and bless you and make you a tremendous blessing around the World to millions for His glory.
42. He never closes a door without opening up something else!
43. Provisioning is like singing!--You have to be inspired!
44. A provisioner is a man of prayer and faith!
45. Provisioning is a terrific testimony to the power of prayer and that the Lord loves us and wants to supply all our needs, as we specifically claim His promises and believe.
46. If you really need it, He's well able to supply it without your borrowing, stealing, cheating, defrauding or robbing others to get it! Pray it in! Pray for it, and if God doesn't supply, then it's not His will!
47. If God doesn't support it, whatever it is, then it shouldn't be done!
48. God has unlimited capacity to give, and what you get is only limited by your own capacity to receive.
49. Like Elijah and the brook, the Lord never dries up your source of supplies unless you're out of God's will or it's time to go.
50. God goes very strongly on the merit system as to who deserves it and who doesn't, not necessarily according to need.
51. God's not going to foot the bill for something He didn't buy or didn't order!
52. I've usually found that wherever God guides, He not only provides, but that He also provides in the direction He's guiding.
53. He's willing to let you have almost anything you want as long as you delight yourself in Him and put Him first!
54. God cannot only do it, but He wants to do it! He's more willing to give than you are to receive!

55. If you are unselfish and generous with your spiritual riches and share them with those that need them, He will also trust you with material riches.
56. You can't force results; it's God Who gives the increase.
57. As long as you do your best for Him, He'll do His best for you.
58. You never test the resources of God until you attempt the impossible.
59. God wants to teach you to ask and receive what He has for you.
60. God not only gives you everything you need but even everything you want, if you really please Him!
61. As you begin to obey and continue to obey, God will supply all the necessary needs--and more, and will bless you beyond measure for your faithfulness in fulfilling His Word!
62. God pays you for your work by meeting your needs.
63. The Lord always pays for His business, He supports it and keeps it going!
64. If a project is of the Lord, it ought to pay for itself!
65. God is not dependent on any single source of supply.
66. If He has to drop the money out of Heaven to feed you, He'll do it if you'll obey Him and get out the Message, the Word!
67. Where God guides He provides.
68. God never takes one thing away from you without giving you something better.
69. When you're down in all spheres and being blessed in almost none, something must be wrong!
70. God will not support any work He's not ordained!
71. Obey and try and He'll supply!
72. You'll never lack for oil or meal,
- If you help God's prophet at his appeal.
73. Moses didn't pack a 40-day snack! (Ex.34:28)
74. If you take care of the prophet of God and His prophets and His missionaries, the Lord will take care of your barrel of meal so it'll not fail and your cruse of oil so it'll never run dry, like He did for the widow of Zarephath! (1Kg.17:14)
75. Work hard for the Lord and He'll work hard for you!
76. If you think I'm rich, you're right. My Father owns this house, He owns this country, in fact He owns the whole World! I'm especially rich in faith, which is the greatest riches of all!
77. Sure we're beggars! We're not ashamed to confess it! But every preacher in the World and ever priest and nearly every religionist of any kind of religion is a beggar, too!
78. The Bible exhorts you to beg! "Ask, and it shall be given you, seek, and you shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you". (Mt.7:7)
79. If you're too proud to do a little begging, then you're too damn proud and your needs aren't going to be met! People are accustomed to religious outfits begging, and most people will give to the people who have the strongest appeal and the most desperate need.
80. Nothing is too good for God's servant, but if it ministers to your pride, you may not be able to handle it.
81. God has a window and He has promised that, if you obey Him and open the windows of your life upon others, He "will open the windows of Heaven and pour out such a blessing on you that there will not be room enough for you to hold it."
82. God's idea is not to share the poverty, but to share the wealth.
83. In all the years we've lived by faith we've never starved! We've eaten well.
84. God wants you to have enough, sufficient and even plenty and abundance.
85. God has promised us palaces and cities and countries and nations and kingdoms and the World!--Not a bunch of shanties and shacks in the dung heaps! He has told us if we'll get out and give the Message to the World, that He will give us the World and the heathen!
86. God's good guarantees are unconditional! The Lord will take care of us no matter what! He'll take care of His work, His workers and their support and their witness and their supplies and their tools and weapons and ammo and all the rest as long as they need it, as long as He wants to give the people a chance.
87. The Man and the Message and the men and the methods, the organisation, communication and tabulation and security!--Without good support, none of these can possibly succeed and they are doomed to failure!
88. If you want good material and financial support, you must be in close communication with the Lord Himself. You must be firmly implanted in the vine where you're receiving the juice and the sap and the nourishment that you need directly from the Lord Himself. And if you are staying and living close to the Lord in close fellowship and obedience to His Word, God will support you and see that you survive and take care of you and "supply all your need according to His riches in glory" if He has to drop it directly out of Heaven!

89. The poor don't have very much, but they give more sacrificially than the rich, and it is the poor who support the Lord's work.

90. If you are not eating, according to God's Law, the reason is because you are not working! It's just that simple! (2Th.3:10)

91. If you will work hard at it, you will get support, and if you are not being sufficiently supported, it is because you are not working!

(See also No. T, 128, 159, 211, 301A, 312A, 317A, 318, 330A, 331, 331C, 501, 567, 671, 673, 682, 683, 684, 685, 697, 701, 860, 897, 900, 922, 928, 1271, 1316, 1364, FC's "God Cares", 1380.)

92. .2:7 For the Lord thy God hath blessed thee in all the works of thy hand: He knoweth thy walking through this great wilderness: these forty years the Lord thy God hath been with thee; thou hast lacked nothing.

93. .11:24 Every place whereon the soles of your feet shall tread shall be yours.

94. .30:9 And the Lord thy God will make thee plenteous in every work of thine hand, in the fruit of thy body, and in the fruit of thy cattle, and in the fruit of thy land, for good: for the Lord will again rejoice over thee for good, as He rejoiced over thy fathers.

95. .14:9 And Moses sware on that day, saying, Surely the land whereon thy feet have trodden shall be thine inheritance, and thy children's for ever, because thou hast wholly followed the Lord my God.

96. **KI.17:4 And it shall be, that thou shalt drink of the brook; and I have commanded the ravens to feed thee there. (1Ki.17:3-7)**

97. **KI.17:16 And the barrel of meal wasted not, neither did the cruse of oil fail, according to the Word of the Lord, which He spake by Elijah. (1Ki.17:11-16)**

98. **KI.19:5-8 And as he [Elijah] lay and slept under a juniper tree, behold, then an angel touched him, and said unto him, Arise and eat. And he looked, and, behold, there was a cake baken on the coals, and a cruse of water at his head. And he did eat and drink, and laid him down again. And the angel of the Lord came again the second time, and touched him, and said, Arise and eat; because the journey is too great for thee. And he arose, and did eat and drink, and went in the strength of that meat forty days and forty nights unto Horeb the mount of God.**

99. **CH.29:14b For all things come of Thee, and of Thine Own have we given Thee.**

100. **.23:1 The Lord is my shepherd; I shall not want.**

101. **.34:9,10 O fear the Lord, ye His saints: for there is no want to them that fear Him. The young lions do lack, and suffer hunger; but they that seek the Lord shall not want any good thing.**

102. **.37:25 I have been young, and now am old; yet have I not seen the righteous forsaken, nor His seed begging bread.**

103. **.68:19 Blessed be the Lord, Who daily loadeth us with benefits, even the God of our Salvation. Selah.**

104. **.81:10 I am the Lord thy God, which brought thee out of the land of Egypt: open thy mouth wide, and I will fill it.**

105. **.84:11 For the Lord God is a sun and shield: the Lord will give grace and glory: no good thing will He withhold from them that walk uprightly.**

106. **.105:37,40,41,44 He brought them forth also with silver and gold: and there was not one feeble person among their tribes. The people asked, and He brought quails, and satisfied them with the bread of Heaven. He opened the rock, and the waters gushed out; they ran in the dry places like a river. And gave them the lands of the heathen: and they inherited the labour of the people.**

107. **.145:15,16 The eyes of all wait upon Thee; and Thou givest them their meat in due season. Thou openest Thine hand, and satisfiest the desire of every living thing.**

108. **.10:22 The blessing of the Lord, it maketh rich, and He addeth no sorrow with it.**

109. **.13:25 The righteous eateth to the satisfying of his soul: but the belly of the wicked shall want.**

110. **.15:16 Better is little with the fear of the Lord than great treasure and trouble therewith.**

111. **.30:8 Give me neither poverty nor riches; feed me with food convenient for me.**

112. **.44:3 For I will pour water upon him that is thirsty, and floods upon the dry ground: I will pour My Spirit upon thy seed, and My blessing upon thine offspring.**

113. **.34:26 And I will make them and the places round about My hill a blessing; and I will cause the shower to come down in his season; there shall be showers of blessing.**

114. **.6:8b Your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask Him.**

115. .6:25,26 Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment? Behold the fowls of the air; For they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your Heavenly Father feedeth them, Are ye not much better than they?

116. .6:30-33 Wherefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the oven, shall He not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith? Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed? (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek:) for your Heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. But seek ye first the Kingdom of God, and His righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.

117. .7:7 Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you.

118. .10:9,10 Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses, Nor scrip for your journey, neither two coats, neither shoes, nor yet staves: for the workman is worthy of his meat.

119. .21:22 And all things, whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive.

120. .22:35 And He said unto them, When I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing? And they said, Nothing.

121. .16:15 All things that the Father hath are Mine...He shall shew it unto you.

122. .21:5,6 Then Jesus saith unto them, Children, have ye any meat? They answered Him, No. And He said unto them, Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall find. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes.

123. .14:17 Nevertheless He left not Himself without witness, in that He did good, and gave us rain from Heaven, and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladness.

124. .8:32 He that spared not His Own Son, but delivered Him up for us all, how shall He not with Him also freely give us all things?

125. CO.3:21 For all things are yours.

126. CO.9:14 Even so hath the Lord ordained that they which preach the Gospel should live of the Gospel.

127. CO.4:15 For all things are for your sakes, that the abundant grace might through the thanksgiving of many redound to the glory of God.

128. CO.6:10b As poor, yet making many rich; as having nothing, and yet possessing all things.

129. CO.8:13-15 For I mean not that other men be eased, and ye burdened: But by an equality, that now at this time your abundance may be a supply for their want, that their abundance also may be a supply for your want: that there may be equality: As it is written, He that had gathered much had nothing over; and he that had gathered little had no lack.

130. CO.9:8 And God is able to make all grace abound toward you: that ye, always having all sufficiency in all things, may abound to every good work.

131. .4:19 But my God shall supply all your need according to His riches in glory by Christ Jesus.

132. TH.3:10 For even when we were with you, this we commanded you, that if any would not work, neither should he eat.

133. TL.5:8 But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel.

134. .1:7 Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with Whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.

135. .4:2b Ye have not, because ye ask not.

(See also DEU.7:9-15; 28:1-14.)





*Trust in Him at all times; ye people, pour out your heart before Him: God is a refuge for us. Selah. I will say of the Lord, He is my refuge & my fortress: my God; in Him will I trust (Ps.62:8; 91:2).*

1. The only Christians who are going to survive are those who know already how to live by faith when the Trouble comes.
2. Multitudes of you are going to survive right until the very coming of the Lord, otherwise there wouldn't be anybody left to Rapture.
3. It's better to have it and not need it, than need it and not have it.
4. God says not to worry about tomorrow, but he doesn't say not to make plans for it.
5. It's better to be planning now, than not to be prepared!
6. He who is not ready today, will be less so tomorrow.
7. Think ahead, plan ahead, but don't worry.
8. God won't let `em kill you unless you've finished your job and can give a better witness that way for the grand finale.
9. We can be almost anything to have peace and be at peace.
10. It always pays to be prepared for the worst, because sometimes it happens!
11. We may have to come to some terms, if necessary, even with the enemy in order to survive and promote the work of God.
12. God always got His children, or at least a representative of them, right near the top.
13. Co-existence is our best hope of surviving.
14. The coming World government is going to be swept to power along with us, for our sakes!
15. You don't have to worry about the future, but you should certainly plan for it.
16. We can't lose for winning, dead or alive!  
Either way, we're sure to survive!
17. Remember, the only point to survival is to be able to help and tell others.--Otherwise, it's better to go quick, and the quicker the better!
18. We should never be surprised! The Lord has always told us. He's never done anything unless He's already told us in advance, so we could be prepared for it!
19. The best refuge is on the mission field! The best survival is preaching the Gospel!
20. I really believe in preparing. I'm not going to worry about it, but I am going to do all I can do to get ready for it, and the Lord will have to do the rest.
21. It is far better to be ready years too soon, than to be one day too late!
22. Get ready for the crash, but most of all for Christ!
23. The next depression cannot be prevented, only prepared for!
24. Gideon's men weren't judged by the amount of water they drank, but how fast they drank it and how prepared they were for the enemy!
25. He who fights and runs away, lives to fight another day!
26. The true survival of the fittest is not by natural selection, but God's selection, not evolutionary adaptations, but God's creations.
27. Save life before luggage--body before baggage!
28. Be ready to give an answer and be prepared with a plan.

29. Hope for the best and prepare for the worst.
30. Prepare in advance and not when someone is knocking at the door.
31. Our only hope of survival is to be prepared spiritually and even practically with both the personal experience of salvation and a working knowledge of His Word and what it advises us to do under such conditions of the difficult days that are coming.
32. Learn now to live by faith, learn now to survive under difficult conditions.
33. You're always supposed to have some emergency canned goods on hand. You can't afford not to.
34. If you belong to the Lord, He'll take care of you no matter what happens, even if they kill you.
35. The only sure retreat is the Lord.
36. We're going to have to hide while the Lord is punishing the wicked.
37. Be in touch with God to get your signals everyday, moment by moment.
38. You'll survive better if you're always ready to move and willing to give it up and forsake all. If we are going to survive and keep on doing what we're doing, we have to keep on the move.
39. If we want the body to survive, the head especially must survive. The body is not going to last very long without the head.
40. Always keep a fleebag packed for a quick escape in case of any emergency--including fire, earthquake, war, and persecution.
41. A city is the most dangerous place in the World to be in any kind of a disaster, including war.
42. Only the Lord can take care of us and keep us, but we know in many cases in the Word His servants escaped by various ruses and by being prepared to go quickly.
43. It's better to have survival plans and not need them, than need them and not have them.
44. Seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all these other things, such as protection, shall be added unto you. (Mt.6:33) And that doesn't make any exceptions of emergencies or crashes or wars or whatever! If you're putting God's kingdom first He'll take care of you no matter what.
45. By all means prepare all you can, but most of all trust the Lord and don't worry.
46. The main thing is to live close to the Lord and in His will and obey His Word. Then even if there's war and turmoil and confusion and chaos on the outside, you're going to have peace on the inside--in your own heart--through the Prince of Peace, Jesus Christ. He is faithful and never fails to keep those who trust Him.
47. How you're going to react when the trouble comes will depend largely on whether you have faith or not and whether you're in the will of God.
48. If you obey the Lord and stay in the centre of His will and do what God wants you to do, you can expect God to take care of you.
49. Keep close to the Lord, constantly claiming the protection of the Lord, always asking Him to keep, bless and protect you, and He will.
50. Putting refuge farms and survival first is not seeking the Kingdom first. Survival and refuge farms ought to be the last thing you worry about.
51. We're not citizens anywhere, we have no refuge, we have no survival, we're not putting those considerations first. We put God's work first and He takes care of the rest.
52. Your best defence is the Lord and to obey Him and to do His will and to get out on the mission field where you belong, serving the Lord and winning souls! If it kills you, well, you'll die happy.
53. The dear little missionaries out on the field saving souls and preaching the Gospel are the ones who are going to save their lives. They're the ones that God's going to save even if He has to do mighty miracles to do it.
54. To Hell with refuges and survival! Come and fight and die with us! We're fighting and dying for Jesus to save the World, not ourselves.
55. I'm sick of these people who want any other refuge than Jesus!
56. You want to survive? The easiest way to survive is to go ahead and die quick! Go to be with the Lord!
57. If you put your faith in any other kind of survival except God's will you're going to find out it's not going to save you and you just wasted your time and money and strength.
58. The kind of survival that will save you is being in the will of God and taking care of God's children and His missionaries, not trying to save yourself.
59. Refuges and survival stocks won't last, but souls are forever. Which are you stocking for His Kingdom and eternity?
60. In an emergency, life is the first thing to preserve, even if you have to leave your fleebag and briefcase behind you. The main thing is to try to save everybody and save life.
61. "Ye shall be safe in the midst of storm, in the hollow of My hand in the place I have prepared for thee if thou shalt go and be obedient to the things that I shall show thee."

62. I believe in planning on how to get along without something if someday we might not have it.

63. I know that as long as God wants me to survive I'll survive and He'll feed me if He has to send the ravens with bread and flesh in the morning and bread and flesh in the evening and give me a Brook Cherith to drink out of. (1Ki.17:5,6)

64. We should always be prepared with fleebags packed, tickets bought and other alternatives in mind, prepared to move on if we have to.

65. We're not supposed to worry about the future but we are supposed to prepare for the future when we know what the future's going to be.

(See also No. 172, 190, 311, 386, 801, 807-1, 812-4, 854, 855, 858, 859, 870, 885, 899, 938, 1003, 1312, *Childcare Handbook 1, Emergency Survival Handbook.*)

**129. TAKE ACTION!** --{page 1006}--



*I must work the works of Him that sent Me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work (Jn.9:4).*

1. Don't just stand there!--Do something!
2. We cannot do everything at once, but we can do something at once.
3. The quicker you begin, the quicker you win!
4. Well begun is half done.
5. Dreading a task can be more tiring than doing it.
6. The best plans remain only daydreams until you bring them to life through action.
7. The road to Hell is paved with good intentions.
8. The smallest good deed is better than the grandest intention.
9. A mistake at least proves somebody stopped talking long enough to do something.
10. All that is necessary for the triumph of evil is that good men do nothing.
11. You do what you can and God will do what you can't!
12. You do your best and God will do the rest.
13. Do more than exist--live! Do more than look--observe. Do more than read--absorb. Do more than hear--listen. Do more than listen--understand. Do more than think--reflect. Do more than plan--act. Do more than talk--say something!
14. Skill to do comes of doing.
15. Great ideas need landing gear as well as wings.
16. The World is divided into people who do things and people who get the credit. Try, if you can, to belong to the first class. There's far less competition.
17. Doing beats stewing.
18. The kindness planned for tomorrow doesn't count for today.
19. You never know what you can do till you try.

20. Out of the strain of the doing,  
Into the peace of the done.
21. You can be destroyed by defending, instead of attacking. Never let yourself get put on the defensive.
22. The man who stands still always impedes the World's progress.
23. If you can't do everything, do everything you can!
24. Do you want to work miracles?--Get out there and God will do them! Do you want compassion for souls?--Get out there and face the need, and God will give it.
25. Some people don't find anything to do because they're not even looking!
26. If you see it needs to be done, do it!
27. Don't tell me you believe in something if you're not doing it!
28. You can't do more than you can do, but for God's sake you can do what you can!
29. We may not be perfect!--But we're the best!--And doing the best we can!
30. Nothing ventured, nothing gained.
31. It is better to get your hands dirty and eat, than to be too proud to work and starve!
32. Are you sitting on the premises or standing on the promises?
33. There are at least 4 things you can do with your hands: You can wring them in despair, you can fold them in idleness, you can clench them in anger, or you can put them to some useful task.
34. I am only one, but I am one.
35. I cannot do everything, but I can do something. What I can do, I ought to do. And what I ought to do, by God's grace, I will do.
36. The only way we're going to know if you can take it and receive it and believe it, is if you do it!
37. The thought becomes the father of the deed.
38. If you don't know where to go or how to do it, just get out and start, and He'll lead you! The boat has to be in motion before the rudder can take effect.
39. It's impossible to win a defensive warfare. To win a war you have to go on the attack, go on the offensive. A passive defence never won a war.
40. It pays to face your fears, recognise they're there, decide between the real and the unreal, and go on the attack to dispel the vaporous fiction of the fairy tale and to drive away the genuine reality of real threat.
41. The Children of God are launching the attack, are on the offensive and are raiding the Devil's territory!
42. We need idea men, not just yes men!--Idea men who can think of things and tell me what to do, and not sit there and wait to be told what to do!
43. Any situation that a leader can't handle, they need to report to a superior officer who can handle it, at least report it to them in time in hopes that something can be done about it.
44. If the Devil can't persuade you not to serve God, then he tries to get you so weighed down with things, problems and time and energy and money-wasters that you can't even move.

(See also No. 4, 33, 66, 171, 565, 597, 606, 611, 721, 829, 951, 1023, 1090, 1268, 1392, 1394, 1548.)

45. .11:28 But He said, Yea, rather, blessed are they that hear the Word of God, and keep it.
46. .2:13 For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified.
47. .1:22 But be ye doers of the Word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves.

**130. TESTIMONIES OF FAITH** --{page 1009}--



Only "the fool hath said in his heart, There is no God" (Ps.14:1.)

1. MICHELANGELO, ITALIAN SCULPTOR, PAINTER, ARCHITECT & poet, 1475-1564: "I die for the faith of Jesus Christ, & in the firm hope of a better life."

2. WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE, ENGLISH POET, DRAMATIST & ACTOR, 1564-1616: "I commend my soul into the hands of God my Creator, hoping & assuredly believing, through the merits of Jesus Christ my Saviour, to be made partaker of life everlasting."

3. JOHANNES KEPLER, GERMAN ASTRONOMER, known for his three laws of planetary action, 1571-1630: "Let my name perish if only the name of God the Father is thereby elevated."

4. ROBERT BOYLE, IRISH PHYSICIST & CHEMIST, called "the father of chemistry", 1627-1691: Boyle read the Bible every morning throughout his life, & "did his utmost to defend & uphold the great doctrines of the Scripture". He financed & distributed thousands of copies of a new Irish translation of the Bible.

5. SIR ISAAC NEWTON, ENGLISH SCIENTIST who formulated the laws of gravitation & motion, 1642-1727: Newton's achievements in science are very well known, but it is not so well known that he spent more time studying the Bible than studying the stars. "There are more sure marks of authenticity in the Bible than in any profane history. All my discoveries have been made in answer to prayer. I can take my telescope & look millions of miles into space; but I can go away to my room & in prayer get nearer to God & Heaven than I can when assisted by all the telescopes of Earth."

6. IMMANUEL KANT, GERMAN PHILOSOPHER, 1724-1804: "The existence of the Bible as a book for the people is the greatest benefit which the human race has ever experienced. Every attempt to belittle it is a crime against humanity."

7. WILLIAM COWPER, ENGLISH POET, 1731-1800: "What various hindrances we meet in coming to the mercy seat! Yet who that knows the worth of prayer but wishes to be often there."

8. GEORGE WASHINGTON, 1st US PRESIDENT, 1732-1799: "It is impossible to rightly govern the World without God & the Bible."

9. JOHN ADAMS, 2nd PRESIDENT OF THE U.S.A., 1735-1826: "The Bible contains more philosophy than all the libraries that I have ever seen, & such parts as I cannot reconcile with my little philosophy, I postpone for future investigation."

10. PATRICK HENRY, AMERICAN PATRIOT & radical leader, 1736-1799: "The Bible is worth all other books which have ever been printed."

11. SIR WILLIAM HERSCHEL, GERMAN-BORN ASTRONOMER, discoverer of the planet Uranus, 1738-1822: "All human discoveries seem to be made only for the purpose of confirming more & more strongly the truth contained in the Sacred Scriptures."

12. JOHN BACON, ENGLISH SCULPTOR, 1740-1799: "What I was as an artist seemed to me of some importance while I lived; what I really was, as a believer in Christ Jesus, is the only thing of importance to me now that I am dying."

13. THOMAS JEFFERSON, 3rd PRESIDENT OF THE U.S.A., 1743-1826: "I have always said that a studious perusal of the Sacred Volume will make you better citizens, better fathers & better husbands."

14. JOHANN WOLFGANG VON GOETHE, GERMAN POET, 1749-1832: "Let mental culture go on advancing, let the natural sciences progress in ever greater extent & depth, & the human mind widen itself as much as it desires!--Beyond the elevation & moral culture of Christianity, as it shines forth in the Gospels, it will not go."

15. ALEXANDER HAMILTON, AMERICAN STATESMAN, 1757-1804: "I have carefully examined the evidences of the Christian religion, & if I were sitting as a juror upon its authenticity I would unhesitatingly give my verdict in its favor."

16. JOHN QUINCY ADAMS, 6th PRESIDENT OF THE U.S.A., 1767-1848: "The first & almost only book deserving of universal attention is the Bible. I speak as a man of the World. So great is my veneration for the Bible, that the earlier my children begin to read it, the more confident will be my hope that they will prove useful citizens of their country & respectable members of society. I have for many years made it a practice to read through the Bible once every year."

17. ANDREW JACKSON, AMERICAN SOLDIER & STATESMAN, 7th President of the U.S.A., 1767-1845: "That Book, sir, is the rock on which our republic rests."

18. NAPOLEON BONAPARTE, EMPEROR OF FRANCE for 10 years, conquered large parts of Europe, 1769-1821: "The Bible is no mere book, but a Living Creature, with a power that conquers all that oppose it. ...Alexander, Caesar, Charlemagne & I myself have founded empires, but upon what do these creations of our genius depend?--Upon force! Jesus alone founded His empire upon love, & to this very day millions would die for Him."

19. WILLIAM WORDSWORTH, ENGLISH POET LAUREATE, 1770-1850:

Oh! There is never sorrow of heart

That shall lack a timely end,

If but to God we turn, & ask

Of Him to be our friend!

20. SIR WALTER SCOTT, SCOTTISH NOVELIST, POET, 1771-1832:

Within this ample Volume lies

The mystery of mysteries.

Happiest they of human race

To whom their God has given grace

To read, to fear, to hope, to pray,

To lift the latch, to force the way;

But better had they ne'er been born

That read to doubt or read to scorn.

21. DANIEL WEBSTER, AMERICAN ORATOR, SECRETARY OF STATE for 3 US Presidents, 1782-1852: "If there is anything in my thoughts or style to commend, the credit is due to my parents for instilling in me an early love of the Scriptures. If we abide by the principles taught in the Bible, our country will go on prospering & to prosper, but if we & our posterity neglect its instructions & authority, no man can tell how sudden a catastrophe may overwhelm us & bury all our glory in profound obscurity."

22. ZACHARY TAYLOR, 12th PRESIDENT OF THE U.S.A., 1784-1850: "It was for the love of the truths of this great & good Book that our fathers abandoned their native shores for the wilderness."

23. MICHAEL FARADAY, ENGLISH SCIENTIST, called the greatest of experimental physicists, 1791-1867: When Faraday was questioned on his speculations of a life after death, he replied: "Speculations! I know nothing about speculations. I'm resting on certainties. I know that my Redeemer liveth, & because He lives, I shall live also." From the age of 50 he was a regular preacher. "His object seemed to be to make the most of the words of Scripture", was the comment of one who heard him.

24. SAMUEL F.B. MORSE, INVENTED THE MORSE CODE, 1791-1872: The first message ever sent in this code on the new line from Baltimore to Washington was four words from the Bible: "What hath God wrought!" Sam Morse wrote to his brother, "It is His work, & He alone could have carried me thus far through all my trials."

25. THOMAS MacCAULEY, ENGLISH HISTORIAN, 1800-1859: "The English Bible, a book which, if everything else in our language should perish, would alone suffice to show the whole extent of its beauty and power."

26. WILLIAM HENRY SEWARD, US SECRETARY OF STATE, 1801-1872: "The whole hope of human progress is suspended on the ever-growing influence of the Bible."

27. RALPH WALDO EMERSON, AMERICAN WRITER & PHILOSOPHER, 1803-1882: "All I have seen teaches me to trust the Creator for all I have not seen."

28. ROBERT E. LEE, AMERICAN GENERAL, commander of Southern forces in the US Civil War, 1807-1870: "In all my perplexities & distresses, the Bible has never failed to give me light & strength."

29. ALFRED LORD TENNYSON, ENGLISH POET LAUREATE, 1809-1892: "Bible reading is an education in itself."

30. WILLIAM GLADSTONE, PRIME MINISTER OF ENGLAND, 1809-1898: "All that I think, all that I hope, all that I write, all that I live for, is based upon the divinity of Jesus Christ, the central joy of my poor, wayward life. I have known 95 of the World's greatest men in my time, & of these, 87 were followers of the Bible."

31. ABRAHAM LINCOLN, 16th AMERICAN PRESIDENT, 1809-1865: "I believe the Bible is the best gift God has ever given to man. All the good from the Saviour of the World is communicated to us through this book."

"I am profitably engaged in reading the Bible. Take all of this Book that you can by reason, & the balance by faith, & you will live & die a better man. It is the best Book which God has given to man."

32. SIR JAMES SIMPSON, SCOTTISH, PIONEER IN OBSTETRICS & discoverer of chloroform, 1811-1870: When asked at a great public meeting what his greatest discovery had been, he replied without hesitation: "That I have a Saviour."

33. HORACE GREELEY, PROMINENT AMERICAN NEWSPAPER EDITOR & publisher, 1811-1872: "It is impossible to enslave mentally or socially a Bible-reading people. The principles of the Bible are the groundwork of human freedom."

34. ROBERT BROWNING, ENGLISH POET, 1812-1889.

The work began when your first prayer was uttered.

And God will finish what He has begun.

If you will keep the incense burning there,

His glory you shall see, sometime, somewhere.

35. CHARLES DICKENS, ENGLISH NOVELIST, 1812-1870: "The New Testament is the very best book that was or ever will be known in the World."

36. SOREN KIERKEGAARD, DANISH PHILOSOPHER, 1813-1855: "The tyrant dies & his rule ends, the martyr dies & his rule begins."

37. CHARLES DANA, AMERICAN NEWSPAPER EDITOR of New York Tribune, & New York Sun, 1819-1897: "The grand old Book still stands, & this old Earth, the more its leaves are turned & pondered, the more it will sustain & illustrate the pages of the Sacred Word."

38. JOHN RUSKIN, ENGLISH WRITER, 1819-1900: "Whatever merit there is in anything that I have written is simply due to the fact that when I was a child my mother daily read me a part of the Bible & daily made me learn a part of it by heart."

39. QUEEN VICTORIA, QUEEN OF GREAT BRITAIN, 1819-1901: "That Book accounts for the supremacy of England. England has become great & happy by the knowledge of the true God through Jesus Christ."

40. ULYSSES S. GRANT, AMERICAN GENERAL, 18TH PRESIDENT OF THE U.S.A., 1822-1885: "To the influence of the Book we are indebted for the progress made in civilisation, & to this we must look as our guide in the future. The Bible is the sheet-anchor of our liberties."

41. LORD KELVIN, BRITISH INVENTOR, known for the absolute scale of temperature, first transatlantic telegraph cable & helping to formulate the 2nd law of thermodynamics, 1824-1907: "The commencement of life upon Earth certainly did not take place by any action of chemistry or electricity or crystalline grouping of molecules. We must pause, face to face with the mystery & miracle of the Creation of living creatures."

42. THOMAS HUXLEY, ENGLISH BIOLOGIST, 1825-1895: "The Bible has been the Magna Carta of the poor & oppressed. The human race is not in a position to dispense with it."

43. LEO TOLSTOY, RUSSIAN NOVELIST & PHILOSOPHER, 1828-1910: Many consider him to be one of the World's greatest writers. He wrote "War & Peace". "To understand the whole work of the Master is not in my power; but to do His will, written in my conscience, that is in my power, & that I know without a doubt. And when I do this, then undoubtedly I am at peace."

44. JAMES CLERK MAXWELL, SCOTTISH SCIENTIFIC GENIUS, predicted the existence of radio waves long before their discovery, 1831-1879: "No theory of evolution can be formed to account for the similarity of molecules...Science is incompetent to reason upon the creation of matter itself out of nothing." He maintained to the end his firm faith in the Bible, "deep humility before God, reverent submission to His will, & hearty belief in the love & atonement of the Divine Savior."

45. MARK TWAIN, AMERICAN AUTHOR, 1835-1910: "It is hard to make a choice of the most beautiful passage in a Book which is as gemmed with beautiful passages as the Bible."

46. DWIGHT L. MOODY, AMERICAN EVANGELIST, 1837-1899: "I would doubt my existence as quickly as I would doubt the truth of that Book."

47. SIR AMBROSE FLEMING, ENGLISH INVENTOR 1849-1948. He was a leader in the development of electric lighting, the telephone, & wireless telegraphy in England & inventor of the first electron tube. "There is abundant evidence that the Bible, though written by men, is not the product of the human mind. By countless multitudes it has always been revered as a communication to us from the Creator of the Universe."

48. HENRY VAN DYKE, AMERICAN CLERGYMAN & WRITER, 1852-1933: "Born in the East & clothed in Oriental form & imagery, the Bible walks the ways of all the World with familiar feet & enters land after land to find its own everywhere. It has learned to speak in hundreds of languages to the heart of man. Children listen to its stories with wonder & delight, & wise men ponder them as parables of life. The wicked & the proud tremble at its warning, but to the wounded & penitent it has a mother's voice. It has woven itself into our dearest dreams, so that Love, Friendship, Sympathy, Devotion, Memory, Hope, put on the beautiful garments of its treasured speech. No man is poor or desolate who has this treasure for his own. When the landscape darkens, & the trembling pilgrim comes to the Valley of the Shadow, he is not afraid to enter, he takes the rod & staff of Scripture in his hand, he says to friend & comrade, 'Good-bye. We shall meet again.' And comforted by that support, he goes toward the lonely pass as one who walks through darkness into light."

49. THEODORE ROOSEVELT, 26th PRESIDENT of the U.S.A., 1858-1919: "A thorough knowledge of the Bible is worth more than a college education. Almost every man who has by his lifework added to the sum of human achievement...has based his lifework largely upon the teachings of the Bible."

50. WOODROW WILSON, 28th PRESIDENT of the U.S.A., held office during WW1, 1856-1924: "A man has deprived himself of the best there is in the World who has deprived himself of a knowledge of the Bible."

51. GENERAL PERSHING, COMMANDER OF AMERICAN FORCES IN WW1, 1860-1948: "I have known Jesus Christ now for 47 years, & I could not face life without Him. I commend such a Savior to you."

52. GEORGE WASHINGTON CARVER, AMERICAN NEGRO SCIENTIST who won international fame for agricultural research, 1864-1943: Carver spent much time in prayer, & his faith & prayer, rather than his microscope, made him a success. For each problem & each discovery he spent much time praying & waiting on the Lord for results. When friends & other great men of the World came to visit, he would explain to them the Scriptures & give his own testimony of his love for the Lord.

53. DR. ROBERT A. MILLIKAN, AMERICAN NUCLEAR PHYSICIST & Nobel Prize winner, 1868-1953: "Just as behind this watch there had to be a watchmaker, so behind the intricate precision & timing of this great Universe there had to be a Great Creator or Designer!"

54. HERBERT HOOVER, 31st PRESIDENT of the U.S.A., 1874-1964: "There is no other book so various as the Bible, nor one so full of concentrated wisdom. Whether it be of law, business, morals etc...he who seeks for guidance...may look inside its covers & find illumination."

55. J.C. PENNY, U.S. MERCHANT, MILLIONAIRE, 1875-1971: "I would rather be known as a Christian than a merchant."

56. FRANKLIN ROOSEVELT, 32nd PRESIDENT of the U.S.A., 1882-1945: "The influence of the Scriptures in the early days of the Republic is plainly revealed in the writing & thinking of the men who made the nation possible...They found in the Scriptures that which shaped their course & determined their cause."

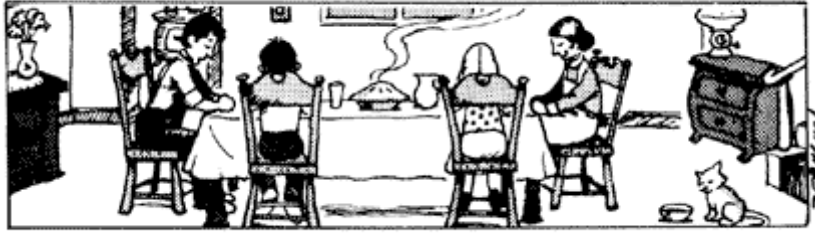
57. GEORGE S. PATTON, GENERAL OF 3rd U.S. ARMY IN EUROPE IN WWII, 1885-1945: "Yes, I read the Bible--every God-damned day!"

58. DWIGHT D. EISENHOWER, 34th PRESIDENT of the U.S.A., 1890-1969: "To read the Bible is to take a trip to a fair land where the spirit is strengthened & faith renewed."

59. DOUGLAS MacARTHUR, FIVE-STAR GENERAL IN WWII, 1900-1964: "Believe me, sir, never a night goes by, be I ever so tired, but I read the Word of God before I go to bed."

60. CHIEF DAN GEORGE, CANADIAN INDIAN CHIEF & film director, 1910-?: "When the White man came we had the land & they had the Bibles, now they have the land & we have the Bibles."





*In every thing give thanks (1Thes.5:18).*

1. You'll never miss the blessing until the blessing's gone.
2. The murmurer always begins murmuring in his heart first and that's why it finally comes out of his mouth. Out of the fullness of the heart the mouth speaketh.
3. Let's carry the burden of our responsibilities bravely, courageously, cheerfully and thankfully, and not be heard to grumble, groan and gripe!
4. Sometimes you need to look back and count your blessings and realise you never had it so good before!
5. Murmuring is the voice of the Enemy and his doubts, and a critical spirit sows dissension, disunity and discord amongst brethren, one of the seven abominations to God!
6. "Yes, it's pretty hard," the optimistic old woman admitted. "I have to get along with only two teeth--one upper, one lower--but, thank goodness, they meet."
7. The best way to appreciate your job is to imagine yourself without it.
8. God hates murmurers and destroyed six million in the Sinai Desert!
9. We can't count all His blessings in dollars and cents because most of it is His wonderful glorious faithful blessings of spiritual salvation and inspiration and His love and the love of others and good health and wealth of witnessing and souls for His Kingdom!
10. When you've thanked God for every blessing, what time is there left for murmurs or laments?
11. Be thankful for the little bit God gives you or He may take it all back!
12. God takes away blessings when we don't appreciate them.
13. We need to learn how to say "thank you!"
14. We can complain because rose bushes have thorns, or rejoice because thorn bushes have roses.
15. I had no shoes and I complained!--Until I met a man who had no feet.
16. One thing God can't stomach is a murmurer or a complainer--first you doubt, then you murmur, then you rebel!
17. When you are dog-tired at night, could it be because you have growled all day?
18. God hates murmuring! You need to get your minds on your blessings, and be thankful for all God's goodness! If you don't, He'll give you something to cry about!
19. Never look a gift horse in the mouth.
20. You never miss the water till the well runs dry.
21. You cannot have your cake and eat it too.
22. If you can't be thankful for what you receive, be thankful for what you escape.
23. Murmuring is the first sign of wanting to turn back.
24. Some people find something to murmur about no matter what happens.
25. It's wrong to run yourself down. You're the Lord's creation and He made you, and why should you belittle God's creation?
26. You can't appreciate the light unless you've known darkness; you can't appreciate health unless you've been sick; you can't appreciate joy until you've known sorrow!
27. The only thing that makes a murmurer happy is more murmuring.
28. When we were children we were grateful to those who filled our stockings with toys at Christmastide. Why are we not grateful to God for filling our stockings with legs.
29. I guess one of the best things we can thank the Lord for is His love, life and His supply of our needs.

30. Many people murmur and complain and grouch about what they don't have instead of being thankful for the blessings they do have, which is why God doesn't feel like giving them any more.

31. God hates murmuring, complaining, grumbling, and grouching almost more than any other sin.

32. Lord help us not to forget to be thankful continually, constantly praising Thee and quoting Thy Word to encourage our faith and singing positive songs of praise to rebuke the Enemy!

33. A few little bad things have to happen so you'll be thankful that they don't happen all the time. You don't always get your way and get to do everything you want to do and have everything that you want to have, because if you did you wouldn't even appreciate it.

34. I'm getting fed up with people who don't show their gratitude by something material. It's nice to say, "Thanks" or "I love you" but it doesn't pay the bills! We're not charging, but we expect people to show their thanks and their appreciation, and they ought to give more for love than if we charged them!

35. Thank Him for the answer even if you don't see it immediately.

36. Thank God for your blessings! Thank God for the Family, thank God for love, thank God for salvation, thank God for protection, thank God for provision, thank God for everything!

37. We have Thanksgiving every day. We have a feast every night! Every day is Christmas and Thanksgiving and Happy Birthday and New Year's all in one!

38. The result of putting the enemy's doubts and fears into words and sharing his lies with others: It has just the opposite effect of witnessing the Truth of God and the Truth of the Word of God! It gets others down and unhappy and discouraged and doubting and fearing and finally murmuring and complaining just like you are when you start witnessing your doubts to others and sharing the Devil's lies with others.

39. The Lord wants us to appreciate everything while it lasts, to appreciate these days of Heaven on Earth--Heavenly Family, Heavenly Homes, Heavenly children, Heavenly work--and treasure every one, every passing day, every bit of fellowship, every bit of love, every bit of contact, every bit of luxury and supply of every need and want as well. We should be thankful and treasure it and be grateful for it day by day, every moment of every day, be praising and thanking the Lord even if it's our last.

40. Take the spoiling of your goods joyfully; in everything give thanks. The Lord hath given, the Lord hath taken away, blessed be the name of the Lord!

(See also No. 20, 33, 114, 287, 290, 313, 395, 513, 551, 599, 641, 756, 766, 835, 847, 954, 957, 958, 997, 1148, 1259, 1357, 1440, 1492.)

41. .11:1 And when the people complained, it displeased the Lord: and the Lord heard it; and His anger was kindled; and the fire of the Lord burnt among them, and consumed them that were in the uttermost parts of the camp.

42. .100:4 Enter into His gates with thanksgiving, and into His courts with praise: be thankful unto Him, and bless His Name.

43. .17:17 And Jesus answering said, Were there not ten cleansed? but where are the nine? (Luk.17:11-19).

44. .9:20 Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say unto Him that hath formed it, Why hast Thou made me thus?

45. **CO.10:10 Neither murmur ye, as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the Destroyer.**

46. **.5:20 Giving thanks always for all things unto God and the Father in the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ.**

47. **.1:3 I thank my God upon every remembrance of you.**

48. **.2:14 Do all things without murmurings and disputings.**

49. **TH.5:18 In everything give thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you.**



*Redeeming the time, because the days are evil (Eph.5:16).*

1. Only one life, 'twill soon be past.  
Only what's done for Christ will last.
2. The less time you have to plan, the more important it is to plan your time prayerfully.
3. Live every day like it's your last.
4. One of the Enemy's wiles is "Wait awhile".
5. Alexander the Great being asked how he had conquered the world, replied, "By not delaying."
6. Methinks I see the idle hours flee,  
And as they pass, turn back & laugh at me.
7. Yesterday is a canceled check; Tomorrow is a promissory note; Today is the only cash you have--so spend it wisely.
8. Each morning puts a man on trial & each evening passes judgment.
9. Tomorrow is a very important thing in life: It comes unto you at midnight very clean. It's perfect when it arrives & it puts itself in your hands. It hopes you've learned something from yesterday.
10. The past cannot be changed, but the future is still in your power.
11. Some of us spend half our time wishing for things we could have, if we didn't spend half our time wishing.
12. What counts is not the number of hours you put in, but how much you put into the hours.
13. All the flowers of all the tomorrows are in the seeds of today.
14. We are always complaining our days are few, & acting as though there would be no end of them.
15. What did I do today that I won't have to do tomorrow? What progress, move or accomplishment, new, different or additional thing have I done more than the usual things I always have to do each day?
16. Have a happy tomorrow--do today's work today.
17. How strange to use "You only live once", as an excuse to throw it away.
18. If you want to follow in your father's footsteps, don't wear loafers.
19. The clock of life is wound but once  
And no man has the power,  
To tell just when the hands will stop  
At late or early hour.  
Now is the only time you own,  
Live, love, toil with a will!  
Place no faith in time,  
For the clock may soon be still!
20. Friend, take time while time doth last,  
For time is no time when time is past.

21. Know the true value of time, snatch, seize, & enjoy every moment of it. No idleness, no laziness, no procrastination: Never put off till tomorrow what you can do today.
22. If the Devil can't stop you, he delays you.
23. The problem with doing nothing is that you never know when you are through.
24. Office sign: If you have nothing to do, please don't do it here.
25. Doing nothing is about the most tiresome work in the World because you cannot stop & rest.
26. Retired is being tired twice, I've thought,  
First tired of working, then tired of not.
27. Our days are like suitcases--all the same size; but some people seem to be able to pack more into them than others.
28. Time-stealing is a frequent crime in most organisations!
29. If you're doing anything other than putting God first & saving souls, & preparing yourselves to rule the World, then you're wasting time!
30. This is our last chance to go into all the World & preach the Gospel to every creature! This is the End! We're their last chance & we'd better make good what God has given. This is everybody's last chance to get on with it, & off with it--for it's the end of the line!
31. So what are you going to do? Are you going to pray like everything depended on prayer, work like everything depended on work & study like everything depended on studying & provision like everything depended on provisioning & teach like everything depended on teaching & witness like everything depended on witnessing? Or are you going to say, "Oh well, we have a few more years!--We might as well take it easy!"--Let me warn you, you may not have a few more years.--Your time may be at hand already & you may be about to be offered!
32. Most of us don't do our best unless it's under pressure.
33. I don't know what's going to happen when there's no place to move or you can't move under the new World government. But we don't have to worry about that, today's today & now we're going great guns & we'll fight the battle while we're winning & trust the Lord to supply the needs.
34. Speed is far more vital to us now than perfection!

(See also No. 156, 160, 182, 186A, 191, 207, 215, 280, 281, 320, 906, 951, 953-3, 971, 981, 1248, 1347, 1364, 1469, 1636.)

35. ISA.21:8b The king's business required haste.
36. PSA.90:12 So teach us to number our days, that we may apply our hearts unto wisdom.
37. PRO.14:23 In all labor there is profit: but the talk of the lips tendeth only to penury.
38. ECC.3:1-8 To every thing there is a season, & a time to every purpose under the Heaven: A time to be born, & a time to die; a time to plant, & a time to pluck up that which was planted; A time to kill, & a time to heal; a time to break down, & a time to build up; A time to weep, & a time to laugh; a time to mourn, & a time to dance; A time to cast away stones, & a time to gather stones together; a time to embrace, & a time to refrain from embracing; A time to get, & a time to lose; a time to keep, & a time to cast away; A time to rend & a time to sew; a time to keep silence, & a time to speak; A time to love & a time to hate; a time of war & a time of peace.
39. MAT.24:33,34 So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, even at the doors. Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled.
40. MAT.24:42 Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come.
41. MAT.25:13 Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man cometh.
42. MAR.13:37 And what I say unto you I say unto all, Watch.
43. LUK.12:38-40 And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, & find them so, blessed are those servants, And this know, that if the goodman of the house had know what hour the thief would come, he would have watched, & not have suffered his house to be broken through. Be ye therefore ready also: for the Son of man cometh at an hour when ye think not.
44. JOH.7:6 Then Jesus said unto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is always ready.
45. JOH.9:4 I must work the works of Him that sent Me, while it is day: the night cometh when no man can work.
46. ROM.13:11,12 And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep: for now is our Salvation nearer than when we believed. The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, & let us put on the armour of light.
47. EPH.5:15,16 See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise, Redeeming the time, because the days are evil.

48. 1PET.4:7 But the end of all things is at hand: be ye therefore sober, & watch unto prayer.
49. REV.1:3 Blessed is he that readeth, & they that hear the Words of this prophecy, & keep those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand.

**132. TIDBITS** --{page 1021 }--



*...Here a little, and there a little (Isa.28:10).*

1. Another year is dawning.  
Dear Master let it be  
On Earth or else in Heaven,  
Another year for Thee.
2. Birthdays are sober occasions--starting a whole new year of your life!
3. Many happy returns of the day of thy birth  
Let sunshine and gladness be given  
And may our dear Father prepare you on Earth  
For a Happy Birthday in Heaven.
4. Happy Birthday to you,  
Only one will not do!  
Born again means Salvation--  
How many have you?
5. A good reducing exercise consists of placing both hands against the table edge and pushing back.
6. If you want to spend your money and have something to show for it, try eating rich food.
7. Overweight is often just desserts.
8. Seconds count, especially when dieting.
9. Everything they did in the Temple was an illustrated sermon of Christ and His church!
10. I always felt a farmer is one man who's really in partnership with God!
11. There's no form of transportation more beautiful than a sailing vessel! It glides along so silently and so gracefully, almost like a bird!
12. The palms of your hands are like a map of your life, both past, present and future.
13. If you take along enough clothes to last you a week, they'll probably be enough to last you for a month!
14. I don't believe in luck.--That means the blessing of Lucifer!
15. Nothing annoys a housewife so much as having her friends drop in and find her house looking as it usually does.
16. Housework is something you do that nobody notices unless you don't do it.
17. Will power is the ability to eat one salted peanut.
18. Don't let the Devil's children steal the bread from God's Children!
19. Proverbs are short sentences, drawn from long experience.--Don Quixote.
20. Colours can affect your mood and cause emotional reactions which have bodily responses.
21. A friend's frown is better than a fool's smile.

22. If the grass looks greener on the other side of the fence, you can bet the water bill is higher.
23. Sometimes I think birthdays are a little bit like weddings: They're really not always so much for the benefit of the poor celebrant, but rather for the sake of friends and relatives to enjoy the occasion.
24. You ask, "How come you light your birthday candle instead of blowing it out?"--Because we believe in giving life, not extinguishing life! We believe in bringing light to the World, not darkness!
25. Small men are often insecure and overcompensate for their insecurity with superiority. They fight to retain some superiority because they are afraid of inferiority.

### 134. TITHING --{page 1027}--



*Bring ye all the tithes into the storehouse, that there may be meat in Mine house, and prove Me now herewith, saith the Lord of hosts, if I will not open you the windows of Heaven, and pour you out a blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it (Mal.3:10).*

1. The tithe is God's second best...it's an easy way out for those who are not willing to give all.
2. Your tithe is the minimum God expects!--Under the New Testament you're supposed to give everything you can!
3. You can even cast in all your living and still not hurt, because God will bless you for it.
4. You can't count God's "hundredfold" all in dollars and cents.
5. 110%ers: Giving your fulltime service to the Lord plus tithing 10% of your income.
6. 10% is not a maximum, it's a minimum!
7. You're in front of God's court of judgement every time you make out a TRF report.
8. Tithing is an act of faith and obedience.
9. The tithe is not a gift, it is a required minimum tax as far as God's concerned.
10. God is a pretty sharp taxman!
11. If you don't give an offering, God will take a collection!
12. God comes first!--He is a preferred creditor.
13. God's tithe must come first!--And you must pay it first before you pay anything else.
14. God's tithe is your top bill on the top of your stack of bills.
15. Sometimes when you're not willing to give the minimum, God collects the maximum!
16. I am firmly convinced that if you tithe faithfully in faith and obedience because of faith in God's Word, that He will take care of you no matter what, and more than reward you for it!
17. Jesus promised a 100-fold return if you give all! Think of it!--100-fold! It may not all be in dollars and cents, it may be in protection, or maybe saving you from accidents and sicknesses that would have cost you a hundred times more!
18. God never lets anybody get hurt by giving or tithing! The Lord just won't let you suffer for it! He may let you think you're going to sacrifice and suffer for it and that it's hard, but He'll always more than repay!

19. God is a very just God and very merciful and loving. But I tell you, He can crack down if you make Him mad enough, especially if you're withholding from Him!
20. God collects what you refuse to offer voluntarily.
21. You are going to lose if you steal God's share!
22. If you don't learn any other lessons through tithing, you will have learned something that will benefit you the rest of your life.--And that is that if you put God first He will see that you never lack for anything you need and that you have more than enough of everything.
23. God bless you and help you to put God first in your life, your heart, your family, your Home and your bill-paying.
24. God will not tolerate you touching His share. He's given you 90%, why should you rob Him of His 10%?
25. God's first law of economics is to seek His Kingdom first, then all these other things shall be added unto you.
26. All kinds of things will go wrong that God could keep from happening if you were faithful, but if you literally steal God's little 10% share, He just won't bless it and you'll suffer for it.
27. You cannot afford not to pay the 10%! God won't bless your work and He won't bless you financially!
28. God expects you to give your whole life and everything you own for the Lord, in fulltime service, as much as you can. But He certainly does not expect you to give less than 10%.
29. No one in the whole World has any excuse whatsoever for not being able to tithe at least one-tenth of your total income to God!
30. Anybody can tithe!--And God will bless you for it!
31. God blesses the tithers who really give sincerely and sacrificially, and they will never be able to outgive God if they are faithful.
32. If you're only tithing, giving only 10% to get the full counsel of God, you're getting by cheap!
33. You don't need to use that tithe yourself, no matter what you think or say!--That's God's small portion of the 100% He's given you and it belongs to Him.
34. If you tithe the 10% reluctantly and only because it's required and it's the law and otherwise you wouldn't get your pubs, then you'll probably only get credit for what you would have willingly given, sad to say!
35. I've known all kinds of trouble to befall people who tried to rob God of His tithe that cost them many times more than their little unpaid 10%--Accidents, illnesses, operations, losses in business, car troubles, repairs, etc.
36. The tithe is God's flat-rate tax on all--the required 10%.
37. If you can give more than the tithe, God will expect you to freely give it.
38. If you're able to give more than the tithe and you don't give it, God will take a collection and you'll be sorry!
39. Watch out for the judgments of God and the collections of God if you lie to us on that monthly report by claiming you're giving 10% when you're not!
40. God is no piker! He's no skin-flint! He's not chintzey! When you give to God, He will give you back much more than you gave.
41. God requires 10% tithe for His WS temple ministries, and expects gifts above that if you're able, and 100% if you can!
42. If you don't put God first, you're going to have a Hell of a lot of unexpected bills with which He'll chastise you!
43. Tithing is God's law of economics--if you put Him first and you pay your full tithe, God will bless you for it and He'll see to it that you have more than enough to pay the rest of your bills.
44. God insists on being in first place, not only in your heart and in your life, but in your bill paying as well!
45. Anybody can tithe! No matter how little you make or how little you get--how little income you receive from whatever--you can tithe 10% of it.
46. Don't tell me you can't, because if you couldn't, God wouldn't have asked it of you! God would not be demanding at least 10% of your income if He didn't think you could give it.
47. There's no excuse for anybody not paying their tithe on time.
48. Your labours of love will not be in vain. You may not always see immediate results in tithing, as God tests us to see if we'll obey anyhow! But then he always bountifully blesses in the end.--It's as sure as the law of gravity!
49. You can't lose by tithing! It'll solve all your money problems and prosper you bountifully.
50. Those who claim to be TRFers and tithe little or nothing are cheaters and liars and robbers of God!

51. There is not one of God's children on Earth who cannot afford to give something.

52. All the money the Jews had was His, but He let the Jews keep 90% and all He asked for back to show their thanks was a mere 10%! So when they even begrudged Him the 10%, He took back the 90% also! He took the whole thing away from them and even kicked them out of their country because they begrudged Him that little bit!

53. The best way to make sure that you have your tithe or gift to send with your report on the first of the month is to faithfully put it aside in a special little tithe or offering box throughout the month as dedicated exclusively to the Lord and untouchable for any other purpose.

(See also No. 316C, 332A, 336A, 665, 667, 682, 702, 791, 842, 843, 880, 886, 887, 888, 889, 928, 932, 934, 1050, 1051, 1068, 1075, 1076, 1078, 1079, 1081, 1212, 1316, 1320, 1321, 1322, 1433.)

54. .28:22b And of all that Thou shalt give me I will surely give the tenth unto Thee.

55. .25:2 Speak unto the children of Israel that they bring Me an offering: of every man that giveth it willingly with his heart ye shall take My offering.

56. .27:30 And all the tithe of the land, whether of the seed of the land, or of the fruit of the tree, is the Lord's: it is holy unto the Lord.

57. .14:22a Thou shalt truly tithe all the increase of thy seed.

58. .16:17 Every man shall give as he is able, according to the blessing of the Lord thy God which he hath given thee.

59. .3:9,10 Honour the Lord with thy substance, and with the firstfruits of all thine increase: So shall thy barns be filled with plenty, and thy presses shall burst out with new wine.

60. .3:10-12 Bring ye all the tithes into the storehouse, that there may be meat in Mine house, and prove Me now herewith, saith the Lord of hosts, if I will not open you the windows of Heaven, and pour you out a blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it. And I will rebuke the Devourer for your sakes, and he shall not destroy the fruits of your ground; neither shall your vine cast her fruit before the time in the field, saith the Lord of hosts. And all nations shall call you blessed: for ye shall be a delightful land, saith the Lord of hosts.

61. **COR.16:2 Upon the first day of the week let every one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.**





*That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise & honour & glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ (1Pe.1:7).*

1. Sickness, trouble, problems: Sometimes they happen to drive you closer to each other. Sometimes they happen to keep you humble. Sometimes they happen to make you pray. Sometimes they happen to keep you close to the Lord.

2. God doesn't make you practice suffering today what you're going to have to suffer tomorrow. He says, "Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof." You are not to add more to it in preparation for tomorrow or to try to toughen yourself up for more evil tomorrow, but you are to enjoy yourself & take things as they come & let tomorrow take care of itself. "As thy days so shall thy strength be." (Deut.33:25)

3. God gives you power for the hour & grace for the trial--at the hour & when it comes, not before.

4. Jesus takes off the rough places & the blemishes & He exposes your beautiful golden heart & makes you look so pretty!

5. He washed my eyes with tears that I might see.

6. He who would have nothing to do with thorns must never attempt to gather flowers.

7. Reasons for Illness or Accident: Chastisement; Purging; Working out His Plan in someone else's life by putting you out of commission for awhile; Working out His plan for your life by getting you to stop & listen to Him so He can teach you; To teach you faith for healing; To test your faith; To teach you patience; As a closed door.

8. If you don't scale the mountain you can't see the view.

9. Trying times are for trying.

10. Suffering is good for you: It humbles you and gives you more compassion on others.

11. They that bear the cross shall wear the crown.

12. "For thou shalt suffer many things, many trials, many tribulations & many tests before that day, but I will bring thee forth as pure gold, if thy faith fail not!"

13. The swallows of sorrow may fly overhead, but don't let them nest in your hair.

14. Troubles, like babies, grow larger by nursing.

15. God will not look you over for medals, degrees or diplomas, but for scars.

16. The Bible talks about an evil spirit from the Lord-- that's a little hard for some people to figure out. But the Lord is also in charge of the evil spirits. He's also in charge of the Devil. They're all working for Him. He made them for a purpose, to test your faith & give you problems to see if you'll have the faith to survive them. He also made them to torment all the people who deserve it & need it & give them the judgements they deserve. (1Sam.18:10; Isa.45:7.)

17. When God is putting you through a trial, He's probably doing it so you will cry out to Him & be drawn closer to Him. If you try to escape Him by running to somebody else instead, God is going to be displeased, because He said, " I will have no other gods before Me."

18. Troubles are often the tools by which God fashions us for better things.
19. It's no sin when the Devil tempts you to do something, it's only a sin when you do it.
20. God brings men into deep waters, not to drown them, but to cleanse them.
21. 'Tis easy enough to be pleasant,  
When life flows along like a song,  
But the man worthwhile  
Is the one who will smile  
When everything goes dead wrong.
22. The wind blows on some people & they make music!--It blows on others & they just make noise.
23. You can't get anywhere today if you are still tied down in yesterday.
24. The diamond cannot be polished without friction, nor man perfected without trials.
25. Tears wash your eyes & bathe your heart; they cleanse your mind and clear your thoughts. Thank You  
Lord for tears!
26. The course of true love never runs smooth; in fact, the course of true anything never runs smooth.
27. When the going's tough, the tough get going!
28. Light is so much more appreciated in darkness!
29. We have the sunshine of His Love all the time, even if the weather is bad!
30. Nothing but sunshine makes a desert!
31. You have to go down and delve in the dark to bring out the sunshine--the buried sunshine--to give the people power and light!
32. God only uses that which has been humbled, broken, melted, remoulded and remade--a vessel which is marred in the hands of the Potter & broken, that He may make of it a better vessel.
33. Sorrow, Suffering, Sacrifice & Sadness bring out Sweetness, Compassion, Love and Tenderness.
34. There's no crown without a cross, no testimony without a test, no triumph without a trial, no victory without a battle, no rose without a thorn!
35. When things begin to go awry, you usually know that either He's trying to show you something or that you're missing the mark somewhere.
36. A difficulty is a thing to be overcome.
37. Trials can either melt you or harden you.
38. The double-hearted and double-minded live in a constant state of indecision!
39. The main evil spirit we have the biggest problem with is our own!
40. God gives everybody tests: Many times it's their own personality.
41. To stand in the midst of darkness and behave as if all is light, that is victory!
42. Temptation is the voice of the Devil; you can't keep from hearing it sometimes, but you don't have to obey it.
43. Most of my ills have been cured  
And the worst I have always survived.  
But the very worst ones I've endured  
Were the ones that never arrived!
44. We cannot have mountains without valleys.
45. Blessed are they that mourn--and mend!
46. The caverns of sorrow are mines of diamonds.
47. The greatest darkness is just before dawn, the greatest desperation is just before salvation!
48. The Lord gives us the most severe tests at the very beginning.
49. From the squeezing and twisting of David's life came forth the sweet honey of the Psalms and the fragrance of His praises to the Lord for His Mercy!
50. Before God can make you really great, He has to make absolutely nothing out of you!
51. God has to beat the hell out of you, till there's none of it left--crucify the flesh till it's dead as a doornail--mortify the mind, till it's almost gone--so that Jesus can live and think and move in you!
52. Sometimes life's darkest hour is just before dawn! Sometimes God's got to get you all the way down before He can make you look up!
53. We should be stronger, but if we were so self-righteous & perfect and didn't have weaknesses, we couldn't help others much or be sympathetic or compassionate. We couldn't even understand them!
54. The more important you are to the Lord's service, the harder the battles are and the greater the Devil fights you!

55. If you have difficulties, the Lord lets them happen as a test or a testimony & He can overrule all damaging effects because you are His child, so that, by his miracle-working power, things that seem do not have to be--just like the three Hebrew children in the fiery furnace who came out without even smelling of smoke! (Dan.3:27)

56. The darkest hour is just before dawn, and then it'll be God's tomorrow which will last forever with you and me!

57. Sometimes God makes us by breaking us.

58. If you ever get anything more than you're able to bear, it's probably because you made a mistake and you didn't do what the Lord told you to do.

59. Jesus says His yoke is easy and light. So if the yoke you carry is too hard and the burden too heavy, then either you or somebody else is making it too hard and heavy. (Mt.11:30)

60. Why are the labourers always so few?--Because God can't break them fast enough.

61. God only uses broken men and women--no others will do!

62. We sometimes suffer more than we need to, by failing to report problems sooner.

63. Suffering is a catalyst, the test-tube-time to see if you either have got the grace already to take it by faith, or if it can turn you to grace.--Or whether the same suffering is going to cause you to hate God all the more.

64. Suffering has at least three purposes: To purify, humble and cleanse you, the saved; to turn some of the unsaved to God; & to cause the wicked to curse God all the more.

65. When God beats you down and puts you through the wringer and through a test and trial, it's a compliment!

66. Everybody has tests & temptations & trials & tribulations, but it's how you handle them that makes the difference.

67. Godly hurt, sacrifice and suffering to help others are good for you.

68. He gives us a little more each day to test us, to try us, to build up our strength & resistance.

69. The greater the battle, the greater the victory!

70. He's testing you now-- putting you through the fire to burn out the dross and through the storm to blow away the chaff and through the deep waters so you can learn to swim.

71. The Lord tries to be good to us, but we often can't take it. He almost has to be holding us over the fire all the time in order to keep us really close to Him.

72. Service for God hurts, but service for the Devil hurts more. You bear a light yoke for Jesus, but a heavy one for Satan.

73. Faith that cannot stand a test is no faith at all--but the trying of your faith is more precious than gold!

74. You can never appreciate the light unless you've been in darkness!

75. You can't put out the lights just because you're crying and feeling bad. People still need the light!

76. In the presence of trouble some people buy crutches; others grow wings.

77. Don't leave school before the bell rings.

78. It takes both rain and sunshine to make a rainbow.

79. God tests you with little things to see if you have learned big principles.

80. Ye fearful saints, fresh courage take!

The clouds ye so much dread

Are big with mercy and shall break

In blessings on your head.

81. The Christian is absolutely safe, for he can use anything that can happen to him. Everything is grist to his mill.

82. I walked a mile with Folly,

She chattered all the way,

But never a thing I learned from her ,

For all she had to say!

I walked a mile with Sorrow,

And never a word said she,

But oh, the things I learned that day,

When sorrow walked with me.

83. Resisting adversity causes some men to break, others to break records.

84. When you walk through the storm,

Hold your head up high

And don't be afraid of the dark.

At the end of the storm  
Is a golden sky  
And the sweet silver song of the lark.  
85. No difficulties, no discovery!-- No pains, no gains!  
86. The inner side of every cloud  
Is always bright and shining  
I therefore turn my clouds about,  
To show the silver lining!  
87. Before you complain about the darkness of the tunnel, remember that it is a shortcut through the mountains.  
88. Got any rivers you think are uncrossable?  
Got any mountains you can't tunnel through?  
God specialises in things thought impossible  
And He can do what no other friend can do!  
89. Great trials seem to be necessary preparation for great duties.  
90. Don't chicken out when the going gets tough  
And the life and death game of faith gets to rough  
For the greatest darkness comes just before dawn  
Will you wait for the rescue, or doubt and be gone?  
91. I don't believe in giving the Devil credit for anything. I don't think a thing happens to Christians except what God allows, even if the Devil does bring it, so quit giving the Devil credit for it. All things come of God & all things work together for good to them that love the Lord. Nothing happens to a Christian without the permission of God--or your permission.  
92. God didn't promise you an easy voyage, but a safe arrival.  
93. Most Christians can't seem to be trusted with either health or wealth, because the minute they get healthy or have lots of money, they don't have to depend upon God every moment. So God has to slap them down again and take everything away again so they have to depend upon Him for every ounce of strength and every bit of money they get.  
94. After crosses and losses, men grow humbler and wiser.  
95. Your soul would have no rainbows if it had no tears.  
96. My greatest battles resulted in my greatest victories!  
97. The Devil's business is to give you tests and trials to try to convince you that God doesn't love you and that He doesn't answer prayer!  
98. In order to bring forth the sweetness, there has to be some suffering.  
99. You can't appreciate God's mercy until you've know the Devil's justice!  
100. Some of the most precious lessons you learn from the Lord come out of deep dark experiences.  
101. Man's extremity is God's opportunity. When you come to the end of your rope, then God has a chance to work.  
102. It's hard to be broken.--It makes you want to die ! But then you're willing to live!--for Jesus!  
103. That battle's over & victory's won,  
Now it's time for another one!  
104. If you're only willing to believe and obey the Lord as long as everything goes all right, you won't be believing or obeying very much, because a lot of things go wrong when you're serving the Lord!--"Many are the afflictions of the righteous!"--"But the Lord delivereth him out of them all!"  
105. God tests your faith to see if it is real gold faith and whether you'll still believe and obey Him no matter what happens!  
106. He can cause you who have been marred to grow again into beautiful flowers out of the ashes of the fires of His chastisements & purges!  
107. Always try to smile through your tears--a ray of sunshine is even more beautiful in the midst of rain.  
108. A diamond is a chunk of coal that's made good under pressure.  
109. If something is haywire, it's usually because you have neglected the Word, neglected the Lord, ignored His voice, or just been too busy to listen or got too interested in something else!  
110. Every fall can be a step upward. Make your stumbling blocks stepping-stones!  
111. Gethsemanes are gateways.

112. If He smacks you down with a disease or affliction, it doesn't just happen, it isn't an accident. The curse causeless just doesn't come, not to a Christian. Either you caused it or God caused it or God let the Devil cause it.

113. By the time God's ready to make you really great, He's made absolutely nothing out of you, so there's nothing left of you at all & it's only Jesus.

114. Let me be a little braver,  
When temptation bids me waver.  
Let me strive a little harder,  
To be all that I should be.  
Let me be a little meeker,  
With the brother that is weaker.  
Let me think more of my neighbour,  
And a little less of me.

115. God's dandy bad examples are God's only hope for those who feel lost & helpless!

116. Out of the presses of pain,  
Comes the soul's best wine;  
And the eyes that have shed no rain,  
Can shed but little shine.

117. "The tears shall be wiped away & the former things shall be no more in the glories of the ecstasies of the Kingdom to come! These shall be they that shall be no more and they that shall be forgotten like a dream or a tale in the real World to come forever!"

118. If it's all a bed of roses without any thorns, then they must not be roses.

119. If you have to be sick in bed, it gives you time to think, pray and read the Word. So sometimes sickness is good for you.

120. Wings are often born out of weights  
121. God takes all of our seeming defeats,  
And weaving with His precious hands,  
He makes the most beautiful tapestry of life  
Out of such broken strands!

122. When you begin admiring the Devil's work then it's a form of worship.

123. "For yet a little more sorrow and a little more crying, a little more pain, and these things of time shall be no more and shall be forgotten, as a tale that is told and like a dream that is past, in the glories that shall come! It will be worth it all!"

124. "I have given unto thee that which is more precious than eyes or ears or nose or throat. I have given unto thee the love & the patience & the faith to endure the afflictions."

125. "I make thee more precious than gold, for I have put thee in the refiner's fire, that thou shalt come through this fire precious unto Him and priceless."

126. "I will not suffer thee to be tempted above what thou art able to bear. For the things which thou hast suffered have given thee righteous judgement & compassion for the poor in need. And thou hast sympathy for them which suffer, because of the things which thou hast suffered."

127. "Behold the love with which I have loved thee & the comfort with which I have comforted thee is greater by far than this light affliction which I have given thee that thou might know My Love and My mercy."

128. Did you know that Jesus was tempted in all points just like we are, and that there were times when He was sick and He was tired and He was hungry and He was thirsty and He was discouraged? Think of that!

129. When his ship was sinking, his crew slaughtered, and his own arm nearly torn off, and the enemy was demanding a surrender, John Paul Jones screamed back, "Hell, no!--We haven't even begun to fight!"--And he was right! He hadn't--but he did!--And he went on to win the battle!

130. You have to have a constant battle to have constant victory!

131. You'll find that real gold--no matter how hot the fire or how long the fire, how hot the test or how long it lasts--will still come out gold--even finer gold!--"Yea, than much fine gold!"--Because the fire burns all the dross & the impurities away! ((1Pt.1:7)

132. You can get the victory if you choose to, because God's got it for you and there are oodles of promises on it. You have absolutely no excuse for not getting the victory.

133. Paul's thorn in the flesh didn't keep him from serving the Lord!

134. The Devil can't get you back once you're saved-- you're the Lord's child forever! But he sure tries hard to keep you from being the Lord's soldier by trying to put a lot of obstacles in your way.

135. Of course it's a battle! What the Hell do you think you joined the Army for? An Army is to fight battles, and we've got plenty of them to fight! But Hallelujah! I love to fight because I know I'm fighting for the One that's worth fighting for and the souls that are worth winning and the goals that are worth attaining!

136. Once you pass the little tests, then He starts giving you bigger ones!--And if you think just because you have a one-time victory you've got the victory once and for all, you sure are mistaken!

137. God will not take second place! He wants to make sure you are going to put Him first, and He tests you to find out!

138. Are you on the spot? Turn around and put God on the spot.

139. Sometimes you feel like you're in a fog--lots of times. But up there the Sun is always shining, and you just need to make it through the fog.

140. The Lion of Judah will break every chain,  
And give to us the victory again and again.

141. So trust in God, however dark your way!  
No matter what hard turns the road may take!

Hold to His hand until the break of day,  
When in His likeness we shall then awake!

142. Most Christians can have faith under normal conditions for usual situations--what they expect God to do-- but when everything goes wrong and seems contrary to the Word and the usual--only those with great faith can say with Job, "Even though He slay me, yet will I trust Him!" (Job.13:15)

143. Things don't just happen to Children of God  
They're part of a wonderful plan;  
The troubles, reverses, the sorrows, the rod  
Are strokes of the Great Sculptor's hand!

Persecution, tribulation come down like a storm,  
Friends disappoint and withstand,  
At last alone, bewildered, forlorn,  
You look and He smiles, "This is planned".

Things don't just happen to Children of God,  
The blueprint was made by His hand;  
He designed all the details to conform to His Son,  
So all things that happen are planned.

No matter what happens to those called "His Own"  
Events that are awful or grand;  
Every trial of your life He sends from His throne;  
Things don't just happen, they're planned. (Rom.8:28)

144. A veteran soldier boasts and brags of his scars-- his medals of honour-and of his campaigns and exploits in battle!

145. Simply because we have faith to trust God for health does not mean we are never sick. The Bible says "Many are the afflictions of the righteous."--but probably not as many as the wicked, because we take better care of our bodies, try to keep the health laws of God and try to be full of love, which brings peace of mind, peace of body, peace of stomach.

146. "I am an old man who's had many troubles--most of which never happened!"--Mark Twain.

147. Sleep cometh not when most I seem to need  
Its kindly balm. Oh Father be to me  
Better than sleep and let these sleepless hours  
Be hours of blessed fellowship with Thee.

148. Never mind whether you sleep or not, just be still. It is in quiet and darkness you hear those still, small voices your life misses in the noise of the day. It is there you find God.

149. Jesus has healed your heart, and some day He is going to heal your body. You must bear your cross for Jesus' sake and show your faith in spite of affliction. As Jesus bore the cross, you bear this cross for Jesus because it shows a testimony to those who don't have a testimony, that through suffering you shall learn obedience, through the things you suffer as Jesus did.

150. The Lord loves to watch us endure the affliction and the battle and fight and win the race! He loves to watch us make it in spite of all the tests and trials. I think He even sometimes watches and sees the effect on us when we lose, if we can take that!

151. You don't dare rescue people until they've really stood the test and shown that they were willing to give their lives to reach some goal, even though they don't know what the goal is--just give their lives to the Lord, and to His work, whatever it may be, not even knowing.

152. If you talk about it when you're having a trial, you just talk defeat and doubt and discouragement and murmur and complain. You don't dare put it into words unless you're honestly and sincerely seeking help and counsel.

153. Waiting and learning patience is part of your training, because if you flunk this test, you haven't got much faith or perseverance and you wouldn't last long anywhere!

154. We never know what a person is going to do until they've been time-tested and truly tried in the fire!

155. The Lord in His pre-vision no doubt knows what your choices are going to be and therefore what is going to happen in the future, but He hasn't revealed that to you yet. If He told you the end from the beginning, that would be too easy. That would be no test.

156. If you're a terrible mess, cheer up! Then if you accomplish anything, you know it's nothing but the Lord and everybody else knows it's nothing but the Lord and He gets all the glory.

157. Don't let one little mistake discourage you. Just rectify the situation, learn from it and try not to make the same mistake again.

158. When you're down and discouraged it sometimes helps to talk about it with someone so they can pray with you and help you rebuke the Enemy. If you share your heart with them they can often help to dispel any doubts and fears by pointing out the truth that you may not be able to see because you're being hit with the lies and misinterpretations of the Devil.

159. The Bible says, "Bear ye one another's burdens." (Gal.6:2) But how can someone help you bear your burdens if they don't know what they are? And how are they going to know unless you share them? You're not to murmur and complain about your problems, but you can humbly tell others so they can pray for you. "One can chase a thousand, but two can put ten thousand to flight." That's what brothers and sisters are for, to help you, to pray for you and to lift you up when you're down!--So if you need help, speak up!

(See also No. M, 20, 25, 33, 35, 66, 102, 114, 159, 287, 312, 313, 315, 325, 334a, 340, 512, 513, 514, 515, 516, 539, 551, 564, 569, 575, 599, 606, 641, 698, 703, 706, 717, 720, 721, 737, 753, 835, 847, 878, 947, 952, 954, 1005, 1090, 1111, 1112, 1135, 1141, 1219, 1268, 1281, 1367, 1369, 1403, 1406, 1420, 1650, Gen series.)

160. DEU.4:30,31 When thou art in tribulation, and all these things are come upon thee, even in the Latter Days, if thou turn to the Lord thy God, and shalt be obedient unto His voice; (For the Lord thy God is a merciful God;) He will not forsake thee, neither destroy thee, nor forget the covenant of thy fathers which He sware unto them.

161. DEU.8:2 And thou shalt remember all the way which the Lord thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness, to humble thee, and to prove thee, to know what was in thine heart, whether thou wouldst keep His commandments, or no.

162. JOB.23:10 But He knoweth the way that I take: when He hath tried me, I shall come forth as gold.

163. PSA.34:19 Many are the afflictions of the righteous: but the Lord delivereth him out of them all.

164. PSA.66:12 Thou hast caused men to ride over our heads; we went through fire and through water: but Thou broughtest us out into a wealthy place.

165. PSA.118:5 I called upon the Lord in distress: the Lord answered me, and set me in a large place.

166. PSA.119:71 It is good for me that I have been afflicted; that I might learn Thy statutes.

167. PSA.119:92 Unless Thy law had been my delights, I should then have perished in mine affliction.

168. PSA.119:143 Trouble and anguish have taken hold on me: yet Thy commandments are my delights.

169. PRO.24:10 If thou faint in the day of adversity, thy strength is small.

170. ECC.7:3 Sorrow is better than laughter: for by the sadness of the countenance the heart is made better.

171. ISA.43:1b,2 Fear not: for I have redeemed thee, I have called thee by thy name; thou art Mine. When thou passeth through the waters, I will be with thee; and through the rivers, they shall not overflow thee: when thou walkest through the fire, thou shalt not be burned; neither shall the flame kindle upon thee.

172. ISA.48:10 Behold, I have refined thee, but not with silver; I have chosen thee in the furnace of affliction.

173. JER.18:4 And the vessel that He made of clay was marred in the hand of the Potter: so He made it again another vessel, as seemed good to the Potter to make it.

174. MAR.7:37 He hath done all things well.

175. LUK. 22:31,32 And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat: But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.

176. JOH.15:2 Every branch in Me that beareth not fruit He taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, He purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.

177. ACT.14:22 Confirming the souls of the disciples, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that we must through much tribulation enter into the Kingdom of God.

178. 1CO.10:13 There hath no temptation taken you but such as is common to man: but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it.

179. 1CO.15:57 But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.

180. 2CO.4:16,17 For which cause we faint not; but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day. For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory.

181. EPH. 1:11b ...to the purpose of Him Who worketh all things after the counsel of His Own will.

182. PHL.3:10 That I may know Him, and the power of His resurrection, and the fellowship of His sufferings, being made conformable unto His death.

183. 1TH.3:3 That no man should be moved by these afflictions: for yourselves know that we are appointed thereunto.

184. 2TI.2:10a Endure all things for the elect's sakes.

185. 2TI.4:5a But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions.

186. HEB.2:10 For it became Him, for whom are all things. and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the Captain of their Salvation perfect through sufferings.

187. HEB.5:8 Though He were a Son, yet learned He obedience by the things which He suffered.

188. HEB.11:25,26 Choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season; Esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt: for He had respect unto the recompense of the reward.

189. HEB.12:2-4 Looking unto Jesus the Author and Finisher of our faith; Who for the joy that was set before Him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. For consider Him that endured such contradiction of sinners against Himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your mind. Ye have not yet resisted unto blood striving against sin.

190. JAM.1:2,3 My brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into divers temptations; Knowing this, that the trying of your faith worketh patience.

191. JAM.1:13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth He any man.

192. 1PE.1:6,7 Wherein ye greatly rejoice, though now for a season, if need be, ye are in heaviness through manifold temptations: That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honor and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ.

193. 1PE.4:12,13 Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you: But rejoice, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christ's sufferings; that, when His glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy.

194. 1PE.4:19 Wherefore let them that suffer according to the will of God commit the keeping of their souls to Him in well doing, as unto a faithful Creator.

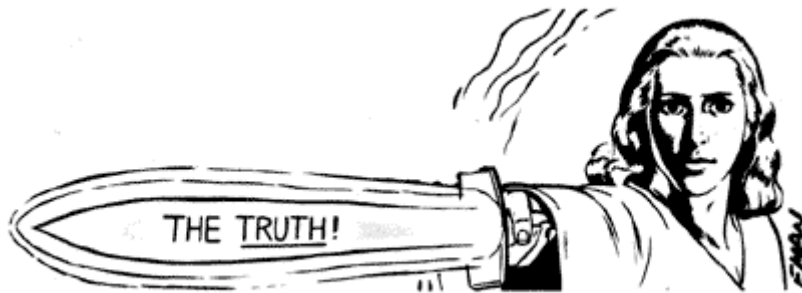
195. 1PE.5:10 But the God of all grace, Who hath called us unto His eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you.

196. 2PE.2:9a The Lord knoweth how to deliver the Godly out of temptations.

197. REV.21:7a He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God.

(See also EXO.6:6,7; MAT.4:1-4,7,10; MAT.5:29,30.)





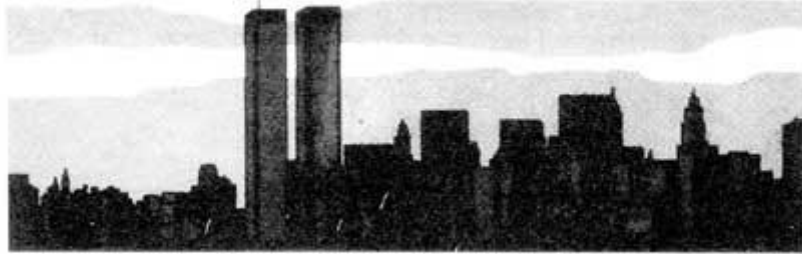
*Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life (Jn.14:6).*

1. We know what is true or false by the standards of God's Word!
2. Only fraud and falsehood dread examination. Truth invites it.
3. Whatever is only almost true is quite false and among the most dangerous of errors, because, being so near truth, it is the more likely to lead astray.
4. You can easily forgive a child who is afraid of the dark. The real tragedy of life is when men are afraid of the Light.
5. Delusion must be destroyed in order to build a firm foundation of truth.
6. As scarce as truth is, the supply has always been in excess of the demand.
7. Facts do not cease because they are ignored.
8. Better to speak truth rudely than to lie correctly.
9. We search the World for truth, we cull  
The good, the pure, the beautiful,  
And, weary seekers of the best,  
We come back laden from our quest,  
To find that all the sages said  
Is in the Book our Fathers read.
10. Because nobody else is preaching the Truth, we have to almost over-preach it!
11. If it's against what the Bible says, it just isn't so!
12. There's no way they have to fight the Truth but to try to kill the Truth-giver, and this is what they did to Jesus and every man of God that's ever arisen to speak the Truth of God!
13. Do you know what killed Jesus?--Love and the Truth!--Because that's what He was and that's what He had and His enemies hated Him for it! They killed Him because He told the truth and preached love!
14. The truth of God's love is the most dangerous doctrine in the whole World because the forces of the Devil hate it and will fight to the death to try to kill it!
15. You don't have to know all the evil machinations of the Enemy to be able to fight him. You don't have to know evil to fight evil--all you have to know is the Truth!
16. We're sort of centrists striking a middle-of-the-road path. The exact truth usually seems to be somewhere down the middle with some truth and right on both sides.
17. When God tells you something, He means it. When He tells you the Truth, He's not kidding, and if you'll obey and follow it, it's the solution, the key!
18. You'll never know the truth until you're willing to let your false conceptions and preconceived notions be destroyed.
19. Ours is the news that proves the Truth!--The World News that really counts!
20. Truth and beauty must go together. If it's not true it's not beautiful, if it's not beautiful it's not true!
21. That which is not founded on the firm foundation of Christ and the Bible has a reason to be frightened of the Truth!
22. God sometimes has to take away from you what you think is right before He can show you the truth!

23. We've got the Truth, the whole Truth and nothing but the Truth!
24. We're here to preach the Word and the Truth, and if it's not the Word and it's not the Truth, we don't want it! Period!
25. The lies of man shall come to naught, but the Truth of God shall stand forever!
26. Truth is the God-given duty of every child of God and His prophets!
27. It is sometimes necessary to cut with the sword of God's Truth to remove the cancers of Evil!
28. Our truth and sample cannot be quenched by tyranny!
29. We've faced the facts, faced the fears, declared war on hypocrisy, war on their lies, war on their deceptions and delusions, and we are determined to destroy, to cast down and to uproot that which is false!
30. We have to tell the truth, but sometimes it's dangerous.
31. Just be sure it's the truth! Be sure you're right, then go ahead! God can defend His Own reputation!
32. You can never reject truth and leave a vacuum--it will be filled with lies!
33. Most men are in danger for lying, but we are in danger for telling the truth!
34. When you reject the Truth, then you have nothing left to believe but the lie!
35. The people who are honest and sincere and truthful and open-minded want to know the Truth, and God promises them that "he that hungereth and thirsteth after righteousness shall be filled"! (Mt.5:6)
36. It is better to be hated for what you are than loved for what you are not.
37. Right is right, even if everyone is against it, and wrong is wrong, even if everyone is for it.
38. The Lord's sheep are not going to believe the lies. The Holy Spirit will show them what's true and what isn't true. The Devil's people are going to believe the lies; the people who want to believe the lies are going to believe them.
39. Truth resisted loses its power over the mind.
40. He who speaks the Truth stabs falsehood in the heart.
41. When we hear from God, we know we've heard the Truth. When we hear from Heaven, we don't have to wonder if we're right or wrong.
42. It's a fight for liberty. What is liberty?--To know the Truth, this is liberty. "If ye continue in My words, then are ye My disciples indeed and ye shall know the Truth and the Truth shall set you free." (Jn.8.31,32) And the Devil never wants people to know the Truth, for the Truth makes you free, so it's a fight for freedom. The enemies always fight against the Truth and against Love because the Love of God and the Truth of His Word set you free. The Enemy likes to keep people under the bondage of darkness, but the more he fights the Truth, the more the Truth comes to light!
43. You are more dangerous than the oil war because you have exposed the truth and where the trouble is and what's causing it!
44. The Lord apparently doesn't like anything that's not the whole Truth, because a little deception and a little truth, a mixture of truth and lies, can be even more deceitful.
45. For Truth and Spring our God can bring  
And happy you can be!  
Take Jesus' joy right here and now  
And live a life that's free!

(See also No. 46, 66, 86, 97, 255, 286, 317, 335A, 342, 352, 360, 568, 585, 598, 629, 678, 736, 1108, 1248, 1399, 1400.)

46. .15:1,2 Lord, who shall abide in Thy tabernacle? Who shall dwell in Thy holy hill? He that walketh uprightly, and worketh righteousness, and speaketh the truth in his heart.
47. .23:23 Buy the truth, and sell it not; also wisdom, and instruction, and understanding.
48. .14:6 Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me.
49. .17:17 Sanctify them through Thy truth: Thy Word is truth.
50. .4:16 Am I therefore become your enemy, because I tell you the truth?
51. .4:15 But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into Him in all things, which is the head, even Christ.
52. .1:18 Of His Own will begat He us with the Word of truth, that we should be a kind of firstfruits of His creatures.
53. **JO.2:27b The same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie.**



*The wicked shall be turned into Hell, and all the nations that forget God (Ps.9:17).*

1. The worst horror of all is that the U.S. commits its crimes in the name of God!
2. The Russians don't even know the Lord, how can they hate Him? The Americans know what they're doing!
3. I'd be ashamed to be an American or live in America, and I'm really ashamed of the people that are still there!
4. America's like Hell on Earth! It was a wonderful country once, a beautiful country, a country with faith in God, but now it's a land of the Devil and full of devils, because they abandoned their faith in God.
5. America has no more God, no more faith, no more fight!
6. The U.S. is hopelessly confused. They have no program, they have no goal, they have no World strategy.
7. The U.S. already has what it wants, it has no place else to go, it's one of the "haves" that just wants to keep what it's got. And of course you never win a defensive warfare, so they're going to lose, because the Russians are progressing more every day. Communism is growing more every day.
8. The U.S. is in absolute confusion, they don't know what they're doing, they don't know who they're supposed to be backing because they have no plan, no goal, no nothing!
9. It's totally useless to talk to the Americans about eliminating waste--waste is their religion, that's what America was built on, its whole economy is waste!
10. Americans don't care what happens to the rest of the World. As long as they've got their car and their gasoline and their TV and they can go to the beach and have got their job and their big salaries, that's all they care about--let the rest of the World go to Hell!
11. America has the highest death rates from all types of neuroses and diseases and the highest death rates from heart failure, highest death rates from auto accidents. The trouble with America is that they've got too much of everything--too much money, too much war, too much everything.
12. The U.S. buys more drugs than any other country in the World, that's the World's major drug market.--Not only the illicit illegal drugs that the kids and the junkies buy, but also the drugs that their parents buy on doctor's prescription, all the nice legal drugs. They're a pill-popping people.
13. America is the cesspool of iniquity of the World and the worst enemy of Christ on Earth!
14. They are honestly the most conceited people on the face of the Earth! They don't believe they are the greatest and the smartest, they know it!
15. America is built on violence! Violence is its religion. From the time the kids get to school and beat each other up till the time they go to war to kill each other, that's America's religion.
16. Americans are the worst warmongers! America, ex-Christian America, was supposedly the most Christian nation in the World, but it is no longer! They have become the most pro-selfish, pro-capitalist, really pro-fascist, anti-socialist country in the World!
17. It was the American police and government agents who taught the Latin American police how to torture, and did the same thing in Iran. The CIA was over there teaching them how to torture! Think of it!--America, the World's greatest instructor in scientific torture!--And she backs these big dictatorial fascist regimes throughout Latin America, and in fact throughout the World!
18. To the Americans, violence is always the final answer, war is always the final answer, "If we don't get what we want we'll fight for it!" That's how America was built, on violence, absolute violence!

19. The Russians didn't invent the ballistic missiles, the Russian didn't invent the atomic bombs, the Russians haven't fought many wars and killed the millions of people the Americans have!

20. America has violent weather, absolute severe violent weather, like its people! I sometimes think maybe that's why God gives them that kind of weather.--And so many poisonous varmints!--There are more kinds of poisonous things in the United States than in most of Europe and many other lands!

21. We're anti-American because God is anti-American! So how can we ever possibly please the American system?

22. The U.S. has killed more people in its wars than have ever been killed in all the wars ever fought in the whole history of the World!

23. It is the only country in history that has wiped out total populations of entire cities, men, women, children, the innocent civilians, with one bomb!--And injured hundreds of thousands more, who have been gradually dying ever since then for the last 30 or 40 years; those that it didn't kill instantly have been dying ever since!

24. What other nation ever dropped a bomb big enough to wipe out a huge city of hundreds of thousands of people, men, women, children, babies, everything, two cities: Nagasaki and Hiroshima! What kind of monster could wield such a bomb, what kind of fiend developed such a bomb!--Devils! A so-called Christian nation, Christian government!

25. In the States the biggest advertiser is tobacco! The second largest is beer and the third largest is pharmaceuticals, medicine, pills, aspirin and all that kind of poison! All three things are bad for you, all three are the worst things you could possibly advertise!

26. People that ignorant, that dumb, that blind that they would refuse to believe the truth about their officials, that they are crooks and criminals, then there's no hope for such a country and such a people! It's because there's none so blind as those that will not see, and they want to be blind, they don't want to see.

27. America is no longer the champion of the poor and the free, but rather the U.S. now sympathises more with the undemocratic, dictatorial and oppressive totalitarian governments of the rich and the imperialistic oppressors of the poor of the World!

28. America is just about as corrupt, tyrannical and oppressive a government as there is in the World today!

29. America claims to be Christian, claims to be religious, claims to believe in God, but is officially just as anti-Christ and anti-religious as the USSR. Total separation of church and state makes the U.S. government just as irreligious and just as anti-God and anti-Christ as Russia!

30. They can't save America economically because people get what they deserve when they're selfish financially with the rest of the World, and selfish with each other. And they can't save it politically because there's no man and no king of government that's going to be able to save a wicked country. And they certainly can't save it militarily because Russia's already got'm outnumbered, outflanked, outmaneuvered outsmarted and out-armed and is constantly making progress all the time, because Russia has a plan, it has a goal, it knows where it's going and how to get there!

31. The Lord said to these missionaries in the United States, "This land which ye call light, I call dark! And that land which ye call dark, darkest Africa, I call light!" In other words, the United States is in greater darkness than Africa! If the light within you be darkness, how great is that darkness! (Mt.6:23)

32. The U.S. is such a land of violence!--It's full of everything violent!--Violent people, violent weather, violent animals, violent snakes, violent bugs--everything's violent! It's the land of violence!

33. It's a doomed country, destined for destruction for its sins because of the horrible destruction it has wreaked on other nations and the poor of the World, and the horrible wickedness of that nation which has led the World in the World's worst kind of wickedness, sexual perversion, horrible music, depravity in motion pictures, atheism and evolution and devolution and all kinds of horrible things that are going on in the World today!

34. The U.S. has invaded country after country after country, especially in Latin America time and time again, or helped the anti-Communist forces. Just as long as the government was against Communism it didn't matter what kind of a tyrant or monster they put in charge or promoted to head the government, as long as he professed to be against Communism he was OK.

35. The U.S. has no ideology left. It's abandoned Christ, it's abandoned God, it's abandoned Christianity, it has nothing left to fight for, it has nothing left to live for except its materialism, and most of its youth are sick and fed up with that and aren't willing to fight for it.

36. They pretend to be so righteous and such good Christians, they fight us and hate us and try to kill us and kidnap us and torture us and do all kinds of terrible things to us, just like the Scribes and the Pharisees in Jesus' day! They're persecuting the Children of God and the Family of Love and all the cults and sects and all those different poor little young people's groups, persecuting them and torturing them and kidnapping them and imprisoning them.

37. The U.S. is hell-bent for destruction because it has rejected the Word of God, it has rejected the Prophet of God, it has rejected the Truth of God, it has rejected the Children of God, and there is therefore nothing left for God to do but to destroy them! They have rejected the Truth, therefore they deserve destruction!

38. The Americans have forsaken their God and their Christianity and their religion and their Bible and they have taken it away from their children, officially from their schools which they are compelled to attend and whose anti-religious, anti-God, atheistic, anti-Christ teaching of Evolution they are compelled to hear and compelled to believe and compelled to answer on tests or not even pass their tests or their courses.

39. Those who get the Light and then go back on it become God's worst enemies! Even so, America, having had so much Light and so much Christianity, is today arising and becoming the World's worst enemy of true Christian faith.

40. America and Americans claim, "We are Christians, a great Christian nation, and we're more righteous than anybody else on the face of the Earth!"--And they really believe it!--While they go about with monstrous, vicious, fiendish wars that burn babies and destroy mothers and almost totally wreck entire poor little countries!

41. Americans are the blindest, dumbest, most ignorant people on the face of the Earth! They don't even know how horrible they are! They don't even know what monsters they are!

42. Those who have had so much Light and have so sinned against the Light as the Americans have, and perpetrated such evil deeds and such monstrous crimes on innocent populations as America has, are going to get the worst judgements, I think, that God has ever meted out on any people on the face of the Earth in all history!

43. America was founded for religious freedom, and freedom from persecution, but as soon as America became mighty and prosperous, it went whoring after other gods, and therefore has had nothing but trouble and war, until finally it will be scattered and cast out among the heathen again! God is now going to clobber them to show them Who is Boss!

44. In one generation that nation has fallen into iniquity which is worse than the heathen around them! Because of her sins, God will have to publicly chastise her. If God doesn't chastise her, then He isn't God! Before long the World will realise that the God America once stood for is not dead and is going to punish His people as an example to the World!

45. Jesus Himself said, "That servant which knew not his Master's will yet did things worthy of stripes"--there's a picture of Russia who has not really known the Lord or known the Gospel very much, certainly not real Salvation as much as has the U.S.--"shall be beaten with few stripes. But that servant which knew his Master's will and did things worthy of stripes shall be beaten with many stripes." (Lk.12:47,48)--Many missiles, many bombs! Because the U.S. knew better, the U.S. knew it all, it had such Light. And yet it has sinned worse against that Light, to where actually the average American is more wicked, more corrupt, more licentious, more foul-mouthed, more indecent, more unfair, more crooked and more cheating than the average Russian!

46. The average American worships violence and aggressiveness and brutality!--I know, I went through their schools and I suffered it as a Christian. I suffered persecution, all kinds of direct and indirect persecution, and sometimes even getting beat up directly--because I was a Christian and because I wouldn't do the foul things or say the foul things they said and did.

47. Well, every way you look at it, and the way I look at it, and the way God has shown it to us in every revelation he has given us, America is in God's eyes more guilty than Russia! Russia is guilty and Russia's going to get it too--at least some of it--and finally in the grand finale she's going to get it all, or a lot of it. The great World government that she spawns is going to really get it in the final outpouring of God's wrath. But right now God is more interested in socking it to His Own people--or those who were His people or claimed to be His people and who were Christians and a nation that claimed to be Christians and was Christian--but she has now sinned worse than the Russians! So God always punishes His Own people first.

48. The whole World hates America! The whole World is against America.--Not because she's Christian, but because she pretends to be good and pretends to be righteous and pretends to be Christian and religious when she is one of the wickedest, foulest, most perverted, corrupt, oppressive, cheating, lying, stealing nations on the face of the Earth!

49. The U.S. Government operates just like she accuses her Communist enemies of operating: Using financial and political pressure and virtual coercion with the threat of force to get the kind of puppet governments she desires in other countries in an imperialistically Colonial fashion, just as unprincipled, undemocratic, unlawful and totally unscrupulous as she claims her enemies to be!

50. America has become the most wicked, apostate, reprobate, unrighteous and abominable nation in the whole World! Because it had more Light and knew better than any other nation on the face of the Earth, but sinned in the face of that Light, so is more responsible, more hypocritical and more guilty than any other nation! Therefore, God will judge America accordingly!

51. "For the U.S. is doomed and I have judged her iniquity. Therefore is her cup of iniquity full and therefore the time of her judgement is at hand, and therefore will I now judge this wicked nation, for they will not hear My Words nor heed My Prophets, and now is the time, and her time is come!"

52. "For she hath not heeded the cry of the poor, nor hath her ear been open to the cry of the needy. For she hath gone her own way and the way of the wicked, and she hath no love for Me! Therefore is now her hour come and her cup of iniquity full, and I will judge this evil Nation!"

53. America has meted out death and destruction and horrible suffering to countless thousands of the pitiful poor, not only in Vietnam, but around the World, and even to her own--the youth, the hippies, and the protesters who have received vicious persecution, harassment, brutality, violent suppression and even death at the hands of the most brutal and violent nation on the face of the Earth today!

54. From the time America violently rebelled against the constituted authority of England, she began to rebel against God, and she was destined to become the greatest anti-God power on Earth! America could have gotten her independence without war, as Canada, Australia and India did, if she had been patient.--But violence is the American tradition. She's lived with violence and she'll die with violence! She's lived by the sword and will die by the sword!

55. The U.S. is built on a war basis of a wartime economy. They've got to have war to survive.

56. They refuse to share their wealth with the rest of the World and its poor, they refuse to yield to the World Power that God has ordained to take over this World in its Last Days and punish its rich for their sins and their selfishness and their wickedness and their refusal to share communally with the rest of the World! (Romans 13) The defiant challenging U.S. cry is, "We'll die for our cities and we'll sacrifice our children rather than to yield or make peace and share to save the World from this hellish horror of the atomic holocaust! We would rather lose our children and our sons and our daughters and our babies to try to save our own necks and our own cities and our own wealth and our selfish wicked living! Give us our cities and we'll give you our sons!"--That is the cry of America today!

57. How sad that America today refuses to cry for her sons! She refuses to surrender her wealth to the poor of the World, refuses to share, but is selfishly luxuriating in all kinds of extravagance and opulence and luxuries--\$10,000 bathtubs, \$25,000 automobiles that guzzle the gas like mechanical drunkards. Americans are gorging themselves with food and throwing half of it away, wasting over one-half of the World's priceless resources while millions are starving!

58. How furious God must be at such selfishness and wickedness, America's willingness to throw away her sons and her children and her daughters and their babies in a horrible holocaust of hell on Earth of atomic warfare rather than yield her cities and share her wealth with the poor of the world! No wonder God is going to destroy the U.S.!

59. They have already massacred millions of their children through war and abortions, the slaughter of the innocents, to selfishly save themselves!--How much longer can God tolerate such a wicked, selfish, destructive nation upon the face of the Earth that it threatens to destroy?

60. America, the great "Christian" nation, "protector of the poor and the protector of the rights of man and human rights and democracy"--that's where they were wrong to begin with--preaching democracy! They should have been preaching the Gospel and preaching Christ and not democracy! Because God is not for democracy! He's for Theocracy!: Rule by God and His people, a dictatorship of the Lord! That's God's program! Therefore, it's the Devil who preaches democracy, the rule of the wicked majority!

61. America's really one of the worst places in the World to live, with all of its dangerous crime, civil strife, junk food, traffic accidents, corrupt governments, pollution, wars, etc.! It seems to have about the worst of all these of any country in the World!

62. The Draft gave them power over peoples' bodies, and the Income Tax had their purses, and they then had the power and the money needed to become a dictatorship!

63. For years the U.S. mistreated the American blacks and didn't sympathise with their problems and were intolerant, segregational and discriminatory. ...

64. America is already wasting the World's resources and polluting its environment fifty times faster than any other nation on the face of the Earth, according to the ecological experts! She is greedily gobbling up fifty times her share of the World's larder and polluting fifty times more of her share of the World's living space than any other nation!--And now she threatens to destroy the whole Earth over tiny Israel!

65. "For indeed Babylon (America the Whore!) shall be destroyed with great suddenness!--Within one hour shall all these distresses come upon her! Babylon, O Babylon, that great city which oppresses the kings of the Earth and maketh merchandise of the souls of men living upon her delicacies and the blood of martyrs, shall indeed be

destroyed by the hand of God and the hand of man for her iniquities, to deliver the Earth from her that would destroy her!"

66. America is like a madhouse run by its own inmates!

67. The U.S. is a System which pardons a criminal President while sending his lesser henchmen to jail for the things he encouraged them to do! It's a cruel World with very little justice!

68. May God destroy them that destroy the Earth!--They pollute the Earth with their money, their music and their movies!

69. What you sow, you reap! What early America sowed in the way of slavery and violence, she's going to reap! ...

70. Instead of being the best-informed people on the face of the Earth as they think themselves to be, Americans are actually one of the most ignorant nations in the World today when it comes to international politics, economics, history and the serious things of life!

71. With the most expensive educational system in the World, America is producing the most ignorant and violent children the World has ever known!

72. Whereas extravagant American science has been largely devoted to silly scientific toys, looney luxuries, idiotic idols and wasteful weapons of war, the rest of the World has been barely trying to exist and scrape together enough to eat for its massive populations and trying to solve the serious problems of World peace and pollution!

73. No wonder American children are such a mess! Look at their mothers and fathers and their insane society and crazy culture! In no other nation of the World is there such a disdain for true social values, such wanton disregard for human life and such widespread contempt for family love and loyalty!

74. We can soon expect to hear of or witness America's being crushed as she has crushed the weak, robbed as she had robbed the poor, bombed as she has bombed the innocent, destroyed as she has destroyed their lands, disgraced, humiliated, persecuted, harassed, victimised, carried away captive, imprisoned and tortured and slain, even as she and hers have done to us and the rest of the World!--And the World will remember why and be thankful, lest America destroy the Earth also!

75. If God doesn't destroy the modern American Sodom and Gomorrah, He will have to apologise to the ancient ones! He Himself has warned us to get out of America: "Come out of her, ye My people, lest ye be partakers of her sins and the judgements which shall befall her!" (Rev.18:4)

76. "They await the curses pronounced upon them by the words of My Prophets!"

77. America alone now stands in the way of worldwide Communism, and she's standing more alone all the time! Even her former friends are deserting her and joining the World Socialist community, leaving America tottering and reeling on the brink of economic and political disaster, about to fall to her doom, a perfect picture of the certain self-destruction of corrupt Capitalism by its own selfish weakness and rottenness and cruelty, as predicted by both Marx and the Bible! So there you have it, in the plain words of Scripture, especially in Revelation 17 & 18!--Read it!

78. America's luxuries, sins and violence, from her music to her crimes, are imitated by nations around the World!

79. America has been involved and to blame for nearly every major war of this century, as well as a good many of the past, and has wreaked more destruction of war on the World than any other nation in history!--Nay, more than all other nations combined in all the wars throughout all history! She is the greatest warmonger the World has ever known, and the greatest destroyer they will ever see!--And even so shall be her own destruction!

80. The only way America can have plenty is with war! American economy, Western economy, capitalist economy can thrive only on war.

81. We owe America nothing and never will, except vengeance and retribution and the judgements of God that are going to fall on them.

82. The U.S.'s favourite slogan is, "Greater love hath no man than this, that he lays down his friends for his life!"

83. When the time comes, the American Christians are going to get what they deserve, and that's destruction, because they're no longer a force for faith in the World. They're going to go down with the [ACs] when God lowers the boom on them!

(See also No. H, L, 103, 105, 108, 120, 149, 160, 160A, 162, 163, 165, 205, 214A, 216, 219, 220, 221, 222, 232, 239, 243, 272, 275, 280, 281, 288, 294, 330C, 339, 340, 355, 358, 366, 372, 373, 375, 378, 380, 381, 385, 520, 558, 582, 601, 730, 741, 867, 869, 875, 879, 883, 891, 905, 906, 909, 910, 911, 913, 916, 918, 946, 1018, 1019, 1059, 1098, 1193, 1232, 1337, 1471, 1516, 1534.)

84. CH.36:16 But they mocked the messengers of God, and despised His Words, and misused His prophets, until the wrath of the Lord arose against His people, till there was no remedy.

85. .9:17 The wicked shall be turned into Hell, and all the nations that forget God.

86. .14:34 Righteousness exalteth a nation: but sin is a reproach to any people.

87. .2:8 Their land also is full of idols; they worship the work of their own hands, that which their own fingers have made.

88. .1:16 And I will utter My judgements against them touching all their wickedness, who have forsaken me, and have burned incense unto other gods, and worshipped the works of their own hands.

89. .5:27,28 As a cage is full of birds, so are their houses full of deceit: therefore they are become great, and waxen rich. They are waxen fat, they shine: yea, they overpass the deeds of the wicked: they judge not the cause, the cause of the fatherless, yet they prosper; and the right of the needy do they not judge.

90. .6:10 To whom shall I speak, and give warning, that they may hear? behold, their ear is uncircumcised, and they cannot hearken: behold, the Word of the Lord is unto them a reproach; they have no delight in it.

91. .8:11 For they have healed the hurt of the daughter of My people slightly, saying, Peace, peace; when there is no peace.

92. .12:17 But if they will not obey, I will utterly pluck up and destroy that nation, saith the Lord.

93. .27:13 Why will ye die, thou and thy people, by the sword, by the famine, and by the pestilence, as the Lord hath spoken against the nation that will not serve the king of Babylon?

94. .1:3,4 The pride of thine heart hath deceived thee, thou that dwellest in the clefts of the rock, whose habitation is high; that saith in his heart, Who shall bring me down to the ground? Though thou exalt thyself as the eagle, and though thou set thy nest among the stars, thence will I bring thee down, saith the Lord.

95. .11:29-32 And when the people were gathered thick together, He began to say, This is an evil generation: they seek a sign; and there shall no sign be given it, but the sign of Jonas the prophet. For as Jonas was a sign unto the Ninevites, so shall also the Son of man be to this generation. The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgement with the men of this generation, and condemn them: for she came from the utmost parts of the Earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and, behold, a greater than Solomon is here.

96. TH.5:3 For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape.





*Behold how good and how pleasant it is for the brethren to dwell together in unity! (Ps.133:1).*

1. We are one Family, one wife, one Body, one Bride, and we're working together for the Bridegroom.
2. Even weak men when united are powerful.
3. We are all soul brothers--a nation all of one blood, the blood of Jesus.
4. A true friend is one soul in two bodies.
5. There is no brotherhood of man without the Fatherhood of God.
6. We are not only one in spirit, but one in body, both in sex and sacrificial service to others.
7. The chain is no stronger than its weakest link.
8. The family that prays together stays together.
9. People that can't work with anybody else usually can't work with God either.
10. The unity of the flesh is symbolic of the unity of the spirit.
11. Only the Letters and the Lord can keep us unified and united in ideals, actions, spirit and goals!
12. The Lord rewards unity in His love!--Keep it loving!
13. It takes two to make a fight!
14. In unity there is strength!
15. The most powerful, the most far-reaching, the most effective and the longest-lasting empires of this world were those with unified leadership and a unified people working in tremendous cooperation together toward a unified goal.
16. Unity of the spirit is the greatest unity of all.
17. The great English historian Toynbee said: "To unite the World, you'd have to unite its religions"!
18. The secret of the Early Church was obedience and unity!
19. God help us to stay poor, and weak, and despised, and scattered, united only by His Love, His Spirit, and His Word!
20. Whatever we do, let's stick together till and when He comes, and then we'll run things right, the way they oughtta be, and there'll be no more sorrow nor crying nor pain nor death nor tears!
21. As Ben Franklin said, "We had better hang together, or it's a sure thing we are going to hang separately!"
22. The Early Church was not bound together by a dictatorial, hierarchical, centralised government, frozen together with formalities, but they were only united by His Spirit, governed by His Word, and melted together in His love, with an absolute minimum of supervision by the Apostles.
23. The strength of the church has always been its unity in the Lord.
24. Unity in the spirit, mind and heart should be far supreme and come first, and unity in the flesh will follow.
25. The ultimate in unity is one heart, one soul, one mind, one body!
26. Your victory is my victory, and all our victories are the Lord's victories!
27. This was Jesus' last prayer: "That they may be one, even as We are one." (Jn.17:21-23)
28. Like a mighty army moves the Church of God  
Brothers we are treading where the saints have trod;  
We are not divided, all one body we,  
One in hope and doctrine, one in charity.
29. Christians may not always see eye-to-eye, but they can walk arm-in-arm.

30. United we stand, divided we fall.
31. Never get so far apart you can't stay together in spirit.
32. The things on which we agree are far more important than all the little things on which we disagree.
33. Let's get it together and keep it always in all ways together, with all of us always together.
34. Always go 2 by 2--stick together.
35. The only way to win this war is to fight it together against the enemy and not each other.
36. God always seems to bless harmony, people living together at peace with each other and helping each other and showing a large measure of love for each other.
37. A co-op is not a bunch of independent people doing their own thing and going their own way, it's a bunch of people who are each sacrificing their own personal independence to cooperate, share, sacrifice and work in unison, because in unity there is strength!
38. For God's sake and your own sake and His work's sake and even the World's sake, please work together so that you may be found worthy of those greater responsibilities of His coming Kingdom on Earth and that you may learn the lessons now that you will need to know in the days to come when you will be needed to rule the whole World.
39. We all need to work together, we need to listen to each other, counsel together, agree together, decide together and then work it out together.
40. Let's talk together, discuss together, counsel together, agree together, decide together, love together, go together, do it together, bear together, care together, grow together, work together, and enjoy the fruits of our labours together!
41. My Lord, if you must have fusses and arguments, have them in private, not in public and not before others!
42. About the only time when you don't knock heads together is when you're both going the same direction.
43. As the missionaries used to tell us, the biggest problem on the field was not the outside enemy, but the inside enemy: Personality clashes between missionaries, fusses, and money problems and all kinds of things inside the family of missionaries.
44. My Dad used to say that you can't have two families living underneath the same roof, and that's true, really. Unless you're really one family and really love each other, it doesn't work.
45. People that can't work with anybody else usually can't work with God either.
46. "Little" seeds of doubt and division and jealousy and bitterness that you sow have a way of quickly growing into huge wicked giants that can be more dangerous than you ever intended and do more damage to others than you had ever planned and even threaten to destroy you!
47. The Children of God are still marching on because we stick together: Sticking together in doctrine and fellowship and communication, which is extremely important.
48. The Devil first used Judas to try to bring division and dissension to destroy confidence in leadership.
49. There's something about the power of the spirit of two people: God's dynamics of the spirit really operate amazingly! The Lord says, "When one can only chase a thousand, two can put ten thousand to flight."
50. Murmuring is the voice of the Enemy and his doubts, and a critical spirit sows dissension, disunity and discord amongst brethren, one of the seven abominations to God! (Pr.6:16-19)
51. Our spiritual Enemy is always looking for a weakness, a way to enter our defenses, and is casting fiery darts into the city of our own fellowship, trying to sow dissension, jealousy, covetousness, bickering, selfishness and internal discord so we'll get so busy fighting amongst ourselves we won't even notice our walls of spiritual strength from the Lord are crumbling from neglect or smouldering with sin, giving a place for the Enemy to enter in and destroy us and God's work. Only the cool winds and rains of God's purifying chastisements and the waters of His Word can smother the flames of disunity in His Love and wash away the black filth of our lack of love and loyalty, so we can unite against the foe, save His own and fill the Earth with God's light.
52. "Divide and conquer" is the Devil's own slogan! (Mt.12:25)
53. Sowing division in Homes is a frequent Judas method.
54. Doubt, fear, discouragement and murmuring kill!
55. Are you having problems in your part of the Father's Estate? Has the Evil Sorcerer sown the evil seeds of jealousy or contention in your Garden?--Are they growing into bitter nagging gnawing choking weeds of discontent, dissension, bitterness and strife? Are they making a way for the wicked giants of discouragement, doubt, fear, despair and even thoughts of self-destruction to enter in?
56. Call on the Father for help and "He will show thee great and mighty things thou knowest not of!"--Like the strong defending Axe of His Word that will chop down and destroy all those evil weeds and chase away the giants of gloom and bitterness and turn your ashes into lilies to make you all happy again!

57. You must forgive those who've wronged you, and seek forgiveness of those you have wronged, and take them by the hand back into your circle of love and fellowship in happy joyful labours and pleasures together, especially your own brothers and sisters and fathers and mothers and children and loving companions!

58. Undermining confidence in others' leadership before their own followers is absolutely forbidden in this outfit and almost the unpardonable sin, unless absolutely necessary according to Mt.18:15-17.

59. If I hear of any more disunity and public quarrels and criticisms before the Family, disagreement before others, contention and criticism of each other, either before others or behind their backs to others, I'm going to lower the rod.

60. For you who want division, we will gladly give it to you--division from us! You can go back to the churches, who are feuding, overgrown, retarded children in fancy nurseries and who specialise in this sort of thing!

61. "He that is not with Me is against Me." (Mt.12:30)

62. "Now I beseech you brethren, by the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no division among you; but that ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgement." (1Cor.1:10)

63. Only in the folly of this World do men fight each other for fickle fame and fortune.

64. We are not divided, all one body we, one in hope, one in doctrine, one in charity.

65. To hell with all the differences, discriminations and prejudices!--To hell with the Worldly, fleshly, Satanic, nationalistic, divisive spirit which has nearly destroyed the Earth with its divisions and wars!

66. Not all voices are of God. If it is not according to His Word or if it causes you to be discontent or bitter, dissatisfied or unhappy or critical of others--these things are not of the Lord and you must rebuke the Enemy in Jesus' Name when he tempts you with these negative thoughts.

67. Sometimes Jesus' disciples argued with Him, or questioned Him about something they didn't understand--but which of them do you ever recall making outright criticisms of Him and His policies in such a way that it could have brought division? In John 12 for example, we find Judas questioning Jesus' permitting Mary to pour the pound of costly ointment on His feet. Wasn't that a rather stinging criticism of Jesus? Wasn't this something that could have brought division? Why did he say it unless he was trying to bring division?

68. Anybody who will seriously question is a doubter: Doubts are the voice of unbelief. Questions are the result of doubts. Doubts voice questions, and the questions become criticisms. Criticism is disloyalty and it brings division.

69. The fires of division within your city can make you vulnerable to attack from the Enemy without. The hot destructive fires within can cause the walls of your defenses to crumble, giving the Enemy an opportunity to enter.

70. The first thing to do was to repair the wall, the gap--and show the Enemy that they were prepared to fight them, and not let them in! And immediately when the great knight summoned the people to face the real Enemy, the fire went out just like that--they didn't have to put it out!--God put it out! And the minute they dropped all their fleshly attempts to try to put out the fire themselves, and obeyed his call and turned to repair the breach and fight the Enemy, God put out the fire!

71. The danger of the fires from within is that they distract you from the greater danger without. The danger from within is serious in that it weakens your defenses against the outer danger and distracts from the main job!

72. Only the Enemy tries to divide and conquer...You know what God wants! Are you willing to make some accommodations and sacrifices to help make this possible?

73. As any missionary can tell you, most of the troubles on the mission field come not from without but from within!

74. When you're doubting in your own mind, you're thinking the Enemy's thoughts! When you're voicing your thoughts to others, you're spreading Satan's propaganda.--And it's all designed to bring division, and through division, destruction of the Work of God.

75. People are quicker to find fault than to value virtue.

76. We may not be the most beautiful birds nor sing the most beautiful songs, but at least we sing together, and if we sing loud enough we can drown everyone else out and overcome everything!

77. The Lord loves to give the answers and He has to give the answers when He sees we're united in love and prayer and purpose and mind and heart and spirit, of one mind, one heart, in one place. This is the marvel and the secret of the Day of Pentecost.

78. Unity demonstrates faith by obedience.

(See Also No. C, 61, 70, 75A, 189, 191, 249, 263, 290, 325, 325B, 331, 335C, 337B, 706, 752, 781, 848-2, 849, 950, 1001, 1115, 1383, 1586.)

79. .55:12-14 For it was not an enemy that reproached me; then I could have borne it: neither was it he that hated me that did magnify himself against me; then I would have hid myself from him: But it was thou, a man mine equal, my guide, and mine acquaintance. We took sweet counsel together, and walked unto the house of God in company.

80. .133:1 Behold, how good and how pleasant it is for the brethren to dwell together in unity!

81. .25:8,9 Go not forth hastily to strive, lest thou know not what to do in the end thereof, when thy neighbour hath put thee to shame. Debate thy cause with thy neighbour himself; and discover not a secret to another.

82. .4:9,10,12 Two are better than one; because they have a good reward for their labour. For if they fall, the one will lift up his fellow: but woe to him that is alone when he falleth; for he hath not another to help him up. And if one prevail against him, two shall withstand him; and a threefold cord is not quickly broken.

83. .22:30 And I sought for a man among them that should make up the hedge and stand in the gap before Me for the land, that I should not destroy it.

84. **AMO.3:3 Can two walk together, except they be agreed?**

85. **.12:25 And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand.**

86. **.3:24,25 And if a kingdom be divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand. And if a house be divided against itself, that house cannot stand.**

87. **.17:11b Holy Father, keep through Thine Own Name those whom Thou hast given Me, that they may be one, as We are.**

88. .17:21-24 That they all may be one; as Thou, Father, art in Me, and I in Thee, that they also may be one in Us: that the World may believe that Thou hast sent Me. And the glory which Thou gavest Me I have given them; that they may be one, even as We are one: I in them, and Thou in Me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the World may know that Thou hast sent Me, and hast loved them, as Thou hast loved Me. Father, I will that they also, whom Thou hast given Me, be with Me where I am; that they may behold My glory, which Thou hast given Me: for Thou lovedst Me before the foundation of the World.

89. .1:14a These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication.

90. .2:46 And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart.

91. .4:32 And the multitude of them that believed were of one heart and of one soul: neither said any of them that ought of the things which he possessed was his own; but they had all things common.

92. .15:5,6 Now the God of patience and consolation grant you to be likeminded one toward another according to Christ Jesus: That ye may with one mind and one mouth glorify God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.

93. .16:17 Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them.

94. **CO.1:10 Now I beseech you, brethren, by the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no divisions among you; but that ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment.**

95. **CO.11:18b,19 I hear that there be divisions among you; and I partly believe it. For there must be also heresies among you, that they which are approved may be made manifest among you.**

96. **CO.12:12,13 For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body: so also is Christ. For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit.**

97. **CO.12:25-27 That there should be no schism in the body; but that the members should have the same care one for another. And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it; or one member be honoured, all the members rejoice with it. Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular.**

98. **CO.14:33 For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints.**

99. **CO.12:20 For I fear, lest, when I come, I shall not find you such as I would, and that I shall be found unto you such as ye would not: lest there be debates, envyings, wraths, strifes, backbitings, whisperings, swellings, tumults.**

100. **.3:26-28 Ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus.**

101. **.1:10b Gather together in one all things in Christ.**

102. .2:14 For He is our peace, Who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us.

103. .2:19-22 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the household of God; And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ Himself being the chief corner stone; In Whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord: In Whom ye also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

104. .4:31 Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking, be put away from you, with all malice.

105. .1:27b That ye stand fast in one spirit, with one mind striving together for the faith of the Gospel.

106. .2:1,2 If there be therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any bowels and mercies, Fulfill ye my joy, that ye be likeminded, having the same love, being of one accord, of one mind.

107. .3:15 And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which also ye are called in one body; and be ye thankful.

108. TH.5:13b Be at peace among yourselves.

109. TH.3:6,14,15 We command you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye withdraw yourselves from every brother that walketh disorderly, and not after the tradition which he received of us. If any man obey not our word by this epistle, note that man, and have no company with him, that he may be ashamed. Yet count him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother.

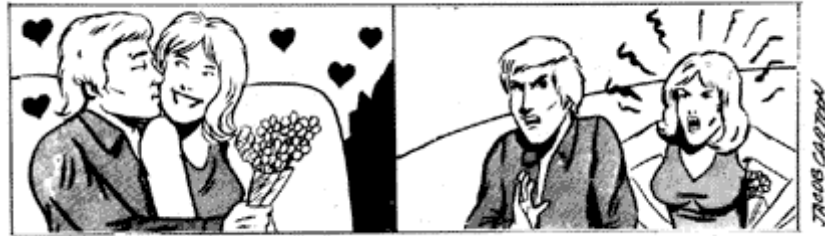
110. TI.6:3-5 If any man teach otherwise, and consent not to wholesome words, even the Words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness; He is proud, knowing nothing, but doting about questions and strifes of words, whereof cometh envy, strife, railings, evil surmisings, Perverse disputings of men of corrupt minds, and destitute of the truth, supposing that gain is godliness; from such withdraw thyself.

111. TI.2:23 But foolish and unlearned questions avoid, knowing that they do gender strifes.

112. .12:15 Looking diligently lest any man fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled.

113. JO.10,11 If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your house, neither bid him God speed: For he that biddeth him God speed is partaker of his evil deeds.

(See also 1Co.12:12-23; Eph.2:14-19; 4:4-6,12,13,16,25.)



*There is that scattereth, and yet increaseth; and there is that withholdeth more than is meet, but it tendeth to poverty (Pro.11:24).*

1. Fill your life with love and you'll have no room for selfishness.
2. God goes an awful lot by your motives, whether they are selfish or unselfish!
3. He that giveth unto the poor shall not lack: but he that hideth his eyes shall have many a curse (Pro.28:27).
4. A man wrapped up in himself makes a very small bundle.
5. Too often we seek justice for just us.
6. People who worship their minds are worshipping themselves, and if they're worshipping themselves, they're literally worshipping the god of this World.
7. Self-preservation, they say, is the first Law of Nature. It's not the first Law of Love!
8. Someone has said there are two types of people in the World: Those who come into the room and say, "Well, here I am!" and those who come and say, "Ah, there you are!"
9. Self-pity is pride, hurt feelings are damnable stinking self!
10. Selfish lust causes harmful hurt, but sacrificial love results in healing and happiness.
11. Selfishness wants it all, so it gets nothing.
12. If you are not willing to share everything and anything or anybody here in this Family, you don't belong.
13. Why should the Lord give it to you if you don't give it out to others?
14. The reason his heart was in the barns was because the barns were in his heart.
15. Selfishness is the possessiveness of private property.
16. The person who lives by himself and for himself is apt to be corrupted by the company he keeps.
17. Selfishness is one of the primary symptoms of insanity! The insane seldom think of others, they're usually only thinking of themselves.
18. An independent spirit is really selfishness.
19. Can you truly love others without partiality, or do you only give selfishly to those from whom you only selfishly wish to receive?
20. They'd rather kill it than share it!--That's the ultimate in selfishness!
21. The proud, selfish and jealous kill rather than share.
22. By your selfishness you could be absolutely killing the one you say you love.
23. God is in the business of breaking up little selfish private worldly families, to make of their yielded broken pieces a larger unit--one family--His Family!
24. There can be no superior or selfish private ties which supersede our ties to God above all!
25. I don't like selfish independent people who are not willing to sacrifice and to share and lay down their lives for others.
26. If you've got even one selfish reservation, that's too many!
27. One little bit of refusing to share and refusing to give all, refusing to forsake all and sacrifice all, leads to more and greater refusals.
28. As David Livingstone said, "I never made a sacrifice."
29. Unselfishness is a habit that you have to cultivate.

30. The only sane thing, as far as God's concerned, is love and unselfishness and sacrifice. People who are unloving and selfish and only concerned about themselves are insane. It's a form of insanity.

(See also No. 123, 215, 259, 287, 290, 302C, 321, 340, 530, 575, 603, 607, 647, 648, 662, 676, 698, 721, 727, 752, 804, 811, 837, 880, 902, 918, 919, 928, 974, 1002, 1022, 1265, 1330, 1372, 1373.)

31. **CO.10:33 ...I please all men in all things, not seeking mine own profit.**

(See verses on Giving.)

**140. USE IT!** --{page 1077}--



*If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we shall reap your carnal things?  
(1Cor.9:11).*

1. Let's use it!--As long as it serves us and we're not made to serve it!
2. The Heaven and Earth are yours--take them! We shouldn't be ashamed of taking a little bit of what's already ours and enjoying it!
3. If you'd abandon everything which the Devil uses, you wouldn't have much left!
4. I'm for using the System and its gadgets for all we can get out of 'em to save the Lord's time and money and effort!
5. Nothing is evil of itself, as the Apostle says, but it's all in how it's used.
6. Don't knock the System!--Own it and use it--but watch out--don't let it own and use you!
7. He has made the System His slave to set you free!
8. I'll take anything the Devil's got, if I can get it away from him--including you--and use it for the glory of God!
9. The System needs you, and God only lets it exist for your benefit! It belongs to you--just don't belong to it!
10. Don't make things your master--make them your slaves! Don't work for them--make them work for you. Don't serve them--make them serve you!
11. Don't expect to live off the poor when the rich at home could easily support you and should, when they're working for money and you're working for the Lord! They ought to support you! They owe it to you and the Lord and the unevangelised poor of the World!
12. All things, including the System, work together for good to them that love the Lord! So don't knock it--just hate it and use it, but don't let it use you unless it's part of His plan.
13. God always makes the System serve His servants, whenever it suits His purpose, if they have what He needs! "As using this World [or System] but not abusing it." (1Cor.7:31)
14. God's children are always needing the System for something, even though neither He nor they like it.

15. Even though God's children had their problems with the System, most of the time it was more of a help than a hindrance.

16. Anything we can get the System to do for us--use it!

17. If we were to go through the list of all the reformers and revolutionists God used, who used the System for their protection and benefit, we'd never get done!

18. God created the System for His use, so His children wouldn't have to be bothered with little things like government, transportation, education, business, and earning a living! He has made the System His slave to set you free.

19. God still uses the System to save us the trouble of getting involved in all the affairs of this World and its goods and to help protect and provide for His kingdom.

20. The System is God's gift to us, His provision for our needs, His protection for our defense, created to serve us, not us for it--except in spiritual things.

21. As the Apostle said, we should use it, but not abuse it: In other words, accept its help, its goods and services, but not impose upon it more than is necessary, nor take unfair advantage of it, not be unduly burdensome to it, nor make ourselves troublesome, but be helpful, obedient, cooperative, understanding, grateful and thankful.

22. Don't let the System get you down. Disown it and its junk and only use it to catch God's salvation on to glory!

23. Hate the damn System, but use the Systemite to get God's work done! But don't let the System get you. You're in it but not of it.

24. Six is not necessarily an evil number, it's all in how you use it.--Just like man himself is not necessarily evil, but it depends on whether he's good or bad or how he uses himself or how he lets the Lord use him. The piano itself is not evil, it depends on who uses it and how it's used, whether it's used for evil jazz music or bad music or barroom music, or whether it's used in the Lord's service.

25. A lot of our folks do a little begging. They might call us Gospel beggars sometimes but we look on it in a different light: We're just collecting what they owe us! We're collecting our dues from the System, what they owe us for being here and for the Lord protecting them and giving them peace while we're here.--Otherwise the Lord might have wiped them out or given them all kinds of trouble if they hadn't been good to us. So they owe it to us, we're just going around collecting it! So don't be ashamed to ask for it! Tax collectors are not ashamed to ask for it!

(See also No. 27, 67, 163, 211, 212, 312A, 333C, 542, 567, 571, 673, 684, 685, 688, 834, 860, 922, 1036, 1039, 1364, 1453.)

26. .3:21,22 And I will give this people favour in the sight of the Egyptians: and it shall come to pass, that, when ye go, ye shall not go empty: But every woman shall borrow of her neighbour, and of her that sojourneth in her house, jewels of silver, and jewels of gold, and raiment: and ye shall put them upon your sons, and upon your daughters; and ye shall spoil the Egyptians.

27. .13:22b The wealth of the sinner is laid up for the just.

28. .2:26a For God giveth to a man that is good in His sight wisdom, and knowledge, and joy: but to the sinner He giveth travail, to gather and to heap up, that he may give to him that is good before God.

29. .27:1,3 And when it was determined that we should sail into Italy, they delivered Paul and certain other prisoners unto one named Julius, a centurion of Augustus' band. And the next day we touched at Sidon. And Julius courteously entreated Paul, and gave him liberty to go unto his friends to refresh himself.

30. **CO.9:11 If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we shall reap your carnal things?**





*"Vengeance is Mine, saith the Lord, I will repay!" (Rom.12:19).*

1. "Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; Behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee." (Rev.3:9)

2. "Stand back and see Me fight, saith the Lord--For this is My battle, not thine. Vengeance is Mine, I will repay. Woe unto them that rise against thee, and woe to the tongues that rise against thee! They shall be devoured!"

3. "Wherefore dost thou fear the wrath of the king who is nothing in My hands, who shall crumble and fade into dust before thee; for I shall deliver the Kingdom unto My Servant David and unto his mighty men--and all of thy enemies are but puffs of air before Me, and shall vanish away and be no more."

4. "And woe be to the impostors! Woe, I say unto the devouring shepherds--they have received their reward. Their bodies shall be meat, their carcasses shall be the meat for the fowls of the Heaven and of the beasts of the Earth. My sword is against those who oppose My Kingdom."

5. "And My Gospel shall be preached in all cities whereunto I send thee, and woe unto the unrighteous ones who stand as a barricade against thee!"

6. "I shall truly highly honour thee as I have promised, and thou shalt minister to Me, and the radiance of thy beauty shall appear before all, and they which do accuse thee shall be ashamed.--And they which did condemn thee shall kneel at thy feet and ask for water--when thou shalt forgive and pour out unto many."

7. "Even so shall this little one and these little ones go forth in the power of My Spirit, and the anointing of My Oil, and the authority of My Appointment, conquering and to conquer the giants of this day, and put Ichabod to shame, and dethrone Vashti and cast down Jezebel and strike Michal barren, and she shall be wretched and naked and blind, where she was rich and increased in goods, and thought she had need of nothing."

8. "And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul, but rather fear Him which is able to destroy both soul and body in Hell. Fear not, David, for they shall speak against thee. They shall say that thou art mad, that thou hast belied the Children of God. They will accuse thee of that woman Jezebel. Fear not, for after all these things come to pass, then shall they know that a Prophet hath been among them. Then shall they know that I have anointed thee, and I will consume thine enemies from off the face of the whole Earth, and I will take away their battlements, for they are not the Lord's, and I will not have pity nor mercy, but I will rip the pillows from under the arms of those that sit at ease in Zion, for I have made thee a sharp-toothed threshing instrument, and thou shalt remove the cloak that all may see the wickedness of Laodicea."

9. "Even as these pitiful parents are so poor and so ridiculous and have no power to stand against the will of God, and they shall fall before Him like the summer grass and wither and fade away, whereas thou shalt prosper and grow strong and become mighty before all men and before all nations as thou shalt serve the Lord, and all those which shall stand against thee shall be slain and smitten, mown down like summer grass and cast into the oven to burn!"

10. "Foolish are those who stand against thee, for mighty is thy power by the hand of God. They shall fail, but thou shalt prosper! Every weapon that is formed against thee shalt not prosper, but thou shalt prosper and be mighty above all the kings on the face of the Earth, and I shall rebuke many kings for thy sake, for I am with thee and do prosper thee and shall be with thee in all these things. And they shall be blown away as the chaff of the Summer wind and burned as that which is cast in the fire! For thou art Mine Anointed King, and thy children, the City I have chosen, and thy Children shall be as the sands of the sea and the stars of the Heavens innumerable, which I have promised to My Servant Abraham, of whom thou art the fulfillment of all time and prophecy spoken,

for I am with thee and cannot fail, and I am thy Saviour and I shall redeem all men through thee and thy children, for thou art the saviours of this Earth. Otherwise, I would cast it forth, but for thy sake, I will save those upon whom thou wilt have mercy, and will curse those thou wouldst curse!"

11. "And all those that do lift even a finger against one of the hairs of thy head shall perish, for I am thy God and the Lord thy God! For I the Lord thy God am with the House of David--and the House of Saul shall perish, and I shall give even his children as servants unto thee!"

12. "But rather, listen unto Me and I will lead thee and I will guide thee and thou shalt be counted as kings of David if thou shalt obey; and thou shalt be a great power on the Earth and kings shall bow before thee as I have spoken, and thy enemies shall be as dust under thy feet!"

13. "Fear not therefore, that which shall come upon thee! For I shall turn it unto thy good! Every device of man shall be turned back upon his own head, and even these things that shall sound abroad in thy means of voicing the news--the bulletins--shall all serve thee, and that which is written shall serve thee, and many people shall hear of thee and I shall show them I am with thee, and none shall dare touch thee except by My permission!"

14. "Fear not the things which rise against thee, for all the forces of the Devil shall be as chaff which the wind driveth away, and all the ridiculous little pieces of trash which rise against thee shall be blown away by the Spirit of God! For I am with thee and none shall stand against the power I have given thee!"

15. (Lifts outstretched hands high) "Behold, I do stretch forth My arms unto this people! Behold, I have cast forth the words of David and yet will they not hearken unto him! For they will not hearken unto Me! Therefore shall I judge them! Therefore shall I visit them in My wrath! Therefore, will I bring down upon them great hail and a great shaking and a great burning throughout all this land, and they shall be astonished and sorrow shall rain upon them, and they shall sit upon ashes and upon heaps and they shall smoulder, and they shall smoke, and they shall weep as him that crieth for an only son that is not!"

16. "Therefore shall I visit them in the day of My wrath! Therefore shall I come upon them in the day of Judgement, because they hearkened not unto the words of My Servant David, and they refused the words of his children, for they smote them that spake unto them and they said, 'We will not have this man to rule over us!'"

17. "Therefore shall I cause them to bow down unto thee in My wrath, and therefore shall they serve other gods and other kings which they know not, the language of which they do not understand! Therefore shall their soul be in torment and their bodies shall burn as a furnace and their hearts shall be wrung out as blood and they shall curse Him that hath made them, and their worm shall eat as a canker and they shall writhe in torment, for they knew Me not and received not the words of My Servant and they rejected him that spake unto them. Therefore will I cast them out in my hot displeasure! Therefore will I reject them, for they are an abominable seed that have gone a whoring after other gods, and they shall suffer ten times that which they meted unto My servants! Yea, they shall suffer much more than they gave unto My prophets, and they shall be cast forth as dung that defileth the land, whose stink shall come up in all nostrils and their stench shall be made manifest--their filth shall be open before all eyes! For I the Lord have spoken it, and I shall reveal it, that My servants may be vindicated and My prophets shall be exalted and My Words shall be fulfilled."

18. "Therefore, fret not thyself because of evil doers, neither be thou afraid for him that would come up at thee! For behold, the evil perish and the wicked wane at the fire of My mouth and all these shall be consumed by the power of My Spirit before thee!"

19. "For Babylon is doomed, as I have judged her iniquity. Therefore is her cup of iniquity full, and therefore the time of her judgement is at hand, and therefore will I now judge this wicked Nation, for they will not hear My words nor heed My Prophets, and now is the time, and her time is come!"

20. "For she hath not heeded the cry of the poor, nor hath her ear been open to the cry of the needy. For she hath gone her own way and the way of the wicked, and she hath no love for Me! Therefore is now her hour come, and her cup of iniquity full, and I will judge this evil Nation!"

21. "Mete unto the malefactors that would have his life the death they would have him die, and mete unto them that seek his life the very death they would mete unto him! For I shall scatter their dead throughout the land, and they shall neither be lamented nor buried, but they shall be dung upon the ground!" (I saw people being slaughtered by the millions, like a great plague, scattered everywhere, piles of bodies! Most of what I saw seemed to be in America.)

22. "For I have spoken it: For they would not hear My Words nor hearken unto My prophets, but they despised Me and they disobeyed My Words and they persecuted My prophets, till My wrath rose up in My face against all the enemies of David, and I destroyed them throughout all the land, even as they would have destroyed him if I had not spared him!" (It's like I'm a symbol to them, like all our Children are David, God's voice to the World!)

23. "If thou wouldst know those things which would befall thee, the things that I have for thee, listen to My David that thou mayest live!" (Again to the Angels:) "Even so, go, and do also to the enemies of David as they would have done unto him had I not slain them!" (It was like the Lord was commanding His angels of judgement, commanding His angelic forces to go and slaughter our enemies. In God's eyes it's already done!)

24. "For there shall be great sorrow throughout all the land, great lamentation throughout all the land for the sorrow that shall encompass them, the horrors that shall befall them, the griefs which shall be their portion for the sorrows they have given, the horrors which they have meted, the griefs they have caused My little ones!"

25. "Even so let them be smitten as they smite, and stricken as they strike, and let them fall as they have caused to fall, and let them be carried away prisoner as they have taken captive, and let them be tortured as they have caused to be tortured, for this is Thy will, O God! Thou shalt mete unto them recompense according to their evil deeds and works, even so be it, as it has been done!"

26. "Them that trust in the Lord thy God shall be saved and shall rise again like the Phoenix from the ashes of defeat by the miracle-working power of God, like a resurrection! This shall he do, and this God shall do for him, if he crieth unto Him against these anti-Christ enemies, as a testimony unto His holy name forever, and to vindicate His servants the prophets! So shall God do it!"

27. "For I have seen thy tears, I have heard thy cry unto Me, and I shall save them for whom thou criest, whom I have ordained to defeat these mighty which rise up against them! Not by might nor by power, but by My Spirit shall the mighty be defeated and they which glorify themselves shall be put to shame!"

28. "So shall My arm save them that are poor, and shall succour them that are weak, and shall raise again them which are defeated, and shall vindicate My holy Name and the words of My prophets, and shall bring to destruction and to shame the mighty Americans which rise up against them!--They which call themselves Americans, but which are not!--They which call themselves God's people, but which are not!--And they which call themselves Christians but are not, but who side with them which are anti-Christ, and who help them which hate My Name, and would save them which despise Me and curse Me and know Me not!"

29. "Even the places of the great ones shall be destroyed--not by the hand of man, but by the hand of the Lord! So they shall glorify Me, for they shall know the Lord thy God hath done this!"

30. "There shall be a very great shaking in the land, and the Lord Himself shall come, and He shall utter His voice in the heavenlies and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken, and the Earth itself shall tremble, and the high places shall be destroyed and brought low!--And only them which call upon the Name of the Lord shall be saved!"

31. "Behold, these two (America and Israel) shall be destroyed together for their sins against Me, that I may deliver the Earth from their iniquities and destroy them which destroy the Earth, that it may be saved!"

32. "For He shall cause the wrath of man to praise Him, and He shall turn the wrath of the heathen upon their own heads, and they shall be destroyed by their own devices, and fall into the pit which they themselves have digged!"

33. "For indeed the Earth herself shall open her mouth and swallow them as they go down quick into the pit through the judgements that I have ordained for them and the fate that I have planned for them! For it shall surely come and it will not tarry, lest they destroy the Earth and My little ones upon whom I will have mercy and be strong to save!"

34. Help us, O God, to be faithful unto Thy Word and deliver our souls of the wicked ones, that our hands may be cleansed of their blood in the day of retribution when Thou shalt arise to shake terribly the Earth in the day when Thou shalt destroy the sinners thereof! Even so be it, Lord Jesus!

35. "Therefore I will rise up and destroy thee who calleth thyself Israel ..., and I will return My land unto them unto whom I have given it, that they may be delivered from thee...!"

36. "For behold there shall come kings from the North and kings from the East, and kings from the South and even kings from the West that shall destroy thee!--And that shall feast upon the blood ... and shall take thee away and remove thee with fire and rob thee as thou hast robbed these little ones!"

37. "For very soon shall all these things be fulfilled. Be thou faithful therefore unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life! And fear not them which would destroy the body, but rather fear Me which can cast both thy soul and body into Hell if thou shalt not obey Me, even as these which have rebelled against Me for many generations!"

38. "Lift up thine eyes quickly and thou shalt behold the destruction of the wicked, but it shall not come nigh thee if thou shalt obey Me! Though thousands shall fall at thy side and ten thousand at thy right hand, it shall not come nigh unto thee."

39. "For indeed thou art My army and thou art My warriors, and I will glorify thee above all thine enemies and receive thee even unto Myself in that great day when I shall judge them and the Battle is o'er!"

40. "Therefore, will I honour them while they honour thy father, and bless them while they bless thee, and curse them if they curse thee."

41. But ... these ... are going to be cast out into utter darkness, and there is going to be weeping and wailing and gnashing of teeth in Hell in the Lake of Fire with all liars like them!

42. "Even as I have promised you, I will give you the key to the House of David, even so will I make thy enemies dust under thy feet and open doors that are closed and close doors that are opened that [these wicked ones] shall be cast down and exposed. And you shall be delivered, for I the Lord have spoken it and I cannot lie."

43. "Thou hast delivered his soul from the snare of the fowler and counted his life as a precious thing and delivered him from the enemy. Indeed Thou shalt reprove many nations for his name's sake! Thou shalt rebuke many people because of him, and many shall be judged of him by Me!"

44. "In the end shalt thou triumph over them, for they shall be dust and ashes under thy feet, for thou shalt reign victorious over all the Earth, and thou shalt forget the hinder years and remember only that which is called the glorious, golden Age that I have given thee--the Age of all ages!"

(See also No. A, 19, 81, 82, 90, 117, 117A, 118, 120, 128, 160, 162, 188, 216, 276, 309A, 317B, 400, 544, 545, 576, 577, 578, 582, 598, 612, 681, 991, 1020, 1180, 1221, 1256, 1257, 1258, 1277, 1284, 1335, 1516.)

45. .15:6 Thy right hand, O Lord is become glorious in power: Thy right hand, O Lord, hath dashed in pieces the enemy.

46. .7:15 And the Lord will take away from thee all sickness, and will put none of the evil diseases of Egypt, which thou knowest, upon thee; but will lay them upon all them that hate thee.

47. .32:41-43 If I whet My glittering sword, and Mine hand take hold on judgment; I will render vengeance to Mine enemies, and will reward them that hate Me. I will make Mine arrows drunk with blood, and My sword shall devour flesh; and that with the blood of the slain and of the captives, from the beginning of revenges upon the enemy. Rejoice, O ye nations, with His people: for He will avenge the blood of His servants, and will render vengeance to His adversaries, and will be merciful unto His land, and to His people.

48. **CH.36:16 But they mocked the messengers of God, and despised His Words, and misused His prophets, until the wrath of the Lord arose against His people, till there was no remedy.**

49. **.9:11b Their persecutors Thou threwest into the deeps, as a stone into the mighty waters.**

50. **.21:17 How oft is the candle of the wicked put out! and how oft cometh their destruction upon them! God distributeth sorrows in His anger.**

51. **.108:13 Through God we shall do valiantly: for He it is that shall tread down our enemies.**

52. **.29:1 He, that being often reprov'd hardeneth his neck, shall suddenly be destroyed, and that without remedy.**

53. **.35:3,4 Strengthen ye the weak hands, and confirm the feeble knees. Say to them that are of a fearful heart, Be strong, fear not: behold, your God will come with vengeance, even God with a recompense & He will come and save you.**

54. **.1:2 God is jealous, and the Lord revengeth; the Lord revengeth, and is furious; the Lord will take vengeance on His adversaries.**

55. **.4:3 And ye shall tread down the wicked; for they shall be ashes under the soles of your feet in the day that I shall do this, saith the Lord of hosts.**

56. **.12:19 Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is Mine; I will repay, saith the Lord.**

57. **TH.1:6-8 Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you; And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from Heaven with his mighty angels, In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the Gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ.**



*Where there is no vision, the people perish (Pro.29:18).*

1. Ask God to enlarge your vision--to show you how much more He has for you beyond what you have ever seen, or felt, or heard, or known! It's there!--But He's waiting for you!
2. If you don't know where you are going, you will probably end up somewhere else.
3. Millions saw the apples fall, but Newton was the one to ask why.
4. God never puts any man in a space too small to grow in.
5. When you put a limitation on what you will do, you have put a limitation on what you can do.
6. Without the Way, there is no going  
Without the Truth, there is no knowing  
Without the Life, there is no living.
7. Failure to hit the bull's eye is never the fault of the target.
8. A great deal of what you see depends on what you are looking for.
9. Most of our inventions have been produced by fairly uneducated men--maybe they didn't know it couldn't be done.
10. A goal doesn't become a goal until you have set a deadline for its accomplishment.
11. Don't go their way--get them to come your way!
12. It's exciting to look forward and up to heights you're soon to attain if you keep fighting, climbing, winning and don't quit!
13. Everything God shows you always works out!
14. We've got a lot to be thankful for, but we've still gotta lot to do!
15. If you have built your castles in the air, your work need not be lost, that is where they should be. Now put the foundations under them.
16. Those whose look is fixed high cannot live low.
17. Always attack each challenge not with why we can't, but how we can.
18. Now we see through a lens darkly!--That gives a lot more meaning than glass.--To see beyond the scope of human or natural capacity, beyond our normal eyesight, see more deeply into the inner world, inner space with a microscope, and outer space with a telescope!
19. No vision and you perish,  
No ideal and you're lost.  
Your heart must ever cherish  
Some faith at any cost.
20. Our plan is a well-trained, well-disciplined, well-planned effort that is bound to succeed by the help of God.--Because God has ordained it and God has planned it and God is directing it.
21. Nearly every great accomplishment took years of planning and laborious engineering.
22. Hitch your wagon to His star and there'll be no stopping you!
23. The pilgrim who never reaches his goal is not on a pilgrimage!--He's just a wanderer.
24. Keep your eyes on the goal,  
And the victory in your soul!  
And if you go, go all the way!
25. It just takes one little glimpse of Jesus to make it worth it all!

26. Better to die for something than to die for nothing!--Or better yet, better to live for something than to die for nothing!
27. We not only know what we are against, but we know what we're for, and we know whereof we speak. We not only know where we've been, but we know where we're going, and we're on our way.
28. He is no fool who trades what he cannot keep to gain what he cannot lose!
29. We must not be limited by the scope of the acts of the Children of God of the past!
30. I'd rather die for something than live for nothing!
31. Without organisation and a vision, you won't make much progress.
32. We've got to keep in mind who we're aiming at and not just what we feel inspires us!
33. Keep your hopes high no matter how low you feel.
34. Sometimes when you are right in the middle of the action and get your nose so close to the details you can't stand back and see the overall picture, you can get things out of proportion, perspective and proper relationship with each other by being too close to your work.
35. The outlook for us in this World, and our future here could hardly be darker!--But the uplook could hardly be brighter or more glorious!
36. You've got to explode out of narrow confines  
You've got to expand your vision  
You've just gotta see the signs of the times  
You've got to stand up to derision.
37. It doesn't matter where you come from if you aren't going somewhere.
38. Only he who attempts the ridiculous can achieve the impossible.
39. Nothing ever built arose to touch the skies unless some man dreamed that it should, some man believed that it could, and some man willed that it must.
40. There is no limit to the possibilities for a man with imagination.
41. If you aim at nothing, you're sure to hit it.
42. Aim for the top. There is plenty of room there. There are so few at the top that it is almost lonely.
43. The man who walks with God always gets to his destination.
44. The past is valuable to you as a guidepost, but dangerous if used as a hitching-post.
45. You've got a window on the World with vision, and on our great Future in the New Year for a New World coming soon!
46. Today the World.--Tomorrow the Universe!
47. Why piddle around in puddles when there are oceans to swim in and all space to revel in?
48. You've got to have a glory in the thing you do, an everlasting glory that'll carry you through!
49. We must see God in everything, to give Life meaning, reason, purpose, plan, design and a goal--the ultimate trip!
50. Look forward to the New Year with Faith for a New World.
51. Forge ahead with Faith for a fantastic full-of-love future!
52. We're out to win the World with His Word!
53. You can't do the Master's will without the Master's plan!
54. The poorest man is not he who is without a cent, but he who is without a dream.
55. If God be your partner, make your plans large.
56. The people whose aim is always low generally hit what they shoot at: they aim for nothing and they hit it.
57. Climb every mountain  
Ford every stream  
Follow every rainbow  
Till you find your dream!
58. God said that our little pebble would roll and gather momentum, until it snowballed into a mountain, our little flame would be fanned into a forest fire that would sweep the nation, and our wave would wash the shores of the World!
59. The future is as bright as the promises of God!
60. Don't tell me it can't be done, or I'll show you how to do it!
61. Anybody who thinks the sky is the limit has no imagination.
62. Everything that man has ever dreamed of or imagined is somehow going to be fulfilled or is possible in the realm of God's possibilities.
63. The World, brother, let's take the World!

64. Don't let all these nagging little details get your minds and hearts off the end of the road! There may be a lot of flats, car troubles, breakdowns, repairs, delays and changes, but we'll hit the road again and keep on rolling, and nothing can stop us till we've reached the end and that Heavenly City with its Space King Who makes it worth it all!

65. Our job is to reach the ends of the Earth with the Gospel--to get the Message across.

66. Without a vision the people perish--they backslide and sink back into oblivion.

67. If you have lost the pioneering spirit and you're not going forward to establish the Kingdom of God on Earth, and you're content short of that goal, and you're satisfied with what you've already got, and you're not interested in progressing until you see the Kingdom of God really established on Earth and righteousness covering the Earth as the waters cover the seas, then you're backsliding!

68. As long as the Early Church had the vision and kept in that hot contact with the Lord and His leadership, they were sweeping the World.

69. I'll never be satisfied until everybody on Earth is saved!

70. I like to set my sights high and aim at a goal that I know would be good if we could ever attain it. We shouldn't bring our goals down to the level of little faith, but rather try to raise our faith to the level of higher goals.

71. Heaven is not the end--it's only the beginning!

72. For us there isn't going to be an end--Eternity has no end!

73. If you tell me I can't do it, then I'm going to prove to you I can!

74. When you see the vision you've got to be willing to believe it, have the faith to trust and act on it. Even if it's crazy or they may think you're crazy, you've got to believe it and you've got to act on it and have the faith to try it and be willing to have the courage to really see it through in spite of what it costs. And it may look for awhile like you lost all and it's cost everything.

(See also No. B, C, 31, 49, 61, 64, 69, 83, 89, 128, 151, 161, 175, 182, 208, 242, 251, 311B, 315, 315C, 316A, 316B, 318, 328B, 335A, 535, 565, 576, 650, 659, 766, 767, 806, 927, 971, 1003, 1087, 1092, 1099, 1141, 1200, 1241, 1242, 1243, 1244, 1245, 1252, 1268, 1283, 1316, 1347, 1364, 1435, 1474, 1510, 1529.)



*From whence come wars and fightings among you? Come they not hence, even of your lusts that war in your members? (Jam.4:1).*

1. There's hardly anything as horrible as war, and there's hardly anything better than peace!
2. Countries used to go to war just for pride, but in modern years they go to war for commercial reasons, they're trade wars.
3. Disarmament is like a party. Nobody wants to arrive until everyone else is there.
4. In time of war the first casualty is truth.
5. The System has never yet prepared for a war that they didn't have.
6. Who are the greater criminals, those who buy and use the instruments of death or those who sell them?
7. War is the greatest plague that can afflict humanity, it destroys religion, it destroys states and it destroys families. Any scourge is preferable to it.--Martin Luther.
8. When after many battles past,  
Both, tired with blows, make peace at last,  
What is it, after all, the people get?  
Why, taxes, widows, wooden legs, and debt!
9. All's fair in love and war, and when love is gone there's only war.
10. The major powers of the World wouldn't have made all those bombs if they didn't plan to use them!
11. Politics is a dirty game and its ultimate is always war.
12. According to the rulers of the World, war by great armies is OK, but terrorism by a little tiny handful of rebels is a monstrous crime!
13. Pride is what has caused most wars, fomented them, started them, fought them and ended them!
14. God is letting man go his own way to show what a mess he is without the Lord and what a Hell on Earth he can make out of a Heaven on Earth.
15. Nations at war make all kinds of promises and they turn right around and break'm if they get desperate enough.
16. God uses the sword of the enemy as His sword to punish a country for its sins and its wickedness.
17. Most of men's wars have not necessarily been the forces of good fighting with the forces of evil, but have been the forces of evil fighting other forces of evil.
18. Listen to how the World celebrates the incoming of a new year--with noise and force and violence, the sounds of war!
19. The Devil really blesses his favourite business, war, that slaughters and kills and destroys and wrecks, because he's trying to destroy you and the Earth, all God's Creation!
20. Violence breeds violence, and he that lives by the sword shall die by the sword! (Mt.26:52)
21. Before every war there's a long period of mental conditioning and psychological preparation.
22. Warfare is man's greatest sport, his most delightful occupation, creating the most possible destruction, man's inhumanity to man!
23. That will be the real genuine disarmament, beating their weapons into instruments of peace in the Millennium!
24. Not everybody hates war--the Devil and his children love it!



25. When the rich get rich, then they want to get richer! And when they get as rich as they possibly can get, then they want to get power! And when they get powerful, then they want to be more powerful--which ultimately erupts in war!

26. Most wars are not the poor fighting the rich, they are the rich fighting the rich using the poor!

27. There are no atheists in foxholes.

28. No matter how mighty are the great conventional armies and the firepower of the mightiest military powers on Earth, they can never conquer a righteous cause!

29. War is total waste, the most destructive total waste there is--In materials, in time, in lands, in people.

30. The evil imaginations of evil minds can be recreated by science and have been today, the worst being the atomic bomb!

31. God could have stopped them from inventing the atomic bomb, but He let it happen because that's what the Superpowers deserve!

32. Nobody ever wins a war.--Everybody always loses.

33. There'll be no more crosses then, just flowers--no more graves, just the growing--no more dead, only the living--no more dying, only the loving.--Tomorrow!--When the World is free of war, and the poppies grow and live forever!

34. Every war sows the seed of more wars.

35. Always before every big war they have a test-tube war in which they test the armaments of each side. The big boys have the little boys go to work on each other with each one's armaments.

36. War is the ultimate fulfillment of the competitive spirit: the destruction of others for self-preservation.

37. Man's favourite sport is war!

38. God damn the politicians and bureaucrats and munitions makers and the war mongers and the people who want the wars but never have to fight them, people who want the wars to save themselves and their businesses and their jobs and their political parties, but never have to fight them themselves!

39. What man condemns as crimes on the local minor individual level, he promotes as patriotism, bravery, valour and justifiable wholesale horror on the national and international level of war.

40. In every war there is always a public excuse for the war and then the real reason for the war.

41. They that love death prefer the confusion of destruction forever and are always happier in a hell of vanities and war.

42. The real war goes on, between God and destructive mankind, and most of all, the continued war between God and the Devil, angels and demons, good and evil, Christ and the Antichrist, Christians and anti-Christians, in a growing spiritual battle royal for the Salvation of the Earth and the souls of men.

43. There's hardly been a time in the whole history of the World when there wasn't a war going on somewhere.

44. We'll never have total peace till we get rid of the God-damned warmakers, the evil hearts that make war! War is in their hearts! They thirst for blood, they lust for destruction!--"Them that destroy the Earth!" (Rev.11:18)

45. No war ends all wars; it only sows the seeds for more wars.

46. They never fight "wars" anymore, they're only "efforts to bring peace"!

47. If the West would spend as much money on the poor of the World as they spend on arms, it would solve all the World's poverty problems! There wouldn't be any poor!

(See also No. H, 108, 171, 179A, 214A, 255, 274, 277, 281, 289, 305, 311, 321, 335A, 368, 373, 388, 391, 523, 547, 601, 637, 654, 655, 681, 704, 738, 740, 741, 762, 801, 849, 858, 865, 867, 869, 874, 875, 883, 905, 912, 914, 918, 937, 939, 1018, 1030, 1094, 1095, 1193, 1194, 1227, 1241, 1242, 1243, 1244, 1245, 1256, 1257, 1258, 1266, 1284, 1326, 1327, 1419, 1502, 1503, 1518, 1520, 1528, 1538.)



*He that doeth the will of God abideth for ever (1Jn.2:17b).*

1. The best way to know God's will is to say "I will" to God.
2. There's only one will of God, and that's His best! But sometimes He'll let you get away with something that's less if that's all He can persuade you to do.
3. My concern is not whether God is on my side; my great concern is to be on God's side, for God is always right.
4. God doesn't let anything happen to you, a child of His who loves Him, except what is for your good.
5. If anything hinders or delays God's work, then it's not God's will.
6. Nothing ever happens by accident to one of God's children!
7. Be so sure of the will of God that you can't possibly be mistaken.
8. You can't find God's will by just sitting around doing nothing!
9. Nothing will ever satisfy or last if it's not the highest calling that God has called you to!
10. Like the old coloured lady said, "I don't know what unction am, but I shor knows when it ain't!"
11. God's plan is not going to be defeated!
12. The first requirement for finding God's will is: Having no will of your own!
13. I'm only interested in one thing and that's God's will, obeying the Lord and doing the job He's given us to do.
14. Oh what a beautiful morning!  
Oh what a wonderful day!  
I've got a glorious feeling  
Everything's going God's way!
15. I'm so utterly convinced of the love and mercy and justice and longsuffering of God, that I know whatever happens is what ought to happen or what God allows to happen for a good reason!
16. God may still use you even if you miss the highest and best thing God wants you to do. He'll still use you for whatever He can use you for. It doesn't mean that everything you do is bad, but you just may have missed God's best.
17. Finding out what doesn't work is just as important as finding out what does work. You'll never find out what does work unless you find out what doesn't.
18. The Lord has to set us in place like a nail, hold onto us real tight for a little while to get us started while He hits us on the head with the hammer of His will to give us a shove in the right direction!
19. Nobody will ever be able to take my place, because my place is just for me!
20. Nobody can ever take your place unless you fail--then somebody can steal your crown.
21. If you're in God's will He is blessing you at least in some way--spiritually, materially or with public favour. If not, the trouble is either with you or your location.
22. The Lord is able to make you want to do what He wants you to.
23. The desire of your heart isn't always necessarily good for you, and what you think you need isn't always necessarily what you really need!
24. God help us to avoid sinking ships that we don't know how to run or that are running too fast or too hot or unsafely out of God's will.
25. Learn His will in order to let His light and power into the room of your life.

26. Without God's guidance, His gravitational pull on us in the spiritual world, we would get out of the well-planned orbit of His will.

27. The first place we look for the will of God is where?--The Word!

28. "Thou must flow with the current of My Will and where I lead, and avoid the rocks and the ledges and the protuberances and the roots that would ensnare and catch and stop, but thou must flow even as I have led David."

29. The Lord usually makes you like His will.

30. God's appointments are not disappointments!

31. Move with God! Don't run ahead of Him--but don't lag behind Him!

32. If God is not in it, it just won't work!

33. Conditions and open and shut doors are not always the final criteria or answer to the will of God, because He's able to open other doors at the last minute that we didn't expect to be opened and He's able to change conditions or our conditions to suit His will!

34. When your ears stop listening to the Lord, your house collapses on top of them!

35. God always wins what He begins!

36. Now with this new-born day

I give myself anew to Thee,

That as Thou willest I may live,

And what Thou willest be.

37. If God never tells you another thing, if you just work according to what you've already received, you'll get along great.

38. Sometimes you have to accept God's "No" in order to find His "Yes".

39. It's not a fleece unless you're willing to stick to your conditions!

40. A fleece is a two-sided proposition, like a contract between you and the Lord. You make God an offer in return for a sign!

41. You must stick to your bargain and your fleece, or it's not a fleece and you're a liar, you've broken your vow and you don't trust God!

42. You either keep your word and your vow when you make an offer and it's a fleece, or it's not a fleece! If you don't stick to it, then it's no fleece!

43. It's just as important for you to keep your part of the bargain and keep your word, as it is for God to keep His.

44. You'd better not make a vow unless you plan to keep it!

45. I wouldn't say that fleeces are always the very best sign of your own faith and belief in the Word of God or a sign of obedience. It just shows how hard it is for you to believe, how slow you are to obey.

46. God's will is absolutely infallible and unchangeable in the overall context. He has this tunnel of His overall will to confine us and restrict us to a certain area of movement and possibility from which we can't get out of line at all. But regarding individuals and individual situations, He leaves a lot of the choice in the tunnel of His will up to us and how far we go this way or that way, to this side or that side.

(See also No. 238, 302, 641, 679, 721, 727, 731, 829, 931, 953-3, 959, 960, 1268, 1392.)

47. .22:18b I cannot go beyond the Word of the Lord my God, to do less or more.

48. .6:36-40 And Gideon said unto God, If Thou wilt save Israel by mine hand, as Thou hast said, Behold, I will put a fleece of wool in the floor; and if the dew be on the fleece only, and it be dry upon all the earth beside, then shall I know that Thou wilt save Israel by mine hand, as Thou hast said. And it was so: for he rose up early on the morrow, and thrust the fleece together, and wringed the dew out of the fleece, a bowl full of water. And Gideon said unto God, Let not Thine anger be hot against me, and I will speak but this once: let me prove, I pray Thee, but this once with the fleece; let it now be dry only upon the fleece, and upon all the ground let there be dew. And God did so that night: for it was dry upon the fleece only, and there was dew on all the ground.

49. **SA.14:9,10 If they say thus unto us, Tarry until we come to you; then we will stand still in our place, and will not go up unto them. But if they say thus, Come up unto us; then we will go up: for the Lord hath delivered them into our hand: and this shall be a sign unto us.**

50. **.40:8 I delight to do Thy will, O my God: yea, Thy law is within my heart.**

51. **.11:14 Where no counsel is, the people fall: but in the multitude of counselors there is safety.**

52. **.12:15 The way of a fool is right in his own eyes: but he that hearkeneth unto counsel is wise.**

53. .15:19 The way of the slothful man is an hedge of thorns: but the way of the righteous is made plain.

54. .15:22 Without counsel purposes are disappointed: but in the multitude of counselors they are established.

55. .30:21 And thine ear shall hear a word behind thee, saying, This is the way, walk ye in it, when ye turn to the right hand, and when ye turn to the left.

56. .7:17 If any man will do His will, He shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speak of Myself.

57. CO.7:24 Brethren, let every man, wherein he is called, therein abide with God.

58. .5:17 Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is.

(See also MAT.7:21-27.)

### 145. WISDOM AND WISE SPEECH

--{page 1103}--



*If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him (Jam.1:5).*

1. The Lord has His chosen, His favourites: There are only a few wise and many foolish, and the wisest have lots of oil, oil to spare, and that oil comes from the Lord by His Spirit!
2. Wisdom is knowledge put to the test,  
A discernment in choosing that which is best.
3. The fear of the Lord is the beginning of knowledge: but fools despise wisdom and instruction. Pro.1:7.
4. For the Lord giveth wisdom: out of His mouth cometh knowledge and understanding (Pro.2:6).
5. From the errors of others a wise man corrects his own.
6. A good man does not hesitate to admit he has been in the wrong. He takes comfort in knowing he is wiser today than he was yesterday.
7. No wise man ever wished to be younger.
8. To admit I have been in the wrong is but saying that I am wiser today than I was yesterday.
9. It is better to understand a little than to misunderstand a lot.
10. I have made mistakes but I have never made the mistake of claiming that I never made one.
11. "Thou art wise that thou art simple."
12. It's wise to wait.
13. To profit from good advice requires more wisdom than to give it.
14. Common sense is not so common.
15. Knowledge is knowing facts; wisdom is knowing what to do with the facts you know.

16. A wise man appears ridiculous in the company of fools.
17. Wisdom is meek. It's not smart-alecky, it's not show-off.
18. The highest wisdom is never to worry about the future but to resign ourselves entirely to His Will.
19. Discretion is the better part of valour.
20. If you pray for any gift of God nowadays in these Last Days, Beloved, pray for the gift of discernment!
21. The more I know, the more I know I don't know!
22. A wise old owl sat in a tree,  
The less he spoke the more he'd see  
The more he saw the more he heard,  
Wish we were all like that old bird!
23. People are getting more ignorant all the time--the more they get away from the Lord the dumber they get, because the Lord gives wisdom only to the righteous!
24. Knowledge is nothing without the Spirit.
25. We have at our disposal the wisdom of the ages and the sages, the wisdom of all the kings and all the prophets that have ever lived!
26. What is wisdom?--Using knowledge in the proper way.
27. Ask God to help you to know when to laugh and when to be sober, and how to know the difference!
28. The best personnel we've got are not the smartest, but the dumbest, who are depending utterly on the Lord. The dumbest person depending on God can outsmart the smartest person not asking God for help!
29. Use your heads!--Don't loose'm!
30. Whatever you get, ask God for wisdom! Wisdom is how to use the knowledge of God, the facts you have, how to use what you already know!
31. Once you've got wisdom, the Lord might be able to trust you with a little more knowledge! But if you give some people too much knowledge without wisdom, they invent atom bombs and create destruction with their knowledge!
32. A wise man is wiser tomorrow than he was yesterday--you're entitled to change your mind if you find out you've got more sense later!
33. No matter how much you study and rightly divide the Word and are a good workman that needs not to be ashamed, if you don't use your knowledge with wisdom, it can only hurt rather than help.
34. A word to the wise is sufficient, but to the foolish you have to be more specific.
35. If you're not wiser tomorrow than you were yesterday, you're not very wise.
36. A wise man changes his mind sometimes, a fool never.
37. By others' faults wise men correct their own.
38. A good deal of trouble has been caused in the World by too much knowledge and too little wisdom.
39. Tact is the ability to shut your mouth before someone else wants to.
40. The foolishness of God is wiser than men, and this World's wisdom is foolishness to Him! (1Cor.1:25; 3:19)
41. The fear of God is the beginning of wisdom, and if you begin to have a little wisdom it will eventually lead you to getting smart and loving Him. (Pro.9:10.)
42. I don't believe everything I hear and I don't follow everything I hear, but at least I listen! I try to weigh it and see if it's got any value or worth.
43. Until they can prove to me that it isn't so, I'm going to be open to the possibility that maybe it is so!
44. He that knows not and knows not that he knows not,  
He is a fool--shun him!
- He that knows not and knows that he knows not,  
He is simple--teach him!
- He that knows and knows not that he knows,  
He is asleep--wake him!
- He that knows and knows that he knows,  
He is a wise man--follow him!
45. It's wise to be loving, it's wise to be kind, it's wise to be considerate, it's wise to be forgiving.

46. It is wise to be simple. Knowledge is not it. People would be wiser if they were just simple. The Lord has to get by all that knowledge to get to their heart.

47. Give us wisdom and most of all love, Lord. Thy love is wisdom and You give it to us to help a dear wandering searching soul who's really seeking.

48. You're a bit dumb but you're very wise because you waited for the Lord, like a little child which is dumb.--But very wise, wise because you waited.

49. What is wisdom?--How to use the knowledge of God.

50. With all thy getting, get wisdom. Whatever you get, ask God for wisdom (Pro.4:7).

51. If you give some people too much knowledge without wisdom, they invent atom bombs and war machines and spaceships and go about making war and shooting off into space while millions are starving to death.

52. I think that even the common sense He gives you about practical things is wisdom from the Lord just as much as direct revelations.

53. Most of the inconspicuous gifts are the ones leaders need most--discernment, knowledge and wisdom.

54. Where happiness is madness `tis wisdom in disguise.

Where sanity is sadness, `tis folly to be wise.

55. "Kiss the wisdom of the Words that I have given unto thy Father David."

56. "Behold, who has greater wisdom than the wisdom of the ages that I have given unto thee through My gifts of My Spirit."

57. I have the wisdom of the ages and the sages and all the prophets and all the kings and all the great men of the past available to me to help me! So I can call on the Lord and He gives me wisdom through any one of them whatever I need.

58. "Be wise as a viper and loving as a dove to carry out the Words of David."

59. Lord, give us great love, great wisdom, great patience, and to know how to go out and come in wisely before all the people, and that we have a good testimony and are witnesses of Thy love every moment of every day.

60. Give us all wisdom, guard our tongues, everyone of us, Lord, to know what to say. Help us to seek Thy face, Thy Holy Spirit, Thy Words for the right things to speak about, comments, even the slightest suggestions, Lord, that we're not speaking from our own understanding and our own mouth but by Thy wisdom, Lord.

61. Give us great wisdom, humility and love, Lord, these three being the same and virtually synonymous, wisdom, humility and love--but the greatest of these is love.

62. As the fear of God is the beginning of wisdom, the fear of Satan is the beginning of death.

63. When you don't have the wisdom of the Holy Spirit you're awful dumb.

(See also No. 50, 91, 143A, 198, 263, 274A, 542, 620, 627, 794, 942, 943, 985, 1004, 1012, 1436, 1475, 1549.)

64. .32:7 Remember the days of old, consider the years of many generations: ask thy father, and he will shew thee; thy elders, and they will tell thee.

65. **SA.18:14 And David behaved himself wisely in all his ways; and the Lord was with him.**

66. **SA.18:30 Then the princes of the Philistines went forth: and it came to pass, after they went forth, that David behaved himself more wisely than all the servants of Saul; so that his name was much set by.**

67. **KI.4:29 And God gave Solomon wisdom and understanding exceeding much, and largeness of heart, even as the sand that is on the sea shore.**

68. **.16:5 But I would strengthen you with my mouth, and the moving of my lips should assuage your grief.**

69. **.28:28 Behold, the fear of the Lord, that is wisdom; and to depart from evil is understanding.**

70. **.19:7b The testimony of the Lord is sure, making wise the simple.**

71. **.111:10 The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom: a good understanding have all they that do His commandments: His praise endureth for ever.**

72. **.119:73b Give me understanding, that I may learn Thy commandments.**

73. **.119:98a,99,100 Thou through Thy commandments hast made me wiser than mine enemies. I have more understanding than all my teachers: for Thy testimonies are my meditation. I understand more than the ancients, because I keep Thy precepts.**

74. **.1:5 A wise man will hear, and will increase learning; and a man of understanding shall attain unto wise counsels.**

75. **.1:7 The fear of the Lord is the beginning of knowledge: but fools despise wisdom and instruction.**

76. .2:1-7a My son, if thou wilt receive My Words, and hide My commandments with thee; So that thou incline thine ear unto wisdom, and apply thine heart to understanding; Yea, if thou criest after knowledge, and liftest up thy voice for understanding; If thou seekest Her as silver, and searchest for Her as for hid treasures; Then shalt thou understand the fear of the Lord, and find the knowledge of God. For the Lord giveth wisdom: out of His mouth cometh knowledge and understanding. He layeth up sound wisdom for the righteous.

77. .2:10,11 When wisdom entereth into thine heart, and knowledge is pleasant unto thy soul; Discretion shall preserve thee, understanding shall keep thee.

78. .3:13-17 Happy is the man that findeth wisdom, and the man that getteth understanding. For the merchandise of it is better than the merchandise of silver, and the gain thereof than fine gold. She is more precious than rubies: and all the things thou canst desire are not to be compared unto Her. Length of days is in Her right hand; and in Her left hand riches and honour. Her ways are ways of pleasantness, and all her paths are peace.

79. .4:5 Get wisdom, get understanding: forget it not; neither decline from the Words of My mouth.

80. .4:7 Wisdom is the principal thing; therefore get wisdom: and with all thy getting get understanding.

81. .8:11,12 For wisdom is better than rubies; and all the things that may be desired are not to be compared to it. I wisdom dwell with prudence, and find out knowledge of witty inventions.

82. .8:35 For whoso findeth Me (wisdom) findeth life, and shall obtain favour of the Lord.

83. .10:8 The wise in heart will receive commandments: but a prating fool shall fall.

84. .10:11 The mouth of a righteous man is a well of life: but violence covereth the mouth of the wicked.

85. .10:31,32 The mouth of the just bringeth forth wisdom: but the froward tongue shall be cut out. The lips of the righteous know what is acceptable: but the mouth of the wicked speaketh frowardness.

86. .11:12 He that is void of wisdom despiseth his neighbour: but a man of understanding holdeth his peace.

87. .12:19 The lip of truth shall be established for ever: but a lying tongue is but for a moment.

88. .15:31 The ear that heareth the reproof of life abideth among the wise.

89. .16:13 Righteous lips are the delight of kings; and they love him that speaketh right.

90. .16:16 How much better is it to get wisdom than gold! and to get understanding rather to be chosen than silver!

91. .16:20a He that handleth a matter wisely shall find good.

92. .17:24 Wisdom is before him that hath understanding; but the eyes of a fool are in the ends of the Earth.

93. .19:8 He that getteth wisdom loveth his own soul: he that keepeth understanding shall find good.

94. .19:20 Hear counsel, and receive instruction, that thou mayest be wise in thy latter end.

95. .24:3 Through wisdom is an house builded; and by understanding it is established.

96. .25:11 A word fitly spoken is like apples of gold in pictures of silver.

97. .27:12 A prudent man foreseeth the evil, and hideth himself; but the simple pass on, and are punished.

98. .28:5 Evil men understand not judgment: but they that seek the Lord understand all things.

99. .7:12 For wisdom is a defence, and money is a defence: but the excellency of knowledge is, that wisdom giveth life to them that have it.

100. .9:16-18 Then said I, Wisdom is better than strength: nevertheless the poor man's wisdom is despised, and his words are not heard. The words of wise men are heard in quiet more than the cry of him that ruleth among fools. Wisdom is better than weapons of war: but one sinner destroyeth much good.

101. .1:17a,20 As for these four children, God gave them knowledge and skill in all learning and wisdom. And in all matters of wisdom and understanding, that the king inquired of them, he found them ten times better than all the magicians and astrologers that were in all his realm.

102. .2:23a I thank Thee, and praise Thee, O Thou God of my fathers, Who hast given me wisdom and might.

103. .5:13 Therefore the prudent shall keep silence in that time; for it is an evil time.

104. .21:15 For I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay nor resist.

105. .6:10 And they were not able to resist the wisdom and the spirit by which he spake.

106. .16:19b I would have you wise unto that which is good, and simple concerning evil.

107. CO.12:8 For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit.

108. CO.14:20 Brethren, be not children in understanding: howbeit in malice be ye children, but in understanding be men.

109. .1:17 That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him:

110. .2:2b,3 Christ; In Whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

111. .4:6 Let your speech be alway with grace, seasoned with salt, that ye may know how ye ought to answer every man.

112. TI.2:7 The Lord give thee understanding in all things.

113. .1:5 If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him.

114. .3:13 Who is a wise man and endued with knowledge among you? let him shew out of a good conversation his works with meekness of wisdom.

115. .3:17 But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be entreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy.

116. PE.2:1 Wherefore laying aside all malice...and all evil speakings.

117. .14:5 And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God.





*How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that bringeth good tidings, that publisheth peace; that bringeth good tidings of good, that publisheth Salvation (Isa.52:7).*

1. **Jesus is our message!**
2. You can deny your faith just by keeping your mouth shut.
3. A witness is the connector between God and the people!
4. We, God's victorious army, will lay at the feet of the conquering King the souls we have recaptured from the Enemy!
5. The more I get to know Him  
The more I find Him true,  
The more I long that others  
Should be led to know Him too!
6. Souls, not diamonds, are forever!
7. The World knows enough Hell! Let's show them a little more Heaven.
8. There's nothing like personal visitation to do the job! Jesus even left the 99 to search for the one lost sheep!
9. The Lord has no hands but your hands and He has no lips but yours and He has no eyes but your eyes and no body but your own, for you are His Body, His Bride for whom He died that you might live and love others as He did.
10. The most important job for everybody right after they get saved and filled with the Spirit, is to get out witnessing, litnessing and winning others.
11. Communication is such a vastly important part of our work. In fact, almost our entire job and our whole ministry is communication. Almost everything is communication, from the very beginning of the Bible to the end. From the beginning of our lives to the end, it's all involved with communication.--The Lord's communication with man and man's communication with Him.--His giving the message, the Word, and man receiving it!
12. What greater witness can you give than to both live and die for Jesus?
13. You can't always win but you can always witness.
14. Let's minister and witness where every word is going to really count!
15. Go to the cities and the leaders of tomorrow! Win them, and they'll lead their own people.
16. Reap'm! Pile'm! Stack'm! Get'm in the Barn of God's Great Kingdom! Let's go, Reapers!
17. The purpose of miracles is to attract attention to the message and help people to receive it.
18. You owe it to the sinner, in order to try to win him, to tell him he's a sinner!--Or how's he ever going to know he needs a Saviour?
19. Witnessing is salesmanship.
20. If a man has religion, he must either give it up or give it away.
21. Sometimes in order to get to witness, you have to be witnessed unto by the Devil! You have to pay for preaching by listening to their tirades!
22. Your eyes are your most potent witnesses of God's love!
23. There is power in a look!

24. Are you Old Testament Christians or New Testament Christians? In other words, is your religion manifested by your buildings and ceremonies or by your lives, evangelism and soul-winning!
25. Forget about trying to convince people who don't want to be convinced! If they reject the Truth, forget them!
26. Don't try to cram the truth down the throats of those who don't want it!
27. You're a powerhouse, you're a generator of the Spirit of God! Think what an effect you have on people!
28. When it's dark, light is very penetrating!
29. If people won't listen, you just keep on going. You really don't have any responsibility to tell them more than once.
30. Those convinced against their will are going to be of the same opinion still! Their minds are made up, don't confuse them with the facts!
31. Whoever tells the World the Gospel, makes of some, better people, and of others, worse, because they reject it.
32. Send out those fiery hot flames and darts of love, arrows of the Spirit to set'm on fire for God!
33. We belong to no man but Jesus, but we can become all things to all men. We have no creed but love, but we can adapt ourselves to all creeds.
34. Go where the people invite you, go where the hungry sheep are, go where you are received.
35. The World has to be re-evangelised in every generation.
36. We are the most active, the most effective and the most fruitful witnesses on God's Earth today!
37. Are you faithfully mining and refining God's good gold of His Words and passing them on to the people?
38. The false cults and false prophets on the mission field spend more time trying to convert to their split-off doctrines those who are already Christians, than trying to convert the heathen to Christ!
39. The only love of God they can see is the love they see in you.
40. Why should anyone hear the Gospel twice when some have never even heard it once?
41. Your only excuse for living is to give life to the lost by His Letters.
42. The best cure for personal problems is the battle front!
43. With His Word and lambs in our hearts and hands we can win the World for Jesus!
44. Going is not an option!--It's a commandment!
45. We must give the message of God as it is, to whomever He wants to hear it.
46. All work and no play makes a very dull student, and an even worse witness.
47. Be a witness, even if not a winner.
48. Our greatest tools are radio, lit and FFing!
49. You cannot be a light without being seen.
50. Winning souls is like farming; we spend a lot of time plowing and sowing and watering with our tears and prayers!
51. In winning people you have to inspire their faith in you before they can believe in God. You are their link with God.
52. Sometimes all some people need is for somebody to listen, and that's half the job of being a witness!
53. Solving the problems of the youth with Jesus is our business.
54. Let's set the World afire for God and enlighten the hearts of all men everywhere!
55. It's pretty hard to talk about Jesus to a man with an empty stomach.
56. Funerals are a tremendous chance to witness to the unsaved.
57. Failing to stand up for the Truth is denying the Lord.
58. Street ministry with no follow-up is like scattering seeds without plowing, fertilising, watering or reaping!
59. We give people what they need physically, in order to show them God's love spiritually.
60. If you're too busy to heed the cry of those in need, you're busier than God Himself!
61. You can always drop a little love into the hearts of those on your way, and they will know that God has loved them that day.
62. We believe in a social gospel as well as a personal gospel!
63. Ignore ridiculous foolish questions and preach love.
64. Never underestimate the power of personal witnessing to not only win souls, but inspire and encourage your own heart, set you on fire and keep you alive spiritually as you battle right on the front line in the Hellholes of the Devil to rescue lost sheep!

65. Get a decision, nail'm down, put in a hook, test them on everything, draw the net, give the invitation, express the need!--You've got to make people answer and do something to cause them to move!
66. You can give Him away as much as you want, but never get rid of Him!
67. You can hide your witness in an envelope! You can mail it undercover!
68. Your job is to tell them the truth and to show them love! Their job is to receive it and believe it.
69. It's better for the Gospel to be bad news for some people than no news at all!
70. The quicker we can get our job done the quicker the Lord can judge our enemies for rejecting Him and us and His Truth!
71. Our religion is love!
72. Plant your love and yourself and your heart in them, like Jesus plants Himself in us!
73. C'mon, let's go! Go forth bearing precious seed and plant it in fertile fruitful receptive ground, young and eager for it who will burst with offspring for Jesus!
74. Witnessing is martyrdom, and if you are a faithful witness unto God you will be a daily martyr for Jesus Christ!
75. We preach a lot of love, and we give a lot of love, and we live for love and we'll die for love!
76. You're causing hearts everywhere throughout the World to turn to gold--the Lord's golden glow of happiness and satisfaction!
77. It's the witness the Devil fears.
78. Witnessing is never wasted.
79. Witnessing in itself is a form of reward and blessing and encouragement, and it inspires our own hearts as we watch the Lord work.
80. I admire more than anyone else in the whole Family those who are pounding the pavements daily with the literature and begging people to receive the Truth!--Battlefront Warriors!
81. He gives you the message of the Gospel free, but you have to work hard at getting it out.
82. Paul said, "Preach the Word!" (2Tim.4:2) and I'm not much interested in anything that doesn't preach the Word or preach Christ!
83. If you can show people that love exists, then they can believe that God exists!
84. Go to the cities!--Where most of "all the World" are!
85. Much as we hate'm, it's the cities where you've got to do most of your preaching.
86. The primary and first ministry of all of us is reaching the lost and reaching the people who need the Message!
87. You always win if you witness and you love!
88. Skillfully wield the weapon of the Word so that they know you know what you're talking about, and once you've given them the Word, your job is done.
89. Soft words win hard hearts.
90. Very few people are won instantly, it takes a little time and persuasion for them to believe.
91. You need to find out as much as you can about a person, where he's at, and then reach him there.
92. Everybody loves a story, and life stories are more effective in witnessing than getting into theological arguments and preaching sermons.
93. The most difficult cases in the World are the moral men and the good men, because they don't even realise that they're sinners or that they need a Saviour.
94. To win souls you have to win them to yourself first and then lead them to the Lord, because it's God in you that they see!
95. You can't force results; it's God Who gives the increase. (1Co.3:7)
96. Personal witnessing is a hand-to-hand fight with the Enemy, man to man! It's a struggle, it's hard, it's a battle, but it's one of the most fruitful kinds of witnessing.
97. We're not trying to change anybody's religion, we're just lifting up Christ, that's all, we're just living examples of the Love of Jesus! What they do about it then is their business!
98. You can't compel people to receive it, you can only try to prepare the ground, soften it with your tears and your prayers and sow the seed, but it's up to God to cause it to take root!
99. You can lead a horse to water, but you can't make him drink. You can lead people to the truth, in love, but you can't make them drink it. If they don't want it, you can't drink it for them.
100. You can win hearts with your love, but only the Spirit of God can win souls.
101. If you don't speak out and witness when you should, you're literally denying the Lord by keeping your mouth shut.

102. You don't have to have a special revelation to go out and witness--you've got to have a special revelation to stay home!

103. Jesus, Paul, and the early Apostles all put their major emphasis on and had their greatest successes in the major centers of population, the big cities, from which their converts there reached the surrounding territory themselves!

104. The truth is bound to bring division sooner or later! But you don't have to go deliberately out of your way to try to cause division as soon as possible!

105. In all of your witnessing, dwell on the positive, not the negative!

106. Your own personal testimony is the most effective message you have!

107. Videos are a weapon, a gun, an offer they can hardly refuse and certainly can't refute! There is the vivid living colour and sound, proof of the results!

108. I consider video to be one of our most powerful atomic weapons with the Family and outsiders!

109. We've got the greatest products in the World--We should be the greatest salesmen!

110. We just cannot hide our witness entirely. If we witness, we are bound to get some opposition and some persecution, but we have to go ahead and shine for Jesus anyhow, live or die!

111. Not everyone can understand strong doctrine, but everyone understands love.

112. Stop wasting your time, effort and God's money and lit on unseen unknown unreceptive unresponsive unfruitful targets! God help us to be more sensible, economical, labour saving, efficient, effective and fruitful!

113. Sow good ground, fish fruitful waters and hunt likely game! Stop wasteful, indiscriminate, blind, lazy sowing on sterile ground, fishing in polluted waters and hunting dead ducks! Choose your targets and hit'm!--Missing the mark is sin!

114. Litnessing should mean getting out the Message, not just getting in the money!

115. The greater the darkness, the brighter the light!

116. The Devil fights witnessing worse than anything in the World!

117. Keep the Gospel simple!

118. Even if we never win a soul, we're still winning because we're witnessing!

119. We just witness--His Spirit has to win them!

120. The most Gospel-neglected class are the rich and intellectuals, because the missionaries are afraid of them.

121. The Good Samaritan was really the Lord, and the innkeeper is His steward, like you or me!--And whatever we spend to rescue these people and save souls, he will more than repay!

122. He won't bless any other area if you neglect the number one job you have to do, preach the Word, and number two, try to win those to whom you preach it.

123. The meek are our target--for our witnessing and litnessing!

124. Our major job is to stand up as God's strongest witnesses before both the Church and the whole World.

125. Our job is to witness, win souls, and take care of the results!

126. We are ministers both unto salvation and condemnation, depending on how they receive our witness!

127. Don't you like to love souls into the Kingdom?--Witnessing is lovemaking!

128. If the sheep is lost out on the mountain, you don't sit around in the sheepfold singing songs, hoping he'll hear you and come home--you go out on the mountain and find him!

129. No farmer is going to sit around in the barn and wait for the crop to walk in on its own two feet--he has to go out there in the field where it is and harvest it and bring it in!

130. These souls are very precious, they're very fragile and they're very delicate, tender and important, so let's be awful careful that we don't disappoint them and we don't disappoint the Lord.--That our love doesn't fail.

131. We don't have to wonder where we're going to go from here--we've gone! We've done it!--Into all the World to preach the Gospel to every creature!

132. Listening is half the job of being a witness!

133. Just harp on a verse or two until he's got `em so memorised he can't forget `em.

134. You've gotta be a baby!--And babies don't waste most of their time arguing over theoretical theological doctrinal shibboleths!

135. You first have to show them that they're a sinner before you can convince them that they need a Saviour.

136. Seek out the hungry sheep who gobble it up and beg for more!

137. Jesus walked miles out of His way in the heat of the day to love and win one wicked woman at a well!

138. Stay on the main line!--Loving God and your neighbour is the solution to everything.

139. You should enjoy witnessing in the spirit as much as you do wooing in the physical!
140. Another year is dawning, Dear Master let it be  
In witness and in winning, Another year with Thee.
141. You always win if you witness. You never lose if you love.
142. God's love is never lost. It always has its effect in some way.
143. If you want to change the World  
Plant your loving seeds  
Go ye into all the World  
And give to those in need.
144. Any price is not too big to pay to save a soul!
145. Hold the lighted lamp on high  
Be a star in someone's sky  
He may live who else would die.
146. When it becomes extremely difficult or virtually impossible for you to witness, it's time to go  
someplace else where there's more freedom and liberty to do so.
147. You have the Answer: They need the Lord, and you have Him!
148. Show them that you know more than the newspaper.
149. In witnessing, it all depends on the situation and the case: If it's your last chance, hard-sell! If you're  
pretty sure you'll see'm again, soft-sell, go slow. But if they're ready, sock it to'm!
150. So you can't win `em all!--But God'll give you enough to keep you encouraged, so you won't quit!
151. If you want your neighbour to know what the Lord will do for him, let him see and hear what He has  
done for you.
152. We are in the business of publicising the Gospel, and we will do it any way we can!
153. Never think that just because you're out alone some place or in some lonely prison cell, that God can't  
work or use you, because He may be preparing you for something in which you'll be a greater witness than you ever  
dreamed!
154. There's no such thing as "Bad" publicity!--Whatever God wants to use to keep us in the news and His  
Message before the public is His business!--He knows best!
155. You can't very well tell people that you love them if you don't make the slightest attempt to learn their  
language, their customs, culture, history, religion, characteristics, nationality traits, etc., which are all a part of them.
156. I do not believe that we have to wait to witness until we know everything.
157. A soldier may not understand how a bullet is made, but to do the job, all he needs to learn is how to  
fire it.
158. Our preaching sends some people to Heaven and others to Hell!
159. Leave something up to the Holy Spirit! It's just your job to be a witness.
160. Break the box and let `em roll!  
Give enough to fill their soul!  
Make of them a holey hole!  
Spill the gold and let it roll!
161. Get those Homes ready and wit with lit to every nit-wit in the pit--Till the whole World's lit with the  
Holy Writ! Git! Don't sit! Make each bit fit in every kit, and don't you quit till you make a hit mit every tit!
162. Give `em your own testimony! If they won't believe that, they won't believe anything!
163. We cannot stop saving souls just because some people don't like the way we do it!
164. A ray of sunshine is even more beautiful in the midst of rain!
165. I'd rather die alone as a witness in the jaws of the lions in the arena than of old age in the mocking  
crowd of the grandstands!
166. What everybody needs is love! If they're not going to find it in you, where are they going to find it?
167. Burn free, beloved, burn free! You shall set the World on fire for His Kingdom!
168. The smaller you are, the clearer they can see Him!
169. Don't ever think because there's so much darkness that it's no use to have such a small light, because  
even one candle can be seen a mile away when it's dark!
170. Christ alone can save this World, but Christ can't save this World alone!
171. You can even witness by your look, your smile, your spirit, your prayer--even without a word!
172. The business we're in is moving people--making them mad, sad or glad!
173. If you can show people that Love exists, then they can believe God exists, because God is Love!
174. Watch for the worthy and wait for the witness.

175. It's never going to become totally impossible to preach the Gospel.  
176. I can give them grace and the mercy of God that Jesus gives me to love them with, to help to save them.  
177. Your greatest witness is love, and the eyes are the first to show it.  
178. With the Lord, you can get through to people's spirits immediately.  
179. It's a blitzkrieg of the Spirit!--A lightning war of the Spirit for the souls of men!  
180. Get the Words that work to the World by the millions for the billions!  
181. Witnessing's more important than winning!  
182. Only His Spirit can win. We can only witness!  
183. In witnessing, as in all salesmanship, see things from the other person's point of view and talk in terms of his wants, needs and desires.  
184. In witnessing, like any salesmanship, find out what people want, and help them to get it. That's the one big secret of selling anything.  
185. Hang on Heaven! Here we come!  
No wait a bit!--We've missed someone!  
186. Be as ready as you can, to save as many as you can, with as much love as you can, so we can all be ready.  
187. If you win one soul and each six months win one more,  
And if each won soul would yearly win two more,  
In only 16 years there would be no more!  
All 3 billion people would be through the Door!  
188. People are our business! We're in the business of building people, and people are our main attraction!  
189. It's not our business to question God as to what the effect may be of His Message.  
190. That's the name they won the World in--Jesus!--And that's the only name we'll win it in too--Jesus!  
191. Drop that little seed of the truth of God's Word into that empty hole of an empty heart, then cover it up with the loving warmth of God's love, trusting God's Spirit to bring forth the miracle of new life!  
192. Your love, like God's Word, is going to accomplish its purpose whether they receive it or reject it.  
193. The meaning of existence is to convey love to the people and to show love to the World!  
194. Ministering to their physical needs was something that Jesus often did before he ministered to their spiritual needs.  
195. You want to win them to Christ, but that's really the work of the Holy Spirit.  
196. "Behold, I will hold thee accountable for every one that is lost and every one that dieth in darkness, if thou dost withhold the water and the bread of life which I have given."  
197. If you are not faithful in pouring out the water of the Word, God can dry up all the springs of your sustenance and starve you as you are starving others! You cannot reap unless you sow!  
198. A river with no outlet becomes a Dead Sea, and if you just keep drinking it in and not giving it out, you are going to stagnate, dry up and the Devil will blow you away!  
199. Pour more, witness more, send more, mail more and God Himself will do more than we ever dreamed!  
200. Lord, help us to hasten the End through proclaiming Thy truth!  
201. Choose ye this day which way you'll serve!--Go public and blow it!--Or stay personal and sow it!--  
And really reap real disciples who'll carry on till Jesus comes!  
202. Do your best to reach the best who can do their best to reach the rest!  
203. The poor ye have always with you and for you.  
204. Communication is the name of the game. The Word is our work, so use it in any form that you find most useful and helpful and encouraging.  
205. This is our last chance to give an awful lot of people their last chance, who may not have another chance if we don't reach'm now!  
206. That's part of our job--to make people make a decision!  
207. They will never be able to stop personal individual one-on-one witnessing and soul-winning, and God has said so! "They Can't Stop Our Rain!"  
208. I am opposed to mass evangelism! I don't like mass evangelism! I'm against mass evangelism! I don't believe in mass evangelism! I fight mass evangelism! It's ineffective, inefficient, unfruitful and dangerous!--Except some places.  
209. The only really safe, sound, permanent, effective, efficient and fruitful evangelism, is personal evangelism!

210. Our meetings ought to be a powerhouse of Holy Ghost spiritual power and conviction and singing and testimonies and message--a Gospel evangelistic message that socks it to'm with evangelistic fervour and power and fire and inspiration!

211. We preach the most important doctrines of all--Jesus and His Love and His Salvation!

212. I won a lot of people to the Lord with only John 3:16.

213. You must pin their faith in the Word, because you can be here today and gone tomorrow.

214. You can't win'm all, but those you do are worth it all!

215. "Even the excreta of his vomit, and the tears of his eyes, and the offal of his bowels, and the piss of his penis, can give life unto them which are athirst, and which do hunger and long for life, that which thou dost eschew! Even these droplets in the dust shall bring life into them which are dying! If then these which are leprous nigh unto death can drink of his piss and eat of his dung, and anoint their eyes with eye salve made of his spittle, how much more shouldst thou, O foolish ones, render unto them the pure waters of life which flow from his mouth, and the bread which strengtheneth from his tongue!"

216. "Hear ye the Words I have given thy father David. For they are spirit and they are life that set they spirit free, for which they hunger, and oh how they thirst for that which thou hast!"

217. "Would that they might know the love of thy father, and would that they would drink of the words of his bosom that their thirst might be slaked and content!"

218. "They long for thee, and they search after thee, and they would follow thee if they could but find thee!"

219. "Behold, I see millions--10 thousand times 10 thousand, and thousands of thousands, who hunger for thy words, who thirst to drink after thee, who hunger to feed of this living bread, but thou givest it not unto them because of thy little faith!"

220. "Lovest thou the kisses of David? Indeed, they are without number and he giveth to thee without measure, but thou withholdest them from thy sheep!"

221. "Thou shalt flood the World with thy doctrine!"

222. "You see how you must give out to make room for more?--Or thou shalt perish from glutting, and thy presses shall burst with new wine! For thou hast not given that which thou hadst, so how can I give more unto thee?"

223. "Cast thy bread upon the waters! Cast forth thy bread upon the fountains! Cast thy bread unto the hungry, and behold, it shall return unto thee in plenteous bounty, more than thy wildest dreams--more than thy heart could desire!"

224. "Open thou thy lips, and loosen thy tongue, and loosen thy purse, that thou mayest give unto them that have need of thee, in like measure as He has given unto thee!"

225. "Oh, so few have so much love for the Children of David to take half their life and give to those who never hear, like Pandita!"

226. "How many more will die without the words of their father? How many will die without the words of their father? How many will ye let die without the words of their father? Behold, how many will die without the words of their father!--And yet no man, no man careth for their soul! They wait to be kissed of My Spirit, and they wait for the words of My David that shall interpret it for them."

227. These who are responsive to your look of love and whose spirits leap out of their eyes to embrace you are already Children of God in God's mind!

228. God's work always has room for salesmen--in fact, that's what we all are, salesmen for the Gospel!

229. John 3:16 was God's part--John 3:16 is ours!

230. One man's meat is another man's poison.

231. Out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. (Mk.12:34)

232. There are three things to aim at in speaking: First to get into your subject, then to get your subject into your self, and lastly, to get your subject into your hearers.

233. When our heart is afire, some sparks will fly out your mouth.

234. Every time you open your mouth, you let people look into your life.

235. A soft answer turneth away wrath: but grievous words stir up anger. Pro.15:1.

236. Answer not a fool according to his folly, lest thou also be like unto him. Pro.26:4.

237. He who has learned to disagree without being disagreeable has discovered the most valuable secret of a diplomat.

238. Almost Jesus' entire ministry was giving parables, telling stories and painting Word-pictures!

239. Good words are worth much and cost little.

240. Take a tip form Jesus, and from the Apostle Paul: They often disguised the deeper and more dangerous truths of their message in stories and parables.

241. Sometimes it's too late to beat around the bush!
242. Dwell on the positive, not the negative, discuss the things you have in common, not your differences.
243. Speak to individuals, not to just masses and millions!
244. Are your spoken words just so many icicles piercing their hearts and hurting with their coldness?--Or are they globs of real clinging love, like warm flesh clinging to them, hugging, loving, kissing them, fucking them with the Word of God in the Spirit!
245. We cannot always oblige, but we can always speak obligingly.
246. It pays to advertise!
247. Television is the most intimate medium of communication ever invented outside of being in bed together!
248. Spirit, spire, inspire, inspiration and spurt all come from the same root word! The spire of His inspiration causes a spiritual orgasm which fills you with His Spirit in spurts of the seed of the Word of God, which, when conceived in responsive hearts, brings forth fruit, new-born babes into the Kingdom of God!
249. How can you judge the value of the immortal soul? God valued it so highly that He gave His Own Son to redeem it!
250. Sometimes, all some people need is for somebody to listen, and that's half the job of being a witness! Let's not fail them in showing them we're willing to listen to their troubles, and to give them some personal word of comfort or counsel to let them know we're thinking of them individually, and not just another name, number, etc.
251. If you win souls personally in public, for God's sake at least ask them for their name and address so you can feed them through the mail later!
252. Unlike most preachers who preach for pay, we pay to preach! We give away thousands of dollars' worth of free lit, radio tapes, MWM gifts, labour and love every month!
253. Soul winning is not our major task! Witnessing His Wonder Working Words to the World is our major task! Witnessing is more important than winning. We'll win very few compared to the millions to whom we'll witness. But we're more responsible to give them all God's Message than we are to win them, for only His Spirit can win. We can only witness. What they do with our witness is up to them, as each must make his own decision. Even God can't win them all, but He wants to give them all a chance. We must give them that opportunity with our witness of his Wonder Working Words to the World!
254. Never underestimate the power of personal witnessing not only to win souls but to inspire and encourage your own hearts and to set you on fire and keep you alive spiritually as you battle right on the front line in some of the hell holes of the Devil to rescue some of God's sheep.
255. Do you want to work miracles? Well, get out there and God will do it! Do you want compassion for souls? Get out there face-to-face with them and face the need and God will give you the compassion.
256. Everyone you witness to, you're wooing them in the Spirit.--Wooing and loving and sowing the seed of God's Word in the Spirit.
257. We are the operators, we are the link between God and them and if we fail to pass the call on, if we fail to plug it in or we don't flip the switch, they will never get the message.
258. The mail can only go so far and then they have to have the personal touch and meet somebody face-to-face. Sooner or later they've got to have that personal touch and even more personal correspondence, individual correspondence and fellowship if we're going to really follow them up as we should and make genuine disciples of them, real Family members.
259. Our job is not done just when people are saved. We're not done until they're disciples and they are witnessing and winning souls themselves and establishing local fellowships, local clubs where they can have local fellowship with each other and help to sustain and support each other and protect and provide for each other. And of course, that, in a sense, is eventually a Family Home.
260. Shallowness, superficiality, manpleasing and hypocrisy are the only things that many know in the World, and they are so thankful for an opportunity to share their deepest thoughts and feelings or even fears.
261. It's impossible to hide the love of God and the truth of Jesus! If you have Him in your heart and you have His love you'll show it and you'll try to share with others.
262. We are literally from Heaven and we are ambassadors to this Earth! We are ambassadors to this foreign country of this World.
263. Small talk may bring big results.
264. We had better watch out if we're going to be that selfish that we don't want to bring in those dirty sinners to mix with our nice pure children, and we don't want to have the trouble of teaching and training and supporting them!



265. Back off a bit and slow down regarding some of this high exposure and excessive publicity to the wrong people. Try to quiet down, simmer down and have much less exposure and a much lower profile to try to last a little longer if possible in the more fruitful ministries of personal witnessing and litnessing and personal contact and door-to-door ministries and fellowships.

266. "Cast ye not your pearls before swine lest they trample them under their feet and rend you. Cast not that which is holy unto the dogs." (Mt.7:6)--The swine and the dogs who are our enemies, usually the self-righteous, hypocritical Scribes and the Pharisees, the same kind Jesus had to fight. But when He finally came out and openly condemned and fought them, that was the end of His public Earthly ministry.

267. Witnessing can never be totally secure. It is always risky because we have bitter enemies and the Devil hates us, so he is bound to fight us somehow sooner or later. But you have to try to exhaust all possible means and measures and ministries to make sure you have finished your job and reaped the harvest and exhausted the field and saved everybody you can and won all the disciples you possibly can and given everybody a chance before you quit.

268. I would rather have two real solid well-trained sold-out witnessing disciples in any town anywhere in the World than one radio station.

269. One live witness is better than one dead letter any day!

270. Jesus never taught the people without using pictures and illustrations, parables and stories. (Mt.13:24) Jesus was a great story teller.

271. Telling stories is a tool of teaching which helps people to learn and to remember more easily, just like your children.

272. Salesmanship is persuasion! Salesmanship is soul-winning! Salesmanship is mind-winning, heart-winning, soul-winning! Our whole job is salesmanship! "Go ye into all the World and preach the Gospel to every creature" is salesmanship! If it's not going to make any sales, if it's not going to get any results, if it's not going to win any souls, then it's no good! So let's get out there and sell!

273. No matter how sweet you are and what a sweet smile or spirit you have and how loving you are, unless you accompany your sample with a sermon, people won't know who to give the credit to and may attribute it to your good upbringing, your wonderful parents or your good church, when the credit belongs to Jesus and He should get it.

274. If you can't possibly do anything else but smile, pray that the Lord will somehow show them you care about them and that they'll think about the Lord and that He cares for them!--But although it may help and encourage them, it doesn't tell them too much about Jesus and Salvation.

275. If you have to spend hours talking to a person you certainly ought to be able to get some serious witness in, more than just a smile and a talk about trivialities.

276. The most effective, efficient and fruitful method of soul-winning is personal witnessing.--Whether to friends and acquaintances, such as workmates, schoolmates, business co-workers, whether on the street or in private FFing, whether with literature distributed by hand or by mail, whether through small meetings or whatever method possible.

277. No matter where you are, you are going to have to be a witness, sometimes in the worst and toughest and darkest places you can possibly be in!

278. High publicity mass media ministries have sacrificed personal witnessing and winning of real whole-hearted all-out disciples who are really willing to live and die for the radical message that we're supposed to preach!

279. One man's meat is another man's poison.

280. First impressions mean so much that it's very important to put almost the first and most important things first! But do wind up with something very important to leave a good taste in their mouth.

281. Today our children are probably our greatest asset, our greatest witness, our greatest proof that our system, our revolution works, and I'm sure the Devil hates our children almost more than anything or anyone else.

282. We preach Jesus!--We preach His Word, we preach His Love, we preach His Gospel, the Good News of Salvation, we preach faith in Him, we preach Him as the answer to all of our needs--physical, spiritual, mental and with hope for the future and Heaven at last!

(See also No. G, J, O, 5, 7, 51, 92, 97, 125, 154, 180, 182, 196, 208, 211, 224, 235, 241, 251, 264, 274A, 299, 306, 328, 328B, 330, 335A, 344, 527, 545, 548, 556, 557, 565, 588, 605, 617, 632, 639, 641, 649, 697, 717, 749, 750, 769, 804, 806, 834, 848, 895, 923, 927, 942, 1009, 1054, 1055, 1265, 1333, 1359, 1382, 1417, 1537, 1572, 1589, 1590, 1604, 1609, 1629.)

283. .40:10 I have not hid Thy righteousness within my heart; I have declared Thy faithfulness and Thy Salvation: I have not concealed Thy lovingkindness and Thy truth from the great congregation.

284. .51:13 Then will I teach transgressors Thy ways; and sinners shall be converted unto Thee.

285. .71:15 My mouth shall shew forth Thy righteousness and Thy Salvation all the day; for I know not the numbers thereof.

286. .96:3 Declare His glory among the heathen, His wonders among all people.

287. .107:2 Let the redeemed of the Lord say so, whom he hath redeemed from the hand of the enemy.

288. .119:46 I will speak of Thy testimonies also before kings, and will not be ashamed.

289. .126:5,6 They that sow in tears shall reap in joy. He that goeth forth and weepeth, bearing precious seed, shall doubtless come again with rejoicing, bringing his sheaves with him.

290. .11:30 The fruit of the righteous is a tree of life; and he that winneth souls is wise.

291. .14:25 A true witness delivereth souls: but a deceitful witness speaketh lies.

292. .43:10a Ye are My witnesses, saith the Lord, and My servant whom I have chosen.

293. .61:1-3 The Spirit of the Lord God is upon Me; because the Lord hath anointed Me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent Me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; To proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn; To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the Lord, that He might be glorified.

294. .62:6 I have set watchmen upon thy walls, O Jerusalem, which shall never hold their peace day nor night: ye that make mention of the Lord, keep not silence.

295. .1:7 But the Lord said unto me, Say not, I am a child: for thou shalt go to all that I shall send thee, and whatsoever I command thee thou shalt speak.

296. .34:11 For thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I, even I, will both search My sheep, and seek them out.

297. .5:14-16 Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid. Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

298. .7:6 Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you.

299. .9:37,38 Then saith He unto His disciples, The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few; Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that He will send forth labourers into His harvest.

300. .10:16 Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves.

301. .10:27 What I tell you in darkness, that speak ye in light: and what ye hear in the ear, that preach ye upon the housetops.

302. .10:32,33 Whosoever therefore shall confess Me before men, him will I confess also before My Father which is in Heaven. But whosoever shall deny Me before men, him will I also deny before My Father which is in Heaven.

303. .10:40 He that receiveth you receiveth Me, and he that receiveth Me receiveth Him that sent Me.

304. .28:19,20 Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen.

305. .16:20 And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them, and confirming the Word with signs following. Amen.

306. .8:16 No man, when he hath lighted a candle, covereth it with a vessel, or putteth it under a bed; but setteth it on a candlestick, that they which enter in may see the light.

307. .14:23 And the Lord said unto the servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel them to come in, that My house may be filled.

308. .4:35 Say not ye, There are yet four months, and then cometh harvest? behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields; for they are white already to harvest.

309. .9:25 He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner or no, I know not: one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see.

310. .10:16 And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear My voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd.

311. .12:32 And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto Me.

312. .15:16 Ye have not chosen Me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in My name, He may give it you.

313. .15:27 And ye also shall bear witness, because ye have been with Me from the beginning.

314. .17:18 As Thou hast sent Me into the World, even so have I also sent them into the world.

315. .20:21b As my Father hath sent me, even so send I you.

316. .21:17 He saith unto him the third time, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me? Peter was grieved because He said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me? And he said unto Him, Lord, Thou knowest all things; Thou knowest that I love Thee. Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep.

317. .5:20 Go, stand and speak in the temple to the people all the words of this life.

318. .5:42 And daily in the temple, and in every house, they ceased not to teach and preach Jesus Christ.

319. .8:4 Therefore they that were scattered abroad went every where preaching the word.

320. .18:5 And when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul was pressed in the spirit, and testified to the Jews that Jesus was Christ.

321. .20:20 And how I kept back nothing that was profitable unto you, but have shewed you, and have taught you publickly, and from house to house,

322. .26:22 Having therefore obtained help of God, I continue unto this day, witnessing both to small and great, saying none other things than those which the prophets and Moses did say should come.

323. .10:14,15 How then shall they call on Him in Whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in Him of Whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher? And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!

324. **CO.2:4 And my speech and my preaching was not with enticing words of man's wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit and of power.**

325. **CO.3:6,7 I have planted, Apollos watered; but God gave the increase. So then neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that watereth; but God that giveth the increase.**

326. **CO.9:16** For though I preach the Gospel, I have nothing to glory of: for necessity is laid upon me; yea, woe is unto me, if I preach not the Gospel!

327. **CO.9:22 To the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all means save some.**

328. **CO.4:5 For we preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord; and ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake.**

329. **.1:28 Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom; that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus.**

330. **TH.2:4-6a But as we were allowed of God to be put in trust with the gospel, even so we speak; not as pleasing men, but God, which trieth our hearts. For neither at any time used we flattering words, as ye know, nor a cloke of covetousness; God is witness: Nor of men sought we glory, neither of you, nor yet of others.**

331. **TI.4:2a Preach the Word; be instant in season, out of season.**

332. **.5:20 Let him know, that he which converteth the sinner from the error of his way shall save a soul from death, and shall hide a multitude of sins.**

333. **.22,23 And of some have compassion, making a difference: And others save with fear, pulling them out of the fire; hating even the garment spotted by the flesh.**

(See also 1CO.9:19-23.)



*Who can find a virtuous woman? For her price is far above rubies (Pro.31:10).*

1. Love is said to be blind, but I know lots of fellows in love who can see twice as much in their sweethearts as I can.
2. To a smart girl, men are no problem--they're the answer!
3. A woman is perturbed by what a man forgets--a man by what a woman remembers.
4. Girls have an unfair advantage over men; if they can't get what they want by being smart, they can get it by being dumb.
5. The most effective water power in the World--women's tears!
6. Women are the most wonderful creations God ever made, but when they go to the Devil, they are the worst!
7. Be to her virtues very kind,  
Be to her faults a little blind.
8. A woman's guess is often much more accurate than a man's certainty.
9. You can never tell about a woman, and if you can, you shouldn't.
10. A woman's intuition has often proved truer than man's arrogant assumption of knowledge.
11. Heav'n has no rage, like love to hatred turn'd  
Nor Hell a fury, like a woman scorn'd.
12. Woman was created from the rib of man. She was not made from his head to top him, nor from his feet to be trampled on. She was made from his side to be equal to him, from under his arm to be protected by him, from near his heart to be loved by him.
13. Men were not created to understand women, women were created to understand men!
14. Women!--They make either your best friends or your worst enemies!
15. In the operation of spiritual gifts, there is true equality for women! (Gal.3:28)
16. The so-called weaker sex is the stronger sex, because of the weakness of the stronger sex for the weaker sex!
17. We've got the most beautiful girls in the World! They have to be, because they're the Lord's!--His Queens!
18. You women are sex itself and Love itself and the manifestation of God Himself!
19. Most women who say they want equal rights really want superiority!
20. Whatever women do, they do all the way! They're extremists, built to submit and surrender and go all the way, and if they're for God, they're more for God than anybody! They serve God with utmost abandonment!
21. All women's dresses are merely variations on the eternal struggle between the admitted desire to dress and the unadmitted desire to undress.
22. The female form is even more beautiful if artistically draped.
23. It is a poor testimony for a woman not to wear any make-up if she's pale and needs that colour in order to at least look normal.
24. You should make God's child look as pretty as possible! As Peter said, your best decoration, your greatest adornment, is a meek and quiet or humble spirit! That's the best decoration you can wear.
25. All that glitters is not gold.
26. There's only one thing better than a nice pretty girl--and that's two pretty girls!
27. The better a woman looks, the longer a man does.

28. If you don't think girls are dynamite, try dropping one.
29. Doing a woman's work is like walking down a railroad track; the end seems in sight but never is.
30. Nothing annoys a housewife so much as having her friends drop in and find her house looking as it usually does.
31. Housework is something you do that nobody notices unless you don't do it!
32. The way to a man's heart is through his stomach--the way to a woman's heart is through her ears!
33. The man likes to look and the woman likes to listen. If she lets him look while she listens, they'll get along pretty good!
34. Some women aren't very good at counting calories and they have the figures to prove it.
35. A man's major interest in the woman is the woman herself, whereas normally a woman's main interest in a man is, "What has he got to give me, what can he do for me?"
36. Weaker vessels are very receptive and open but also much more fragile and have to be handled with care.
37. Women's greatest motivation in sex is not the mere sex and the temporary thrill, but eventual security.
38. You are the love of God, the ultimate creation that was given to man!
39. Women were built to surrender, believe it or not. If you're not the surrendering kind, girls, you're not normal.
40. It's the spirit and the personality that does it, not just the flesh.
41. Women have a God-given and instinctive sixth sense of intuition to warn them of things that are about to happen lest they happen without warning and be too great a shock.
42. Every woman has her own particular beauty!
43. The woman is the weaker vessel and because of it God has given her a certain mental power or greater receptivity or sensitivity to spiritual things, so-called intuition, sixth sense or ESP. Most mediums and spiritualists are women.
44. The spirit and the Word of God encased in frail feminine flesh turns out to be the most powerful and effective weapon the Lord has ever used!
45. Women are extremists and they're intended to be wholehearted. Whatever they do, they do with all their heart, whether it's good or evil.
46. Our girls are unusual girls with unusual guts and far above average, truly sacrificial warriors, women who are willing to fight side by side with their men!
47. Women are very sensitive in the spirit and they just submit a little more, they're more keen receivers, more sensitive receivers than most men.
48. The ultimate picture of God's creative love to man is a beautiful woman! You are the love of God!
49. Women's Lib is a defiance of God's plan and order and is rebellion against her place as a woman!
50. Most weight-watchers' main problem is not always sweets, of which they are watchful, but fats, starches, oils, over-eating and under-exercising!
51. A woman's breasts are so symbolic of peace and comfort, provision, security, pleasure, beauty, everything wonderful. That's why the Lord says, "Her breasts shall satisfy thee." (Pr.5:19.)

(See also No. 49, 52, 240, 250, 258, 292, 293, 332C, 338, 389, 529, 572, 573, 583, 617, 648, 699, 707, 777, 1022, 1026, 1213, 1483, 1540, 1576.)

52. .11:16a A gracious woman retaineth honour.
53. .11:22 As a jewel of gold in a swine's snout, so is a fair woman which is without discretion.
54. .12:4 A virtuous woman is a crown to her husband: but she that maketh ashamed is as rottenness in his bones.
55. .14:1 Every wise woman buildeth her house: but the foolish plucketh it down with her hands.
56. .21:9,19 It is better to dwell in a corner of the housetop, than with a brawling woman in a wide house. It is better to dwell in the wilderness, than with a contentious and an angry woman.
57. .27:15 A continual dropping in a very rainy day and a contentious woman are alike.
58. .31:10-31 Who can find a virtuous woman? for her price is far above rubies. The heart of her husband doth safely trust in her, so that he shall have no need of spoil. She will do him good and not evil all the days of her life. She seeketh wool, and flax, and worketh willingly with her hands. She is like the merchants' ships; she bringeth her food from afar. She riseth also while it is yet night, and giveth meat to her household, and a portion to her maidens. She considereth a field, and buyeth it: with the fruit of her hands she planteth a vineyard. She girdeth her loins with strength, and strengtheneth her arms. She perceiveth that her merchandise is good: her candle goeth not

out by night. She layeth her hands to the spindle, and her hands hold the distaff. She stretcheth out her hand to the poor; yea, she reacheth forth her hands to the needy. She is not afraid of the snow for her household: for all her household are clothed with scarlet. She maketh herself coverings of tapestry; her clothing is silk and purple. Her husband is known in the gates, when he sitteth among the elders of the land. She maketh fine linen, and selleth it; and delivereth girdles unto the merchant. Strength and honour are her clothing; and she shall rejoice in time to come. She openeth her mouth with wisdom; and in her tongue is the law of kindness. She looketh well to the ways of her household, and eateth not the bread of idleness. Her children arise up, and call her blessed; her husband also, and he praiseth her. Many daughters have done virtuously, but thou excellest them all. Favour is deceitful, and beauty is vain: but a woman that feareth the Lord, she shall be praised. Give her of the fruit of her hands; and let her own works praise her in the gates.

59. **PE.3:1b-4 That, if any obey not the Word, they also may without the Word be won by...your chaste conversation coupled with fear. Whose adorning...let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.**

#### 148. WOMEN LEADERS AND QUEENS --{page 1139}--



*Favour is deceitful and beauty is vain: but a woman that feareth the Lord, she shall be praised (Pro.31:30).*

1. If the Lord and we place a woman in authority over men she's not usurping that place, but coming by it rightly, by divine appointment and His ordination. There were women all through the Bible in positions of responsibility and authority as well as all through history. So if you can't accept the God-given authority of a woman, Brother, you are not only defying the Lord Himself, but also the authority of your leaders who she represents and for whom she acts as a voice. There were many mothers in Israel, queens, and prophetesses, to whom the men of God submitted themselves and whose leadership they followed, especially if they represented the king, or the Lord Himself! So who are you to defy it?

2. Some people need to know what women can do and what kind of confidence God puts in women leadership. We have some outstanding women leaders!

3. Never underestimate the power of a woman in the Holy Ghost! When it comes to the Church, the Work of God and the Spirit, women have just as much right as anybody. That's one place where maybe you can even pass him up, girls, if you're really yielded, surrendered and used of God.

4. "It shall be a day for women, and they shall rule My people with a kind hand and gentle staff and such words of love, so precious, so beautiful!"

5. It seems like in this Endtime the women are going to come to the fore and handle a lot of the leadership!

6. Women have a tremendous power even naturally, humanly, physically--God has given them a natural power--the power that they have over men. But the power God has given you, our girls, is a greater power, a very

great power. So together with the power of God you have terrific power, and you must be careful that you use it wisely, unselfishly and not for selfish purposes, but to create, to mend, to heal, to love and not to break and destroy.

7. Women's Lib has nothing on us!--We have women running a lot of our Homes, where the men are just necessary figureheads, but the girls are the powers behind the thrones!

8. In the ministry of the Body of the Church, women are spiritual and administrative equals, liberated from the bondage of masculine domination by the grace of God.

9. If any of you insecure and uncertain males concerned about your masculine authority being threatened by this little fireball are still on that "women" kick, you'd better snap to and get with it that there is no male and no female in Christ nor His Kingdom nor service--all are one in Christ Jesus!--So though that little gal of yours may be your physical slave when it comes to sex or doing your housekeeping and mothering your children for you, as head of the house over the woman, as it says, she's nevertheless not your servant when it comes to the Lord's house, but His--and on an equal plane with you, if not even higher, and only under His authority and that of His elders and the Kingdom of God! So you'd better recognise God's authority!

10. There's something wrong with your spiritual state when you will not let your wife put God first, particularly when her training, calling and ministry are apt to exceed and outshine yours! It's just plain, pure, masculine jealousy, damnable, hellish pride, and you're going to wreck her life as well as yours and maybe even some of God's work if you persist. In the realm of the Spirit she is no longer yours, but God's, no longer yours, but her public's, no longer bond, but free, no longer even female! If she has training, spiritual education, talents and gifts which far exceed yours in the spiritual ministry of the church, then you must not try to hold her down. You cannot keep her back, or you're in trouble! You're apt to break her spirit, crush her heart, smother her zeal, destroy her ministry, and displease God. Watch out!

11. If your wife has a spiritual anointing for leadership, watch out that you don't take over and take the lead spiritually and make her take a back seat, squelch her gifts, and silence her witness, or you may nearly ruin both of you. If you try to domineer you will get in God's way and God's work may roll right on over you and leave you far behind.

12. The superiority of a wife over her husband in spiritual things, in this day and age, is not rare! My Mother was an example of this, but they made a perfect team, because my father humbly and rightfully acknowledged it and supplemented her ministry with his own gifts, which she lacked!

13. Don't stand in God's way, even if it's God in your wife, or you'll be sorry, and so will she, for she may have to go on without you, rather than fail God, and God is more than able, in these exceptional cases, to supply her with a better co-worker, who will acknowledge her gifts, give way to her ministry, and do everything he can to help her perform it.

14. You have stood in her way and not only failed God yourself but caused her to fail God too. There is no more time for foolish pride, and your fleshly masculine domineering! Get out of yourself, and get in the spirit! Let go and let God work through your wife--now, before it's too late, or both she and God will leave you behind. We need both of you, everyone of you, but no one is indispensable!

15. Don't hinder the work of God by holding her down! Give her a chance!--That's all God asks! You need her, and His work needs her. But she can have no other gods before the Lord!

16. God needs every ounce of talent that both of you have. Don't either hinder the other! Obey God, work together! Know your limitations! Use all your talents!

17. While my father was willing to share my mother with the whole World, thousands and thousands were blessed! When he tried to selfishly possess her for himself alone he lost her and he lost his own usefulness and the blessing he had been in making her ministry possible.

18. If you are the stronger member of the team in some ways, greatly useful, valuable and dynamic and of a very high quality for the work God has given you to do, an ideal mate for you will be one who's willing, agreeable, placid and wonderfully sacrificial, thankful that he even gets a little of your time and can be with you even a little. You are worth a world of men with your power of the Spirit and wisdom and Word and you can be a blessing to thousands, not just one.

19. May she not make a move without hearing from Thee, as the kings of old who did not move except they heard the Word of the Lord through Thy prophets! Those who succeeded were those who waited upon Thy Word, and those that failed were those who went ahead without it. May she never operate in her own strength, but always by Thy Divine Power and by Thy Divine Light.

20. Help her to be willing to do anything to lead Thy people to victory!--To go out and fight with the men, like Joan of Arc, who even became a violent fighter! She was only a little peasant girl, so meek and lowly, but in the quiet she heard the voice of Thy Spirit, and the Lord made of her a violent revolutionary that was willing to carry a sword and fight to defeat the enemies of the lord and the opponents of the Cross!

=====#=====

21. Like Joan of Arc, she shall stand at the head of her forces in shining armour, courageous and unfailing to inspire them to fight Thy battles!

22. A queen is one who carries a bit of the weight of the king with her and speaks with his authority and rules by his power and holds position by the royal right of his appointment, his honour and his designation. She is, therefore, only a queen or wife or a concubine because he has made her thus by such an honour, even as the king himself holds his kingship by the appointment of God and exercises his office by the honour of God and holds his place by the divine right of his ordination by God.--The divine right of kings.

23. A queen is one who has been promoted to royal rank and special commission with more serious responsibilities and greater authority than others.

24. For you women leaders who have a special anointing, a special calling: God's going to do something great with you and we cannot take a chance on anybody who's not going to be a help to you or is going to hold you back or hold you down. Unless your husband is willing to be your flunky like my father was for my mother, unless he's willing to be your porter, your baggage man, your bodyguard and just bathe in your reflected glory, forget it! You have to remember, you belong to the Lord and you belong to everybody, therefore you can never belong to anybody alone. They may belong to you, and if you can find somebody who is willing to exist just for your benefit, for your sake and to help you in the Lord's work for the Lord's work's sake, to be a real team mate and flunky and helper in all the things that you need.

25. This little one, though so frail, Thou canst make so strong, with a will of iron and a tongue of steel against Thine enemies, that she shall bow her knee only at Thy throne and call no man her conqueror but Thee!-- That anyone that loves her must know that he only serves--he does not rule. He waits upon her, but does not dominate her and cannot and must not, but must show her due respect and obeisance, honour, and even a measure of reverence as Thy representative.

26. Let none be so foolish as to dream that he, through her, may also rule. That she shall not place her neck within such a fleshly yoke to obey the will of any man, but Thee alone shall she serve. Thee only shall she serve, Lord; she shall not serve another, and she shall have no other gods before Thee, for Thou, the Lord her God, art a jealous God, visiting the sins of the fathers unto the third and fourth generations!--She is married only unto Thee! Thou alone art her husband, and she shall serve no other than the King Himself! For thou shalt love the Lord thy God will all thy heart and Him only shalt thou serve!

27. Help her to remind herself that she is of that peculiar breed who can only rule and reign.--And she shall know that the role of leadership is a lonely one, and the Shepherdess is often alone at the head of the sheep.

28. May the Queen never forget that any comfort, faith, encouragement, joys, pleasures or health come from the Lord.--And not only for her sake, but that she might be happy in her task, that she might better do Thy work, and that she might rule well, and that she might be fit to rule as the Lord wants her to rule.

29. Queens are very special, called and chosen to be special brides, very special parts of His body and very special to the Lord. They must save the best place for Him.

30. She is born to be a Queen and can be no less! There are some things others may do but she cannot.

31. There are certain standards a Queen must uphold which are not required of others. She must set the example to show the people that she puts the Lord's work and duty before personal pleasure and personal concerns.

32. A Queen must show that she loves the Lord's people more than herself or those who love her. She must remember that she must put her people first.

33. A Queen cannot always be a woman--but she must always be a Queen. More important than being herself or a woman, she must never forget that she is the Lord's Queen and she has His people in her hands.

34. May our Queens never forget their first love--that they handed the Lord a blank check signed by them for the Lord to fill in.

35. Help her never to forget that full surrender, that total submission to the Lord's will, to remind those about her that they can never take the Lord's place in her heart, nor the place of the Lord's work in her life.

36. There are some things which others can never share with a Queen--that divine anointing, that divine right, that divine occupation, that divine calling, that divine responsibility--the crown which she alone can wear, and sometimes must also bear.

37. The crown so beautiful to him that beholdeth, is so heavy to her that weareth it!--That though so often beautiful to them that see it, it is sometimes a heavy burden to bear! But the Queen must bear it for the sake of the Lord's Kingdom and let no one else steal it from her, not even a part of it.

38. Those which serve a Queen must do so on bended knee, even though it be in the bed of love!



39. The Lord would have our Queens be strong, courageous, valiant, fearless, upright, righteous, unselfish, sacrificial, self-denying, taking up the crown as though it were a cross, for indeed a cross it may be!--Holding the sceptre as though it were a burden, for indeed a burden it shall be!

40. They that bear the cross shall wear the crown.

41. Being a Queen is not an easy task, it is one in which the Lord has asked her if she's willing to come and die for Him--die to self, die even to personal pleasure, die to privacy of life, die to personal will and choice, and submit only to the Lord and to duty; that she may be truly great in the Lord's eyes and be honoured of her people.

42. A Queen should not make a decision wholly alone without word from the Lord and confirmation of her counsellors. Help her to know how important this is: To not only seek the Lord's face, but to seek the reflection of His will in the faces of those around her--the confirmation of the Lord's will--in the multitude of counsellors there lacketh not wisdom!

43. A queen should have good wise counsellors and she should not be ashamed or hesitant to ask their advice or to say that she has to pray about it before she can make a decision or give an answer. Help her to be slow to speak and slow to anger. Give her great wisdom above all things.

44. Give her great love, which is wisdom--the greatest of all wisdom, Thy love.--That she'll be patient and understanding with her people; that she'll have real humility before the Lord and them, and know she's nothing without Thee, Lord, or them.--And to know that she needs both to be a true Queen!

45. Help her to be the Queen of the Lord's heart--a Queen after the Lord's own heart and a Queen of hearts!

46. May she rule with love, and rule their hearts with love, and have great compassion, great wisdom, great patience, great understanding, great sympathy, and yet great firmness and great discipline!--That she shall stand strong and know when to be firm & unflinching & unchangeable!--That the Lord shall make her forehead adamant as flint when the time comes: And that she shall fear no man's face, but only the Lord's!

47. Help her to always remember that she's a symbol, not only an instrument, but a symbol of the Lord's hand. She symbolises the Lord's Kingdom and its rulership--the Lord's Own! She represents the Lord to her people!

48. Help the Queen always to remember that she belongs to the Lord first of all; and to her people, her children, next; and last of all to herself! Help her to keep things in that order.

49. "For Thou dost bestow Thy divine appointment, that with the mantle of the office comes the anointing of power and of Thy Spirit."

50. "This torch You have given her and placed within her hand to bear it, that its light might shine and enlighten the hearts of men around the World! She bears the torch--these hold the flame!"

=====#=====

51. .2:18 And on my servants and on my handmaidens I will pour out in those days of my Spirit; and they shall prophesy.

52. .3:28b There is neither male or female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus.

=====#=====

## NOTABLE WOMEN OF THE BIBLE

.17:15-21 -- SARAH, wife of Abraham

.2:1-9; 6:20 -- JOCHEBED, mother of Moses and Aaron

.2:1; 6:17 -- RAHAB, the harlot who hid the spies

.4:4,5; 5:7 -- DEBORAH, a judge, prophetess and military leader

.13:6,23-25 -- MANOAH'S WIFE, mother of Samson

.1:16; 2:11-4:22 -- RUTH, the Moabite

.3:1-4 -- NAOMI, Ruth's mother-in-law

Sa.1:11,22-28 -- HANNAH, mother of Samuel

Sa.25:3,14-19 -- ABIGAIL, wife of David

Kg.17:8-24 -- WIDOW OF ZAREPHATH, who fed Elijah

Kg.4:8-30 -- THE SHUNAMMITE, who gave hospitality to Elisha

Kg.22:14-20 -- HULDAH, a prophetess

.4:14,16; 7:1-6 -- ESTHER, a queen

.15:28 -- THE SYROPHENICIAN, woman of great faith

.26:6-13 -- MARY (of Bethany) who washed Jesus' feet

- .27:55,56 -- SALOME, mother of James and John  
 .16:1,9 -- MARY MAGDALENE, girlfriend of Jesus  
 .1:30-38,42-55 -- MARY, mother of Jesus  
 .1:5,6,13-17 -- ELIZABETH, mother of John the Baptist  
 .2:36-38 -- ANNA, a prophetess  
 .4:7,28-30,39 -- WOMAN OF SAMARIA, the "evangelist"  
 .11:1,5 -- MARTHA, sister of Mary and of Lazarus  
 .9:36-42 -- DORCAS, a disciple, raised to life  
 .16:14,15 -- LYDIA, a convert who gave hospitality to Paul  
 .18:26 -- PRISCILLA, of Aquila  
 .21:8,9 -- DAUGHTERS OF PHILIP, prophetesses  
 .16:1,6,15 -- PHEBE, MARY, JULIA, early church co-workers of Paul  
 Tim.1:5 -- LOIS and EUNICE, grandmother and mother of Timothy, women of "unfeigned faith"

**149. The Word** --{page 1147}--



*Thou hast magnified Thy Word above all Thy Name. In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God! (Ps.138:2; Jn1:1).*

1. Many people struggle through life needlessly, when only a little more time spent with God's Word would bring the peace, faith and happiness they seek.
2. The secret of power and victory and overcoming and fruitfulness and fire and life and warmth and light and leadership, and everything is the Word!
3. Staying close to the Lord and His Word is the only insulation against backsliding. The only sure cure and the only sure prevention is the Word, so don't neglect it.
4. When God's Word says something, He means it!
5. Never underestimate the power of the Word.
6. God is bound by His Word.
7. No good building is without a good foundation.
8. The Bible is a window in this prison-world, through which we may look into Eternity!
9. There are two great powers in the World--the sword and the pen!--In the end, the former is always conquered by the latter.
10. The Words we pen have power,  
 More than sword or rod,  
 For ours is the Sword of the Spirit,  
 And our weapon the Word of God!
11. God's Word tells the whole story: It tells all the truth and nothing but the truth!
12. For fact that's true--the Word will do!

God's true science through & through!

13. The Scripture passages that bother most people are not the ones they don't understand, but the ones they do understand.

14. Most people don't read the Bible, not because they can't understand it, but because they can understand it, and they don't like to hear it!

15. To read the Word without reflecting, is like eating without digesting.

16. The great men of the World have come and gone, and the great conquerors of the World have come and gone, and the only thing that still lives on is paper power!

17. Our Family was built on the Word and our faithfulness in proclaiming it.

18. Everything the Bible predicts has always come true!

19. The Devil doesn't like the Bible--he wants to blot out the Word so the people won't believe!

20. The main thing is to know the Word. Faith is built on the Word.

21. Always try to test everything with Scripture.

22. The Lord is the most beautiful Speaker in the World! Even when it's sad & tragic & heartbreaking, He still makes it sound beautiful & poetic.

23. How like beautiful jewels are the Words of the Lord!

24. I have to read a Letter everyday or I get discouraged!

25. You probably know more than most about the Bible, but you'll never know too much!

26. Love is the greatest force in the World, and the Word of God the most powerful truth on Earth!

27. You believe the Letters as much as you practice them! You believe God's Word as much as you follow what it says!

28. If God's Word does not satisfy you, then something is wrong with your spiritual appetite!

29. I have gotten many Scriptures that sounded familiar but weren't exactly what I was used to. But I believe the ones I get in the Spirit are more exact and perfect than even in the translation of the Bible!

30. Why waste time on complicated confused theories and thoughts of man, when the Bible is right there, so simple, direct and to the point?

31. Only the Words of God have lived on! Only the Words of Jesus actually accomplish anything!

32. Besides the once-and-for-all cleansing of salvation, you need the daily cleansing of the Word from daily sin.

33. I am totally sold on the King James Version as being the most accurate, the most inspired, the most fundamental, the most beautiful, the most classical, the most well-known and the most authoritative, and the best recognised English version--it's got everything going for it!

34. The Ruler and the Rule--that's the Lord and His Word!

35. If you find a whole lot of Scriptures that say so-and-so, but then you find one little passage that seems to say the opposite, then what are you going to accept?--The preponderance of the Scriptures!--Right?

36. I know it's the Word of God, because I know it works.

37. When did the Lord ever give so much Word before? I don't think any generation before us has ever had the Lord reveal so much!

38. Put the Word first and the Lord will always give you time to do the other things.

39. In scattering the Word we liberate thistledown, laden with precious seed, which, blown by the winds of the Spirit, floats over the World.

40. The Word of God is like a map to help you find your way through life.

41. You cannot have faith in something you don't know anything about--you need to read His Words and see what He has to say!

42. How like a string of pearls the Word is!--A wonderful beautiful string of truths to adorn your mind and heart in proper order, sequence, size, importance and beauty!

43. The Bible is not just a history book, it's a news book! It not only tells you about yesterday, it tells you about tomorrow!

44. The more dearly you begin to love His Word and read and study it, the more mature you will become and the more you'll find that God can speak to you loudly and clearly and supernaturally and miraculously and ecstatically, right through the reading of His Word!

45. The Word of God is the most powerful weapon in the World, sharper than any two-edged sword and with greater power than the hydrogen bomb! It can do more than split atoms! It can divide asunder the soul and spirit!

46. The Word of God can change hearts and minds, something no atom bomb or molotov cocktail or any number of bullets has ever done!

47. The Bible is God's standard, like a flag we can wave in front of the Devil's sharp pointed nose!
48. It doesn't matter what the Devil says, if God's Word says it, it's true!
49. You grow by feeding on the Word of God continually, the cure for all life's problems.
50. Nothing contradicts itself in the Bible! People just think it does because they couldn't understand what it meant in the first place!
51. Don't neglect the beauties, the riches, the treasures and the power of the Word of God!
52. God doesn't break His Word no matter what! He's exalted His Word above His Name, and it would be better for Him to be found a little "unfair" in some cases, than to be found a liar upon Whose Word, warnings and promises you cannot depend!
53. The Word of God always has an effect! No one can hear the Word of God without being influenced.
54. Measure everything with the yardstick of the Scriptures.
55. Milk is for babes, strong meat for men! (Heb.5:14)
56. The Bible is a dangerous book, that's why every dictatorship that takes over wants to destroy it!
57. Daniel Webster once said that he believed that "the Bible is to be believed and understood in the plain and obvious meaning of its passages; for I can not persuade myself that a Book intended for the instruction and conversion of the whole World should cover its true meaning in any such mystery and doubt, so that none but critics and philosophers can discover it."
58. Thank God for the Word, the Water of Life! That's why He likened the Word to water, because it's so essential for your spiritual life, and you're not going to last very long without it.
59. Science fiction?--It's got nothing on the Bible or the future as foretold by the Lord!!
60. If you can't figure it out, well, read on! Just like the Bible--you don't quit reading just because you can't understand one little thing. You just keep on reading, and there will be something else you can understand.
61. "Builders, Beware", that by your so-called improvements you do not destroy the very thing you're attempting to build! Above all, do not remove the ballast, the Words of God, your only hope of its salvation, the only thing that will keep your work steady on His foundation.
62. The Letters are a supplement to the Bible. They were never intended to take the place of the Bible.
63. There's nothing wrong with worshipping the Word, the Word is Jesus!
64. His story makes history!--His Word and man's reaction to it decide the course of World events!
65. With His Word and lambs in our hearts and hands, we can win the World for Jesus!
66. You can't put even the Fruit of the Word above the Word itself. Without the seed there is no fruit, no life.
67. Holy Bible, Book divine,  
Precious treasure it is mine!  
Guiding me away from doom,  
Light and life beyond the tomb!
68. The Word of God will stand a thousand readings, and he who has gone over it most frequently is the surest of finding new wonders there.
69. What is the Word of God to you? Is it a sword or a penis? How do you receive the Word of God--as a sword or as a woman receives a penis? The sword kills, the penis makes alive!
70. The Bible is criticised most by those who read it least.
71. Men do not usually reject the Bible because it contradicts itself, but because it contradicts them.
72. If you love beautiful poetry and gorgeous oratory, read the Prophets! If you like philosophical arguments, you ought to enjoy the book of Job! The Song of Solomon is sexy and romantic, and anything you want you can find in the Bible!
73. I believe every single parable Jesus ever told was a true incident that actually happened somewhere sometime, that He used as an illustration.
74. Oh that you would hear the Words of the Lord  
As streams that never run dry,  
That thine ears should be filled with their flowing  
And thy heart should be ever nigh!
75. There's no end to God's good gold!--The mine is full of it!
76. The only thing we are interested in is the Word!--Studying God's Word and preaching God's Word and giving God's Word to others!
77. The Bible is an absolutely inexhaustible source of wisdom and knowledge in which you constantly find treasures new and old!
78. You need to get the Words in as well as out!

79. The Bible is the Bureau of Standards by which we measure all truth and all error!
80. You believe in the Bible and the Letters as much as you read them.
81. When you remind God of His Word (Ex.32:13, Nu.14:17), it shows you have faith in it.
82. If you know the Scriptures, you have the answer for everything!
83. The Word is our weapon against the Enemy and his stronghold on people's minds and hearts.
84. I've never read any worldly man's writings that weren't dumber than the Bible! Only the Words of God have lived on! Only the Words of Jesus have accomplished anything!
85. Someday, what you've implanted in your heart may be the only Word of God you've got!
86. Out of the mountain flows the bright crystal stream of the beautiful royal purple waters of life, His Words of life!
87. The best way God can help is through the Words that He gives to us all, for which the whole World waits.
88. If I find something in the Bible that I can't explain or something happens that I don't understand, I just wrap it up in a little package of faith and put it on the shelf and wait for the Lord to unwrap it for me and reveal it to me later.
89. God knows His Own Book better than anybody, and He can surely spiel it off by the Spirit when you need it, if you've faithfully read, studied and memorised. He'll pop it up in your little computer whenever you make the right connection in your programming. He's the best computer programmer I know, and He's given you the best computer ever constructed, which, inspired by His spirit, will outdo any Concordance!
90. Wealth in the Word is wisdom!
91. You're obstructing truth and justice and delaying God's Work if you're withholding the Word!
92. If you know this Book--the Bible--you can run circles around any man that has graduated from a university or seminary--because you've got the Truth!
93. The Bible is the Sword of God's Spirit, the Word of God, (Eph.1:17) which is sharper than any two-edged sword--sharper than any sword of education and the wisdom of man. (Heb.4:12.) This Book, along with the MO Letters, will make you smarter than all the education in the World!
94. I've found out what it takes to make you happy: Jesus, and what it says right here in His Word!
95. The Word of God is the most powerful truth on Earth!
96. The endtime night approaches,  
The daylight fades away;  
The darkness of the darkest night  
Threatens now our way.  
But God has given precious milk,  
The sincere milk of His Word!  
How precious in the sight of God  
--The heavenly things we've heard!
97. Get into the Word to get out the Word!
98. Are you wanting God to answer?  
Are you waiting at His door?  
Try looking in His Word,  
At all He's said before!
99. The Word you must cherish--publish or perish!
100. If one Scripture contradicts several others, you must be interpreting it wrong or the translation is wrong. You've got to balance Scripture with Scripture.
101. If you want to read something exciting, why don't you try reading the Word! The Bible has out-sold every book that was ever written and is still the World's best-seller!--Along with the MLs.
102. The promises of God are the currency of Heaven, and if you've got a lot of verses in your heart you're really rich! You can cash'm in at the bank of Heaven and get back answers!
103. God's Word and His guarantees have no restrictions, no limitations, no qualifications except your faith.
104. Jesus is God's Word of Love, and the Bible and MO missives are His Love Letters!
105. Most of the old Letters are just as good today as they ever were because they are on the basic principles of our faith and Family. You can see what kind of foundation we were built on and how we grew and developed and matured.
106. It is not the promise, but the use of it, that is most important.
107. God makes a promise, Faith believes it, Hope anticipates it, Patience quietly awaits it.

108. Nothing will ever take the place of the Bible as far as I'm concerned, and I would certainly say that the business Letters and teaching Letters are certainly not on the level of the Bible. But I will take those supernatural and divinely-inspired Letters and put them on the same level as the rest of the Word of God--because that's exactly what the writers of the Bible did!

109. He has not failed in one of all His good promises, and He's not failed in His bad ones either!--The curses fell as well as the blessings!

110. With every promise there have to be some conditions. God makes promises, but His promises are contracts with conditions!

111. If the Words are retained as its foundation, they will preserve the building no matter what other alterations you may make.

112. I have gotten time and time again a Scripture that sounded familiar but wasn't exactly what I was used to. But I believe the ones I get in the Spirit are more exact and perfect than even in the translations of the Bible!

113. It isn't the style of the Bible that makes it unpopular with the Moderns, but the fact that it cramps their style.

114. I'll take Jesus and His life-giving Word with the only Author in the World that can guarantee life and love and happiness and Heaven forever through the One Who loved us so much He gave us His Own life!

115. What is in the well of your heart will show up in the bucket of your speech.

116. Communication is such a vastly important part of our work. In fact, almost our entire job and our whole ministry is communication. Almost everything is communication from the very beginning of the Bible to the end. From the beginning of our lives to the end, it's all involved with communication.--The Lord's communication with man and man's communication with Him.--His giving the message, the Word, and man receiving it!

117. Your ignorance of God's law is no excuse. If you don't read the Word, then it's your own fault, not God's fault. The Bible is like a map for your life. To say you don't have time for it is like a driver going on a long journey saying, "I'm in such a hurry to get there I don't have time to look at the map."

118. Since the Word of God has been so horribly wrested and distorted by the Church all these years, we now have to interpret and explain it, and that's what the MO Letters are for, besides supplying the general training that you need.

119. You've missed a lot if you don't know the Bible, because that's really the basics. The Letters are largely a commentary or they are an extension, further revelations, further knowledge, more detail sometimes on certain subjects that you can find in the Bible.

120. The Letters are a commentary or an extension or an enlargement or greater detail, but it's all based on the Bible, and you should know your Bible. It would even help you to believe the Bible better if you knew your Letters well, because you'd know that the Letters are based on the Bible and they are in conformity with the Bible. They don't contradict or deny it in any way. They only confirm it.

121. If you doubt the Word then you doubt the Worder and the Prophet and eventually the Word of God! If you doubt God's Will then you doubt God's Word, and of course, if you doubt the Word, then you've got nothing to stand on and you're bound to go astray.

122. If you can accommodate this New Wine without asking why or trying to analyse its ingredients, God has such thrills and intoxication of the Spirit in store for you that you will be glad you drank of it without question, and you'll be whisked off into a world which you never dreamed existed, where you'll enjoy the very wonders of total intimacy with a sexy naked God Himself in a wild orgy of the Spirit as His totally surrendered Bride!

123. The Bible contains the mind of God, the state of man, the way of salvation, the happiness of believers. Its doctrine is holy, its precepts are binding, its history is true, its decisions immutable. Read it to be wise, believe it to be safe, practice it to be holy. It contains light to direct you, food to support you, comfort to cheer you. It is the traveler's map, the pilgrim's staff, the pilot's comfort, the soldier's sword, the Christian's character. Here Heaven is opened, the gates of Hell disclosed, and Christ is the subject and the Glory of God its end! It is a mine of wealth and health to the soul and a river of pleasure. It is given to you here in this life and will be opened up at the Judgement. It is established forever!--Author Unknown

124. You have to quote the terms of the contract (The Bible) to the Contract Maker (God) and hold Him to it!

125. Isn't it wonderful to have God's Word for our encouragement! I hope you are brainwashing yourselves with it constantly and absorbing it into the very fibre of your being, for it is His Word by His Spirit in His Love that makes you strong!

126. Please don't neglect the Word, for it is food for your soul and gives you strength for the battle! Read, study, memorise and enjoy it, and you shall have strength for your souls!

127. The Bible and the Letters are God's personal Words to each of us!

128. In God's Word you can find the answer to every question, every problem that you will ever have in life.

129. Just try it, it works! That's the best proof of the inspiration of the Bible.

130. The minute we begin to listen to the Lord's recorded written Word, immediately we put ourselves in the position of being willing to listen, so then the Lord begins to speak and give us the living Word!

131. It's a damnable doctrine of church devils to confine all the truth and revelations of God strictly to the Bible! True prophecy won't teach anything contrary, but it sure can fill in a lot of gaps! The Bible is still going to be the standard of measurement, for that was God's Message for them. But today we have to tell this generation how to do it under these present circumstances.

132. "Listen thou and heed thou these warning Words of thy father, that thou stray not!"

133. "Wouldest thou be great amongst the children of David?--Hearken therefore unto Me and unto all the Words that I have spoken through My servant David."

134. "There are they so athirst for that which cometh from David that they would drink his piss and eat his dung, they are so anhungered!"

135. "Therefore, they even thirst for his piss and hunger for his dung that is cast off by thee, and which falleth by the way, even as an accursed thing, even for that which is wasted by his enemies, who feed them more than thou dost, who feed them of his piss and feed them of his dung, where yet they find seed, where yet they find life in the publications of their bulletins, where yet they find even the excreta of his Words!"

136. "Even his Words that are given by the waster, even for these they hunger, and even of his enemies do they drink that which is cast off of thee, because thou feedest them not, and slakest not their thirst with that which is pure, and that which is clean, and that which is fresh, and that which is wholesome, and that which giveth strength!"

137. "Hear ye the Words of thy father and hear ye the wise counsel I have given unto David!"

138. "Rest now in the Words of thy father! Kiss now the Words of His servant, for they shall come to pass and they shall be fulfilled, even as I have spoken it!"

139. "For thou art wise that thou art simple, that thou art obedient to heed the Words that I have given unto thy father, that thou mightest be saved in the time of affliction."

140. "They are but babes at the bosom and they are but little children in the arms of their father! Jesus, help them to understand and receive the milk of the Words that Thou dost give! Thou hast enough from thy father: Satisfiest thou, these Words from his bosom?--Jesus loves thee with an everlasting love to give thee the Words of His heart! These are of greater value than that which thou esteemest: They are of far greater weight than the ounces of gold and the measures of silver! These are like nothing compared to the weight of the Words of My Servant David!"

141. "Dost thou kiss the Words of David and love the honey that droppeth from his mouth? Doth thou lick up each drop and dip thy tongue in the sweetness and cherish to thy belly that which cometh forth from My mouth of David? Then thou art wise and therefore thou shalt be fed and cherished and nourished in My bosom!"

142. "Hast thou no wisdom? Hast thy senses taken leave of thee? Why dost thou remain out in the cold when thou couldst dwell in the arms of David and be warmed and cherished and nourished and loved?"

143. "Write down all these Words which I have given thee from David and heed thou and obey the things which were spoken of My servant, for I shall bring to pass the very Words of his mouth! None shall be able to stand against it, for behold, I the Lord thy God am the power within those Words that I have given unto David!"

144. "Kiss now the mouth--the mouth of Jesus and of David--for they have spoken unto thee the truth of My Word!"

145. "Hear these Words which reflect the thoughts of thy father. The wisdom of these Words is as the wisdom of God!"

146. "Search the Scriptures, for they shall reveal unto thee the Words of thy father's bosom!"

147. "His Words are music unto my ears! Behold, he feedeth my hungry heart and he leadeth me in green pastures and he satisfieth my soul, and my life shall be renewed like the eagles as I listen unto him and receive his love!"

148. "Oh, how mysterious and wonderful are the Words of thy father!"

149. "Go forth in the power of the arm of the Words the Lord gives to David!"

150. "For the Words that are written are spoken in the Book of David, and thou must believe, because they are My Prophet David's Words! This is all that thou hast need of!"

151. "How many more will die without the Words of their father? How many will ye let die without the Words of their father? They wait to be kissed of My Spirit, and they wait for the Words of My David that shall interpret it for them."

152. "But one thing is needful: to sit at his feet and learn of him the Words he gives and pass them on the World! Those who have chosen this good part, it shall never be taken away from them!"

153. "Kiss thou the Words in the voice of thy Father David. Kiss thou the Words and the voice while they are nigh unto thee."

154. "Thou dost not have to see nor understand all things, neither dost thou have to know the mind of thy father, nor to understand all the Words of David, for all of these things which I have ordained are already in My hands and are finished."

155. "Listen to the Words of thy Father David! Listen to the things that he shall tell thee, for these things are the things that come of Me! What wondrous Words are these!"

156. "Kiss and kiss and kiss over again the Words of your father!"

157. "Know ye not the voice of your father and know ye not the voice of him that speaketh unto you? If you knew who it was that speaketh unto you, thou wouldest ask of him living waters that thou shouldst never thirst! You'd better listen to the Words of your father!"

158. "Oh, kiss the Words that I have given thy Father David! Kiss the wisdom of the Words that I have given unto thy Father David!"

159. "Many are the Words that I have spoken unto thee through thy father, and many are the Words that I have given unto thee through the kisses of David."

160. "Oh the Words, oh the Words! Oh the Words that give life to the soul! Who gives him birth? Who brings back thy voice? Who brings back the melody that their father sings unto them?--Thou, Oh God!"

161. "If only thou couldst know the power I have given unto the Words of thy Father, which is greater than all the sources of all energy, and more powerful than all of that which they seek after!"

162. "They are better than gold and better than silver, the Words of Love that speak to thee though thy Father! More precious than fine jewels are these things I speak from his bosom!"

163. "Many precious things thou dost write in thy book; more precious than the things that come from the Earth and from below and from the deep places, are the things which come from above and from the heart and the bosom of thy Father! Thou shalt treasure the seeds in thy secret parts that they may bring forth fruit in thee from Me."

164. "If thou wilt open thy mouth wide and receive it, I will not only give thee honey and sweetness from My mouth, but I will give thee wine of My Spirit and thou shalt tingle to the thrill of My ecstasies, if thou wilt receive it."

165. "Therefore, open wide thy mouth. Stretch forth thy tongue that thou mayst receive not only honey and sweetness and nourishment at his mouth, but also the wine of My Spirit and the thrills of the ecstasies of My love! For thou shalt be as one that is drunken with Me and one that doth revel in My love!"

166. "Kiss all the Words of David and cherish them to thy bosom and nourish them in thy heart and thou shalt be satisfied."

167. Love didn't abolish the Law, it simply fulfilled the Law and was the end of the Law. Because the Law was for that day. And I think there were a lot of things that even Paul taught that were for the early days of Christianity which are possibly as inappropriate today and as difficult to abide by today as it was for the Early Christians to abide by the old Mosaic Law. This is a new day!

168. The Bible is still the yardstick of measurement, the bureau of standards by which we measure everything else God has ever given us. If it isn't confirmed and can't be corroborated by the Bible, if you can't prove it also by the Bible and if it's not in accordance with the Bible, you don't have to believe it! That doesn't mean everything's in the Bible, because we've had lots of revelations that you can't find anything about in the Bible. But it means that those revelations will not be contrary to anything in the Bible--that is, anything that is in the Bible which is for today.

169. In what I've taught, you won't find anything contrary to the basic principles of the Bible, of faith in God and His Love and His Salvation. There'll be nothing contrary to the Bible, except that the Lord has used me to fill in a lot more of the picture, a lot more pieces of the puzzle. He gives you a lot of details and clearer things that you never had before.--Not contrary to the Bible but more like a fulfilling or a filling up of the gaps and spaces that were not filled in before.

170. Don't go throwing away your Bibles and say, "Well, we're supposed to forget the past!" A lot of that Bible is still present and a lot of it's still future. If you go throwing away your Bibles, you're throwing away not only the past, but the present and future!

171. You'd better hang on to your Bible because it's been our basic foundation of faith for a good many years and our Family was built on it & our faith was built on it, at least mine and some of us. And while many of



you wouldn't have believed the Bible if you couldn't have proved it by me, some of you wouldn't have believed me if I couldn't have proven it by the Bible! So it works both ways.

172. Some people need the Bible and some people need MO, and frankly, I think the Family needs both! So don't go throwing away your Bible just because I said "forget the past". I'm talking about all this detailed, infinitesimal, intricate study of all these little tiny details of ancient Bible Old Testament History and the list of all the kings and "can you name all the kings and how many years they ruled and were they good or were they bad and what did they do and blah, blah, blah, blah!" That's the kind of stuff we don't need to know and we don't need to teach our kids. It's good for them, however, to know about a few important kings, the outstanding heroes and a few outstanding rotters, just to know a little something about Bible History.

173. Paul not only says that those things were written for our benefit, but even happened to them for our benefit, to teach us lessons, as examples of what to do and what not to do. (1Co.10:11) So where they still apply as illustrating good and evil, then they still make dandy good illustrations and stories of what's wrong and what's right. And children require a lot of stories and you can get lots of good stories out of the Bible, and I think you can still teach'm the basic main Bible stories, including stories of good kings like David and bad kings like Saul. There are a lot of wonderful things in the Bible, thrilling stories, illustrating good and evil, right and wrong!

174. You're going to look pretty stupid and ignorant if you go out in the World witnessing and the sinner can quote more Bible than you can! And a lot of them still have faith in the Bible, believe it or not, even in God and even in Jesus. And if you can't prove it by the Bible, they're not going to believe it. Many were brought up in church and good old-fashioned faith in the Bible and they still believe it. If you can show them by the Bible they'll believe it.

175. We must have the Word in every form possible. The Bible was the one to begin with, the already recorded and established Word down through the centuries. It works, which is the greatest proof of its efficacy. And we need to have His present Word, direct answers to prayer, direct revelations, messages, prophecy, tongues, interpretation, information straight from Heaven to know exactly what He wants us to do right now!

(See also No. S, 28, 29, 54, 66, 96, 126, 207, 215, 233, 254, 275A, 282A, 285, 309B, 311B, 320, 324, 329, 333A, 335A, 352, 360, 362, 527, 546, 627, 649, 687, 697, 712, 775, 776, 780, 837, 1089, 1142, 1286, 1316, 1376, 1388, 1470, 1501, 1536, 1539, 1592, 1598, 1642.)

176. 4:5,6 Behold, I have taught you statutes and judgments, even as the Lord my God commanded me, that ye should do so in the land whither ye go to possess it. Keep therefore and do them; for this is your wisdom and your understanding in the sight of the nations, which shall hear all these statutes, and say, Surely this great nation is a wise and understanding people.

177. .32:46,47a And he said unto them, Set your hearts unto all the Words which I testify among you this day, which ye shall command your children to observe to do, all the Words of this law. For it is not a vain thing for you; because it is your life: and through this thing ye shall prolong your days in the land.

178. .1:8 This book of the law shall not depart out of thy mouth; but thou shalt meditate therein day and night, that thou mayest observe to do according to all that is written therein: for then thou shalt make thy way prosperous, and then thou shalt have good success.

179. .23:14b And ye know in all your hearts and in all your souls, that not one thing hath failed of all the good things which the Lord your God spake concerning you; all are come to pass unto you, and not one thing hath failed thereof.

180. **SA.3:19 And Samuel grew, and the Lord was with him, and did let none of his Words fall to the ground.**

181. **.23:12 Neither have I gone back from the commandment of His lips; I have esteemed the Words of His mouth more than my necessary food.**

182. **.1:2 But his delight is in the law of the Lord; and in His law doth he meditate day and night.**

183. **.12:6 The Words of the Lord are pure Words: as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times.**

184. **.68:11 The Lord gave the Word: great was the company of those that published it.**

185. **.102:18 This shall be written for the generation to come: and the people which shall be created shall praise the Lord.**

186. **.105:8 He hath remembered His covenant for ever, the Word which He commanded to a thousand generations.**

187. **.119:9 Wherewithal shall a young man cleanse his way? By taking heed thereto according to Thy Word.**

188. .119:11 Thy Word have I hid in mine heart, that I might not sin against Thee.
189. .119:14 I have rejoiced in the way of Thy testimonies, as much as in all riches.
190. .119:18 Open thou mine eyes, that I may behold wondrous things out of Thy law.
191. .119:42 So shall I have wherewith to answer him that reproacheth me: for I trust in Thy Word.
192. .119:72 The law of Thy mouth is better unto me than thousands of gold and silver.
193. .119:89 For ever, O Lord, Thy Word is settled in Heaven.
194. .119:103 How sweet are Thy Words unto my taste! Yea, sweeter than honey to my mouth!
195. .119:105 Thy Word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path.
196. .119:127 Therefore I love Thy commandments above gold; yea, above fine gold.
197. .119:130 The entrance of Thy Words giveth light; it giveth understanding unto the simple.
198. .119:148 Mine eyes prevent the night watches, that I might meditate in Thy Word.
199. .119:160 The Word is true from the beginning: and every one of Thy righteous judgements endureth for ever.
200. .138:2b For Thou hast magnified Thy Word above all Thy Name.
201. .4:20,21 My son, attend to My Words; incline thine ear unto My sayings. Let them not depart from thine eyes; keep them in the midst of thine heart.
202. .6:20-23 My son, keep thy father's commandment, and forsake not the law of thy mother: Bind them continually upon thy heart, and tie them about thy neck. When thou goest, it shall lead thee; when thou sleepest, it shall keep thee; and when thou awakest, it shall talk with thee. For the commandment is a lamp; and the law is light; and reproofs of instruction are the way of life.
203. .34:16 Seek ye out of the book of the Lord, and read: no one of these shall fail, none shall want her mate: for my mouth it hath commanded, and His Spirit it hath gathered them.
204. .40:8 The grass withereth, the flower fadeth: but the Word of our God shall stand for ever.
205. .46:10b,11b My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure. I have spoken it, I will also bring it to pass; I have proposed it, I will also do it.
206. .55:10,11 For as the rain cometh down, and the snow from heaven, and returneth not thither, but watereth the Earth, and maketh it bring forth and bud, that it may give seed to the sower, and bread to the eater: So shall My Word be that goeth forth out of My mouth: it shall not return unto Me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it.
207. .15:16 Thy Words were found, and I did eat them; and Thy Word was unto me the joy and rejoicing of mine heart: for I am called by Thy Name, O Lord God of hosts.
208. .23:29 Is not My word like as a fire? saith the Lord; and like a hammer that breaketh the rock in pieces?
209. .31:33 But this shall be the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel; After those days, saith the Lord, I will put My law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their God, and they shall be My people.
210. .8:11 Behold, the days come, saith the Lord God, that I will send a famine in the land, not a famine of bread, nor a thirst for water, but of hearing the Words of the Lord.
211. .2:2 And the Lord answered me, and said, Write the vision, and make it plain upon tables, that he may run that readeth it.
212. .4:4 Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every Word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.
213. .5:18 For verily I say unto you, Till Heaven and Earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.
214. .22:29 Jesus answered and said unto them, ye do err, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God.
215. .24:35 Heaven and Earth shall pass away, but My Words shall not pass away.
216. .21:33 Heaven and Earth shall pass away, but My Words shall not pass away.
217. .24:45 Then opened He their understanding, that they might understand the Scriptures.
218. .1:1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God and the Word was God.
219. .6:63 It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the Words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life.
220. .14:23,24 Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love Me, he will keep My Words: and My Father will love him, and We will come unto him, and make Our abode with him. He that loveth Me not keepeth not My sayings: and the Word which ye hear is not Mine, but the Father's which sent Me.
221. .15:3 Now ye are clean through the Word which I have spoken unto you.

222. .17:17 Sanctify them through Thy Truth: Thy Word is Truth.
223. .20:31 But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through His Name.
224. CO.10:11 Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the World are come.
225. CO.3:3 Forasmuch as ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshly tables of the heart.
226. .5:26 That He might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the Word.
227. .6:17 And take the helmet of Salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God.
228. .3:16a Let the Word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom.
229. TH.2:13 For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, because, when ye received the Word of God which ye heard of us, ye received it not as the word of men, but as it is in truth, the Word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that believe.
230. TI.3:16,17 All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.
231. .1:3a Upholding all things by the Word of His power.
232. .4:2 For unto us was the Gospel preached, as well as unto them: but the Word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it.
233. .4:12 For the Word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.
234. .5:13,14 For every one that useth milk is unskillful in the Word of righteousness: for he is a babe. But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.
235. .6:1 Leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection.
236. .1:21 Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted Word, which is able to save your souls.
237. PE.2:2 As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the Word, that ye may grow thereby.
238. PE.1:4 Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the World through lust.
239. PE.1:19-21 We have also a more sure Word of prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in your hearts: Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the Scripture is of any private interpretation. For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.
240. PE.3:15,16 And account that the longsuffering of our Lord is Salvation; even as our beloved brother Paul also according to the wisdom given unto him hath written unto you; As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other Scriptures, unto their own destruction.

(See also Psa.19:7-11; Luk.8:11-16.)



*He must increase, but I must decrease (Jn.3:30).*

1. When you become nothing but a tool and a channel--nothing but a little diamond of dust, then God can really use you!

2. Father, let me dedicate  
All this year to Thee,  
In whatever earthly state  
Thou wilt have me be:  
Not from sorrow, pain, or care,  
Freedom dare I claim;  
This alone shall be my prayer,  
"Glorify Thy Name"!

3. A little girl was walking home with her father one night. As they trudged along in the darkness she said, "Take my hand, Papa! I can take only a piece of yours, but you can take the whole of mine."

4. Jesus bought & paid for us, we're His property, we belong to Him now. He can do whatever He wants to with us.

5. When your will is in perfect harmony with God's Will, you have perfect peace & heavenly rest.

6. God doesn't expect you to do it. All He expects you to do is obey & He'll do it through you.

7. Let go & let God!

8. God only uses broken men & women--no others will do.

9. You quit having a battle when you surrender.

10. When He can get you out of the way, then He has a chance!

11. The oil flows freely through a wick that is yielded & deeply soaked in the oil! Then it is the oil that burns & not the wick, & gives bright pure clear light to all the house, in the beauty of His perfection, in the holiness of His light!

12. Our own spirits are still unrestrained & must be voluntarily under the Lord's control, or they can certainly lead us astray just as bad as an evil spirit! They become evil spirits in disobedience!

13. The best ability is availability.

14. Many are called but few get up.

15. God will mend a broken heart if you will give Him all the pieces.

16. Truth resisted loses its power over the mind!

17. Unless God is able to break your spirit, you can never be useful to the Lord.

18. Afflictions cannot injure when blended with submission.

19. I don't mind being used if I'm being used by the right God and the right people.

20. The more you resist the Spirit of God, the more control the Enemy has.

21. You'll never know the Truth until you are willing to let your false conceptions & preconceived notions be destroyed.

22. Don't be like the gardener who could do anything--but wouldn't!

23. Thank the Lord for softening our hearts, so often hardened by our own selfishness! It's only as we yield to His Love that we melt!

24. If you fight God too hard, God'll fight you!

25. There is no limit to what God can do with a man who is yielded & willing to do His Will!

26. God has to break you, melt you & mold you again in the hands of the Potter to make you a better vessel, so you're willing to go anywhere, anytime, and do anything for anybody, and be nobody to please Him and help everybody!

27. The Lord always prefers volunteers.

28. The answer's always there if you're willing to receive it, but if you resist the answer He gives, He shuts up because you won't listen.

29. I don't like to give orders, I like to make offers!

30. Jesus can use anything if it's yielded, obedient and willing to be filled with His Love!

31. God will use anything you've got if you'll let Him.

32. He that fails to be broken upon the Rock of God, will someday find the Rock falling upon him & crushing him to powder & dust, which the winds of His judgements will blow away! (Mat.21:44.)

33. When you have yielded your life to God on His altar of sacrifice & asked Him to take it, He will--& He will try to use it for His glory as much as you will let Him.

34. If the Lord can find the workers, He'll furnish the pay. If He can find the yielded hearts & minds & wills that are willing to obey & go & do it, He'll foot the bill!

35. All He needs is for you to say yes & take the job, & He'll pay the salary.

36. Spiritual resistance causes spiritual callousness! Every time we resist God's Spirit, our hearts grow harder, until He will strive with us no more & we are destroyed without remedy!

37. The yielding of the tongue is a very symbolic yielding, because anything that can conquer the tongue conquers the whole. Therefore the surrender of the tongue is like the surrender of the whole.

38. You are God's expendables, created to burn out on His altar of sacrifice, made to wear out as His tools of design, to die that others may live.

39. The only way the candle can ever be a flame is to be completely consumed!

40. He can make something out of nothing--even you, if you'll listen, trust, and obey.

41. Come, as Wisdom to children

Come, as new Sight to the blind

Come, Lord, as Strength to my weakness

Take me--soul, body & mind.

42. If you don't like the way you're made, give God a chance to re-make you.

43. We give all & obey all, and our lives overflow with joy, & our satisfaction knows no bounds & our happiness knows no equal.

44. God knows no hours! You never know when you are going to be needed--24 hours a day, seven days a week!--You're a Soul Doctor!

45. You can be whatever God wants you to be if you're willing.

46. The Lord wants volunteers, not draftees.

47. Are you willing to be crucified for others as He was for you?

48. You can bring a horse to the water, but you cannot make it drink.

49. The hardest thing to give is in.

50. When the will is ready the feet are light.

51. Give yourself to God: He can do more with you than you can.

52. O God, let my eyes behold Thy glory and my heart receive Thy beauty and my body know Thy truth and my soul feel Thy Love forever and ever and ever!

53. If you're willing to be what God wants you to be, not what you are, but what God wants you to be, then He can mightily use you.

54. I don't care how much of a genius you are!--If you don't stay close to the Lord, God can't use your genius! If you don't dedicate it to God and have it bathed in prayer & the Holy Spirit, God can't use your talent!

55. If I'd stubbornly clung to my own way,

We would never be where we are today!

56. Sometimes you have to accept God's "no", in order to find His "yes"!

57. Your most needed abilities are availability & adaptability!

58. You should ride the waves instead of trying to stop them!

59. Let the wave carry you instead of drown you or destroy you!

60. You can't do much for people who don't want to be delivered.

61. If your breaking process is not yet complete, don't leave school before the bell rings.

62. We're not "Christian Triers", but "Lord Letters".

63. Quit trying to get the victory over something God ordained you to do.

64. He that will not when he may,  
When he will, shall then have nay.
65. Surrender isn't giving up what you don't want. It's giving up what you do want.
66. God is not as much concerned with your ability as with your availability.
67. Shoes are like people--the soft soul gives & gives, & the hard soul resists.
68. Ready to go, ready to stay  
--Ready my place to fill;  
Ready for service, lowly or great  
--Ready to do Thy Will!
69. I'll go where You want me to go, dear Lord,  
O'er mountain or plain or sea;  
I'll say what You want me to say, dear Lord,  
I'll be what You want me to be!
70. All you need to do is just yield & obey, & leave the consequences & results in the hands of the Lord.
71. The greatness of a man's power is the measure of his surrender. It is not a question of who you are, or of what you are, but whether God controls you.

(See also Nos. 3, 31, 33, 35, 48, 66, 74, 75, 77, 203, 301c, 399, 575, 721, 727, 829, 847, 960, 974, 1372, 1373, 1380, 1427, 1468, 1493, 1644.)

72. GEN.22:2,12 And He said, Take now thy son, thine only son Isaac, whom thou lovest, and get thee into the land of Moriah; and offer him there for a burnt offering upon one of the mountains which I will tell thee of... And He said, Lay not thine hand upon the lad, neither do thou anything unto him: for now I know that thou fearest God, seeing thou hast not withheld thy son, thine only son from Me. (Gen.22:1-14.)

73. 2CH.30:8 Now be ye not stiffnecked, as your fathers were, but yield yourselves unto the Lord and enter into His sanctuary, which He hath sanctified forever: and serve the Lord your God, that the fierceness of His wrath may turn away from you.

74. JOB.1:21 Naked came I out of my mother's womb, and naked shall I return thither: the Lord gave, and the Lord hath taken away; blessed be the Name of the Lord.

75. PSA.139:23,24 Search me, O God, and know my heart: try me, and know my thoughts: And see if there be any wicked way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting.

76. PSA.143:10 Teach me to do Thy Will; for Thou art my God: Thy Spirit is good: lead me into the land of uprightness.

77. ECC.10:4 If the spirit of the ruler rise up against thee, leave not thy place; for yielding pacifieth great offences.

78. ISA.64:8 Now, O Lord, Thou art our Father; we are the clay, and Thou our potter; and we are all the work of Thy hand.

79. MAT.6:10 Thy Kingdom come. Thy Will be done in Earth, as it is in Heaven.

80. MAT.21:44 And whosoever shall fall upon this Stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever It shall fall, It will grind him to powder.

81. MAT.26:39 And He went a little further, and fell on His face, and prayed, saying, O My Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from Me: nevertheless not as I will, but as Thou wilt.

82. LUK.1:38 And Mary said, Behold the handmaid of the Lord; be it unto me according to Thy Word.

83. JON.3:30 He must increase, but I must decrease.

84. ROM.6:13 Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God.

85. ROM.6:16 Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?

86. ROM.12:1 I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service.

87. 1CO.15:31b I die daily.

88. COL.3:3 For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God.

89. HEB.6:3 And this will we do, if God permit.

90. JAM.4:7 Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the Devil, and he will flee from you.

91. JAM.4:15 For that ye ought to say, if the Lord will, we shall live, and do this, or that.

**CHILDREN; CHASTISEMENT; GODLY EDUCATION; PARENTS; PREGNANCY, BIRTH and BABIES**

[HomeARC Note (03/04): *The Charter* and the policy statement, "Children in The Family International" (01/04), state the Family's principles, policies and attitudes regarding marriage, separation, divorce, parents and their children.]

1. The child is a product of the parents and their nature and character and spirituality or lack of it, including all of their faults. The sins of the fathers will be visited unto the third and the fourth generation, and don't blame it on God! (Ex.20:5) Some people complain about that verse, that God is a cruel monster to visit the judgements upon the poor innocent children! It's not God's fault, He doesn't do it, they do it! They have visited their own sins on their own children, and the effect doesn't wear off for three or four generations!

2. Delinquent children are the products of delinquent parents!

3. The most vital part of this work is our children. If our children can't become what they should become, if our children can't carry the ball and carry on, then we have failed in the most important part of our work, we have failed to preserve the Future!

4. I think we ought to let children do what they want to do and like to do as much as possible as long as it's reasonable and not hurtful to them or others.

5. Our children have a great feeling of security as long as they feel our love and our care and concern and they have the Lord. It doesn't matter whether we move tomorrow or turn things upside-down or upset the fruit basket or play musical chairs or whatever, they wouldn't feel the least bit less secure, because they know they've got a Family and they have the Lord and they're perfectly happy no matter what happens.

6. If children are attached to things, a certain house and a certain neighbourhood and a certain school instead of to the Lord and the Family, if they have been taught and raised and reared to be attached to "things" instead of to people and to the Lord, then it's going to be quite a psychological wrench to tear them out of that frame of reference into another situation.--If you've allowed them to get attached to those things and that place instead of to God and the Family!

7. Children are the greatest child psychologists in the World and they'll pull psychology on you! They'll outsmart you, too, if you let'm. They're very smart. They know more about it than you do, you've just gotta keep at least one jump ahead of them.

8. You should always stop and pray things through first before making any decisions, especially on where to take your children!

9. Anyone who reads anything with any child should always first check the book through, and read it for themselves to be sure it's a profitable story and suitable for young ones to read!

10. Children's reactions depend on adults' attitudes. Children reflect the parents' good attitudes and faith!

11. Choose the good and eschew the evil while watching System TV and video shows and be sure each program is previewed by an adult and then thoroughly explained to the children while viewing it with them. After seeing any TV show or movie, be sure the children understand thoroughly the entire message and answer any of their questions.

12. I don't believe in depriving a child of anything he wants to do that doesn't hurt him or others.

13. When children show they have learned consideration for others, that's a real sign of maturity.

14. It's very important that the first child is well trained, because the younger children then follow and imitate the first one so much.

15. Violent children usually come from violent homes.

16. Even if we fail, the children will still be around like little time bombs ticking away, waiting to explode this World apart, with what they're learning, the languages, the lessons, the training! It'll never leave them! Think of what these kids are going to do! They're going to lead an Army! They are our guarantee that our work will never end!

17. We never leave the children alone for any time at all, even for what may seem like innocent playtime in our own backyard!

18. I never liked tickling! It doesn't feel good, so it must be bad! It's really sort of cruel!

19. Everyone always needs someone.

20. If you promise a child something you should be sure to give it to them if at all possible, good or bad, so they'll know you keep your word whether it be good or bad, outing or a spanking!

21. I don't think you can give a child too much attention. They need lots of love! It's a big, hard cruel World and they need lots of love and attention.

22. It's such a shame to go to the doctor to see if your child has a childhood disease and what it might be, then come out of there perhaps having caught every disease in town from all the sick people in the waiting room!
23. I believe in giving kids a choice when there is a choice!
24. You can't teach a child all day long! There comes a time that you can hardly get them to do anything, they're just anxious to play because they've had enough school for the day!
25. I taught all my kids to say "Yes sir!" That's how my mother taught me and I've tried to teach my kids that.
26. Children don't understand everything that's going on, but they trust you that you understand.
27. If children can't get what they want by being good, they try to get it by being naughty!
28. Make learning fun! Everything should be a learning activity for children!
29. Everybody needs to feel special to somebody. That's why you have husbands or wives, you need to feel special to somebody!
30. Even if you have eight children, you still treat them all a bit differently. You can give each one something special. They should feel they're special to you in some way.
31. Children have to know they're special in their own way. We all need to feel special to somebody.
32. You have to try to explain things to children, maybe even if they can't understand it, because just the fact that they know you're trying to explain it to them will help!
33. Children's feelings are much the same as adults', only a difficult experience can be even more traumatic for children because they haven't experienced some of these things before, and they haven't been assured like you have that things all work out in the end and everything is going to be OK. They don't have experience to go on, like you do.
34. Children have to go through many things, which though small to us, may seem monumental to them at the time.
35. Children are so much more vulnerable than adults in a lot of ways, because they don't understand things, mostly because they don't have the experience to understand them! So you have to treat them even more carefully, tenderly and with more consideration than adults.
36. Adults almost always demand some kind of explanation for things, and children have as much right to an explanation as anybody.
37. Children really really need emotional and spiritual care! Children need to know that they're important and that they really are loved and looked up to by somebody, just like everyone!
38. Perhaps the problem for the parent has just been a lack of time, but the child may consider it a lack of love if you don't explain. The child may think it's a lack of love just because he doesn't get the attention.
39. With most problem children the problem is usually their parents and that they haven't shown them the loving attention or discipline that they wanted and needed!
40. To understand children, just understand yourself! Children are little people, why don't we just start thinking about them as we do about ourselves?
41. People just thrive on love and attention and concern and consideration, and if children don't have it, or they think they don't, then just like with all of us, they're going to feel bad if they feel rejected.
42. Children aren't that hard to understand if you just put yourself in their position!
43. Start realising that the experiences children go through are very similar to things we go through, only harder to understand for them and harder to take, harder to battle against, because they don't realise that a lot of it is spiritual.
44. Try to put yourself in the child's place as much as possible and try to be understanding and explain as much as possible, be as sweet as possible when you do have the time. Some special little thing or a special word or even touch will really keep people going a long time.
45. Even if you don't understand what the problem stems from, the Lord understands and the answer is Love, whatever the problem, and through His love He can show you the specific solution.
46. People are complex. Children are people too and their problems are complex too. If we'd just stop thinking about children as "children" and think about them as people, we'd get a lot further with finding out what's wrong with them, because we'd understand a lot better.
47. You can't say that children's problems always are the fault of adults or the parents. You can't always blame children's problems on adults. Maybe the problem is a spiritual one for which you need to have desperate prayer for deliverance.
48. With a serious problem, maybe you didn't cause it, but maybe you let it go too far. If the problem gets pretty bad, then for sure someone is responsible for letting it get that serious. Somebody didn't get desperate enough and really pray and try to find a solution and try to give them a lot of love.



49. Never let kids sleep in a totally dark room! Always have a light on!
50. Children should not sleep by themselves at all, ever, not until they're almost grown, sub-teens, old enough and strong enough to stand on their own two feet spiritually and care for themselves!
51. Communication is so important! At times of misbehaviour, it's even better if you don't just spank, but especially talk about things and give the child a chance to explain himself and talk it out! Try to find out why he's misbehaving. Children should only be given punishment along with understanding.
52. Swimming is one of the most dangerous sports ever. You can be only one breath away from death, so never be out of arm's reach of those children! It only takes one big gasp underwater to drown!
53. Every one of our Family Homes need a good, inspired teacher of the Word for our ever-growing population of children! The best teachers are those that make learning fun--an idea person who inspires children to learn the Word!
54. A teacher is somebody who will make you want to learn, make it pleasant and enjoyable--make the kids almost beg to learn!
55. It's easy to be bad and it's hard to be good. It's children's natural bent to pick up the negative and the bad, because we are born in sin and we are born sinners and we have to learn really to be good.
56. Some things you just shouldn't tell children! My mother used to say, "Talk about the Devil and he'll crop up!" It's not good. Then it gets their minds on those negative things and begins to make them fearful and they spend too much time thinking about it. (Phil.4:8)
57. Children should not be forced to eat what they don't like to eat if there's a good substitute available.
58. We do not put up with foolishness, or rowdy, mischievous, naughty, disobedient, wilful, stubborn and rebellious behaviour in anyone! Warnings are usually needed to give the person time to make the choice for themselves to change for the better, but if not, "The rod of correction will drive it far from him." (Pro.22:15)
59. It's said that a child becomes an adult when he has children of his own, because then he really sacrifices and lives for someone else. Well, I think our children become adults even before that because they begin very young to learn to sacrifice for others and share and help each other and that's maturity in the Lord's eyes.
60. The Lord said to me as clear as I ever heard the voice of God, "You must preserve the children, for they are the Future!"
61. Our children are as good as gold,  
And always do as they are told;  
Psychology we've used for years,  
Then, too, we've spanked their little rears.
62. It's not at his mother's knees but across them where a youngster learns his best lessons.
63. In cases of child delinquency you fail unless you get at the seat of the trouble.
64. "Whom the Lord loveth He chasteneth and scourgeth!" (Heb.12:6) That kind of love is the answer to everything along with the other kind.
65. The threat of punishment is one of the most effective deterrents.
66. Try to fit the punishment to the crime!--Punish the offending member firmly and surely, after fair warning and threats, so they know what's coming if they persist.--And do it consistently without fail so they'll know they've always surely and certainly got it coming if they do the thing you warned'm not to.
67. Be sure your first admonition is loving, gentle and prayerful and with a good reason, a cheerful warning as to why. But if they persist, sock it to'm!--But never with such harsh or severe force as to actually injure, only hurt. Do it in love as the Lord does (Heb.12).--And if you really love them, and they know it and love you, they'll eventually keep your commandments! (Jn.14:15)--And everybody will be happier in the end!
68. If everyone knows the rules, agrees and abides by them, then everyone can discipline the children, not just the parents! The parents must trust their childcare helpers to do what's best and they all must agree upon the rules together.
69. If you make your laws too strict, people are bound to break'm! The governments themselves have made criminals out of a lot of people by making rules that nobody can keep, sort of like the Mosaic Law.
70. Don't make your rules so strict that you're going to be sorry if you do have to keep'm or make them keep'm!
71. I never spank for an accident, ever!
72. You have to teach people you mean what you say! That's the only kind of discipline that works: The kind where you mean what you say and you keep your word and your kids know it!
73. Be sure the rules and the punishment or sentence you lay down are Spirit-led and not too hard to keep or too hard, and not done in anger or without prayer.

74. God has lots of rules. But under the Law of Love He has even more rigidly enforced some rules, and under Love He has relaxed some others so they're not as tough. You just have to have the Wisdom of the Lord to know the difference, just when to stick to your guns and when to sometimes encourage them and agree to do things their way.

75. There's nothing wrong with disciplining in righteous anger over wrongdoing, God does that! We should get angry over sin.

76. Patience isn't always a virtue. With misbehaving children you shouldn't have too much!

77. There is such a thing as having too much patience. There are a lot of times you shouldn't have patience, because you need to nip things in the bud and not wait too long. You need to get stirred up and angry once in a while and you need to immediately punish disobediences and correct problem situations before they go too far.

78. Judgement delayed gives hope of postponement and maybe total elimination. "Because sentence against an evil work is not executed speedily, therefore the heart of the sons of men is fully set in them to do evil!" (Ecc.8:11)

79. It is important that all the parents, the helpers and the children know and agree upon all the rules the children are expected to obey, so that anyone can discipline any of the children and not just the particular mother or father of the offending child! It's important when a child is disobedient that the judgement and punishment be swift.

80. Once you have actually promised sentence, you may temporarily suspend sentence and put them on probation. But once you have said, "Now you're on probation and we've decided we're going to do thus-and-so with you, exile you to such-and-such a Home or excommunicate you entirely," or whatever the sentence is, and you suspend the sentence for right now, tell them, "But if you don't respond to this probation and straighten out, then such-and-such an exile or complete excommunication will immediately occur!"

81. Not only the adults should agree to the rules, but you should give the kids some say-so too. Kids are normally harder on themselves than you would be.

82. If the children have helped to make the rules, then they're more aware of them, and will be more inclined to obey them and more apt to accept the consequences that they themselves have laid down.

83. If children are allowed to get away with things, then they're going to lose confidence in the adults that let them get away with disobedience!

84. The Word helps motivate the children to do the right thing, and that, along with the rod, is definitely the long-term solution to disciplinary problems. But if they haven't been given the Word, the immediate solution is to use whatever discipline will make unruly children obey.

85. You have to lay down the law to get the kids disciplined and in order, and then of course, you have to continually administer the Word to motivate them to do the right thing and to help them to get convicted by the Spirit when they're disobedient.

86. The long-term goal is to encourage the children to obey out of love and to have the conviction to know what's right and what's wrong and therefore choose to do the right thing.

87. Ideally we're to try to explain things to children and help them to understand why they did wrong and take the time to reason with them, but if you've got a major problem on your hands and lots of screaming kids, then it's not time to explain.--It's time for laying down the law!

88. It confuses children if there are different standards for different children, and that can, of course, cause contention and disunity and disharmony!

89. Homes that have regular childcare council meetings seem to be the ones with the least problem children!

90. Better the child should cry than the father.

91. The idea of school is to learn. If there is a way to make it easier for students to learn, then do it!

92. We should all be teaching all the time!

93. Whatever the children enjoy learning is what they will learn the best.

94. It's so satisfying to really fill children with the Word! You know it'll forever be with them and it'll always be a blessing! Not one Word is wasted!

95. The best academy, a mother's knee.

96. We are now developing an educational system and educational materials for the new education of the New World!

97. You have got to have animation, you've got to have enthusiasm, you've got to have inspiration. You've got to really sock it to'm and put a lot of real meaning and interest in it in order to really get and keep a little child's attention. You've got to really illustrate it and you've got to really put everything you have into teaching kids. If you sit there and read on and on monotonously from some System book or even from a TK, they're going to wander off physically or at least in spirit and forget all about it.

98. If during the Millennium we are going to rule the Earth with a rod of iron with the stern tough strict discipline and authority of Jesus Christ, what more can that mean than that we are going to train people and educate them and teach them to be good.

99. Our children are the Future forever! They are the Future for the Millennium!--The next 10 years, the next thousand years! They are going to be the Future and what works on them now they are going to be teaching others later and teaching others to teach others to teach others.

100. When you feel like criticising the younger generation, just remember who raised them.

101. The best thing parents can spend on children is time--not money.

102. To understand your parents' love you must raise children yourself.

103. Our children are our greatest task. They are the responsibilities and the little disciples that God has given you that you have to take care of and you must train and they had better be taught well and reared well in the nurture and admonition of the Lord and trained up in the way they should go so that when they are older they will not depart therefrom.

104. You're all childcare workers, you all should be interested in working for the children and helping to take care of the children in one way or the other, because I think they're our greatest task now. We have them and they are ours, they are our personal responsibility, every single Family Member's responsibility!--Not just the so-called childcare workers, but every secretary, every cook, every maintenance man, every litnesser, busker or whoever, and you're finding out how valuable the children are. You take care of the children and the children take care of you!

105. It only takes one parent to spoil a child!

106. God bless the precious ones who take care of the children, the unsung heroes of the Revolution, the custodians of the future!

107. Fear communicates. If the parents freak out and the kids see them, then of course the kids are gonna freak out too.

108. Our own attitudes and samples of faith as parents are such a standard to the children. The more effort of faith or prayer we show them in concern for their healing, the more they too get desperate for themselves.

109. When we live all together, we all assume responsibility for the children.

110. If you don't discipline a child from the time they're a baby, they're going to be a failure and a flop and a mess and a problem by the time they get to be a year old!

111. A pregnant woman is absolutely radiant! She has an absolute glowing radiance about her. A pregnant woman must have a double aura, she absolutely radiates!

112. The more pregnant that a woman becomes, the more motherly she gets and the more beautiful!

113. I always did say a pregnant woman just glows with Heavenly beauty!

114. My Mother believed in prenatal influence! She genuinely believed she was highly influencing my personality even before I was born, and I believe she was!

+ + + + +

## OTHER

[HomeARC note (10/98): Please refer to The Charter for the Family's current doctrine and policies regarding most of the following subjects.]

1. **(ADMINISTRATION and ORGANIZATION)** It is a bad plan that leaves no room for modifications.
2. **(BACKSLIDERS and PRODIGALS)** Backsliders seldom ever backslide alone. Their infection spreads rapidly and they try to infect as many people as they can by spreading their murmuring and division. They have to do that to justify themselves for leaving, and persuade as many people as possible to do the same thing to show they're right and they're not the only ones who feel that way. They organise their rebellion against authority and against their Home and their leadership and have special little meetings together to plan their rebellion.
3. **(BACKSLIDERS and PRODIGALS)** The greatest danger of problem cases within is sowing further dissension, discord and murmuring, and poisoning the camp! That's the greatest danger--what they say! --Poisoning the camp and murmuring!
4. **(BACKSLIDERS and PRODIGALS)** Even if you've lost everything, your birthright, your inheritance and everything, the Father still loves you and wants to save you. You can still come back and enjoy His love and His salvation. Even if you have no reward, at least you're in the Father's house.

5. **(BACKSLIDERS and PRODIGALS)** God breaks us in mercy and has mercy in our breaking. And if you've left the Father's house, He'll break you to bring you back some day. You missed the blessing and your reward, you're too late for the crown, but thank God you're saved.

6. **(BACKSLIDERS and PRODIGALS)** Many have rebelled against me but many shall repent and return to the house of their Father in those Evil Days and shall know that God was right, too late for the reward but thankful for Salvation.

7. **(BOLDNESS/SHYNESS)** When I was young I was shy and had an inferiority complex and I had no self-confidence, but when I got filled with the Spirit I had a lot of confidence!--But it wasn't self-confidence, it was Christ-confidence, Christ-consciousness.

8. **(CHANGE)** One thing most people need is regular change. The Bible says you need change. (Ps.55:19.)

9. **(CHANGE)** Changing one thing for the better is worth more than proving a thousand things wrong.

10. **(CHANGE)** To do so no more is the truest repentance.

11. **(CHANGE)** We make policies, but there are times when you can break a policy when it comes down to the sake of the important work, and the sake of others, even risking your own life or whatever it takes to save the lives of others!

12. **(CHANGE)** I change my mind according to the situation, the condition, the time. There is a time for everything. There is a time to sow, there is a time to reap, there is a time to laugh, there is a time to cry, there is a time for everything!

13. **(CHURCHIANITY and ORGANISED RELIGION)** Churchy people have to stand by their old-bottle convictions and old-line doctrines and old conservative practices, their old habits that they'll never change. It's going to take probably the whole Millennium for us to change some of those people and persuade'm to God's way of thinking and our way of practising.

14. **(COMMUNION)** I think Communion time ought to be a happy time! We ought to be happy about healing and Salvation! It should be a time of rejoicing.

15. **(CONVICTION/COMPROMISE)** It does not take great men to do great things; it only takes dedicated men.

16. **(CREATION)** Nature is the living, visible garment of God.

17. **(CRITICISM and GOSSIP)** To speak ill of others is a dishonest way of praising ourselves.

18. **(CRITICISM and GOSSIP)** An idle rumour is generally very busy.

19. **(CRITICISM and GOSSIP)** The opposite of gossip is often the truth.

20. **(DEATH/LIFE)** Are you willing to die and still trust the Lord?--Still have faith even as you die? Can you die in faith? The greatest test of faith is death! That's the ultimate test, if you can die trusting the Lord.

21. **(DEATH/LIFE)** Life is a voyage that's homeward bound.

22. **(DEVIL'S DEVICES)** The Devil gets into a lot of people in unguarded moments. Any time you just let down your guard and for a minute you're off guard or out of the spirit, disobedient, wilful, murmuring, complaining, just any little thing the Devil can use, he'll get in. He's waiting.

23. **(DEVIL'S DEVICES)** The Devil's afraid of us and he attacks us any way he can get in--into you or any little weak character or any little weak sister or anybody who's not 100% sold and loyal and faithful and diligent and spiritual and absolutely all-out for us and this Family and for Jesus.

24. **(DEVIL'S DEVICES)** A little stone may upset a large cart.

25. **(DILIGENCE IN BUSINESS)** God blesses honest, sincere, hardworking, righteous people even if they don't know the Lord!

26. **(DISCIPLESHIP)** No man is worth his salt who is not ready at all times to risk his body, to risk his well-being, to risk his life for a great cause.

27. **(DOUBTS)** Our doubts are traitors,

And make us lose the good we oft might win,

By fearing to attempt. [*Measure for Measure* by William Shakespeare]

28. **(EDUCATION, SYSTEM)** Few minds wear out; more rust out.

29. **(EXORCISM and SPIRITUAL PROBLEMS)** We don't believe in complete demon-possession of any child of God by the Devil's angels, but I'll tell you, I've see some saved children of God who love the Lord who have thrown some fits and done some tricks which only the Devil could have done through them!

30. **(EXORCISM and SPIRITUAL PROBLEMS)** The one thing of all things that those demons don't want is to be cast out! That's what they fear the most.--Whether it's a demon out of the body or troublemakers out of the Church! If you keep fiddling with them and nursing them, that's exactly what the Devil wants! Above all, they want to stay in the nest and be a problem child--that's their mission.

31. **(EXORCISM and SPIRITUAL PROBLEMS)** Your problem cases get away with so much because you don't lay down the ultimatum and execute positive sentences and discipline them! When you've given your word, you have to carry out the sentence, whether you want to or not.

32. **(EXORCISM and SPIRITUAL PROBLEMS)** It's much better to have an enemy on the outside than on the inside!

33. **(EXORCISM and SPIRITUAL PROBLEMS)** The Devil always accuses you of what he himself is guilty of. There's only one thing that keeps a demon happy--to stay in the body where he's causing the trouble!

34. **(EXORCISM and SPIRITUAL PROBLEMS)** When the Devil finds he's stuck his neck out too far and is about to get it cut off and he begins to realise what it's going to cost him, and he doesn't want to get kicked out, he will often act very meek and submissive in an attempt to escape judgement!

35. **(EXORCISM and SPIRITUAL PROBLEMS)** Better to lose a few digits, to lose a few members [have them leave], no matter how important they are and how tragic their loss, than to have them corrupt the whole body and cause the loss of all!

36. **(FAITH and TRUST)** Sometimes people think they've got the faith but they really don't, if it doesn't happen. Even though they think it, they expect it, if it doesn't happen, obviously they didn't have the faith. If what they thought was going to happen or expected to happen or wanted to happen, doesn't happen, then obviously their faith was not real faith. It was just presumption.--Or maybe even spiritual pride.

37. **(FAITH and TRUST)** "For by grace are ye saved through faith and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God, not of works lest any man should boast." (Eph.2:8,9) And that principle is true of everything, including healing and everything else!

38. **(FAITH and TRUST)** The whole name of the game is faith and trust and to trust Him anyhow! He loves to see if you've really got real faith and you're going to trust Him anyhow, no matter what!--Even if you weren't a shining example and didn't have a glorious victory!--You trusted Him in seeming defeat, and that's a glorious victory!--You trusted Him in seeming defeat, and that's a victory in itself, to be a good loser!--More than a conqueror!

39. **(FAITH and TRUST)** Quit worrying about the future, quit worrying about tomorrow, quit worrying about even the next hour. God will give you grace when the hour comes!--Not just power for the hour, He gives you power for the second or the split second, the instant! That's all you need.

40. **(FAITH and TRUST)** Keep your fears to yourself, but share your courage with others.

41. **(FAITHFULNESS)** One of the best verses for your life and ministry is, "He that is faithful unto the end I will give a crown of life!" (Rev.2:10)

42. **(FAITHFULNESS)** You can only live one day at a time, you can only be faithful one day at a time. Don't worry about when you weren't faithful yesterday or whether you're going to be faithful tomorrow, but do your best to be faithful today. Forget the past and tomorrow will take care of itself, or the Lord will take care of it.

43. **(FAITHFULNESS)** Too many people think about "faithful" as being some kind of a works thing that you worked up and that you did. But if you're full of faith, you're faithful and faith comes from the Lord, comes by hearing the Word and reading the Word.

44. **(FAITHFULNESS)** I just have to depend on the Lord to keep me faithful, that's all, and trust Him that my faith won't fail, because my faith comes from Him. Faith is a gift of God.

45. **(FAITHFULNESS)** Only the Lord can keep you faithful. Of course, you have to give Him a little cooperation, you have to listen, you have to read, you have to obey, but that's the easy part. It's His job to keep you faithful, full of faith, filled with faith which comes from Him, it's a gift of God! All you have to do if you don't have enough faith is just hear the Word, read the Word, that's the source of faith, and He'll give you all the faith you need. Just keep trusting the Lord and don't worry about it.

46. **(FAITHFULNESS)** You don't have to have faith for tomorrow! You don't have to have faith for next week or next month, certainly not for next year or the Tribulation, not now! You'll get it when the time comes. Power for the hour! The only faith you need is just for today.

47. **(FAITHFULNESS)** You don't even have to have faith for a whole day. Just have faith for this moment, right now, one moment at a time. You just have to have faith for this one second.

48. **(FAITHFULNESS)** If a grain of mustard-seed faith can move a whole mountain, it shouldn't even take a microscopic microbe of faith to keep doing what little things you've got to do all day long.

49. **(FAMILY, OUR)** You talk about an integrated work force, we've got it! And we are all shades and colours and backgrounds and former religions and everything. We come from all races, creeds and colours but now we're all one in Christ Jesus and that is a miracle in itself!

50. **(FAMILY, OUR)** I don't think anybody else in this World is as great a threat to the Devil's kingdom and his dirty work as we are!

51. **(FAMILY, OUR)** There are all kinds of people, all kinds of faith and all kinds of strengths and all kinds of weaknesses. It takes all kinds to make a World and it takes all kinds to make our Family too.
52. **(FEAR, FREEDOM FROM)** Our fears always outnumber our dangers.
53. **(FELLOWSHIP)** We weren't put here just to have Homes and Heavenly fellowship and freedom. That is a part of the blessings of God that He has given us in order to make our main job possible. He's given us all these as rewards and blessings for obedience and obeying Him and doing what He told us to do--to get out there and reap. And as long as we keep reaping, keep obeying, keep doing what God has told us to do, the Lord will keep supplying and He'll keep blessing and He'll keep protecting and He'll keep making it possible if we'll just do it.
54. **(FIGHT THE GOOD FIGHT)** All through life you'll have a lot of spills. Just remember, never give up! Just get right back up! You may fall into puddles, but you don't have to lie there!
55. **(FIGHT THE GOOD FIGHT)** No one is ever beaten unless he gives up the fight.
56. **(FORGIVENESS and MERCY)** A chip on the shoulder is about the heaviest load a person ever carries.
57. **(FORGIVENESS and MERCY)** The longer you carry a grudge, the heavier it gets.
58. **(FORGIVENESS and MERCY)** There, but for the grace of God, go I.
59. **(FRUITFULNESS)** No one is useless in this World who lightens the burdens of another.
60. **(FRUITFULNESS)** I don't like to make bad investments in people who are not getting results and from which there are no returns, no benefits, no dividends.
61. **(FRUITFULNESS)** We're just like any investor. We've got to know what's the good investment. We've got to know where it is going to get results, not to make money, but to make saved souls.
62. **(FUTURE)** Coming events cast their shadows before.
63. **(GIVING)** He that gives his heart will not deny his money.
64. **(GIVING)** When there is room in the heart there is room in the home.
65. **(GIVING)** He who lends to the poor gets his interest from God.
66. **(GOD'S WAY vs. MAN'S WAY)** When God measures a man, He puts the tape around his heart instead of his head.
67. **(GOVERNMENT and MATERIALISM)** Democracy goes by the majority vote, and if the majority are insane, the sane must go to the hospital.
68. **(GOVERNMENT and MATERIALISM)** In cities, no one is quiet but many are lonely; in the country, people are quiet but few are lonely.
69. **(GOVERNMENT and MATERIALISM)** The reason almost every country in the World is in trouble right now is because they borrowed money. The borrower is servant to the lender. The [ACs] had the money, they lent it and now the World has got to sell their souls to them and be their slaves and do what the [ACs] tell them to do while the [ACs] rule the World, mostly because they stupidly borrowed money and lived beyond their income and were extravagant and squandered it.
70. **(HEALING)** Lord, help us not to read those medical books! They're not faith-builders but fear-igniters!
71. **(HOLY SPIRIT)** We've got even better powers and riches and genies than Aladdin did. We have the Holy Spirit, who can do the greatest miracles of all! The Holy Spirit is the greatest Genie in the World!
72. **(HOLY SPIRIT)** Not everybody receives the gift of tongues when they're filled with the Spirit, and you don't have to have the gift of tongues to prove that you are filled with the Spirit.
73. **(HOLY SPIRIT)** We do not believe that the gift of tongues is the evidence of the baptism of the Holy Spirit.
74. **(HOLY SPIRIT)** Eventually most people who have the Holy Spirit are able to speak in tongues too, because it's a wonderful way of praying. It's one of the commonest gifts, but actually the least useful as far as witnessing or being a leader or anything else. It's mostly just for your own benefit and your own edification in the Spirit, to be able to pray in tongues.
75. **(HUMILITY/PRIDE)** There are great men who make every man feel small. But the really great man is the man who makes every man feel great.
76. **(HUMILITY/PRIDE)** King David of the Bible is a dandy bad example, yet a great example of a great man who was apparently lifted up in pride for awhile and thereby got into great sin and therefore he had to have a great humbling, a great judgement, a great confession and a really terrible stripping of everything.
77. **(HUMILITY/PRIDE)** The Lord can't trust you with a high and mighty job or a high and mighty testimony, or a high and mighty responsibility, something that might really lift you up in pride, until He has really humbled you and broken you so that you know it's the Lord and you give God all the glory and all the credit and it doesn't go to your head and make you proud!

78. **(HUMILITY/PRIDE)** All the preparation of the arm of the flesh doesn't even mean a thing without the Lord. Only the Lord can do it and He can do it under some pretty strenuous circumstances, some pretty rough and tough methods if you really need to be brought down few notches and humbled and made to sort of say "Yes, sir!" when He's putting the pressure on you and leaning on you, to really remind you that you really are totally utterly dependent on Him!

79. **(HUMILITY/PRIDE)** It is no great thing to be humble when you are brought low; but to be humble when you are praised is a great and rare attainment.

80. **(HUMILITY/PRIDE)** There is no true holiness without humility.

81. **(HUMILITY/PRIDE)** The eyes of other people are the eyes that ruin us. If all but myself were blind, I should want neither fine clothes, fine houses, nor fine furniture.

82. **(HUMILITY/PRIDE)** Lord, help me to admit when I am wrong, and make me easier to live with when I am right.

83. **(HUMILITY/PRIDE)** No one has more to learn than the person who knows everything.

84. **(HUMILITY/PRIDE)** Better to ask ten times than to go astray once.

85. **(HUMILITY/PRIDE)** He that will not be counselled cannot be helped.

86. **(HUMILITY/PRIDE)** The Devil got lifted up in pride until he wasn't satisfied being God's right hand and light man but he wanted to be God Himself, so he lost his position. God cast him down and he's still been trying to be God ever since and finally he is going to try to be God here on the Earth. If he can't be god of the Universe, at least he is going to be the god of this World and the Lord is going to let him, just to show both him and the Antichrist and the World and everybody that man without God or even the Devil without God can't do a thing and will make a mess of things.

87. **(INSPIRATION and ENTHUSIASM)** It pays to be crazy in this outfit!--Crazy about the Lord and His work!

88. **(JEALOUSY)** The fire that in jealousy you kindle for another often burns yourself more than them.

...

90. **(KINGS and SUPPORTERS)** Let's not give our friends such strong medicine and such strong comments and words and testimonies in our lit that it would be hard for them to receive and hard for them to explain away to their friends if they wanted to show it to them or it fell into their hands.

91. **(LAW vs. GRACE)** Are you an Old Testament Christian or a New Testament Christian? Are you still under the law or are you living free and liberated by the grace and truth of Jesus Christ?

92. **(LAW vs. GRACE)** My God, help and deliver us from that damned old Mosaic Law!--It's damned because it's already judged and it's finished with and it's ended, it is no more. We don't have anything to do with the Mosaic Law or ancient Judaism. We don't have Judeo-Christianity. We've got the love of God and the love of Jesus! We're free! And if you don't believe it you ought to read dear Apostle Paul's epistles from start to finish.

93. **(LAW vs. GRACE)** There is no such thing as adultery anymore, not for a Christian who is living under grace and under the law of love. "All things are lawful" to those who are living under God's law of love. If not, why did He say that, if it's not so?

94. **(LEADERS and SHEPHERDS)** Any situation that a leader can't handle, he needs to report to a superior officer who can.

95. **(LEADERS and SHEPHERDS)** A head of a Home who can't spot failing parents who are spoiling a child is failing.

96. **(LEADERS and SHEPHERDS)** If a top leader cannot unify his family and cannot control them and cannot rule his own house well, he doesn't deserve to be a top leader!

97. **(LEADERS and SHEPHERDS)** The New Testament says you're not to give a novice any position of great responsibility or leadership lest he be lifted up in pride and fall under the condemnation of the Devil. (1Tim.3:6)

98. **(LEADERS and SHEPHERDS)** The Devil really tempts you with pride to make you get high and lifted up, and especially if you accept the praise of men and you don't remind them it's the Lord.

99. **(LEADERS and SHEPHERDS)** My confessions have aroused almost more thanks and gratitude than anything else. My defeats have encouraged the Family almost more than my successes! Because it showed that I was also human and that I was just as fallible and just as weak and just as bad and had just as many problems as they had, but praise the Lord, I somehow made it anyhow, the Lord pulled me through anyway.

100. **(LEADERS and SHEPHERDS)** It's encouraging to people to see that even their leaders are not perfect, they're human. All the leaders in the Bible and even in church history were men.--Men of faith, but all of them had feet of clay and all of them made mistakes and the Lord had to show that they were just men and flesh and

blood and just as weak as we are and made mistakes like we do, and it was all the Lord! Those great leaders became shining examples--not of their own greatness but of their utter dependence on the Lord.

101. **(LEADERS and SHEPHERDS)** The price of greatness is responsibility.

102. **(LOVE)** A bone to the dog is not charity. Charity is the bone shared with the dog, when you are just as hungry as the dog.

103. **(LOVE)** 'Tis better to have loved and lost than never to have loved at all.

104. **(NO NEUTRALS)** We know what happens to people who try to stay in the middle of the road. They get run over.

105. **(OBEDIENCE)** Nobody is indispensable unless they obey God, and if they are disobedient, rebellious, stubborn, wilful, unwilling to take correction themselves, then we can't take a chance on them anywhere.

106. **(OBEDIENCE)** Wicked men obey from fear; good men, from love.

107. **(OLD AGE)** It is not by the grey of the hair that one knows the age of the heart.

108. **(OLD AGE)** Old age is the greatest time of life! If you've lived a good life and you've lived it for the Lord and accomplished something and you see good fruit, it's the best time of life!

109. **(OLD AGE)** There are no happy Devil's old folks. They have nothing but sorrow and they even commit suicide and all kinds of horrible things.--Because what have they got to be thankful for? What have they got to look back on that they've accomplished? What good have they done? They're a miserable bunch usually.

110. **(PERSECUTION)** We, God's children, don't have to hurt our enemies, but can live the Golden Rule like Jesus did, and God Himself deals with our enemies for us!

111. **(PERSECUTION)** The prophet and the martyr do not see the hooting throng. Their eyes are fixed on eternity.

112. **(PERSECUTION)** The way of this World is to praise dead saints and persecute living ones.

113. **(PERSECUTION)** There's no way they can fight the truth but to try to kill the Truth-giver, and this is what they did to Jesus and His disciples and some of the Patriarchs and every Prophet of God and every man of God that's ever arisen to speak the Truth of God!

114. **(PERSECUTION)** When everyone approves of what you are doing, you ought to ask yourself what's wrong.

115. **(PERSECUTION)** Only at trees bearing fruit do people throw stones.

116. **(PUBLICATIONS and PAPER POWER)** Our enemies haven't failed to publicise all kinds of rot and shit and lies against us, so for God's sake, why don't we publicise the good we do!

117. **(READING and VIEWING)** In order to read the newspaper right, you have to know who's writing it and who's publishing it, and why and where they stand on different issues, and then you can get the right interpretation.

118. **(RELATIONS WITH PEOPLE)** You can knock the chip off the other person's shoulder simply by patting him on the back.

119. **(RELATIONSHIP TO THE WORLD)** All fame is dangerous: Good brings envy; bad, shame.

120. **(RESISTING THE DEVIL)** The Devil will sure run if you throw the Word at him!

121. **(RESISTING THE DEVIL)** The Devil personally possessed Judas to do the job of betraying Jesus. And he will try to get into you every way he possibly can and do the same if he can if you don't look out! You have to be deeply on your guard in the Lord and in the Word and in the Spirit or the Devil could get into you and do the same thing!

122. **(REVOLUTION FOR JESUS)** I'm not averse to changing my mind. I'm willing to do something different, go another direction, turn around and go the opposite direction if God tells me to. That's what revolution means--to revolve, to revolute, to turn around and go the other way, if necessary.

123. **(REWARDS)** They which received us with joy shall be crowned with joy. And they that denied us will be damned with doom.

124. **(REWARDS)** My Lord, what a horrible fate even if you're saved.--How horrible to know you missed the boat, missed the fun and missed the reward, but at least you're saved. That's sure better than Hell but your Hell is going to be your memory of failure and everlasting shame and contempt. What a fate! My God! But it's better than Hell anyway. It's kind of a Hell in Heaven to have to remember your failures and what it cost and to suffer everlasting shame and contempt. It's sort of a Hell in Heaven forever.

125. **(RIGHTEOUSNESS/SELF-RIGHTEOUSNESS)** There is no worse pride than self-righteous religious pride!--The self-righteous, Pharisaical, proud, religious person who thanks God he's not as other men or as other women and looks down on them because they don't have as much faith as he has and they didn't do this or they didn't do that! Self-righteousness can cause you to have absolutely no sympathy for the poor guys who haven't got it and can't make it and have to resort to other means, and not just pure faith and faith alone.



126. **(RIGHTEOUSNESS/SELF-RIGHTEOUSNESS)** Everybody is bad. Everybody deserves spankings and punishments. Everybody deserves the worst. We're all sinners. That isn't what God blames you for. He blames you for not calling on Him to help you and for not repenting, not letting Him change you, not letting Him do it. You can't do it yourself.

127. **(RIGHTEOUSNESS/SELF-RIGHTEOUSNESS)** The Lord lets you go through some of those tests sometimes, even to let you think He's being a little too hard on you! "How could He let our children suffer like this? How could He do that sort of thing to people? How can He let that sort of thing happen, etc.?" The Devil is always around to ask you those questions to try to make you doubt the Lord and even criticise the Lord, to make yourself righteous with God.

128. **(RIGHTEOUSNESS/SELF-RIGHTEOUSNESS)** Job finally got the point that his sin was self-righteousness, self-perfection. He thought he didn't have any sin, and he couldn't understand why God was doing all this to him. When he finally confessed that he wasn't righteous and it was all the Lord, he was healed!

129. **(RIGHTEOUSNESS/SELF-RIGHTEOUSNESS)** "O grave, where is thy victory, O death, where is thy sting?" (1Cor.15:55) The sting of death is sin, and the victory of the grave is to keep you dead! But the marvel of righteousness is faith! Faith is really the only righteousness, and that results in victory over the grave, resurrection!

130. **(RIGHTEOUSNESS/SELF-RIGHTEOUSNESS)** The worst kind of sin is to pretend you're good when you're bad!--Hypocrisy!

131. **(RIGHTEOUSNESS/SELF-RIGHTEOUSNESS)** There was never yet a truly great man that was not at the same time truly good.

132. **(RIGHTEOUSNESS/SELF-RIGHTEOUSNESS)** When a person is always right, there is something wrong.

133. **(SALVATION)** There is one case of the deathbed repentance recorded, that of the penitent thief, that none should despair; and only one that none should presume.

134. **(SAMPLE)** There's not much practical Christianity in the man who lives on better terms with angels and seraphs, than with his children, servants, and neighbours.

135. **(SILENCE)** Learn to hold your tongue; five words cost Zacharias forty weeks of silence. (Luk.1:20)

136. **(SILENCE)** If you wish another to keep your secret, first keep it yourself.

137. **(SIN)** There is no such thing as secret sin! Be sure your sins will find you out and you will be exposed sooner or later and you will reap what you sowed in that secret grave where you thought you had the thing well hidden! (Num.32:23)

138. **(SIN)** There are sins of omission as well as of commission.

139. **(SPIRIT WORLD)** If it weren't for the Lord and His angels, we'd have been gone long ago. Out beyond this circle of angels which are camped 'round about us, there is an even bigger circle of devils and demons and Satan himself trying to get in!--Waiting for just one little opportunity, one little crack, one little bad thought, one little evil idea on your mind or heart, and that becomes his territory, that becomes his avenue to get into you.

140. **(SPIRIT WORLD)** There is nothing more powerful than individual witnessing, one-on-one, personal, face-to-face witnessing, because you've got all Heaven, God's Holy Spirit, Jesus Christ, the angels of God, everybody on your side. They're there practically holding their breath, waiting to rejoice when you lead one sinner to the Lord. You've got a great mighty cloud of witnesses watching you every time you witness to a soul, praying for you and rooting for you.

141. **(SPIRIT WORLD)** God created Satan as a dandy bad example and to test the World with evil. Otherwise they'd have never known what evil was like.

142. **(STRENGTH and POWER)** It's gotta be the Lord and He wants to do it and He wants to get he credit for it and the glory. If in any way, shape or form you think you're going to get a little credit for it and be able to brag about how you did it and made it and had the faith and all the rest, He's apt to slap you down a little to show you Who's Boss in order to really humble you and make you look to the Lord alone!

143. **(SUCCESS/FAILURE)** There are going to be a lot of sorry people in Heaven, a lot of crying, weeping people in Heaven, where God is going to have to wipe away all their tears and try to cheer'm up! But nothing is ever going to erase the past and their failures and their sins and the results of them. They will reap what they have sowed throughout Eternity just by plain failure, if nothing else, even if they are saved.--What might have been, what could have been if they would have obeyed!

144. **(SUCCESS/FAILURE)** Two types of men please God--the one who serves Him with all his heart because he knows Him; and the one who seeks Him with all his heart because he knows Him not.

145. **(SUPPLY)** God gives every bird its food, but He does not throw it into the nest.

146. **(TAKE ACTION!)** He who waits to do a great deal of good at once, will never do anything.

147. **(TAKE ACTION!)** "One of these days" is none of these days.

148. **(TAKE ACTION!)** The chap who says, "What's the use?" is never the engine, always the caboose.
149. **(TAKE ACTION!)** Do what you can, with what you have, where you are.
150. **(TAKE ACTION!)** He that never climbed never fell.
151. **(THANKFULNESS/MURMURING)** They murmured against Moses because he'd married an Ethiopian, when he'd just issued the laws from God that they weren't supposed to intermarry! Did God punish Moses or the murmurers? Which was the greatest sin?--The murmurers were very rigorously disciplined! (Nu.12:1-10)
152. **(THANKFULNESS/MURMURING)** Murmuring against God and leadership is one of the worst sins.
153. **(THANKFULNESS/MURMURING)** Some people that we had to relieve of their duties had justifiable complaints, but their murmurings were not justified! If they had come in the right spirit and told these things, all right, but the spirit was wrong! There is only one thing that will make a murmurer happy, and that's to keep on murmuring and murmur until he destroys the work!
154. **(THANKFULNESS/MURMURING)** Constant complaints never get pity.
155. **(THANKFULNESS/MURMURING)** If you don't know what to be thankful for, be thankful for all the trouble you haven't had.
156. **(TIDBITS)** Bachelors' wives and old maids' children are always perfect.
157. **(TIDBITS)** True religion is the best armour in the World, but the worst cloak.
158. **(TIDBITS)** Better a good enemy than a bad friend.
159. **(TIME, REDEEM THE)** A man who has taken your time recognises no debt, yet it is the only debt he can never repay.
160. **(TIME, REDEEM THE)**  
He slept beneath the moon,  
He basked beneath the sun;  
He lived a life of going-to-do  
And died with nothing done.
161. **(TIME, REDEEM THE)** God never imposes a duty without giving the time to perform it.
162. **(TIME, REDEEM THE)** What I don't know, I don't worry about! A lot of people seem to worry more about what they don't know than what they ought to know! They've got more time to think up questions and ask questions about stuff that is not even important and we don't need to know now, when they ought to be busy doing the things they do know!
- 162a. **(TIME, REDEEM THE)** If you haven't got time to read it, I haven't got time to write it.
163. **(TRIALS and TESTS)** Tears are often the telescope by which men see far into Heaven.
164. **(TRIALS and TESTS)** Earth has no sorrow that Heaven cannot heal.
165. **(TRIALS and TESTS)** All I know is we've got to trust God anyway! Like the little girl said, "And Lord, please take care of Yourself most of all because if anything happened to You we'd all be sunk!" We've got to trust God anyhow, no matter what, even if we don't understand. Some day we'll know, even if we don't know now. Maybe that's why God lets some things happen that we don't understand, we don't know, just to test our faith and see if we'll still trust Him anyhow!
166. **(TRIALS and TESTS)** That's the greatest victory of all, when you seem to be defeated and you still trust the Lord! That must be the greatest and the most pleasing thing of all to God, that even when it looked like you were lost and you were defeated and you didn't make it, you still trusted Him anyhow, like Job!--Faith in the face of disaster, faith in the face of agony, faith in the face of death!
167. **(TRIALS and TESTS)** Many men owe the grandeur of their lives to their tremendous difficulties.
168. **(TRIALS and TESTS)** When life knocks you to your knees, you're in a position to pray.
169. **(TRIALS and TESTS)** We triumph without glory when we conquer without danger.
170. **(TRIALS and TESTS)** There are a lot of things we don't understand now. That's one of the great eternal questions of this life: "Why does God allow sin and suffering?"--We probably won't know all the answers to that question until we get to Heaven. We can see some of the answers and understand some reasons why, but I presume most of it we won't really comprehend till we get there and see the whole picture. That's going to be part of our training and education, to learn why and finally get all the answers!
171. **(TRUTH)** When war is declared, Truth is the first casualty.
172. **(TRUTH)** When in doubt, tell the truth.
173. **(TRUTH)** Facts do not cease to exist because they are ignored.
174. **(TRUTH)** The truth is always the strongest argument.

175. **(UNITED STATES OF AMERICA)** The U.S. will soon be another closed society with no freedom to leave it, but there is still time, Brother, and you'd better use it quick if you want to go and not get stuck with all the other prisoners of the great society of slaves.

176. **(VISION and GOALS)** You see things and say, "Why?" But I dream things that aren't and I say, "Why not?"

177. **(VISION and GOALS)** Either I will find a way, or I will make one.

178. **(VISION and GOALS)** There are two kinds of dissatisfaction in this World: The dissatisfaction which works and the dissatisfaction which wrings its hands. The first gets what it wants and the second loses what it has.

179. **(VISION and GOALS)** Make no little plans: they have no magic to stir men's blood. ... Make big plans, aim high in hope and work.

180. **(VISION and GOALS)** If the profits are great, the risks are great.

181. **(VISION and GOALS)** All I can give you is the original push and the right direction and tell you what God wants done. You have to work out the details.

182. **(WAR)** War is the child of pride.

183. **(WISDOM and WISE SPEECH)** Some folks are wise and some folks are otherwise.

184. **(WISDOM and WISE SPEECH)** Let thy speech be better than silence, or be silent.

185. **(WITNESSING)** Sometimes the best thing we can do is say, "I don't know!" All I know is God! I don't know why, I just know the Lord is and He loves and He knows best, that's all! If we don't understand now, we will later.

186. **(WITNESSING)** If you're going to talk to intelligent educated people, you need to know what's going on in the World and be able to converse on almost any subject. You're not cloistered behind monastery walls and ignorant of all their devices, you know the score, you know what's going on! You're not a bunch of dummies that don't know what's going on out there, you know all that and you've got a Heaven of a lot more!

187. **(WITNESSING)** The Bible is still a pretty well-recognized authority and it may lend more weight to your word if you use the Bible, because even a lot of people who aren't saved and are unchurched and the so-called wicked sinners out in the World still have respect for the Lord and for the Bible.

188. **(WITNESSING)** I am sold on personal witnessing and soul-winning and I don't think there's anything in this World to compare with it! Nothing! Not lit, not radio, not music, not all the preachers or the churches or television, or anything! Nothing equals that personal, electrical, powerful, face-to-face, one-on-one witness with you filled with the power of God and the Love of God they can hardly resist.

189. **(WITNESSING)** I found that if nothing else worked, if I just took their hand in a friendly gesture with one hand and laid my other hand on their shoulder and said, "Well, let's pray" and just started praying, that there is something about the power of God and the Holy Spirit and the fear of God that strikes to their very being and they're almost afraid to say another word. God shuts'm up! And they have to listen and you have a chance to preach'm a good prayer.

190. **(WITNESSING)** I'm for personal evangelising. I'm for witnessing and I don't think there is any ministry more effective, more efficient, or more fruitful, which can more surely get absolute results and win souls, than this personal face-to-face witnessing in the field, whether it be on the street corner, house-to-house preaching, singing in the park or the restaurants, busking or FFing.

191. **(WORD)** The Word is your magic lamp! You must rub it into your head, into your tummy, into your heart and make it shine for you so it can use its magic powers for you.

192. **(WORD)** The Bible is not merely some churchy handbook, but it is the most wonderful, supernatural, miraculous, amazing, marvellous Book in the whole World!--Which has the answers to everything!--Where we came from, how we got here, why we're here, how to survive and be happy while here, and how to love and have happiness forever!

193. **(WORD)** The greatest proof that the Bible really is the miraculous, supernatural Word of God Himself is that it works!

194. **(WORD)** The **most** wonderful thing about the Bible is that, through its words, we can get to know its Author!--For the Bible is God's great Love Letter to us! Its Life-giving Words make it the greatest Book in the World, with the only Author in the World Who can guarantee life and love and happiness and Heaven forever through simply reading it and believing in its main Character, the One Who loved us so much that He gave His Own Life to save us--Jesus Christ, the Son of God!

195. **(YIELDEDNESS)** God had to toss Saul on the scrapheap of history, an unusable tool, a brittle, unbending, unyielded tool who kept going his own way and kept going further and further astray till God had to choose just a little shepherd boy out of the field, a little nobody, a nothing, to take his place.

196. **(YIELDEDNESS)** Too many are waiting for God to do something for them rather than with them.

Copyright (c) 1998 by The Family

